

DR. EDWARD BRONGERSMA

LOVING BOYS VOL. I

LIMITED VS SHARPE
EXHIBIT TAG
~~SUPREME~~ PROVINCIAL COURT
CASE NO. X050427
MARKED (vol 1) 17VD ENTERED
EXHIBIT CARD No. 315904
SUBMITTED BY:
☐ PROSECUTION/PLAINTIFF/APPLICANT
☒ DEFENCE/RESPONDENT/DEFENDANT
CLERK ACKNOWLEDGEMENT DATE Nov 19/98

FORM ADM 051 REV 08/93

GLOBAL
ACADEMIC
PUBLISHERS

INTRODUCTION BY
VERN. L. BULLOUGH

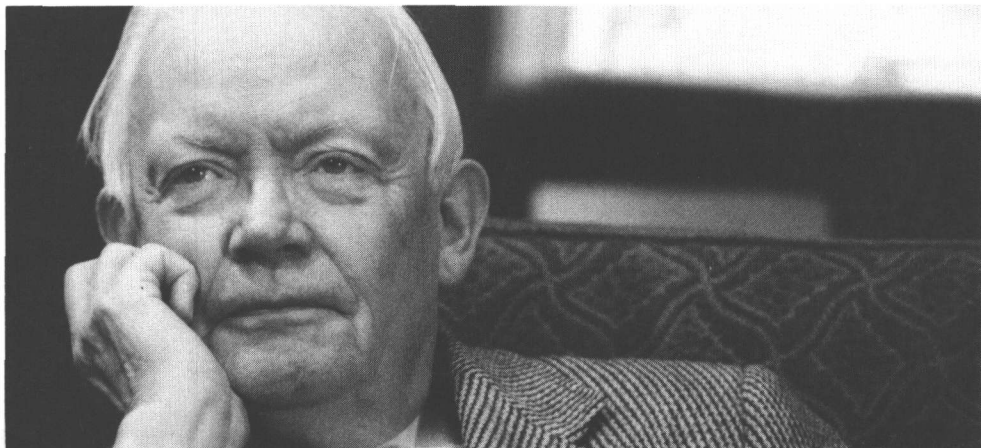
A MULTIDISCIPLINARY
STUDY OF SEXUAL
RELATIONS BETWEEN
ADULT AND MINOR MALES

Loving Boys is the first multi-disciplinary, cross-cultural study of sexual relations between men and boys ever to be published in the English language. The author eschews both the common Judeo-Christian belief that man-boy contacts are morally wrong and the traditional psychiatric premise (never honestly tested) that they are unnatural, perverted and harmful for boys. Instead, he examines ethnological, historical, behavioural and cultural records to show what other peoples (and our own ancestors) thought about this phenomenon at different times: how their societies rejected it or put it to work in a constructive way. He cites nearly 200 examples of man-boy sexual behaviour taken from published sources and private correspondence in English, German, French, Dutch, Italian, Spanish and the Scandinavian languages. All of this allows him to expose to the clear light of reason contemporary arguments against allowing men and boys to love each other sexually.

This first volume covers how boy-lovers think of the boys they

love, the roles they play in their boys' lives, the sexuality of boys, and how boys in paedophile relationships perceive the friendships and sex they share with their older friends. Volume Two will take up the aspects of man-boy love which cause rational concern, sexual oppression vs. liberation, and finally what takes place during sexual contacts between men and boys.

Dr. Edward Brongersma is one of Holland's most distinguished jurists. In 1946 he became a member of the Dutch Upper House of Parliament, or Senate. Four years later he was arrested for having sexual contact with a 16-year-old boy—under an archaic law which he helped repeal in 1971. After release from 10 months in prison, he rebuilt his shattered law career and returned to the Senate in 1963, where he was chairman of the important Judiciary Committee from 1968 until his retirement in 1977. The Queen knighted him into the Order of the Dutch Lion in 1975.



DR. EDWARD BRONGERSMA

LOVING BOYS VOL. 1

GLOBAL
ACADEMIC
PUBLISHERS

INTRODUCTION BY
VERN. L. BULLOUGH

A MULTIDISCIPLINARY
STUDY OF SEXUAL
RELATIONS BETWEEN
ADULT AND MINOR MALES

Contents

of Volume 1.

Printed by Krips Repro Meppel, Netherlands

Global Academic Publishers
80-50 Baxter Ave.
Suite 500
Elmhurst, NY 11373
U.S.A.

The passage from Dennis Kelly's *Size Queen* on page 158 is quoted by kind permission of Gay Sunshine Press. The passage from Iris Murdoch's *The Nice and the Good* on pages 206 and 207 is quoted by kind permission of Penguin Books, Ltd.

Copyright Edward Brongersma 1986

Except for brief passages quoted in a newspaper, magazine, radio or television review, no part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying and recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

First edition published December, 1986.

Cloth-bound library edition:
ISBN 1-55741-000-3
Soft-cover student edition:
ISBN 1-55741-001-1

INTRODUCTION by Vern L. Bullough / 9

AUTHOR'S PREFACE / 13

Chapter One: WHY SEX? / 19

Different Aspects of Sex / 20

Sex for Procreation (20) — Sex as Expression of an Emotion (24)
— Sex Just for Pleasure (26) — Sex in Surrender to the Forces of
Nature (29)

The Aspects of Sex in Relation to Children / 32

Sex for Procreation (32) — Sex as an Expression of Love (33) —
Sex Just for Pleasure (34) — Sex in Surrender to the Forces of
Nature (39) — Summary (40)

Chapter Two: ADULT LOVERS / 41

Sexual Variety in Men / 41

Anatomical: The Organs (41) — Psychological: Function of the
Organs (41) — Psychological: Attraction (42) — The Importance
of the Partner's Sex (43) — The Importance of the Partner's Age
(51)

Attraction to Children / 55

A Common Phenomenon (55) — The Different forms of Child-
Love: Man/Girl (57); Woman/Girl (59); Woman/Boy (60); Man
/Boy (66)

Man/Boy Relationships / 67

Boy-Love and Pseudo Boy-Love (67) — Boy-Love and People with Different Orientations (73) — History and Ethnology of Boy-Love: Ancient Greece and Rome (77); Western Europe and America (82); The Arabs (85); India (85); China and Japan (86); The So-Called Primitives (87) — Boy-Lovers in Relation to Women (91) — Variety in Age Preferences: Small Children (93); The Prepubertal and the Mature (94); the Importance of Puberty (95); Hair Growth (99) — Lasting Friendships and Casual Meetings (100) — Absence of Reliable Research (102) — Personality Traits of Boy-Lovers (108); Old Age (109); Attraction of Social Opposites (110); Questions for Research (111); Importance of the Partner's Pleasure (113) — Origins of Boy-Love (115) — The Number of Boy-Lovers (117)

Chapter Three: BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY / 121

Physical Maturity / 121

Growth of Genitals (122) — Ejaculation (126)

Psychosexual Development / 128

Elements of Cognition (128) — Importance of Puberty (133)

The Experience of Maturation / 135

Penis Size (135) — Erections (144) — Ejaculations and Wet Dreams (147) — Orgasm (155) — The Bloom of Youth (157)

Rites of Initiation / 158

Operations and Blood Offerings (160) — Circumcision (162) — In Western Society (166)

The Beginning of Sexual Relations / 171

The Outlets / 176

Masturbation (176); Deterrence (177); Guilt Feelings (182); Fantasies/Methods/Frequencies (185); Beginning (193) — Sex With Girls (197); Beginning (197); Disparity Between Boys and Girls of the Same Age (203) — Sex With Other Boys (212); The "Homosexual" Phase (212); Special Friendships (225); Fear of Homosexuality (231) — Sex With Men: An Impossible Love? (239); The Parents (242); Adult Lovers vs. Peers (246); Willing Boys (249); Bisexual Behaviour (262); The End of the Affair (267); The Boy as Seducer (271)

Appendix: Penis Size vs. Age / 282

Bibliography / 283

Contents of Volume Two / 332

About the Author / 334

Introduction

by Vern L. Bullough

ALMOST no subject of scholarly investigation arouses more controversy than the subject of paedophilia, i.e. erotic relations between adults and minors. It almost immediately brings to mind an image of a man with a huge penis trying to shove it into a tiny orifice of a mortally terrified child. Inevitably the frightened child is scarred for life, unable to adjust to a normal sex or family life. Undoubtedly there are some men who literally rape small boys (or girls), and there are children involved in sexual relations with adults who are emotionally if not physically wounded for the rest of their lives. But man/boy-love, at any rate, is a far more complex subject than a simple horror story. It has a long history, and sometimes, as among the ancient Greeks, it was regarded as the highest form of love.

More to the point, there are people and organisations today who still regard paedophilia as an ideal form of sexuality, benefiting both the boy and the adult. Obviously such a belief is debatable, but each person has to arrive at his or her own conclusions. Personally I believe a child is not mature enough to make a decision for himself or herself about sex with an adult, and it would be very difficult for many young people to avoid coercion if confronted with such a situation. Still, it is not clear when a young person becomes adult enough to consent to sexual activity. Probably most of us in society feel quite different about two teenagers engaging in sex with each other than we do about an adult involving himself or herself with a teenager ten or twenty years younger. We draw more of a distinction, however, between an adult male having sex or being otherwise involved with a teenage boy than we do with a teenage girl and we are more likely to punish the case of boy-love than

INTRODUCTION

girl-love (girls, for example, are commonly allowed sex with other females and can sometimes marry as young as fourteen—boys must wait until 16, 18 or 21 years of age for *any* legal sex).

Some people feel that there should be no distinction between sexual activities involving a boy and sexual activities involving a girl, and it is this inequality of outlook—in other words, discrimination against boys—which this book seeks to change. From experience I know there is a large audience for such a sex book, since there are many people out there who have felt ostracized and cut off from society and have gone underground rather than confront a hostile society. Few of them regard themselves as the vile, dirty, dishonest adults so often portrayed in the popular media. Yet no one seems willing to defend them. Obviously this book speaks for them and to them, but it would be unfortunate if they are the only readers of this book, since there is a real need for all elements in society to know more about the motivations, the drives and the impulses of those who identify themselves or are identified by others as paedophiles.

This book attempts to do just this. Its author is a distinguished Dutch lawyer, a retired member of the Dutch Parliament who in 1950 was arrested, tried and convicted for having sex with a 16-year-old boy. He spent 11 months in prison as a result. Unlike many convicted of such activities, he managed to put his life back together on his release, win reinstatement to the bar, re-election to the Dutch Parliament, and in 1975 as a reward for his services, the Queen made him a Knight of the Order of the Dutch Lion. He is, however, still a paedophile and he has spent much of his life in writing about and researching the subject. The final result of his scholarship is this book.

It is what might be called a lawyer's brief. It is not a dispassionate look at both sides of the case, but instead the brief of a committed advocate trying to establish his cause. Negatives are recognized, but dealt with. Definitions are closely drawn such as the difference between pseudo paedophiles and true paedophiles, the first turning to youth when there is no other alternative, the second truly interested in boys and not necessarily for sexual purposes. He emphasizes that relations between adults and boys can be beneficial to both, that it is not necessarily traumatic, and that genuine love is involved. He is most concerned with teenagers, primarily with those who in America would be in high school or junior high.

Brongersma builds his case by a thorough search of the social sciences and legal literature, he brings poetry and fiction to support him, and finds justification in the biological and medical sciences. Since he reads all of the Western European languages, his command of the literature and his bibliography are impressive. I would recommend the book to those who want to learn more about the subject: the motivation, the desires, the attitudes of those who could be classed as paedophiles. Hopefully it will throw light on a

INTRODUCTION

subject that too often either has been ignored entirely or been subject to hysterical statements. Certainly those of us who deal with paedophilia in therapeutic situations will be well served in reading it if only because to do so will make us more dispassionate counselors and teachers, better able to serve those with whom we come into contact.

Vern L. Bullough, R.N., PhD.

Author's Preface

OVER ten years ago (1970) the publisher Lichtenberg in Munich brought out a German book of mine upon which they bestowed the alarming title of *Das verfemte Geschlecht* (The Damned Sex). It has long been out of print and it soon became high time that a new edition be considered.

However, as I re-read the text it seemed impossible to limit myself to a simple revision. During the intervening years I had been active in the formation and growth of both the Dutch and the German action groups for paedophile and youth emancipation. I had corresponded with men (in 27 different countries) who loved boys; from many of them I had received substantial documentation (both written and visual) of their love lives; I had become personally acquainted with many of them. I had also travelled a great deal, heard much and seen much. I had read many new books touching on or devoted to the subject. So it seemed I had to write a completely new work. Of course it would repeat many of the essential thoughts of *Das verfemte Geschlecht*.

I am deeply grateful to all who have helped me write this book, who gave me their observations and confided in me the most intimate details of their live stories. I particularly want to thank Walter Koch, Frank Torey and Mark McHarry for their most valuable corrections and criticisms of my manuscript.

A man who, as member of Parliament for eighteen years, has involved himself deeply in so-called "public morality" matters; who, as a lawyer, defended many clients prosecuted for having had sexual affairs with boys; who himself suffered imprisonment for being involved with a 16-year-old boy (under a law now repealed because the legislator himself finally came to see

that it as unjust); who, over 25 years, has published many books and papers about sexual relations with children and participated in conferences on this subject in his own country and abroad; who created a foundation to further studies in this field—such a man would make a fool of himself if he pretended to have only an academic interest in this phenomenon. Quite obviously his interest is personal, and when this was suggested in an interview with me (Bibeb in *Vrij Nederland*, 2 Sep, 1978), and during a program on Dutch television (30 Oct, 1978), I didn't deny it. As a result one journalist wrote in a nationally distributed Dutch newspaper that my professional written work in this area could be dismissed because it was obviously coloured by personal preference (Van Vlodrop, 1980).

What curious reasoning! Arguments, then, should no longer be tested on the basis of their validity, or met with counter arguments. To dismiss them one only need say that they were put forward by an "engaged" author.

Are matters really as simple as that? Must a book on marriage be suspect if written by a married man or woman, a book on religion dismissed if written by a monk? Or doesn't a personally engaged person have some unique opportunities to see the living reality of a phenomenon and so gain better insight into it, especially in the case of a hidden, often inaccessible aspect of human life, a secret or semi-secret subculture? Won't he have talked more frequently and more openly with members of this subculture? Might he not have been welcomed in homes where the door remained closed to others? And, in any case, isn't it more honest at least to hear him out and evaluate what he reports before pushing aside all he has to offer as being suspect?

This book deals with boys and their erotic attraction, with boys as subjects of love and as partners in love relationships. This is not exclusively a matter of sexuality: much more is implied, as we shall see later on. But at the same time we will see how true are the words of a philosopher from Greek antiquity who, in referring to the relationship between an adult man and his young friend, said, "It's not just a matter of sex—but it's not without sex, either!" (Buffière 1980, 651)

Now, it is precisely this sexual aspect which provokes disgust in our Western culture. If a teacher, youth leader, friend of the family is nice to a boy, devotes his spare time to him, troubles himself with the boy's problems, the parents are grateful and appreciative. But the moment the man gives physical expression to the relationship—fondling him or allowing a sexual contact to take place (and it doesn't matter whether man or boy is the instigator)—most parents react with extreme indignation. The law, in criminalizing such physical behaviour, obviously reflects the feelings of the majority of Western adults.

And so, in this book, we will stress just this forbidden, condemned aspect

of boy-love. Yet it must be stated clearly at the outset that such emphasis upon the physical does not really correspond to the balance of deeper feelings in many of the men to whom this book is dedicated. I am reminded of one Englishman who wrote me, "If I had to choose between a casual contact implying sexuality and a deep, lasting relation without it, I wouldn't hesitate a moment in preferring the latter." One of the most sympathetic boy-lovers I ever met, the late Michael Davidson, an English journalist, says in his autobiography, "My highest, most intense pleasure or happiness is of the *mind*; and comes from seeing, being with, touching, looking into the mind of, a boy who, emotionally, mentally, rather than bodily, is *simpatico*; and from visually absorbing the multiple delights of his nakedness. Any sexual *acts* which may, and generally do, accompany, follow or precede this mental joy are adjuncts—prologue or epilogue to the essential monograph of the mind." (Davidson 1962, 19) Not everyone shares this opinion. There are men—and boys, too—who wish to limit their relationships to the sexual. But many others will certainly agree with Davidson and my English correspondent.

So, although the spiritual aspect of man/boy relationships is often very important, it will not occupy us very much in the following pages. Our examination will focus upon the sexual aspect and its physical expression, with what is forbidden, damned and rejected—with shocking things, if you will. This is significant, because sexual activities between men and boys, between older and younger boys, are not at all exceptional; they are not rare, indeed they are quite common and thus of utmost importance in the boy's development.

Few people who haven't delved into these matters have any idea of its extent and importance. Recent enquiries among male adults, and especially college students, have shown that as many as a quarter, or even a third, had had at least one sexual experience with an adult during boyhood (Corstjens 1975; Landis 1956). It is, then, a statistical probability that all parents with two or more sons, and a near certainty that all pedagogues, teachers, youth leaders, children's doctors, children's court judges, etc. have the responsibility of dealing with boys who have had or are currently having a sexual affair with an adult. As for sex play and other sexual activities among boys themselves, this is even more common: according to Kinsey (1948, 170) 30% to 53% (depending upon the social environment) of male youth had engaged in it before reaching puberty.

So the subject of this book should concern not just those people who love boys, who are having erotic relations with them or wish they were, but also every man and woman involved in the education, socialization and upbringing of male youth. Many may initially find the subject painful and prefer to pass it by in silence, to avoid it. But how can one prepare young people for the reality of human life if one closes one's eyes to a significant part of this reality,

PREFACE

one which, moreover, these young people themselves perceive as being extremely important?

What is the meaning of sexuality? What can we say about the mystery of sexual attraction of one sex by the other, of a certain age group? Along what lines do the physical and psycho-sexual development of a boy run, and what are the possible outlets for his impulses? What are the real or imagined negative aspects of an intimate relationship between a younger and an older partner—and what are the positive possibilities? What are the means by which the partners give physical expression to their feelings?

We will try to answer these questions here, without making the slightest bow toward prudishness. We will be making our points from many sources in the older and newer literature (mainly in the English, French, German and Dutch languages), from non-fiction and fiction alike, from recorded individual experiences, from our own research with nearly fifty young men and boys, from examples taken from both Antiquity and from modern ethnology. Traditional moral and pedagogical ideas will be continuously confronted with our findings. We will illustrate our ideas with over 400 quotations from case studies and fiction. In all of this we will be led by the conviction that sexual behaviour that truly respects one's fellow-man is to be welcomed as a creative power, an expression of love, a source of pleasure and a primordial force of nature.

This book is certainly not suitable reading matter for everyone. I have already suggested those whom it should concern. It is only fair, then, to enumerate those who might better leave it unread:

those who believe that a totally benevolent and all-wise god created this universe—but at the same time believe that sexuality, a very important and dominant aspect of this creation, is vulgar, disgusting, dirty and bad;

those who claim to venerate aesthetic beauty and exalt nature—but become timid and avert their faces with shame when the natural beauty of a young body is revealed in its complete nudity;

those who fly high a banner emblazoned with "Love Thy Neighbour"—but, in fact, foster aggression by denying and repressing natural impulses of sex;

those who preach humility and modesty—but refuse to face creation as it is, or learn about it and from it, preferring to impose upon it their own preconceptions;

PREFACE

those who pretend to love young people—but want to overlook everything young people pursue and experience in the realm of lust and pleasure.

And now to the facts!

Chapter 1.

Why Sex?

A harried teacher is trying to explain to his pupils something they find very difficult to grasp. Finally one desperate student says, "I think I might understand it if you'd just stop explaining it."

The reader of this book would probably have the same reaction if we tried to burden him with one more definition or description of what "sexuality" is. He is likely to do as well or better without it.

Rather than give long, meandering answers to "What is it?", we had better ask ourselves "Why?" What ends does sexuality serve? Why does one behave sexually? We have to distinguish between several possibilities, several ends, and throughout this book we will be dealing with at least four of them. It is often said, for example, that "children aren't yet mature enough for sexual activity". It is impossible either to agree or disagree with such a statement as long as it isn't clear what kind of sex the speaker is talking about. It is possible that a child at a certain age is not mature enough for one kind of sex but quite able to handle another kind. It is easy here to be talking and arguing at cross-purposes.

Such distinctions are also important in making moral judgements about certain sexual activities. What is condemned in many cultures as highly immoral may in another culture be considered quite ethically acceptable—and even exalted in its religion. Western society rejects boy-love, rejects religious prostitution as a sacrifice to the gods, rejects the orgy in honour of a deity. But what modern Greeks call depravity their ancestors held in high esteem. Morality has changed with the times, and shifts in moral outlook

I. WHY SEX?

bring about alterations in secular laws as well: traditionally legal behaviour may suddenly be criminalized and severely punished. On the other hand recent homosexual history shows how a crime, subject to the death penalty, may at a certain moment quite quickly be removed from our penal codes.

We must now examine four possible answers to the question, "Why sex?"

One: The purpose of sex is procreation. Two: Sex is a means of expressing emotions. Three: Sex is simply meant for pleasure. Four: Sex unites us with Nature, is a way of experiencing our link with the Divine.

DIFFERENT ASPECTS OF SEX

1. Sex for Procreation

Let us arbitrarily begin with the concept that the purpose of sexuality is procreation. As puberty is reached the male body starts to produce seed, the female eggs. During intercourse the male member is introduced into the female vagina in order to deposit the seed which, under the proper circumstances, meets the egg and fertilizes it in order to produce a child. Thus the activity is necessary for the conservation of the human race, and the lustful sensations which accompany the sexual act may be seen as a kind of reward for duty accomplished.

Among the Ancient Greeks it was the older Plato especially who elaborated this theory, which appears again in the writings of the Roman Musonius (Buffière 1980, 426, 430-433, 501). Procreation is seen as the only moral justification for sexual intercourse; it is the lustful feelings which accompany it that make the activity abominable and an infringement on human dignity. For the Spirit is called upon to raise itself above Matter, above all things of this earth, which, after all, are only a shadow, a reflection of the reality of the all-transcendent Idea. Sensual pleasure, then, presses us down, fixates us upon Matter. Thus, for example, it is noble and good to admire the beauty of a naked boy, to let it inspire one and guide one to the Idea of beauty itself; but it is bad and unworthy to unite oneself in lust with the naked boy. Sexual activity, then, should be strictly limited to the bare minimum sufficient to assure procreation. These teachings had little or no influence during classical Antiquity.

We also find no traces of this pagan doctrine in the words of Jesus and the gospels; nevertheless it came to dominate European culture and its extensions for many centuries. Shorn of its veneration of the boy's body, it entered history as "Christian sexual morality", but all its elements were already present in Plato: celibacy is ethically more highly esteemed than marriage; youth should be inured against the temptations of lust by means of exercise and sport (Buffière 1980, 432, 503). Christian doctrine brought

DIFFERENT ASPECTS OF SEX

nothing really new; it simply helped the Platonic theories acquire a belated ascendancy.

From the start these teachings conflicted with the common human conviction that sexual lust is far more important than a mere adjunct to procreation. They have led to a profound ambiguity in Western culture and acted as a continuous internal menace, for a good culture should be constructed in harmony with nature, use its properties and laws constructively and not attempt to deny them.

The protagonists of this now-traditional morality make a laughing stock of themselves when they appeal in all seriousness to "nature" without expending even a minimum of effort to study natural realities or take into account the relationship and distinction between nature and culture. They condemn as unnatural (or even anti-natural) all sexual activities which do not have procreation as an objective (e.g. intercourse using contraception) or where procreation is impossible (e.g. homosexual acts). In the former case they overlook the fact that it is characteristic of cultures that they do distinguish between desired and undesired consequences of an activity and take measures to avert the latter. More importantly they overlook the manifold examples where nature itself has taken precautions against its own doings, generously providing means of defense as well as of attack. In-built frustrations of natural processes form an important part of nature. As for the second example, to declare homosexuality unnatural and say that a man engaging in it sinks below the level of the animals would have been an unpardonable error even in Antiquity. The Greeks observed and described homosexual behaviour in animals (Buffière 1980, 518-519). Contemporary research has multiplied such examples from the entire animal kingdom many times over: a book is needed just to enumerate them (Celli 1972; Hite 1981, 352). Nature is full of homosexuality, just as it abounds in seemingly senseless, unproductive sex.

Seemingly unproductive. Nowhere do the protagonists of this traditional view of sex-as-procreation reveal the essentially materialist, rationalist and unspiritual character of their morality more clearly than in their compulsion to see homosexuality and intercourse with contraceptives as unproductive behaviour.

- 1 To counter this claim I will first quote from a voluminous autobiography given to me in confidence by a highly talented man who is now nearly seventy years old. Onno is a university graduate, exercised important functions in society, has now retired and devotes himself to the study of religion and philosophy. As an adolescent he had a very beautiful and graceful body, as well as extraordinarily strong sexual impulses which were directed exclusively toward adult males. For many years he gave his body to a great many men, eagerly participated in nearly every conceivable kind of sexual activity, posed nude for painters and photographers, gave nude shows and dances

before groups of spectators. We will come back to Onno and his autobiography many times in the course of these pages. He writes:

"I am forever grateful to the man who introduced me into these circles. He taught me to reject all taboos and follow freely the course of my true and individual nature. This made my life unbelievably happy and gave me marvellously good health. And I wasn't the only one to profit from this: the same thing happened to the men with whom I slept. For years I was the source of inspiration for an artist. Another man found in the joy I was able to give him with my body the energy to comply with an unusually large burden of social duties. The butler of one important industrialist told me, 'You came, and now the boss is singing again!' Still another man, who had apparently grown cold and austere by being isolated in a high position, suddenly amazed his acquaintances by expressing his feeling much more openly; his relationship with me even inspired him to start writing poetry." (Personal communication)

"It is certain that by means of a homosexual love many humans have been liberated to a truly spiritual fertility which otherwise would have been impossible." (McNeill 1978, 117) We might recall the words of the Greek poet Cavafy (1863-1933) who, after a furtive homosexual meeting, wrote (1982, 91):

*But how the life of the artist has gained.
Tomorrow, the next day, years later, the vigorous verses
will be composed that had their beginning here.*

Any person who is not limited in his thinking to the purely biological aspects of sex cannot be blind to the fact that sexual pleasure contributes enormously to happiness, to a sense of well-being, to mental and physical health, and is, therefore, indirectly a source of energy and inspiration (Borneman 1978, 589, 645, 659). In Hindoo literature we find the idea of "creative sensuousness" (Majapuria 1981, 162). What Diotima, the wise woman from (the younger) Plato's *Symposium*, says about love between man and boy could be applied to all sexual pleasure: "It's fruits are more beautiful than children because they never die." (Buffière 1980, 418)

Limiting sexual activity to procreation is rationalistic (Banens 1981, 51) and in conflict with nature. There is not a single culture in existence where men and women entirely confine their sex life to procreation. As Father John J. McNeill, S.J. rightly points out, "an overemphasis on procreation can be seen as leading potentially to a seriously immoral and dehumanizing form of sexuality." (1978, 112) Procreation cannot be the only reason why children already have a well-developed appetite long before they reach puberty (Freud 1920, 49, 115; Borneman 1978, 445). The bond between sex and procreation is

much less strong in the higher primates than in the lower animals. In the animal kingdom there is an evolutionary gradation from the lower levels, where sex hormones predominate, to the higher levels, where the cerebral cortex becomes more and more important. As this happens the sexual activity of animals is freed from the constraints of a rutting season. This is equally applicable to the younger, immature individuals where not only heterosexual intercourse begins, but also self-stimulation and homosexual behaviour. Thus an "infantile" sex life can already be observed in anthropoid monkeys. The sexuality of man, who stands in the top tier of evolution, becomes increasingly independent of procreation (Borneman 1978, 399, 1290).

In matters of sex, nature is incredibly prodigal. The human male produces in one single ejaculation an average 280 million germs of life, of which only one could normally fulfill a fertilizing destiny (Hotchkiss 1944, 112). If a man or boy emits his semen a few hundred times without depositing it in the organ of a fertile female we can hardly call this contrary to nature's way. Moreover, nature itself, in the case of about 80% of male youth, provides involuntary nocturnal emissions (Kinsey 1948, 517-530)—biologically speaking, sheer waste.

According to Hotchkiss (1944, 93-94), a healthy young couple wanting a child and not using any means of contraception will have intercourse, on average, 202 times for every occurrence of pregnancy. And, in the course of nature, many pregnancies are spontaneously aborted.

In fact it is rather exceptional for a man and a woman to have intercourse for the sole purpose of producing a baby. Perhaps this happens within a marriage of convenience, or a royal marriage, or where an unmarried woman wishes to have a child who will be completely her own, or where a husband proves to be sterile and a friend is invited to come and fertilize the wife. The latter practice was common in ancient Sparta with its social ideal of racial up-grading: an elderly husband was praised if he allowed a younger, warrior-like man to lie with his wife occasionally (Buffière 1980, 66).

Slave-owners didn't just leave the multiplication of their stock to chance. They often carefully controlled their sexual activities. On Curaçao (Netherlands Antilles) tourists are shown, on a mansion terrace, a little house where a young black servant, carefully selected by his master, used to be locked in with a girl in order to quicken her with child. When the transport of captured slaves from Africa became too risky for the profit derived, some plantations in America specialized in the breeding of blacks. Athletic, well-built young men served as "studs" (whose services were also sometimes rented or loaned out to neighbouring farms); the slaves were forbidden intercourse not commanded and registered by their owners.

A characteristically contemporary example of sexual activity intended solely for procreation is men masturbating for sperm banks. A number of

I. WHY SEX?

young men currently earn pocket money as donors of seed.

Of all the meanings of sex, exclusive procreation is the most animal-like, and the least human.

2. Sex as Expression of an Emotion

A) POSITIVE

Clearly, even in heterosexual intercourse, procreation as a reason for sex has now given way to a far different justification. In the Gonado investigation only 14.1% of married men stated that they had married primarily because they wanted to have children (Pietropinto and Simenauer 1977, 264). It is true that a few religious communities clung for a very long time to the old Platonic-Augustinian ethics and permitted sexual activities only with the intent to procreate, but in the end even they had to submit to quite different standards when Western culture was submerged with the ideals of romantic love: the coupling of two bodies was increasingly viewed as the expression, first and foremost, of the emotion of love.

The sex-for-procreation protagonists, on principal averse to sexual lust, struggled against this evolution as long as possible. And no wonder: the consequences, from their point of view, were disastrous.

For if love justifies sexual intercourse it is no longer clear why this should apply only to married couples. It is no accident that two very different evolutions in social life began at the same time and spread with surprising speed. First of all, within a very short time, premarital sex between lovers was largely accepted, not just by youth but also by parents and religious communities: marriage had lost its monopoly. Second, homosexuality came to be accepted in the Western world to a larger degree than ever since Christianity had become dominant. Virginity, once for girls the equivalent of virtue, lost its meaning and the double-standard morality born out of practical need (sex between a woman and a man was considered shameful for the former but condoned in the latter) was rejected for what it had always been: blatant injustice. Of course this view of sexuality as an expression of love tended to loosen marital ties. Why stay together after a formerly intense love had died, or had gone out to another person? Divorce became a mass phenomenon.

Technical developments tend to adapt themselves to human needs. New freedoms arising from the decline of sex-for-procreation-only ethics might have been limited to homosexual contacts had not anti-conception made such rapid progress. Now there were solutions to the heterosexual problem of pregnancy other than the disagreeable and unreliable method of withdrawal before ejaculation; contraception had become cheap and accessible to everyone.

DIFFERENT ASPECTS OF SEX

A great deal of recent research into the sexual habits and opinions of young people make it evident that the vast majority approves of premarital intercourse and feels that it is morally permissible—but only if a real love relationship unites the partners. Kruithof and van Ussel (1963) found this to be true in Belgium, Hertoft (1968) in Denmark, Schofield (1965) in England, Giese & Schmidt (1968) and Sigusch & Schmidt (1975) in Germany, Kooy (1976) and Noordhoff (1969) in The Netherlands, Zetterberg (1969) in Sweden, Sorensen (1973) and Yankowski (1965) in the U.S.A. The most important requirement, said the majority of their subjects, was to make the partner happy. That which was good for the other partner was at the same time considered morally right. One was to find one's satisfaction in abandoning oneself lovingly to the partner; this would bring the supreme delight. Thus performed, sexual union would become the expression of a personal emotional relationship, a revelation of one's soul, like a religious confession: "Lovers confess with their bodies and absolve each other in the act of love" (Borneman 1978, 21).

Let us not forget, however, that the ideal of a unique and all-surpassing love, excluding every vestige of promiscuity, may be characteristic of our Western culture but is certainly not shared by humanity as a whole. Monogamy is rather the exception than the rule. The ancient Greeks saw the dominating force of Eros, against which even the gods were powerless, rather as a menace. A young man belonged to the community in which he lived; that he was lustful and wanted sex was good, but to be monopolized by passion was bad. Like the modern Samoans, a people remarkable for their sexual tolerance and good mental health, the Greeks tended to view romantic love as an illness (Borneman 1978, 18, 53, 235, 339-340, 641). If we are to judge the value of an ideal we would do well to recognize its relativity.

B) NEGATIVE

Love is not the only emotion which is expressed through sex. While the male member may be the instrument of a positive human contact, man can also put it to destructive use, as a weapon to subdue, inflict pain and humiliation—and in the process derive a great deal of sensual pleasure. It is much to the credit of feminism that the adherents of this movement have placed this aspect of sexuality right in the arena of discussion. It had not gone unnoticed before, however, that with his phallus man can dominate and impose his will. He can exercise a phallocracy which is not limited to the extreme case of rape and indecent assault. Not a few men experience mixed emotions about this: they may find a certain resistance on the part of the beloved, be it man, woman or boy, exciting and provoking; on the other hand they would shrink from having recourse to real violence.

Perhaps the first to deal deeply with this problem was the Danish author Thorkill Vanggaard in his remarkable book *Phallós* (1969). He tries to find a psychological explanation of why sexual activity can be inspired by hate, by enmity and take the form of torture. In ancient times people were already well aware of this. Priapus, the god with the enormous erection, was the guardian of Greek and Roman gardens; he frightened off fruit and vegetables thieves by threatening punishment by penetrating them orally or anally with his phallos (Priapeia). During the First World War when T. E. Lawrence ("Lawrence of Arabia") fell into the hands of his Turkish enemies he had to submit to anal rape. In every war women and boys in occupied territory are raped by the victors. As in the cases of rape in prisons and reformatories still so frequently reported, this practice would seem to be inspired more by hatred, desire for revenge and to demonstrate superior power than by lust. Floyd Salas' reformatory novel, *Tattoo the Wicked Cross* (1967) is wholly devoted to the theme of a boy raped by a gang of inmates. In criminal youth gangs new member candidates often have to submit to anal intercourse by the chief as part of their initiation (Buffière 1980, 59).

These are extreme cases. But even in apparently normal circumstances the same thing may occur in a more or less disguised form. Prof. Frenken, a Dutch sexologist, delineates three prerequisites for sexual pleasure in different kinds of people: first, there are people who see in a good and satisfactory sexual relationship a measure of the extent to which an *emotional* connection has been established (if sexual satisfaction diminishes the bond lessens too); second, there's an approach more frequently found in women than in men: the strength of the sensations of lust is determined by the extent to which an *intimate* connection has been established; third, there are people for whom the contrary is true: emotional coldness, contempt, even hate for the partner is a prerequisite for sexual pleasure. This latter kind of man is impotent with the loved and adored woman (the madonna) but often displays an enormous sexual capacity with the whore whom he holds in contempt (Frenken 1980, 247). An essential element in the makeup of such a man is that sex itself is seen as something animal, low and dirty, thus one can only have it with a female who has sunk very low herself. We will have more to say about this deformation of the mind in later chapters and show that it is caused by a strict moral up-bringing which includes a very negative evaluation of sexuality. Religions with a positive view of sex and cultures which operate close to nature do not cripple the souls of their people in such a fashion.

3. Sex Just for Pleasure

There is one common element to the aspects of sex so far discussed: it is the positive emotional (love-) or the negative emotional (subjugation-) rela-

tionships between the partners that gives the sexual activity its essential meaning. For a majority of people in our Western culture, young people included, it is love which justifies the sexual act. Without love a sexual contact seems to them to be something morally inferior (Hite 1981, 379).

However, the protagonists of a third view of sex ask why. Why should it be necessary to "justify" sex in some way? Isn't this just a remnant of the Victorian horror of sex? Isn't sexual activity itself something quite neutral, and thus doesn't the ethical value which is to be attributed to it depend upon the circumstances in which it takes place? Are procreation and love the only things which can give it a positive value? Do lust, joy, the pleasurable relief from tension have no positive value? Is recreation less necessary to humanity than procreation? And what kind of valid objection could you make if two individuals agree to give each other joy and pleasure with their bodies in a way that doesn't hurt anyone else? Horror of sex and the negative evaluation of lust have distorted our culture long enough and caused enormous destruction. We will return to this theme in Chapter Five.

Borneman, the foremost Austrian sexologist, sees relief of tension rather than procreation as the biological purpose of sex. Sex exists to regenerate the body, to give it energy and health (Borneman 1978, 322, 645, 1068). Its principal function is individualistic; only indirectly is it social. And even its social function is not restricted to the perpetuation of the human race, for it serves humanity in quite another way, as was shown by the American child psychologist James Prescott.

Prescott (1975) compared a great number of different cultures from all over the world and found a direct relationship between, on the one hand, repression of sexuality and deprecation of lust feelings and, on the other hand, cruelty and criminality. Children who grew up in sexual freedom were not only far happier and healthier, they were also gentler and more peaceful. Those brought up in sexual abstinence were harder and more cruel, more quickly provoked to violence and crime. Prescott was convinced that (sexual) pleasure was society's best prevention against violence.

The ethical value of an activity does not depend upon how much sex is involved but upon its degree of free consent and respect for the partner as a human being. Looked at this way a short, passing episode may also be good and beautiful. A manual for teachers charged with sex instruction published by the Swedish government affirms, quite rightly, that a sexual activity integrated into an intimate relationship between two persons is more meaningful and causes more happiness than a rather impersonal, accidental contact. Thus a closely-knit union is worth striving for. But the manual also, and with equal discernment, adds that the persistence of a relationship over many years does not guarantee real intimacy and love—as witness the married life of all too many couples—and that a casual meeting may well be tender and

loving (Linnér 1980). A one-time-only contact may even achieve great intensity, often by the very realization that it will not be repeated. Many men can never forget the hour of physical communication they had on visit to a distant land with one of its inhabitants. The joy of it was so intense and perfect! There is surely nothing shameful or objectionable in this.

Girls, however, differ from boys in this respect. For boys, love more often ensues from sex rather than precedes it: attachment grows from the keen pleasure experienced in the embrace (Borneman 1978, 779). We will return to the matter in Chapter Three.

But even if this doesn't happen and the sexual activity has no other purpose than the delight it produces, it is difficult to see what reproach could be made. Is it immoral to eat sweets because they taste good, even if they don't contain any nourishment for the body? Or is it immoral to inhale the perfume of a rose simply because you like it? Or is it immoral to enjoy the sight of an abstract painting if it doesn't teach us any lesson? Is it immoral to enjoy a beautiful piece of music? If not, why then should it be immoral to seek the delight of that other sense, the sense of touch, by caressing an attractive, naked body or to feel a gentle hand on our own? Why should the pleasure we can experience and produce with our sexual organs become suddenly immoral if there is nothing to "justify" it? Why this exception for one of our senses?

The Roman poet Horace was able to confess without shame, "When the indomitable impulse of nature sets me on fire the first naked body on which I can lay my hands is all right for me to satisfy my lust upon by lamp light, just as long as it knows how to wiggle its arse." (Borneman 1978, 867)

In truth, everything that delights the senses—a sweet morsel, a fine perfume, a beautiful sight, good music, the orgasm of sex—all bear fruit in beautifying our existence, in making us happy, in vitalizing our lives.

There is only one valid precondition to sex: one must respect everyone's right to dispose of his own body as he wishes, to decide freely if, with whom, how, where and when he will have sex. Nothing can be permitted without consent, and in the special context of sex this consent may be withdrawn at any time—even during the act itself. This liberty to decide for himself about himself is a sacred right of every individual regardless of gender and age. Yet the penal codes of the so-called civilised nations do not protect this right very well—and this is truly immoral. In The Netherlands, for instance, a husband cannot be punished if he rapes his own wife, while at the same time the freedom to give his consent to sexual activity is denied a fifteen-year-old (Penal Code, sections 242 & 247).

The theory of this right to sexual self-determination is clear enough; the practice at times is much more difficult. It is compounded by the playful aspect of sex. The courted individual may act as if he were rejecting the

approach he really covets. An inexperienced person, somewhat afraid of the unknown, is often grateful for a gentle push across the threshold of consent. In such cases the reaction after the act is much more important than the apparent attitude before. Here tact and psychological intuition are needed in order to avoid making mistakes.

4. Sex in Surrender to the Forces of Nature

We cannot approach the fourth aspect of sexuality without a certain amount of trepidation. Once it was part of our culture. But for many centuries now it has been so strongly condemned that modern man no longer has any understanding of it at all. We have lost the cults of the gods of love and fertility. We have lost the idea of surrender to the primordial forces of nature. It has become strange for us to see intercourse as a sacrifice, and thus something to be performed in a temple. We have forgotten the Dionysian ecstasy and the orgy and the bacchanal. The ancient Greeks knew about this; so did the Romans, and among so-called primitive tribes it is still very much alive today.

High on a mountain above Corinth we can visit the ruins of the Temple of Aphrodite, goddess of love. Once girls and boys stood for the inspection of pilgrims on its porch, completely naked or covered only by a transparent veil. The pilgrims had made a difficult and tiring ascent. "Not everyone has the good fortune to reach Corinth," a proverb said (Scholte 1958, 383). The visitor made his choice, paid a donation and then had intercourse with the girl or boy who pleased him the most. In the orgasmic spasm he abandoned himself to the power of the deity.

There, and in numerous other places in Greece, in Sicily, in Babylon, in Persia, in India, in many African countries, in Mexico, etc., religious prostitution was wide-spread. Mankind still understood the truth that "sacrifice" was not the same as denial or pain, that it was essentially a surrender of the ego.—and that such surrender may be positive and lustful, too.

The Greeks strived for "theolepsy", direct divine inspiration, communion with the deity. Thus wine and dancing took on religious significance, since they could induce a loss of self, an opening to divine influence. In the Dionysian rapture of the bacchanal sexual appetites were liberated from all inhibitions, every restraint. Participants tore the clothes from their bodies, displayed their nakedness and united themselves freely with the first person at hand. This experience was discussed and written about with reverence, as something noble and exalted (Partridge 1958, 9-37; Licht 1926, II 97-102).

Sexual intercourse was carried out in accordance with the divine will. The "little death", the momentary loss of consciousness in orgasm, was seen as a revelation. In it man became an instrument of the god and he experienced

I. WHY SEX?

in his own body the divine ecstasy of creation (Borneman 1978, 1410-1415).

Many peoples living close to nature still partake in this experience. During certain rituals, liquor, music and rhythmic dancing produce an intoxication which becomes more and more sexually coloured. Males dancing naked support incredibly strong and continuous erections, permitting repeated coital couplings before exhaustion is reached. Human seed is sprinkled in abundance—until not one man or boy can produce another drop. In semi-darkness one unites oneself with persons who in ordinary life are strictly taboo: the son couples with the mother, the brother with his sister. This is possible because the sexual activities have been completely depersonalised, reduced to a pure phenomenon of nature (Edwardes & Masters, 1963, 163-169; Ellis 1913, VI 218-221).

Western missionaries and explorers considered such rituals horribly indecent, morally corrupt; only recently has the religious significance of these rites gradually dawned upon us, permitting some thinkers to recognize the cosmic aspect of sexuality (Van Lier 1968; Ricoeur et al 1960; Schubart 1944). It was a Roman Catholic priest, professor of moral theology, who suggested that our Western ethics, concentrating so one-sidedly upon the personal love relationship between two partners (the union between "I" and "you") overlooked the cosmic element which is present in every sexual experience. Some day we may again be confronted with these aspects of sexuality which we thought we had long ago put away forever: sex for sheer pleasure and sex as a cosmic force (Beemer 1980, 69).

Perhaps this day is dawning already. In fact, at any given moment, much of the sexual activity which goes on in the world is done for pleasure and for pleasure alone. As for the cosmic, impersonal form of sex, recent American studies have uncovered some surprising information. In a *Playboy* research among students (1976) 7% said that they had experimented with group sex and 5% affirmed that they had found it very fine indeed. Not less than 47% said they would like to try it. In 1972 Hunt concluded that 16% of his male respondents had participated in group sex. And in the Gonado enquiry comprising 4066 men of 18 years and over, 11% claimed to prefer this type of sexual activity. On a list of sexual preferences, 14% claimed to long for group sex most of all. It seemed, moreover, that 4.5% of all men fantasized about group sex during intercourse (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 65-66).

A few years earlier, twelve young Danes, men and women, experimented with group sex, afterwards discussed their feelings about it and then published their discussion (Reitzel, 1969). They carried it out both with blindfolds (in order to prevent them from knowing who was doing what to whom) and without. Each session lasted some six or seven hours. Most of the participants thought the experience "fantastically beautiful" and claimed to have learned a lot from it.

DIFFERENT ASPECTS OF SEX

- 1 (Continued) Onno had in his youth a very intense and varied sex life. It included meetings with a group of 8 to 10 adult men on a sundeck where everyone went naked, their tanned bodies carefully oiled. There all sex acts were allowed. Sometimes it was just a mélange of jerking, intertwining limbs and heads and torsos. One kissed and licked indiscriminately, never knowing whose mouth or hand was on one's genitals. Suddenly Onno felt someone grabbing him and penetrating him. "With a furious passion he hammered away at my body; helpless, I was swept away as if by a raging hurricane. The others drew back from us and watched. When it began our mood had been light and merry: people had laughed and joked. Now they grew silent in deep respect for this outburst of primordial force." (More details will be given in Chapter 6.)

That word "respect" comes up time and again in accounts of such happenings. One evidently touches the mystery of life, some hidden power. In an essay on Thomas Mann's *Death in Venice* Dr. R. J. van Helsdingen notes, "During sexual contact, and especially during orgasm, two people become united in such a manner as to surrender completely their own egos. The 'I' becomes absorbed in the 'we', and the 'we' absorbed in the Cosmos, causing the most intense ecstasy." Along the same lines, Freud spoke about an "oceanic experience", characterized by lustful sensations uniting one with one's environment, transforming it into pure living existence (both quoted by Marlet 1979, 69)8.

- 2 But this primordial cosmic power may be experienced in a more simple manner, as the following example of Leo shows. Leo is a boy with a fine muscular body of which he is justly proud, and thus he likes to go to a nudist beach where he can show it off. He has become so used to being naked among naked people that this seldom excites him. One day he is on the beach with a group of other youths and makes the acquaintance of a girl he finds very attractive. She also seems interested in him, so they decide to go for a walk in the dunes. Now, this is officially forbidden, and one result is that, once in the dunes, they find themselves virtually alone. As soon as this happens Leo becomes highly aroused and shows it with a strong erection. This he enjoys, the mute language of the body telling the girl what he desires. She looks at it and answers with a smile. When they come at last to a suitable spot she lays down willingly and they become one. To Leo this is one of the most beautiful sexual experiences of his life: "We're lying on this hot white sand; the sun makes our bodies glow; the sky is blue; the sea seethes; a bird cries flying above us; the wind gently touches our naked skin while nature works in our bodies in their close embrace. You feel yourself one with nature as never before, and never before did lust rise to such an intense climax. You feel your body was made for this; it's something you have to do." It is an experience of exaltation Leo will never forget. (Personal communication)

THE ASPECTS OF SEX IN RELATION TO CHILDREN

How, now, are these four aspects of sexuality related to our subject: the boy as a sexual partner?

1. Sex for Procreation

In view of our contemporary culture's expectations of the father of a family, it is clear that an adolescent boy should not beget children. We are justifiably disturbed by a newspaper story telling of a twelve-year-old French girl having a baby by a twelve-year-old father (Duvert 1980, 18), and by the report that every year around 800 girls eleven years of age and younger give birth to babies in Cook County, Illinois, USA (Hearings 1977, 9).

A few centuries ago things were different. Thirteen- and fourteen-year-olds could marry and do what was expected of them as husbands. In many primitive societies this is still so today. In a pastoral culture a boy of fourteen may have learned everything a good shepherd should know and may even be better able to perform his tasks than many adult men. No reason, then, to delay marriage. But that's not the case in our modern technical world. Before a man is completely educated and trained to become a full-fledged worker, able to earn a livelihood for wife and children, ten or even more years will have passed since he entered puberty. This prolonged period of education keeps the adolescent boy mentally infantilized and so quite unfit to bring up children of his own.

But these are precisely those years when his sexual appetite imposes itself upon him with the greatest intensity. Nature uses many things (spontaneous erections, nocturnal emissions, etc.) to force the newly adolescent boy to make active use of his now easily excitable sex organs.

In postponing more and more the age of marriage, social evolution has created an enormous and obvious conflict between the traditional ethical insistence that sex be used only for procreation (thus that sexual abstinence be maintained until the wedding night) and the demands of nature. One might have expected that the Christian churches, with their belief that nature was created by God and is an expression of his divine will, would have protested and fought against this trend. But exactly the contrary happened: the churches conformed to the social evolution and, instead of protesting, allied themselves to the secular authorities in their drive to repress youthful sexuality or—even worse—deny its existence.

The sexual appetite of unmarried youth was, from the standpoint of state and society, not only superfluous but also quite a nuisance. In the Middle Ages popular wisdom held everywhere that sexual abstinence was most unhealthy for a boy in puberty. As recently as two centuries ago boys were still

regarded as sexually "loaded". But adults of the industrial world sought to free themselves of this embarrassing view of their adolescent offsprings by substituting for it a sweet accommodating image created wholly by fantasy—that of the innocent, i.e. asexual, child. This child was called pure. Logic would seem to demand that adults, then, were impure, but again the insulted adults did not protest but eagerly welcomed this newly invented concept which seemed to solve for them so many problems.

The churches, here obedient servants of the world, zealously helped spread this false idea. It became so widely accepted, so deeply imprinted in people's minds that its unmasking by Freud and his followers, later confirmed by Kinsey's sociological research, provoked widespread and deeply felt indignation and highly emotional reactions.

Today public opinion has gradually accommodated itself to these facts. Children have regained the paradise of their own sexuality. People now console themselves with the conviction that child sexuality is in any case very different from adult sexuality and, therefore, the twain should never meet. In our third chapter we will see what is true and what is false in this conviction.

The idea that the sole purpose of sex is procreation seems to have lost its hold. According to the Gonado research, only 0.7% of American males still adhere to it (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 82). For those few the implications of our theme are clear: sexual activities of boys among peers or with adults must be rejected as immoral. A boy must not be allowed to use his genital organs until he is lawfully married, and even then he should practice the greatest restraint.

2. Sex as Expression of Love

We have just cited the Gonado research. Of the males that were questioned, 11.4% thought that sexual intercourse was acceptable only if the couple were united in love (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 82). The objection that boys and adolescents are unfit to have children was swept away by the possibilities of contraception. But is a boy capable of loving another person? Or is he still too immature for this, as is frequently suggested?

It cannot be denied that puberty not only changes the body but also causes a mental revolution. After puberty young people have a different outlook on the world and on their fellow men. This influences their capacity to love. As long as a person lives this evolution doesn't end; changes continue to appear in one's love feelings which, one might hope, will make them progressively deeper. In general, adolescents clearly possess the capacity to love and to demonstrate this emotion by means of physical tenderness. Tony Duvert (1980, 76) is right in affirming that the desire for love and its expres-

sions is actually never more strongly felt than in those who have just matured.

And what about the immature? Isn't it curious, when children are generally expected to love their mothers and their fathers, to be deemed at the same time incapable of loving a friend? Freud (quoted by Shérer 1974, 124-127) had quite a different impression. In an open letter to Dr. Fürst he claimed to have found in children well below the age of puberty all the psychological symptoms of love-life well developed (tenderness, affection, jealousy), often accompanied by the physical symptoms of sexual excitement. This linking of emotional and physical response is quite clear to the child itself. "At the age of about five the child possesses in relation to its own body and that of others every element of sexual life excepting only the function of procreation," Freud noted in *Die Zukunft einer Illusion*. All of which makes the French child psychologist and pedagogue Prof. René Schérer exclaim with justifiable fury, "Why the devil do we deny the child the love it is so capable of experiencing, as the child well knows?" (1974, 130)

In the human being, body and mind are so closely united that it is no wonder love can never remain purely on a spiritual level but always demands that the body participate in it, too. Is there really an age below which it should be forbidden to love and to show this love? Is love something which must be "reserved for later"?

Even if we suppose that a child up to a certain age might not be capable of loving, we might still question whether that child is equally incapable of experiencing the acceptance of love. Let us postulate an adult who loves a child dearly and feels the urge to express this emotion in physical tenderness. Would the child really lack the intuition to experience his tender touch as moved by love, and to understand it as such? Can we really seriously contend that this experience of feeling loved will be harmful to the child, will traumatize him? The literature on criminality and mental disturbances abounds in case stories of adolescents and adults whose childhood was deprived of this experience of being loved.

We might make it impossible for a boy to build up a relationship in which he can demonstrate his love by means of sex. In revenge he might well practice sex only for the sensual pleasure in it, and so impoverish his mind (De Brethmas 1980, 14).

3. Sex Just for Pleasure

For with this third aspect of sex, which is directed entirely upon the pleasure of the moment, everything becomes a lot simpler. In the Gonado investigation 4.2% of the male respondents said they had intercourse only for pleasure (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 82). This is the most primitive side of sex and therefore is the side children most easily understand. Asked what sex

means to him primarily (procreation, love or pleasure), nearly every boy will answer pleasure. Only older adolescents and those having a steady relationship may give priority to love.

We have already discussed the view that sex for pleasure only is immoral or inferior. The decisive question here is whether physical lust, physical pleasure in itself is something good or something bad. He who thinks it is bad because sensual pleasure constitutes a threat to the higher part of the human being, is in the company of great figures like Plato and a number of Christian philosophers. But the opposite view, that lust and delight are marvellous gifts of nature and its creator, given to man to make him happy and therefore to be enjoyed with gratitude, would seem a better approach to one's deity. For with this view one comes abreast of the mysticism of India and Islam. The Arabian author of a book on the variations of sexual intercourse opens his first chapter with thanks to Allah for the pleasure he put into the sexual organs of men and women (Burton 1963, 71). Such a concept is certainly more conformable and harmonious with nature than the condemnation of lust as sin.

For the human body is made for sexual pleasure. Even before birth male foetuses have been shown by the latest scientific equipment to have spontaneous erections about five times a day—that is, as frequently as in adult sleep (Calderone 1983). At birth the body is quite able to experience sensations of lust which we may consider sensual. "Since the discoveries of psychoanalysis it can no longer be denied, even in our culture, that sexual tensions manifest themselves from the first days of life on. Masturbation, for example, is a general habit early in baby life and in the very young child." (Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat 1978, 7) Spitz showed that an early commencement of sexual behaviour (auto-eroticism) is indicative of a positive relationship between mother and child and a good intellectual development (Kentler 1970, 133). Borneman (1978, 92) confirms this: "In all cultures in every part of the world, babies and little children try to obtain sensual satisfaction by stimulating the surface of their skin. The genital organs are also one of the preferred zones of the body. This we call masturbation in babies. In flat contradiction to what was thought until recent times, children are quite capable of experiencing orgasm at the earliest age." (See also Sarphatie 1982, 43.) "Individuals who didn't masturbate in childhood generally will have considerable difficulty in finding satisfaction in normal intercourse. (...) They will need more time to get used to it." (Borneman 1978, 939)

Van Ussel put it very aptly: "Children are mature for sex at birth; they become mature for procreation only later." (1975, 100)

The visible and audible reactions of even the smallest child should tell the people around it that it is able to distinguish certain sensations as agreeable, others as disagreeable.

The experience of lustful, sexual feelings is something a human being

cannot easily do without. He most certainly needs them. In the Gonado investigation, 61.2% of the male respondents declared that sex was an extremely important factor in their lives; to another 19.8% it was the *most* important. Only 1.7% agreed with the statement that there are more important things in life, while 1.4% thought sex was not very important (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 82). If adults desire this pleasure so intensely, you must come up with very convincing arguments to advance successfully the idea that it should simply be denied to those who aren't yet adult.

Not only are such convincing arguments conspicuous by their absence, but no attempt has even been made to come up with a logical reason. On the other hand there are many arguments against enforcing abstinence upon youth. We will meet them again and again in the course of this book, especially in Chapter Five.

In rejecting the sexuality of children and adolescents, our traditional culture is rather exceptional when compared with others — and it isn't even as traditional as is commonly supposed. The rejection is a distortion of formerly recognised truths, caused by the socio-economic changes of the last two centuries. The concept of the child as an asexual being quite different from the adult is a recent phenomenon.

Romeo and Juliet, our most famous pair of lovers, were children. Our ancestors used to fondle the genitals of their children in order to please and to pacify them, and the adults were amused if the small boy responded with an erection. Young children were also encouraged to play with the genitals of grown-ups (Dasberg 1976, 35-36; van Ussel 1968, 45). At the Court of Versailles the young Dauphin was taught to show his "little thing" to the ladies and to let himself be caressed there. King François I (1515-1547) considered every boy over 14 who had not yet had intercourse to be a sad case. The 14-year-old crown prince, later to be Louis XI, captured Château-Landon in 1437 from the English. Having thus proved himself a man, he requested that his parents allow him to sleep with his even younger bride, Margaret of Scotland. In the event he made such brutal use of his male "rights" that the girl had to keep to her bed for some days thereafter (Dasberg 1976, 36; Breton 1956, II 11-13, 184).

The Municipal Council of Ulm in Germany had to issue in 1527 an order to prohibit boys under the age of 14 from visiting brothels; it seemed that the sheer number of 12- and 13-year-old clients in these houses was disturbing the adults (Deschner 1978, 397; Kemmerich 1910, I 146). The rector of a Dutch school in the Fifteenth Century likewise put brothels out of bounds for his pupils and had 11-year-olds publicly whipped for breaking the rule. (Dasberg 1976, 43) The authorities in London were much more tolerant: as late as 1800 a yearly average 30,000 boys of this age were visiting the town brothels (Fuchs 1911, II Erg. 193). Erasmus of Rotterdam (1469-1536), the famous humanist,

wrote a treatise on sexual pleasure in the form of a conversation between a young man and a whore—and dedicated this to the six-year-old son of a friend (Van den Bergh). William Shakespeare (1564-1616) deplored the fact that youths between 10 and 23 had nothing better to do than importune old people, steal, fight and make girls pregnant (*The Winter's Tale* III, 3). A rich English lady, Grace de Saleby, only came to experience properly the joys of sex in her third marriage: she was then 11 years old. Another English aristocrat, Elisabeth Bridge, wasn't married until she was 13 and stated publicly that she was very disappointed that her 11-year-old husband John hadn't immediately deflowered her (Dasberg 1976, 37-38). The Dutch poet and painter Karel van Mander wrote about 1600 that his 12- to 14-year-old pupils were behaving very lewdly; thus he was advising them to have intercourse in order to avoid headaches and so that they could concentrate better on their studies. (Dasberg 1976, 36)

Only in the last century (1886 in The Netherlands) did legislation make consensual sexual activities with children criminal. Thus, from a historical perspective, this has been a rather recent addition to our own penal laws; in other cultures it is quite unknown, even inconceivable (Killias 1979).

Even if we agree to place a higher value upon sex-only-for-love than upon sex-only-for-lust, we must not lose sight of the fact that a boy can only perfect the physical expression of his tenderness to the degree of freedom he has been allowed in nudity and lust. The body must be trained and exercised in this function as in any other. Only when a boy has had sufficient opportunity to abandon himself uninhibitedly to sexual pleasure and to experiment with sex will he acquire the ability to give, later, the greatest satisfaction to his partner in loving intercourse.

The sex-only-for-love apologist might object that hedonistic sex sometimes leads to a great deal of frustration. This is true. Those who look for more in sex than pleasure, with all the limitations that implies, may even feel repelled by it. Janus (1981, 296) quotes a boy, saying: "To me there's a big difference between making love and fucking someone. I have fucked people and gotten nothing out of it. I mean, I might as well be on the toilet, jerking off."

- 3 A boy received no affection from his parents; between his fourteenth and seventeenth years he tried to find the love he missed in very passionate relations with a teacher, and later with other men. He ultimately realized that these men only wanted him for his beautiful adolescent body and didn't really care for him as a person. He felt disgusted and deceived (Schwarz 1949, 50).
- 4 The same kind of betrayal was felt by a man who for five happy years had had a happy love relationship with a boy. When the boy's family migrated to

I. WHY SEX?

another country they were separated. The man desperately tried to distract himself while he was away on a holiday trip in Spain with boys who bartered their sexual services with him, but he soon discovered that this kind of commercial contact only made him more unhappy and increased his aching feeling of emptiness. (Hennig 1979, 156)

But that needn't be the final word on casual contacts. In other cases the one-night-stand, sought only out of lust, may turn out to be a big surprise, an unforgettable experience, bring to the participant the most intense joy. Tony Duvert (1980, 155) says, "The casual pleasures have their own erotic qualities and may elicit feelings just as intense as the more lasting ones—like the *haikai*, the short Japanese poem which may tell as much as a long tale. We may be amazed at the extreme, almost crushing power of such an experience. We may be afraid of it or pretend indifference. But the fact remains that to those who attempt to experiment with it the effects are convincing. We shouldn't maintain that longer lasting friendships are better than the shorter ones, or that the latter have less value, for the two are quite different entities. When we recall these casual contacts they may gain in our minds a perfection, an intrinsic value which proves this beyond doubt. The power of such experiences is inexhaustible, like a painting you've seen for just two minutes but, because it moved you then so deeply, lingers evermore in your memory."

5 It was just such a casual meeting which drew from André Gide one of his finest passages. Gide had suppressed his erotic feelings for boys for many years. He had even tried to deny them, until one night in an Algerian oasis when Oscar Wilde brought him together with a young Arabian flute-player: "Now, at last, I discovered what was normal for me. No longer was anything forced, hurried, uncertain; nothing clouds the memory I retain of that night. My happiness knew no bounds. It couldn't have been more perfect if it had been an expression of love. But how could there have been love? How could desire have disposed of my heart? My lust was completely without reflection. It knew no fear of being bitten by conscience. But what name could I give to the delight I felt as I held this perfect, wild, hot, lascivious, ambiguous little body in my arms?... Long after Mohammed had left me I remained in a condition of trembling bliss, and although I had already reached a climax of lust five times when coupled with him I renewed this ecstasy repeatedly. After I returned to my hotel room I extended its echoes until the return of daylight..." (Gide 1955, 338-339)

6 Likewise, such a casual meeting may prove to be an incomparable and unique experience to the younger partner. Nils, a Swedish school boy, met, during his summer vacation, a nice man sunning himself on the side of a swimming pool. They started playfully wrestling with each other; both got erections which they could feel inside one another's trunks. "Wouldn't it be

THE ASPECTS OF SEX IN RELATION TO CHILDREN

nicer to do this *really* naked?" the man asked. Nils agreed eagerly and accompanied the man to his home where they continued their wrestling, now stark naked, on a bed. Suddenly the man hugged the boy very tightly in his arms, thrust with his hips, moaned with pleasure and spurted his seed. "I can still remember," Nils told me thirty years later, "how I ran home skipping and singing, enormously proud and happy that my little body could provoke such a strong passion in an adult." (Personal communication)

7 One of the best books I ever read on sexual instruction for adolescents was published in New Zealand—*Down Under the Plum Trees*, by Felicity Tuohy and Michael Murphy. In it there is the story of a boy who, at the birthday party of one of his teachers, got talking with a very nice man. "He gave me his name and address and said, 'Ring me'. That was Saturday night. I rang him Sunday night and he told me to come in and meet him at his flat in town. I went in about eleven o'clock in the morning. We got into bed and he screwed me and then let me screw him. He was so good. He treated me so well and he was really good at screwing. It was an incredible thing for me because at home everyone was hostile to each other and at school I had no friends. Here was this guy showing me kindness and gentleness and it was an amazing experience. I went back Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday and that was the last week of the school holidays. Then I went back to school and never saw him again." (1976, 212)

There are boys who long for a love relationship; to them the sexual aspect may be important but it is certainly not the most important element. There are other boys who, for whatever reason, prefer the casual meeting. Sometimes a boy just simply wants to make sure that his body can excite an adult, that it functions alright in sexual activity. (Hennig 1979, 165)

8 So it was with the Austrian boy of fourteen who got to know a boy-lover at a swimming-pool. The boy seduced the man, and they had a number of additional sexual contacts. Slowly the man began to develop love feelings for the boy, so he invited him to see a movie with him and then go to a good restaurant afterwards. But the boy flatly refused. "Oh, no, I don't want any of that," he said. "I come here to get fucked and for nothing else!" (Personal communication)

4. Sex in Surrender to the Forces of Nature

Finally there is the fourth aspect of sex: a bonding with nature and its expressions; impersonal sexuality. Psychiatrists like Westerman Holstijn and Rümke think that the "oceanic experience" is most easily obtained by someone passing from one phase of life to another, and especially in puberty. (Marlet 1979, 69)

I. WHY SEX?

- 9 Later we will have more to say about the Siwa oasis in Egypt, close to the Libyan border, where boys at puberty used to be "married" to adult men. Robin Maugham witnessed here a festival in which some two dozen *zaggalas* (workers in the palm groves) took part: "lithe smooth-cheeked boys, stocky Berbers with shaved scalps, gigantic negroes..." They drank fermented palmwine and began to dance. Their monotonous chanting grew louder and louder. "*Ya Haoul Illah*" "Oh power of God." Quicker and quicker beat the drums. The faces of the men flamed with passion. "Tearing off their clothes, dancers flung themselves into wilder movements. A boy would break away to perform a frantic solo belly-dance until pulled back into the jerking circle by his friend. (...) Men's bodies as well as their eyes soon revealed rising passions. They quivered with the intensity of their excitement. '*Ya Haoul Illah. Ya Haoul Illah.*' The chant was bellowed now, as if it were a protest against all restrictions, against the need to work and the need to live in bonds of flesh and the need to grow old and to die. It was a plea for release from human bondage. The *zaggalas* were pouring their virility into the dance as a libation to freedom. Tomorrow might be painful, but tonight they could experience the culmination of joy." Afterwards they all lay together, utterly relaxed. "But on their faces was an expression which at first I found it hard to decipher. Later in the evening I understood the reason for it. They were devoid of any feeling of guilt, the cross of western civilisation, and therefore they were free from our worst worry. They were careless." (1950, 114-120)

SUMMARY

If we were obliged to put age limits to our preceding exposition of the different aspects of sex, we could say that a boy is mature for lust, for hedonistic sex, from his birth on; sex as an expression of love becomes a possibility from about five years of age; puberty is the best time for the "oceanic", the mystic experience and for using sex to unite one with nature. Procreation should be the privilege of the adult man.

Chapter 2.

Sexual Variety in Men

SEXUAL VARIETY IN MEN

One of the most striking findings of sexology is the incredible variability of all human sexual aspects—the physical as well as the mental. This is sorely neglected in sexual education and instruction.

1. Anatomical: The Organs

In the Brongersma Foundation there are several thousands of pictures of naked boys and men; the outward appearance of their genitals is as varied as their faces. The male member may be very small or very big, very thin or very thick; the scrotum long or short, the testicles puny or remarkably large. The shape of the glans varies enormously. There are magnificent genitals which ornament the body, as well as ugly ones, just as in the case of faces.

2. Physiological: Function of the Organs

Some penises change very little in length from flaccidity to erection while others grow to nearly twice the relaxed length and girth. The erected member of one individual feels like rubber; in another it is as hard as a piece of wood. Under excitement, some penises erect rapidly, in a flash; others grow only very gradually. One male will need but a few seconds to attain climax, another requires several minutes or even half an hour. The places most sensitive to

sexual stimulation are not the same in every male. In pre-pubertal orgasm no seed is expelled, but in some boys there is already a secretion of clear mucus (product of the Cowper glands). This mucus, provoked by sexual excitement, is never secreted by some males, while in others its flow is abundant. The volume of ejaculate in and after puberty may be small, but it may also be as much as 8 or 9 cubic centimetres. The number of spermatozoa may vary from 20 to 540 million per cc (Hotchkiss 1944, 139-140). At climax the ejaculate in some individuals wells slowly out of the glans while in others it is forcefully squirted for a distance as great as a few metres. The physical manifestations of orgasm may be nearly invisible in some people but other males pant, cry out and go through convulsions. Some adolescents can ejaculate again 20 seconds after the first climax; some are capable of intercourse six times a night—but some need a few weeks rest before being able to perform again. The need for relief of sexual tension in some is so strong that it demands an orgasm several times a day for a sense of emotional well-being; in others this need is almost completely lacking.

All these examples fall comfortably within the conventional framework of natural behaviour. Moreover, such variations aren't always just between individuals; often they occur in one individual at different periods of his life. One shouldn't speak lightly about "normal" and "abnormal". Nature has drawn its boundaries very far apart.

3. Psychological: Attraction

What has been said about the shape and function of the male genitalia, the physical side of sexuality, applies even more forcefully to its psychological aspects: sexual tendencies and preferences. We now enter very mysterious territory.

What in older literature was called "the sexual impulse" is defined in contemporary sexology as "the sexual appetite". (de Boer 1978, II 68; Borneman 1978, 104, 129, 337, 514, 516; Gagnon & Simon 1973, 15; Haeberle 1978, 131) But de Boer adds that many people, especially males, experience their sexuality as an impulse and this representation becomes so accurate that we come across it again and again. In this book about boys and men the two concepts will therefore be used.

Now there is nobody whose sexual appetite or impulse is excited or provoked by every human being he meets. Physical properties, personality characteristics which to one individual are highly exciting may leave another completely indifferent—or may even seem repellent. How this fixation on particular properties originates remains obscure and unexplained. Perhaps it is inborn (or at least a disposition to be attracted to certain traits is inborn); perhaps it is partly acquired after birth. But if it is acquired it happens nearly

always so early in life—perhaps at an age of 3 to 5—that it is very difficult to ascertain. Consequently this fixation will appear to the individual himself as something natural, innate, an inseparable part of his being. One perceives it as having been there from the beginning; it is impossible to imagine oneself without it.

This, however, poses a major problem to human society. A man may be quite able to *conceive* that his neighbour gets sexually excited by things other than he does himself, but this doesn't mean that he *understands* it, will be able to discover similar feelings in himself and by so doing be able to vividly empathize with his neighbour's feelings. A sexual attraction to which someone is not himself sensible remains mysterious and strange. Fantasy fails to help us (Haeberle 1978, 140).

This helps explain why an overwhelming majority of paedophiles and homophiles, though belonging to a small group which is rejected and often cruelly persecuted and tortured by the society in which they live, still don't want to get rid of their "tendencies", even if there were an easy way to do it (Bell & Weinberg 1978, 124; Bernard 1979, 76; Carpenter 1912, 128; Jouhan-deau 1981, 11-12). Masters and Johnson (1980, 348) learned to distrust the sincerity of even those who claimed they wanted to be changed. For one may be able to understand intellectually that the satisfaction of his sexual appetite in another direction (for instance with an adult partner or with a partner of the opposite sex) could give him the same pleasure and be as delightful as the satisfaction of his own variant appetite—and that this might be much more acceptable socially and less dangerous—but one cannot really feel this, much less imagine what it would be like. Fantasy lets him down; ultimate change is perceived as an irreparable loss: he will lose what he now loves and in exchange will get something he cannot conceive of as being equally worthy of love.

Thus we remain circumscribed by our knowledge that other people feel differently from the way we do. To forget this is to be narrow-minded and stupid. But if we raise such stupidity to dogma and proclaim that only *our* inclinations are "normal" and all others abnormal, perverse and disgusting, we become intolerant and immoral. Doing this we base our ethics upon our lack of imagination.

A) THE IMPORTANCE OF THE PARTNER'S SEX

In man, as in sexually differentiated animals, the sexual appetite—with rare exceptions—is directed upon individuals of the same species. Humans desire humans and are sexually excited by humans. But, as we have already said, not by every human being.

"Gentlemen prefer blondes," the song tells us. There are, however, also

II. ADULT LOVERS

gentlemen who prefer brunettes. Why? An insoluble mystery. Some people's sexual excitement is strongly dependent upon one single peculiarity; the person who lacks it lacks all attraction. In others the limits are more generously drawn: various peculiarities are able to excite them sexually—sometimes even contradictory ones, for example, platinum blond as well as pitch-black hair. These people's liberty of choice is wider. But in no person is it unlimited.

Obviously the sex of a possible partner is an important element of attraction. Our society even likes to split mankind into those who love the other sex (*heterophiles*) and those who prefer their own sex (*homophiles*). Cultural history shows, however, that this was not always so, nor is it so everywhere today; recent sexological research has concluded that the fact of being either male or female is in reality less important in provoking sexual attraction than our traditional Western culture assumes.

The clear demarcation between the majority of heterophiles and the small minority of homophiles made by researchers into homosexuality in the second half of the last and the first half of the present century has become dubious since Kinsey's sociological investigations. The situation in reality seems to be much more complicated. Kinsey studied the sexual activities of American men and boys, and when in 1948 he published his findings they caused a sensation. Of 4275 white men between the ages of 16 and 55, only 50% had never had sexual contacts with nor experienced a sexual interest in a partner of the same sex; 13% had experienced erotic feelings in response to other males, although this had never led to sexual contact. From the age of 16, and continuing for a period of at least three years:

5% had had occasional homosexual contacts carried to the point of orgasm;

7% had had more frequent homosexual contacts;

5% had had just as frequent homosexual as heterosexual contacts;

3% had had more frequent homosexual than heterosexual contacts;

2% had had almost exclusively homosexual contacts;

and 8% had had only homosexual contacts.

Of all males, 4% had had only homosexual contacts during the course of their lives. (Kinsey 1948, 650-651)

The Kinsey findings were later confirmed in The Netherlands by Kooy and Sterken, by Giese and Schmidt in Germany (Sanders 1977, 14). Similar figures were found in Barrington's sample of 2500 males (age 16-75) in the United Kingdom (1981, 22-23). Kinsey concluded that the assumed division between heterosexuality and homosexuality was not absolute; it was rather a matter of polarity. If one constructs a scale with one extreme 100% heterosexuality and the other 100% homosexuality, various gradations, complemen-

SEXUAL VARIETY IN MEN

tary proportions of either end member will occur between. Every human being, then, would find his place on this line, on this sliding scale. The man leading an entirely bisexual life would stand in the middle.

In most people there is a lack of self-knowledge, incomplete insight into their internal landscape. Consciously they may vigorously deny certain elements which really are there. Two cases can show us how completely a man can deceive himself about what really lies in his sexual makeup.

10 An officer in the French army was sent to a lonely outpost in the Algerian desert. Up until then he had only had intercourse with women and in it had felt quite satisfied. But there the other servicemen cautioned him against going with the local females who, they said, were dirty and unattractive. Moreover, starting something with a girl was very dangerous, as it would be perceived as an insult to her honour and provoke violent revenge by her father or brothers. Much better to follow the general custom, he was told, and do it with boys; these were cleaner and parents didn't have any objections. At first the idea of having sex with a boy made him feel sick to his stomach. Gradually, however, his sexual appetite grew more and more difficult to deal with; masturbation wasn't enough. One day his work kept him in the barracks longer than usual; when he left all the other soldiers had gone. Waiting at the gate was a boy; the boy smiled at him—he had particularly beautiful black eyes. Suddenly the soldier decided to have a try. He followed the boy into the dunes outside the oasis. When the boy shook off his djellaba and pressed against him with his naked body, the man was amazed at how delightful it felt to take this firm, smooth body into his arms and to caress it. The sexual intercourse which ensued satisfied him completely. He soon discovered that he felt much better if he used a boy from time to time and that his health in consequence improved. Eventually he came to like it so much that he desired nothing else, and intercourse with boys became his preferred sexual activity.

11 Henry went to sea at the age of 15, looking for adventure and sexual freedom. On board the ship he shared a cabin with Eric, three years his senior, and soon they were close friends. Eric slept stark naked and masturbated openly every night looking at pornographic magazines which he shared with Henry. In the first port they visited, Eric took Henry to a girl he knew well and had intercourse with her with Henry looking on. Then they changed rôles and Henry had intercourse for the first time in his life, helped in the act by the instruction of Eric lying beside him. They both enjoyed this three-way scene so much that they repeated it in every port where their ship called, always together going with the same woman. This went on for months, until one day their ship came to a port where dark-skinned native boys dived for coins which the seamen threw overboard. Henry watched this in amusement for a while, then went to his cabin and got a big shock. Entering, he found Eric engaged in intercourse with a naked black boy. The

faces of both were distorted with passion. The sight seemed so disgusting and loathsome to Henry that he ran to the lavatory and vomited. For days he was unable to say a single word to Eric; whenever he was around Eric he was taken by nausea. Very gradually Eric succeeded in re-establishing a kind of communication. At first Henry only railed at him. A week passed before he was able to listen to Eric's explanation, which was that a *real* seaman is open to any kind of pleasure and ought to try everything. With these boys it was a question of refined salacity, giving the most exquisite pleasure. Henry's curiosity was excited at last. Eric's opinion was confirmed by others too, and when, a month later, they came back to the same port, he decided to try his luck—and was rewarded by a superlative orgasm. In the years that followed he never passed up a chance to have sex with native boys. (Similar to case 44 in Stekel 1921, 277)

These two stories show how little aware many males are of their own impulses and potentials. Some activity which is strongly rejected as loathsome and disgusting may beneath it all belong comfortably in one's own natural field of action. There can be little doubt that people would be healthier and more honest if they didn't repress their potentialities and acknowledged clearly their position on the sliding scale between the heterosexual and homosexual poles. A society which opposes and condemns homosexuality renders this, of course, much more difficult. Thus the cultural rejection of homosexuality is unhealthy and immoral; it gives rise to dishonesty, distortion and hypocrisy.

Kinsey discovered the relative scale between the poles of homosexuality and heterosexuality while examining the sexual *outlets* of his respondents. The psychological background of these activities were for the most part left out of consideration. His research didn't go into tendencies or attitudes; it limited itself to acts concluding with orgasm. Considering the fact that the North American society in which Kinsey performed his investigation imposes an extremely heavy taboo on homosexuality, we must assume that the percentage of homophilia (or the sexual *preference* for individuals of the same sex) must be substantially higher than the percentage of homosexuality (or same sex *activity*).

This is all the more likely since this taboo is maintained with such emotional violence. The American psychiatrist Wainwright Churchill (1967, 163-164) attributes the emotional coldness of so many of his fellow-countrymen ("hard boiled businessmen") to the horrible custom which forbids a father to show any tenderness toward his adolescent son. He's not even supposed to touch him, or he'll be suspected of having homophile tendencies. No inclination is ever rejected with so much emotion if it isn't one which requires much effort to suppress. Adorno rightly stressed the truth that taboos grow in strength in proportion to the subject's own unconscious desire

to do what is forbidden. The greater the homophilia in a man the stronger must he fight it, deny it to himself in order to conform to the social obligation to be "normal", thus the more emotional he will be in rejecting homophilia (Sengers 1969, 172). The same could be true about societies as a whole. If so, it is significant that the anxiety over homosexual behaviour in Western civilisation "is a unique culture trait which cannot be found in the rest of the world" (Trumbach, quoted by Sprague 1984, 35).

Professor Verveen (University of Leiden) carried out a research project among his students on the relative strength of their erotic responses toward members of their own and the opposite sex, and from the results it appeared that the preponderance of heterophilia over homophilia in his average subject was surprisingly small. Of course, this group was hardly representative of the Dutch population as a whole, but perhaps in this instance that was an advantage, for, as many investigations have shown, people with academic backgrounds generally view sexual phenomena which deviate from traditional norms in a more liberal and open-minded manner (Kinsey 1948; Meilof-Oonk 1969; Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979; etc.) Moreover, the answers of these subjects could not have been given without deep introspection. Verveen concluded that human sexual appetite is directed upon *humans*, with a slight preference for humans of the opposite sex (1980, 318, 321). It is well to recall Goethe's *Venetian epigrams*:

I love boys, but I prefer girls. If I have my fill of a girl I can turn her around and use her like a boy. (No. 31)

Regrettably, not everyone has such clear understanding of his own sexual nature as Goethe did, or is so willing to reveal it. Nevertheless in a French investigation no less than 53% of the subjects claimed they believed every person may be attracted by both sexes, while 21% had doubts about this point and only 26% asserted that an individual was attracted either to men or to women (Baudry 1982, 233).

As we have seen, most individuals fight the homosexual component and repress or suppress it (Van der Zijl 1976, 340). Today many sexologists accept the premise that nearly everyone has a disposition toward *bisexuality* (MacDonald 1981, 23; Churchill 1967, 271-272; Naslednikov 1981, 141), and Freud long ago pointed out that heterosexuality is no more self-evident as a phenomenon than homosexuality (1920, 22). Bisexuality might well be the original condition of the human race.

There are, however, only a few men who lead a really bisexual existence, such as the Roman Emperor Commodus who is said to have had a harem of 300 girls and 300 boys (Armand 1931, 116; Borneman 1978, 304-305). An 18-year-old English youth told me, "I'm crazy about girls and mad about

boys," and, indeed, he was most actively involved with both sexes. Falk, a sexologist who worked for 12 years in Africa, found this condition prevailed among the young blacks he studied: 90% of them had intercourse with both sexes and enjoyed each equally (Italiaander 1969, 111). "Normal" men often envy such bisexuals, for their hunting grounds are more extended. The "normal" man's jealousy often expresses itself in deriding those who run with the hare and hunt with the hounds. They forget, however, that everyone has his sexual limitations: although to the bisexual the sex of the partner may make little difference, he will be conscious of other restrictions instead. (Duvert 1980, 107)

The striking bisexuality which Verveen uncovered among his students may astonish people who grew up in the Judeo-Christian culture. Yet in every culture which has a positive view of sexuality, men are accustomed to have intercourse with women as well as with members of their own sex: exclusive heterosexuality is as rare as exclusive homosexuality, and if we were more tolerant we would probably find the same was true in our own society (West 1977, 136, 163). We only have to go back to the records left by the ancient Greeks and Romans to be transported to a world where sexual differentiation had only a minor importance in the erotic practices of men. In discussions of the pleasures they found in young bodies, and in poetry on the same subject, boys and girls tend to be mentioned in the same breath, though often, as in Horace, with an evident preference for boys (Brusendorf 1963, 68).

Processions by the cult of Dionysos carried through the streets an enormous wooden phallus and sang the words, "Phallus, thou, companion of Bacchus, thou rake, hunting housewives and boys in the night...!" (Stoll 1908, 657) When a besieged city fell into the hands of a victorious army, according to historians of the time, all the women *and boys* were raped. For example, when the citizens of Kroton in southern Italy conquered Sibaris, both the girls and the boys were all exhibited stark naked so that each soldier could make his choice. (Peyrefitte 1977, 345, 56)

On the departure of his friend Flaccus to Cyprus, the Roman poet Martialis hoped that he would "find there a handsome boy just for him alone," and that he would "excite the lust of an entirely chaste girl." (XI 91) Horace exhorts an acquaintance: "When salacity makes your penis swell, why risk an explosion if you have a slave girl or boy at hand on whom to spend your raging desire?" (I-2, 116-118) Solon, Athens' great legislator, declared that a poor man was luckier than many a rich one if only he is in good health and has "from time to time the chance to enjoy the youthful beauty of a boy or a woman." (Buffière 1980, 243) In Rome rich people could keep harems of young slaves of both sexes with whom to amuse themselves. Martialis (XII, 87) waspishly comments upon such a sexual Croesus: "How pitiful, to be the owner of thirty girls and thirty boys and have only one cock "which, more-

over, refuses to stand up!" The less well-to-do had to make use of brothels; there the visitor could peep into cubicles "where a boy or a girl smiles upon you." (XI, 45)

Now, man is certainly a taboo-making animal, and so the Greeks also had their sexual taboos (i.e. irrational interdictions), but they were quite different from ours. With us the taboo weighs heavily upon homosexuality, while with them the sex of the partner with whom a man satisfied his sexual needs was of little concern. Instead they attached the greatest importance to the status of the participants: was he free-born citizen or slave? The free-born citizen was allowed to have sex with a male or female slave. The slave, on the contrary, was severely punished or even put to death if he had his pleasure with a free-born boy. Additionally, there was another taboo which was no less important: once a free-born boy had passed his eighteenth year and thus attained adulthood, he was totally dishonoured if he took the youthful, or passive, role in oral or anal intercourse (Buffière 1980, 204, 605-611, 621; Dover 1978, 48, 60).

But this taboo did not apply to younger boys. From some indeterminate time before puberty until the onset of late adolescence, let us say from 12 to 17 years of age, a boy was allowed to let himself be penetrated by a man. This could even bring him honour and enhance his reputation. On the island of Crete boys who had had intercourse with a man wore specially coloured clothing and had honoured seats in a special section of the theatre.

In the *Anthologia Graeca* collection of ancient Greek verse, many poems deal with the age at which boys were thought most fit to be the sexual partners of men. Straton (XII, 4) wrote:

*When a boy is twelve he gives me pleasure
And when he's thirteen he'll attract me more.
At fourteen he's the sweetest blossom of love,
And when he turns fifteen the lust with him is keener yet.
Boys of sixteen are for the gods, and I wouldn't touch
A boy of seventeen because he's only fit for Zeus.
If you're looking for older boys the game is off
Because it's obvious you want him to do the same to you.*

Another epigram (XII, 228) by the same poet fixes the limits more precisely:

*If a budding boy sins through inexperience
This casts shame upon the friend who seduced him.
If a boy past the proper age suffers a man to love him,
His willingness magnifies the shame two-fold.*

II. ADULT LOVERS

*But Moiris, my boy, there's a stage when it's no more and not yet shameful
And that's where we are now, you and I.*

In summary, to be the active partner, be it with men, be it with boys, was perfectly normal to the Greeks. Their bisexuality showed a pronounced preference for boys over girls. To be the passive partner was permissible in pubertal and adolescent boys but thought shameful in adult men. Free-born people could satisfy their desires with slaves at will; slaves were not allowed to be the active partner with a free citizen.

This Greek view is far from being exceptional in human society; it recurs later in Islamic culture. The Arab poet Abu Zayd says of his own penis (Burton 1885, VIII 348),

*Dealing to fair young girl delicious joy,
And no less welcome to the blooming boy.*

In Arab literature we find the same sentiments about sex with older boys being improper. Abu Nuwas relates how a boy, after discovering down on his cheeks, refuses to be kissed: "Master, I've become a man, and now I find it objectionable to do it with a man. What happened during youth is over. Don't keep on pestering me." (Wagner 1965, 186)

It can now be stated quite generally that homosexuality is universal in the human race. Earlier explorers and anthropologists wrote that this tribe or that primitive people was totally free of any trace of homosexuality. Later investigators have revealed, however, that in all such cases the earlier writers had been mistaken; their enquiries were too superficial (Herdt 1981, XV 11). Where there are men there is homosexuality.

We went into some detail about the Greek sexual taboo system in order to contrast it with that of our contemporary Western culture and in so doing show that all such systems are relative and of transient importance. They are invented in their entirety by man and change with the times. Their origins may be understandable to a greater or lesser extent or they may remain shrouded in mystery. But once a taboo establishes itself somewhere people become subject to its interdictions. It becomes an idol demanding human sacrificial victims. To venerate it human life and human happiness are destroyed.

One can see why the pastoral people of the Old Testament, with its ideology of blood and soil, placed such a high value upon numerous offspring: they were needed to occupy the Promised Land and exterminate its original inhabitants. Anti-conception practices like that used by Onan (withdrawing from intercourse just before ejaculation in order to shed his seed upon the floor) was thus strongly taboo. The necessity to exclude homosexuality was even more urgent, since it also served to differentiate the Chosen

SEXUAL VARIETY IN MEN

People from their neighbours, who accepted and practiced homosexuality and even included it in some of their religious cults. The struggle against homosexuality was in part a struggle for tribal purity.

In no way, however, can one justify the elevation of this taboo of a pastoral people, however understandable its origins may be, to a postulate of ethics in our present-day Western society. We don't want to increase our population. We don't want to isolate ourselves in the world. That century after century people breaking this taboo were cruelly tortured and sentenced to be burnt alive was unethical. And it is simple immorality that modern society, despite decades of more liberal laws, is still, every year, condemning hundreds and hundreds of innocent men to death by suicide as the direct effect of its discrimination and naked loathing.

B) THE IMPORTANCE OF THE PARTNER'S AGE

We have already seen that for the ancient Greeks the sex of the partner was of minor significance, even if there was a preference for boys: they loved boys *and* girls, the youngness in and of both sexes. The age of the partners was more important than their gender.

Now if it is true that the sexual appetite of most people is directed rather more to one sex than the other, it is also true that there will be a preference for a certain age or age range. One of my correspondents wrote in a letter that he could love every human male between zero and sixty years, but he would certainly be an exception.

Charting attraction by age would be a much more complicated proposition than placing a person on the scale of human affectionate response we previously proposed between pure heterophilia and pure homophilia. This is because of the diversity of age groups. Moreover, where a real love relationship has been established, a sexual partner may keep his appeal for his lover long after he has grown out of the preferred age group. Limits, therefore, tend to be blurred.

There are people who prefer greybeards while to others a man in the prime of life is the most beautiful. Others find their ideal in adolescence, in puberty, in pre-puberty and finally there is a group of men who are particularly excited by very little children.

Science has looked for explanations of this, just as it has for homophilia and heterophilia. It has been proposed that the gerontophile in his love for greybeards is searching for a father-figure, the lover of children for his lost youth, wanting to offer to the small child the tenderness he himself found lacking in his parents. Some scientists are convinced that one is a homophile or a child-lover from birth. Others assume the inclination is acquired later in life, even if this can only happen in a person who is innately so disposed. All in

all we know no more about the origins of a man's heterophilia than about his homophilia—or whatever other “-philia” society may tell him he has.

This battle of the theorists, however, has little importance in the daily lives of the individuals involved, for even if such inclinations are acquired rather than innate, this acquisition has already occurred by the end of the first years of his life by some process which has yet to be convincingly explained. By the time a child is five or six years old his sexual inclinations are fixed so firmly as to be almost impossible to dislodge (Churchill 1967, 214; Klimmer 1968, 93; Van der Kwast 1968, 118; Sengers 1967, 144; Wolfenden 1957, Section 68; Wyss 1967, 44-45). In puberty or even before puberty the individual becomes conscious of being sexual and by then his inclinations are simply fact, linked so closely to his whole sense of being that they appear completely natural, in the sense that he always had them. Neither social acceptance nor rejection can alter his sexual preferences, although environmental attitudes toward it may have the greatest importance in determining his peace of mind or his worry, his happiness or misery. A moral system which wishes to contribute to human happiness should take this into consideration; it must insist on sexual tolerance. This isn't just a question of morals, moreover; it is a question of justice, for the direction of a person's sexual inclination is not consciously and freely chosen; nobody can be held responsible for his own sexual nature.

Inclinations found only in a minority of people are often labelled “unnatural”, “abnormal”, “perverse” or “deviant”. There is little sense in this. Feeling attracted to boys, for instance, is no more unnatural than feeling attracted to persons with red hair (Righton 1981, 36-37). People having these less common inclinations are often supposed to experience an overwhelmingly greater pleasure in satisfying them than “normal” people do. If this were the case we could point to the popular castigation as being rooted in envy, but it isn't the case at all. The homophile having sex with a man or the boy-lover embracing his young friend experiences on average no more and no less pleasure than the heterophile having intercourse with a woman (Allen, quoted by Pieterse 1978, 66).

There has been a lot of research on homophilia. Unfortunately the subject of sexual preference for certain age groups has received much less attention. Probably some kind of scale like the one we proposed between homophilia and heterophilia could be used to analyse the sexual age preferences of a given population. Most likely it would reveal a cluster in the childhood and adolescent years. For most men and women characteristically think children beautiful, attractive and loveable; children arouse tender feeling in them. Clearly these feelings are of the utmost importance for the preservation of the human race. No living creature is more helpless than the human baby, and so in need of love; no creature is, for its physical well-being, dependant to

such a degree on nursing and care; no creature is for its psychological development so completely committed to living in a community with adults. If, in response to these needs, there exists in adults an inclination to love children, this is enormously valuable.

Let us do as we did with the scale between heterophilia and homophilia: make one end a 100% preference for children and the other complete indifference to children (this end could also be attraction to elderly people, or gerontophilia). Every woman and every man, then, could place himself somewhere on the scale between. Every human being is to a greater or lesser degree paedophile (the psychiatrist Maas, quoted by Rogier 1973, 36). We will return to this theme in Chapter Four.

But this idea, despite the truth in it, meets with the most violent opposition. Many people will raise the objection that it mistakenly equates the sexual, the erotic with the bestowing of loving care upon a child in the process of bringing him up. For to admit to oneself the erotic element of *this* human activity is in our culture enormously more difficult than in the case of homophilia. And the reason is that Western society has been deceitfully indoctrinated during the last two centuries in the concept of children as “innocent” and “pure”—i.e. asexual creatures. Creatures, therefore, who should be carefully guarded against any contact with sexuality. Within the ethics of sex-only-for-procreation it is immoral enough for a man to approach a fellow male with sexual intentions; it is much, much worse if he does so with a child.

Conscience is to a large extent ruled by the idea that anything which shouldn't be simply isn't. In order for him to accept consciously that his attraction to children has also its erotic and sexual aspects, modern man has to overcome a taboo which weighs upon him like lead—and most men are unable to do this. In the real world, however, the erotic and sexual elements are legion, in the child as well as in the adult.

We will have more to say about the child in the next chapter. Let us for the moment only stress the pronounced pleasure skin contact causes in the child from the moment of his birth on, and his delight in tenderness, in being fondled, his desire to crawl into the bed of his parents and other adults, to be naked against a naked body; later his joy in romping (“horsing around”), touching other bodies. That a boy involved in such activities often gets an erection proves how strong the sensual element in him is.

It is a well known fact that young mothers experience lust feelings while suckling their child. This can be so strong as to bring on a complete genital orgasm. And for the adult, the fondling, kissing, touching, “rough housing” with the child will have an undercurrent of lust. It is not unusual for a man taking a child on his knee to “ride the horsie” to find himself getting an erection (Stekel 1922, 312).

And this is a good thing. Once, as a defence lawyer, I was in court defending a youth leader who had been in charge of a group of 12- to 15-year-old neglected boys in a youth home. After he had been there for six months he finally gave in to the desires of three of the boys for some intimate tenderness; when he came into their bedroom to say goodnight he stroked their naked bodies and in so doing casually touched their penises. He made no secret of this, even discussed it with his colleagues, so that the powers that be were quite aware of what he was doing. At first they raised no objections. Later, however, a disagreement with the management arose over completely different matters and he was dismissed. This caused a revolution among his boys. "At last we got a good leader and now they sack him!" they complained. The management needed more ammunition to support their dismissal, so they lodged a complaint for "indecent conduct" with the police. I told the judge that these boys had been starved of affection, had not received much physical tenderness in their upbringing, that my client's behaviour, thus, had been quite commendable.

"But," the judge interrupted me at this point, "in doing so the accused experienced sensations of lust!"

Now, to men of the law, lust feelings can only be viewed with horror, for they taint with indecency any activity in which they occur. The physician who touches a naked body during examination is not supposed to experience arousal—and as long as he doesn't he remains outside the purview of the law. But every man who enjoys touching a naked body other than that of his lawfully wedded wife is acting indecently. The judge thus supposed that I, as defence council, would vigorously deny the imputed lust feelings of my client and object that there was no proof whatever of this. Instead I replied, "Yes... and thank heavens he did!"

Evidently amazed, the Judge asked, "What do you mean?"

I then explained that a child is gifted with a marvellous sense of intuition. If he gets the impression that a grown-up in charge of him feels dutifully obliged to stroke his hair, kiss him, cuddle him simply because the books say he should, he will hate this and interpret it as a kind of insult. What makes a caress a caress, tenderness tenderness, is precisely this intuitional certainty about the pleasure which he who caresses experiences in giving the caress, the joy he feels in this intimacy.

Sigmund Freud brought a storm down upon his head by speaking plainly about the sexual content of the relationship between the child and the adults who care for him. But the sexual feelings are real, on both sides. The communication between the child and all persons who care for him is an infinite source of sexual excitement for him, extending into all the erogenous zones of his body. And all the physical expressions of love which adults offer to the child are borrowed from their own sexual lives where they are used to

excite the sexual appetite of their partners (Freud 1920, 92). Man simply knows no other way.

The French philosopher Schérer (1979, 176) goes so far as to suggest that one reason there is such heat and fanaticism in the battle to preserve the "nuclear family" is that nowadays this is the only institution which offers socially acceptable opportunity for adults and children to have affectionate, directly sensual relationships with one other.

It is unfortunate when the sexual element in these relationships is not conscious and consciously accepted, for the fear of recognizing it leads to behaviour on the adult's part which may seriously traumatise the child. If parents avoid touching the genitals of their offspring, are embarrassed by any mention of these organs, the child can only conclude that this part of his body is ugly and dirty—and certainly can have no connection with love and tenderness. And so a fundamental attitude is acquired which will dominate the child's thinking forever more: love is essentially separate from sexuality. This can have fatal consequences. If the child seeks in the companionship of persons outside of his family the love and tenderness they have withheld, and if he finds it, he is fortunate indeed. But for many this escape route is hopelessly cut off (Möller 1983, 96).

ATTRACTION TO CHILDREN

A Common Phenomenon

As early as 60 years ago psychoanalyst Wilhelm Stekel (1922, 311, 320) wrote of the sexual attraction to children, "My experience has taught me that this is very nearly a normal component of the sexual impulse. Almost everybody will, at one time or another, discover himself thinking such thoughts, rejecting and condemning them, however, with all the emotion of moral indignation. Many people of high moral and cultural standards have confessed to me that such sinful thoughts have been inspired in them by children.... We hardly realise how constantly present paedophilia is in men and women."

Sixty years later the well known German sexologist Professor Sigusch found it much less difficult to deal with these "sinful thoughts". According to him adults have problems if they *don't* desire tenderly sexual relations with a child (quoted by Bendig, 1980, 9). In France, Gabriel Matzneff (1977, 80) calls the absence of child-love "a bad symptom" and in England Rosemary Gordon (1978, 44), a psychoanalyst follower of Jung, wrote in 1976, "Paedophilia, the love and sensuous experience of child and youth, is a normal and universal phenomenon." "When these factors are considered it is clear that the sexual preferences of the paedophile are not so far removed from those of the normal man as they might at first appear." (Wilson & Cox 1983, 126)

It is now technically possible to make laboratory tests of what images excite a man sexually. The penis of the subject is introduced into an apparatus which measures the degree of its swelling and records it with an instrument called a plethysmograph. The Clark Institute of Psychiatry in Canada wished to so examine "paedophiles" in order to distinguish their responses from "normal" males. Pictures of naked children were shown to laboratory subjects of both groups. The outcome was surprising: the so-called "normals" reacted with a penile swelling equal to that of the paedophiles! It appeared that one simply could not establish in this way any difference between them and men who had had sexual contacts with children. (CAPM 1980, 38)

English investigators, using this method at Broadmoor Hospital and Wormwood Scrubs Prison, were equally puzzled by the "overlap between normals and detected paedophile offenders" (West 1980, 220).

The French psychiatrist Françoise Dolto claimed that many fathers and mothers act like paedophiles toward their children. In one investigation into parent/child relations a mother said of her son, "As for his body and physical contact with his father, they like to romp like lunatics with each other, stark naked. They give each other massages and do all kinds of things together. There is a lot of sensuality between father and son." (Schérer 1979, 176)

In this field, all distinctions and categories must be relative. But even keeping this in mind, we must not lose sight of the fact that there are those men and women for whom eroticism with children has a very special significance or importance. There are many intermediate positions between being poor and rich but this doesn't keep us from designating a certain group of people as wealthy. Thus we can define as child-lovers (paedophiles) those people in whom the (universal) attraction to children is more pronounced than in the majority of their fellow beings: it is so clearly pronounced, in fact, that it takes on the greatest importance, dominates, colours and gives direction to the sexual side of their lives (de Groot 1981, 4; Nationaal Centrum 1976; Rouweller-Wutz 1976, 5). Jacques de Brethmas (1979, 64) defines himself as one of these in declaring, "If someone would speak about me without mentioning my boy-love he wouldn't give a complete picture; it would remain the picture of someone else. To a very large degree, all my emotions, feelings, all my preoccupations, my whole life is directed to, consecrated to, staked out on what lies closest to my heart: boys."

It was in psychoanalytic literature that the proposal was made to define such people as those who "require the co-operation of a child-partner of the same or opposite sex in order to achieve sexual gratification." (O'Carroll 1980, 60) To them the child is the human being at its most attractive and beautiful. The presence of children excites them and makes them happy. They are always looking for the chance to be in the company of children. The choice of hobbies and professions is often guided by such sexual tendencies (teacher,

youth leader, pediatrician). Their erotic dreams and masturbation fantasies are filled with naked children.

Other distinguishing characteristics seem to be lacking. No external features separate the child-lover from people in whom this inclination remains in the background. Only one person can make a sure diagnosis, and that is the person himself. For only he knows what he feels, what he dreams of, what he fantasises. No one else can tell.

We must strongly stress that the actual sexual activities of an individual give only a poor indication, never proof, of his sexual tendencies. There are non-paedophiles who have intercourse with children. This is easy to understand, since there is a certain percentage of paedophilia in every human being. On the other hand there are paedophiles who never dare to touch a child. Neither the sexual activities with a child nor their absence is decisive proof, or counter-proof, of paedophilia.

Schofield (1965) and other investigators following him have offered convincing proof that the homophile individual is distinct from other human beings only in his preference for partners of the same sex and in no other respect. In my experience the same applies to child-lovers. In them, as in homophiles, a tendency common to human nature is more pronounced than in the average human. That is all. If it seems that we find in both of these groups a somewhat higher percentage of strange personalities, this might be more due to the stress placed upon them by a society which persecutes, punishes, insults, ostracises and despises them than to some innate character defect.

The Different Forms of Child-Love

Adults especially attracted to children can be either male or female; their appetites can be directed chiefly along homosexual or heterosexual lines. Thus there are four possibilities. Three of these we will deal with now, briefly, to confine ourselves for the rest of this work to the fourth.

MAN/GIRL

Since the enormous success of Nabokov's famous novel *Lolita*, this kind of relationship has received a great deal of attention and open discussion. Of males sentenced for sexual acts with children, the number who have had contacts with girls is always considerably higher than those who have had relations with boys (Wegner, 53; Janus 1981, 222; Linedecker 1981, 191; Baurmann 1983, 137, 217, 491; Hearings 1977, 358). A Swiss investigation, for example, reveals that 52% of the accused had had relations with girls, 21.8% with boys, 5% with both girls and boys, while 20% had committed incest,

II. ADULT LOVERS

mostly fathers with their daughters. (Wyss 1967, 11) In general, Baurmann (1983, 137) states, "the victims in criminal cases are 70-90% girls and 10-30% boys". It shouldn't be forgotten, however, that criminal statistics never present a true picture of sexual activity endemic in society. Parents are certainly more prone to inform the police in cases of sex contacts with young girls than with young boys, and this introduces a bias into the statistics. Moreover it appears that boys on the whole respond more positively to sexual approaches by adults than do girls and are therefore less inclined to tell their parents about them (Finkelhor 1979, 70). Research among students about their childhood experiences hardly give the impression that girls are much more exposed than boys to sexual approaches by adults (Kirchhoff 1980, 285-286). Sexual violence against little girls is not so much committed by child-lovers as by "normal" heterophiles having recourse to the child as substitute for the woman they really desire (O'Carroll 1980, 59).

Recently a German author living in Holland, H. S. Scheller, has dealt with this subject in a series of "paedophile" writings.

It is not unusual for the initiative to originate with the child. Stekel (1922, 323) cites the case of a nine-year-old girl seducing a man in the most sophisticated manner. In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation there is one tape recording made by a man during intimate play between himself and a twelve-year-old, and a second, recorded later, with an eight-year-old girl-friend. It is evident that the children enjoy this play very much; one can hear how they insist on more advanced sexual activities and implore the man to insert his penis, which he refuses to do. Of course, in smaller girls insertion is often impossible (Janus 1981, 276 gives an example).

According to O'Carroll, many thirteen- and fourteen-year-old American girls have complete sexual intercourse with men and like it (1980, 124, 126). A fourteen-year-old French girl wrote in her diary in 1978, after having slept with a 47-year-old man, "This was the most marvellous day of my life, the most beautiful Christmas gift. Everything I did was deliberate, and everything that happened was at my initiative." Unfortunately the girl's parents, after reading these pages, succeeded in having the man who gave their daughter this wonderful experience sent to prison. The feelings of the child were of no importance (Schérer 1979, 269).

In another period and in some other cultures this would hardly have created a sensation. According to tradition, one of the Prophet Mohammed's wives was no more than six years old at the time of their first intercourse (Simons 1977, 171). The English social reformer John Ruskin loved a girl of ten (CAPM 1980, 37) and the German poet Novalis had sex with one of twelve (Leonhardt 1969). Theodor Storm and Dostoyevski were also enamoured of twelve-year-olds (Matzneff 1977, 16-17). "Thomas Jefferson once wrote to George Washington that two fourteen-year-old girls would be available for

THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF CHILD-LOVE

sexual relations if he came to visit." (Janus 1981, 18) Charlie Chaplin married Lita Corey on her 16th birthday, but he had been courting her ever since she was seven (*Canard Enchaîné* 28.10.81).

It is also true that it is in this kind of relations that the worse of what can be done sexually by an adult to a child occurs most frequently: violence, rape and, more traumatizing still, abuse of authority to compel the girl to tolerate sex activities which she abhors. The *Pall Mall Gazette* revealed in 1885 that in London the deflowering of ten-year-old girls had become a popular and frequent sport. As it proved impossible to satisfy professionally the increasing demand for "fresh girls", women specialists were employed to sew up the maidenheads of the unhappy creatures after they had been used (Stoll 1908, 555; Dühren 1912). It is typical that such a disgusting excess would have happened in the prudish Victorian Age, permeated as it was with negative feelings about sex.

WOMAN/GIRL

The first studies of homosexuality only dealt with men. It was a long time before lesbian women began to break through this conspiracy of silence and speak openly about their loves and their sexual pleasures. Queen Victoria is reported to have been convinced that women were incapable of wanting and doing such horrible things and this is the reason why English penal law still makes no mention of female homosexuality. The same mentality is shown by the contemporary German feminist leader Alice Schwarzer (1980), who doubts on principle that women can really be paedophiles "because sexuality in women is not an exercise of domination".

It is quite crude, of course, to place paedophilia willy-nilly on par with "exercise of domination". Ada Schillemans, a Dutch woman psychologist, flatly contradicts her, and even goes so far as to say, "Women not paedophiles? In the true sense of the word, I think nearly all of them are." Ms. Schwarzer's contention that literature, with the exception of court cases involving "sodomy" (Everard 1983), doesn't mention lesbian love-relationships with young girls comes closer to the truth. But until recently literature was just as silent about all forms of lesbian love even though this has always been a very common phenomenon (Borneman 1978, 1149).

There is only one exception: Plutarch mentions that in Sparta not only men loved boys, but "beautiful and noble women" likewise loved girls (1921, I 142). In March 1984 the Belgian paedophile monthly *L'Espoir* published seven reports written by women. A Dutch publisher announced a book by a sixteen-year-old girl who was in love with girls between six and ten years of age (Vandenbosch 1984).

Recently—at last—descriptions of love between an adult woman and a

II. ADULT LOVERS

young girl have begun to be published. Beth Kelly's moving story *Speaking Out on Woman/Girl Love, or Lesbians Do "Do It"* was published in 1979 and told about her relationship as an eight-year-old girl with her great-aunt. Another woman, Sky, starts her story with: "Although my best friend called me a 'lesbian' at age 9 when I tried to sit very close to her, I didn't consider myself a lesbian until I was 11." At that time she met some lesbian friends of her mother (CAPM 1980, 28-30). Leila Sebbar (1980, 292) mentions a similar case, and Dagmar Döring (1980) tells about "so much love, tenderness, exuberance and savageness" in a "long-lasting, also sexually rather intense relationship with a girl". Other examples are given by Kraemer (1976, 30-35). Pieterse (1982, II 104); Möller (1983, 95) and O'Carroll (1980, 88-90), and Borneman (1978, 1149) describes paedophile lesbian prostitution.

It has been suggested that attraction to children of the same sex is less common in women than in men (West 1977, 212). Kinsey (1953, 486) is of this opinion and Bell & Weinberg 1978, 94) found that almost none of their adult female respondents had a partner under 16 years of age. Perhaps this is because the physical differences between a girl and an adult woman are much less pronounced than those between a boy and a man (Sebbar 1980, 65). The boy-lover feels himself attracted by characteristics of the young body which are absent in the adult male. But it is the exceptional woman who is particularly attracted by those characteristics which make a girl different from an adult female.

This kind of love has been magnificently celebrated by the French author Pierre Louys in his *Chanson de Bilitis*.

WOMAN/BOY

Two female researchers of child love, Loes Rouweler-Wutz (1976, 4) and Monica Pieterse (1978, 24), could find no reason to believe female was more rare than male paedophilia. It should be stressed, however, that the female form has much wider social acceptance (Plummer 1981, 228; Janus 1981, 263; Gordon 1976, 43). The traditional role of women as caring for children with a great deal of physical tenderness offers her greater freedom (Califia 1980, 20; Howells 1981, 62; Righton 1981, 34). A woman cuddling and kissing a little boy in public is thought of as a dear soul; a man doing the same thing is likely to be looked upon as a child molester. It is generally believed that women's sexuality is not as genitally focused as is men's. Therefore far fewer women than men are brought to court accused of "indecent assault" upon children. Only about one in every 200 such court proceedings are brought against women (Walters 1975, 118).

Recently an English judge even went so far as to say in his decision that for a woman to have sexual intercourse with a boy between 12 and 15 was

THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF CHILD-LOVE

perfectly legal and normal (O'Carroll 1980, 92). According to an investigation among students in Michigan, 18% had been introduced by older women to sexual intercourse before the age of 15 (Kirchhoff 1979, 284), and in Sweden 31% of the boys have their first intercourse in this way (Zetterberg 1969, 31). Havelock Ellis (1913, III 221) refers to the special attraction the "innocence of the young boy" has for many women (see also Borneman 1978, 734). Schofield, however, found the incidence much lower in England, only 2% of the boys he studied having had an adult woman as partner on the occasion of their first intercourse. He said, "The proselytizing older woman in search of virgin boys is either a myth, or very unsuccessful" (Schofield 1965, 61). In The Netherlands P. Vennix found that among boys who had had sex with adults, 25% had had it with women (KRI 1984, 23).

For the most part the bigger, more mature boy is, of course, a very willing "victim" in seduction (Walters 1975, 127). The official Dutch Speijer Report made the point that he is often waiting to be seduced. "Seduction" therefore is the wrong term; what happens is an initiation, an introduction into the use of the genitals (1970, Sect. 7.1 & 7.3.6).

Initiation by an experienced woman may be a big help for a boy as he progresses toward adult sex life. The Danish author Carl Erik Soya describes in detail the practical lesson a married woman gives to Jacob, the handsome hero of his novel *Syttén* (Seventeen). Jacob is at loose ends; he fervently wishes to switch over from masturbation to actual intercourse but is reluctant to make this clear to his female cousin, Vibeke, whom he adores. After his initiation by the married woman he rushes to realize his dreams, first with Vibeke and then with other women. It is a modern version of the famous classical pastoral of Daphnis and Chloe (Longus). Daphnis, too, didn't know how to satisfy his desire for Chloe; a merciful woman taught him how it was done.

- 12 Sylvain, a French youth, had belonged to a naturist youth group ever since he had been a little boy and had camped and played sports naked with the other children. Sex play was common there, and Sylvain also had sexual contacts with his older brother Denis, who likewise was a member of the youth group. At 14 Sylvain went on a holiday trip with the leader of the group and his wife. The three of them shared a bedroom, and Sylvain had sex both with the man and the woman. At 15 he got to know a young woman who became infatuated with him as soon as she discovered what a skillful sexual partner the young sportsman was. Now every afternoon she picked him up in her car when he left school, and he quit the naturist group to spend all his spare time with his new lover (Personal communication).

It is hardly unusual for a mother to feel attracted to her son, and complete intercourse may well be less rare than public opinion supposes

II. ADULT LOVERS

(Walters 1975, 127-128). These contacts can start at an early age.

- 13 A 35-year-old mother told Gauthier, "When he was only 18 months old my six-year-old son was having erections as soon as he touched me. He would mount me and make the motions of intercourse; I thought this was nice and disarming."

In his justly famous movie, *Souffle au coeur* (Murmur of the Heart) Louis Malle shows an affair leading up to intercourse between a young doctor's wife and her favourite 14-year-old son Renzo; this starts him off in the direction of sexual activity with girls of his own age. For both mother and son it is a beautiful secret. Guyotat (1967, 222-228) shows a similar sensitive understanding where, in his admirable and horrifying novel *Tombeau pour 500,000 soldats* (Tomb for 500,000 Soldiers), he describes the first intercourse of young Serge: it is with his youthful stepmother. She enjoys his artlessness and inexperience. Until that moment Serge has known no other sex than masturbation and his intercourse with Emilienne makes him feel he has entered a whole new world. "You have liberated me," he says gratefully.

Most older boys have the same feelings when they are "seduced" by an older woman: she helps them overcome their shyness in approaching a girl.

- 14 A 15-year-old boy told me how a married woman, in whose garden he was working, invited him inside to have a cup of coffee with her. She sat in such a way that he could see far up under her skirts, and he became highly excited. She then asked him whether he liked what he saw, for the direction of his quick looks was unmistakable. He immediately said yes. "Would you like to see it all?" He nodded enthusiastically. She asked him to follow her to her bedroom, where she undressed completely and asked him to do the same thing. Then she drew him to her, took his erection and inserted it in herself. The invitation was extended several times thereafter, and the episode repeated, but gradually his interest diminished because he was now starting to have sex with girls and with them he felt more at ease than with the woman. (Personal communication)
- 15 "My first serious relationship was with a much older woman. She was twenty-six and I was thirteen, but she thought I was fifteen. It was in the summer in New Hampshire. She was an artist, and she really loved me. We were very serious. I loved her a great deal too. I couldn't believe anything so big could happen to me." The boy's father discovered, however, what had happened, and put an end to the summer romance. "I never, ever saw her again, never talked to her again. I still think about her once in a while." (Janus 1981, 294)

THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF CHILD-LOVE

In Latin and Arab classical literature we come across discussions between women about the advantages and disadvantages of boys as sexual partners. In Burton's translation of the *Thousand Nights and a Night* a woman praises the beardless boy for his smooth skin and artlessness, but her friend protests, "How shall I spread-eagle myself under a boy, who will emit long before I go off and forestall me in limpness of penis and clitoris; and leave a man who, when he taketh breath, clippeth close and when he entereth goeth leizurely, and when he hath done, repeateth, and when he pusheth poketh hard, and as often as he withdraweth, returneth?" (Burton 1885, V 165)

Not all experienced women share that opinion, and some take to boys just because of their youthful potency. About the Roman Empress Theodora (527-565) it is said that she liked to seduce beardless youths. "Many a time she would go to a community dinner with ten youths or even more, all of exceptional bodily vigour who had made a business of fornication, and she would be with all her banquet companions the whole night long, and when they all were too exhausted to go on, she would go to their attendants, thirty perhaps in number, and pair off with each one of them." (Procopius IX, 8-15) A lady who played an important part in the French Revolution used to become sexually excited by travelling in a mail-coach. Therefore on long journeys she took along a 14-year-old boy who was able to satisfy her appetite at every halting-place (Breton 1960, XI 300). In the Eighteenth Century such relations even became a fashion; many women "preferred the adolescent boy—pretty, unthreatening—to the mature male" (Walters 1978, 209).

Ernest Ernest published an extensive collection of sexual inscriptions (graffiti) found in French public lavatories. There were some in which a woman tries to attract boys: "Big woman with enormous tits wants to meet young, inexperienced boys to initiate them." (1979, 35) A 29-year-old woman told Gauthier, "I'm crazy about very young boys who have never done it yet. I like the idea of making them familiar with my body and with their own. Rather frequently, however, it is all a sham. They hold much too stubbornly to their preconceptions of what they are supposed to do." (1976, 150)

- 16 Each of three brothers individually confessed to a man with whom they also had relations that he had been initiated into sexual intercourse at about the age of fourteen or fifteen by a married neighbour lady. Despite great pride in this adventure, each had carefully kept it secret from his brothers. (Personal communication)
- 17 Sociologists interested in what went on in a lake region near Amsterdam where water sports were popular discovered that a number of prostitutes from the red light district near the port were spending their holidays there. It seemed it was their special pleasure to initiate sexually mature but inexperienced boys into sexual intercourse. Used as they were to older, often unap-

II. ADULT LOVERS

petizing clients, these fresh, handsome, sportive boys held for them a special attraction; the "pupils'" clumsiness in their first sexual adventures was highly pleasurable to these prostitutes and appealed to their mother instinct. Perhaps in some cases there was a sadistic impulse present to destroy the "innocence" of the boys. (Personal communication) Other instances are mentioned in Sonenschein (1983).

Such an experience can be very beautiful and enriching for the woman as well as for the boy (Borneman 1978, 341). If the woman acts with tenderness and tact and does it right the boy may be grateful for the rest of his life. Such episodes stimulate the imagination and evidently give rise to fantasies which are exciting to a lot of people, as witness the abundance of American porn books passing themselves off as scientific studies of sex between women and boys—and even between mother and son. The frequent moralizing tone fails to hide the real feelings of the author.

One classic is *Les amours du Chevalier de Faublas* by Jean-Baptiste Louvet de Couvray; another, dealing with incestuous relations, is Arthur Schnitzler's *Frau Beate und ihr Sohn*.

Of course the manner and circumstances in which such an important and memorable thing happens to a boy may strongly influence his subsequent evolution and have lasting consequences (Wegner, 26-27).

- 18 A boy on his way home from boarding school for his Christmas holidays shared a railway compartment with a beautiful woman. They struck up a conversation, and when it grew dark and they settled down to sleep the woman started to press one of her feet against his lower stomach and genitals. Intensely excited, the boy jumped into her arms and had intercourse for the first time in his life. Pleasure and happiness swept through him like a hurricane. She kissed and caressed him tenderly. He was now madly in love with her. The next morning the train arrived at its destination. With cries of joy, the woman ran into the embrace of—her husband who, with their three children, had come to meet her. A casual smile for the boy with whom she had spent the last night of passion, and she was gone. The boy stood there, utterly shattered, convinced that no man should ever trust a woman's honesty or fidelity.

It is likewise unfortunate when a boy, overwhelmed by his sexual urgings, or on the insistence of comrades, has his first experience in a brothel (a favourite theme of many novels!) or receives practical instructions in a cold and businesslike atmosphere. It is worse still if he is subjected to violence.

- 19 Karl-Eduard, fourteen, was sent on an errand to a certain Mrs. T., forty-five. When they were alone she undressed completely. The boy said afterwards, "She pressed her big tits into my face with so much force that I

THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF CHILD-LOVE

nearly suffocated.... Then she pushed me into her bedroom and into her husband's bed.... 'Let me go!' I repeated. 'I don't want to do this until I'm older and I'm married.' But she threw me on my back on her husband's bed, tore my trousers off me and exposed my penis. Then she bent over, took it in her mouth, bit it so hard it hurt me and I cried out. I tried to stand up again, but Mrs. T. pinned me down. Then she squatted on me so I couldn't move. She sucked on my cock until I shot my sperm, which she swallowed, smacking her lips loudly. Then she made me get up and told me I could always return if I wanted to.... But I never came back and told my parents all about it afterwards." (Stieber 1971, 16)

- 20 Clarence Osborne was the Australian boy-lover who documented his sex relations with some 2500 boys between the ages of 13 and 20. One of them told Osborne that he had literally been raped by a young woman. She invited him to have sex with her, but he refused because he knew she was very promiscuous and he was afraid of catching from her some kind of venereal disease. But she got two men to grab him and hold him down, and then she rubbed his penis until it stiffened, inserted it and rode upon him. "And I spurted all my seed into her belly". (1977, 12)

Of course, the initiative sometimes originates with the boy himself:

- 21 "My first real honest to goodness (oh so good) sexual experience was when I was a freshman in high school in Davenport, Iowa. I had a six-month-long 'affair' with a widow on my paper route. She was an 'older' woman of thirty-five and I was a youth of thirteen or fourteen. I always liked older women." (Hite 1981, 360)
- 22 Sutor (1964, 297) tells of a servant named Demba in a French African colony who saw that his mistress was waiting in vain for the officer she loved. "The negro boy, who was a very handsome lad, with eyes like a gazelle, and a form like an antique faun, but already a man, so far as the size of his genital apparatus was concerned, though he had not yet arrived at the age of puberty, ventured to enter the chamber where the lady was still fretting over the absence of her lover. I cannot describe here, in full and realistically, the scene in which Demba showed the lady, proofs in hand, that he was in love with her, and that he was of a size to satisfy her desires."

Where there is demand there is always supply, and therefore prostitution. Paul Léautaud writes in his diaries of boys who told him about their female clients in the Bois de Boulogne: the women gave handsome tips to be licked by them (Beurdeley 1977, 214). I heard the same tale from a Dutch sailor boy in Hamburg. And a handsome Portuguese bell-boy, who was willing and able to satisfy male as well as female clients, complained of overwork during the holiday season when he had to tend to his hotel duties all

II. ADULT LOVERS

day long and then spend the night having sex with French or English female tourists. He did, however, make a lot of money this way.

MAN/BOY

Now we come to the kind of relationship which is the real subject of this book.

It should not be equated with the others just discussed. All of human history and even the precursors of human behaviour in the animal kingdom, suggest that we are dealing here with a much more important phenomenon. In one of his conversations with Chancellor Friedrich von Müller, Goethe stressed that "Boy-love is as old as humanity, and thus we could ~~even~~ say that, though it is contrary to nature, it nevertheless conforms to it." (Burkhardt 1870, 138) Dr. Wainwright Churchill confirms that in the *Animal Kingdom* "The cross-species and cross-cultural data also reveal that homosexual contacts occur most frequently between a younger and an older male rather than between mature males of the same age. Often there is considerable disparity between the ages of partners.... Fully developed males usually regard each other as sexual rivals rather than as sexual partners. On the other hand, an encounter between a younger and an older male, especially if the younger male is not fully mature, may lead instead to sexual responsiveness on the part of both. Younger, less physically developed males of course are not as differentiated as females in either appearance or temperament, and they are usually more passive and less aggressive than older males, making sexual union easier and more successful between the two. At the human level these biological factors may be no less important, but in addition psychological factors seem to play a big part." (Churchill 1968, 85-86) The Dutch scientist A. Kortlandt filmed chimpanzees in the African jungle; he observed that older males had anal intercourse with younger males nearly as frequently as they mated with females. American researchers like Maslow and Count found a similar behaviour pattern in other species of monkeys in their natural settings, even in the presence of females (Schlegel 1967, 154-155).

In general one can affirm that homosexuality is found most frequently in the higher mammals, the brains of which are closest in development to those of human beings. Male dolphins rub their penises on the soft belly of younger males, the same thing they do when trying to arouse females into copulating with them (West 1977, 115-117).

Strato (d 270 bc) made mention of the homosexual play of young dogs; since his time homosexuality has been observed in nearly every vertebrate animal species, among fishes even, and in the mammals from bats to dolphins, from the elephant to the horse, and especially—as we have already observed—in monkeys. Most commonly the young animal tries to establish a

THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF CHILD-LOVE

non-aggressive relationship with the older one by presenting himself in the attitude the female adopts for coupling. The older animal then mounts the younger and makes the motions of intercourse (Borneman 1978, 584; Buffière 1980, 433, 518-520; Celli 1972, *passim*; Ford & Beach 1968, 144-146, 149, 276; Gide 1925, 72-75; Morris 1976, 84; Schärer 1974, 189). The stock breeder who wants to have sperm from a bull can excite him, make him mount and ejaculate on a bull calf (West 1980, 117).

The young animal is recompensed with protection, caresses and often with food. Here is the prototype behaviour of what we also observe in humans. Every claim that boy-love is not in harmony with nature is undermined by what actually takes place in nature itself.

Ancient Greek mythology contains a great deal of keen psychological truth. It is striking how many stories deal with gods enamoured of beautiful boys and having sex with them—while there's not a single instance of a goddess loving a girl (Peyrefitte 1977, 53, 62). Everywhere and at all times on earth there has existed a special bond between men and boys, and like every other deep human relationship it strives for physical expression.

Man/Boy Relationships

BOY-LOVE AND PSEUDO BOY-LOVE

Now it must be stressed that not every sexual activity which takes place between a man and a boy can be placed in the category which we recognize as boy-love. Neglecting this was one of the fatal mistakes scientists have made until very recently in dealing with this phenomenon—a mistake which distorted and made worthless nearly everything they wrote.

We have already seen that affection for members of his own sex, as well as attraction toward youthful individuals, is present in each human male to a greater or a lesser degree. This makes it possible for every man to have sex with a handsome boy. Any "normal" man may suddenly find himself sexually excited by the sight of a boy (Geiser 1979, 93-94). This is supported by evidence that there were periods in the past, and certain cultures in the present, where it was or is considered normal, or even a duty, for men to have sexual relations with a boy. Later we will see examples of this, but for the present it is enough to observe that the naked body of a beautiful boy radiates a kind of exciting sexiness perceptible by every normal man.

- 23 One of my correspondents worked for a large company in Amsterdam. He was sentenced to two months of imprisonment for sex with a boy. But he was an excellent worker and his boss wanted him back. A canvass was taken in the section where he had been employed and, as he had been a very pleasant

colleague, the general feeling was that he would be welcome again. Gradually, after he returned to the office, his fellow workers grew accustomed to the idea that this man 'did it' with boys, and they even started to crack jokes about it completely void of venom. He began to speak openly of a nice 15-year-old who was his dear friend. The day came for the annual office excursion; every man was to bring his wife or girl, and his colleagues said to him, "Why not bring your friend?" The boy agreed and came to the gathering. He was handsome, friendly, nice, lively and an enthusiastic football player; everyone liked him at the party. The next day an older colleague approached my correspondent and said, "Something extraordinary happened to me yesterday. As you know, I'm married and the father of two adult daughters. I have never felt the least attraction from other directions, but as I observed your young friend during our excursion I was suddenly seized by the thought, 'How nice it must be to have such a person in bed with you and to do it with him!'" (Personal communication)

During the first phase of research into homosexuality, every sexual act with a partner of the same sex was considered symptomatic of homophilia. Soon it was found, however, that some homosexual acts were carried out *faute de mieux*, in substitution for preferred, but for some reason unavailable, heterosexual opportunities, that there existed a kind of pseudo-homosexuality. Males considered "normal", that is with an overwhelming preference for women or girls, resorted to sexual activities with male companion in the absence of the more desirable female partners (as in jails, prison-of-war camps, labour colonies, during exploring expeditions, on ship-board). In prisons half of the inmates have homosexual contacts (Pacharzina 1979, 151). In the great majority of males the sexual appetite is so imperative that it demands some kind of satisfaction, and if the preferred object is absent it is compelled to make do with a less desirable one. In labour camps Chinese coolies divided themselves into two groups, active and passive; those who were active during the first week had to be passive during the next (Stoll 1908, 957).

If a man has such experiences occasionally, or even over a longer period, he will not be changed by them into a homophile. For a man is a homophile only if he prefers homosexual acts above all others and would turn to a male partner even when females are readily available to him.

Patzer (1982, 63-64) lists the following motives for homosexual behaviour: 1) sexual attraction to persons of the same sex (homophilia); 2) lack of opportunity for heterosexual intercourse (emergency homosexuality); 3) sexual experimentation in youths (developmental homosexuality); 4) desire for tenderness in sentimental friendship (mostly in adolescence); 5) social activities within social institutions (as in initiation during puberty rites); 6) symbolic demonstration of superior power (aggressive homosexuality). Quite

obviously, these forms are very different. Boys may take part in all of them.

These facts are generally recognised now in literature which deals with homosexuality, but in research into paedophilia they are only very slowly being accepted. Later in this chapter we will see the fatal impact of this failure to make the proper distinctions upon the popular concept of "the" paedophile.

It is not difficult to understand how the predominantly heterophile male, when no girl or woman is available, will find greater satisfaction with a smooth-skinned, soft-cheeked substitute boy than with an adult substitute man. Lawrence (1980), an American researcher, even thinks that in human evolution there was a natural selection process favouring those hunters who were best able to satisfy their sexual needs with the boys who accompanied them and were thus most strongly motivated to deal lovingly with their training and education. The first picture in Karsch-Haack's well-known study *Das gleichgeschlechtliche Leben der Naturvölker* (1911) (Homosexual Life of Primitive People) is of two young black boys, "male concubines of soldiers among Sudanese negroes", travelling in the rear of an army expedition. Among those blacks brought to Johannesburg to work the mines in 1915 a number of females were reported. However further investigation revealed that these people were confined in all-male camps and the "women" were really boys playing the female role (Bullough 1976, 25). Regarding New Guinea, Bullough (ibid 26) quotes a local informant: "Women are seldom available on the larger plantations and in the towns, and the older labourers, already accustomed to indulgence, are forced to take youths as lovers instead. A boy's behind is said to be a not unsatisfactory substitute, though everyone from Wogeo prefers the real thing, and is thankful on his return to go back to it." In the pages of Havelock Ellis' book devoted to the habits of American tramps, a man tells how he enjoyed his life with a woman "much more than his intercourse with boys. I asked him why he went with boys at all, and he replied, "Cause there ain't women enough. If I can't get them I've got to have the other." (Ellis 1913, II 362) Among the Azande people in the Eastern Sudan, "much of the male population between 25 and 35 was reported in 1932 to be organised into *vura* —or groups of men—and denied access to women. During this period in their lives they were supposed to fight for the chief or in the absence of war, work on his land. Boys were, however, available, many of the men bringing boys with them." (Bullough 1976, 27)

From time out of mind ship's boys have known that their duties were not limited to sailing tasks.

- 24 Flashman, a Rugby Old Boy, told of his adventures on board a sailing ship in 1848. On one of the first days of the voyage he was in his cabin, ill, when entered "a nimble little ferret of a ship's boy" who immediately proposed,

II. ADULT LOVERS

"I'll get in bed wiv yer for a shillin'". "Get out, you dirty little bastard," says I, for I knew his kind; Rugby had been crawling with 'em. "I'd sooner have your great-grandmother." "Snooks!" says he, putting out his tongue. "You'll sing a different tune after three months at sea an' not a wench in sight. It'll be two bob then!" (Fraser 1972, 48)

Healthy heterophile men may satisfy themselves from sheer necessity with a boy, returning afterwards, once back in society, to women. But there are also unfortunate, abnormal people who are unable to establish contact with the adult partners they would prefer because of some psychic insufficiency and so seek out children.

Of course, for the most part these children are girls. It has been established that in cases of criminal abuse of girls (instances of rape, indecent assault, coercion) the offender is mostly an ordinary heterophile (O'Carroll 1980, 59). Heterosexual contacts with children, moreover, are much less objectionable to the general public than homosexual activities (The Gay Left Collective 1981, 57). Boys are very rarely victims of violence, but it is hardly exceptional for men who really prefer sex with a woman or even another male, but who are unable to get it, to turn instead to boys, trying to persuade them without recourse to violence to have sex with them. As such contacts do not completely satisfy some individuals, their sexual needs may increase to a craving, and thus we get the wretched personality who is unable to restrain himself, is obsessed with the desire to handle a boy's penis irrespective of whether its owner is six months or sixteen years old (Borneman 1978, 1387). The public calls such people paedophiles, but they aren't by any meaningful definition of the word.

The inability to establish the preferred kind of contact may be caused by a lack of vital energy (Stieber 1971, 157), or by an inferiority complex, when, for example, a man is ashamed about the small size of his genitals or about being impotent. He may be afraid a woman would sneer at him and hope a child would be less critical.

In other males the universal paedophile impulse is rather strong but either it has never come into consciousness or it is repressed. Stress or excessive use of alcohol may remove the inhibitions in such people, often to their complete surprise and dismay, and lead to an explosion of pent-up lust. But we shouldn't call these men paedophiles either, because paedophiles, by our definition, are people whose sexual appetite is so strongly directed toward children that it colours and guides their whole life.

25 Such was the case of a young man who arrived at the home of his fiancée after a hard day at work eagerly looking forward to having sex with her. She wasn't there, however, and in his extreme disappointment, overwhelmed by

BOY-LOVE AND PSEUDO BOY-LOVE

salacity, he ran to the bedroom of her 14-year-old brother and raped him (Krafft-Ebing 1903, 334).

On the other hand there are true paedophiles who, for one reason or another, never touch a child and so avoid being recognised as one (Pieterse 1982, 1-27).

Paedosexuality (that is, sexual activity with a child) can thus be consummated both by paedophiles and non-paedophiles, and so it is important to make a distinction between the paedophile and the pseudo-paedophile.

It is not to be assumed that the paedophile, being attracted to children, invariably behaves well toward them, or that the pseudo-paedophile is always the infamous and detested child molester, resorting to violence. Among paedophiles there are saints and sinners, just as among heterophiles or homophiles—or any other -philes you might mention. That is, there are among them people whose intent is first and foremost to serve the interest of the beloved child as well as people who only want to satisfy their own lusts. And if a pseudo-paedophile is a gentle and kind person he will deal gently and kindly with the child when using it as a substitute—but probably we will find among true paedophiles a higher percentage of men willing to adapt their sexual desires to the sexuality of the child (Schärer 1979, 91). Many a paedophile will think shared feelings more important than sexual contact itself (Corstjens 1980, 273).

In his detailed investigation of a large number of male sexual delinquents in American prisons, Gebhard and his co-workers at the Kinsey Institute had the bright idea to ask their paedosexual subjects not only the age of the child with whom they had committed their offences but also the ideal age of an ideal partner. The results were surprising. Among 244 males found guilty of sexual activities with children under the age of 12, only 2 said they really preferred a partner of this age. Among 269 males found guilty of sexual activities with children from 12 to 15 years, only 17 said they preferred a partner in this age bracket. In the control group, comprising 759 people never sentenced for sexual offences, one person said he preferred a child under 12 and 45 preferred a child between 12 and 15; all the others claimed they preferred an older partner.

Gebhard therefore concluded, "Since society is so deeply concerned about adults who engage in sexual activity with children or young people in their early or middle teens, it is worth noting that the problem is not so much one of a predilection for youth as it is one of lack of discrimination against youth. Thus our data show the great majority of so-called 'child-molesters' would prefer sexual activity with adults, but are willing to turn to children if adults are unavailable or if the man is intoxicated or under stress." (Gebhard 1965, 666, 681)

Objections have been raised to this opinion that Gebhard's study dealt with prisoners, and prisoners are subject to greater than normal temptation to give the "socially acceptable answer", hoping thereby to make a favourable impression upon those who control their destiny (Zwerus 1977, 93-97). But this objection is not very convincing. Kinsey Institute researchers have a great deal of experience, gained over many decades, in eliciting truthful replies to confidential questions and in testing for veracity. They were apparently aware of the possibility of factual distortion (West 1977, 11). That they succeeded in obtaining reliable answers can be seen by the fact that many of the prisoners told the Kinsey researchers they really were guilty of the acts for which they were imprisoned, after having persistently denied it at their trials. Even more impressive is the great number of "socially non-desirable answers" these prisoners gave Gebhard and his co-workers. The men opened up in such extremely taboo areas as oral-genital contacts and anal intercourse with their wives; men who were not homosexuals talked about homosexual contacts; men who had not been sentenced for sexual offences talked about their desire for sex with boys; men found guilty of sexual offences against adults confessed to having had sex with children not known of by the police. Even bestiality (sex with animals) was admitted by people imprisoned for other kinds of criminal offences. The people interviewed by Gebhard were confident that their answers were to be kept absolutely secret and knew that no prison director or judge would ever learn of them or make use of them in making decisions regarding their release. Therefore the suggestion that Gebhard's data were so distorted as to render their enormous statistical weight invalid is quite unfounded. We may, then, take it for granted that the majority of these prisoners sentenced for paedosexuality were not really paedophiles.

Somewhat later, in 1967, the Swiss psychologist Wyss came up with similar data but didn't perceive their logical significance. Among 160 sentenced sexual delinquents, he found that only 10 were clearly attracted to children. Four of the subjects had sexual desires for "ephebe-like boys of 13-14 years of age", and in them he clearly saw "an aesthetic fascination with their physical characteristics, not the least important of which were their genitals." With these men, "both their minds and their fantasies were involved. And it was precisely these four who had carried on long-lasting relationships with boys who appealed to their tastes." (Wyss 1976, 67) These, then, were the true paedophiles, set apart by their commitment to boys from the pseudo-paedophiles.

The problem of the "socially desirable answer" was skilfully avoided in the same year by the American sociologist Charles H. McCaghy. "Since this study dealt with persons officially labelled as child molesters, their own statements concerning the meaning which children had for them prior to the offence might well be biased." To avoid this distortion, McCaghy put his

subjects into categories "measured by the range of interaction which adults had with children: the extent to which their life patterns were occupied by contacts with children"—that is, occupational and leisure activities and so on. In so doing he established substantial differences between those belonging to the category where social contacts with children were frequent and enriching and those in other categories. The men who had many social contacts never used any form of coercion; a non-sexual relationship usually preceded the sexual activities which, moreover, were usually restricted to passive or active fondling of the genitals. These were the men whose lives bore witness to a special attraction to children; in other words, they were paedophiles (McCaghy 1967).

Paedosexuality (or sexual activity with children), therefore, is no sure indicator of paedophilia. A man can only be considered paedophile if, for him, children are the most important elicitors of sexual arousal. On the other hand, the fact that a man may never have had sexual relations with a child is hardly proof of the absence of paedophile tendencies in him. For there are paedophiles who, for one reason or another, never touch a child.

The importance of this difference between paedophiles and pseudo-paedophiles wasn't recognised until a few decades ago but today it is stressed by nearly all modern commentators (Baurmann 1983, 312, 408, 713; Bendig 1979, 33; Fisch 1971, 13; Geiser 1979, 32-33, 83; Gagnon & Simon 1970, 10; Haeberle 1978, 273; Hart de Ruyter 1976, 430; Howells 1980, 28; Ilken 1982, 1, 13; Kerscher 1978, 154; Möller 1983, 42; O'Carroll 1980, 61, 69; Pieterse 1982, I-1; Righton 1981 25-26; Rouweler-Wutz 1976, 5, 22; Rubin 1984, 284; Sandfort 1980, 185; Schillemans 1983, 135; Sengers 1970, 47; Swanson 1968, 677; West 1980 142-143, 152, 220; Yaffe— 1981, 79; Zeegers 1977, 205). Nicholas Groth makes a similar distinction between "fixated" and "regressed" paedophiles (Illinois Legislature 1980, 32-33), a terminology to be rejected as too suggestive for scientific use. The writers of Golden Age Islam recognised it eight centuries ago. El-Tifachi (1184-1253) pointed out that some men have sexual relations with boys not because they're particularly attracted to boys but because it is fashionable and considered elegant: with them it is the brain and not the body which impels them to embrace boys. He adds that the act of love with a boy is an exercise for the mind, a discipline for one's character and magic for the intellect, since it demands both insight and understanding (1970, 157).

BOY-LOVE AND PEOPLE WITH DIFFERENT ORIENTATIONS

How much understanding is there of boy-love in people who don't share the erotic feelings of the paedophile?

II. ADULT LOVERS

The typical *homophile male* himself has little appreciation of the charms of boys in his preference for the fully developed male body, complete with facial hair (beard) and hair on the body—both of which boy-lovers particularly abhor.

On the other hand, the boy-lover seems to possess more characteristically male qualities than the average adult-loving homophile. Gebhard (1965, 289, 316, 642-643, 652) and Schofield (1965, 42, 66) observed that feminine behaviour and appearance as well as homophile mannerisms were much rarer in the paedophile. Kurt Freund claimed that the least effeminate of his homophile subjects were those who preferred boys of 13 to 16 years of age. The most masculine were most strongly attracted to slim younger partners with little body hair (1969, 62, 69, 71). The typical boy-lover is not, then, a homophile (Geiser 1979, 78; Italiaander 1969, 101; Möller 1983, 32; Pieterse 1982, II-10; Wolfenden 1963, 45).

For many years, now, the homophile emancipation movement has disparaged and even expelled boy-lovers (Madru 1983; Sandfort 1980). Many a homophile has thought, and still thinks, that he and his fellow-sufferers would have a far better public image if these damned "boy-rapers" weren't around giving homophiles and homophilia a bad reputation (Baudry 1982, 113; Kraemer 1976, 7). This is more than slightly naïve for the great public majority has never really liked sexual minorities. The sight of one persecuted minority begging for tolerance and understanding while at the same time condemning and despising a still smaller minority is hardly inducive of sympathy. Fortunately in the last few years there has been a big shift of opinion; for example, the major Dutch homophile organization, COC (1980), after a long debate, finally came to the conclusion that the emancipation of homophilia cannot be completed without a parallel emancipation of paedophilia. In France a leader in the gay rights movement told me, "We will never get anywhere as long as minors cannot receive an education in which homosexuality is declared to be a completely natural and fully satisfactory element of sexual desire."

Recognising that boys, especially mature boys, are sexually attractive is much easier for the *heterophile female*, since, finding an adult man an acceptable sex partner, she is often capable of identifying with the experience of both participants in a man/boy relationship. Thus any rejection she makes of boy-love is likely to be the result of cultural conditioning and so may assume a less emotional accent than in men. Many a boy-lover has found he can better discuss the intimate side of his relationship with the mother of his young friend than with the boy's father. Women capable of independent thinking, who don't permit themselves to be guided by culturally indoctrinated prejudices, may even come to a deep understanding of boy-love only exceptionally equalled by the heterosexual male. Perhaps this is why some of the finest

BOY-LOVE AND PEOPLE WITH DIFFERENT ORIENTATIONS

novels ever written about love between an adolescent boy and an adult man have been penned by women. To mention some from the last few decades: Marie-Claire Blais' *The Wolf* (1974); Isabel Holland's *The Man Without a Face* (1972); Iris Murdoch's *Henry and Cato* (1976); Mary Renault's *The Persian Boy* (1972); Christiane Rochefort's *Printemps au Parking* (1969); Marguerite Yourcenar's *Mémoires d'Hadrien* (1951); Ursula Zilinsky's *Middle Ground* (1968). The sympathy might be mutual. Baudelaire must somewhere have written that the appreciation of intelligent women is a prerogative of the boy-lover.

The "normal" *male heterophile*, whose sexual longings are mainly directed toward females, may also perceive the seductive qualities of a boy and enjoy pleasurable sex with him. For the boy—with his fresh complexion, his shining, silk-like hair, his radiant long-lashed eyes, his soft, ruddy cheeks, his full sweet lips, his smooth-skinned hairless body with its rounded curves, his slim waist—has so many properties in common with a woman (Aristotle quoted by Peyrefitte 1981, 148; Back 1910, 610; Borneman 1978, 590, 973-975, 1001; Bullough 1976, 495; Fischer & Howells 1970, 625; Freud 1920, 21; Freund 1981, 162; Montherlant & Peyrefitte 1983, 19; Righton 1981, 36; Voltaire I 25-26; West 1981, 256; Wilson & Cox 1983, 19, 126; Yaffé 1981, 79-80). Havelock Ellis (1913, II 286) wrote, in phrases typical of that period, "A sexual attraction for boys is, no doubt, as Moll points out, that form of inversion which comes nearest to normal sexuality, for the subject of it usually approaches nearer to the average man in physical and mental disposition. The reason for this is obvious: boys resemble women, and therefore it requires a less profound organic twist to become sexually attracted to them." This, however, doesn't usually ameliorate the situation; it only complicates matters, for, as we have seen, our culture condemns man/boy relationships with much greater ferocity than it does man/man relationships and teaches every man that he shouldn't foster such feelings, that they are ignominious and scandalous. Now there is a mechanism in the human mind which tells us that anything that shouldn't be simply doesn't exist. So the male, not allowed to be physically excited by boys, tries to convince himself that, even when he is, he isn't. Every positive response toward a boy's sexuality is energetically disavowed—and the stronger the response the more forceful is the disavowal. The emotional intensity with which a man rejects the idea of boy-love can well be an indicator of the degree to which this tendency is present in him. Dr. Benjamin Karpman observes in his book *The Sexual Offender*, "Since normal people have the same mechanisms as sex offenders, coping with them only through strong repression, they react emotionally to such offences, projecting repressive mechanisms on the offender." (1954, 607) And Leist (1981) quotes Adorno saying that a taboo functions most strongly wherever the man subordinated to it unconsciously wishes to commit the forbidden act himself.

II. ADULT LOVERS

Therefore the heterosexual male gets terribly upset when the borderline between unconscious and conscious desires threatens to break down, and this happens every time he finds himself confronting the phenomena of homosexuality and boy-love. He cannot identify with such creatures because he cannot permit himself to realise how much he has in common with them. Günther Schmidt and Volkmar Sigusch (1967), studying "the problem of prejudice towards sexually deviant groups", concluded that an overwhelming majority of the people they questioned thought that a prostitute, a homophile, a lesbian, an exhibitionist, a man who has sex with animals or a sadist was more "sympathetic" as a person than a paedophile.

All those who cry loudly that the paedophile ought to be castrated, who would like to strangle him with their own hands, who think he should be shot or put in jail for the rest of his life are themselves highly suspect of paedophilia (Karpman 1959, 299; Rhyxand 1978, 266). Blüher (1953, 255-256) put it quite accurately: "In prosecuting paedophiles, a man struggles against the suspicion that he could be one himself and, seeking reassurance, he exteriorises his own inner battlefield". He attacks boy-love, suppressing his own real feelings. As contact with an attractive boy threatens to bring these feelings to the surface again, the presence of such a boy becomes irritating. This condition stimulates aggression against the boy. Blüher observed repeatedly "that leaders, having just delivered thundering speeches with foaming mouths about morality—particularly in the guise of Christian belief—are in the very next moment caught red-handed committing clumsy and senseless assaults on boys." Boys are undoubtedly subjected to many cruelties, to many hard punishments, as a consequence of the love feelings of their torturers, suppressed and thereby turned to hatred. In education, the severe disciplinarian is always suspect! (Sadger 1921, 190)

If the normal heterophile male were only a bit less contorted, a bit more free, more accepting of his own inclinations, he would be struck by the fact that the woman he loves always tries to heighten her beauty by attempting to keep her appearance young, or in rejuvenating it. The "normal" man simply loves what is youthful (Duvert 1980, 102). Having been brought to recognise this, the next step would be to bring him to understand that he could also love boys.

In our world only very superior individuals have the courage to admit this. We have already quoted Goethe's confession that he made love to boys. Thomas Mann, having created such a wonderful picture of boy-love in his novella *Death in Venice*, wrote in his diary how delighted he was about "Eissi", his 13-year-old son Klaus: "He is so very handsome in the bath. I think it's perfectly natural to fall in love with my son." On October 17, 1920 he wrote, "There was a big commotion in the boys' bedroom, and I surprised Eissi standing stark naked, clowning, in front of Golo's bed. His pre-

BOY-LOVE AND PEOPLE WITH DIFFERENT ORIENTATIONS

adolescent, brilliant body made an enormous impression on me. I felt shattered." (Quoted in *Du und Ich*, Nov 1972, 52)

HISTORY AND ETHNOLOGY OF BOY-LOVE

The citizens of *Classical Greece* had no difficulty understanding this. They disliked homosexuality, which they considered unaesthetic, for to them the hairy body of the adult male was ugly (Patzer 1982, 61). The smooth boy's body, however, with its graceful curves was likened to that of a woman (Buffière 1980, 7; Patzer 1982, 59). The philosopher Theodoros of Kyrene affirmed: "A woman and a boy are equally beautiful. Why do they possess this beauty? To provide men with sexual pleasure." (Buffière 1980, 480) Nevertheless it was the budding virility which especially attracted Greek men: effeminate boys did not appeal to them; vigour, endurance, youthful ardour did. Physical exercise, gymnastics, running and hunting were encouraged. Young grace had to be grounded in muscular strength (Foucault 1984, 221).

The beauty of boys was an important subject of discussion. Plutarch describes the joy of looking at their bodies and, according to Aristotle, only someone who had been born blind could ask why one would love boys. Athenaios wrote that many men prefer boys as sexual partners to women (Buffière 1980, 131, 261, 309). This is echoed in poetry and in the famous vase paintings of the time, where boys honoured with the adjective "kalos" (beautiful) appear twice as frequently as girls (Dover 1978, 9; Marcadé 1965). Often we see the bearded suitor caressing the chin of a boy, an artistic shorthand indicative of love (Steinberg 1970, 281). In religion this was also apparent. Buffière (1980, 331-332) observes, "Eros is the god of male passion for boys, Aphrodite the goddess of male-female intercourse. Eros involves affection, Aphrodite the sensations of the flesh; Eros is spiritual, Aphrodite carnal; Eros brings happiness, Aphrodite pleasure. He who is inspired by Eros seeks the well-being of the beloved; he who is inspired by Aphrodite seeks procreation." Meleagros taught that Aphrodite was defeated by her son Eros: he was the stronger of the two (Dover 1978, 63). Plato was likewise cognizant of his power. His philosophy championed the equality of the sexes, but all pedagogical love was reserved for boys: nowhere do girls come into the picture (Buffière 1980, 333, 413-415, 637). Although he taught that the genitals should only be employed for procreation, he showed great understanding of the lover who used them with boys as well.

Thus the "normal" Greek wasn't at all hesitant to admit to his sexual activity with boys. Sexual intercourse was considered a natural activity which one shouldn't be ashamed of, and this applied as well to sex with a boy (Ungaretti 1982, 10). In his famous speech, Aischines violently attacked his political opponent Timarchos for his dissipated, immoral style of living; he

did not, however, try to deny that he himself loved boys (Dover 1978, 92). The sexual aspect of boy-love was perfectly honourable (Patzner 1982, 56). Socrates asked the Sicilian manager of a very handsome young either-player performing in a festival whether he slept with the boy. The man replied calmly, "Oh, yes. Every night, and the whole night through." The sculptor Phidias engraved in the thumb of his gigantic statue of Zeus in Olympia a dedication of love to his young friend: "Pantarkes is beautiful" (Buffière 1980, 154). Here, in the facade of the Temple of Zeus, one could gaze at a group sculpture in which a satyr was introducing his phallus into a boy's bottom (Peyrefitte 1977, 25). Gods and demi-gods were setting the example (Borneman 1978, 602). Young Heracles was asked to choose between Sensuality and Virtue. Sensuality promised him "boys with whom he would like to have sex". Heracles chose Virtue, but this didn't prevent him subsequently from having affairs with twenty-four lover-boys. Not only was his muscle-power enormous, so was his many-sided sexual potency: as well as loving boys he deflowered the forty-nine daughters of King Thespius in one and the same night (Borneman 1978, 651; Peyrefitte 1977, 483).

On the island of Thera (Santorini), in the area where the temples stood, religious invocations were engraved in the rocks. Some dealt with the sexual initiation of boys: for example "Krimon fucked here a boy, the brother of Bathykles" (Buffière 1980, 58-59; Moll 1921, 385). The attempt of Dover (1978, 123), the well-known British authority on Ancient Greece, to explain this as boasting, slander or insult, isn't very convincing (Brongersma, in *P.A.N.* No. 15, 1983, 27-28; Patzner 1982, 84-87). Passive anal intercourse was only improper for an adult man, not for the adolescent boy.

The beloved boy was called *paidika*, which literally means "boyishness" (Buffière 1980, 605; Dover 1978, 64), for it was this that was loved in him: the quality of being *pais*, a boy. A modern author, Jacques de Brethmas, sharing the same feeling, put it well: "The most important quality in a boy for me is his boyishness. I desire a real boy, very manly and very natural." (1979, 66)

A young male was considered a *pais* until he was 19 or 20 years old, or as long as his body remained smooth and he was beardless. In their boy-friends, men found and loved this vision of the *paidika*. Or, as the French novelist Saint-Ours put it so nicely, "This vision always carries the name of the boy into whose body I insert my member". (1973, 41)

For the Greeks, *paidika* and girls were among the common joys of life—the *paidika* perhaps even more so than girls. From the social point of view, boy-love was more important than heterosexuality; sheer sexual delight was found with boys, not with women (Borneman 1978, 12, 607). By comparison, married intercourse was rather a duty to the commonwealth. Thus only married men were allowed to assist at the *gymnopaideia*, ritual dances performed by naked boys (Borneman 1978, 210). Boy-love didn't need any

explication to the Athenian: its niceness was self-evident (Bethe 1907, 442). If a sleeping man had a wet dream he was supposed to have dreamed of a *paidika* (Dover 1978, 65). In Megara boys held kissing competitions, in Elis beauty contests and, as Dover rightly observes, to admire physical beauty, whether we like it or not, was and remains a sexual act (1978, 181). The Greeks were highly susceptible to this veneration of beauty, and not the least bit timid about nudity. The male genitals were exhibited without shame. At the Olympic games of 715 BC the victor Orsippos of Megara lost his loincloth during the race, and from then on official rules obliged the athletes to perform stark naked. Peyrefitte, a profound student of this period, writes that the public would comment on the size of the competitors' genitals and often gave the athletes nicknames inspired by the configuration of their members. Images on vases and plates often showed satyrs with gigantic erections and in the streets of every city the way to bath-houses and brothels was pointed out by Hermes columns topped by a bearded bust of the messenger god and for the rest a quadrangular column smooth except for a male member in erection.

In this society youthful beauty was highly appreciated. Plutarch tells a revealing story. During a street fight in Sparta, Isodas, a big, handsome boy in the bloom of early adolescence, came running out of his home without taking time to put on his clothes and joined the battle with spear and sword. His naked beauty proved more of a protection than his shield, however, for no foe dared to maim such a fine body and he remained unharmed (Buffière 1980, 84).

The genitals were a part of the boy's beauty. Aristophanes claimed that the superintendent who must inspect the young citizens takes a particular pleasure in looking at their genitals. And the poet Strato thought that Paris would have turned away from the three Graces if he could have compared them with the stiffened member of Diokles, the poet's favourite (Buffière 1980, 180).

When a teacher got an erection during wrestling exercises with his pupils, the spectators were only amused (Peyrefitte 1977, 308, 415). It was commonly recognised everywhere that men needed sexual satisfaction and got it with boys. Xenophon refers to an official army regulation which allowed every soldier to take a boy with him. Athens' lawgiver Solon (640-558 BC) saw boy-love as a quite natural phenomenon (Gide 1925, 119-120). He decreed, "You shall love boys in the charming bloom of life, desire their thighs and soft mouths. You shall love boys until fluffy hair covers their faces, love their sweet breath and thighs." (Eck 1969, 42) Girls married at an average age of 15, young men only at 30, so it was natural that an opportunity be created for them to satisfy their sexual appetites. It was the intent of Solon's laws to guarantee to all free boys of the city-state the liberty to decide for themselves whether or not they wanted to abandon their body to a free citizen. To adult

II. ADULT LOVERS

male slaves, by contrast, active relations with a free boy were strictly forbidden. To prevent them from occurring, parents sometimes had the slave to whom the education of their son was entrusted (the "pedagogue") castrated. Likewise, the slave boy was entitled to no free choice; sexually he must always be at the disposal of his master, who could also order him to satisfy the lusts of his guests (Buffière 1980, 204, 244, 620-622; Peyrefitte 1977, 551-552).

On the whole, Athenian fathers were not very much in favour of sexual relations between their sons and adult men, and they tried to guard against them. In Elis, in Lakonia and Boeotia, where the Dorians were in power, it was, on the contrary, considered nice and morally good for a boy to give happiness to his lover (Bethe 1907). When Telemachus, in his search for his father Ulysses, visits old Nestor in Elis, the king offers him his own son as a bed-companion, and Homer tells us that the boy fell in love with the noble guest and wanted to go with him on his journey (Borneman 1978, F 997). On Crete tradition demanded that the lover abduct a boy forceably. This was a faked rape—faked because the family of the boy was informed in advance and, if the man was acceptable, their defence was only a comic pretence. During the next two months the boy accompanied the man everywhere, and they shared their pleasures. At the end of this period the man brought the boy back, presented him with armour, a coat of honour and an ox which the boy must sacrifice to Zeus. At the sacrificial ceremony the boy had to declare solemnly that the sexual intercourse had been to his taste. Now he was considered to have reached majority, had a seat of honour in the theatre and wore a coat of a special colour (Buffière 1980, 53-55, 623).

Solon gave to his city brothels where girls served their clients, fearing that otherwise the Athenian youth would come to know only homosexual intercourse. Sparta's lawgiver Lykurgus had quite different fears: he put a ban on female brothels in order to promote sex between males (Peyrefitte 1977, 156, 656). The obedient Spartan citizen had to use boys (Borneman 1978, 972, 977, 987) and men were even punished for neglecting this obligation (Patzner 1982, 89). As soon as a boy was twelve a respectable young man was designated as his lover (Bremmer 1980, 282).

Sex with boys also found its place in religion. In the sanctuary of Aphrodite on Mount Eryx (nowadays Erice) in Sicily boys served as prostitutes in the temple precincts. On Delphi every four years, at the opening of the Pythian Plays, naked boys danced in front of Apollo's temple. This was the ceremony of the Gymnopaideia, the memory of which inspired the French composer Eric Satie (1866- 1925) to write such wonderful music. It was followed by a ritual the original meaning of which became completely forgotten in the course of time: a boy, also stark naked, entered from one side, overturned one of the tables laden with food, set fire to a tent and ran away. Men chased and caught him, then whipped and raped him, just as people used

HISTORY AND ETHNOLOGY OF BOY-LOVE

to do with runaway slaves (Peyrefitte 1977, 123, 527-528).

As well as this sacral prostitution, there was, of course, in every city of Grecian and Roman antiquity, the secular variety. Emperor Augustus decreed that brothel boys should have an annual holiday on a fixed date (Verstraete 1980, 231). The wealthy had their slaves. Soldiers who exhibited outstanding courage on the battlefield were often rewarded with the present of a boy (Vilbert 1979, 127).

The Roman practice was profoundly different from the Greek in its absence of the pedagogic intent. Beautiful boys were a luxury, and as such they were bought or imported, especially from Egypt (Nubia). The Greeks wanted their beloved boys to distinguish themselves by good behaviour; the Romans liked them impudent, vulgar and provoking. There were exceptions, of course. The passion of Emperor Hardian (117-138) for Antinous is well known, and there are tender boy-love passages in the writings of Catullus, Cicero, Horace, Martialis, Ovid and Tibulus (Lever 1985, 27-28, 32).

At all times, in every country, men have had sexual relations with boys. We will give some examples in what follows of free and institutional boy-love outside of Greece. But it is important to point out already here that this "Greek love" and all other similar expressions are quite far removed from the relationships of lust and love to which this book is dedicated. For wherever sex with boys is a cultural tradition in which "normal" males also participate, we do not find men and boys uniting in mutual lust; it is rather a situation where the man is bent on attaining his own satisfaction, and for this he uses the body of the boy—or it is a practice believed necessary for the boy's physical development. Most commonly the corporal union is modelled on heterosexual intercourse: the man is expected to insert his member in the boy's anus or to move it between the boy's thighs. What the man gives in exchange to the boy—at least to the free-born boy—may be considerable: care, affection, education, an example of virility and virtue, physical exercises and character training—and all of this to such a high degree that we find the Greek philosophers tempted to regard boy-love rather as the privilege of personally distinguished and virtuous citizens. Lukianos says, "Marriage is for everyone; to love a boy is reserved for the sage," (Amar, quoted by Beurdeley 1977, 11) for it demands more character and sacrifice than the average citizen is capable of giving. In his treatise *Menschliches allzu Menschliches*, Nietzsche stated that probably in no time in human history were boys treated with so much affection, love and careful consideration for their well-being as then, but this doesn't alter the fact that a sexual activity which repays a man his devotion remains a one-sided affair: what to the man is a satisfaction of lust is a sacrifice on the part of the boy. Classical Greek love, then, was characterized by three things: 1) it was a relationship between an adult and a boy; 2) the sexual activity was never mutual—the man had to be

II. ADULT LOVERS

the active partner; 3) the practice was justified by its educational intent (Patzner 1982, 105; Banens 1981, 16). For this reason Ovid, an avowed expert on love-making, rejected it: "I don't like a copulation which doesn't bring both partners to orgasm." (*Ars Amatoria*, II 683-684).

For slaves the situation was much worse. Rich Roman fathers provided their adolescent sons with a handsome servant upon whom they could exercise their sexual powers and satisfy their lusts. In one marriage song, the festive companions sing quite openly about how the bride insisted on the slave-boy being deprived of his beautiful long hair and sent to work in the fields; thenceforth the groom would have to devote this potency to her womb (Stoll 1908, 189, 190). We are reminded of Hans Blüher's opinion that even today many men are trained through boy-love to be good hetero- or homosexual lovers (1966, 33).

The Greeks and Romans disapproved of a man who indulged in practices with his boy-friend other than active anal and intercrural (between the thighs) intercourse (Patzner 1982, 47, 96, 115). Greek vase paintings often show the man touching the genitals of a boy, but the boy never has an erection: it was just a solicitation by caressing, and never went beyond that. A man masturbating a boy to orgasm received a lecture for such abuse (Martialis XI, 22), and it was far beneath male dignity to suck a boy's penis.

Of course, in those times there were also paedophiles for whom the pleasure of a boy was indispensable. But if this came to light they were derided and despised. Martialis sneered at one man who left the door and curtains of his room open while inserting his penis into a boy's bottom. Whoever likes to be observed in such an act, the poet maliciously observed, will certainly behave in a thoroughly scandalous way behind closed doors (VII, 62).

A similar situation prevails wherever sex with boys is unexceptional, belongs to the customs and manners of society. For example, the *Etruscans*, before the rise of Rome the most powerful nation on the Apennine Peninsula, used to be served by stark naked boys at their banquets. When the guests had partaken to their full of food and drink, the young servants laid themselves down at the side of the men who then, quite without shame, took their public pleasure with them until everyone was quite exhausted. Then strong young slaves were summoned, kitchen boys, sedan carriers, athletes to perform "live shows" for the spectators and unite themselves with the servant boys (Athenaios 517 I; Buffière 1980, 35; Peyrefitte 1981, 495-496). In later years the Roman Emperor Domitian similarly provided the guests he invited to his banquets with a boy (Borneman 1978, 617).

The *Germanic tribes* celebrated marriages between men and boys. The Gauls used their wives only for procreation, sleeping at other times with their young companions. Prostitution was considered a meretricious occupation for boys. The Gauls liked slender bodies: if a boy grew too fat he was punished

HISTORY AND ETHNOLOGY OF BOY-LOVE

(Peyrefitte 1977, 681). Among the Celts sex with boys was frequent (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 34-35, 1980, 79; Gide 1925, 105). The hardy Norsemen also took young boys under their wings to nurture and train in the warrior arts—and to use as bed-partners (Linedecker 1981, 106).

Christendom was not able to abolish boy-love immediately. Johannes Chrysostomos (340-407) complained bitterly about people only going to church to stare at handsome boys (Bullough 1979, 194, 331; Deschner 1978, 393). A well-known bishop in the XIth Century openly confessed having shared his bed with both sexes (Bullough 1976, 371).

This continued into the Middle Ages. About the year 1000 it was "the most wide-spread vice in all classes of society, among princes as well as serfs, among bishops as well as monks." (Chardans 1970, 128-129) An anonymous Ninth Century poem postulates that the inhabitants of Orleans preferred boys. Archbishop Baldricus of Dol (1046-1130) wrote love poems celebrating boys as often as girls. Abélard's famous pupil Hilarius of Poitiers (about 1125) consecrated some very sensual poems to boys, affirming that he would like to have sex with them. In the Thirteenth Century a bishop in the south of France actually absolved himself of sin whenever he wanted to go to bed with a boy or girl. A sect of evangelists pressured young boys to submit to sodomy (Cleugh 1963, 92). And in 1303 Fra Giordano da Rivalto lamented the practice of fathers selling their comely sons to wealthy boy-lovers in the hopes of assuring for them a prosperous future (Kuster 1977, 42, 47, 52, 54, 55). Certain medical writers recommended sexual intercourse with a boy ("usus et amplexus pueri") as beneficial for good health (Burton 1886, X 247). This belief persisted even into the 17th Century, when William of Orange (later King William III of England) received from his physicians the suggestion "that he sleep with one of his pages in order to absorb some 'animal spirits' from a healthy body. Since the patient was known to enjoy sleeping with his pages, the prescription was easily followed." (Haerberle 1978, 373)

During the Renaissance, awakened interest in classical antiquity gave renewed impetus to boy-love. In Venice, boy-love became so common that prostitutes were ordered to sit at their windows with their breasts exposed in order to tempt men away from using boys (Borneman 1978, 1145; Deschner 1978, 405, 482). In Florence there was Savonarola "thundering from the pulpit against that unspeakable and abominable sin, the love of beardless boys." At his execution in 1498, "a member of the governing body of the city is said to have announced with sardonic satisfaction to his colleagues, 'and now we can practice sodomy again'." (Walters 1978, 112) The poet Ariosto (1474-1533) claimed that all men in all parts of Europe indulged in boy-love and that nobody lived a completely heterosexual life (Williams 1967, 48). Michelangelo, on the contrary, maintained in a poem to his favourite Tommaso Cavaliere that boy-love was for connoisseurs only and wasn't suitable

for ordinary people (Buffière 1980, 155). This same Michelangelo had a father bring him his son, asking the great painter to accept the boy as his pupil and explicitly insisting that he should sleep with the lad, so the boy should love and obey him the better (Beurdeley 1977, 82). Caravaggio (1573-1610) no longer made angels out of his young models. "No hint of idealizing softens their sex appeal; they openly proposition the spectator." (Walters 1979, 1876)

Shakespeare's famous contemporary, Christopher Marlowe, declared "all thei that love not tobacco and boyes are fools" (dall'Orta 1983, 231). In the Sixteenth Century boy-love and girl-love were put on equal terms (Bullough 1976, 474-475, 478). "Pornographic literature and scandal-mongering accounts of the behaviour of particular groups (particularly the nobility, priests and nuns) suggest that semi-covert flouting of the official rules was always fairly common, even when the penalties for exposure were extraordinarily severe. The facetious treatment of the topic in the theatre suggests that pederasty, though officially a high crime, was always a commonplace vice and to ordinary people a subject of derision more than horror." (West 1977, 128)

In 1671 Liselotte van der Pfalz reported from Paris that in the whole royal court she could not find six men who didn't love young males. Some had sex with boys of ten and eleven, but the majority preferred bigger boys and adolescents (Foral 1981, 191). The habit became more and more accepted, and in 1738 someone observed that there was no more secrecy about making love with a boy than with a woman (Rey 1983, 204).

Even today there are places where sex with boys is very much in the air. In the *United States*, Baltimore had this reputation. Tom Reeves reported in 1978 that in a certain section of the city 50% to 70% of the teenagers had sexual relations with men and that nearly as many men had intercourse with boys. This situation had prevailed for 75, perhaps 100 years. The boys also had sex with girls; afterwards they married, fathered children—and often satisfied themselves in their turn with boys. Even the police joined in the game and allowed boys to have a ride in their patrol cars in exchange for sex.

Mr. Helmuth A. Lill (Weidenstetten, Germany) who lived many years in *Albania* has kindly furnished me with particulars about marriage ceremonies in that country between Greek Orthodox men and boys. They still take place today—but rarely and in secret, for they are illegal. In addition, Mr. Lill provided me with extensive private documentation of a custom at one time widespread but nowadays practiced only in the region bounded on the south by the lake of Ochrid and on the north by the Metohijo at the Montenegrin border with Yugoslavia. This is the so called *gjanelidhja* (seed alliance). An adult reserves for himself, after conferring with the parents, a child as sexual partner—either a boy or a girl, no distinction being made. The child associates only with this particular man until the time he or she is fully mature. A *Gjanelidgja* is taken very seriously and respected by everybody. The adult is

considered to have become a member of the child's family and is responsible for its food and clothes. For this alliance to be valid it is considered mandatory that the girl or boy suck the man's penis and wholly swallow his seed (*gjane*)—and this fact must be confirmed by witnesses. Von Hahn (1969, 91) gives a less favourable picture of boy-love in Albania. Adolescents at sixteen start to have steady relations with boys of twelve and older. Their union is blessed by the priests in church, both partners receiving the eucharist (Bremmer 1980, 289; Näcke 1908, 325-337).

All major cultures furnish examples of this kind of intimate relationship. The only exception seems to be ancient Egypt, where boy-love was generally condemned, yet even here there is conflicting evidence (Bullough 1976, 64, 67). In pre-Hispanic *Guatemala* the Spanish conquistadores stated that "it was customary for fathers to provide their adolescent sons with a boy whom they could keep and use as a wife." (Stoll 1980, 955)

Many tales in *The Thousand Nights and a Night*, in verses of Abu Nowas, El-Tifachi and other well-known poets show how greatly boy-love was part of *Arab culture*. El-Tifachi describes a night of passionate love when he shared his bed with a boy and a slave girl. He claimed he preferred the boy: "He is a better comrade, in the company of others he is more entertaining, and when you're alone with him he is like a lawful wife." (1970, 179, 316) Abu Nowas was of exactly the same opinion; just as in Ancient Greece and Rome, one and the same man used now a boy and then a girl (Bullough 1976, 224; Burton 1885 VIII 348; Wagner 1965, 47, 76, 165, 175, 177, 302, 308 and especially 121 and 167). Abu Nowas thinks of his beloved boy and has a wet dream (Wagner 1965, 320). Many battles against the Christian infidels were only fought to capture the handsome white slave-boys for whom there was a special market in Constantinople. Under Osman rule such favourite Greek, Serbian, Bulgarian and Hungarian boys, circumcised and forcibly converted to Islam, could rise to the highest official positions (Stern 1903, II 213-215). The Koran, it is true, forbids this kind of sex (VII, 81; XXVII, 55), but on the other hand it holds out to the faithful the prospect of being served in paradise by beautiful youths whose bloom never withers, and this can be interpreted to mean that sex with boys on earth is only an illegal advance on the bliss of beatitude.

A study of contemporary youth in Morocco shows that the active role in anal intercourse is, from the moral standpoint, only slightly objectionable. The passive role is unacceptable if a third party might come to know about it; kept strictly secret, it is a different matter (Eppink 1976).

Information about the culture of *India* seems to be limited. Homosexuality is said not to be prevalent. But this is sharply contested by de Becker (1980, 81, 86, 88-89, 92), and Sutor (1964, 172), working there as a physician, found boy-love rather common. Dr. Rustan J. Mehta, a citizen of the country itself, writes: "Male prostitution together with sodomy and pederasty is very com-

mon here in India. Special brothels are to be found in all the big cities; but sodomitical practices are popular even among the primitive native races." (undated, 1934)

The major treatise on sexual practices, the famous Kamasutra of Vatsyayana, observes only that males who are too fat, whose sexual appetite is extinguished and who aren't excited by women, have their members sucked by nicely adorned slave boys who are very proficient in this act (Schmidt 1922, 172). De Becker observes that in India there are no moral, social or familial objections against homosexual practices, and that there is a tendency to prefer oral activities to anal activities. Krishna Gopal, an anthropologist in Bombay, gave this assessment: "Masculine and sexually active men are always actively looking out for feminine, slender young men and boys. Boys and feminine men preferably choose older friends. The men of Northern India and Afghanistan, known for their extraordinarily strong sex drive, are very passionate, but also jealous and nearly always prefer young boys." (1967, 167)

In pre-revolutionary China, boy-love was prevalent everywhere. It had a long tradition (Bullough 1976, 302, 304-306). All towns had their boy-brothels. A visit to them was a very common occurrence. If a stranger asked someone in the street for the way to the nearest brothel, it was pointed out to him with the utmost courtesy (Aron & Kempf 1978, 31; Karsch-Haack 1906, 16). In 1860 a city like Tientsin counted no less than 35 brothels where boys from 8 to 17 years of age were offered to clients. Boy-love was systematically cultivated, formally organized, developed to a high degree and was common at all social levels. Distinguished Chinese citizens weren't embarrassed to show themselves publicly in the company of their favourites, and high government officials didn't hesitate to confess openly that they loved boys (Karsch-Haack 1906, 26, 48, 51).

A French missionary was completely bewildered when, in 1780, he observed "that the Japanese man unites this tendency with the love of women" and that monks, on whom celibacy was imposed, "had a curious way to compensate themselves for this constraint". Those who loved boys and adolescents enjoyed the reputation of being more virile; only weaker men preferred women. Adultery incurred capital punishment but homosexuality was perfectly legal for young men. From the time of the Middle Ages and right up until the Eighteenth Century, rural inns used to provide travellers with a boy they could "refresh" themselves with, i.e. suck out their seed. In the beginning of the Seventeenth Century a Shogun (commander-in-chief) declared that the services of boy prostitutes were indispensable. The distinguished author Ibara Saikwaku (1642-1693) wrote *The Big Mirror of Boy-Love* which championed and idealised relations between the Samurai knights and their pages. The German ethnologist Karsch-Haack, source of these particulars, wrote in 1906 that he had been told by an eye-witness: "Even today

pederasty is widespread in the Japanese army and navy as an inheritance from the Samurai, and it played an important role in their victory, which surprised the whole world, in the recent war with Russia." (1906, 121; Krauss 1969, 86-88) An American living in Japan told me in 1970 that parents are pleased when their son has physical intimacy with his teacher, and that on school excursions the boys draw lots to determine which of them may sleep with him.

Patzer (1982, 25) lists a great many cultures in which boy-love is socially acceptable. Attention was first called to the prevalence of boy-love in all parts of the world among *peoples who live close to nature* by Karsch-Haack in his *The Homosexual Life of Primitive Peoples* (1911), a standard work on the subject which has still to be superseded. Later his findings were confirmed by the Americans Ford and Beach (1968). Here we can give only a few of the more striking examples.

First of all, however, a distinction should be made between two quite dissimilar institutions. In the first, *shamanism*, the boy is devirilised, turned into a woman, in which role he thenceforth lives, highly honoured and performing various religious functions. In the second, on the other hand, boy-love is seen as a virilising force: it is considered indispensable for a boy to ingest the seed of an adult man in order to grow up big and strong.

An example of the first, shamanistic practice we find in a report on the *Pueblo Indians* in California dating from 1850. Every year one of the handsomest and strongest boys was selected to become a *mujerado* (womanized male). Every day he was masturbated for hours on end, and during the same period made to mount a horse bareback so that his testicles were continuously squeezed. Thus his genitals were kept in a constant state of irritation. In the beginning sperm and slime constantly dripped from them, but finally the glands and penis shrivelled. After thus being rendered impotent, the youth adopted feminine dress and performed feminine tasks. He was held in great respect: during the spring religious sex orgies all men had sexual relations with him; during rest of the year this privilege was restricted to the tribal chiefs (Karsch-Haack 1911, 358-362; Stoll 1908, 955-956). The same is told of the Majave and Illinois Indians (Devereux 1963; Italiaander 1969, 99).

Religious rituals in which boys serve as temple prostitutes also occur in the African *Hereros* (Borneman 1978, 327). The practice of bringing up some selected boys as girls, according to Borneman, flourishes in "innumerable cultures" (1978, 1431)—for example, among Indians in Canada, Wyoming and Montana, in Kamchatka and among the Tatares in the USSR, where the Soviet administration wasn't able to put an end to it (Borneman 1978, 127-128, 132, 145; Ploss 1884, II 529).

The second sort of practice is for us the easiest to understand: its basic premise is that the boy needs sex, especially the consumption of male sperm, in order to become a real man.

It is shared by many primitive tribes in *New Guinea*. With the Marind, every adolescent residing in the tribal lodge for youths gets a "godfather", usually a married man. At night the two lie together side-by-side and at any hour the boy must be available for sexual intercourse. During religious ceremonies these steady relations are suspended and replaced by a general sexual freedom between men and boys (Jensen 1933, 82). With the Marind, homosexuality is actually more common than heterosexuality (Borneman 1978, 591). In some tribes the seed which the boy needs is anally ingested; this is so with the inhabitants of the island of Kiwai and the Keraki of the mainland. For a year after the period of his initiation, the boy is subjected to anal intercourse. From then on until he marries, he, in turn, has to be the active partner in anal intercourse with younger boys (O'Carroll 1980, 41). In other New Guinea tribes the seed must be swallowed. This is the case with the Kukukuku of the interior and the Etoke, probably identical with the natives described by Herdt in his magnificent study *Guardians of the Flute*. (He gives them the fictive name "Sambia" in order to keep secret their exact location.) Starting at eight or ten years of age, and continuing until they are about fifteen, boys must every night suck the penis of the older adolescents and young men (in the 15-25-year bracket) who haven't completed their initiation process, and swallow their seed. At first they tend to dislike doing this, but soon they come to enjoy it. Special friendships and personal preferences arise through the relations and continue over many years. For the older partner this is officially considered a sacrifice, a duty, for a male is thought to receive only a limited amount of sperm at puberty which can never be replenished and will ultimately be exhausted (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, Herdt 1981, 232-292).

Boys of the Big Namba culture of the *New Hebrides* are subjected to extremely painful initiation ceremonies. The boy then chooses an adult friend as his *nilagh sen*. The man thereby obtains absolute authority over the boy, is allowed to use him sexually and sell him for this purpose to other men, but only for short periods. As a result of this convention, every chief has a number of boys at his disposal—and often has little to do with his married wife any more. The anal intercourse the boy experiences and which, in contrast to heterosexual intercourse, must be performed standing, is thought to enlarge and strengthen his penis. Thus the father, at the end of the initiation rituals, presents a gift to the *nilagh sen*. The relationship between the boy and his *nilagh sen* is very close. They are always together, and if one of them dies the other will mourn him deeply (Bullough 1976, 37). The other men with whom the boy has sex give him some precious gifts, which he then transmits to his *nilagh sen* (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 96-97) "Among the Marquesans men have sex with boys because they think boys are 'soft and girlish'." (Lawrence 1983, 14)

In former times the *Australian Aborigines* used to perform an extremely painful operation on the male member during the course of puberty rites. In Chapter Three a more detailed description of this will be given, but here we should note that it is the future father-in-law who performs the operation, and for a certain time afterwards he is entitled to use the boy sexually (Scheerer 1974, 177-178).

With the Aranda in central Australia, a young man, following his initiation, chooses a 10-12-year-old boy to share his life with him for several years and serve him as a woman until he marries (O'Carroll 1980, 41). In Western Australia there are formal marriages between men and boys (Borneman 1978, 1431). In East Bay "a father will put his seven- or eight-year-old son sexually at the disposal of a friend; the child has to obey and his consent is not asked. He will, however, get some little gift." (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 57).

When the Batak boys in Sumatra (*Indonesia*) reach puberty they leave their parents and dwell in a bachelor's lodge until they marry. Here the older adolescents masturbate them and have anal intercourse with them. Oral intercourse is strictly taboo. After his wedding night a groom is bound to return to his former comrades and tell them in great detail all about his sexual intercourse with his wife in order to give them a clear picture of what lies in store for them later (West 1977, 135-136).

One Peter M. Ladiges spoke about his travels in *Afghanistan* on a German radio programme in 1980. *Gay Journal* (September, 1980) gave a summary of his talk: "Homosexuality is common and is found to be a solution everywhere. Moving to the summer pastures the herdsman never takes his own son along with him but the son of one of his friends. This boy is his apprentice, serves him and gets instruction from him about things a good nomad has to know. These male relationships are carried on through life, even though the two will see each other less frequently after the boy marries. About the Chuckchee in Northern Siberia it is reported that sex with boys is considered normal and in no way kept secret. Young, handsome boys adorn themselves and flirt openly with their admirers. This is all the more striking because nothing impedes sex with girls and the boys themselves start to have heterosexual intercourse from ten years on." (Wrangel, quoted by Erman 1871, 164)

Among the Eskimos of *Greenland*, man/boy marriages are also traditional (Borneman 1978, 1254).

Magnificently illustrated volumes made the Western world familiar with the Nuba tribe in *Sudan*, their beautiful body-painting and their favourite sport—the ferocious gang boxing fights of the muscular warriors. In this tribe of strong, virile people, boys and men customarily go about naked; only the sick and the old cover their bodies with clothes. The men have sexual

II. ADULT LOVERS

intercourse with the boys and "marry" them (Leyten 1978, 300; Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 60; Riefenstahl 1973 & 1976).

Patzner mentions man/boy marriages in Algeria (1982, 88), Italiaander (1969, 107-108) among the Bantu tribes. In some societies like the Nyakyusa, young males are sexual objects for other young males; in others like the Azande the elite have boy wives. The boys, accustomed to exclusive homosexuality, graduate to "husband" roles when they are older and themselves take "boy wives" from a new generation (Murray 1984, 46). In the Egyptian *Siwa Oasis* near the Libyan border, already mentioned in the first chapter, all men have anal intercourse with boys; if one doesn't follow this practice he is considered very peculiar. A father marries his adolescent son to one of his friends, who then has complete control of the boy. He may prohibit the boy from having sex with others but may also lend him out for sexual purposes. The people are convinced that a boy will not grow up properly if he isn't regularly used by a man. This will also enlarge and strengthen his penis (Bullough 1970, 31; Cline 1936). Until 1926 such man/boy marriages were even legally recognised (Maugham 1982, 122). Edwardes & Masters (1962, 246-247) reported that the government had by then declared them illegal but that the traditional ceremonies nevertheless still take place. After circumcision the boys enter the league of Ez-Zeggaleh (The Beserks). "During a *Zegl*, or orgy, the men and the boys strip each other naked and, inflamed by stimulants, attack one another passionately. Having effected anal penetration, the active partner rotates his penis as energetically as possible; at the same time he masturbates his passive lover (...) Each partner assumes an alternately active and passive role. The same pederastic pattern may be found throughout the oases of Libya and Egypt, in the Sudan, and along the old slave routes to Timbuktu."

Tobias Scheebaum (1969) lived like a native with a naked tribe of Indians in the *Peruvian* rain forest. He tells how affectionate and intimate men and boys were there to each other, and how these close relationships as a matter of course found their expression in sex.

Summing up, we may conclude that men having sex with boys is an omnipresent human phenomenon. The motives may differ: sometimes it is done to facilitate education and strengthen character, sometimes to reinforce the boy's sexual potency, or to strengthen and develop his body; sometimes simply to satisfy a man's lust. Thus it has been, in all nations and in all ages. Goethe was right in saying that boy-love is part of the nature of man. Only the ignorant could call it unnatural or deviant.

In so saying we voice no opinion about its morality or immorality. Moral kindness as well as immoral cruelty are present everywhere in mankind; each is as integral a part of human nature as boy-love. Its morality or immorality has nothing to do with its frequency; it depends entirely upon the good it

HISTORY AND ETHNOLOGY OF BOY-LOVE

brings to boy and man or the harm it inflicts upon them. These are problems we will take up in the second volume of this work.

BOY-LOVERS IN RELATION TO WOMEN

There have always been "normal", i.e. predominantly woman-loving, men who have sought sex with boys. Their counterpart is the boy-lover who seeks sexual intercourse with women. In the U.S.A., no less than half of the boy-lovers are said to be married (Rossman 1976, 6). The possibility of using a female as a substitute for an adolescent boy was recognised in the Old Testament Book of Genesis: the men of Sodom lay siege to the house of Lot, where beautiful young strangers had been taken in as guests, because they wanted to have sex with them. Lot tried to save face as host by offering his daughters, virgins still, to the mob (XIX: 1029). Of course, we find, as always in the domain of sexuality, many variations on this theme.

To some paedophiles, especially those who are drawn to small children, the sex of the partner has little importance: the age is the decisive thing (Pieterse 1982, 1-26). But it is hardly unusual for even those who prefer more mature boys to feel drawn to women as well.

Jacques de Brethmas (1979, 12) confesses: "Thinking about boys will give me an immediate erection. If a woman is to produce the same reaction she must take my penis in her hand. It's quite possible for me to spend a night with a woman, and from time to time I do. But during the day the presence of a woman becomes intolerable and I feel much happier in the company of a boy." For de Brethmas, a woman was the best substitute he had yet discovered when boys were unavailable. A similar picture is developed in the Dutch novel *Stadsgezichten* by A. Moonen (1978). The German anarchist Peter Schult tells how he shared his bed with a mother and her fourteen-year-old son and had sex with both of them in turn. On another occasion he did the same thing with a woman and her young brother (1978, 49, 66).

Much deeper are the ties and passions described by an author like Gabriel Matzneff. Matzneff followed the example of the Roman poet Catullus who, when his tempestuous relationship with Clodia (Lesbia) had run its course (remember Carl Orff's delightful *Catulli Carmina!*), tried to find consolation in the embraces of Juventus, handsome scion of a patrician family (Bullough 1979, 140-141). Matzneff had likewise a long-lasting relationship with a young woman. When at last it came to an end he was shattered and he turned for comfort to a thirteen-year-old boy. He concluded: "I am acquainted with both kinds of love. The relationships which society approves of are not the happiest." (1977, 47-48, 129)

No wonder, things being what they are, that many boy-lovers are married; the *married boy-lover* is hardly exceptional (Geiser 1979, 79; Rouweler-

II. ADULT LOVERS

Wutz 1975, 31). But the circumstances of these marriages can vary enormously. Some wives are quite unaware of their husbands' attraction to boys, some have their suspicions, some have been well informed. In the first two cases it is common for a feeling of uneasiness to arise, as most women intuitively perceive that something is lacking in their relationship. The man may feel guilty about keeping silent about something which is such a central element in his life and which prevents him from showing in his sexual relations with his wife the kind of passion she feels entitled to. He may feel threatened by the risk of discovery and the catastrophe that could bring to his marriage and his children. Sexually he could be driven to the point reached by one of Stekel's patients, about whom the famous psychoanalyst reported: "Daily he had intercourse with his wife, often even several times a day, and nevertheless nearly every day he had to masturbate as well, even immediately after coitus, the reason being that intercourse was never able to satisfy his real appetite" (1922, 325). In the case of other individuals, quite the opposite happens, and their desire for intercourse fades completely away.

Sometimes we find a man marrying a woman because he is in love with her younger brother to whom she bears a striking resemblance.

- 26 An 18-year-old Moroccan told me he used to spend weekends with the family of his future wife in another town. Before going to sleep he was permitted to carry on some petting activities with her but had to stop short of intercourse because she wanted above all to enter marriage as a virgin. The petting, of course, put him in a state of violent tension, a fact which his future wife and her family readily understood. The problem was solved by letting him later share the bed of her fourteen-year-old brother on whom he could satisfy his passion. The boy, who was on very good terms with his future brother-in-law, liked this immensely.

Where the woman is or becomes aware of the fact that her husband's appetite is mainly for boys, she can react in many different ways, from deep hatred resulting in divorce to complete tolerance and understanding. The first was the tragedy of Oscar Wilde and occurred in the life of André Gide. In one revealing story by Rudolph von Abele (1962), apparently inspired by the marriage of Gide with his niece Emmanuele, we find a heart-rending description of the horror his wife experienced when she discovered her husband having sex with a hotel servant-boy. On the other hand there are wives who help their husbands collect pictures of naked boys, who invite young cousins or sons of friends in order to please their husbands, and who will tell you, one way or another, "If he were unfaithful to me with a woman I'd never forgive him, but his relations with a boy I accept with equanimity for that is quite a different matter," (Barrington 1981, 133, 136) This is hardly a new idea. The ancient Greeks said that the great singer Orpheus, wishing to remain faithful

BOY-LOVERS IN RELATION TO WOMEN

to his lost wife Euridice, satisfied his sexual needs with boys (Bullough 1976, 105). In practice, however, it may become very difficult to maintain such tolerance under all circumstances. It can also happen that the attitude of the wife may change during the course of marriage. Once she becomes a mother, the fear of her husband's adventures being discovered and disaster being brought down upon her and her child might make her more and more opposed to his other life style. Marriages of boy-lovers are seldom successful (Pieterse 1982, II-5). In his well-known study on prostitution (1887, 373), Carlier, however, reported that he knew of no less than five cases in which such a marriage went well: the wife liked boys too and shared with her husband their favours in a happy threesome.

A divorced or unmarried mother who falls in love with a man whom she knows to be a lover of children will often willingly grant him a great deal of liberty with her son, firmly convinced that this is a good way to win him over for herself and so "convert" him. She might let him shower with the boy, or even sleep with him. Of course, she will also try to sleep with him herself—and often succeeds, for many boy-lovers are able to have sex with an attractive female companion. But sooner or later disappointment will be bound to set in, and grow enormously as she realises with astonishment and horror that her own child is triumphing over her in the battle of love, and thus she distances herself from the man more and more. At the very best, this leads to a breakdown in relations, leaving an embittered woman, a lonely, unhappy, bewildered boy helplessly manipulated by two adults, and a man who had thought he dwelt in paradise now cast into hell. At worst, the case can be turned over to the police. Such arrangements never work out well.

VARIETY IN AGE PREFERENCES

In his affectionate relations, a boy-lover nearly always prefers a certain age-group (West 1977, 211; Wilson & Cox 1983, 17-18, 124). Those who claim to like "every human being with a penis between his legs, from zero to seventy-five years of age" are exceptional. Most boy-lovers find their sexual preference in one of the following age categories:

- a) Small children up to about 10 years of age.
- b) Prepubertal boys, from 11 to 13 or 14 years of age.
- c) Boys in puberty and adolescence, 13 to 16 years of age.

According to criminal statistics, those who prefer girls are most strongly attracted to children of six to eleven years of age, while those who prefer boys are more commonly attracted to youngsters 12 to 15 years old (Pieterse 1982, II 10-12). Criminal statistics, however, seldom give a reliable picture of the phenomenon they supposedly depict.

As far as is known, men whose sexual preferences lie in the first category

II. ADULT LOVERS

are few in number. In Pieterse's investigation, they made up 16.6% of respondents. Bernard found that only 4% of his paedophile subjects preferred prepubertal boys exclusively (1979, 89). Baurmann (1983, 678) analysed all criminal sexual cases in the German state of Lower Saxony between 1969 and 1972—all in all 8058 cases. Of these, 108 concerned boys under the age of six (compared with 464 girls), 426 boys from 6-9 years (compared with 2026 girls), 343 boys from 10-13 years (compared with 3017 girls). (The remaining 1584 cases concerned girls from 14-20 years.) In evaluating these figures it must be kept in mind that the younger the child is the more likely parents are to lodge a sexual assault complaint with the police, and this distorts the statistics, increasing the percentage of lower-aged partners. In any case, in the small boy-lover social minority, those loving *very young boys* make up, again, a very small minority. Moreover, they are usually not sensitive to specifically boyish characteristics. Often they are drawn to both boys and girls, for their love goes out to the small child regardless of its gender (Hoffmann, quoted by Rush 1980, 240-241). Such men almost never discuss their feelings openly, with the result that next to nothing is known about them.

- 27 An exception was Boisrobert, a close friend of the famous Cardinal Richelieu. He once told a group of young men that he was exhausted, "having screwed twice, first with a little girl, then with her brother. She was a virgin, and I had to pay twenty pistoles. The brother cost me only two écus. However, I had more pleasure with the brother than with the sister." (Lever 1985, 125)

The most beautiful, intense picture of a love relationship between an adult man and an eight-year-old boy was given by Tony Duvert in his novel *Quand morut Jonathan* (1978).

As for the *two other groups* (the lower limit of attraction varying from 8 to 12 years, the upper limit from 14 to 16), the specifically boyish characteristics are decisive, and thus the strict chronological age is not so important. The production of fertile seed is the usual test of having reached maturity, but this event has long been in the making and, mentally, it has for some time been clamouring to announce itself. The age at which puberty finally arrives, the day orgasm is accompanied for the first time by the ejaculation of seed, can vary greatly within the limits of normal development. We see healthy, strong boys of 15 still speaking with the high, clear voices and retaining the small, undeveloped, hairless genitals of childhood. The next moment we see an equally healthy, strong boy of eleven carrying a male member of such size and thickness as to make many an adult man envious: excited to orgasm, he produces an abundant quantity of thick, opalescent ejaculate; his pubic region and thighs are covered with black hair and he addresses you in a bass voice.

VARIETY IN AGE PREFERENCES

For this reason statistics about the age-preferences of boy-lovers are completely unreliable: subjects are classified, numbers grouped, graphs drawn with blithe facility, giving the impression to the less critical student that he is learning something concrete, while actually he is not. It is easy, for example, to pretend that boys attain their peak of attractiveness for boy-lovers at age thirteen. Why thirteen? Because thirteen is the average age of attaining physical maturity. People who like immature boys will therefore say they prefer boys of 10 to 13, and people who like mature boys say they prefer boys 13 to 16. So when we add these two groups of people with really divergent tastes, we come up with an illusory peak which only obscures understanding. Such a graphic representation conceals the heterogeneity of the sample population (Bernard 1979, 88). It would be much better if research was founded upon a qualitative rather than a quantitative definition of preferred age. Or the question might better be asked as to whether the subject felt more attracted to a partner with small or large-size genitals.

A good example of the former would be Michel Tournier, who noted in his famous novel *Le roi des Aulnes* (1970): "A boy of twelve has come to a point of perfect poise and bloom which renders him the masterwork of Creation. The beauty of face and body at this age is so intense that all other forms of human loveliness are but a distant, pale reflection. And then—disaster! All the ugliness of the male: this hairy squalor and livid colour of adult flesh, the rough cheeks, this disfigured, stinking, exaggerated donkey's pizzle: they all burst in upon the little prince and pull him down from his throne."

Some authors have advanced the opinion that puberty is not suitable to use as a dividing line between age groups because boys may experience orgasm long before production of sperm. This observation, in many cases, is quite true. Kinsey found that about 80% of smaller boys were able to stimulate their penises to climax of lust feelings even though their members stayed dry or, in the last phase of prepuberty, produced a few drops of clear, sperm-free slime from the Cowper glands (1948, 176; Abraham 1969, 121; Van Stockert 1956, 24).

Thore Langfeldt, after questioning a number of boys on this subject, concluded that lust feelings in orgasm remain more or less the same from the years of childhood on into adult life. "The onset of puberty did not seem to have an influence on the sensation, fantasy, or masturbatory patterns in those boys in the author's study who had started masturbating before puberty." (1981, 39, 67) His opinion is shared by Hertoft (1983, 70). The Dutch psychiatrist Lochtenberg, however, thinks this most improbable because, with increased experience and the onset of sexual relations, voluptuous sensations are bound to change (1981, 16).

II. ADULT LOVERS

- 28 Professor Schérer was told in a conversation with Alcide (18 years): "Sex with others? Yes, I began having it very early, and I felt much closer to the people I slept with than to my mother and father, even though my relationship with my parents isn't especially bad. I started doing it with my little female cousin when I was nine; later, at eleven, it was with a man. In the beginning, in the relationships, I was mainly interested in tenderness (...) As for sexual pleasure, at first that was maybe less important than it became later (...) I like to sleep with someone and to be caressed." Schérer then asked him, "Do you have any thoughts about something which has always been poorly understood: the sexual feelings of immature children?" Alcide replied: "The physical excitement of sleeping with someone is the same, absolutely the same, at all ages, before and after maturity. I don't believe that my desire is stronger now than it was earlier (...) In those days I didn't ejaculate, but the feeling was equally good. I got a hard-on and liked being touched." (1979, 262-263)
- 29 A subject of Ellis (1913, III 337), however, tells of a case of a boy where, at age 12, after attempted intercourse with a girl of the same age, "the hand flew to the phallus and worried it, and orgasm came on at once—the childish orgasm consisting of well-spaced spasms of the ejaculators, without the poignant preliminary nissus of the adult orgasm."
- 30 A German boy of fifteen telling a psychologist about his sex relations with a man which started when he was ten, said: "I came to like it more and more. At twelve, for the first time, seed started to shoot out. After that the pleasure was even more intense." (Unpublished report, 1980, in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

Whichever may be true, the dry orgasm of the immature boy is strikingly similar to that of women in its capacity to be immediately repeated almost indefinitely. There is, however, a minority of boys unable to attain this orgasmic experience because of an itching sensation in their penises which becomes so intolerable they have to give up the attempt. Such boys only learn in puberty how to really enjoy their sexual potential.

But even if every immature boy were able to experience a full-blown orgasm, it would be naive to assume from this that there was no *difference between mature and immature boys* as sexual partners. It would show a lack of knowledge about modern sexology which rightly doesn't consider the attainment of orgasm the exclusive aim of sexual contact. It would also reveal a lack of understanding of the findings of psychology which point to revolutionary changes brought about by puberty in a boy. He who makes such an assertion has certainly never himself had a lasting intimate relationship with a boy, and accompanied and observed him as he passed over this threshold.

VARIETY IN AGE PREFERENCES

Boy-lovers who have had such a relationship and discussed it with me have all said that their young friends acted quite differently after puberty.

- 31 A good example of this was communicated to me by a Dutch railway official: "I met Max for the first time when he was eleven. He wasn't lacking in sexual experience: even since he'd been seven he had masturbated every night with his four-year-old brother who had taught him how to do it. With me, he was soon doing the same intimate things; we shared the same caresses, and in the course of the next year we went on to oral and anal relations as well. He finally came to prefer anal intercourse, which in itself could bring him close to orgasm. In my home, where he was a frequent visitor, he felt most at ease when he could go about stark naked, and he never refused sex when I asked him for it. But there was one thing which often drove me to the brink of despair: during our sexual relations he always wanted to look at television and his thoughts and conversation were far removed from my tender activities. I would be fondling him and trying through passionate lovemaking to guide us both to a peak of joy, when suddenly Max would come out with something about his homework or his rabbits. This situation persisted until, at thirteen, he went into puberty and began to ejaculate. His behaviour then changed completely. Now it was he who took the initiative in starting our sexual play—and he did it more frequently than I ever had. His sexual appetite was very strong and urgently needed satisfaction. The sense of sexual bliss overwhelmed him so completely that his eyes and ears were often impervious to everything around him. Intense pleasure glazed his eyes, and even if I shouted something he wouldn't react. I have never experienced such a perfect sexual expression of love as I did with Max." (Personal communication)

Michael Ingram, a Dominican friar and youth counsellor, in a report on 91 cases he investigated of such relations with immature boys, wrote: "It was quite clear to me that while some boys allowed the man to masturbate them, they did so solely for the gratification of being fondled. I received a number of reports of boys starting to engage in other activities as the man became more sexually excited, eating, fiddling with the dials of the radio, engaging in unrelated conversation, etc." (1979, 516) Casimir Dukahz sketched a similar situation in his amusing *The Asbestos Diary* (1966). He was having the most passionate sex with his boy-friend—and the boy wanted to discuss the exact height of some mountain...!

After puberty the boy seems to have forgotten all his physical experiences and has to rediscover and reinterpret his feelings, experiences and gender specifics. A new start is made in which, of course, earlier experiences still influence his later evolution (de Regt 1980, 13-14).

It's not just physically and emotionally that puberty makes a big change in a boy; its effects are mental and intellectual, too. A child may love music,

II. ADULT LOVERS

appreciate a landscape, be pious, behave nicely to peers and friends. At puberty, however, this all gets a new dimension: deepened artistic appreciation, enthusiasm for nature, religious reflection, community with his fellow-beings—all undergo a great qualitative change and take on new depth. Sexuality, of course, is no exception. Rouweler-Wutz says (1976, VI): "My studies of youthful sexuality have left me convinced that after puberty experiences are assimilated in quite a different manner than in the preceding period." And Straver (1977, 256) writes: "Only at about the time of puberty does a child begin to reflect about himself, acquire a special sensitivity to how other persons look at him, begin to experience tension in his relations with other people. A child may be affectionate; only the adolescent can be 'involved with another' (...) Childish interaction is interaction, just as infant speech is speech. And in the same limited way childish sexuality is sexuality. But these words at once express the continuity as well as the caesura. Childish behaviour lacks something, and the adolescent understands this very well." Up until now, skin contact has simply produced an agreeable sensation in the boy: fondling and kissing were fine. With puberty, however, as Lemaire (quoted in Jans 1977, 245) points out, the skin develops a new sensitivity. Much more clearly than before, one consciously feels the skin to be a surface upon which one may meet another person in touch and caress. Nudity thus acquires new erotic significance, symbolised by the penis: what in the child was just an unseemly protuberance, is now a big organ, dangling conspicuously as one walks, attracting the eye of the observer not just by this spontaneous movement but also by its colour and surrounding growth of hair.

During sexual activities the small child is mostly passive. With mature boys behaviour may be active as well, depending on the boy's character and the inhibiting effect of social taboos. In any case, his sexual appetite is now more imperious: hitherto the attaining of orgasm—if possible—was just pleasant play; now the glands have begun to function and a regular expulsion of their accumulated products becomes necessary for his well-being. As one 17-year-old told me, "Without sex I couldn't feel happy and healthy." The urge simply to stimulate his genitals is much more pronounced in the mature than in the immature boy.

The foregoing has suggested that those men with a pronounced preference for prepubertal boys seek subjects who are not just physically but also mentally very different from those of men attracted to boys in and immediately after puberty (Sebbar 1980, 89-90). Schérer (1979, 235) stresses the psychological difference: the relationship with the small child is simple because the little boy doesn't talk about love and lust; with a bigger boy, on the other hand, you can discuss such matters and think about them.

These groups of boy-lovers should thus be distinguished from one an-

VARIETY IN AGE PREFERENCES

other, without, however, forgetting that there are never clear-cut limits in the domain of sexuality. Tony Duvert defines those who love immature boys as "paedophiles" and the others as "pederasts" (1970, 21). The picture is complicated, however, by the fact that an affectionate, close relationship tends to continue after the boy has passed the upper age limit which the man finds attractive. A "pederast" will rarely be satisfied with an immature boy; only under exceptional circumstances will he be induced to have sex with such a partner. But it is not at all exceptional for a "paedophile" to continue having sex with his young friend for some time after the boy reaches puberty. In the case of men looking less for casual pleasure with some attractive boy than for a lasting love relationship, the upper age limit is thus very flexible. The same holds true for "pederasts", for with them it is frequently difficult to decide where boy-love ends and adult homosexuality begins (Wilson & Cox 1983, 116).

- 29 (Continued) In Max's case the bond between him and his adult friend was so deeply rooted that even after he lost his erotic appeal for the man, "sex still took place from time to time, even when Max was a married man of twenty-four."

The ancient Romans were fully aware of this phenomenon and Petronius quotes the proverb: "Who has carried the calf may also carry the bull" (Cap XXV). "Paedophiles" and "pederasts" don't differ so much in their actual sexual behaviour or their sexual potentialities as in their personal preferences.

From time immemorial, the *growth of body hair* rather than chronological age has defined the border between boy-love and homosexuality. With the appearance of the beard and increased hair growth on the lower abdomen and legs, "a boy ceased to be an object of aesthetic appreciation and sensual desire," observed Bloch (1912, I 412-413). In Epigram 220 of the *Anthologia Graeca*, Prometheus is made responsible for the "horrible beard" and the hair which comes on boys' legs; it is only right that he be punished by Zeus, the poet sighs. In epigram 195 he laments, "As summer heat kills precious flowers, so hair soon destroys beauty." It is an ever-recurring theme. Epigram 31:

*Pamphilos, I swear it by Themis and by the wine in the cup
Which makes me unsteady: short is the time for love.
Look, your chin and your thighs are downy already
And other lusts will confound your senses tomorrow.*

Likewise, Martial sends best wishes to friends, hoping that their young slaves may preserve the smoothness of their skin as long as possible (IX, 56; II,

II. ADULT LOVERS

48). Greeks and Romans alike used depilation to prolong the attractiveness of older boys (Borneman 1978, 85-86).

On this point they shared the same view as all other peoples among whom boy-love has been generally accepted. In Arab poetry the beloved boy is always designated "beardless" (Wagner 1965, 183). The Persians said when the first hairs of the beard sprouted: "The cheeks mourn the dead beauty" (Burton 1885, V 161). According to Krauss, the Japanese called the beloved boy *takenoko*, i.e., bamboo shoot. Bamboo shoots are only edible when they are young and free of hair (1907, I 315, II 222-223).

In antiquity young slaves were sometimes castrated (by extraction or squeezing of the testicles) to preserve their smooth skin, just as boys were later castrated in papal Rome to preserve their soprano voices for the choir of the Sistine Chapel.

LASTING FRIENDSHIP AND CASUAL MEETING

According to Loes Rouweler-Wutz, men loving girls have for the most part casual, passing contacts, while those loving boys strive much harder for lasting relationships (1976, 24). Monica Pieterse's study confirmed this. Most boy-lovers long for a long-lasting friendship, and where they are successful in attaining this the average duration is a strikingly long 33 months (Pieterse 1982, II 13-14).

On the other hand, one-time-only contacts are frequent; under certain conditions they may attain for both partners a striking intensity and depth and in every way take their proper place within the limits of a healthy sex life. Immorality resides in arousing false expectations. But when man and boy agree to offer each other the mutually desired delight and relief of shared sex, laying no other claims upon one another, this is completely justified. Older boys tend to have more understanding of sex practiced purely for pleasure than do younger boys (NISSO Report 1973, 21). The French author Jouhandeau (1981, 122, 20-21, 79) wrote a striking apology for the anonymous one-night-stand: be satisfied if you have had sex once in your life with a boy you loved, for such perfection cannot be reached a second time. When you have sex with an unknown individual he is two-fold naked: stripped of his clothes and stripped of his personality. As soon as you know your partner's identity it immediately becomes more difficult to surrender yourself to blind instinct.

Occasionally a man and boy will hit it off at once so completely and naturally that sexual intimacies occur quite spontaneously within minutes of their first meeting. On the other hand the idea of a lasting friendship in which sexual desire only gradually awakens and the ensuing activities follow after a considerable lapse of time is far from being an over-idealised fantasy.

LASTING FRIENDSHIPS AND CASUAL MEETINGS

32 An English youth leader came to know Owen when the boy joined his group at age twelve. Over the next three years their friendship became more and more intimate. Owen often came to the man's home. Then one night when the boy was fifteen they had a long conversation about sexuality during which the youth leader confessed that his appetite was directed wholly toward boys. Owen's immediate reaction was rejection; he voiced all the usual prejudices, but just as the man thought it would be best to drop the subject the boy suddenly stood up and said, "Well, let's have a try," and proceeded to undress. The man, even though he had had lots of experience in these matters, was now taken completely by surprise. Owen had always seemed a rather reserved, introverted boy, but now he was suddenly caught up in an outburst of the hottest passion and abandoned his body to his older friend time and again until they both were completely exhausted. The intensified friendship which followed lasted for years and included frequent sex. (Personal communication)

In boy-love treatises this sort of gradual evolution of mutual feeling ultimately crowned by sexual union is often given as typical. The psychologist Sandfort (1981, 90) may well be correct in attributing this to the attempt to render such relationships more acceptable to outsiders. Thus it must be stressed that a short circuiting of such a process is rather common, and, contrary to what it is feared outsiders might think, this is certainly not always bad.

Questioned about their one-time-only contacts over the preceding five years, 20% of the subjects in Pieterse's investigation (N : 148) claimed to have had many, or very many while 80% said they had none or very few; 62.8% liked to have such casual contacts concurrently with their steady friendships, while 26.4% didn't; 49.3% preferred to have only one steady relationship at a time, 35.1% to have several simultaneously, while 14.9% had no opinion (Pieterse 1982, II 15-17).

In any case, it is quite senseless to divide boy-lovers into categories of the morally superior (having steady friendships) and the morally inferior (preferring one night stands). In putting a taboo on boy-love, society itself made it impossible for many men to build a steady relationship based on pedagogical eros without placing themselves and their young friends at great risk from the aggression of their fellow-citizens or the forces of justice. Penal law is almost powerless to prevent the sexual activities it criminalises from taking place: sexual appetite is just too forceful. Not that the legal dispositions are completely ineffective: they actually favour the casual, pedagogically valueless, even objectionable, contacts at the expense of closer relationships with their manifold opportunities. We are therefore justified in concluding that these legal prohibitions actually work against the best interests of society. (Chapter Four will take up this subject in greater detail.)

This being the case, the *behaviour* of an individual boy-lover doesn't justify jumping to conclusions about his *tendency* to promiscuity. Research statistics on this score tell us more about the social conditions in which boy-lovers live than about their real proclivities.

ABSENCE OF RELIABLE RESEARCH

Our hostile, taboo-ridden laws have yet another effect: they make proper research into boy-love and boy-lovers next to impossible. Science is unable to study a group which is treated by its social environment with so much hatred, contempt and fear that it renders itself open to punishment if it acts in accordance with its innate tendencies.

After the work of Lombroso many years ago, criminology had to abandon its hope of describing "the criminal". Previously this had seemed a simple job: you only had to analyse the characteristics of penitentiary inmates. It became apparent, however, that the penitentiary contains only a small selection of people who have committed the most serious crimes: petty delinquents, much more numerous, escape with fines or probation. Moreover, the question was raised as to how much a man might change by being caught, arrested, questioned, forced to face a judge, sentenced, jailed with other prisoners and excluded from society. In other words, is prisoner A still the same person as criminal A at the moment of his offence? At last, research into the extent of the so-called "dark numbers" (the figures for unknown, undetected crime) turned up the astonishing facts that more than 90% of young men are guilty of criminal activities (Buikhuisen 1969, 74). I once calculated, for a speech I gave in the Dutch parliament, that in a total of one million offenders guilty of serious criminal activity, only 260 will ultimately go to jail. The inmates of a prison, therefore, are in no way representative of the "typical criminal", supposing such a creature really exists.

The environment in which research into criminal behaviour takes place is downright ideal when compared with that in which paedophile research must be carried out. For, originally, no distinction was made between paedophiles (men and women whose erotic feelings are directed mainly towards children) and pseudo-paedophiles (men and women whose erotic feelings are directed mainly towards adult partners but who use children as substitutes). The error which so completely invalidated older studies of homophilia was once again repeated here: "paedophile" subjects were sought among patients in psychiatric hospitals and people sentenced by the courts. Everyone who had committed an "indecent assault" upon a child was labelled "a paedophile", just as, formerly, everyone who had had intercourse with a partner of his own sex was labelled a homophile (Bullough 1979, 15; Taylor 1981, x; West 1977, 32). Freud, too, saw only pseudo-paedophiles (Fraser 1976, 119). Implicit was the

assumption of these authors that sexual behaviour was always indicative of one's innermost sexual desire, as if the act rather than the configuration of his erotic instinct defined a man as a paedophile. Sexologically, this is an untenable simplification.

Albrecht (1964), Baumann (1983), Crawford (1981), Freund (1981), Gebhard (1965), Howells (1981), McCaghy (1967, 1971), Möller (1983), Newton (1978), Sandfort (1979), Schorsch (1973), Socarides (1954), Swanson (1968), Wegner (1953), Wyss (1967) and other authors mentioned earlier in this chapter made it clear that among the so-called sexual delinquents there was only a very small percentage of real paedophiles. The great majority are people who, through some inability to establish human contact, thus suffering from an inferiority complex, cannot establish relations with an adult partner. Wegner found many war invalids among them and noted the frequency of alcohol abuse; drinkers, according to him, took more easily to boys than to girls (1953, 43, 51), although this latter finding was not substantiated by Baumann (1983, 439).

By mixing the few real paedophiles with the large mass of these unhappy individuals in the same cauldron, earlier researchers created a porridge which they tried to analyse with the instruments of their science. How biased these learned men were is clearly revealed in their terminology: their subjects were "offenders", "criminals", "delinquents", "molesters", "convicts", etc., the young partners were always "victims", their activities together was "abuse". The findings of these researchers inevitably conformed to their preconceived opinions (Howells 1981, 72, 86-87).

Tootbert & Jones portrayed in *The International Journal of Psychiatry* (1959) their 120 convicts as sexually unsatisfied people suffering from contact inadequacy, guilt feelings and hypersensitivity to the judgement of other people; they were weak, had strong feelings of inferiority and thus took refuge in identifying with the physically weak and emotionally less corrupted child. Niemann (1974, 67) detected among 173 sexual delinquents 68.8% with contact inadequacies. Michael Schofield (1965, 150) published a survey of the opinions of many authors. According to Fitch the "typical paedophile" comes from a bad environment or a broken family. Frosch & Bromberg believed him to be lonely, a social misfit; Mohr & Turner agreed. Wyss called him a shy man with weak impulses, uncertain of himself. Wilson & Cox (1983, 122) claimed that he was shy and non-competitive. Schofield mentioned Bromberg, Bowman & Freedman who declared that the paedophile was generally impotent. Swenson & Grimes asserted that his professional activities were qualitatively below average. Mohr & Turner and Virkunen felt the same applied to his intelligence and athletic prowess; mentally he was immature. Alan P. Bell and Calvin S. Hall (1971) described their subject as a very infantile personality. Kurland (1960) was convinced that a man who has sex

with children must be very disturbed—and even suggested that he suffered from a kind of schizophrenia. Mohr & Turner (1967) proposed a schizoid introversion and Karpman (1964) shared their opinion. Socarides (1959), on the contrary, felt that such sexual contacts as these men had with children were their safety valve, preventing an otherwise inevitable outbreak of psychosis. Albrecht (1964) and De Wind (1969) found that many were feeble minded. All of these authors found paedophilia a severely pathological condition: the adult male who had sex with children was a “sexual psychopath” and possessed all the characteristics of this anomalous group.

We will have more to say about the “sexual psychopath” in our fifth chapter. Let us observe in passing that the image of him in the mind of the public has not the least correspondence to reality. He is not the bestial brute people believe him to be. Research reveals him as a man with extremely strong moral convictions, particularly with regard to sexual matters. Often he is very religious, a faithful church-goer. The age at which he begins his sexual activities is far later than average because his sexual inhibitions are stronger than in healthy individuals. His sex contacts therefore are relatively few. In 59 cases of indecency with children analysed by Albrecht, 29 of the offenders had had no sexual relations at all, 7 only a few times per year, 10 only once or twice monthly and only 10 regularly or frequently (1964, 91). Shame is strongly developed in the sexual psychopath who is, moreover, shy and uncommunicative. What makes him a sick person is precisely this exaggerated sense of morality, which places a crushing burden upon him until every so often he collapses under it and his dammed-up impulses break out in an explosion driven by despair. Less serious explosions lead to such acts as exhibitionism, graver ones to sexual assault, rape or even torture-killing. People who approach moral problems with a somewhat lighter touch, who can quietly accept their own personal weaknesses, have less difficulty controlling themselves and don't let their behaviour run to extremes.

The picture drawn in these out-of-date publications of “the paedophiles” is horrifying. When I compare it to the over 400 practicing boy-lovers I personally know or with whom I exchange letters: I see clergymen of various churches, psychologists, authors, university professors, accountants, teachers, physicians, journalists, social workers, youth leaders, sculptors and painters, musicians, poets, army officers, public notaries, lawyers, civil servants, labourers, office managers, actors, publishers, employees, white collar workers, diplomats, photographers, mathematicians, stock brokers, bankers, librarians, estate owners, members of the landed gentry, farmers, engineers, psychiatrists, janitors, architects. Some are good workers at jobs on a low social level; many occupy important or very important positions and are recognized as men of outstanding character. Among them are citizens of many nations, social misfits as well as highly intelligent men in the public eye.

Some are tedious and boring, others vivid and fascinating in their conversation; some are shy and peculiar, others energetic and obstinate; some are very religious, some freethinkers; their ages vary from 17 to 70, the frequency of their sexual activity with boys from hardly ever to every day; some lead a monogamous life, others change their partners continually; some have had sex with countless boys without having any trouble from the police; others were arrested and punished at their first attempt; there are married men and bachelors among them.

When the Dutch authorities, shortly before World War II, suddenly launched a campaign against long-tolerated boy-love in The Netherlands East Indies (now Indonesia), among the victims were the mayor of the capital city, a Roman Catholic bishop, the medical superintendent of Java's largest hospital, nearly all artists living there and several journalists (Rovsing 1959, 171).

The contrast between reality and the ridiculous picture emerging from the supposedly scientific specialist literature would be laughable were it not for the enormous amount of misery, injustice, immorality and damage the latter has caused. As we have already pointed out, by mixing a low percentage of healthy boy-lovers with an overwhelmingly larger percentage of often mentally troubled pseudo-paedophiles, the results couldn't be otherwise. A technical research sampling error—with fateful results.

Its echoes are resounding in some scientific publications—and still reverberate loudly in public opinion and the sensationalist press. More recent research, however, has come to very different conclusions. And new opportunities appeared when, beginning in 1970, paedophiles in various countries started to organize and come out in the open. They saw that “self-definition has been central to building identity for all oppressed people, and it is not the same as stigmatic labeling.” (Reeves 1983, 17) Nothing short of epoch-making was the study of the Dutch psychologist Frits Bernard who, in 1973, distributed a printed questionnaire during an international congress on paedophilia in Breda, and continued to do this at later meetings. His successors were: in The Netherlands, Rouweler-Wutz (1974) and Monica Pieterse (1981, 1982) who, likewise, distributed different sorts of questionnaires among members of the various paedophile workgroups and their acquaintances; in England the Paedophile Information Exchange, which carried out a “survey of members” (published in 1976); in France, Léonard des Sables (pseudonym) with an enquiry among the members of Arcadie, a male homosexual group (published 1976-1977).

Now, neither the paedophile workgroup of the NVSH nor the English P.I.E., the German D.S.A.P. and A.K.P., the Swiss S.A.P. nor other similar organizations have ever managed, in their composition, to be really representative of paedophiles. Almost without exception, their membership was

boy-loving male; the North American Man/Boy Love Association (NAMBLA) even explicitly so limits itself. Only Pieterse's research sample ($N = 148$) was less one-sided: although the large majority of her subjects (79%) loved boys, 9.2% preferred girls and 11.8% loved both sexes (1982, II 9).

The reason that boy-lovers predominate might well be that they are less inhibited in confessing their tendencies than are males loving girls (Mohr & Turner 1967, 363). French feminist Leïla Sebbar explains the absence of women through female sexuality being closer to the eroticism of children and farther removed from the goal-oriented sexuality of men. Thus women might be expected to be less interested in legalising paedophilia (1980, 293).

Since our study is concerned only with male boy-love, this one-sidedness of "paedophile" organizations and the research carried out among their members is, for our purposes, no real disadvantage. But the bias in all contemporary research is caused not so much by the bias in the interests of the subjects as by the bias in their social selection. This has certainly influenced results.

For, inevitably, members of an organization fighting for the emancipation of a group of people subject to strong discrimination, and the abolition of laws directed against their activities, are not average citizens. The man who has a great deal to lose if his innermost erotic tendencies are discovered by the people surrounding him will be reluctant to join such a group, and will be even less inclined to turn up at its meetings. The fear of discovery, however, disappears after his cover has been destroyed by arrest. Among the paedophiles present at the first Breda meeting, Bernard found no less than 54% who had been sentenced by the courts (1979, 76). The number of those who had had less serious collisions with justice, collisions which didn't result in conviction (not investigated by Bernard), might have increased this percentage considerably, because in The Netherlands the public prosecutor is free to not bring a case to court even if there is sufficient proof of guilt—and prosecutors tend to take full advantage of this discretionary power. Among Bernard's subjects who had never been convicted, 20% had been or were still under psychiatric treatment, another indicator of conflict with the human environment in which these people existed.

Men lacking in fighting spirit, or having no desire to meet people with similar interests, or who haven't been able to come to terms with their personal situation independent of the views of the surrounding majority—these men simply don't join such work groups. Emancipatory movements are always made up of the fighters, the lonely independents and the intellectuals—hardly a cross-section sample of any society.

In the introduction to their report on male sexuality, Anthony Pietropinto and Jacqueline Simenauer share the opinion of Alexander Pope that he who wants to study mankind should go to man, not to psychiatric patients, to

members of an organization or to his correspondents (1979, 16-17). Weinberg's statement (quoted in Levine 1980, 255) that public stigmatisation makes it impossible to compose a representative sample of homophiles, is even more applicable to paedophiles, labouring, as they do, under a far heavier burden of stigmatisation. Taylor points out that one simply cannot generalise from a sample taken from a paedophile work group (1980, XI).

Quite obviously, an active fighting spirit, independent judgement, and an unwillingness to submit to the moral values of neighbours, will not fail to influence sexual behaviour. The Kinsey reports as well as the investigation of Pietropinto & Simenauer established a relationship between intelligence and both the frequency of sexual activities and the form they take. This implies that a member of an unusually combative and intelligent emancipatory group will on average behave differently from his non-member counterpart. Therefore, all statistical data about sexual activity, promiscuity and sexual intentions deriving from members of paedophile action groups have only limited value. This likewise applies to Bernard's findings concerning the supposed lower level of neuroticism of his subjects. Wilson, Green & Siegelman come to similar conclusions in their analysis of a group of lesbian women: its members were on average less neurotic than a heterosexual control sample. But here as well, the selection may have been decisive (West 1977, 185). Marinkelle had already discovered (1976, 286) that, with respect to neuroticism, deviant groups are undistinguishable from heterophiles.

This is not to say that the work of these researchers is worthless or useless. It gives us a picture of the membership of previously uninvestigated organizations. But every temptation to generalise from these findings to paedophiles at large should be resisted. One appreciates the fact that P.I.E.'s English report modestly describes itself as a "survey of its members"; Léonard des Sables likewise published his study as "an enquiry among a group of boy-lovers". Bernard's research suffers in comparison by not being representative even of the action group as a whole: it includes only those present at a meeting and thus his sample is but a selection of a selection.

Rouweler-Wutz correctly and repeatedly maintained that the group she analysed was not representative (1976, 40, 44-45). Monica Pieterse criticised Bernard on this point: he was swept away by his enthusiasm as a pioneer and couldn't resist the temptation to generalise unduly from his findings by using such phrases as "*the* self-image of *the* average paedophile", etc (1978, 54).

The paedophile, however, doesn't exist, any more than *the* heterophile or *the* homophile (Möller 1983, 30). The object toward which his sexual appetite is directed may be of immense importance to the person concerned, but as long as his desires go out to another human being it is not that being's sex or age which form and characterise the personality of the lover. During the years prior to World War II it could still be believed that the homophile was a man

II. ADULT LOVERS

with certain character peculiarities which distinguished him from "normal" people. Since then, thousands and thousands of homophiles have been carefully examined and it gradually became evident that *the* homophile in no way differs from the "normal" (i.e., the majority) man except with respect to the object of his sexual desires (West 1977, 33). I'm convinced that a more systematic study of paedophile individuals will lead ultimately to the same conclusion, that is to say, they have no essential characteristic qualities which distinguish them from those about them save the predominance of children as objects of their erotic feelings. Taylor (1981 XIV) and Wilson & Cox (1983 57, 65) were of the same opinion: West said we knew nothing about boy-lovers (1977, 251) —or just as much as about any other subdivision of mankind.

PERSONALITY TRAITS OF BOY-LOVERS

The Dutch psychiatrist Veenstra once rightly observed that one thing which characterises the sciences dealing with man and his society is that they usually cannot prove their most important theses—and what they *are* able to prove is mostly unimportant (N. R. C. Handelsblad 21 Feb, 1981). Research and statistics thrust upon us an image badly corresponding to reality but conforming instead to the individual tastes of the investigator—an image decorated or disfigured with pleasant or unpleasant attributes. In the case of paedophilia, this has obscured the only important generalization one can make about people whose sexual appetite is predominantly directed upon children: to wit, that all the world's vices as well as all the highest human virtues are to be found in them. History has shown them to be capable of the most savage sadism as well as sublime self-sacrifice.

The American Dean Wayne Corll, who, about 1973, killed 27 boys in Houston after fettering and raping them, torturing and maiming their genitals, was a paedophile (Gurwell, 1974). Likewise, Haarman, the "werewolf" who between 1918 and 1924 killed at least 24 boys by biting their throats during sexual intercourse (Lessing 1925). But on the other hand we read of the Greek Episthenes imploring General Seuthas to let him be executed in place of a beautiful boy Seuthas had sentenced to death (Buffière 1980, 621). Likewise the socially prominent Dutch client of mine who chose to tell the police everything they wanted to know, thus destroying himself socially, rather than see his beloved boy tormented by police questioning. As the former Chairman of the English Paedophile Information Exchange has attested, this response is far from exceptional: many boy-lovers have similarly sacrificed themselves (O'Carroll 1980, 100).

As boy-lovers are men like all others, we may encounter them in any age group and in *all social classes*. Jacques de Brethmas rightly observes that a man may be publicly known as a boy-lover and function as television produ-

PERSONALITY TRAITS OF BOY-LOVERS

cer, head of a government department, pope, archbishop, singer, diplomat, general—but it is nearly impossible to be appointed clerk at the town hall, become a traffic policeman or a subordinate employee at a bank if you're suspected of having "bad morals" (1979, 72-73). In 1980 the newspapers reported that two lovers in Sicily, a 25-year-old man and a 15-year-old boy, had persuaded a 13-year-old friend to kill them with a gun because they could no longer stand the persecution of the people with whom they had to live. This couple had learned from experience how cruel heterophiles can often be....

Nevertheless, it seems that the majority of boy-lovers *don't feel unhappy* about their peculiarity *per se*. They wouldn't want to change the object of their attraction even if this were possible. Many are proud of their special talent for dealing with boys, helping them, getting on confidential and intimate terms with them (Wilson & Cox 1983, 45, 48).

Investigations of boy-lovers should be limited to what is peculiar to their particular situation. In part the situation they find themselves in is artificial, a product of our culture, and might therefore change if society dropped its prejudices in exchange for better knowledge, gave up those tenets of its moral code which impose an unnatural negation of sexuality and adopt instead positive tenets in harmony with human nature. The persecution of boy-lovers by the forces of "bourgeois decency", the law and a kind of psychiatry which views adaptation to social norms rather than mental health as the aim of therapy all place on this group the same heavy mental and emotional burden which other people put on groups they fear by means of continuous threats, expulsion from society, injustice and repression. Could this be the reason why Wilson & Cox (1983, 56) found them more introverted than average?

Apart from these culturally acquired characteristics, there are some traits which are inherent in the specific condition of being a boy-lover. The sharp observer who writes under the pseudonym of Casimir Dukahz remarks: "Boy-lovers are not remarkable for their longevity... indeed, because of their youthful élan vital even beyond eighty, most who have passed away can be said to have died young." (1966, 9) De Brethmas likewise affirms that the boy-lover is more child-like (1979, 83). He *retains his youth* longer than other men (Wilson & Cox 1983, 117). It certainly can be said that *the more child-like* he is the more successful he will be in dealing with young people. He will like to be surrounded by children and adolescents, and this may determine his choice of profession (teacher, pediatrician, etc.) or how he uses his spare time (youth leader, sport club manager) (O'Carroll 1980, 59). In his relations with youth, exuberant spirits, playfulness, trust, carefree behaviour, light-heartedness, informality and other such qualities will increase his popularity (Thorstad 1980, 33). This is not to say that *the* boy-lover possesses more of these assets than other people do. I have seen some who are depressed and characteristically go about with their faces clouded with gloom, putting boys

off and constantly complaining about their lack of success.

Many homophiles are mortally afraid of old age, when their *physical charms* have withered and they will be faced with loneliness. The boy-lover has less reason to fear in this respect, for boys aren't really very interested in the looks of their adult friends. When a boy likes a man it is not for his physical charms. Some men possess a kind of aura, exercising a magnetic attraction on nearly every boy they meet. I will never forget a rather ugly man who, even in countries where communication was frustrated by his ignorance of the language, had boys simply running after him. Another, well up in his sixties, kept writing me how amazed he was that one strikingly handsome boy, who was hardly short of admirers, returned to him time and again to abandon himself in sexual pleasure as soon as they were naked together. When my correspondent looked at his old face and worn body in the mirror he simply couldn't understand it. As this theme kept recurring in his letters, I finally got fed up and sent off a telegram: "Smash the mirror". In the letter that followed I explained: "Your friend is not fascinated aesthetically by your body; he is—justly—fascinated by your selfless care, your affection, your knowledge, your understanding, your generosity, and this enthusiasm he communicates with his body to your body, because at his age this is the most perfect way to express himself."

Stenbock beautifully portrayed such a situation in his story *Narcissus* (1894). The radiant, classically beautiful face of a man is horribly disfigured when a jealous woman throws acid on it. As a result of this catastrophe he becomes socially very withdrawn, until one day a blind boy crosses his path and they become intimate friends. He protects, looks after and loves the poor child. Finally he finds an ophthalmic surgeon who operates to restore the boy's sight. Then the dreaded day comes when the bandages are removed and the little friend will see for the first time the man's repellent face. But the boy looks at him and exclaims, "You're the most beautiful person in the world!" (Fraser 1976, 181)

Are boy-lovers more tender, *less aggressive* than other people? Statistically it is evident that they very seldom resort to violence against the objects of their desires. Rape and assault on boys are most exceptional, much more rare than with men loving girls or women (Baurmann 1983, 304; Pieterse 1978, 92). In his study, Bernard (1979, 109) observed that the participants at the Breda conference showed a reluctance to dominate. Is this the reason for the low incidence of violence, or is it that the boy by his behaviour reveals himself less fit to be victimised? (Baurmann 1983, 322)

Bismarck, the German imperial chancellor, held homosexuality a menace to the social order because it bridged "the distinction between classes ordained by God" (Fontanié 1980, 652; Gury 1980, 655). Blüher (1966, 60-61) says it is "a well-known fact that refined and less rigid people show a strong

attraction to simple, robust natures. They spontaneously choose the objects of their love from among the common people." One seeks his opposite in the beloved. Since a homophile cannot do this with gender, he may look for his *opposite in social class* or race; men in uniform may excite him, or the polarity of sado-masochistic relationships (Gagnon & Simon 1974, 256; Tripp 1975, 157-158; Galloway & Sabisch 1982, 36, 48). This magnetism of opposites—the prince and beggar-boy of so many fairy tales—is frequently observed in boy-love. It is as though the contrast in age is not enough: social differences are valued as well (Abraham 1969, 321; d'Arch Smith 1970, 191-192; a Barrington 1981, 68, 150; Oskamp 1980, 47; Tournier 1975, 333; Tripp 1975, 158). As poet Paul Verlaine put it (1868, 176):

*Mes amants n'appartiennent pas aux classes riches,
Ce sont des ouvriers faubouriens ou ruraux,
Leurs quinze et leurs vingt ans sans apprêts, sont mal chiches
De force assez brutale et de procédés gros.*

(My lovers aren't found among the rich; they are working people from the suburbs or the country. They carry their fifteen or twenty years without finery, and they don't hesitate to act brutal and coarse.) In the same poem he praises their powerful sex and dancing buttocks. There are: Charles, a choir-boy developing into a rough youth; Odillon, still a child but endowed like a man; François the supple, with the legs of a dancer and such a fine cock!; Auguste, so handsome when the poet first came to know him but every day, now, growing more adult...

In a special boy-love issue of the magazine published by the Belgian homophile action group "De rooie vlinder", a boy-lover laments the *short life of most relationships*: "It is possible to dream, in theory, about steady relationships—in practice, however, there are only two possibilities: either casual sex in a doorway or the lasting friendship in which one is sexually very reserved (...) Most boy-lovers have to limit themselves to the first—casual sex in a doorway. Many suffer from having this as their only option; others are avid consumers and find it normal and healthy. But many would prefer more continuity. Most relationships are very superficial: one nearly never meets the same boy twice. This is the big sorrow of most boy-lovers. I wonder if the boys themselves wouldn't like to meet one a second time." (1977, 21). The investigation carried out by Pieterse has shown that, at least for The Netherlands, this picture is too gloomy.

I am acquainted with one boy-lover who, during his whole life (he is now well over sixty) had sex with only two boys—but with these two frequently and intensely. Another declares, equally creditably, that at least 800 boys have shared his bed and brought him to orgasm. After the death of the

II. ADULT LOVERS

Australian court recorder Clarence Osborne, photos, notes and recorded tapes were discovered documenting the sex he had had with some 2,500 boys (Wilson 1982). Are these three men very different types, or was it mainly different exterior circumstances which made their life styles so different? This is the kind of question upon which research should now be directed. How do boy-lovers meet their partners? How do they approach the boys? How do they talk to them and what about? How often are they successful? How do they relate to the parents of their boys? Do they often discuss sexual matters with their young friends? How important is the sexual aspect in their relationships? What are their experiences with boy prostitutes? Do they participate in group sex? What do we know about father-son incest? All of this, and much more, must be studied.

It is also important to know more about how relationships end. Saint-Ours, a French author, claims boy-love is a preparation for loneliness: only until he reaches a certain age does the boy possess his erotic attractiveness for the loving man and thus sex inexorably comes to an end (1973, 202). In the final analysis, this is the only fundamental problem common to all boy-love relationships. We will come back to this theme in later chapters. The fact that many boy-lovers have relationships with a number of boys, one after another or several at the same time, is connected to this.

Another consequence of the fixation of the boy-lover's eros upon the fleeting boyishness of the partner is that we often find he has taken up the hobby of *photography*: the beloved and admired boy is frequently photographed, mostly naked, to preserve a lasting image of the transient glory of his body (Hennig 1979, 153-159).

For boy-lovers share with the ancient Greeks their admiration of the young male body. The simple presence of a handsome boy, the chance to look at him, contemplate him, may, just in itself, make the boy-lover happy. And he would certainly agree with French author Jouhandeau (1909, 75) where he observes: "To me no boy is naked enough." One wants to see everything, uncovered, to study every secret. Some men will keep their beloved jealously concealed from the eyes of fellow boy-lovers; others want to bring their boys to the point where they can go about nude in the company of their friends without feeling shame.

An American feminist who has written excellent articles on man/boy love, Pat Califia, was of the opinion that boy-lovers in having sex show more concern for the pleasure of their partners than does the average heterosexual (1980, 20). Now, it comes naturally to human beings in sexual intercourse to be excited by the partner's symptoms of delight; imagining his or her pleasure normally reinforces one's own. What everyone wants, as William Blake observed, is to see "the lineaments of gratified desire" in the face of a beloved (Friday 1981, 74, cf. page 68). In the NISSO research among 140 boys aged 15

PERSONALITY TRAITS OF BOY-LOVERS

to 17, only 1% thought it unimportant to excite a girl's lust feelings during intercourse, 2% thought this "rather pleasant", 36% found it "pleasant" and 60% "very pleasant" (De Boer 1978, 2A-G-2-10). Not without reason are frigid women taught to simulate sexual excitement in order to give their men greater satisfaction. In man/boy contacts, however, this aspect seems to be especially important. For many men, the chief source of delight is experiencing how the boy's naked body jerks in orgasm, hearing how he pants in high excitement, feeling in embrace his muscles strain spasmodically, listening to the quickened beat of his heart. Saint-Ours (1973, 194) declares: "Why try to describe my own lust? It has no meaning except as an echo of the lust I procure." Michael Davidson writes: "And even during actual bodily play, my pleasure—beyond the mental joy of seeing and touching, which is intense—comes from a consummate privacy to *his* pleasure; if that's absent, the whole process seems absurd and pointless. My own orgasmic conclusion may happen as a mere afterthought, if it happens at all—that too depends on *his* desires." (1962, 31) Eglinton: "Much of the excitement in sexual contact (...) comes from observing one's partner's reactions—squirming, delighted squeals, sighs, endearments, other obvious manifestations of pleasure—and from knowing that one is giving one's partner such delicious sensations" (1964, 152). Tom Reeves, spokesman of the North American Man/Boy Love Association and who has slept with hundreds of adolescents, says: "I have never cruised a boy. They come to me. And if I was with a boy and he showed on his face that he wasn't interested I wouldn't be able to function" (quoted by Rose 1978, 18). Jouhandeau: "My delight is only my delight if first it was his delight" (1969, 13).

One might be tempted to suppose that this applies only to relationships of profound love, but that is not the case. Even in sex with prostitute boys the same holds true: the client's dearest desire is to produce orgasm in the boy.

- 33 Janus (1981, 216) reports the words of Tony, a fifteen-year-old New York boy with three years of experience as a prostitute: "My teacher introduced me to a couple of other men who were very nice and didn't really ask very much except to suck my penis. I used to wonder what they were getting out of it. I was prepared to refuse if they wanted me to start going down on them or anything, but they seemed perfectly happy with that, and they'd take me a lot of places I'd never have got to otherwise, and spent a lot of money on me."

Moroccan and Tunisian boys in their relations with tourists often are only willing to be active in anal intercourse. Laud Humphreys mentions North American cities where if a car stops near certain well-used public lavatories two or three boys instantly appear at the window, even before the driver has had time to get out. "Got a dollar, mister?" a boy of about thirteen

will say. "I'll let you suck my cock" (1970, 98). Albert Reiss (1963) gives a detailed picture of boy prostitution in one American city: innumerable boys are involved and their relations with clients are subject to very strict rules. The client sucks the boy, nothing else being permitted. If the man tries to be tender to the boy, the gang will beat him up. The boy must pretend to feel no pleasure: he is just delivering his sperm in order to get money. The world tennis champion, Bill Tilden, was known to have only had masturbatory contacts, restricting himself to masturbating the boy (Deford: *Big Bill Tilden*, 1976, quoted in Gay Books Bulletin 1, 3: 12, 1979).

This phenomenon of the boy's pleasure having more importance for the man than his own has been noted by many other authors. Pieterse quotes a 55-year-old musician, loving boys 11-15, who says: "I love to give a child a sexual experience; I don't have to reach a climax myself; it often happens that I don't come myself; my pleasure lies in the pleasure of the child. I feel much more satisfaction if the child has felt relaxed and cheerfully satisfied in sex. I myself don't need this liberation. Often, after the child, freed of tension by his climax and delighted with the sensations he experienced, has left my home, I masturbate myself rather quickly" (1982, II 93-94). Weeks (1980/81, 133) mentions this, too. There is one recorded example of the opposite: Redhardt (1968, 77) quotes a professional prostitute who complains about clients being entirely indifferent to his sexual needs.

Many boy-lovers experience the deepest satisfaction in feeling how, in their fondling hands, the boy's soft sex responds to these ministrations and gets hot and hard. Peter van Eeten once remarked that the stiffening sex of a boy is the sweetest of love-songs. In his poetic masterwork *Tombeau pour cinq cent mille soldats*, Jean Guyotat makes an army general day-dream about the boys he has seen helping the cooks in the kitchen: "Oh, to throw myself upon these bodies, so ready for pleasure... and then my hand opens and slips under their sex, and my fingers clutch the glandular globes while the other grasps the shaft and feels it as it grows hard, stretches itself, becomes hot and glowing like red-hot iron... to feel in my hand how the sex throbs..." (1976, 245-247).

Just watching this phenomenon may be enough. Pieterse (1982, II 45) tells of a man who, seeing his beloved boy in orgasm, spontaneously reaches orgasm himself. And Guyotat, describing activities in a colonial boy's brothel, lets one of the inmates, Amour, tell his brother, who is also working there, "Kment, this morning a client came... I was naked on my bed—he didn't touch me... He put flowers and dry leaves on my stomach and asked, 'Boy, bring these flowers and dry leaves to life again...' I jerked off; the client laid his ear on my panting, narrow chest, his face enveloped in the perfume of my stiffening sex; then the seed spurted from it, drenched the flowers and dry leaves. 'Amour, I'm grateful to you. I take them back with me, freshened by your thaw.' He seized my sticky cock, dropped from my trembling hand,

pressed it to his lips and drank the last drops of seed still issuing from it" (1973, 113).

Rhyxand tries to explain such feelings in a man by suggesting that the boy here is a substitute: in him the man sees himself as he once was, and he wants to show him the male tenderness he himself so sadly lacked, and dearly missed, in his youth (1978, 203-204, 209). Geiser (1979, 85) agreed. Dr. Nahman Greenberg of Chicago puts it in a less benevolent way. In plain conflict with the facts he maintains that the paedophile "is usually looking for a very fine, elegant boy, who represents for him the symbol and height of what he would like to have been himself", and then continues, "The paedophile believes he is adoring, indulging, gratifying the boy. He also hates the boy. He envies him, has contempt for him. It's purely jealousy; the boy represents what he would like to have been." (Hearings 1977, 431) Wilson & Cox (1983, 31) believe that paedophiles have for the most part been subject to a more restrictive up-bringing than the average child. A more differentiated approach is found in Walters (1978, 15): "The young boy may serve as a focus of a man's tenderness for his own younger self, or serve as a symbol of the man's dream of himself which incorporates his femininity, rediscovering in himself thereby those qualities prohibited him as a grown man." Schérer (1978, 61) is of the same opinion.

West, too, claims (1977, 103) that a homophile man is often very attached to his mother, even identifies himself positively with her. He wants to resemble his mother as much as possible. In this he will be most successful if he chooses as love object a boy resembling himself and whom he can love in a manner similar to the way his mother once loved him (or should have loved him). A similar opinion is voiced by Levie (1971, 251-252, 254) and Kraemer (1976, 2).

The psychiatrist Morris Fraser, for whom this love is "a sexual disorder", "a deviance", likewise looks for its origin in "a struggle for maternal affection", in "unfulfilled needs in childhood" coming into the conscious mind. If the man marries and fathers children, the tendency in them is often even more evident, either because it is hereditary or—more probably—it results from a lack of good up-bringing (1976, IX 7116, 221, 231).

The question of whether the tendency is inborn or acquired is discussed by Kruijt (1976, 25) without a clear conclusion being reached. But one thing is certain: no man will suddenly turn or be turned into a boy-lover (Abraham 1969, 158).

Quite ridiculous is the explanation of paedophilia that it is the result of fear of an adult partner (for example, Janus 1981, 228, quoting Gould), a fear compelling the frightened male, conscious of his insufficiency, to turn to a child (Taylor 1981, XIII; Möller 1981, 37). As we have mentioned already in this chapter, an inferiority complex may well drive a man to satisfy his sexual

II. ADULT LOVERS

needs with a child, making him a pseudo-paedophile, but no fear ever gives birth to positive love, and it is the predominance of positive attraction that makes a man a boy-lover.

To explain boy-love as the result of "paedophile attitudes displayed towards him by adults" (Lambert 1976, 108, 127) or by earlier sex experiences with an adult when the subject was a boy himself (for example, Pendergast, quoted by Janus 1981, 208) seems equally ungrounded. Pieterse (1982, III-26/27) found, in fact, that only 29.1% of her subjects reported such experiences (and most of these had been agreeable) and this percentage was not much higher than in boys in general. As she points out, the theory of seduction in boyhood being the origin of homophile tendencies in the adult is nowadays everywhere rejected. (We will come back to this in Chapter Four.)

Morris Fraser (1976, 115) quite rightly observes on another page "that shamefully little is known about paedophilia". That does not prevent him, however, from giving a precise psychoanalytical description of its origins. "In the first place, the paedophile has been doubly deprived; his emotional attachment to his mother has been intense, but not fully returned, or not returned at all. The father has been absent, disliked, or despised. As a result, the dilemma which he reaches at the oedipal stage is particularly cruel. To an extent, this crisis is common to all male children; a boy becomes aware of his father's role, and thus of the threatened loss to him of exclusive possession of his mother. The classical defence is 'identification with the aggressor', in which the boy takes his father as his behavioural model; by doing so he hopes to absorb from his father the characteristics that will again capture his mother's affection. But what happens to the boy when his father is absent, or where there is some intense, or even subtle father-son aversion? The practical effect is that his father then cannot, of course, be the male model, and there is no 'aggressor' with whom to identify. Doubly frustrated, the boy turns back on the only love object left: himself. Thus *narcissistic inversion* takes place and, as he grows older, he remains deeply in love with the child he was then. This is impossible, so he must project (i.e. transfer his affection outwards) on to other children of a similar age to this lost child, who thus become love-objects for him." (1976, 20)

Another solution is proposed by Liesbeth van Zijl, a Dutch children's psychologist: "The child has, especially in his first years, insufficient support in finding and assuming his own identity. In addition there may be neglect, in that, on the one hand, the needs and activities of the child are constrained by severe sexual taboos, and, on the other hand, highly erotic, sexually-tinted play goes on between him and his parents, with ensuing growth of guilt and anxiety feelings inhibiting his development. This combination of strong guilt feelings and equally strong erotic/sexual desires leads to the consolation of self-love. The woman becomes, just as does the father, taboo, and what

PERSONALITY TRAITS OF BOY-LOVERS

remains is an attraction for the non-threatening boy or girl." (1976, 352) Rosemary Gordon similarly believes that the paedophile, as a child, was "the object of unconscious sexual seduction on the part of one or both parents" (1976, 46).

Such sublime self-assurance about the lives and personalities of the men I know who are most indisputably boy-lovers! I can only say that I cannot see the slightest connection between theory and the human beings supposedly "explained".

So, at least in its origins, boy-love remains a mystery. And it may well stay a mystery forever—like the mystery of how one becomes a woman-lover or a man-lover. In the early days of research on homosexuality it seemed most important to answer whether attraction to one's own sex was inborn or acquired. Only after a lengthy battle, with proponents on both sides getting quite worked up in their arguments, was hope of getting a clear, unequivocal, decisive answer gradually abandoned. The evolution of a human being from fertilised egg cell to adult is an extremely complicated process, subject to an infinite number of influences. How all this works out to fix the factors which will ultimately excite one individual adult's sexual appetite is at the present time almost completely unknown. It is essential that we avoid tumbling into the pitfall of lazy thinking and assume that the attraction between man and woman is something self-evidently natural which doesn't need explanation. We have suggested already that human attraction is not, essentially, heterosexual but rather bisexual. Any specialisation of an individual's appetite, therefore, needs to be explained, and the process or processes through which this specialisation comes about have never been established: only suggestions and suppositions have been made (Masters & Johnson 1980, 429). A very intriguing problem for science, but not very important to the individual, for everyone feels that his own personal appetite is, for him, natural. And no wonder: even if it's not inborn but acquired, the appetite is well established before the child is four or five years old, and this process is not conscious. When the appetite does become conscious it has already been in existence for some time, and by then it has become unshakable, "incurable", and not amenable to treatment (Hanry 1977, 120-121).

THE NUMBER OF BOY-LOVERS

One last question keeps cropping up with the same tenacity: how numerous are boy-lovers in the population as a whole? Again, an exact answer can never be given. In the first place, research which will produce reliable answers is simply not possible in a large, representative sample population as long as this sexual orientation is stigmatised and made socially taboo. In the second

place, the concept itself which we are trying to measure is not clearly delimited, for we aren't dealing here with a quality that is simply present or absent but one which occurs to a greater or lesser degree in everyone. Only when it occurs so strongly in an individual that it colours and dominates his whole existence will we call him a boy-lover. The husband who can only bring off intercourse with his wife if he simultaneously fantasises handsome naked boys is a boy-lover. His neighbour, for whom inserting his penis into a woman's vagina brings him to the zenith of bliss but who from time to time buys sex shop magazines with pictures of naked boys because he thinks them aesthetically beautiful, is certainly not.

In former times it was generally supposed that all homophiles were attracted to minors. This idea seems to be losing ground, however. In a recent representative sample of the Dutch population, only 19% still thought so (Sanders 1980, 162). It doesn't require deep reflection to realise how improbable this assumption is. For those aspects of a boy's body which are specifically exciting to a boy-lover are his smooth, hairless skin, rounded curves, etc—precisely those qualities which distinguish boys from men. We have already seen that, in this respect, boy-lovers are closer to heterophile than homophile men, who are drawn to mature male bodies and find the boy's body very much less attractive. Westwood says that among nine homophile adults who experimented with boys, five maintained that they would never try it again (1960, 64).

Hirschfeld, in his pioneering studies, concluded that in every 100 men attracted to members of their own sex, 45 preferred adolescents, 45 adults, 5 elderly men and 5 immature boys. This was mere hypothesis. Curran and Parr in 1957 found, in analysing 100 male homosexuals "that 17 were predominantly attracted to boys" (Fraser 1981, 50). Because 26-35% of all boys experience sexual advances by adult men, Fraser thinks that boy-lovers cannot be rare. Taylor shares the opinion that their number "is larger than commonly supposed" and that the criminal statistics "represent only the tip of an unexpectedly sizeable iceberg" (1981, x). Fraser (1981, 50) and Righton (1981, 24) agree that the "real figure would seem to be about 1% of the total population", but this remains speculative.

To the erotic attractiveness radiating from a boy's body, many more men, of course, are responsive. Rossman (1973, 3) suggests "that one out of every eight men has at least occasional pederastic inclinations, and that the number of normal heterosexual men and boys who engage in such sex play at least once in a while is large." Of the 32% of Barrington's subjects who fantasized during masturbation about men, nearly two-thirds also fantasized about young adolescents seen in publications, in sports, on TV, etc. Of those who wanted male contacts, 19.8% preferred age 12-15, 29.7% age 16-18, 46.2% age 19-24, 49.5% age 25-35, 29.7% 35 and over. The preferences

overlap and are often mingled (1981, 163-164). Scheller (1979, 58-59) points to the subscription figures of paedosexual magazines. A Danish firm had 12,000 subscribers to such publications in West Germany alone, and a Dutch firm 4,000 domestic subscribers. Most of these were certainly men and can be divided into girl-lovers and boy-lovers. Sex shops mostly offer magazines with pictures of naked boys, some showing them sexually active. Thomas, a 30-year-old photographer, told J. L. Hennig, "You see, quite contrary to what people believe, the circle of paedophiles is enormously large, and I think it is getting larger all the time. For example, go to the underground. Almost every day you will see one or two men fumbling with boys. They are much more numerous than people think. Many don't even know themselves they're boy-lovers; they've repressed it. Talk with people in the education field, with teachers or scout masters. The things they tell you are so sad: men who are 100% boy-lover but refuse completely to admit it." (1979, 157-158)

- 34 "I am sixteen now. I'm no longer a virgin and I'm not queer. I am working in a movie theater as an usher. No day passes by without me feeling the hand of somebody passing on my body. If I sit down during the show, it never fails: there is the hand of a man groping for my sex. It is unsupportable. I don't know what to do." (Rush 1980, 252)

Research among students and inmates of reformatories yielded figures for actual sexual experience which are surprisingly large: 15% of the male students at a Roman Catholic university, nearly 33% of the pupils in an English borstal, had had, as boys, sexual experiences with men (Corstjens 1975, 127).

Clarence Osborne, the Australian who interviewed about 2500 youths on their sexual lives, noted, "I hardly know any adolescent who hadn't received a number of homosexual proposals. I myself was not a specially handsome boy, but I was sturdy and well-built. I cannot expect even my best friends to believe me when telling them how many prominent men made homosexual proposals to me. Among them were a judge, lawyers, doctors, clergymen and prominent government officials. I remember them all well and I could disturb many happy marriages in this city by telling the truth about these people." (1977, I-5)

On the other hand, as we have seen already, there are men who are always followed about by boys, who attract them with a specific kind of magnetism. The same Thomas, quoted by Hennig above, says, "Even when I don't try in the least to make their acquaintance, I am sure that, wherever I may be, as soon as there are boys, they will be flocking around me within a half-hour and striking up conversations." (1979, 142)

II. ADULT LOVERS

One thing we may be sure of: it isn't always the man who runs after the boy. There is also something in the boy that draws him towards the man. But this is a theme for our next chapter.

Chapter 3.

Boys and Their Sexuality

TO BE A boy means first of all to change. In certain periods of his life this happens with surprising rapidity.

You go with a family of friends to the nudist beach. Their 12-year-old son is along: attractive, vital, exuberant. His hair is white-blond, his voice—continuously shouting and laughing—is clear and high; he is in constant motion, running and hopping among the adults; he is merry, full of the joy of life. When you look at him or speak to him he smiles immediately. Physically, everything is grace and charm: the small appendage underneath his tummy, between his legs, calls little attention to itself and, since the boy is in the habit of going about naked, he is hardly self-conscious of this organ.

Three years later you make the same outing with the same family, and their son agrees to come along, too. His hair is now considerably darker, his voice is deep. He is much quieter, walks beside the adults and enters into their conversation. You see his nice smile much less frequently now, for he's more serious. His body is big and strong, the musculature setting it off beautifully. On his chest the dark nipples stand out in profile. And between his thighs, where coarse hairs have appeared, nature has done everything in the past three years to make his sex conspicuous: the dark bush of hair on the lower abdomen points to it; penis and scrotum, more darkly pigmented than the rest of the body, have grown so big that they dangle of their own weight and, as he walks, take up an independent motion. Perhaps the glans, with its alluring, deep purple shine, protrudes a little from the foreskin. The boy is now quite conscious that, naked, he is displaying himself as a sexual being, that he

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

carries his maleness in front of him almost as an advertisement. Depending upon the set of his mind, this will make him proud or shy.

It is profoundly symbolic that in the newly born boy the navel is his body centre (he must feed himself and grow) and in the mature boy it is the penis. The long lines of the boy's body all point to it, now: in nature's scheme of things, what he does with his penis will be the most important activities of his entire life.

PHYSICAL MATURITY

Growth of Genitals

From a purely physical standpoint, becoming mature is a very dramatic process. According to the French endocrinologist Bertrand, the preparation for this event begins as early as the sixth year, but for the moment it is outwardly imperceptible (Schérer 1981, 81). The body as a whole increases steadily in height and weight, but the genitals lag very much behind, appearing in the baby proportionally much bigger than in an immature twelve-year-old. Then suddenly the hypophysis starts to pour hormones into the blood and stimulate growth. Testicles and penis now increase rapidly in size, together with those connected organs hidden in the lower abdomen, the prostate and seminal vesicles. The colour of the skin on the genitals becomes darker; the larynx conspicuously enlarges, the voice drops, and coarse hair appears on hitherto hairless areas: the underbelly, around the anus, in the arm-pits, on upper lip, cheeks and finally the chin. Growth of secondary hair increases everywhere on the body: thighs, legs, arms; in some boys it gradually spreads across the chest and elsewhere on the trunk. Axillary perspiration increases and its odour changes. The nipples get more pigmentation and prominence. The hairline on the forehead changes. The complete evolution from the commencement of genital maturation to the adult stage takes on the average slightly less than six years (minimum of five years, maximum over seven). Boys with a long maturation span tend to have larger penises (Greulich 1976, 13-14; Reynolds and Wines 1951, 533, 543). But long before all these processes have terminated the hour of puberty *per se* has struck: the boy's ejaculate for the first time contains live, fertile sperm cells. Hair growth is not a very reliable indicator of sexual maturity: it may precede it but may also come later (Reynolds & Wines 1951, 539). In most boys pubic hair appears prior to axillary hair, but in some this order is reversed (Greulich 1976, 8).

William A. Schonfeld (1942 & 1943), an American army physician, examined the genitals of 1500 healthy white boys and young men, age 0 to 25, in New York to determine their state of maturation. No simple task with these organs! The penis caused particular problems because its length and circum-

PHYSICAL MATURITY

ference should properly be measured in erection, which Schonfeld thought impractical. However, he developed methods of obtaining fairly reliable measurements. He had the subject lie on his back and stretched the flaccid penis upwards along the belly: the distance between the fold of the penis where it joined the lower abdomen and the tip of the glans was then taken as penile length. Schonfeld wrote that in a number of males this length was nearly equal to its length in erection (Schonfeld & Beebe 1942), but this claim must be viewed with some skepticism since in one and the same individual the size may be different at different times: cold and disgust may cause shrinking, for example. Kremer (1976, 271) categorically denies that there is any fixed relationship between the lengths of the flaccid and erect penis. Reynolds & Wines (1951, 536) found, in a sample of 34 cases, the coefficient of correlation between length of flaccid and length of stretched penis to be 0.70.

Lacking more exact and comprehensive figures, we will nevertheless use Schonfeld's data. He sets up six stages of genital maturation:

1. Prepubescent boys without any evidence of active genital growth or of secondary sexual characteristics (i.e. hair growth, voice changing, nipples colouring). Testes volume 0.3 - 1.5 cc.; length of penis 3 - 5 cm., circumference 2 - 5 cm. To this group belonged all boys under 10 years of age, 96% of the 10-year-olds, 76% of the 11-year-olds, 44% of the 12-year-olds, 15% of the 13-year-olds and 6% of the 14-year-olds.
2. Beginning of active growth of the testes, with some growth of penis but no pubic hair as yet. Testes volume 1.75 - 6 cc.; length of penis 4.5 - 9 cm.; circumference 4 - 6 cm. To this group belonged 4% of the 10-year-olds, 12% of the 11-year-olds, 14% of the 12-year-olds, 18% of the 13-year-olds, 15% of the 14-year-olds, 2% of the 15-year-olds and 1% of the 16-year-olds.
3. The penis, too, starts to increase quickly in length and thickness; at its base some dark hairs appear; the nipples get a deeper colour and begin to be more prominent; growth of the larynx influences the voice. It becomes evident to those around him that the boy's maturing process has started. Testes volume 1.75 - 13 cc.; length of penis 4.5 - 12 cm., circumference 4 - 8 cm. To this group belonged 12% of the 11-year-olds, 32% of the 12-year-olds, 38% of the 13-year-olds, 26% of the 14-year-olds, 16% of the 15-year-olds, 9% of the 16-year-olds, 3% of the 17-year-olds.
4. Further growth of the genitals; the shape of the face changes, becomes longer, the chin more pointed; the nipples often protrude considerably, resembling those of girls in their first stage of maturing; on the underbelly

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

the hair forms a real bush. Testes volume 2 - 20 cc.; length of penis 8 - 15 cm., circumference 4.5 - 10 cm. To this group belonged 10% of the 12-year-olds, 21% of the 13-year-olds, 26% of the 14-year-olds, 22% of the 15-year-olds, 11% of the 16-year-olds, 7% of the 17-year-olds, 7% of the 18-year-olds.

5. All aforesaid processes continue. The larynx gets its final shape, the voice its adult tone. The hair growth on the underbelly is triangular with its peak pointing downwards. Testes volume 6 - 20 cc.; length of penis 9 - 15 cm. Circumference 6 - 10 cm. To this group belonged 8% of the 13-year-olds, 27% of the 14-year-olds, 53% of the 15-year-olds, 59% of the 16-year-olds, 39% of the 17-year-olds, 30% of the 18-year-olds, 26% of the 19-year-olds, 17% of the 20- and 21-year-olds.

6. The genitals attain their final size. Male hairgrowth on the face (beard) and in many cases also on the chest. The hairline above the forehead changes from the one continued childish curve into two half-curves. Testes volume 8 - 25 cc.; length of penis 10.5 - 18 cm., circumference 6 - 10.5 cm. To this group belonged 7% of the 15-year-olds, 20% of the 16-year-olds, 51% of the 17-year-olds, 63% of the 18-year-olds, 74% of the 19-year-olds, 83% of the 20- and 21-year-olds, 100% of the 22-25-year-olds.

In the latest Dutch research, 10% of the boys had full-sized genitals at the age of 13.5 years, 50% at 15.3 years, and 90% at 18.6 years (v. d. Werff ten Bosch 1983, 17).

The penis grows first in length, then in diameter. During early adolescence it "tends, consequently, to be thinner in proportion to its length than it is in the adult" (Greulich 1976, 3). Reynolds & Wines (1951, 530) comment on the "sculpting" of the penis during its development, showing the shape of the glans even when covered by the foreskin. At the same time the colour of the skin darkens. At the end of growth, the skin has, in white boys, a reddish brown colour and is loose, while the sculpting becomes less pronounced. It seems that, in the sixth phase, "the penis size decreases slightly from the immediately post-adolescent peak." (Tanner 1962, 32; Reynolds & Wines 1951, 534) This decrease is clearly visible in some photo series in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation. It seems to be more pronounced in the large penises than in the smaller ones.

At birth, the foreskin often adheres to the glans and cannot be drawn back. This condition disappears spontaneously. In a research project involving 1044 Dutch boys, adhesions were found in 58.3% of the 7-11-year-olds, 51.3% of the 12-year-olds, 33.0% of the 13-year-olds, 25.9% of the 14-year-olds,

PHYSICAL MATURITY

11.1% of the 15-year-olds, 3.0% of the 16-year-olds and 0.0% of the 17-year-olds. Thus circumcision is not needed to eliminate these adhesions. Phimosis (a foreskin which is too tight) often corrects itself in time. Of the Dutch boys, 2.6% were circumcised, and of the non-circumcised boys, only 0.8% still had, by the time they reached 17, foreskins too tight for cleaning and intercourse, thus necessitating circumcision (Wafelbakker 1976, 886). In the USA, where nearly all newborn boys are circumcised, an average of 230 babies die every year as a result of this unnecessary mutilation (Szasz 1982, 69).

The characteristic variability of sexual data, which we have already discussed, reaches enormous proportions if we look at penis size, as the figures show. Kinsey, after making some thousands of measurements, found that the average American male had a penile size of 6.3 inches in erection (Burton 1963, 79). Average figures, however, are rather unreliable, because a few extreme cases on top or bottom may influence the outcome considerably. It is better, therefore, to establish median values. If you want to say something, for instance, about body height of 14-year-olds and you have 150 subjects in your research sample, you would do best to arrange them according to their heights, then take the values for numbers 75 and 76. The median height of the sample will be the average height of these two boys. Heights of the shortest and tallest of the group, the dwarf and the giant, are matters of curiosity but give us little real informational value. To make an even better survey we would divide the 150 subjects, still arranged according to their height, into 10 groups of 15 boys each and then take the average height of the two boys either side of the dividing line (first "decile") between the first and second groups (very small boys) and the same for the two boys either side of the line between the ninth and tenth groups (ninth "decile"—very big boys).

The Chart in the Appendix on Page 282 shows Schonfeld's data for penis size in 1500 young subjects (first decile, median, ninth decile) and illustrates how the process of growth is suddenly accelerated.

This sudden growth spurt is even more pronounced in the testicles, the volume of which may increase in a few years from 1.5 to 25 cc. In addition, there is a change in the inner tissue: they will first seem softer to the touch, and later become firmer again.

In about 50% of the subjects the testicles remained equal in size; in about 25% the left one is larger and in 25% the right one is larger.

There is great variation in the phenomena accompanying nipple growth. In puberty they often become extremely sensitive—ticklish, so that the boy doubles up with uncontrollable laughter at the lightest touch, or easily hurt. It is not at all unusual to see the nipples and surrounding tissue swollen like the budding breasts of a pubertal girl. In 80% of the boys this swelling is palpable, in 20% it becomes visible (Wafelbakker 1978, 1484). Later this growth will disappear and the male shape will establish itself: a small to large, deep brown

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

disk with a more or less prominent protrusion in the centre. The size reduction may take from 12 to 18 months (Greulich 1976, 12).

Ejaculation

At some point during this evolution comes the decisive hour of puberty, when the ejaculate emerging from the stimulated penis contains fertile sperm for the very first time, rendering the boy ready for procreation. Unfortunately it is rather difficult to fix this moment precisely, since it requires an analysis of the first urine produced in the morning (Greulich 1976, 23-38). Whether a given boy is or is not mature, on the other hand, can easily be established by examining a sample of his ejaculate under any low-powered microscope: the countless lively sperm cells, about a twentieth of a millimetre in length, swimming about in the prostatic fluid are immediately recognisable.

Boys tend to consider themselves mature as soon as they start to expel a sufficient quantity of thick white ejaculate with sexual climax. Some authors have suggested, however, that years may pass between this moment and real maturity, i.e. the production of fertile sperm. It is incredible that we are still in doubt about such an important and elementary matter—simply because research hasn't gone into it.

Such a delay in achieving total maturity might explain some phenomena which would otherwise remain a riddle. In the Muria tribe in central India, for example, all the young people in a village, from 5 or 6 years of age up to about 18, sleep together in one lodge, the *ghotul*. As soon as puberty announces itself, daily sexual intercourse is the order of the day for every girl and every boy. Contraceptive media are unknown and the bigger boys ejaculate freely in the girls' vaginas. There is a strong belief that no girl will become pregnant (which would be considered a disgrace) unless she has intercourse outside the *ghotul*, which is strictly forbidden. It turns out that pregnancy is a rare occurrence. No other explanation has been offered than the hypothetical infertility of the boys: their ejaculate doesn't contain enough vital spermatozoa until, at about 18 years of age, they marry (Elwin 1959).

On the other hand we read in the popular press of numerous instances of 14-, 13- or even 12-year-old boys begetting children. Some time ago there was a news release from Texas about a boy of 14 who had already fathered two children from his 15-year-old girl-friend.

The mystery remains, and may only be solved when the sexual lives and activities of young people can be openly discussed and examined rather than hidden under a shroud.

The scientific literature tends, for the sake of convenience, to identify the age at which a boy begins to ejaculate with that of puberty, and this is easier to ascertain and establish. Borneman (1978, 480) says that girls reach puberty

PHYSICAL MATURITY

between 8 and 14 years (mostly 10 - 11) and boys between 9 and 16 years (mostly 11 - 12). Desmond Morris writes: "The first ejaculation in boys does not usually occur until they have reached eleven years, so that they are sexually slower starters than girls (The earliest recorded successful ejaculation is for a boy of eight, but this is most unusual.) By the age of twelve, 25 percent of boys have experienced their first ejaculation and by fourteen 80 percent have done so. (At this point, therefore, they have caught up with the girls.) The mean age for the first ejaculation is thirteen years and ten months." (1967, 54) Recent research in The Netherlands (100 boys) resulted even in a median age below 13 (Wafelbakker 1978, 1484).

One difficulty, however, is that the mean age seems not to have been a historical constant but has lowered considerably in the past hundred years. During this century children in the industrialised countries have grown faster and attained a greater height, with puberty setting in earlier (Visser 1976, 123-124), especially in the cities (Stockert 1956, 21). A hundred years ago boys entered puberty between 13 and 17 years of age (mean age: 15 years and 9 months); nowadays between 9 and 15 (mean age 13 years and 5 months) (Borneman 1978, 95; Schérier 1979, 89-90). According to Bernard (1979, 83) puberty has advanced by four months every decade during the last 120 years. (See also Sarphatie 1982, 50).

Of course we cannot project this trend very far into the future. It is clear that it must come to a halt, otherwise in about four centuries babies would be born mature! Aristotle (384-322 bc) put the mean age of puberty for the Greek boys of his time at fourteen (Buffière 1980, 608)—and he should have known for he slept with them. Most Roman boys were already mature by fourteen (Borneman 1978, 217). The mean age, thus, appears to have fluctuated upwards and downwards and the causes for this we can only guess at. Prof. Saenger of Cornell University, New York, thinks the lowering trend has now come to an end (*Gay Journal*, Aug 1978; Baumann 1983, 75).

In any case it was unfortunate that this reduction in age of physical maturity went hand in hand with the delay in mental maturity brought about by the necessities of modern education. To be physically adult but mentally infantile burdens many a boy with problems with which he is unable to cope (Heister 1973, 197; Mitscherlich 1973, 207). During the last century protagonists of traditional sex-negative morality, eagerly spreading their horror tales, taught that it was best for a boy to mature late. The precocious were suspected of being more inclined to sexual excesses. Loss of sperm would severely damage their health, and a certain Doctor Gall flatly declared that in a precocious youngster, producing sperm before he had completed his physical and mental growth, "both body and soul perished" (Aron & Kempf 1978, 167). The promulgation of such nonsense, of course, could only impair health and cause misery.

When Kinsey at last examined this relationship he found a positive correlation between early maturation and strength of the sexual appetite. The male who begins to ejaculate early will on average have a stronger sexual urge, be more sexually active during later life and stay so to a more advanced age. The sexually precocious boy will be the most potent (Borneman 1978, 735; Kinsey 1948, 301-307). A subject of Hite (1981, 883) declares: "I have slowed down from six or more ejaculations a day at sixteen to five or six a week at sixty-four." A black male who began masturbation at age six, and at age ten had complete orgasms plus ejaculation, had a phenomenal "staying power" and could hold an erection for as long as five hours and have as many as six orgasms in a similar period (Barrington 1981, 93). Another researcher, Lutz, also found a link between early maturation and intelligence. In his sample, the group with the highest intelligence matured at a mean age of 12.5; those of average intelligence at 13.5 and the least intelligent at 14.5 (cited in Hurlock 1949, 33). Such a correlation had already been suggested by Freud. Sexual curiosity is a symptom of maturity (Borneman 1978, 918). There are striking examples of 10-year-old boys who are very much preoccupied with sex, trying to obtain and study every book on the subject they can (Van der Veer 1983, 71). Such intelligent boys are very likely to begin active, dedicated experimenting with sex while they are still very young. In addition, precocious boys tend to attract greater admiration, even envy, from their peers and thus are generally more self-assured so they can be more aggressively enterprising in doing what they want to do.

Sometimes boys will shave, or trim the first pubic hairs which appear, hoping thereby to stimulate growth so they will be able soon to show off something of a moustache and a luxuriant pubic bush (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 128). In some regions, North Africa, for example, the shaving of pubic hair is a customary practice of body care and hygiene (Bousquet 1953, 71).

PSYCHOSEXUAL DEVELOPMENT

Elements of Cognition

Now we must briefly examine the psychosexual phenomena which accompany the evolution of an infant into a young man—an evolution far more complicated than the physical one. Writers—scientific, political, philosophical and artistic—hardly speak with a unified voice on this subject. In the opinion of some, the difference between the sexuality of the child and the sexuality of the adult is so great that a full-fledged relationship is quite impossible. Others, however, reject just as strongly any reference to "child sexuality", asserting that there is no difference between it and adult sexuality. According to the Gay Left Collective (1981, 55) both are wrong. Certainly

each extreme can be confronted with annoyingly conflicting evidence: the first that all natural processes are gradual and cannot be broken by boundaries—transitions are not abrupt and the final form already lies hidden in the immature; the second that if you play Beethoven's Ninth Symphony, for example, to a five-year-old and a twenty-five-year-old, they will both hear the same sounds but their emotional reactions will be quite different.

This is equally applicable to sex. The little boy and the large adult man may both rub their penises and obtain a sexual climax, but this is no proof that the act has the same significance for both of them.

Let us examine the exposition of this subject made by the Dutch psychologist Theo Sandfort who has delved deeply into this theme in connection with sex contacts between adults and children.

Child and adult differ in "elements of cognition", i.e. what an individual knows and thinks. Emotion (how an individual feels) and elements of cognition interact with one another fundamentally and significantly.

A boy, let us call him Ben, is staying overnight at the home of a friend. It happens there is a neighbourhood fireworks display. His friend John says to him, "Let's go upstairs," because there they will have a better view.

Chris has a love relationship with his young friend Dennis. Their finest and most passionate meetings take place at Chris' home, in his upstairs bedroom. When Chris wants to make love with Dennis he simply tells him so. Dennis, on the other hand, prefers circumlocution: he makes the same point by saying, "Let's go upstairs."

The same phrase, then, laden as it is with elements of cognition, carries a quite different emotional charge for Chris, because of his relationship with Dennis, than it does for Ben.

From the moment of our birth we begin to acquire elements of cognition. For example, the reader of this book will be convinced that men and objects do exist, even where we cannot observe them directly. To the newly-born this is not clear at all, and it will take him two years to learn this. Gradually he acquires knowledge of reality, also of social reality. Part of social reality is that there are people distinct from his own self. At first this isn't clear, either. The baby sucking his mother's breast feels himself a single unit with her. Only very slowly does the mother emerge as something distinct from the "ego".

Much later the realisation dawns that another person has his own feelings, thoughts and motives, all of which may differ from that of the child. The element of cognition implies the ability to see oneself through the eyes of another, to put oneself in the skin of someone else, to understand a different person's point of view.

Only then can a child say, "I like to touch your penis because you find it pleasant."

This brings us to the elements of cognition of sexual life, and these, too,

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

are only gradually acquired and integrated with one another.

The newborn baby knows nothing. As he explores his own body he will inevitably play with his genitals and so discover—first element of cognition!—that this elicits very pleasurable sensations. And so sexuality begins. As soon as he has acquired this element of cognition he will touch his genitals more frequently. If someone else plays with the baby's genitals, this person is not yet recognised as distinct from the "ego". A sexual relation to this person is therefore excluded and there is no element of shared sexuality.

If the little child now progresses to discover that a prolonged rubbing of his penis brings on intensely lustful sensations he has made another step forward, but he still remains entirely related, sexually, to himself. Even if his overt actions are precisely the same as those of a fourteen-year-old masturbating to fantasies of naked girls, the emotional context of the act is quite different. That another individual may be the object of the child's lust is an element of cognition which it will take years to acquire.

Perhaps, before reaching this point, the child has already taken on another element of cognition, to wit that another person is able to stimulate his penis pleasantly by touching it, as in childhood sex-play. At first these games are entirely centered on oneself, but they may lead to the discovery of another element of cognition: "If I touch John, John will touch me, and that is pleasant."

The following half-step brings a new element of cognition: "Something that makes me feel nice can also make another person feel nice."

The child is still a long way from feeling, "John is an object of my lust; his fine body turns me on; it makes me feel nice to give him pleasure with my body and watch him respond with lust, knowing that he realises how his lust makes me feel happy and excites, in turn, my own." All of these elements of cognition are indispensable to an "adult" sexual relationship, to make of sexuality an escape from loneliness and more than just a rubbing of one naked body on another. "It appears that a necessary component of rational premeditated sex is that the adolescent be well on the way to developing an identity of his own, separate from that of his parents" (Martinson 1981, 33); Borneman, speaking about "the capacity to love another human being selflessly, and this in a sexual sense as well as in the sense of *agape*" adds, "The whole process of human psychosexual development with its cutaneous, oral and genital phase gives birth to this capacity." (1978, 927)

This evolution is in itself already complex enough, but it is made enormously more complicated by the fact that Western society and its teachers refuse to accept the reality of human sexual evolution, in fact, interfere with it, hamper and obstruct it. There are no good reasons for doing so, reasons, that is, based on objective scientific knowledge; it is done simply out of obedience to a moral system which is strongly at variance with our human nature (Hart

PSYCHOSEXUAL DEVELOPMENT

de Ruyter 1976, 63-64). The unhappy child is told that his genitals are dirty and disgusting and that he is naughty if he touches them. Can one conceive of advice which is more perverting? He may have to suffer the consequences for the rest of his life. Many men were so effectively instilled with this idea that it is impossible for them to unite the love they may feel for an idealised woman with the supposed sordidness of sex, and so find themselves impotent with the venerated woman and only able to be sexually active with the despised whore.

An upbringing in harmony with human nature, on the other hand, will not only further the *gradual* development and acquisition of elements of cognition in the area of sex, but will also teach the child the vocabulary he needs to talk about his new experiences. We will come back to these matters in more detail in the Fifth Chapter.

Along with an increase in the elements of cognition goes an increase in appreciation, value judgements, opinions about what is agreeable or painful, beautiful or ugly, good or bad, permitted or forbidden. All of these, coloured by social opinions and private experiences, will shape the ultimate sexuality of the adult.

There is a moment in life where the evolving individual links his personal experiences with what he has been taught about sexuality. This is the moment when he becomes sexually conscious. From now on he sees his own feelings as "sexual" and calls them so. He begins to apply the judgements he has internalised about sexuality to his own behaviour.

The foregoing exposition may now serve as background for the following data from youth psychological literature.

The child perceives his relation to others in an essentially different way than does the adolescent (Hanry 1977, 91). Real friendship only becomes possible with puberty. At first moral perceptions are entirely exterior, imposed upon one by authority; only sometime between the years of 12 and 15 do they become internalised and conscious (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 84).

The sexual play of the child is entirely directed upon himself: "It is nice for me". The first wish to have some kind of sexual experience may take place at an early age: 4.5% at age six or earlier, 32% at seven or eight, 35% at nine or ten, 24% at eleven or twelve. This means, therefore, that at nine years of age half of all boys are already randy. Human nature drives the child toward sexual experimentation of some kind: 4.5% at age six or earlier, 12% at seven or eight, 29% at nine or ten, 48% at eleven or twelve (Yankowski 1965, 72). A desire to touch attractive persons may manifest itself even earlier, when the child is three (Freud 1920, 49). Towards an adult partner a child usually behaves passively: he wants to be caressed, and the adult must comply. The adult has to respect the wishes of the child and only do with him what the child himself finds pleasing (Leonetti 1978, 164 & 169).

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

Freud believed he had discovered a latency period, coinciding, roughly, with the years of elementary school, but in his later writings he came to doubt whether this temporary dormancy of sex was really a natural phenomenon or an artificial one caused by the strictures of our culture. Most investigators today feel that it would be wrong to propose a latency period as a general phase of childhood, for no trace of it is found in cultures where children are allowed to express their sexuality openly (Hanry 1977, 32, 80, 82 & 84). Recent research has revealed that in our culture, too, "progressive psychosexual development continues during years five through twelve" (Janus & Bess 1981, 75 & 81).

Only at puberty does sex acquire a whole new dimension; it is no longer merely a matter of "pleasure for me" but also of "my relating to someone else", and so becoming an integral part of such a relationship (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 87). Now the sexual behaviour of the boy becomes more active (Hanry 1977, 97; Leonetti 1978, 169).

At the same time the penis becomes much more sensitive than it was in childhood, more excitable, and this makes the boy more passionate (Pieterse 1982, II 87). The boy's sexual appetite increases sharply and is chiefly directed upon obtaining pleasure. Love is no prerequisite for intimacy: relations are easily established if the boy thinks they will give him sexual pleasure (Eve-raerd 1980, 253). Once he has passed the threshold of puberty, if he is not timid, human nature will push him into experimentation and he now enters the most sexually active period of his life.

In so doing he will make important discoveries. He will begin to reflect upon his own sexuality. Girls may, on average, reach physical maturity earlier than boys, but boys, being more experimentally active, are sooner conscious of their sexual identity, i.e. their heterophile and homophile tendencies. The boy discovers homosexual sensations at a mean age of 13 (a girl at 16); his being a homophile (if he is a homophile) becomes conscious at a mean age of 15 (a girl at 18) (Sanders 1980, 179).

A second discovery is the difference between sex partaken of purely for pleasure and sex as the expression of a personal relationship.

35 The special issue of *Recherches* entitled "Fous d'Enfance" contains an interview with a young man from Abidjan (Ivory Coast).

"Could you say something about how it was different during the time when you still couldn't ejaculate?"

"There was a lot I didn't know yet. I didn't know you had much more pleasure if you caressed a girl at the same time, but now I know. Every since I've been able to come, I've known. Now when I see a pretty girl on the street I get a hard-on. When I was little that didn't happen. I saw no difference between one girl and another—I could have fucked any girl—the only thing

PSYCHOSEXUAL DEVELOPMENT

that mattered was that thing between her legs. But since then I have discovered that there are pretty girls and ugly girls—and with a girl you love your pleasure is stronger than with one you don't love" (1979, 119).

36 Ben had a moving and deeply thought-provoking experience. When he was in grammar school he was a member of a club with some of his fourteen- and fifteen-year-old comrades. Their leader was the son of a local real estate agent, and occasionally this boy would "borrow" the key of an empty house from his father's desk and the little gang would go there on a free afternoon. It was their pleasure to slowly strip off their clothes and then play and rough-house with each other stark naked. Finally they would pair off in couples and go to separate rooms in order to masturbate each other.

Actually, Ben didn't find this all that much fun. Masturbating alone in his bedroom, where he could abandon himself to his own lusty fantasies, was much more exciting and satisfying than having a comrade rub him off. Nevertheless he joined in the sessions, for at that age a spoil-sport is liable to find himself socially ostracised.

For some years Ben had had a bosom friend, Charles, who lived on his street but went to a different school. One day he told Charles, in strictest confidence, about what went on in his sex club. To his amazement, Charles was enthralled with this information; he pleaded with Ben to let him join the club. Ben dutifully presented his friend's request to the club members, and they agreed, providing Charles would put himself to the test by stripping naked while they remained clothed and watched. This he did without any hesitation, and then took part in their naked games. When it came time for the boys to go off in couples, Charles paired off with Ben, of course. Now, the moment Ben felt the hand of Charles, his closest friend, upon his penis, he was swept by the most intense feelings of sexual delight he had ever experienced, and a short time later came to an exquisite climax.

So Ben acquired one more element of cognition: sex with love, all things being equal, is more pleasurable than sex with someone you don't care for. And this increment in his knowledge came about through the best and simplest learning process of all—personal experience. (Personal communication)

Importance of Puberty

Admitting that there is an apparent, even a real, continuity between childhood and adolescence, we should nevertheless recognise that there is an essential caesura at the time of puberty (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 109), one accentuated by the rather remarkable amnesia which sets in—after puberty—for all prepubertal sex activities. People simply don't remember them any longer and so later can come to believe, quite sincerely, that during this part of their lives they were "innocent" (Borneman 1978, 706). Well-recognised

sexologists like Gagnon and Simon call attention to the multiplicity of new elements suddenly becoming active during the process of sexual maturation: "an overemphasis upon a search for continuity with infant and childhood experiences may be dangerously misleading" (1973, 16 & 47). Ben's experiences wouldn't have been possible before puberty, for only after he had crossed that threshold did he acquire the capacity to form a relationship, or, more precisely, the capacity to experience physical contacts and approaches in this manner. Dr. H. P. Nake explains it as follows: "A strongly marked hunger for experience, an excess of physical strength, a powerful need to assert oneself, a mightily increasing sexual impulse, recklessness and lack of deliberation characterise the interior landscape of this evolutionary phase, while the widening separation from the parental home, adaptation to the professional world, confrontation with the matter-of-fact world of adults characterise its outward aspect" (1966, 96).

No wonder the boy at this age behaves capriciously and unpredictably! Shakespeare makes the spirited Rosalind in *As You Like It* call boys and women sheep of the same colour: "changeable, longing and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles; for every passion something, and for no passion truly anything..." (Act 3, scene 3). She is only repeating the complaint of Pausanias in Plato's *Symposium*.

And yet a boy in love can love at this age with an abandon and an enthusiasm often unequalled by adults.

37 Léonid Kameneff, head of the "Ecole en Bateau," (an experimental French educational enterprise) has in his possession the diary of a precocious eleven-year-old boy. Jérôme went to a boarding school, but on weekends he was allowed to visit his adult friend. Here is what he wrote in his diary:

"Last night, after lights-out in the dorm, I conjured up your image. Here's what happened. Ten o'clock. The light went off. That's when it happened. I closed my eyes and took you in my arms. I caressed your body, all over, from head to toe. I kissed you: I love you. Your hands travelled all over my body—and then you stopped. As for me, I was moving my head down lower and lower, and while I was bringing you to greater and greater heights of passion, your hand was stroking my hair with more and more urgency. I flung my arms around you and you hugged me. I kissed you. Then our legs entwined. I clung in your arms. I kissed you. And I fell asleep, so glad..."

"I love him. I want to show him all the love I feel for him. The best way is to do this physically, with our bodies. I want us both to be crying for joy.

"You showed me the way to Paradise. I usually go to you Saturdays. These Saturdays are pure paradise.

"I love to make you happy.

"Jerking off alone—that takes me to the Little Paradise. Then I meet you, and together we go to the Great Paradise, which people can only enter as couples.

"I love you. I adore you. I couldn't live one week without you, because I love you. My body trembles against your body when it feels yours trembling against it. I could shout my love to the whole world! I could weep with it. I love you. I'll say it again, on my knees: I love you!" (Kameneff 1979, 131-132)

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

The sensational changes taking place in his body within such a short period of time—and at an age when his body is all-important—are very much on a youngster's mind. Where children receive a more natural upbringing, this evolution from child to adult tends to be a matter of pride, cause for rejoicing. But cruelty, cowardice and ignorance on the part of those responsible for the boy's sexual education can turn it into a hell. We will give examples of this.

Penis Size

For the boy, the most important organ in this evolution is, obviously, his penis—in its curious ability to change from limp to stiff, from soft to hard, and as the centre of the most delightful sensations. In a matter of only a few months it grows from a rather unimpressive appendage to a large, mobile, conspicuous organ which, even when tucked away inside his trousers, reveals its shape. As never before, it signals its owner as a sexual being, and is his advertisement. If he has been subjected to an upbringing in which sex-negative feelings, or even a horror of sex, was instilled, this signalling, this advertisement, will only bring the boy pain and embarrassment; it will render him timid and insecure. If, on the other hand, he perceives sex as something beautiful, he will be happy to have others observe his coming-of-age.

38 One day when I was still in school I was paddling around in my canoe and I came across a group of boys swimming. Most of them were rather young, 10 or 11, all wearing swim suits or slips. But one slightly older boy, perhaps fourteen, was naked. While the little boys lay in the shallow water or swam, the fourteen-year-old was constantly springing out of the water, so that his rather large penis and the small bush of hair which crowned it was always visible. He danced around, sang, let his penis dangle, and the smaller boys looked at it with interest. Then all of a sudden a boat filled with bigger boys passed by. The fourteen-year-old at once grew very quiet and made himself inconspicuous; he swam around with the others and so hid his nudity. He was no longer the best-developed male in the picture, the one who had something no one else yet possessed!

Freud thought it was almost impossible to talk about "nature" without imputing intentions to it (1920, 58). Well, nature (be it the work of an omnipotent creator, or the product of blind development from primordial matter) strives—anthropomorphically speaking—to make sex very conspicuous in the naked male body. Since man moves about upright, the genital region is more exposed to the eyes of an observer than in the other primates. Moreover, he has by far the biggest penis. Not only is it longer, but it is much thicker, too (Morris 1967, 71). When it is flaccid it doesn't disappear into a fold of skin: it hangs free and dangles in motion with every movement of the body as though it had a will of its own. When stimulated it grows even longer and thicker, reaches out and up from the pubis, disrupting the long lines of the body. At every step it bounces, no longer hiding the revealed sack behind and beneath.

For it is an exhibit, with its different skin colour, the heavy bush of pubic hair above it; sometimes the tip of the glans is denuded, slick and shiny with a purplish hue. When James and Veronica Elias questioned 537 women, 75% claimed that they always saw a naked man as "sexual" (1979, 479). The structure of the male body underlines its sexuality far more than does the body of a woman. It is significant that there are primitive peoples where both sexes walk about stark naked; others where the women wear clothing and the men don't, but none in which only the men are dressed and the women remain unclothed (Ford & Beach 1968, 102 & 122). Where nudity is permitted, man wishes to show his things. Man has something to show—and there are even tribes where they do this with outright ostentation. Men of the Massai, a pastoral people in the interior of east Africa, are racially endowed with very large penises, and they actually parade about showing them off, playing with them to attract attention as they talk (Ellis 1913, I-16).

39 (Continued from I.) One evening Onno was visiting his friend at home—as usual, naked—when a piece of classical music they were playing on the gramophone inspired him to dance. His friend liked what he saw so much that he persuaded Onno to give a little performance for some of his acquaintances. To make the show better, Onno's lover asked a well-known ballet dancer for advice. "The boy should wear a small cache-sexe," said the dancer. "No," replied Onno's friend, "I insist that he be completely naked. Hiding his genitals would be wrong. Anything he wore would only interfere with the natural lines of his body." But the ballet-dancer persisted: "Shame isn't what makes the dancer cover his genitals; he does it only to restrain them. A dancer must have complete control over every part of his body: all muscles, all joints. If you dance absolutely naked there is one part of your body which you cannot control, and that's your bared sex organs. They will be moving to the rhythm of the dance but they will be doing it with a motion of their own which will focus the attention of the audience upon them: the

penis and scrotum will impose their own meaning on the dance and change it." "This is exactly what I want them to do," replied Onno's friend. "We want to make his performance erotically exciting." "In that case," said the dancer, "keep the motions of the dance themselves very simple, for if you want to involve the viewers in its sexuality, complicated steps and body movements will be distracting; they will only divert their attention. Keep everything simple; make the penis dance, bounce—fling it about freely and you'll have an enormous success." He did—and he had.

The fact that the penis seems to have a mind of its own can be very impressive to its owner—as though he were carrying about a part of his body that was somewhat alien. Martialis told of a slave-dealer offering him an especially handsome youth. The price was too much for Martialis' purse and a richer man went off with the spoils. "Now my cock is secretly upbraiding me," he wrote, "and envies this rich purchaser" (I, 58). Alberto Moravia holds a conversation with his own penis in his book *Io e lui* (Me and Him, 1977).

40 (Continued from 39.) Whenever Onno performed he was swept by sensuous feelings. Sensing how he aroused the men in his audience, overhearing their comments about his body, his sex organs, he would find himself getting very randy, his penis swelling. Conversation in the room would stop. There was a feeling of suspense in the air, as everyone watched his penis rise in erection. The first time this happened he was disturbed. "I felt quite defenceless: not only was my nakedness at the mercy of these men, but my penis was revealing to them the state of my desire." Then he sensed their enthusiasm, became aware of how they were complimenting him: "That's magnificent! We love to see you like this!" The last of his timidity over the metamorphosis of his penis vanished and was replaced by feelings of pride and gladness that he could give people so much joy with his performance. "Sometimes it was as if I was exhibiting an alien object," he said. "My naked body was just a pedestal for it."

Many nude photos of boys give the same impression.

The penis is not only independent, it can also be obstinate and come into erection at times when its owner definitely doesn't want it to. This headstrong tendency of the adolescent penis can make teenagers, especially boys in the throes of puberty, hesitant to visit nudist beaches and swimming pools. Whether a boy shies away from nudist exposure or participates enthusiastically in the activities at such places depends a great deal on the attitudes he has been instilled with by those surrounding him during his sexual evolution: did they ignore his developing sexuality, avoid talking about it, or were they joyously positive? For when his penis goes into erection the boy is displaying more than just his body: he is revealing the fact that he feels randy. Only a boy who has been brought up, sexually, in complete openness, will be undisturbed

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

by this confession his penis is making and will be proud of it. In any case, if there are hesitations, it goes better with age-mates than in the presence of adults.

- 41 Kameneff (1979, 30) tells about his experiences with the "school in ships" he founded. They were in the Mediterranean. "Once again it is Michel, who spurns the conventional. This morning, in midsea, he strips naked and sprawls on the deck. When he stands up his penis is stiff; he has an erection. He's not ashamed of it; he's happy, in fact. He looks at us and smiles. In normal society an erection is something you are ashamed of. All the others put themselves in Michel's place; they giggle, to hide their own reticence. But Michel isn't shy at all. He says, 'It's normal'."

Boys are very much concerned with penis size. One who is a "late developer" or is naturally not very well endowed, tends to feel embarrassed and ashamed (West 1977, 66). He can be reassured, however, that often the prepubertal boy with a very small penis develops a very large one later in adolescence.

- 42 The Australian Clarence Osborne quoted a boy by the name of Trevor: "When I was twelve my cock was so small my two older brothers used to make jokes about it." Three years later it measured 19 centimetres! (1977, 1-36).

- 43 An Austrian correspondent told of a similar case. His young friend Lutz suffered enormously from ridicule in the showers by his classmates over the small size of his penis. He was then fourteen. My correspondent procured some kind of hormone preparation for him and—whether this was the cause or not—within a year the boy had a longer and thicker penis than all his erstwhile mockers. He was so overjoyed by this development that he showed it off unabashedly, wore tight jeans through which the outline of this object of his great pride would clearly show. (It is appropriate to observe, however, at this point that hormone pills should only be used on the advice of a physician, for they can have harmful side-effects, such as prematurely halting body growth.)

Most modern sex instruction books observe that penis size is not important and has no influence upon the pleasure of the female partner. This is coming to be more and more accepted by society as a whole. When the Netherlands Institute for Social-Sexological Research (NISSO) studied 840 young males about the state of their sexual knowledge, 46.9% of the 15- to 17-year-olds agreed with the statement, "The pleasure of girls is not increased by a larger hard-on", and 60.3% of the 18- to 21-year-old men agreed. An even greater percentage agreed with the statement, "A big hard-on has no

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

relation whatever with virility": 63.0% of the boys and 81.0% of the young men (1973,24). Research among women has shown that, in their appraisal of the male body, the penis has little or no importance in enhancing beauty or as an erotic stimulus. Women with a business interest, in fact, rather find an inverse correlation between size and pleasure. Wayland Young was told by a group of London prostitutes, "You know, young men's pricks seem to be getting bigger and bigger. It must be the Welfare State. I hate it, though, it splits me" (1967, 112).

So one is quite justified in easing the mind of an adolescent boy worried about the real or imagined small size of his penis by telling him size simply is not important. This is certainly true in heterosexual relations, but in the gay world of male homophilia it is otherwise (Duvert 1980, 140), and this world extends far beyond the 13% of males who, according to Kinsey's statistics, engage more in homosexual than heterosexual activities. As we will see later in this chapter, nearly all boys in puberty (thus those, too, who will later in their lives be mainly active with girls) display homosexual interests. For them, at that phase of their lives, the configuration of people's penises is very important.

Just how important this is to homophile adults can be seen in the research of Bell & Weinberg. In a list of thirteen possible desired physical attributes in sexual partners, white gay men ranked the configuration of the sexual organs in third place, after body type and face/hair/eyes (1978, 312). Among five themes in sexual fantasy, genital anatomy ranked highest among homophile males while it was not even mentioned by heterophiles for whom change of partner was the most exciting theme (Masters & Johnson 1980, 186). Bieber found the same interest in nearly two-thirds of his homophile subjects (1962, 229, 231, 251-252, 344); the number of them who wished that their own penises were larger was considerably higher than among heterophiles (1962, 180, 228, 231, 336).

47% of the contact advertisements in homophile magazines contain details about the writer's body or the desired body of the respondent (height, weight, etc.), 33% about the penis but far less about other parts of the body. The penis is praised as "exceptional", "huge", "super", "thick and meaty", "well hung", or its length is given (Lumby 1978, 67; Hennig 1978, 199). One of Dr. de Wind's homophile clients boasted, "I don't know how many metres of cock have already passed through my hands!" (1967, 56) In a sociological report about an American male brothel, the author mentions that among the young men working there, those with a huge penis were in especially high demand among the clients (Pittman 1971).

- 44 (Continued from 40) When Onno was in his thirties he knew a young man in Amsterdam who travelled about all over Europe earning his livelihood by

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

giving nude shows at homophile gatherings and so putting on display the really gigantic penis with which he had been endowed. The man found this so sexually stimulating that his penis would come spontaneously fully erect during the show.

But even heterophiles are not wholly indifferent in this respect. "Men who go to stag films always want the hero to have a penis of gigantic dimensions (...) In their unconscious identification, they are the star of the movie. They are gigantic, too." (Friday, 1981, 326)

In Indian as well as Arab erotic literature penises are amply described, even divided into classes according to length and circumference (Schmidt 1922, 121-129; Tifachi 1970, 278). And everywhere people are fascinated with records. Quite apart from the fantasies of erotic authors, we can read that the Kinsey Institute has measured a penis of 30 cm (or just under 12 inches) (Simons 1977, 43); Sutor saw in Senegal one of "nearly twelve inches in length, by a diameter exceeding 2-2.5 inches" (1964, 300) and Dickinson's famous *Atlas of Human Sex Anatomy* mentions a maximum of 35 cm. (1949, fig 113). Charpay found the same in a 30-year-old black American. The circumference was 15.2 cm. He estimated that only one in 10,000,000 males might be as large, and one in 8,000,000 might have 30 cm. German measurements on army recruits showed that one man in 250,000 attained 25 cm and one in 5,000 19 cm (Barrington 1981, 167). Among Schangalla negroes, and also in Paraguay, the penis in young boys is systematically stretched so that when they later come to marry the mother of the bride will deem it long enough (Ploss 1884, II 154). Sutor found a large-sized penis was often accompanied by very small testicles (1964, 142).

- 45 On a visit to Haiti, a student there brought me to a 17-year-old boy who was considered something of a curiosity because of his "record" size penis. It measured more than 26 cm and its circumference was 15 cm. It had earned him a lot of money: because of it he had been invited to visit Copenhagen for a few weeks to pose for photos and act in erotic movies. I asked him if girls weren't afraid of this formidable penis but he said they weren't.

This wasn't the experience of one Englishman who wrote to a popular weekly for advice. He claimed that his 31 cm penis made it impossible for him to have vaginal intercourse. By the time he was 12 his penis had already been spectacularly large and at school boys and girls both were always demanding that he show it off to them. By the time he reached sixteen it had obtained its full size.

Clarence Osborne, the Australian who had relations with over 2,500 boys, confirmed the generalization that a big penis on a boy is greatly admired

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

by his comrades. There was no school, football or beach club of any importance where competition in this area didn't go on (1977, III-4).

- 46 The ambivalent feelings boys may have at such occasions are well illustrated in a novel by Campbell: "Gower was a sallow-skinned boy with slanting eyes and a dark neck, and he had the largest organ that anyone had ever seen. It was a truncheon. And it was the object of savage mockery and unexpressed admiration in about equal shares (...) The horrible fact was that Gower had several times smilingly acceded to the request from junior associates in the Upper Dormitory to exhibit his extension. There were cries of 'Gosh!' and 'Ugh!'—again in equal shares—as it spread away across the room." (1969, 19)

Clarence Osborne observed that one couldn't deny the social advantage of owning a penis which stays big even when limp. He was impressed by many pictures of boys with extraordinarily beautiful sex organs, but he thought comparative measurements should always be made between penises in erection. Size of the same penis can vary as much as a centimetre depending upon the strength of the boy's excitement. Osborne himself was able to measure over 500 mature and maturing erect penises along their upper sides and set up the following classification:

Length:

Short: 15 cm or less
Medium: 15.25 to 17 cm
Large: 17.25 to 18.25 cm
Very large: 19.0 to 21.25 cm
Extremely large: over 21.5 cm.

Circumference:

Thin: less than 12 cm
Medium: 12 to 13 cm
Thick: 13 to 14.75 cm
Very thick: 15 cm and over.

Most of the penises he observed in erection and ejaculation were of medium size. He measured only 30 under 15 cm (excluding those of prepubertal boys) and slightly more than forty which exceeded 20 cm. Very thick ones were rare - and valued by their owners; they tended to be either rather short or, on the contrary, very long; in many of these boys the glans was also huge (1977, III-4).

In a study of 2,500 subjects, Barrington (1981, 86, 166-167) found the distribution of penis sizes in erection shown in Table 1. As a generalisation

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

only he states that black people tend to have larger penises than Caucasian males. In any case, black people are better represented in the large size categories, as can be seen in Table 2, also derived from Barrington's data.

Table 1. Penis Size in Erection (Barrington, 1981)

11.5 cm to 12.7 cm	4.0%
12.7 cm to 15.2 cm	39.6%
15.2 cm to 17.8 cm	42.2%
17.8 cm to 19.1 cm	9.9%
19.1 cm to 20.3 cm	3.01%
20.3 cm to 22.9 cm	0.02%

It is interesting to observe, in this context, that the ancient Greeks had quite the opposite ideal of male beauty: they admired in boys the small-sized penis. We see this depicted time and again on their vases—dedicated to a beloved boy—and in statues. This preference seems to have derived from their social system and their belief that frequent use, especially in puberty, enlarged the organ. Free-born boys, then, should be chaste and of decent behaviour, thus have small penises. In the case of a slave-boy, on the other hand, a lad who had to serve the passions of his master and arouse him sexually, a large penis, as proof of his salacity, was thought desirable. Satyrs were followers of Dionysus, symbolising the luxuriousness of nature and the sexual impulse, and these legendary beings were usually depicted with huge, stiffly erected phalluses.

Table 2. Penis Size in Erection by Race (Barrington, 1981)

Length	17.8	20.3	22.9	25.4 cm
100 black males	23.0%	18.0%	11.0%	3.5%
300 European males	8.0%	4.0%	0.5%	0.0%

But the decent boy had a small penis. Greek belief was adopted by the Romans: sexual activity advanced puberty and enlarged the organ. Juvenalis praises the uncorrupted rural youth:

- 47 He, a boy with an open face and frank innocence, as would befit every freeborn lad wearing the purple, his voice not husky and his testicles not yet big as a fist; who needn't pluck the hair from his arm-pits, nor, when he goes bathing, cover timorously with a pitcher that which swells between his legs. (XI, 154-158)

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

Thus it was deemed improper for a boy-lover to play with the sex of his young friend during intercourse. Martialis reproaches a man who goes too far:

- 48 "When you lie in bed with your naked favourite, clear-skinned Galaesus, you chafe him at his sweet kisses with your stubbly mouth. That is already bad, as everyone will agree. But let this be enough. Don't excite with your lecherous hand his member. Your hand does more wrong to smooth-skinned boys than your penis ever will: your fingers transform them into men all too soon. Thus soon the boy is stinking like a goat, sprouting hair too quickly, surprising his mother by growing a beard, too soon. When you see him in the bath, in full light of day, he's no longer attractive. Nature has given the boy two sides: the front to serve females, the other for men. Limit yourself to your own side." (XI, 22)

Aristophanes said that young athletes should have a strong chest, shining skin, broad shoulders, a short tongue, "big buttocks and a small cock" (Beurdeley 1977, 22). They got that way by being virtuous. In the theatre, on the other hand, comic figures often carried an enormous, thick leather phallus with a red tip—"to amuse little boys," as this playwright put it (Buffière 1980, 128).

This same belief that manipulation will enlarge the penis can be found today in some primitive peoples, although their concept of the beautiful male member is opposite to that of the Greeks and they try to stimulate its growth in the young. As recently as 1908 the Swiss ethnologist Stoll wrote in his book *The Sexual Life in the Psychology of the Nations* that girls' labia could be stretched considerably by continuous manipulation (In Hottentot girls the inner labia may be caused to protrude 14-18 cm (Moll 1921, 245)). Likewise, Stoll said, the penises of boys could be stretched in a similar way. "Those who start masturbation in early youth and continue it over the years usually have an extraordinarily long penis." Also "frequent intercourse from an early age" would have the same result. It is certainly true that in several primitive tribes the mothers are accustomed to pulling frequently on the penises of their baby sons, hoping, by so doing, to increase its length (Stoll 1908, 548). The superstition persists among Moroccan boys that they can make their penises bigger by having intercourse with a female donkey—or perhaps that's just their excuse for indulging in such a practice! (Davidson 1962, 185)

Watching boy-lovers inspecting pictures of nude boys has taught me that a vast majority of those who prefer mature boys most admire a big penis. In the words of the American poet Dennis Kelly: "You know I drool over small possessors of big possessions." (1981, 42) On the other hand, those with a preference for little, immature boys, abhor the oversize phalluses and want to

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

see the penis small and undeveloped. The literature, however, reveals a strong bias toward the long, thick penis.

- 49 Jacques de Brethmas's description of his adventures with a 14-year-old Moroccan boy may serve as an example.

"By undressing he permits me to see a cock which is permanently erect and exceeds the usual dimensions by a surprising amount. As the boy is rather small, and as, when he walks around, this huge thing arrives everywhere a quarter of an hour earlier than himself, he resembles a hoisting crane carried along with its lever (...) The thing swings slightly, horizontally, with the movements and the step of its owner, bouncing elastically like a diving-board just after the diver has jumped. I cannot resist taking its dimensions. As soon as the boy sees me approach with the tape measure he starts rubbing it so it will grow to its maximum length. Nineteen centimeters, cross-section 45 millimetres, which yields a circumference of 13.5 cm. (...) All in all the boy seems rather uneasy about this fifth limb, which is carried in front of him like an illness. Moreover he is so thin that one is surprised he doesn't topple over with this thing of his so wildly out of plumb (...) Seeing that this amuses me, Norredin climbs out of the bathtub to put on a show. He sits down on the floor at the side of the tub, encircles his thighs with his arms, bends his body forward and, without any special effort, takes the glans of his penis in his mouth. Now I am jealous, for he is realising what I have always dreamed of and will never succeed in doing." (de Brethmas 1979, 54).

It must be pointed out that the extensibility of the penis varies greatly among different boys. With some, erection results in hardly any increase in length. Often, however, one finds that when a boy strips naked a rather small penis is revealed, only to grow substantially under excitement. Organs which stay very long in the flaccid state often have trouble coming to full erection, attaining this state only seldom or never and normally achieving only a half-hard condition.

Erections

Already at the embryo stage male fetuses have erections, according to Dr. Mary S. Calderone (1983), at roughly 90-minute intervals, and this pattern persists after birth and throughout boyhood.

In puberty the growing penis becomes very sensitive and, as a result of the increasing sexualisation of body and mind, the slightest provocation (often of a character that would leave an adult quite unaffected) may produce an erection.

- 50 "When I was a teenager, I used to have to go through mental gymnastics (like thinking of my mother) to keep from having a hard-on in church or at the beach, etc." (Hite 1981, 401)

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

To the boy himself these frequent erections may seem to happen spontaneously, without any discernable cause. Sometimes they can be very persistent.

- 51 A fifteen-year-old boy told me that twice a week he went on a date with his girl-friend. On each date they would walk from her home to the movie house, which took about a half hour, and, after seeing the film, set forth on another walk, this one of an hour, to a railroad switching yard. There, in an empty freight car, they would have sex. From the moment he met her until he reached his climax about four hours later he always sustained a continuous erection.

A Dutch doctor once told a judge during the course of a criminal trial that he had examined 1750 boys between the ages of 12 and 16. Five or six percent displayed spontaneous erections when they took off their clothes, and 0.5% to 1% of the boys became so excited that they had spontaneous ejaculations as well (Ned. Jurisprudentie 1967, No. 363). These erections during the pubertal years may cause such tension in the penis that it begins to hurt. It is as though nature seizes every opportunity to force the boy to sexual activity.

- 52 A New Zealand youngster described the situation very well: "You've got a cock like a loaded pistol and you need to use it." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 134)

Strong, unresolved tumescence can also cause excruciating pain in the testicles and groin. (Hite 1981, 510, 594)

- 53 The inexperienced fifteen-year-old hero of James Kirkwood's novel *There Must Be a Pony!* describes what happens when an attractive girl starts to kiss him intimately at a birthday party: "It was a whole new world! After a while we were both getting a little shaky and flushed. I was getting this terrific erection and I kept trying to lean back away from her, but the more I leaned back, the more she'd push her body up against me. Finally, there was no keeping the secret any longer, so I just pressed right back and let nature take its course."

This was repeated several times later as the party went on. "Every time we'd get off by ourselves we'd lock in this terrific embrace and stand there for minutes (...) Toward the end of the evening I was getting this fantastic ache around my groin and associated regions. I was really getting worried. I thought I'd popped a gasket or blown a tube or something—I didn't know what! (...) When Mervin came by for me about twelve-thirty I could hardly make it out to the car. I was hobbling like some old man who'd just gotten off a horse after about eighty consecutive years of riding (...) I was in such pain I could hardly talk." (1971, 153-154)

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

This pain is caused by a swelling of the *paradidymis*, a structure between the body of the testicle and the top of the *epididymis*. Under prolonged sexual excitement not relieved by ejaculation, the paradidymus may swell until it achieves the size of the testicle itself. This swelling is caused by the back-up of accumulated spermatic fluid (Borneman 1978, 1021).

Everywhere, petting with girls may cause in boys unbearable tumescence, only to be relieved by ejaculation. A boy from a tribe in Central India, where girls were not allowed to pass the night with their boy-friends, said, "After the girls go home, we feel forsaken and unsatisfied, and so we seize our cock and milk it like a cow until the seed spurts out. This is our pleasure." (Elwin 1959, 271) An American boy of 16 told his teacher, who had asked him about dating girls, that he was not very much interested in doing that. "He said that trying to get laid was such a big hassle, that his balls ached so after necking and not getting laid, that he jerked off while driving home in his car." (McBoyd 1981, 117)

"You know very well there is no virginity in childhood: it's a period of extraordinary voluptuousness," someone says in a novel by Marie-Claire Blais (1974, 81). "Children are intensely sexual beings with an erotic life that is expressed in both activity and fantasy." (Janus 1981, 234)

The sexual appetite is never so strong as in the years immediately following the attainment of maturity. This is, of course, accompanied by a "vehemence of sexual activity such as will never be repeated later in life" (Stockert 1956, 27). How can anyone prepare a young boy or girl for the intense eruptions of emotional and sexual energies in adolescence? Something is going on in their bodies they don't understand. The overload of sensation in the nerve endings is frightening. Many young people report that their first orgasm made them think they were going to die." (Friday 1981, 503) And as Lucrese already stated, when sexual activity appeases the desire in young bodies "the pause is only brief. The rage returns, phrenetic longing invades them anew, and they themselves don't understand what they want." (Burnet 1984, 135) It is derisive of nature when culture attempts to deny or suppress this need. Jacques de Brethmas writes, with justified anger, "One half of all France's sexual energy resides in the sex organs of boys, and they are officially forbidden to employ it." (1980, 13)

The Gonado research made it clear that 18- to 19-year old youths wished, on average, they could have sex twice as frequently as they actually were able to obtain it: 13.1% wanted it more than twice a day, 25.3% wanted it daily, 34.6% wanted it every other day (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 73-74). For boys, of course, the situation is very much more difficult. The fact that their despair receives no public recognition doesn't render it any less real. A 14-year-old once declared that he would like to organize a demonstration of thousands of boys publicly masturbating in front of the government buildings

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

as a plea for law reform and a demonstration of their distress (de Brethmas 1980, 13).

It is to boys of precisely this sexually excitable and active age that the majority of boy-lovers find themselves most strongly attracted. No wonder sexual contacts come about so easily!

Ejaculations—Wet Dreams

A second event of utmost importance to those concerned is the production of ejaculate, beginning, as already noted, at a mean age of 13.4 years (Broderick 1971, 89).

Even today some boys are simply not prepared for their first seminal emission: parents, teachers and peers, for some reason, have failed to inform them. It can be quite frightening if it happens during sleep or, say, while play-wrestling with a friend: "Something got burst in my belly and now I'll die soon!" one lad thought. "The suffering thus caused may be keen and prolonged." (Ellis 1910, VI-60)

54 A New Zealand boy relates, "I remember having a dream and feeling it happen in the dream and thinking to myself, in the dream, 'What the fuck is happening to me!' I could feel the spasms. It was such a body shattering experience it really changed my mind. It was something very different. I had just no idea what had happened. In the morning I was all sticky in my pyjamas as if I'd cut myself. I looked down and it was all sticky, white creamy stuff. I thought it was some sort of discharge. A sickness or something. But I was too scared to tell my mother, because it was around my genitals and I knew it must be dirty. The thing was, I had my next wet dream almost a month later. I thought, 'Oh, Jesus.' I sort of knew women had a monthly cycle and I started thinking, 'God, oh God am I a boy or a girl.' Maybe this was a man's monthly cycle that nobody had bothered to tell me about. I'd never been told about periods, it was something I had just worked out. I was petrified. I thought about going to a doctor but thought, 'No, he'll tell my parents.' I was sure that if they somehow found out I was unclean they'd lock me up or commit me or something." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 136)

55 Hite (1981, 605-606) gives quite a number of examples, among others: "At ten I was masturbating and I came. I thought it was blood. Punishment from God for doing this filthy and unnatural thing. When I turned on the light, I saw this funny creamy white stuff."
"Age fourteen. I thought something had broken inside but it felt wonderful."
"Age twelve. I was riding my bike and I came. I thought I had damaged myself."

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

"At thirteen. I had a wet dream. I was frightened. I thought my insides were coming out or I was dying. No one had told me what to expect, even though Father was an M.D.!"

"I was horrified when this thick fluid came out of my penis in spurts. I thought I had harmed myself and was very distraught."

"When I first masturbated, I thought I had killed myself."

"I orgasmed, and this sticky gooey whitish stuff spurted all over me and the bedclothes. I thought that whatever had felt like it was breaking, had broken. I'd ruined it forever. I was scared and felt guilty and sinful."

- 56 One of Dr. Stekel's patients had started masturbating when he was thirteen. Soon, however, he tried to stop it and suppress his desires, since he had been taught that this practice was reprehensible and unhealthy. He told Stekel, "Nobody had the least inkling of the lacerating feelings I suffered; nobody, not even my parents, suspected my agony. Then the 'nocturnal pollutions' began and these convinced me that I was very sick, possibly past the point of recovery. I was too shy and too ashamed to confide in anyone; instead I guarded my 'secret' very closely. When I was alone I begged God in my childish faith to heal me, to free me from these pollutions which I believed to be dangerous, life-shortening effusions. I wept in secret, implored, wrung my hands, raised them to God, promised Him never intentionally to defile myself again and waited in vain for an answer. Then I began to doubt God's goodness. I started to brood, and soon I turned into a dedicated atheist." (Stekel 1925, 447)

How frequently it happens that parents fail to prepare their sons for this important event can be seen from the research Hertoft carried out in Denmark. Only 48.7% of the boys in his sample had been prepared; 18.2 had been mortally frightened; only 15.5% had had the courage to discuss it with their fathers or mothers. Nearly 80% of the boys Hertoft studied had carefully concealed the beginning of a process which, with a natural upbringing, would have been cause for rejoicing (1968, II-31). In a random sample of university students Shipman found that only 6% had been pleased with their ejaculating the first time this occurred. (quoted by Winkel 1972, 18).

The source of so much boyhood misery is the idea, derived from the Old Testament, that the emission of spermatic fluid during sleep is dirty, a "pollution" (Leviticus 15: 16-18). The individual to whom this happened was ritually unclean. Thomas Aquinas, greatest Christian theologian of the Middle Ages, "argued that devils in the form of succubi seduced males and thereby received their semen" (Bullough 1976, 422). English medieval church penitentiaries considered nocturnal emission a sin (Bullough 1976, 358).

This widespread neglect of parental duty is of course not the result of evil intent but of the fact that these parents are themselves victims of a sex-negative, chastity-oriented morality which has made them shy away from

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

discussing sex openly with their children. They often don't even know what words to use. The unintentional cruelty they inflict upon their sons, their breach of duty, must be blamed upon the unfeeling preachers of this morality which still today tortures so many innocent victims.

- 57 How different things are for the boys in Leonid Kamenef's "School on Ships"! Kamenef is a French pedagogue who takes on children for one or two years, detaches them for that period from their families and puts them on his sailboat, or on one of his donkey caravan expeditions in the Sahara or with a bicycle group visiting the lands of the Mediterranean sea. His education is anti-authoritarian. Kamenef noted that on board ship boys tended to fall into two categories: the real children of nature and those who had already been largely shaped by the way adults live their lives. The latter cannot do without their cigarettes, their transistor sets playing pop music, their Coca-Cola, television and movies. They are embarrassed by nudity, are sexually rigid and secretive. The children of nature, on the other hand, who are by far the most promising pupils of this school, happily throw off their clothes as soon as the ship has put to sea and they have left land and its society behind. Weather permitting, they work naked and often masturbate openly while sunning on the deck. They are frank about their sexuality which they shamelessly accept as a beautiful gift of nature. One day Michel, already mentioned in No. 31, presented himself proudly and happily before his group leader and told him, "Just now I got seed for the very first time in my life!" (Kamenef 1979, 31)

- 58 In the collection of the Brongersma Foundation there are a number of reproductions of drawings made by Sicilian working class boys, aged 12 to 17. They were frequent visitors in the home of a German artist living in Italy, and when they saw him at work they wanted to make drawings themselves. He gave them paper and pencil—and four-fifths of the sketches they produced dealt with sexuality, often in a most fanciful way. One fourteen-year-old wanted to make the same announcement that Michel had made in Kamenef's school. He sketched a large, stiff penis, drawing it, however, rather lightly; what was emerging from its tip, however, was boldly accented to make it the most important part of the picture: big, thick drops. And proudly Filippo wrote next to it "Nuova novità!" (the latest news!)

- 59 "When I finally ejaculated at thirteen, I felt great! Hooray, I'm a man! The world was complete."
 "At eleven after masturbating I came. I felt now I was a 'man' and could do anything."
 "With my first ejaculation at fifteen. I thought of it as a big thing, quite macho. Something to brag about with the guys."
 "After I came while masturbating, I thought I was a great guy who was gonna lay every chick in sight." (Hite 1981, 606)

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

60 Erik, one of Sandfort's adult subjects, had had relations with many different boys. He observed "that it is a problem for the immature not to have an ejaculation. You have it, and they don't. They're terribly curious about the experience, what you feel when you come, if the sensation is different. When André finally had an ejaculation it was cause for real celebration. He was wildly delighted. And from that moment on boys feel they are full-fledged partners: now they are just like you; they can take part in sex with you completely. And they like this very much. I have noted this not just with André; with other boys it is just the same." (Sandfort 1979, 213).

A boy's first ejaculation is usually brought about by masturbation; more rarely it occurs while he is asleep and is accompanied by some kind of erotic dream. Only rarely does it happen during intercourse.

61 The Negro boy from Abidjan, already mentioned in No. 35, had intercourse for the first time when he was eleven with a girl of twelve. After this a long time passed without his having any sexual adventure. But one evening he found himself with a girl who already had mature breasts. She showed him a book with erotic pictures.

"As I looked at them my cock went stiff. I had more courage now, as I was a little bit older. I said, 'Do you want to do it?' She said, 'Yes, but where?' We went to the back of the house; she laid her loin-cloth on the ground and we lay down upon it. I threw my clothes off, and as soon as I was naked we started. Suddenly I felt something unspeakably nice coming from my back. I can't really describe it, but it was so delightful! And then, suddenly, it was over. I thought it ought to have lasted longer, it was so fine. Then I pulled my cock out of her, and, as I went to pull my trousers up, I touched my cock and saw it covered with sticky slime that was clear like water. Then I thought, this is the wet stuff big boys are often talking about. I grew scared that I might have made the girl pregnant." (A.D. 1979, 121)

It is often said that a boy who has his first ejaculation in the course of love-play with an older friend feels thenceforth a particularly close bond with him.

62 One of the men whose history is told in detail by Ellis was nearly fifteen when the big event occurred. He had once again sought contact with a man ten years his senior with whom he had been intimate when he was only five years old. "He put me into his bed while he undressed himself and came toward me in perfect nudity. In a moment we were in each other's arms and the deliciousness of that moment intoxicated me. Suddenly, lying on the bed, I felt attacked, as I thought, by an imperative need to make water. I leaped up with a hurried excuse, but already the paroxysm had subsided. No discharge came to my relief, yet the need seemed to have passed. I returned to my companion, but the glamour of the meeting was already over (...) On a

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

second occasion, one day, I seemed involuntarily about to transgress decency, but again, as before, separated myself, and remained ignorant of what it was on which I had verged in my excitement. At another meeting, however, I had been allowed to prolong my embrace and to act, indeed, upon my full instincts. Once more I felt suddenly the coming of something acutely impending; I took my courage in my hands and went boldly forward. In another moment I had hold of the mysterious secret of masculine energy, to which all my years of delirious imaginings had been but as a waiting at the threshold, the knocking on a closed door." (Ellis 1915, II-155)

Not all beginners have the sense of responsibility shown by the black youngster from Abidjan who worried about making his girl-friend pregnant.

63 In *Down Under the Plum Trees*, which is an excellent sexual source book for adolescents, a 13-year-old New Zealander is quoted, "I didn't use to worry about shooting in a girl—it just didn't worry me. Normally I never used contraceptives (...) Actually, the idea of getting a girl pregnant was quite exciting—an ego trip." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 177)

It is most exciting, especially for the more intelligent boy, to look at his own ejaculate under magnification and see the swarming life he has produced. Many boys find this deeply moving. A young Belgian said, "I immediately brought the first sperm I produced to the microscope; I felt very rich indeed when I saw all those entangling spermatozoa." (Kruithof & van Ussel 1963, 84).

Many immature boys are able to repeat their sexual climaxes almost indefinitely, one following immediately upon the other, just as can girls (Hertoft 1983, 70). Kinsey cites instances in which immature boys attained orgasm ten times within ten minutes, and twenty times within a half-hour. With one 11-month-old baby 14 orgasms were observed in a space of 38 minutes; with an 11-year-old boy 19 in an hour's time; one 13-year-old boy had 26 orgasms in one day (Kinsey 1948, 179-180). But the capacity to ejaculate puts an end to these multiple orgasms of childhood.

64 (Continued from 31) When Max, at the age of seventeen, was questioned about his sexual evolution, he said, "When I was six my eleven-year-old brother taught me how to masturbate. He showed me pictures of naked women whom I thought were very beautiful, and they excited me, too. But back then I wasn't able to get a climax. That happened the first time when I was ten—a dry climax, of course, without sperm. From then on I was indefatigable, rubbing my cock every day and having up to twelve orgasms one right after another. That multiple climaxing came to an end when I started to emit sperm when I was thirteen or fourteen. Since then I usually masturbate about ten times a week.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

"At first I was afraid it would damage my health, and I had some guilt feelings, but soon it just became a habit that I didn't worry about any longer. And then, too, sex was always being talked about at school, so I knew all the other boys were doing the same thing."

65 A patient of Dr. Stekel reported, "At fourteen I couldn't resist the temptation any longer, so I started to masturbate to excess. I masturbated every night; I did it continuously, without stopping, until about 2 or 3 a.m., always lying on my stomach and imitating intercourse (...) During the day I also masturbated in the lavatories (...) It was a big relief when at last I had that first ejaculation which I had so eagerly looked forward to for so long. This great event took place in the lavatory and my first seed fertilised the basin. I felt myself liberated and greatly relieved (...) After that first ejaculation my excessive masturbation ceased." (Stekel 1925, 144)

66 A fourteen-year-old told his doctor "that he decided to test his ability to jerk off the previous night. He professed the achievement of 13 separate orgasms from masturbation using his hand 'and plenty of vaseline'." (Marcus & Francis 1975, 7)

67 René, 16 years: "Nowadays doing it once or twice completely satisfies me. The second time is still pretty nice, but the first time, of course, is the most delicious. Previously (that is, before there was any seed) it didn't make any difference whether it was the first time or the fourth: the feeling was always the same. In those days I liked it too, of course, but now, when I come, I feel a lot more satisfied. The pleasure is much greater. That's the difference." (Sandfort 1979, 214)

This "dry orgasm" which the immature boy is able to repeat almost indefinitely, is quite distinct from the phenomenon of double orgasm first described in adolescents by Kahn and Kinsey. Kinsey found that in 4,000 subjects there were 380 who regularly had more than one orgasm during a single sexual contact: "In a fair number of cases it is habitual for a male to ejaculate two or more times in continuous intercourse and while maintaining a continuous erection." (Kinsey 1948, 215)

68 "Walter, a fifteen-year-old hairdresser's apprentice, accompanied me into the dunes to go sun-bathing. He took all his clothes off and immediately got a hard-on which simply wouldn't go down. 'I always feel sexy when I'm naked,' he said. Then he told me about the Wednesday nights he always looked forward to because his mother, a widow, went to choir practice and he and his brother, who was a year younger, became temporary masters of the house. They always invited girls in. They began first with dancing, then gradually got rid of their clothes until at last all four of them were naked. He envied his brother who, despite his younger age, had a much bigger cock.

THE EXPERIENCE OF MATURATION

Finally they went to their beds to have intercourse, but there his brother was rather clumsy and several times Walter had to help out, guiding the younger boy's cock because he couldn't find the 'hole'. To avoid pregnancy Walter would withdraw his penis right at the last moment before he spurted, but then insert his cock again for about fifteen seconds, after which he would take it out again just before he climaxed and ejaculated a second time. He was firmly convinced that the male could fertilize only during climax. I told him this was a dangerous misconception and explained why, promising to bring him a book with more factual information the next time. But I was also interested in his ability to have double ejaculations and told him he was the first boy I had ever met who had that capacity. 'Want to see it?' he proposed eagerly. 'If you jerk me off it'll happen in a hurry.' I did so, and after a few minutes Walter, breathing deeply, turned slightly on his side so that his sperm wouldn't splatter on his stomach. Then it spurted out, a good quantity of it, white and creamy, and I thoughtlessly let go of his penis. Immediately Walter cried, with near hysteria in his voice, 'No, no, keep doing it!' So I resumed my rubbing, and, sure enough, after about twenty seconds the boy had another discharge, with the same force and just as voluminously as the first." (Personal communication)

69 from page 158 should be here

This capacity of doubly ejaculating, "to forge two nails on one fire" as it is sometimes called, mostly disappears at the end of adolescence. Only very few young men still possess it; older adults never do.

With the onset of puberty many boys start to have nocturnal emissions, "wet dreams" with voluptuous images provoking orgasm. Kinsey found a few eight- and nine-year-old boys were already having this experience; after ten years of age the percentage steadily increased until with fifteen-year-olds it stood at 40%; by twenty years of age nearly 80% of the male population had experienced nocturnal emissions (Kinsey 1948, 522). Hertoft found somewhat higher percentages in Denmark: 7.8% began at twelve or younger to have wet dreams, 27.1% of the thirteen-year-olds had them, 52.4% of the fourteen-year-olds, 67.7% of the fifteen-year-olds, 76.7% of the sixteen-year-olds. Finally 85.3% of the male population had had such experiences (Hertoft 1968, II-31).

The average frequency is once in three weeks, with a maximum in some fifteen-year-olds of twelve times a week (Kinsey 1948, 243).

There has been almost no research done into this phenomenon, which is surprising. It seems that the penis is in erection one fifth of the time one is asleep (Vanggaard 1969, 170) and that the erections occur at intervals of about 90 minutes, according to Dr. Mary S. Calderone (1983). It has been estimated, moreover, that 12% of the dreams which young men have deal with sexuality. In 14% of these dreams only the image of the desired person will appear; in 30% the dreamer makes some kind of sexual overture to someone;

in 11% he kisses and fondles someone; in 18% he handles someone's sex organs and in 27% full intercourse is attempted or takes place (Bell & Hall 1971, 22). It seems that the dreamer often touches and rubs his penis during sleep. Orgasm usually awakens him.

If we were to impute intentions to nature, we might suggest that the purpose of wet dreams is to draw the boy's attention to his sexuality and to seed his mind with the desire to achieve awake and in actuality the lustful scenes conjured by his sleeping mind. In any case, nature misses no opportunity to provoke a boy's salacity.

We might also suppose that, physiologically, the chief purpose of wet dreams is to get regularly rid of the accumulated products of the sex glands. Nature "irritates the swollen organs with much seed," as Lucrece said (Burnet 1984, 81). But this mechanism doesn't function in every male. Some boys never attain orgasm during their sleep. And those who deliberately try to stop their wet dreams by relieving themselves adequately by masturbation or shared sexual activity are often unsuccessful. According to Gagnon & Simon (1973, 96) orgasmic dreams are not less frequent in males with an active sex life. This proves that a purely physiological explanation is insufficient.

A variable with great importance for a boy's "male pride" is the force with which his penis spurts his seed. Friday (1941, 47) records the masturbation fantasy of a subject who imagines himself totally nude in front of six or eight fully dressed women: "After a while I spread two sheets of newspaper lengthwise on the floor and then kneel at one end and the women place their marks on the paper and place a bet on how far I can ejaculate and the one that comes closest wins the bet. I then proceed to masturbate while they watch and cheer me on."

Just before orgasm, at the very last moment, the various sexual glands release their fluids deep into the urethra, where they become mixed to form the familiar ejaculate. With the onset of orgasmic climax muscles around the root of the penis squeeze this out. With some boys it seems to well up rather quietly from the slit on the tip of the glans; in many it comes out in jets synchronised with the spasmodic contractions of the ejaculating muscles.

Commonly there are three or four jets following each other at intervals of 0.8 seconds (Verveen 1977, 22). There are indications that the number of jets increases when an individual feels less inhibited and more excited and that at such times the individual experiences a prolongation and deepening of orgasm as well. In an amateur home movie I once saw a German fifteen-year-old produce no less than seven powerful jets. The record might be eight (Osborne 1977, 1-19).

The distance travelled by these jets of ejaculate usually is no more than 15 to 25 cm, but measurements have actually been made of sperm throws up to 1.65 meters (Baker 1977, 25). "I have been known to spurt far enough to hit

my sex partner in the eye at a distance of five to six feet," a subject of Hite (1981, 589) declares. An Amsterdam boy-lover once showed me encrustations on a china lamp-shade: the carefully preserved traces of seed from his fourteen-year-old friend. The lamp stood at the head of a settee on which the boy had lain as he was brought to climax; the distance between lamp and penis tip was more than two metres!

Orgasm

As we have already seen, most boys are able to attain orgasm long before they mature. Among the male subjects of the Yankowski investigation, 3.5% had experienced their first orgasm at ten years of age or younger, 77.5 did so between the ages of eleven and thirteen (Yankowski 1965, 81).

After puberty orgasm is reached more quickly, as the penis now becomes considerably more sensitive. Orgasm can often be produced by rather incidental events, for example the physical exertions of sports.

70 An eleven-year-old tells about climbing exercises in the school gym: "When you are high up on the pole and shut your eyes because you're so tired, suddenly something starts to throb between your legs. This goes on for quite a while; you can't resist it, it's so pleasant and tickling. For those seconds while it's happening you just can't move; you have to wait until it's over. When everybody's climbed down again you can immediately pick out the kids this same thing has happened to: they have a wet spot on the front of their shorts—only a little spot usually, but you can see it." (Stieber 1971, 81)

71 "I had my first orgasm before I was aware of sex in any form (I led a very sheltered life) at about age twelve as I was climbing a tree. For almost two years I 'made love to trees' in that I would climb trees just to get that good feeling. I was about thirteen before any juice would come out. To keep from staining my pants, I would go into the woods where no one was around and take off my clothes and climb around trees until the juice came. I didn't know what the juice was, but I knew that I wasn't just leaking pee. In the winter-time, I would go into the bathroom, take off my clothes, and pretend that I was climbing a tree by hanging on the closet door and pressing my penis against the edge. I would juice within several minutes of this activity and would experience a delightful sensation all over my body." (Hite 1981, 602).

It seems that after puberty orgasm is a more overpowering experience than before. A few boys even faint for a moment when it grips them at its peak. With other boys the whole body is seized by spasmodic twitching, all muscles knotted in tension. Belly muscles are contracted, as the stomach is drawn deeply in; this is most pronounced as climax is approached. The scrotum on the other hand loses its spontaneous movements; its wrinkles

disappear and the testicles are pulled upward towards the abdomen. The nipples of some boys erect and grow hard. The heart pounds heavily, its beat accelerating sharply (Verveen 1977, 21-22). Breathing turns into panting, at times spasmodically interrupted. Increased saliva production necessitates swallowing of the salivary flood. Especially striking at this time is the facial expression: eyes become glazed with an absent look as the lust feelings increase and overwhelm all outside perception. The mouth falls open or is, on the contrary, so tightly shut that the teeth may gnash together. Every bodily sensation seems to be concentrated in the penis. During some people's climax the face may be twisted in tension, as though its owner was writhing in agony: a number of photos in the Brongersma Foundation collection clearly illustrate this phenomenon. The cries uttered by males at this moment may also resemble the cries of pain. (Borneman 1978, 1443).

On the other hand, some males give little visible evidence that they are having a climax. They could win hands down at that party game English officers used to play in colonial India. At dinner they would sit around a table under which a native boy was hidden. The lad would creep around down there, open the trousers of one of the guests, pull out the penis and suck on it until it ejaculated. The man suffering—or enjoying—this attention had to behave in such a way that nobody could guess what was going on. Should he betray himself, however, by change of expression, bodily spasm or the lightest gasp, and he was found out, he had to pay for the next round of drinks (Peyrefitte 1968, 290).

The peak of orgasm usually lasts about eight or ten seconds, but this may be increased to 20 seconds or even a minute by expert manipulation (Verveen 1977, 20).

Even when a boy is well practiced in attaining orgasm, so that the feelings are hardly new to him, the sensations which may sweep through him the first time he has complete intercourse—provided, of course, he does this with his own free will and is not subject to any kind of anxiety—may surpass everything he has felt before:

- 72 As a New Zealand boy said, "She helped me in and it wasn't hard. I went in easy. I knew what to do and everything. I just moved in and out slowly until I came. When I came it hit me really hard. I mean, sometimes I used to get so carried away when I masturbated that I'd get cramps in my legs at orgasm, but that was mild compared with this. When I came I sort of cried out..." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 190-191).

THE BLOOM OF YOUTH

With all these physical changes and the new hormones which begin to course through his body, a period opens up in which the boy becomes radiant in a certain characteristic way and which is rightly called his "bloom". The "new-mown hay" fragrance of prepubertal boys gives way to the more prickly, sharper bodily odors of the adolescent. Tatius in the fourth century A.D., wrote, "The sweat of a handsome boy smells sweeter than any female perfume." (Fontanié 1979, 528).

"John Davis", an English teacher observed, "It might be as well to remark here that this may often be a time of extreme physical beauty. The boy has lost the prominent tummy and seeming outsize head of childhood, but not yet gained the unbalanced proportions of adolescence: he appears to be in a timeless drift." (Toynbee 1961, 85)

It is a pity, however, that this bloom, like all others, lasts such a short time.

- 73 When the Venetian boy Amadeo offers himself to Frederick Rolfe ("Baron Corvo"), Rolfe writes in a letter to a friend, "Amadeo is just ripe, just in his prime. I know that type so well. A year ago that day when he came to take the 3rd oar in my pupparin, he was a lanky uninteresting wafer. Since then, the work of dancing up and down planks with heavy sacks has filled him out, clothed him with most lovely pads of muscular sweet flesh, sweated his skin into rosy satin fineness and softness, made his black eyes and his strong white teeth and his mouth like blood glitter with health and vigour, and fixed his passions to the heat of a seven times heated furnace. He'll be like this till spring, say 3 months more. Then some great fat cow of a girl will just open herself wide and lie quite still, and drain him dry. First, the rich bloom of him will go (...) Given a boy, a fine strong healthy boy, who does actually enjoy the love of a male with all its naked joys, who burns for it, seeks it, flings himself gleefully into the ardent strivings of it with no reserve, with utter and entire abandon, offering himself a willing sacrifice or operating in turn with equal and greedy unreservedness, is it not a fact that such a one keeps his youthful freshness and vigour infinitely longer than the ordinary lad who futters the ordinary lass from puberty on?" (Rolfe 1974, 36-37)

The Arabs had their own way of describing the boy in his bloom. Maarten Schild composes the following picture from the works of various poets: "The face is like a shining full moon, chasing darkness from the earth. He has big, dark, gazelle-like eyes, enchanting as sparkling jewels, lethal as two razor-sharp swords, intoxicating as the most heady wine, eyes that shine like the sun's rays. His cheeks are like blooming roses, shining like scarlet coral, blushing like red blossoms, at times exquisitely adorned with a dark

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

tâche de beauté-. His teeth are pearl-white and his lips red and oh so sweet. His kisses and the moisture of his mouth are like delicious wine and sugar-sweet honey; his breath, scented like perfume, intoxicates you. His voice is soft and sweet, made still more attractive by its nasal quality and lisping. His hair is long and curly and coal-black. His neck is long and muscular and at the same time frail and vulnerable like a slender spray. Finally there are his adorable buttocks, chubby and soft like a dune, a mountain of sand." (Schild 1983, 4-1)

What deep longing is revealed in the Greek myth wherein Zeus grants the request of beautiful young Endymion to put him eternally to sleep in order to preserve his youth forever and prevent him from aging into ugliness! Only at night can the moon come down and make love to him (Scholte 1958, II-749).

← 69 The American poet Dennis Kelly devoted a whole volume of poems, *Size*
p29c 153 *Queen*, to the sexual organs (and what they got up to) of his students at school and his young friends. He describes the same phenomenon in one Gary:

*Gary Cumstock must be nine inches soft.
One time after I proposition him in the
locker room, it gets 11 or 12 miles long...
...One time he tells
me how many million sperm I've just
swallowed, as I milk his tool of its
last drop. Then he doubles it, with
a nice big double load. It's tasty.
(1981, 103)*

rites of initiation In Ethnology

Puberty is traditionally thought of as the time of life when a boy changes into a man. For most of those peoples whom we, from our lofty cultural perspective, define as "primitive", it is therefore the occasion of great ceremonies and celebrations at which the boy coming of age is taught the mysteries and traditions of the tribe. Initiation at this time marks the emancipation of the boy from his parental, especially maternal, authority (Morris 1976, 189).

For hunters and warriors it is of the utmost importance that they be hardened against pain and injury. Thus the young candidate aspiring to adult male dignity is subjected to all kinds of trials. He is often required to endure excruciating pain without complaint, and without shedding tears.

Often his genitals are tortured. During this period their growth and development are uppermost in the boy's mind; they are of utmost importance

rites of initiation

to him as a source of pleasure, and, moreover, they are more sensitive than at any time in his life before or since. Being soft, they lend themselves well to transformation. Operations on the genitals, therefore, are most impressive and awe-inspiring.

It would be impossible to do justice in a brief summary to all that has been discovered about puberty rites and initiation in all the tribes of the world. Many volumes have been filled with descriptions and reflections. A few examples may serve to take measure of this field.

Boys who have just reached puberty are generally separated from their village community for a shorter or a longer period, sometimes up to several months. Often they receive a new name, are instructed in the traditions of the tribe and are taught—if this is still necessary—how a man can best satisfy the sexual needs of a woman. The Mangaina of Polynesia for instance show the boy how to delay his orgasm and the various positions of intercourse; the following nights he must practice. At first his preference runs to experienced women, for they can give him greater pleasure. Later he tries out ten, perhaps even sixty or seventy, different girls (van Ussel 1975, 91-92). In one New Guinea tribe the encampment where boys are initiated is equipped with dolls having gigantic sexual parts, male and female, which the boys have to handle. They are also taught to excite themselves frequently by inserting certain lianas in the urethral opening on the penis tip (Jensen 1933, 85).

In many tribes the instructor or other men have sexual intercourse with the candidates, who may also be trained to perform sexually enticing dances. Often the boys must endure hunger or thirst or are prevented from sleeping; stripped naked they may be exposed to the cold of night or thrown on a hill of biting ants. Between these trials they may be scolded or beaten up at unexpected times. They may be frightened by tales of magicians or mythical beasts coming to take them by surprise and devour them. Some New Guinea tribes mix male sperm into the boys' food, or give them slices of coconut spread with adult male seed (Jensen 1933, 86; Bühler-Oppenheim 1947, 2194).

The Poro community in Sierra Leone forbids the boys, during the months they pass in their initiation camps, to wear any kind of clothing. It is also strictly forbidden for them to touch their penises or let them be touched by another person (Should they disobey this stricture the penis will fall off!). Since intercourse is practiced from an early age among the children, all candidates have become quite accustomed to receiving regular sexual relief; this suddenly imposed abstinence, then, soon becomes a torture and results in intense, persistent erections. Sexual tension makes it almost impossible for the boys to listen attentively to the instruction they receive. When an instructor sees that a particular boy is not listening he makes him stand up. A comrade sits down opposite him and looks at the boy's penis standing stiffly on end. Two other candidates take up positions behind, each holding a sprig;

now they use it to tickle the neck of the inattentive boy. Gradually the tickling turns into light switching, then harder whipping, descending along the back, until at last the boy is so excited that he has a spontaneous orgasm and ejaculates, after which the observing candidate signals the others to stop. In this way detumescence is achieved without a touch to the penis. The boy thus treated remains standing rigid for about a minute. Then, after a piercing cry of pleasure, sits down among his comrades. (Personal communication by a traveller in Africa; Gervis 1957, 90, 101, 112, 252)

In the mountains of Central India mature boys carve a kind of vagina cleft in the stem of a plant. They make this cleft slippery with their spittle, and then the younger boys, who are stripped naked, have to take turns inserting their penises in it while at the same time they are beaten with a stalk (Elwin 1959, 94).

In a large majority of primitive peoples initiation culminates in *painful operations* on the genitals, usually in the belief that this bestows upon the organ increased power and vitality (Bettelheim 1962, 78). A rare example is the Tongan practice of excising of one of the testicles: with a sharpened piece of bamboo the left side of the scrotum is opened, the testicle pressed out and cut off. This is supposed to prevent the birth of twins and keep one from getting sick. A traveller to the Tonga Islands reported, "Boys when they reach 12 or 14 egg one another on to go to the 'surgeon'; there, each demands to be the first operated on, thus showing his courage." (Stoll 1908, 539) With the Mahalbi, a Sudanese hunting tribe, boys are made to dance naked until they go into a sort of trance. Then a man wrapped in leopard skins appears and throws himself upon the boys, wounding them "especially in the genitals, so that they will bear scars from this for the rest of their lives. Some pretend that one of their testicles is torn out (...) Some reports stress the fact that one of the testicles is smashed or crushed." (Jensen 1933, 45)

In Tonga boys wish to beautify their genitals by having their glanses tattooed with ornamental designs, a process which must be exceedingly painful (Stoll 1908, 75). Into the skin of the glans are scratched symbols which appear in their full glory only during erection (Treffz 1972).

Of the pre-Columbian peoples of Mexico it is said, "They cut their genitals and make a cleft between skin and flesh, creating a hole large enough to allow the continuous passage of a thick rope for as long as the penitent desired or could stand it. At times they pulled through ten yards, often fifteen, and if someone fainted as a result of the excruciating pain, or from loss of blood, they said this proved he had already had relations with a woman. For it was girls and lads still thought to be chaste who had to make this sacrifice with their genitals. (...) On other occasions boys performed the most horrible and painful sacrifices tied together in the temples. They stood in a row. Each pierced his male member from side to side, and through the hole so made they

pulled as long a cord as possible, so that finally they were all laced up together with this cord. With the blood pouring from their genitals they anointed their idol, and he who did this most lavishly was considered the most courageous. The boys started with these rites when they were still very young, and it is dreadful how they were addicted to them." (Stoll 1908, 543, 954)

Even today the Pasum of New Guinea make blood offerings with their penises. During initiation the boy's foreskin is pulled back and tightly tied in this position. The boy then must stand patiently until the congested blood has swelled his glans to its maximum. Then an uncle of the candidate rips the skin of the glans with an opossum tooth; the blood which gushes forth must fall in the shape of a bird's nest on a specially prepared spot. The uncle himself commences the sacrifice by inserting a blade of grass into his urethra and pulling it in and out until he is bleeding (Schmitz 1969, 129-130). We will come back to this theme in Chapter Four.

All of this is intended as an offering, but the Batak on Sumatra, who also pierce the penis, do it for quite another reason: it is to thicken it so it will excite the woman more during intercourse. Schadt reported, "The Bataks made incision in the skin of the penis and insert little stones therein. Some males have quite a number of these, arranged in a spiral around the shaft." (Stoll 1908, 921). (The same kind of practice is reported among Sierra Leone Negroes by Gervais (1957, 113)). It is years before a youth who has undergone such an operation can once again perform complete intercourse. In the meantime he must satisfy himself by masturbation, which boys do in groups in their common house. He nevertheless proudly displays himself as 'a hero of love play', showing by tatoos on his body just how many 'knobs' he possesses (Treffz 1972).

The Dajaks on Borneo accomplish the same thing with their "ampallang", a four-centimetre-long metal stave carried diagonally through the glans. The incision through which the ampallang is thrust is made upon the arrival of puberty (Borneman 1978, 54). The glans is first flattened for two days between two discs of bamboo lashed together, while cold compresses are applied to the penis tip. Then the glans is pierced from side to side by a bamboo awl just above the urethral opening. A pigeon's feather, made smooth with oil, is inserted in the hole and every day thereafter changed in order to keep the passage open. Cold compresses are continued until the wound is healed, at which time, when the boy is ready for intercourse, the ampallang is substituted for the feather (Stoll 1908, 921). In the age of Alexander the Great the same operation was traditional in India (Peyrefitte 1981, 296).

The most terrifying mutilation of the male member is carried out by the Australian aborigines. To perform the so-called *mica operation* as safely and easily as possible, a pointed kangaroo bone is inserted into the urethra and

pressed down until it pierces the penis and comes out again just in front of the scrotum. A man then sits down upon the boy and, turning his back to him, grasps the penis and pulls it upwards to stretch the urethra. Then the tribal doctor approaches him and with a sharpened piece of flint splits the urethra its full length from scrotum to glans (Bettelheim 1962, 17, 100; Karsch-Haack 1911, 68-73). Not infrequently young adult male spectators, spontaneously ~~to have their own made~~ ^{advise that the cut go a bit deeper} (Stoll 1908, 526-528). A slightly different description is given by Ashley Montagu (1946, 427-428). "After the operation the young men may go about perfectly naked, which they are forbidden to do previously. They are now permitted to marry (...) In the moment of erection the penis is broad and flat and the sperm is ejaculated outside the vagina (...) Among some 300 natives there were only three or four who had not been operated, and it appeared that upon these devolved the duty of insuring the propagation of the tribe. One of these, who had been no doubt specially selected for the purpose, was a splendid specimen of humanity, fully six feet two inches in stature." (Sutor 1964, 265-266). Intercourse is strictly forbidden to boys who have not yet been operated upon; they copulate only with older friends who have already received the operation. The older boy lies on his back, with his penis on his belly, and the younger puts his member in the penis-groove of his friend, moving it to and fro until climax is achieved (Karsch-Haack 1911, 78).

According to Bettelheim, the practice of subincision is actually spreading, not decreasing, and the same applies to circumcision in Africa and Australia (1962, 68). *Circumcision*, in which the foreskin is incised or removed completely, is the most wide-spread mutilation of male children.

The opposite practice, artificial enlargement of the foreskin, is seldom encountered. The Bakari Indians in Brazil, who used to live completely naked, make their boys at puberty start wearing a loincord. "The penis is carried upwards along the body under this cord in such a way that the top of the foreskin is pinched off. This practice begins as soon as the boy is showing frequent erections. He tries to sustain this stretching of his foreskin for days. The irritating pubic hair is pulled out." (Stoll 1908, 493). In ancient Greece and Rome, where nudity was natural in the public baths and at sporting events, it was considered improper to show an uncovered glans. Athletes therefore used to tie up their foreskins with a small string before wrestling. Jews and other circumcised men covered their penises in the baths with a metal or leather case (Stoll 1908, 496).

Many reasons have been advanced for circumcision. The removal of the foreskin is supposed to result in a more hygienic penis, as smegma, a whitish secretion that collects under the foreskin, product of small glands, and other matter may accumulate in its fold, causing inflammation and even cancer. Then, too, circumcision is supposed to make masturbation more difficult and

even prevent it. Finally, the uncovered skin of the glans becomes rougher and coarser and thus less sensitive; the result is supposed to be that the male will need a longer time to reach orgasm and will give his female partner more pleasure.

Nicholas Carter in his book *Routine Circumcision, the Tragic Myth* (1979) writes that none of these arguments can stand examination. A boy should better be taught how to keep this part of his body clean. As to prevention of masturbation, there is no reason to do this; besides, circumcised boys are no less addicted to this activity than the uncircumcised. The prolongation of intercourse can be acquired more effectively by learning its techniques.

Sutor was convinced that the foreskin, compressing the glans, "interfered with the free development of the young boy's organ" so that circumcision would help the penis grow (1964, 247; likewise, Laroche 1938, 46). Westermarck suggested that the operation was performed to make the penis more attractive (Ellis 1914, IV-159). The operation makes the boy a man and gives him the appearance of sexual maturity (Ashley Montagu 1946, 425). It is, of course, a matter of personal taste whether a circumcised penis is more attractive than an uncircumcised one. Ellis is certainly wrong when he calls "insistence on the naked sexual organs as objects of attraction (...) comparatively rare, and confined to peoples in a low state of culture." (1914, IV-158). Homophiles in the civilised parts of the world, too, consider the appearance of a man's penis an important factor in evaluating his beauty.

In some cultures circumcision is not an obligation but a matter of free choice, so that some boys are circumcised and others still possess their foreskins. It is a fact that girls tend to prefer the circumcised. Explorers "commented on how rapidly circumcision is spreading among the African Asande because the women prefer it. Circumcision is a recent introduction; it is, however, tending to become general in the Congo and is spreading in the Sudan... it has no religious significance, but is insisted upon by the women, who like it. A thirteen-year-old African Sebeyi boy told Bryk that everybody wants to be circumcised because it is beautiful and because the women reject uncircumcised men as sex partners." (Bettelheim 1962, 99; Bryk 1928, 60) In his study of the blacks living on the Ubangui in Central Africa, Vergiat describes how uncircumcised boys are always teased by the *ganzas*, the circumcised ones, who call them cowards and idiots. Often a boy is driven to tears if his father will not permit the operation (1951, 68).

74 While the Congo was still a colony, the Belgian authorities tried to ban circumcision among the Asande because for a few weeks after the operation the boys were incapable of working; violators were punished by a severe beating. On the request of an ethnologist, one local commander asked for three circumcision volunteers so that the explorer could take photographs.

Although they realized that the operation on their fully mature and well-used penises would be extremely painful, candidates competed with one another to be one of the lucky three (Czekanowski, quoted by Bryk 1931, 50).

Sometimes, in some cultures, boys circumcise themselves, or friends do it to each other. (cf. Gervais 1957, 118)

The operation is performed in various ways. "The most rudimentary form of male circumcision is a simple gash of the prepuce (...) In Tonga the operation is performed by the simple process of tearing the prepuce with the hand (...) Among the Somali, Masai, Wajagga, and a few of the Kikuyu, a similar cut is made on the upper part of the glans, and the resulting flaps of flesh allowed to hang down." (Gray, quoted by Loeb 1974, 13; Ashley Montagu 1946, 427)

On Serang in Indonesia it is done "without any festivity and only at the urgent request of the girl to whom the young man is betrothed. It is believed that it will increase the pleasure for both of them during intercourse. The operation is performed when the first pubic hair appears. An old man, the so-called *Tukaano*, pulls the foreskin forward, inserts a piece of wood in the aperture, puts a sharp knife upon it and gives it a blow with a second piece of wood, so that the split skin hangs down on both sides. Immediately afterwards the boy hurries away from the place of circumcision, which is outside the village, goes to his girl and introduces his wounded member into her vulva. He and his girl stay in this position for two days so that the wound may heal. If it is difficult to insert the penis because the foreskin has been cut too deeply, the girl asks one of her friends whose vulva has already been widened through childbirth to take her place until the bleeding has stopped." (Stoll 1908, 509)

Most often the foreskin is removed completely. Merker tells of the Masai Negroes, "Some weeks before this happens you see boys carrying a lot of ornaments, dancing, singing in their own corrals or in their neighbours' and so expressing great joy that they will soon attain the privileged rank of warrior." On the day of the operation "all the boys to be circumcised come before sunrise to a place near the corral which has been chosen by the three or four men required to perform the circumcisions. At the same time the warriors make their appearance. Because the operation is so painful it is performed during the coolest part of the day. The boys sprinkle each other with cold water to lessen the sensitivity of the flesh." Stoll adds, "The operation is performed by professionals, old men who roll back the foreskin and cut it in a circle at its base below the glans. They then split it downwards so that the two pieces of skin hang down in their length on both sides. Half of this is removed with a knife, the rest being left to shrink over the next two weeks as it heals to form a uvula-like appendage. Boys who have not yet been

circumcised often want to appear as if they had, out of vanity. Thus they rub into their glans the stinging juice of the spurge plant; the swollen tip prevents the foreskin from returning to its usual position and the boys walk around with their glanses uncovered imitating their circumcised comrades." (Stoll 1908, 510-511)

With the Aranda tribe in Australia the witch doctor removes the entire foreskin with a stone knife (Treffz 1972).

André Drooges, in his doctoral thesis (Amsterdam 1974) gave a detailed description of the very complicated rites of initiation as they are still performed by the Kisangani of Zaïre. Prior to the operation the boys dance on the roofs of their homes so that they can be seen by everybody. They make thrusting motions with their hips in imitation of intercourse. As they do this they take off their loincloths to show the swinging of their penises. Each boy now declares, through gestures, whether he wishes to be circumcised with a single cut or whether he has chosen the much more painful three-stage operation (which brings him general admiration). The circumcision itself is performed on the river bank, accompanied by a roll of drums to drown out any cries of terror and anguish. Until 1970 a simple kitchen knife was used; now it is done with a surgeon's scalpel. The witch doctor examines the length of the foreskin, pulls it forward and, quick as lightning, cuts the part extending beyond the glans. If the boy, to prove his courage, begs to receive the three-stage circumcision, an assistant takes the remaining layer of skin which is turned toward the glans, tears it lengthwise, while the witch doctor cuts the pieces off on the right and on the left. If the boy shows no signs of pain or fear the men surrounding him shout loudly with joy and beat the river's surface with sticks. Most of the boys have their wounds dressed on the spot; only two remain unbandaged and have to walk naked through the village with their bleeding penises visible for all to see. After this the wounds are nursed in a camp outside the village. The boys are much more afraid of this 'cure' than of the circumcision itself, for now various caustic substances are rubbed into their wounds—red pepper, and nowadays also the medications of our civilisation: tincture of iodine, mercurochrome, potassium permanganate and pure alcohol. Many a courageous knight of the three-stage operation, who stood his circumcision unblinkingly, is now reduced to screams, so terrible is this torture. The initiated sleeps face-downwards on a wooden bed with a hole in its centre through which the penis hangs down. Throughout their whole stay in this camp the boys are tormented by the men in various ways in order to harden them. They are also taught songs celebrating intercourse with 'a nice hairy cunt' or with lines like 'Balls and cock are in violent motion. Oh, cunt! Oh cock!' Usually two weeks suffice for recovery. Immediately afterwards the boy, under the guidance of his godfather, has to copulate with a woman he is not destined to marry. As soon as he has accomplished this it is announced

publicly. (Drooges 1974, 91-92, 114-115, 117-118, 149, 152, 154, 165, 170, 175, 211) Among the Kikuyu in western Africa, "the newly circumcised boys, in groups of fifteen or twenty, attack and rape old women and finally kill them" (Bettelheim 1962, 93).

The most horrible way of circumcising a boy is practiced by the Yesidi tribe in Yemen. "The patient (...) is placed upon a raised ground holding in right hand a spear, whose heel rests upon his foot and whose point shows every tremour of the nerves. The tribe stands about him to pass judgement on his fortitude." (Burton 1886, XII-91; Ashley Montagu 1946, 429) The operation is performed when the boy is 15 to 20 years old, in the presence of his bride, who may repudiate him if he screams or weeps (Bryk 1931, 114). A barber with a razor-sharp dagger approaches the victim, who is stripped naked. "First he makes a shallow cut, severing only the skin across the belly immediately below the navel, and similar incisions down each groin; then he tears off the epidermis from the incisions downwards and flays the testicles and the penis, ending with amputation of the foreskin. Meanwhile the spear must not tremble and in some clans the lad holds a dagger over the back of the stooping barber, crying, 'Cut and fear not!' When the ordeal is over, he exclaims, 'Allaha Akbar!' and attempts to walk towards the tents, soon falling for pain and nervous exhaustion, but the more steps he takes the more applause he gains. He is dieted with camel's milk, the wound is treated with salt and turmeric, and the chances in his favour are about ten to one. No body pile or pecten ever grows upon the excoriated part which preserves through life a livid ashen hue." (Burton 1886, XII-91)

The Poro girls of Liberia are "circumcised" too: their clitorises and labia minora are removed, cooked and given to the boys to eat; similarly, the foreskins of the boys are cooked and eaten by the girls (Bettelheim 1962, 94). The Oveherero, a black warrior tribe in Africa, used to amputate the genitals of conquered enemies, cook them and give them to the circumcised boys as body-building food (Jensen 1933, 53).

Nearly everywhere, those manhood rites which include circumcision are concluded with a celebration in which everyone has unrestrained public intercourse; the newly-circumcised boys receive preferred attention from the women (Jensen 1933, 27).

In Western Society

Why have we gone into such detail about traditions far removed from the experience of youth in our society?

It would seem that people of our Western civilisation, where nations do battle with napalm and nuclear weapons, have less need to harden their boys against pain and injury than do people of the primitive warrior and hunting

tribes, threatened as they frequently are in lonely spots by dangerous animals or the spears and arrows of enemies. Among such peoples courage is suffering pain without flinching; our courage, on the other hand, is demonstrated by hurting others (Borneman 1978, 1037). But it isn't the courageous bearing of pain which is crucial to our thesis; rather it is the quite positive attitude in such primitive societies towards sex. When a boy suddenly begins to ejaculate semen, gives evidence of being randy, his family and the whole neighbourhood rejoice. Everybody talks about this great event and is glad. Part of the rites is instruction in how the boy should make the best use of this male organ of his which has suddenly grown so dramatically. He is taught the best ways to give pleasure to women; everything is done to smooth his path in this learning process. And it's all closely linked to the natural evolution of his body: the sensationally rapid growth and increased sensitivity of the penis, the sprouting of pubic hair, spontaneous and ineluctable erections, erotic dreams, all drawing the pubertal boy's attention to his newly acquired sexual capacities. Thus boys eagerly and joyously look forward to the initiation which will make them officially men, accepted as full members of the tribe, despite the pain and suffering which accompanies it (Schérier 1978, 53). We never hear of their taking their own lives out of fear of the coming trials, while in our own youth-loving occidental civilisation a wave of adolescent suicides takes place every examination time in our schools and universities (Morris 1976, 190-191). Western Germany reports that every spring about 500 youngsters between 11 and 19 years of age commit suicide out of fear of bad marks or failure at school (Wafelbakker 1978, 1487).

What our civilisation has substituted for traditional tribal initiation is not just meagre but is actually harmful.

Loving parents are usually proud of their children's development: the baby's first smile, so sweetly sung in Latin poetry, was the inspiration of a fine essay by the leading Dutch psychologist Buytendijk. Many a mother has kept a 'baby diary' in which she carefully records baby's first steps, first words, first phrases. Later there is progress at school: the first writing, the first book the child has read for himself, awards at sports. The child learns to swim, ride a bicycle. Each step on the way to adulthood is noted with pride by father and mother.

And then, suddenly, an even greater event occurs, one which the child perceives as uncommonly important—the growth and maturation of his genitals—and it is passed by in embarrassed silence.

Children are extremely sensitive to the real underlying feelings and attitudes of those who bring them up; they are more impressed by these than by what is actually said. Fine talk about the sublime mystery of procreation or the sanctity of matrimonial love cannot hide parental embarrassment over sexuality and is hardly a substitute for sexual discussion. The son responds:

the bulge in his trousers, the visibility of his erections, semen stains on his bedsheets and underwear are cause for anxiety.

Until about two centuries ago children were in no need of special sexual instruction. The entire family, including servants and guests, generally slept together in one big room. Nakedness at home was as common and accepted as in the bath houses of the time. Even as late as the 17th Century one could see women going about bare-breasted in the centre of the towns, and even naked men entering the bath-houses (Dasberg 1975, 35). Petting, intercourse, birth and death all took place in the common room; children learned the 'facts of life' by observation (Schérer 1974, 141-143). All this changed with the rise of the bourgeoisie. Soon it was only in the country that children could watch the sexual activities of animals and so come to at least a partial understanding of how it went with human beings.

75 A New Zealand farm boy says, "We used to laugh at the city kids. They would come on holiday—relatives of neighbours. And they'd come over to my uncle's to get milk and every time they saw a bull fucking, especially the boys, they'd stop and they'd crack a fat themselves. We'd be busy in the shed and we'd see them leaning on the rails watching this bull fucking and cracking a fat while they were watching." (Tuohy & Murphy 1970, 135)

In bourgeois society, under the fatal influence of Rousseau (Kentler 1970, 105-106) children became for the first time a separate caste of humanity to which was attached the label of "innocence"—meaning ignorance of and being untouched by anything sexual. A revised code of ethics was constructed to conform to this new philosophy; the pious were persuaded that it was Christian and traditional. If one criticised this sudden and terrible distortion of human nature, one's doubts were thought to be inspired by the devil himself!

Ever since, the protagonists of these ethics have grimly opposed every sort of sexual instruction for the young. Sporadically and locally their battle continues. Some people still cling to the astonishing opinion that in bringing up a child this extremely important event is best skipped over in silence, that one should keep youth ignorant in order to prevent "bad thoughts". Actually, such opinions aren't limited to Christians: the influential Soviet Russian pedagogue Makarenko voiced exactly the same ideas (Grassel 1967, 144). All spiritual and secular dictatorships, in their zeal to keep young people ignorant and repress their sexual outlets, meet easily on this particular plane.

And where, here and there, the idea of sexual instruction has overcome societal resistance, it has gained for the most part only a Pyrrhic victory. In sex education classes in school the mechanics of procreation are more or less amply illustrated. Now, it goes without saying that this is an interesting

subject, but for children it is no more important than information about digestion, say, or blood circulation. And not a word is said about the most important accompanying phenomena: the sensations experienced during intercourse and other kinds of sexual activity. The child is told nothing about what he soon will feel, or feels already: sex hunger and lust. Besides, all of this, he is told, is not for him; it is reserved exclusively for adults. Abstinence is hammered home with the severest of threats: there's the danger of pregnancy, the peril of venereal diseases.

76 Father to son: "Did they give you sexual instruction at school?" Son: "Yes. Three times. First came the doctor who told us what we shouldn't do. Then came the preacher who told us why we shouldn't do it. And finally the headmaster, who told us where we shouldn't do it." Little boy to his chum, after having had a lesson about sex: "It seems to be awfully complicated!" Other boy: "Yes, and you're not even supposed to laugh!"

In this and many other ways, our civilisation imposes upon its young people a horrible loneliness about sex. What primitive people see as a source of joy and pride, we pervert into a source of frustration, anxiety and worry. It is part of the strange, materialistic views of our civilisation that physical torture is seen as cruel while mental torture is easily reconciled with our humanitarian ideals: it is cruel to cut off a thief's hands, but it is humane to lock him up for years in a lonely prison cell. Readers who were shocked by our description of puberty rites should think about the cruelty our civilisation imposes upon most boys by deliberately keeping them sexually ignorant and thus in a continuous state of inner turmoil.

The purpose of the transitory pains and tribulations of primitive initiation rites is to make the boy a better sexual partner, so that he can give and receive more pleasure with his sex contacts. The repressive attitudes endemic in our civilisation, on the contrary, often not only turn puberty into a torment but reduce forevermore a person's chances of marital happiness and sexual pleasure, as Frenken's research (1976) so convincingly demonstrated. Only unhappiness is the result.

There is a way out, even in our society. There are some discerning parents who understand not only their own private sexual needs but also those of their children.

77 A Dutch boy, well prepared for what soon would happen, ran in great excitement to his father to tell him that for the first time he had ejaculated during masturbation. The parents threw a small dinner party for him, inviting a few trusted friends; everyone drank to the boy's health and congratulated him.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

- 78 Another Dutch family celebrated the first intercourse of their son in the same way.
- 79 The fifteen-year-old son of an Amsterdam workman came home late for dinner one night. His mother began to scold him, but the boy broke in to explain that just as he was about to leave the home of one of the girls in his class—they had been doing their homework together—she had informed him that they were alone in the house and she wished to show him her bedroom. At this point the youngster's 12-year-old brother began to snigger. Soon the parents were laughing, too, and the father said, "You're forgiven. It would have been silly to have missed such a chance. Fucking is good for your health!"
- 80 In the living room of a fourth family, ardent naturists, all, hangs a picture of their fifteen-year-old son on a nudist beach. Quite obviously the photographer had taken care to feature conspicuously in the foreground the boy's large penis. The boy is proud of this photo, invariably draws attention to it when his classmates, boys and girls both, come to visit. When he goes to a party or out on a date his mother reminds him, "Don't forget to put some condoms in your pocket."
- 81 The editor of an American periodical which included descriptions of gay sex received this letter from a man who had discovered his son reading old copies of the magazine in his basement: "Now I know why he's been walking around with a hard-on most of the time. It also makes me wonder now why he's been taking the young kid next door down in our basement so often. You have a most wicked and delightful publication." (McDonald 1981, 189)
- Wouldn't it be wonderful if all parents could be as proud of their son having strong, large, well-formed genitals as of him having a fine mind and physique?
- 82 A German mother once showed me photos taken at a nudist camp that she and her fourteen-year-old son had visited for a few weeks. She observed, "Thorsten's penis was bigger than any of the other boys'. He gets that from his late father, who had a large one, too. Thorsten likes people to admire it. Whenever he and his school-mates have a party here at home he tries to get them to play strip poker—and then cheats in order to lose so he can be the first to cast off his clothes!"
- In another German home, the father presented his thirteen-year-old son to a visitor. As the guest marvelled at how big and virile the boy had become, the father replied, with a smile, "Yes, he's incredibly developed for his age. I don't know where he gets that from, but his penis is already much longer and thicker than mine."

rites of initiation

Boys brought up in such an atmosphere will certainly have little difficulty discussing their sexual desires and thoughts, and any problems which might come up, with their parents. But others, hearing their parents say, "You can talk about anything with us—you can be confident that we will give you any information you need", sense the real reluctance, the fear, the timidity underlying such a declaration. And such parents are far from being the worst: many never even touch upon the subject of sex and are visibly shocked at any allusion to it. How difficult, then, it is for the boy to develop a well-conducted and fully human sexual life. Many never do, thanks to the highly moralistic upbringing by their parents.

THE BEGINNING OF SEXUAL RELATIONS

The commencement of sexual activities with others cannot be considered peculiar to puberty. Where nature is allowed to take its course, things begin to happen much earlier, which is consistent with the fact that mankind has reached the highest level of evolution. Kerscher stresses "that the relationship between sexuality and procreation is already much less pronounced in the higher primates than in the lower animal species, and that mankind in this respect has attained the highest plane of development, in which the influence of the cerebral cortex becomes more powerful than that of the sex hormones. Where this happens animals are equally sexually active outside of the rutting season. When this evolution goes as far as it can go, such behaviour occurs in the young, immature individuals as well." (Kerscher 1979, 12-13) Sex play has been observed in all young mammals, but there are differences, and it is striking that the higher the development state of the species the more sexual play occurs (Ford & Beach 1968, 22 & 273).

"Among the Australian aboriginies, whose society is one of the most primitive known to us (...) the physical relations between men and women are spoken of freely, without embarrassment and with obvious pleasure, even in front of children. From an early age, native children are familiar with copulation. Sex is considered a normal, natural, and most important factor in human life. There is no attempt to keep anything about it secret from young persons. The Berndts describe how children are allowed to indulge sexual desires without criticism. They may be invited by another, older brother or sister, or some other person to have sexual intercourse with an adult or a child of the same age standing nearby. Their sexual organs may be played with or their sexual potentialities discussed at length and in detail in their hearing by older persons. At an early age they learn of the sexual act by direct observation, and they imitate adult sexual activities among themselves, publicly when they are very young and somewhat more privately when they become older and more self-conscious." (Bettelheim 1962, 64)

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

"A kind of rudimentary sexual intercourse between children, as Bloch has remarked, occurs in many parts of the world, and is recognised by their elders as play. This is, for instance, the case among the Bawenda of the Transvaal, and among the Papuans of Kaiser-Wilhelms-Land (Papuan New Guinea), with the approval of the parents, although much reticence is observed. Godard noted the sexual play of the boys and girls in Cairo. In New Mexico W. A. Hammond has seen boys and girls attempting a playful sexual conjunction with the encouragement of men and women." (Ellis 1913 VI, 36-37) Malinowski's famous book on the sexual life of the savages describes a similar situation among the Trobriand people (Melanesia) whom he studied in such detail (Malinowski 1929). On the Marquesas Islands and in India, children from about nine years of age commonly attempt intercourse (Sarphatie 1982, 42).

One sees the same pattern in other primitive tribes. The African Chewa believe that their sons will never be able to beget children unless they exercise their sex organs from the start (O'Carroll 1980, 40). Droogers, who told of the circumcision rites in Zaïre, observed boys of five and seven publicly performing intercourse, and their behaviour showed that they were already quite experienced (1974, 60). The Ifugao of Luzon (Philippines) have separate dormitories where unmarried individuals live from early childhood. "It is customary for each boy to sleep with a girl every night (...) Boys are urged by their fathers to begin sexual activities early, and a man may shame his son if the latter is backward in this respect." (O'Carroll 1980, 40)

The same kind of dormitories are used by a mountain tribe of central India, the Muria. In every village there is a separate building. Flanking the entrance to every dormitory are two gigantic wooden statues of a man and a woman, each with prominent genitals and, in the case of the male, a large erection. The little girls are sexually trained by the older boys, the little boys by the older girls. At night they all pair off to sleep together as couples so that every boy copulates every night with a girl. In some of these dormitories the boy must always bed down with the same girl (and in such villages the number of unhappy marriages and divorces is considerable), in others the boy is obliged to change his partner after, at the most, three successive nights (and in these villages marriages prove to be more harmonious and divorces are rare). Verrier Elwin, the missionary who studied this institution in great detail, was impressed by the freshness and health—mental as well as physical—of the Muria youth. The boys were strikingly cheerful, helpful, energetic, industrious, and criminality among them was much lower than among the adults upon whom strict monogamy was imposed (In this respect the situation is exactly the reverse of our civilisation, where boys have a much higher rate of criminality than adults.) (Elwin 1959).

In virtually all those societies where children are allowed sexual freedom,

THE BEGINNING OF SEXUAL RELATIONS

nervous diseases and mental troubles are virtually unknown, or, in any case, much less common than in our sex-negative civilisation. The French social pedagogue René Schérer comments on how a system such as the Muria's facilitates the integration of tenderness into sex and promotes a harmonious sexual life (1974, 133).

Where their spontaneous impulses are not crippled, children in our Western civilisation are also active sexually at an early age (Broderick 1971, 19; Ruweler-Wutz 1976, 7).

- 83 In a poor district of a large American city, one mother commented on how children there matured at a very early age. "Infants of five or six know just as much about fucking as I do. My six-year-old son has already fucked two or three children, and I am showing my four-year-old how to become a woman-chaser, too. I don't have to pretend: what they can get they see going on every day, in every stairwell, on every floor or in every elevator around here." (Broderick 1971, 17-18)

This has a long tradition. Ellis, in 1913, cites a writer who saw New York boys and girls of three and four "attempting a playful sexual conjunction (...) in the presence of their parents, with only a laughing rebuke." (1913, VI 37)

There are many reports, too, of homosexual activity beginning at an early age. "Mounting behaviour as well as presenting behaviour in human infants have been observed in both boys and girls from about two years of age, without any indication of learning (...) It has been observed that children of both sexes present themselves to males they are sexually interested in. One of the most characteristic patterns during mounting behaviour is the pelvic thrust movement (...) Unpublished observations in kindergartens and from interviews with parents seem to show that pelvic thrust movements in pre-pubertal boys engaging in sex play with other children are mostly accompanied by penile erection. Analysis of films of boys engaged in sex play in groups shows that penile erection mostly occurs when the boys exhibit mounting behaviour. When the boy presents himself to another boy he normally loses his erection. These observations are confirmed by reports from sexual interactions between young boys and adults (...) In most cases when the children start sex play with children around the same age, they usually require a mutual role exchange as an agreement before they are willing to accept the cross-gender role at all. This need for mutuality in the homosexual interaction has been observed in four-year-old boys (...) One factor that seems to influence the requirement of mutual roles is the age difference between the two partners. Probably in all cultures the older boys mount the younger ones, and the youngster seems to accept this passive role pattern." (Langfeldt 1981, 104)

Freud was well aware of the sexual activities of babies and infants, but supposed that the sexual appetite went into hibernation, became "latent",

during the elementary school years, or from about five to twelve. He did, however, also suggest that this latency observed in the West might be culturally conditioned and thus artificial and not natural. "This conclusion is supported by various anthropological studies. Children in sexually permissive, primitive societies do not give up their sex play in late childhood." (Haeberle 1978, 146) It is, on the contrary, an important ingredient of their daily life (De Bruijn 1972, 8). As Freud said in his *Untergang des Oedipuskomplexes*, "It is intimidation from the outside which causes children to be sexually no longer active" (quoted by Scheller 1980, 57).

- 84 In 1974 a Rotterdam teacher wished to give the 11- and 12-year-old boys and girls in his class an honest and open sex education lesson. I suggested that some days later he ask each of the students to write a theme on the subject so that he could correct misunderstandings and mistakes. The collection of papers is in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation. One is struck by the frequency with which the children, especially the boys, voice their sexual desires. René (11 years): "I'd very much like to fuck a nice woman myself." Aad (12 years): "If I had to write a book about it I would ask, 'Why aren't children of twelve years allowed to have sex while adults are?' I think that a child of twelve should be permitted to have sex. I would like to liberate all kinds of sex in The Netherlands. There should be a declaration that sex is healthy. If they write this in the newspapers everyone will want to do it. I'd like to do it myself; it's healthy. I myself have not yet actually fucked, but I want to. It must be a really wonderful feeling." Leo (12 years): "I think every country should permit kids of 12 or over to have sex, because sex is normal. I've never done it (fucking), but I'd like to."

Marga Reniers, who taught sex education in another school, told her students that many people find it difficult to talk about this subject. One (11 years) exclaimed in surprise: "But sex is just something human, isn't it?" (Reniers)

Anyone who is tempted to consider this a typically modern corruption of childhood innocence should recall that people in medieval Europe married and had intercourse at the age of eleven. The most famous of all lovers, Romeo and Juliet, were 14-year-old children. In Chapter One we have already noted examples of how common and socially accepted early sex was in former times.

It seems incredible that adults have such little knowledge of children's sexuality, since they had all obviously once been children themselves. Borneman proposes a "postpubertal amnesia syndrome": apparently pre-pubertal sexual events are systematically repressed from conscious memory during the course of adolescence (Leist 1980, 8-10). More poetically, Guyotat says that a boy kills his own childhood with his first successful intercourse (Guyotat 1967, 322-325); he kills it so thoroughly that it remains forevermore forgotten.

Pat Califia, the American feminist author, was amazed to find that all speakers at one legislative hearing considered it self-evident that any confrontation with sexuality, in any form whatsoever, would horrify every child (Califia 1980, 20). An English psychiatrist, Morris Fraser, says without further ado that "to be with an adult who has temporarily abandoned control of his emotions—either to anxiety, to alcohol, or to sexual desire—is about the most frightening experience a child can have." (1976, 51)

The *Nieuwe Revu* study conducted by Professor Kooy in The Netherlands in 1981 reveals a more nuanced picture. To the question, "Do children under the age of eight experience sexual feelings?" 54% of the 21- to 24-year-old men and 60% of the women in the same age group answered affirmatively. However, a substantial majority responded that it was best not to pay any attention to such feelings; only 12% of these men and 3% of the women advocated their suppression, while 10% of the men and 28% of the women felt that these feelings in the child should be stimulated (*Nieuwe Revu* 7-8, 1981). In the United States there are also groups of people with open minds about child sexuality who consider it something which should be encouraged (Martinson 1979, 489-491). Acceptance of sexual activities between children varies greatly, however, in different countries. A Gallup survey of 1981 resulted in "tolerance notes" for European nations running from a low of 142 to a high of 470 in the following order: Ireland, Great Britain, Spain, West Germany, Italy, Belgium, France, Denmark, Netherlands (Lacombe 1984, 33)).

Psychologists Nobile (1978, X) and Bernard (1979, 119) might well be correct when they say that "paedophilia" is "outdated" as a perversion: once the existence of childhood sexuality is accepted the label can no longer be applied. Of course there will always be women and men whose sexual appetite is preferentially directed toward children, but when we accept the fact that children are just as sexual as adults it is no more necessary to maintain a separate category for people who love children than it would be for people who love red-haired or left-handed partners. What is the difference between a bank director of 70 marrying a 20-year-old beauty and a man of 43 in love with a girl of 13? asks Nobile (ibid). Some people find themselves attracted by one particular variation in the range of human body types, or by a special characteristic of the human mind. When those who possess this special body type or this characteristic mentality are fully capable of experiencing lust during the course of intimacy, there is little reason to stick a special label on their relationships or on their desires.

THE OUTLETS

Masturbation

For most boys, masturbation is their first experience with sex.

The ancient Greeks saw it as a divine invention. Hermes (Mercury) taught it to his son Pan. The cynic Diogenes masturbated publicly, in full sunlight, in the market place, declaring, "How nice it would be if you could rub your hunger away just as easily!" (Buffière 1980, 462)

We have already seen that masturbation in babies is a normal phenomenon. "Infants of both sexes may be observed rubbing their sex organs against the bed, the floor, or some toy in a thrusting motion, and there is no doubt that they derive physical pleasure from it. For some time, they are still unable to coordinate their movements and to use their hands for a more direct stimulation. However, after a while, they may learn to do so and begin to masturbate. Quite often such deliberate masturbation is carried through to the point of orgasm. A child's orgasmic capacity increases with advancing age. But by their fifth birthday, more than half of all boys have reached orgasm, and for boys between 10 and 13 years of age the figure rises to nearly 80%." (Haeberle 1978, 153, 156) It becomes a fixed habit (unless adults try to repress it), as it is a natural activity: all mammals have been observed doing it (Ford & Beach 1968, 202; Borneman 1978, 1258). Thrusting movements of the abdomen similar to those made during intercourse are observed in eight-month-old boys, but only when they feel safe and protected. Intercourse imitation starts in both sexes, if the child feels free, at the age of two years (Hertoft 1983, 70).

Among the Hopi in Arizona and the Sirian in Bolivia, childhood masturbation passes without anyone taking notice of it, at least until puberty. The Kasak-Kirgises in Central Asia think it is quite normal for little children to stimulate their genitals. In Indonesian Timor the Alorese infant boys masturbate without interference. The Pukapuka in Polynesia pay no attention to sexual play in children: boys and girls masturbate in public freely and unhampered. Nor do the Nama-Hottentots make a secret of childhood masturbation. In the New Hebrides, the Seniang see no reason to interfere when the older boys masturbate. On Tikopia in the Pacific, little boys manually induce erections in themselves and adults either take no notice or only reprove them lightly (Ford & Beach 1968, 201-203, 206). Sioux Indian fathers even teach their little sons how to rub their penises—and encourage them to do so regularly (Sarlin 1975, 377).

In the South American nation of Colombia, the virginity of girls has to be strictly maintained. Any male who deflowers a girl outside of marriage runs the risk of being killed by her father or one of her brothers. Thus parents are

terribly afraid that their adolescent sons, while courting, may go too far. In the Cartagena region this anxiety, coupled with the conviction that boys absolutely need to satisfy their sexual drives, has led to the institution of the donkey-man. On certain, fixed days a man walks through the streets of the village singing the praises of his female donkey. Parents encourage their sons to follow him. Man, donkey and a trail of boys retire to the woods where the boys undress and take turns having intercourse with the beast (or, perhaps we should say: masturbate with the help of the donkey's vagina!) while the others form a circle about him and watch. Nobody is in the least embarrassed. When a German living in the area got to know some of the local boys, heard about the institution and asked if he could film the scene, he was cordially invited to do so. The Brongersma Foundation possesses a copy of this film.

In our own culture, masturbation is the rule with infant boys; it is in no way exceptional. Child psychiatrist René Spitz established a close connection between children's tendency to play with their genitals and their relationships with their mothers. Where this relationship was excellent the little boy was found playing with his penis already in the first year of his life; where the relationship was difficult he did this much less often; where the relationship was either bad or didn't exist at all, genital play simply didn't take place (Clower 1975, 111; Kentler 1970, 133). Niels Ernst, a Danish psychologist, thinks it interesting "that it is just those well-developed and mentally healthy children who obviously enjoy masturbation." (Hertoft 1983, 71) The German professor of education Helmut Kentler observes, "Mothers should really be happier over the first genital play of their babies than the first smile, for genital play is proof-positive of a satisfying mother-child relationship and the basis for a sound development."

DETERRENCE

From puberty, masturbation is for boys (not for girls!) the first conscious sexual habit (Kirchhoff & Kirchhoff 1979, 292); 55% learn the art from comrades, 36% discover it by themselves (Hertoft 1968, I 111).

Not all parents, however, accept this with the same equanimity as parents in the "primitive" nations above mentioned. There are records all through history of masturbation being confronted by threats. Already in the *Knights*, one of the surviving comedies of Greek playwright Aristophanes (444-385 BC) we can read that if people rub their penises their skin will drop off (Peyrefitte 1977, 99).

The Greeks and Romans believed that sexual activity would damage the voice of singers and the strength of athletes: such individuals, therefore, were compelled to abstinence (Peyrefitte 1981, 268-269). They found a simple way of preventing masturbation: after drawing forward the foreskin as far as

possible, it was laterally pierced with a white-hot awl, a silver wire laced through the holes, bent into a ring and soldered (Stoll 1908, 496). Even fathers did this where they wanted to preserve until puberty the chastity of their little sons. Martialis (IX, 27) wrote about a randy boy who, with his swelling penis just liberated of its fibula by the blacksmith, willingly follows a man who has promised to suck him off. Christian as well as Indian monks have employed the same device to ensure their own sexual abstinence; at times they have even displayed their virtue with rings as large as 15 centimetres and weighing 125 grams (Deschner 1978, 82).

Some young slaves were kept only for sexual purposes. The same operation was performed upon them, but in place of a fixed ring, a kind of clasp was inserted with a lock which could only be opened by the master (or mistress!). In this way young males were made sexually safe companions for wives and daughters without castrating them, and their sexual passions could be accumulated until such time as their owners wished to make use of them (Dingwall 1925, 21).

Martialis, the Roman poet quoted above, disapproved of masturbation too, but for another reason: "Do you really think, Porticus, it doesn't matter that you never fuck but let your left hand be your wife? Believe me, that is an enormous crime—you cannot realize how serious it is. Horace fucked only one time, and in doing so begot three heros; Mars, too, fucked just once and Ilya gave birth to twins. What would have become of us if both had satisfied their lusts with their own hands? Know well what nature teaches: what you waste with your fingers, Porticus, is a human being!" (IX-42)

Jewish tradition, too, denounced the habit, and there is even a text in the Talmud demanding the death penalty for anyone who so satisfies himself (Szasz 1982, 96). (This Talmudic author, had he had his way, would thus have exterminated his own people!)

However the Greek physician Galenus (ca. 130-200) taught "that masturbation was sometimes necessary and healthy, because unreleased sperm could become poisonous" (Haeberle 1978, 377, 464). His opinion was shared by a number of his colleagues during the ensuing middle ages (Van Ussel 1968, 212; 1975, 105), and Moslem theologians regarded masturbation as a Christian vice (Ellis 1913, I-278). Although some Muslim authors condemned the habit, most of them condoned it: "It is your own juice; you may spill it"—"Our forefathers taught it to their sons to keep them from fornication." (Bousquet 1953, 58) For many centuries we can detect no concern in European culture (Haeberle 1978, 2, 185) about this habit so assiduously practiced by male youth in all times and all nations. "The Church had always regarded this activity as sinful in adults but had been tolerant of it in children." (Jackson 1982, 46) Even those who thought it improper were inclined to see in it something understandable that could best be prevented by the natural

substitution of intercourse. And against intercourse there was, as we saw in the first chapter, no serious objection at all.

All of this changed suddenly in the second half of the 18th Century. Tissot, a physician and medical adviser to the papal court (Simons 1977, 145), published in 1758 his sensationalistic book *De l'onanisme* (On Masturbation). In it he informed his readers that the inevitable consequences of masturbation were "a weakening of all the bodily senses and all talents of the mind, the loss of fantasy and of memory, and debility. Shame and dishonour follow. All functions become disturbed, cease at times and become painful. Long-lasting, troublesome, strange, horror-inducing illnesses set in, with sharp and continuously recurring pains. During the years when a man should be most vigorous, all the infirmities of old age become apparent. One loses the capacity for every human activity and becomes debased to a useless burden of this earth." (quoted by Aron & Kempf 1978, 62)

As confessor and spiritual guide of a masturbating and healthy crowd of young people, every priest must, of course, have known that all of this was complete rubbish, a fiction from A to Z. Not once, however, did the Catholic Church raise its voice against these lies, despite their fatal effects and the damage they caused. On the contrary, it adopted and reinforced them with ever-increasing enthusiasm, until it ultimately stigmatised masturbation as a mortal sin which, if not confessed and expiated, would irrevocably condemn its practiser to the eternal torments of hell (Van Ussel 1968, 44, 223, 238). J. C. Debreyne, priest and physician, recommended in 1842 the adoption of the following "sound" pedagogy: "We should threaten such boys with shame, with contempt, with dishonour, with all imaginable terrors, with the most painful, the most debasing, the most shameful diseases, and finally with an early death, followed by everlasting punishment." (quoted by Aron & Kempf 1978, 233). Evidently the intent was a pedagogy like that defined, in another context, by the American psychologist Friedenberg: a process whereby many youngsters are sickened and terrified, their pride destroyed, and are convulsed with humiliation so that control may be restored at a less than human level (Friedenberg 1959, 144). Moreover, the victims were physically attacked as well: "They were circumcised or infibulated." (Szasz 1982, 72-73) In the 19th Century their sex organs were burned or blistered, the nerves of the penis were severed (...) When operating techniques improved still further, the testicles (...) were surgically removed. In sum, eventually, medical treatments of masturbation became so drastic that they began to resemble the medieval tortures which they once had been supposed to replace." (Haeberle 1978, 372)

The first doubts were voiced in France. A Dr. Christian expressed the opinion in 1881 that masturbating *children* would certainly lose their brains, their health and their life, but that from the age of 16 years on the habit became innocuous, because "nearly everyone does it" (Aron & Kempf 1978,

182-184).

This didn't, however, prevent a certain psychologist Lorulat from publishing as late as 1928 a book in Paris in which he stated as well-established fact that masturbation weakens memory, intelligence and health: the digestion becomes troubled, which often causes diarrhoea; the chest remains narrow, which often results in tuberculosis; the heart is overstrained, hence palpitation; the excess of blood pressure in the brain impairs eyesight; moreover there arise nervous inflammations, spinal consumption, insomnia, spasms, streaks of pain. The penis atrophies and becomes very small, with only the glans staying large: this enables one to recognise the masturbator immediately. Other symptoms are the way he avoids looking you in the eye and his uncertain gait. Of course, he gradually becomes impotent, and during this process he becomes a coward, egoist, liar, hard-hearted, lazy and permanently depressive. "Despair is often so strong and causes such sadness that the unfortunate who abandons himself to this habit finally takes to suicide in order to escape from his misery." (De Brethmas 1980, 101).

The truth of the matter is that such pedagogues—honoured and praised by their society—all too often managed, with their lies, to hound young people to death, to cause, themselves, the very suicides which they attributed to the habit of masturbation (Kentler 1970, 69).

This went on until 1948, when the Kinsey Report put a stop to it. Now, finally, massive, painstaking research established what priests as confessors had always known but carefully kept secret: almost every boy masturbates, and most of them do it intensively. After Kinsey, no one could watch a school football or basketball game without laughing at the myth that masturbation impaired the health of boys.

Liberated from moralistic inhibitions, medical science now developed quite different opinions: positive values were attributed to masturbation; the absence of masturbation was considered an abnormality (Green 1974).

In a Dutch family medical manual, Dr. O. M. de Vaal advises parents to pay more attention to the sexual hygiene of their adolescent son: by his bed they should provide a box of tissues or some handkerchiefs so he can tidy up after ejaculation. De Vaal assumes that most parents don't need to encourage their son to masturbate, as most boys discover how to do it themselves or are taught by their mates, but if a boy older than 14 still isn't doing it, his father should have a serious talk with him (De Vaal 1968, 247-249). Along the same lines, an American psychiatrist, Alayne Yates, mother of 13 children (her own and adopted) says in her book on sex education that if a boy at puberty isn't already masturbating, he should start with it now (Yates 1979, quoted by O'Carroll 1980, 96).

A child psychologist, Professor Beets, is equally positive: "Before they praise youngsters who successfully ban everything sexual from their lives,

perhaps moralists, confessors, educators and others should ask themselves just what they are doing. Is the vegetable a proper ideal for mankind?" He notes that the boy who lives in abstinence, "when he grows older will give the impression of coldness, of being non-committal (....) Should such a child be intelligent he may succeed in passing through life without self-pity. He will neither admire nor hate himself; he will never become passionate over anything. He will never know what it is to be admired by others, to praise somebody; he will never be enthusiastic. He will not allow himself to be shocked or crushed. He will never see a reason to weep, thus he won't weep. The idea of running away, of fleeing, will never cross his mind. He will never be torn by desire, one moment being on this side, the next on the other, like the boy who has experienced orgasm, and longs for orgasm, but wishes at the same time not to feel this lust." (Beets 1964, 138-139)

As early as 1876, as a matter of fact, a psychiatrist by the name of Oskar Berger wrote that in his opinion 99% of all young men masturbated, and a physician of the famous Rugby School in England supposed the percentage to be 90-95% (Ellis 1913, I-235-236). "Several scientists before the time of Freud advocated childhood sexuality and masturbation as both normal and healthy (Forberg, 1824; Kind, 1908), but these authors were kept silent and had problems getting their books published." (Langfeldt 1981, 99) Thus it was hardly precedent-shattering when a medical congress in 1912 declared masturbation a normal activity and "its absence among boys at adolescence a sign of disturbance" (Francis & Marcus 1975, 13). Since then this view has prevailed. "Clinical experience teaches us that if masturbation begins too late or is totally absent, this generally is a bad omen (excepted only the cases where regular intercourse is started at an early date). Masturbation is indispensable for a healthy adolescence." (Eissler, quoted by Kentler 1970, 76). Borneman considers masturbation the sexual activity best suited to children before and at puberty. It should not be seen as any kind of substitute. Repression of the habit makes a boy ill. Those who have not masturbated as children will later have difficulties in getting satisfaction from intercourse (Borneman 1978, 1425, 680, 939).

With today's conviction that masturbation is innocent, or even necessary, we may be tempted to smile with pity at that episode in our cultural evolution when horror tales were spread about the dire consequences of "self abuse". It's easy to be amused at all those apparatuses invented by crafty businessmen with which alarmed parents burdened their son to prevent "secret sin": it was made impossible for him to touch his penis, or iron wires pressed into the flesh in case of an erection, or an electric bell sounded in the parents' bedroom as soon as a disaster occurred.

But when we realise what all this nonsense meant to those it concerned, our laughter passes away. The inner struggle against his sexual needs which

adults demanded from every "nice" boy, and the precautions they imposed upon him under the influence of moralists and physicians, had but one immediate and inevitable result: to concentrate all his attention and thought upon his sexual feelings, exciting them and making them obsessive. Hunger renders the desire for food an obsession; imposed abstinence does the same with the sexual appetite. A healthy boy with a free upbringing, when feeling "horny" from whatever cause, will rub his penis to get rid of this tension, and afterwards he will resume his play or his work. Another boy of the same age who has imposed upon himself the obligation of "chastity" is continuously troubled by lustful desires; he will try to distract himself, but this only concentrates his thinking more upon what has been forbidden. Finally he gives in when the natural impulse becomes too strong, but immediately afterwards he feels desperate, depressed and worries about the consequences to his health or spiritual salvation. This kind of masturbatory pattern is quite obviously inimical to mental and physical well-being. Sexual education based on these principles breaks down the personality and fills youth with distress.

GUILT FEELINGS

How terrible these miseries can be we can read in boys' diaries published in 1955 by a youth leader and clergyman (who wanted to give an edifying example!) named Wolfgang Fischer (Dasberg 1975, 91) and from autobiographies like that of author James Joyce (1973) (which makes us understand why Joyce's later books deride so mercilessly the religion in which he grew up).

85 A New Zealand boy tells how he was torn apart: "I used to be so worried with guilt because I used to really enjoy pulling myself off. It got compulsive. I just couldn't do without it. That caused problems. We used to have confession on Thursdays and I'd go and confess all, then try not to masturbate before Sunday Mass. Otherwise I'd have a sin on my soul and didn't dare to go to communion, and my parents would say, 'Why aren't you going to communion?' Of course I'd never make it through to Sunday without wanking. I'd lie in bed in mortal trepidation knowing I'd have to go to communion or my parents would spring me, so feeling as if the lightning bolt was just inches away from my head, I always went to communion." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 136)

This text shows clearly how such pedagogics aren't only disastrous for youthful joy of life, but also for real religious and moral feelings. That they have continued in existence for such a long time is due to that unholy trinity of clergymen, physicians and quacks for whom they provided submissive sinners, patients and buyers of the most absurd medicines to cure the "hidden sin".

The discovery by a mother that her son masturbates is a test of her own sex life. Where it has been happy and healthy, where she has loved men and been loved by them, she will exclaim, "Thank heavens, we're finally there! I have produced a man." And she will let him masturbate as frequently as he likes, without thinking this abnormal or being tempted to intervene (Borne-man 1978, 489). Still, there are few parents who "recognise masturbation as a mighty force for independence" (Friday 1981, 43).

Fortunately, today it is a rare boy who is concerned about sinning or impairing his health this way. Yet 42% of the young Danish men Hertoft interviewed in 1968 told him they had seriously, but vainly, struggled against the habit. In sport clubs, coaches and trainers frequently advise their players not to waste their energy in this useless fight against a natural impulse, but to relieve themselves regularly. In a 1976 German broadcast for schools, a physician advised one boy to masturbate in order to overcome the nervous affliction which had victimised him as a result of his self-imposed abstinence. Physicians also feel it is best that uncircumcised boys rub their penises in order to break up any adhesions of the foreskin to the glans (a not uncommon occurrence). Where the opening in the foreskin is too narrow (as many as 18% of the 15- to 17-year-old boys made this complaint in a NISSO investigation—1973, 36), its regular retraction over the swollen glans will usually cure the problem, allowing pleasurable penetration in vagina or anus and avoiding surgical intervention. (It is not true, however, that such stretching will always succeed.)

84 (Continued from 64) Max learned masturbation from his eleven-year-old brother when he was seven, and practiced it assiduously thereafter—frequently twice a day—and every time he pulled his foreskin back in order to clean his glans. Nevertheless he was forced to have himself circumcised when, at seventeen, he wanted to have intercourse with girls.

Insufficient sexual instruction (where any is given!) can frequently cause worry. A teacher in an American school got from fifth and sixth grade boys questions like, "Will playing with yourself cause problems with intercourse?"; "Will it hurt your athletics to jerk off?"; "How many boys do it? How often?"; "Why do some boys masturbate when it's so easy to get girls to lay? (in our crowd, anyone who masturbates is queer!)" ; "When and where can you masturbate safely?"; "Do girls play with themselves or jack off as often as we do?" (Calderwood 1963) There are always a few boys who carefully catch their semen and drink it to prevent "waste of energy" (Stoll 1908, 913). And worry due to sex-negative surroundings certainly diminishes pleasure during masturbation (Winkel 1972, 17-18).

But dangers arise from another quarter, too. It goes without saying that the pleasure boys experience in the act is their main incentive, especially for those who start sexual activity early (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 132). The boy is out to get pleasure from his body, especially from his genitals. There is nothing wrong with this; it is only natural and healthy. This phase is even inevitable if, as soon as love comes his way, he is to give to this emotion its best physical expression. Yet it will deepen not only his sense of humanity but also the pleasure of his lust if he moves beyond sex-only-for-pleasure and can develop those feelings of love which can make sexuality so much more richly coloured and warm.

We must make a distinction between a sexuality directed upon the body and a sexuality directed upon the person. Rock music, such a marvelous Rosetta stone for deciphering the preoccupations of contemporary youth, has shown—in its presentation, lyrics and the life of its idols—a shift from person-directed to body-directed sex (Moore, Skipper & Willis 1979, 481-486). At the same time we hear complaints from many sides that sex is degraded to an obligatory performance. Applying this specifically to the boy: the subculture of youth demands that his penis be strong and often erect; he mustn't hesitate to shove it in a girl's cunt; the more girls he does it to the better; he must be able to repeat the act quickly... Such demands are in blatant contradiction to those made by the official ruling culture, but they have the same sex-negating effect: many boys become shy and secretive and lose their courage. In the youth subculture hypocrisy flourishes as exuberantly as in the domain of the apostles of chastity: boys boast, with imaginary adventures, of their heartless conquests, of their enormous potency. The old taboos are replaced by compulsive sex (obligatory consumption) (Wagner 1979, 108).

It doesn't really matter whether he is deterred by the official sex instructions given him by adults or by the unripe attitudes of his contemporaries, instilling fears about the arduous tasks imposed upon him. The effect is the same: many a boy is constrained for some time from having sexual intimacy with a partner and is thrown back in solitude upon his masturbation—but now this may be tainted with feelings of guilt, of not doing what is expected of him.

The right information given at the right time may prevent many of these problems. But even this cannot cancel out all misgivings. Orgasm is such a shattering experience, an interruption of consciousness, that it can easily make a boy afraid of insanity or even death (Francis & Marcus 1975, 29). The masturbating boy abandons himself to mysterious, inscrutable forces (Frenken 1976, 93). In his masterly, unsurpassed analysis of pubertal masturbation, Professor Beets shows how a boy at this age may feel that it carries him far beyond his circle of family and friends and transports him into another world altogether. This can give rise to guilt (Beets 1964, 86-88). The situation gets

even more complicated if the boy, without being completely conscious of what he is doing, fantasises persons or images with incestuous overtones and repents of them (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 184-185, 291-292; Sarphatie 1982, 42). The result is anxiety, even if the boy knows beyond reasonable doubt that masturbation in itself is healthy and meets with parental approval. Hass, questioning 307 teenage American boys, found that 6% thought masturbation unpleasant, 64% rather pleasant, 30% very pleasant; he also records what some of these boys with guilty feelings said (Hass 1981, 100). And so, in various ways, masturbation can become obsessive, as even Reich feared: to masturbate, he knew, was better than to abstain, but in the long run the absence of a loved object may render it unsatisfactory and guilt-ridden (Henry 1977, 108).

FANTASIES—METHODS—FREQUENCY

Another well spring of worry can be dried up by adequate information. Not a few boys fantasise their male friends and their genitals while masturbating, and the thought that this means they are essentially homophilic may cause considerable anguish. It is thus necessary to explain to a boy, as soon as masturbation commences, that such *fantasies* are universal and normal and are indulged in by people whose later orientation will be wholly heterosexual. The same may be said of sadistic imaginings, also common at this age (Henry 1977, 111; Launay 1969, 23; Rümke, quoted by Karpman 1954, 562). Not all sexual fantasies should be regarded as suppressed wishes. Sado-masochistic fantasies especially may be entertained by people who would never wish, or even be mentally able, to realise (Friday 1981, 55). It would seem to be sound advice to tell the boy not to spasmodically repress the fantasies which obtrude upon his mind, but to deliberately and calmly abandon himself to them (Beets 1964, 108-111; Moore 1975, 265). An amusing example of acceptance can be read in a novel by Tournier wherein a schoolboy on holiday sends this postcard greeting to his close friend: "I just emptied my seminal vesicles to your health!" (Tournier 1975, 89)

87 In his fantasies, Jethro (17 years of age) is a sadist. "All my fantasies deal with someone being raped by me or someone else (...) The victim is always a boy." The boy is naked, tied spread-eagled on a bed. Jethro, naked himself and with a steadily hardening penis, is torturing his victim: he spits in his face, pulls his hair, sits on his head. Soon he has a firm erection. "The boy struggling beneath me makes it even harder. I force his mouth open and shove my prick in as far as it will go (...) I can see and hear him choking and gagging and this and his efforts to get up are just about making me go crazy, but I don't let him up until I've shot my whole load down his throat and made him swallow every drop. I then sit back and look at his face dripping with my

come (...) I let my balls fall all over his face, jamming my prick into his nose and eyes, making him beg me to stop." Eventually Jethro pisses and shits on the face of his victim. "I often fantasise about watching a group of two or three boys raping a young boy (...) They fuck, shit on, piss on, force to suck and degrade the boy, all to my arousal. Sometimes I fantasise about being raped with way I rape the boy (...) In all my fantasies it seems as though I am brutally hurting the boy, yet in real life I would never think of beating anybody or causing any kind of physical harm. In real life I am in love with another boy at my high school. I would do anything for him. It seems strange but I would never dream of doing the things I do in my fantasies with him." (Friday 1981, 412-414)

In an investigation of German boys 12 to 18 years of age, only 13% admitted to have ever masturbated with homosexual fantasies and only 3% said that they mostly did so. Heterosexual fantasies, on the other hand, occupied the minds of 95%, and with 73% this was mostly the case. 81% had used pictures or written stories to stimulate their fantasy: 19% used them most of the time. 38% had masturbated looking at their own naked bodies in a mirror and 1% did this regularly (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 80).

In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation are the results of an unpublished survey made by a psychologist (1980) of 74 grammar school boys in a southern German city. The boys, aged 9-17 years (median 13.9), were selected in that only those whose parents consented to their sons' participation were questioned. Only the six youngest (9-10 years) denied that they masturbated. This is the first investigation, to my knowledge, in which boys have given detailed information about the content of their masturbatory fantasies. Many boys mentioned more than one theme. Two boys (twin brothers) said they had no fantasies at all. With 46 boys their fantasies were exclusively heterosexual; with 14 exclusively homosexual; with 6 they were mixed. Fantasy content and themes mentioned were:

Heterosexual:

my girl friend, a girl (10); naked women (13); (big) tits (16); a (naked, hairy) cunt (19); fucking (11); arse-fucking (3).

Homosexual:

my friend, a boy (7); a (stiff) cock (and big balls) (9); jerking off (8); rough-housing with a boy (1); seeing a boy jerking off (3); arse-fucking (1).

In their sexual fantasies, males shake off the burdens of civilisation imposed upon them by parents and society and become once again uninhibited animals, says Nancy Friday (1981, 261). Her inquiry into men's sexual fantasies resulted in an interesting collection of them from some 3,000 sub-

jects, including a number of teenage boys. A few examples from her book: Virgil, 13, together with his best friend, assaults a girl he knows. At first she resists, but finally she wants to be fucked, which both boys do (319-320). Clark, 14, has a powerful urge to have sex with someone. He invites a 14-year-old Arab schoolmate to sleep with him. The Arab boy has a penis 8 inches long and rather wide, and he puts this in Clark's anus and fucks him endlessly through the whole night. Later the Arab boy brings Clark other boys and a 30-year-old man, also with an enormous penis: they all fuck him. Clark starts body-building with these people and so earns the respect of the girls at school. He has sex with the most beautiful of these girls (380-381). Sherwin, when he reached puberty at age eleven, first had romantic dreams about girls. When he turned fourteen his fantasies shifted to incest, rape, paedophilia and even incredibly gory sadistic themes (522). Andrew, 14, can look through holes into a swimming pool changing room and so sees "a lot of cunts and tits". His fantasy is to masturbate in underpants soiled with vaginal juices. The lady whose underpants he uses invites him to have sex with her. Or he visits a whore house (526-527). Arthur, 15, is drawn to boys his own age. He fantasises being stripped by his comrades in a locker room. When they see his huge erection they are stunned. He is made to suck one of them off, and then he fucks another. He would like to realise this fantasy (408-409). Joe, 15, sometimes masturbates four times a day. His fantasy is to meet a 30-year-old man in the showers. Looking at each other, they both get erections. Finally they suck each other and fuck each other and have intercrural sex. "I'd love to fulfill that fantasy." (414-416) Vernon, 15, "unfortunately a virgin", fantasises about skinny dipping in a pool with a girl and then screwing her (511). Bobby, just turned 15, fantasises about a harem of 50 chicks who "rip my clothes off and make me fuck each of them. All those wet cunts..." and about fucking a girl in the middle of Broadway with everyone watching (520-521). Milt, 15, masturbates an average of two or three times a day, and on some days four or five times, to relieve his pent-up desire. His fantasies "range far and wide, from animals to girls to other guys" (529-530). Jonas, 16, fantasises about a young male who goes down on him after he has gone down on the young male. "I would like this to happen, but not now." (404) Tommy, 16 and very horny, has had sex with both sexes, but prefers well-hung men. His fantasy is about being raped by a good-looking guy who, after sucking him, gets three other friends to tie him down. Tommy is made to suck one man, while another "would shove my hard cock up his ass and go up and down." One man, who has been sucking another, would at the end spit it out all over Tommy (404-405). Red was 12 when he was made to tick the penises of some older boys in the woods. Now, at 20, he fantasises about that a lot. He has had sex with women and men. When he was fifteen he fantasised feeling up males and females, stripping them and posing them in sexual

positions with others. His latest fantasy is about being sucked and raped by a girl (406-408).

It was just to these masturbatory fantasies that the voluminous treatise *Masturbation from Infancy to Senescence*, edited by Marcus and Francis, attributes so much importance. Among the 13- to 15-year-old boys in Sorensen's investigation, 4% said they never had such fantasies, 11% said they had them rarely, 23% sometimes and 55% mostly (Sorensen 1973, 442). But Hanry may well be right when he says fantasies are always present, although sometimes unconscious, unacceptable because of their content (Hanry 1977, 105). Amongst those who masturbate regularly, only 2% are unaware of accompanying conscious fantasising; among those who masturbate only from time to time the figure rises to 6% (De Boer 1978, II-76).

During the 1967 panel on masturbation of the American Psychoanalytic Association, the point was made that the conscious or unconscious fantasies accompanying masturbation during childhood contributed to the development of personality and object relations (Kolansky & Moore 1975, 450-451). The constructive potential of masturbation in the sexual development of a boy is much greater than in that of a girl (De Regt 1982, 47).

It is only very gradually, after puberty, that a well-defined image emerges in masturbatory fantasy of the desired sex partner. For a majority of boys this image is of naked girls; a minority will conjure images of naked boys. At the outset, thoughts about a girl the subject knows well, loves and romantically idealises, will be avoided. The loved one is put on a pedestal, untouchable, even unreachable, by the desires of the flesh. With healthy development, this inhibition gradually disappears.

But we should bear in mind what Beets says about the masturbating boy: "It would be well for us to know what he doesn't dare, or doesn't want, to think about!" (Beets 1969, 145). Feelings of shame and guilt concerning the content of masturbation fantasies, being afraid of sexual excitement and attempts to dispell sexual images from the mind characterise the young victims of a sex-negative culture (De Boer 1978, 88).

Where masturbation anxiety becomes so distressing as to block sexual self-relief, escape may be attempted by dangerous games, reckless driving, risks of all kinds. Or the boy may become accident-prone, apathetic or show a tendency to procrastinate. "Masturbation has an essential function during adolescence without which crucial tasks could not be performed." (Moore 1975, 260, 275). "Masturbation and its attendant conflicts may therefore be viewed as necessary, unavoidable, and even desirable since they serve as a spur to the development of the individual in his relation to his body, himself and his objects." (Bernstein 1975, 73)

No one disputes the fact that exercise and use are essential if every organ of the body is to remain healthy: organs weaken and wither if they aren't made

to function. So it is curious, to say the least, that so few people admit that this applies to the sexual organs as well (Kruithof & Van Ussel 1963, 81). But in our culture everything relating to sex is put into a very special category and treated as if all ordinary rules are no longer valid. Only by disregarding this rather fundamental tendency of nature can one pretend that it harms a boy for him to obtain orgasm on his own and ejaculate his seed. Nature teaches otherwise, that his body needs this exercise. Telling a boy sickening myths, charging him with guilt over his "sinning"—that is "corruption of youth"!

And this corruption has not been completely left behind, not everywhere. A recent survey among Swiss boarding school boys (average age 16.9) showed that 16% of them felt guilty about their masturbation, 11% thought of it as a burden and 3% considered it a sin (Biener 1973, 64).

Masturbation allows the boy to get acquainted with the reaction of his genitals to *stimulation*, so he can devise ways to be their master (rather than the other way around!). Later, in having intercourse with a partner, he will profit from having done this. His masturbatory experience will help him shape his ensuing sexual relationships so they are more pleasing to both partners (Everaerd 1980, 260, 262; Hanry 1977, 96).

Some boys are very inventive in devising different ways of stimulating their penises, but simple rubbing with the hand is by far the most common practice. According to an investigation of 12- to 18-year-old German boys, no less than 86% preferred to do it this way; 44% had done it by moving their penises against the mattress (only 9% preferred this method) and 25% had obtained orgasm by pressing their thighs together (a preference of only 3%) (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 79). Very similar percentages were found by Hite (1981, 579, 867). Many try to suck themselves off (auto-fellatio) but, according to Haeberle (1978, 165) only about one out of a hundred succeeds with such acrobatics.

Most important are the methods one can use to prolong the act, and descriptions and recommendations of how to do this should be part of all general sex education. As climax is approached, just before the point of no return beyond which ejaculation cannot be withheld, physical stimulation is interrupted until the feeling subsides a bit, when the movements can be resumed. By so doing, sexual pleasure can be enormously extended and the final climax made more powerful (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 52). In Hite's sample, 60% of the males followed this practice. A boy skilled in this practice will have greater staying power during intercourse and thus be better able to satisfy his partner. There are regions in Italy where adolescents are famed for their mastery of this art. Ellis (1913, VI-617-620) has written of the Oneida community in the United States where young boys were systematically trained by older, post-menopausal women until they were able to postpone orgasm during sexual union for hours. In this case, the purpose was

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

to satisfy the male by exhausting him, and thus avoid ejaculation altogether as a means of birth control. However, the practice of the Oneida shows to what extent training in this art can teach a boy to prolong the act, to the enormous profit of both partners. In Chapter Five we will return to this subject.

The same goal is still occasionally achieved: in Gauthier's research one 30-year-old and one 55-year-old subject boasted of their capacity to extend physical union enormously by postponing ejaculation. The 55-year-old declared, "I can have fifty climaxes without emission of seed. My feelings are like those of a woman. My pleasure is just as strong as if I had ejaculated; my penis even softens afterwards. But I can start again after two minutes if I want to. And if I don't want to, this means I am satisfied and I can go to sleep." The younger man would continue until he and his partner began to feel pain: "It is a pain I love, directly connected with the lack of need for ejaculation." (Gautier 1976, 214, 309).

This might well be the more healthy way of prolonging pleasure, but the one some boys nowadays prefer is using marijuana (Sorensen 1973, 138), like one of Gauthier's subjects. Leo (see case No. 2) said he liked smoking it before having intercourse; it increased his sense of duration and his orgasm felt as though it went on for minutes rather than seconds and as if he were emitting an endless stream of seed.

Table 3. Masturbation Frequency of 638 German Boys (Ziegler)

Never	3.0%
Once a week	9.1%
2-3 times a week	58.7%
4-6 times a week	18.2%
Daily	7.7%
Several times a day	2.3%

Another fear associated with masturbation which should be put to rest in all sexual instruction is that doing it too *frequently* might weaken one's body. First and foremost, an instructor should stress the extreme variability of sexual behaviour and the great differences in strength of sexual appetite and needs that are to be found among completely normal boys. Every boy should simply let his own natural impulses guide him. As long as his penis responds to stimulation by becoming erect there can be no question of masturbation to excess (Haeberle 1978, 166, 188). "So it is impossible to say even that the individual who masturbates five or six times daily indulges to excess. Rather, it is likely that physical limitations, beyond the individual's control, prevent him reaching a frequency that would constitute excess." (Dort 1968, 33)

MASTURBATION

Kinsey felt that young males particularly, obeying their own impulses, could have more than daily orgasms (Kinsey 1948, 205). In Giese and Schmidt's investigation of German university students, only 7% had masturbated every day by the age of twelve and 11% by the age of 15 (1968, 76). Ziegler reports the masturbation frequency of 638 German boarding school boys 12 to 18 years of age as shown in Table 3.

Table 4. Masturbation Frequency of 15- and 16-Year-Old Boys (Haas, 1979)

Never	0%
Less than once a month	13%
Once a month	7%
Once a week	29%
2-3 times a week	27%
Daily	17%
More than once daily	7%

Kruithof and Van Ussel found that an important percentage of Flemish students masturbated daily (1963, 78). Hite said the same about her male sample (1981, 865-866). Haas (1979, 89) gave the frequencies shown in Table Four for his group of 15-16-year-old boys. When boys themselves in a Dutch town took on the role of researcher and investigated members of a working-class Catholic youth organization, the frequencies given were much higher: for the whole group the average was 8 times per week (Donkers et al 1980, 67). These figures would seem a better estimate of reality, given the results of the unpublished investigation of the 74 German grammar school boys already referred to: among 31 fourteen- to sixteen-year-olds, 2 claimed they did it "rarely", 5 "from time to time", while the remainder did it 8 to 56 times a week on average. Among the 28 younger boys (age 9-14), the six youngest claimed they never did it, three others said they did it "rarely", nine "from time to time", while the remainder did it from 9 to 23 times a week on average. Of the oldest 15 boys (age 16-17), one did it "rarely", the others did it 12 to 35 times a week on average. Calculating from the total, the over-all average is 9.78 times a week. In the NISSO investigation (De Boer 1978, F-1-4), a relationship was found between educational level and incidence and frequency of masturbation (Table 5).

There are many examples of very high frequencies maintained over long periods without causing any health problems. Kruithof and Van Ussel came across several university students who masturbated to climax several times a day, the last ones "dry climaxes" without any ejaculation (1963, 78). Abra-

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

Table 5. *Masturbation and Educational level (De Boer, 1978)*

Educational Level	Incidence	Frequency of more than once a week
Lower level (technical school)	90%	58%
Middle level (normal school)	94%	75%
Higher level (Univ. prep.)	98%	83%

ham mentions more than one case in which orgasm was induced about ten times a day over a period of twenty years (1969, 61). At puberty especially, hormonal changes result in a great increase in sexual responsiveness, and many boys at that age are easily "turned on". (Haeberle 1978, 165).

In the NISSO research, only 52.3% of the 15- to 17-year-old boys thought that masturbating every day was not harmful; among the 18- to 21-year-olds this percentage had increased to 63.1%—but even in this group, one out of three youths was clearly in need of better information (173, 23).

All authors agree that the *incidence* of masturbation is extremely high. We have already seen that it is a common phenomenon in babies (Hoekstra 1976, 314); there is hardly a baby boy who doesn't manipulate his genitals with evident pleasure (Freud 1920, 61). "Some kindergartens report that most of their children masturbate or show masturbatory activity at the preschool level. (...) Only in rare cases do children who have started masturbating stop. Many children try to stop for moral reasons, but very few succeed." (Langfeldt 1981, 105, 107; Hanry 1977, 21)

Although German working class youth express, in general, an aversion to masturbation, 40% of the 13-year-old boys said they had experienced it, 61% of the 14-year-olds and 82% of the 15-year-olds (Schickedanz 1979, 143). An enquiry among French students and schoolboys arrived at 92% admitting experience, 5% denying it and 3% refusing to answer (Hanry 1977, 162). Hertoft found a 93.4% figure among Danish recruits (1968, II-31). Among 636 12- to 18-year-old German boarding school boys, only 19 of them (3%) denied that they masturbated: 11 of the 12-year-olds, 5 of the 13-year-olds, 2 of the 14-year-olds and 1 of the 16-year-olds (Ziegler, *Homosexualität*, 60). An Austrian psychologist put the question differently to the boys he studied. Instead of asking, "Do you ever masturbate?" he asked, "At what age did you start to masturbate?"—and this resulted in 100% of the boys admitting experience with the practice (personal communication). Kinsey's figure (1948, 500), that among 18-year-olds 91.8% had masturbated, provoked one joker to comment: only 8.2% of American boys were liars. Most likely, however, he was wrong, for in this research "masturbation" or "onanism"

MASTURBATION

wasn't defined and a certain percentage of boys may have assumed it meant only manual rubbing of the penis. There are those who unconsciously touch themselves when half-asleep, or thrust their penises against their mattresses or pyjamas, thus obtaining an emission, and don't call this masturbation (Osborne 1977, II-4; De Boer 1978, II-71). In any case, the findings of the Yankowski investigation (1965, 106) seem to reach a closer approximation of the truth: among the male subjects, 99.3% had masturbated before reaching the age of 17. Barrington found one non-masturbator among 2,500 male subjects (1981, 112). Abraham states simply, "100% of men and women practice masturbation, even if a large number in good faith deny it vehemently." (1969, 125)

BEGINNING

Of Swiss schoolboys, 41% claimed to have discovered the practice by themselves, 25% were instructed by comrades, 3% had read about it or seen pictures, 4% were taught by adult men, 14% couldn't remember how they had begun and 13% denied ever doing it (Biener 1973, 64). In Hite's sample, 60% discovered it themselves, 34% were instructed by friends, 6% by movies or books (1981, 867).

Some examples of discovery:

87 "It wasn't until I was eleven and reading some of my comic books with some erotic pictures and laying on some inflated swimming inner tubes on the floor of the basement, that I had my first climax. For this I could not have been less prepared. I have fantasized what would have happened if I had gone up and asked my mother about what had happened to me. However, I overcame my fears and began a regular practice of masturbation" (Friday 1981, 321).

15-year-old boy: "I woke up once and found I had a hard-on. I wasn't sure what it meant, but I rubbed it and I came."

15-year-old boy: "I discovered it on my own. I just played with it one day and it felt good so I just kept on doing it."

15-year-old boy: "I had an erection one night and I just started to stroke it and it felt good." (Hass 1979, 90)

Most beautiful is the description of the Japanese novelist Yukio Mishima (1958, 29, 33-34): "For over a year now I had been suffering the anguish of a child provided with a curious toy. I was twelve years old. This toy increased in volume at every opportunity and hinted that, rightly used, it would be quite a delightful thing. But directions for its use were nowhere written, and so, when the toy took the initiative in wanting to play with me, my bewilderment was inevitable. (...) The nature of its tastes had become bound up, not only with my childhood memories, but, one after another, with such things

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

as the naked bodies of young men seen on a summer's seashore, the swimming teams seen at Meiji Pool, the swarthy young man a cousin of mine married, and the valiant heroes of many an adventure story. (...) The toy likewise raised its head towards death and pools of blood and muscular flesh." One day, perusing a book with reproductions of art, he accidentally sees one of Guido Reni's paintings of the martyrdom of St. Sebastian: "That day, the instant I looked upon the picture, my entire being trembled with some pagan joy. My blood soared up: my loins swelled as though in wrath. The monstrous part of me that was on the point of bursting awaited my use of it with unprecedented ardour, upbraiding me for my ignorance, panting indignantly. My hands, completely unconsciously, began a motion they had never been taught. I felt a secret, radiant something rise swift-footed to the attack from inside me. Suddenly it burst forth, bringing with it a blinding intoxication... Some time passed, and then, with miserable feelings, I looked around the desk I was facing. (...) There were cloudy-white splashes about—on the gold-imprinted title of a textbook, on a shoulder of the ink bottle, on one corner of the dictionary. Some objects were dripping lazily, leadenly, and others gleamed dully, like the eyes of a dead fish. (...) This was my first ejaculation. It was also the beginning, clumsy and completely unpremeditated, of my 'bad habit'."

Other boys needed instruction from books or, more frequently, from friends:

15-year-old boy: "I think I was thirteen, in my parents' bedroom, and was looking through their book *The Joy of Sex*, and I read it and tried it to see what it felt like. It felt very good and I've been doing it ever since."

18-year-old boy: "My older friends told me about it so I tried it. After I came I was scared because I didn't know what the sperm was."

15-year-old boy: "All my friends had always talked about it jokingly because everybody thought you were a fag if you really did it. I had never come before, so one night I tried just like my friends described (up and down) and it worked."

15-year-old boy: "Friends had been telling me about this neat feeling and I had also been checking things out on my own. Eventually a friend and I tried masturbating together and we both found out what it was like."

15-year-old boy: "I discovered it from my cousin. I guess we got crazy and started playing strip poker, and then we went streaking around the room. He told me to spit in my hand and clamp it around my penis and pump. He said it is like the actual thing, making love."

16-year-old boy: "It was during camp and I happened to come into my cabin and saw a guy doing it. So I was curious and tried it later that day."

16-year-old boy: "I discovered it from my cousin. We had to sleep in the same bed. He was masturbating and I asked him what he was doing and he showed me."

16-year-old boy: "My friend showed me. We were sitting there one day and he showed me by doing it himself."

16-year-old boy: "From a girl I was with. When she did it to me I thought I

MASTURBATION

would do it to myself."

15-year-old boy: "I discovered it from a girl who had given me a hand job."

(Hass 1979, 90, 92-95)

- 88 "I had my first orgasm when I was twelve. I was playing with my cock and it kept feeling better and better until that indescribable explosion of passion which I shall never forget, though I'm well past fifty (...) Since we lived on a farm I discovered a unique way of getting my sexual needs satisfied. I began to experiment with cows. First I tried it on the calves about a year old but they were a bit too tight and would not stand still. So I took to fucking older cows, some of which seemed to enjoy it as much as I did. I figured this is what it must be like to fuck a real girl and would fantasise I was doing just that." (Friday 1981, 259)

A large majority of boys obtain their first ejaculation—proof of puberty—by playing with their penises. The average age at which this happened, for 233 American boys, was 12.9 years (Dort 1968, 36).

- 89 A New Zealand boy said (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 134-135): "I was fooling around with my dork. I suppose you'd call it masturbating. Well, I came all over the place. That was the first time. All this sticky stuff everywhere. I pulled all the blankets right down and lay there very relaxed. I looked down at this stuff all over my pyjama top and belly. I thought, 'That's sperm. That's the stuff. It's got hundreds of eggs in it and any one can make a baby.' It seemed really incredible, very, very powerful stuff. I thought, 'All I have to do is find a girl and put some in her and she'll have a baby.' Not that I wanted a baby. Just the thought that I could do it made me feel very important, very powerful. I could do that, make an illegitimate baby, and no one could stop me because even if they did find out it would be too late."

- 90 At thirteen years of age: "I was lying in bed one day and playing with my prick because it felt so nice (...) I kept playing with it and rubbing the head and all of a sudden I got this wild funny thrill feeling all up and down my spine and my legs twitched and some egg-white-looking stuff shot out of the end of my cock all over my belly and hand! Wow!!! It felt better than anything I had ever felt before. I tried it again and again and finally did it four or five times before I had had enough. These four times were in a total time span of about ten to fifteen minutes at the outside." (Friday 1981, 34)

No wonder boys, if their minds aren't poisoned with shame and shyness, are proud of this newly-acquired capacity and like to demonstrate it.

91 No one has better described such a scene than Günter Grass in his novel *Katze und Maus*, where Mahlke, the most popular boy in school, finds himself on a half-sunken ship in the Baltic, surrounded by his comrades and the girl Tulla. Tulla, who has admiringly watched other boys masturbate to ejaculation, encourages Mahlke to "do it" too. So he pushes down his swimming trunks to his knees. "A few short movements with his right hand and his cock stood up, so much increased in size that the glans emerged from the shadow of the ship's binnacle into the sunlight. (...) Tulla's hands, as always coarse with cuts and calluses, worked in vain upon this thing which, under her probing fingertips, became thicker, the veins swelling, the glans enlarged. (...) Schilling, the one among us with the longest prick, had to bring his out, make it stand up and hold it next to Mahlke's. Mahlke's was, first of all, one size thicker, second, a match-box longer and, third, looked much more adult, dangerous, venerable. So now that he had shown it to us again, he immediately demonstrated something else —pulling it off, as we used to say, twice in succession. (...) Mahlke had hardly spurted the first charge over the rail when he started immediately anew. Winter clocked the time on his water-proof wristwatch: Mahlke needed about as many seconds as it took the torpedo-boat putting to sea to come from the end of the mole to the navigation buoy: at the moment the boat passed the buoy he discharged just as much sperm as he had the first time. And we all laughed like madmen when the gulls swooped down upon this stuff, lurching in the smooth, barely-rippling sea, and cried for more." (Grass 1961, 27-28)

In boarding school dormitories boys may pursue sex as though it were a sport appropriate to their age: pump themselves off together, competing to see who can ejaculate first, who shoots his semen the farthest, who can first put out a candle with his sperm, etc. Of the Danish boys in Hertoft's research, 42% had participated in group masturbation, the majority of them during the years between 13 and 15 (Hertoft 1968, I-133).

"If the boy gives up masturbation prematurely, he automatically deprives himself of a psychophysical process that seems essential to the completion of a developmental sequence that begins with sexualised self-love and proceeds through fantasied homosexual and heterosexual love, culminating in the achievement of masculine identity and choice of a heterosexual love object separate from the primary one." (Moore 1975, 253) We should amend this statement by pointing out that the ultimate choice for some will be a homosexual love object.

In any case, the campaign against masturbation—so often waged with naked sadism upon helpless children—is a fight against the fullness of human potential and the order of creation. He who carries on this battle with the idea that it is pedagogically beneficial inflicts upon the child permanent emotional problems (Levin 1975, 309); he who does so motivated by religion is a megalomaniac bent on correcting the work of the Creator in whom he claims

he believes.

Both fight against pleasure and joy. But the man who has learned to view pleasure positively should value masturbation as one important source of happiness.

Sex With Girls

Masturbation is the best training for intercourse with a partner, as accompanying fantasies have already anticipated it.

Some boys are convinced that they should stop this habit as soon as they start having intercourse.

92 At the age of 14, Helmut fell in love with a 28-year-old female teacher. Occasionally at school he had been able to look up under her skirt, and this he would think about as he later masturbated at home. She was aware that she excited him, and soon she gave him a chance to visit her in her home while she was in bed. Helmut said, "I kissed her breasts until she became terribly excited, and then I quickly took off all my clothes. Then we embraced, and she gripped my penis and inserted it into herself, and I nearly fainted, the feeling was so strong. (...) She was the first woman who had been so sweet to me; it was absolutely delicious, and since then I've never again done it to myself." (Stieber 1971, 67)

On the other hand there are boys who deliberately masturbate to emission before going on a date with a girl in order not to be tyrannised by unwanted erections (Osborne 1977, II-6). Regular intercourse with girls, it seems, does reduce masturbatory activities. In the NISSO research it was found that the percentage of masturbating boys diminished from 98 to 65 for those who had regular intercourse, but even among these 14% still relieved themselves sexually more than three times a week (De Boer 1978, 2A-F-1-3).

BEGINNING

In former times, European boys began to have intercourse at a much earlier age. In ancient Athens they were supposed to do this at fourteen (Borneman 1978, 977). Solon, the legislator, built brothels to meet their needs, and, in lines that subsequently became famous, the poet Philemon sang his praises:

"Of all mortals, you were the first to do this really useful social deed. You saw boys going about with their strongly swelling cocks: to protect the peace of the matrimonial bed from such an excess of male force, you decreed that brothels be built. Now everyone can find a girl ready and willing to come to you quite naked and offer herself. Now when you're troubled by the male

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

impulse you just pay with a little coin, and without affectation or pretense that there is this or that in you she doesn't like, she will do just what you want, and as you want it done." (quoted by Borneman 1978, 1139; Bloch 1912, 216)

In classical Rome boys could marry at 14, and before they were married they patronised prostitutes. One of their favourite pastimes was to go to the slave market where naked girls were displayed for sale and inspect their breasts and genitals, feeling them with their fingers. Moral authorities like Cato, Seneca and Cicero recommended that boys visit prostitutes. Cato praised a young lad for going to a brothel for relief when he met the boy emerging onto the street (Horace, *Satires* I, 2: 34-35). And Cicero wrote, "If someone professes that intercourse with prostitutes should be forbidden to boys, he may reveal strong moral principles, but he is not in harmony with the moral freedom of our times, nor with that of our ancestors. For was there ever a time when these things didn't happen, when they were forbidden? When were there objections? When were people not permitted to do this?" (Borneman 1978, 721, 1142). The Islamic culture, too, sees no objection to boys having intercourse before puberty (Bousquet 1953, 131).

The European of the middle ages seems to have shared this view: we have already given examples. The city of Nuremburg announced officially that boys of 12 and older were free to visit brothels (Stockert 1956, 54). During the course of the 19th and the first half of the 20th Centuries, adult repression certainly managed to raise the average age for first intercourse. Contemporary research, however, uniformly confirms that a counter-movement set in during the last few decades and that boys now tend to have their first intercourse earlier than did the preceding generations (Zetterberg 1969, 29). They become physically mature at an earlier age, and thus have a stronger sexual appetite at a younger age. In addition they are more self-confident, freer, less inclined to bother about adult admonitions or to postpone the satisfaction of a desire that, all things being equal, is quite natural and healthy. These factors have made intercourse, according to Borneman (1978, 1423) a perfectly normal activity for boys of 13 or 14.

We should never lose sight of the contradictory demands our culture makes of its boys, telling them on the one hand that, if they want to be men, they must pursue girls, but on the other hand that it is immoral to seduce them (Bloch & Niederhoffer 1963, 144). Even sixty years ago Dr. Stekel (1922, 60-61) could write that it was often the most intelligent and energetic boys who first ventured into intercourse. With the manifold methods of preventing pregnancy now available, today's youth finds the official interdictions even more incomprehensible.

93 When asked, "What things would you like to do but which aren't allowed?" 14-year-old Caleb immediately replied, "I'm not free to sleep with

SEX WITH GIRLS

a girl—and won't be even when I'm fifteen." (Schärer 1979, 251)

In his Dutch research, Sanders (1977, 71) came up with some figures for age at first intercourse, and these are compared in Table 6 with those of Sigusch & Schmidt in their book on the German working class (quoted by Schickendanz 1979, 142), Giese & Schmidt in their book on German university students (1968, 140) and those from Biener's study of 531 Swiss boarding school pupils (1973, 63). The percentages are cumulative (i.e. showing what percentage had experience with intercourse at the indicated age).

Table 6. Boys' Experience With Intercourse vs. Age

Sanders	Sigusch & Schmidt	Giese & Schmidt	Biener	Age
1%	4%		2%	13
2%	9%	2%	5%	14
7%	15%	4%	10%	15
14%	25%	7%	18%	16
31%	44%	12%		17

In the United States the number of early starters seems much higher. "On April 25, 1979, the House Select Committee on Population reported that one out of every five American children aged thirteen or fourteen had had sexual intercourse." (Janus 1981, 19) "A 1978 survey of 1,000 teenagers of various ethnic and income groups in New York City determined that 76% of the boys and 64% of the girls had engaged in coitus at least once, most of them by the time they were sixteen." (Linedecker 1981, 118) In the sample of the Hite report (1981, 856), 55.6% of the males had by the age of fifteen experienced vaginal intercourse, and 54% had had anal intercourse with girls; at fourteen, 52% had licked a girl; at thirteen, 52% had been sucked by a girl. There is much divergence between the various ethnic groups, and also with delinquents. For experience with intercourse among the 15-year-olds, Blake (1970, 21) reports: white males 21%, non-white males 56%, incarcerated white males 46%, incarcerated non-white males 81%.

Giese & Schmidt questioned German university students about the main incentive for their first intercourse. It was to express love within a loving relationship for 41%, sexual impulse for 26%, curiosity for 16%, the influence of parties, alcohol, etc, for 10%, being seduced for 4% and prestige for 3% (1968, 157). We can conclude from this that only 14% went along with it more

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

or less passively while the great majority was decidedly active, moved by love, sexual hunger, curiosity or image building.

- 94 Twelve-year-old Conny said philosophically, "When the opportunity comes, it will happen." His opportunity presented itself when he was thirteen (Personal communication).

The Kinsey Report (1948, 508) made it clear that boys who have attained a higher educational level accept masturbation more readily than do working class youths. Boys who work and earn money are socially more independent and less infantile than those who still go to school. Working class youth is more likely to regard masturbation as an activity unfit for men and to look upon intercourse with girls as the only suitable sexual activity. In factories the adult workers, even "solid citizen" family fathers, often encourage and help their teenage colleagues and apprentices to have sex with females. Such men evidently feel uneasy talking about their sexual adventures and thoughts in the presence of inexperienced boys. Thus they like to see them initiated, with the benevolent conviction that this will help them to become "real men". Masturbation is held in contempt as child's play; they see no way to avoid it other than to look for a girl. When we compare the figures of Sigusch & Schmidt (working class youth) with those of Giese & Schmidt (university students) we see the strong influence of these convictions.

- 95 One of my own research subjects, a strikingly handsome and youthful looking 18-year-old from Amsterdam, told me, "I knew absolutely nothing about sex when, at fifteen, I became apprentice cook in a restaurant. One night I accidentally dropped a pile of plates, and the chef observed, 'You must have jerked off too many times yesterday to make your hands tremble like that!' Surprised, I asked, 'What do you mean, jerk off?' and he replied, 'To rub your cock until you get that nice feeling.' In bed that night I put it to the test. It was a marvellous discovery. I was so thrilled about it that I immediately woke up my brother, two years younger than I, to teach it to him, too. For the next few months we did it every night for all we were worth. Then suddenly one day the thought occurred to me that masturbating was only a substitute, so I decided, 'This will be the last time; from now on you'll have to do it with girls.' I went downtown and told several girls, without mincing words, what I wanted. One was willing, so I had my first fuck standing up in a dark doorway. It was delightful, and afterwards I felt very proud of myself. A few weeks later I went to work as a waiter in an American military officer's mess in Heidelberg. That was just after the war; almost no German boys or young men were left anymore, so the girls were very hungry for sex. I was prodigiously successful: not a single night passed without one of them sharing my bed."

SEX WITH GIRLS

His only concern was lust and pleasure. For others, love is the incentive, and their number increases as the age becomes older. Among Danish boys who had had their first intercourse at sixteen or younger, 43% said they had been inspired by love, 56.2% by curiosity. Among those who had begun at 17 or older, the numbers were 70.5% and 29.5% (Hertoft 1968, II-38).

With younger adolescents, their love may be very sincere but it is seldom lasting, and this may give rise to deep disappointments on both sides. Nevertheless, the appetite is there, lasting and real, and at times it swells to fever pitch.

- 96 Guyotat (1967, 76-77) in one of his novels shows his hero Serge, young son of a colonial governor general, in such a state: "Through the whole night, naked, writhing in sweat, he struggles with the pillow between his thighs, under his chest, between his teeth. At first cock's crow he falls asleep, contorted, at the foot of his bed, his male member losing its turgidity, hiding in the shadow of his belly. It grows cold; he rolls onto his back, legs spread out. The air dries the seed on his thighs and in his open fists." Serge awakes before sunrise, goes, naked, to the window, leans out of it and whistles. The sentry sees the naked boy's body—"how smooth and shining it is! The stones are reflected in it. 'When will you bring me to your whores, Nano?'—'I told them about you. I spoke to them about the colour of your eyes, the hue of your body, the trembling of your belly. They've stuck your picture on the wall of their reception room.' (...) 'Bend down.' Serge trembles. He inclines his head toward the soldier, who raises his arm, stretches out his hand to the face of the boy, strokes his cheeks, his forehead... (...) makes it slip over his buttocks, then he draws the boy's head down to his breast and kisses him upon the lips (...) Serge half opens his lips and his tongue touches the lips of the soldier (...) The eyes of the soldier shine and tears run down his cheeks. Serge drinks them."

If only curiosity and the desire for prestige are the motives for his first intercourse, the boy easily carries it out with the brutality and self-centredness appropriate to his age.

- 97 Agnes, a girl of 16, tells her older friend Roger: "The boys would like to do it but they still don't dare. I remember, when I was fourteen, sleeping with a fourteen-year-old. He'd never yet fucked a girl. But I can tell you he had already been tormented for a long time by his desire." Roger: "I don't dispute that boys are tormented by it, but they still think football is more important." Agnes: "No, certainly not, not underneath. They're thinking about fucking all the time. I've read part of Julien's diary, the years when he was twelve, three years ago now. He was in love with me. But, as I was in love with another boy, he wrote, 'Oh, if only he wasn't there, what a wonderful time we could have. Christian and I with Agnes: we could do all kinds of things to her

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

that would be very nice.' I remember (...) sleeping with him once and he harassed me the whole night through. He wanted to caress me continuously, and so on. But in those days I was much less interested than he was; I didn't fancy it; in fact, I was really quite scared of it."

Roger: "Maybe it was more that he imagined such things were expected of him than that he really wanted to do them."

Agnes: "No, because much later we discussed it and he said, 'I've only rarely ever since had such a feeling of existing as I had that night'." (Schärer 1979, 247-248)

With disarming candour young Julien here expressed the developmental importance of sexual intercourse for boys going through puberty: the consciousness of "being there", of existing. Evidently Julien had grown up to the point where he could experience sex this way but the girl couldn't yet. At such an age boys simply push on, concentrating with single-minded purpose upon their own needs and not those of others.

When boys discuss their experiences in this area, we often hear some rather unpleasant tales.

98 Some quotations from the excellent sex education book from New Zealand, *Down Under the Plum Trees* may illustrate this. Often boys seem to have intercourse only to feel macho and important, or to dominate and humiliate the girls.

a) "We used to really put girls down by fucking with them. Once we'd fucked a girl we weren't interested in her—then there'd be someone else. The girls who hung round with us all knew that we were just out to fuck. We were tough guys so it wasn't dating, it was just us trying to fuck them, and them trying not to fuck with us and still keep hanging around with us."

b) "One night I was taking a girl home and I was with a friend. I didn't care about the girl, I just wanted to fuck her. I said to her, 'I'll go out with you if you'll let me and Willy fuck you.' She really loved me, she did, you know. She said OK and we fucked her in the toilets. It was raining so we couldn't fuck her outside (...) After I fucked her I hated her for letting me do that to her."

Often the boy is simply carried along by his comrades, without really wanting it himself.

c) "We'd sit by girls in the movies and the big thing was to get your finger up. All the guys would know who was going to sit with who. They'd say, 'You sit with Rangi, have a go. George got two fingers up.' I didn't know why we were doing it. It was a hell of a thing to do—slowly putting your hand up her dress or in her jeans, then trying to get past everything. I didn't like the feeling of a girl's cunt. It was so slimy, it made me feel sick sometimes. The girls didn't like it either. Some got really upset."

d) "When there was a lot of us and only one girl we'd try and get her to splash for us all. We wouldn't watch while the others fucked her—it was a kind of personal thing. One guy fucking one girl while the others were more

SEX WITH GIRLS

or less pretending it wasn't happening. Then another would fuck her. It wasn't a big celebration. It was just each individual wanting a fuck, and there happened to be nine or ten individuals. We would have been a lot happier if there had been nine or ten girls. It made me kind of sick coming at the end thinking of all the other guys being in her and all that sperm." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 176-177).

99 In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation are unpublished literal transcriptions of conversations a psychologist had with a number of adolescents about their sex lives (Southern Germany, 1980). Herman, 17 years old, said, "I was 16 when a school friend invited me to a birthday party. The boy, Eugen, had rich parents and lived in a beautiful house outside town. In the attic he had his own disco and everything—a bar with an incredible variety of drinks. Of course, he'd also invited girls, but I was a bit surprised that they weren't our age but slightly older, wore heavy makeup and the craziest short skirts. There was a girl for each one of us. Eugen had it all completely organised. With music and alcohol we soon were feeling great: by midnight we were all pretty drunk. Suddenly the lights went out. The girl who had sat all the time next to me and with whom I had danced, at once started to grope me in the dark. She kissed me, tickled my neck and went gradually down and down with her hands, until she started pawing me between my legs, unbuttoned my trousers and took hold of my cock, which had become real stiff. At first I fought back wildly, but this whore—I later found out that's what she was—had a fairly firm hold on me, and, as I was tipsy, she soon overcame my resistance. Before I knew it she'd undressed me completely. I don't know how she did it, and still less how she took off her own clothes, but suddenly I felt her naked body upon mine. She pulled me to her; I felt her tits; her hands ran over my back, between my legs. Then she pushed me down on the floor, and then my cock was inside her. This was the very first time I ever fucked. I don't know how long it all lasted, because afterwards I fell asleep. Then I felt something cold and wet on my face. I woke up; all the lights were burning again. I was lying naked upon the floor with all the boys standing around me. The girls had already disappeared long ago. Loud laughter greeted my awakening. I'd wanted to be swallowed up and just disappear. At six, still rather drunk, I went home. Since then I hate girls. I didn't feel very much fucking this whore. I don't know exactly what she did with me; I suppose they had put some drugs in that last drink."

DISPARITY BETWEEN BOYS AND GIRLS OF THE SAME AGE

The main cause of all these unpleasant, harmful and sometimes even dangerous imbroglios is that boys and girls, during the years of their sexual maturation, have characteristically such different attitudes about sexuality that they simply don't make suitable partners for each other (De Boer 1978, II-3).

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

In general, boys come into puberty and start to be able to ejaculate fertile sperm later than girls begin to menstruate. Nevertheless, when we compare the behaviour of both sexes, boys, on average, become sexually active earlier and indulge in a great deal more sexual activity (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 263). This behavioural difference may be due to biological factors: the sex glands of pubertal and adolescent boys continuously secrete substances which accumulate in the various vesicles and ducts and must be voided one way or another. Once a boy has consciously experienced and brought about this evacuation, repetition at regular intervals becomes an urgent need. Girls, perhaps because they don't have to endure a comparable process, seem to be able to tolerate the absence of overt sexual activity far better than can boys (Gagnon & Simon 1973, 252).

Thus with boys, a phase of sex-for-the-sake-of-sex normally precedes the phase wherein love relations become possible (Sanders 1977, 17, 95, 107; Kentler 1970, 25). Their thoughts are often involved with sexual activity of one kind or another (Sanders 1977, 67). Girls masturbate much less than boys, for in order to become erotically aroused they need some kind of personal relationship to focus upon; with boys, images of naked bodies are sufficiently exciting to put them in the right mood for masturbation (Ford & Beach 1968, 261). As boys in general are more imaginative than girls, they develop their fantasies and use them with greater ease and frequency (De Boer 1978, II-71).

According to stereotype, boys are supposed to be more aggressive than girls in the sexual arena, but it is hardly exceptional for a girl to make the first move (Borneman 1978, 340). Girls, however, often don't realise how very willing boys are to engage in virtually any kind of sexual activity (Wilson & Cox 1983, 123-124; Hannan 1979, 26; Fisch 1971, 152), and they are certainly not aware of what raging erotic storms they can cause by even a light touch to a boy's body (Van der Steen 1978, 4). During sexual intimacy, a boy is usually the more willing of the two to strip naked and, with a naked girl, he pays more attention to her genitals than to her breasts, although girls tend to enjoy breast-fondling more than touching her sexual aperture. But 75% of 15- to 16-year-old boys said they were more attracted to the latter: for 45%, touching it was "nice", 30% "very nice" (De Boer 1978, F-2-12). "Boys traditionally note overt sexual features and value these more than do girls, who often say that personality—character and a sense of humour—count more." "Boys, when talking about what attracts them, put much more emphasis on the physical features seen in isolation from each other (breasts, face, buttocks, legs). Girls tend to see the whole person, body and 'personality', together." (Janus 1981, 46, 264)

The boy is always salacious, "on the make", and wonders just how he can make this known to the desired partner: for no less than 73% of 15- to

SEX WITH GIRLS

17-year-olds, this is a serious problem (NISSO 1973, 36; Sanders 1977, 68).

For the boy, more than for the girl, sexual intercourse is an opportunity for getting to know a person better, and perhaps through it, to grow to love her or him (Van Ussel 1975, 183). Sex can cause a boy to fall in love rather than the other way around, while for girls love may lead to sex but is seldom its consequence (Frenken 1976, 126, 171; Gagnon & Simon 1973, 252; Jensen 1983, 127).

It is interesting to compare the motives for first intercourse Schofield (1965, 64) found among English young people (see Table 7).

Table 7. Motives for First Intercourse (Schofield, 1965)

	Boys	Girls
Sexual appetite	46%	16%
Curiosity	25%	13%
In love	10%	42%

Boys are more eager for sex than for girls; girls are more eager for boys than for sex (Frenken 1976, 25; de Regt 1982, 43, 46). We shouldn't, of course, be dogmatic about such a truism: we find "recent studies indicating that girls are not as disinterested in the sexual aspects of a relationship with a boy as was previously thought" (Wilson 1981, 55). But certainly here the exception proves the rule, as can be seen in lesbian and other women's anthologies which rarely touch "the direct, descriptive, explicit subject of sex, in utter contrast to gay (or even straight) men's anthologies" (Wadsworth 1982, 127). In sexual intercourse the girl strives less for the heightening and satisfaction of lust than for feelings which transcend physical sexuality (Frenken 1976, 126). As Nancy Friday (1981, 37) puts it: "By the time young girls and boys meet in adolescence, they have entirely different masturbatory/fantasy histories. A boy may enjoy the idea of strolling in the moonlight with his girl, but when the touch of her breast on his arm gives him an erection, he doesn't want to prolong the moonlight walk. He wants to satisfy that erection. But the girl wants the moment to last forever, to melt into his arms in a romantic kiss, to keep the feeling she got the last time her vagina got moist—which was when she saw Robert De Niro kiss Liza Minelli. What has this lovely feeling got to do with Johnny here, who is grossly putting his hand up her skirt? He's ruining all her lovely feelings! 'What kind of girl do you think I am, Johnny Brown?'"

"Ask the girls in a 'domestic science' training school why they sleep with their boy-friends and the answers you get will nearly never be that they like it

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

so much themselves. They do it because their boys want it, because they are afraid their boys will start going around with another girl if they refuse; they will lose their boy-friends. (...) Girls are a little frightened of fucking; they always hope that some boy they know very well will be a bit more considerate. For boys it's another story altogether. They would rather have their first fuck with a girl they will never see again, so that if something goes wrong they don't have to be afraid of maybe being laughed at." (Van der Veer 1983, 70-71). In any case, after getting acquainted with a possible partner, boys need less time than girls do to want to proceed with having sex, and boys are more likely to terminate the relationship soon after having had sex (Zetterberg 1969, 31-32).

Thus one can understand why first intercourse is more often disappointing for girls than for boys. The boy simply takes it for granted that sex is physically wonderful; he doesn't perceive that his girl-friend may feel otherwise (Camilla 1983, 7-9). This is admirably shown by Iris Murdoch in her novel *The Nice and the Good*. Fifteen-year-old Pierce is very much in love with Barbara. She scorns him, and he suffers for weeks on end. Finally she gives in, and after their intimacy they have this conversation:

- 100 "Was that really it?"
 "Yes."
 "Are you sure you did it right?"
 "My God, I'm sure!"
 "Well, I don't like it."
 "Girls never do the first time."
 "Perhaps I'm a lesbian."
 "Don't be silly, Barbie. You did like it a little?"
 "Well, just the first bit."
 "Oh, Barb, you were so wonderful. I worship you."
 (...)
 "You were so *heavy*, Pierce."
 "I felt heavy afterwards. I felt I was just a great contented stone lying on top of you."
 "Are you sure I won't have a baby?"
 "Sure."
 "Do you think I'll get to like it more, to like it as much as you do?"
 "You'll like it more. You'll never like it as much as I do, Barbie. I've been in paradise."
 "Well, I'm glad somebody's pleased."
 "Oh, Barb, darling —"
 "All right, all right. Do you think we've been wicked?"
 "No. We love each other. We do love each other, don't we, Barbie?"
 "Yes. But it could still be wrong."
 "It could. I don't feel it is, though. I feel as if everything in the world is with us."

SEX WITH GIRLS

- "I feel that too."
 "You don't regret it, you don't hate me?"
 "No. It had to happen to me and I'm glad it's happened like this."
 "I've loved you so long, Barb —"
 "I feel I couldn't have done it with anyone else. It's because I know you so well, you're like my brother."
 "Barb!"
 "Well, you know what I mean. Darling Pierce, your body looks so different to me now and so wonderful."
 (...)
 "Pierce —"
 "Yes?"
 "Do you think we'll either of us ever go to bed with anyone else?"
 "No, well, Barb, you know we're quite young and —"
 "You're thinking about other girls *already*!"
 "Barb, Barb, please don't move away, please bring your hand back again. Darling, I love you, good God, you know I love you!"
 "Perhaps we could get married after you've taken your A levels."
 "Well, Barb, we mustn't be in *too* much of a hurry—Oh, darling, *please* —"
 "When are we going to do this again? Tomorrow?"
 "We can't tomorrow. I've got to go to Geoffrey Pember-Smith's place."
 "Can't you put it off?"
 "Well, no. You see there's this chance to have the yacht —"
 "What about me? I thought you loved me!"
 "I do love you, darling Barb. But yachts are important too."
 (Murdoch 1969, 348-350)

Since lust is of such overriding importance to the boy, he will try to satisfy it in a great variety of ways; he is thus much more open to homosexual activity (Gagnon & Simon 1973, 37, 252). The urge, the need to have an orgasm, is felt much more constantly than the need to love another person (Barrington 1981, 219). In the typical boy-girl relationship, many boys want to have full sexual intimacy right from the start, while the girl is not yet ready for it; once intercourse begins the boy wants to repeat it more frequently than does the girl. Among Hass's 15- and 16-year-olds, 68% of the girls and 41% of the boys felt that romantic involvement should be a prerequisite for coitus (1979, 23). Hass found that boys and girls varied widely on the conditions they felt suitable for having intercourse (Table 8).

As for frequency, Kinsey concluded that "the average adolescent girl gets along well enough with a fifth as much sexual activity as the adolescent boy" (1948, 223). The boy's displeasure over his girl's refusal to grant sexual "favours" is the most common cause of quarrels between young lovers. De Boer investigated the attitudes boys and girls had about coitus (Table 9).

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

Table 8. *Conditions Thought Proper for Intercourse (Haas, 1979)*

	Boys	Girls
On the first or second date	23%	0.5%
After dating for about 2 weeks	11%	4.5%
After dating about 1 month	15%	8.0%
Only when in love	29%	53.0%
Only when married	0.8%	23.0%

Table 9. *Attitudes about Intercourse (De Boer, 1978; de Regt, 1982)*

	Boys	Girls
I want intercourse, my partner refuses	18%	0%
I want intercourse, I don't know what my partner wants	13%	1%
Both of us want intercourse	19%	36%
I don't want intercourse, my partner does	5%	31%
I don't want intercourse, I don't know what my partner wants	9%	10%
Neither of us wants intercourse	36%	20%

For girls it is more important to have a personal relationship than for boys. A boy wants girls in general; a girl wants a particular boy, a special boy. In girls desire may be erotic, often romantic, but it is directed toward tenderness and doesn't demand the immediate coupling of the sexual organs. "Their own sexual feelings remain rather weak and unfocused. Instead, they tend to fantasise in a general way about their future roles as brides, wives, and mothers. At other times they dream vaguely about some ideal lover or some romantic situation. In short, they are less concerned with the physical aspects of sex than with its social implications. In contrast, the sexual fantasies of boys are much more specific. They are mainly interested in the sexual activity itself. For most of them, sexual desire and satisfaction are immediate physical experiences quite unrelated to any particular social setting. Their sexuality is detached, private, and personal. Thus, for a while, the two sexes are out of step in their personal development." (Haeberle 1978, 163-164)

We might say that girls arrive sooner at procreational maturity, boys sooner at sexual maturity (Borneman 1978, 964). With females, puberty brings with it a gradual development of sexual consciousness, starting with complex romantic fantasies which are still somewhat remote from any

SEX WITH GIRLS

directly sexual sensations. The pubertal boy, on the other hand, is confronted rather suddenly with a vastly more sensitive penis, one, moreover, which varies capriciously in size and hardness, swelling and stiffening in response to nearly every erotic stimulus, often without his having any control over it whatsoever (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 31).

"This suggests a different evolution of sexuality in women. Girls are evidently in greater need than boys of external impulses in order to take sexual initiatives. Often they only become sexually active themselves after a partner has helped them discover their own capacity for being stimulated through their genitals. The reason may be that, in the male, sexuality is highly age-dependent—put more precisely, its drive is strongly increased at puberty—while for the female it is much more dependent upon loving experiences." Giese and Schmidt (1968, 266-267), from whose book the above passage is taken, quote the confirming opinion of Simon and Gagnon (1967, 251): "One might say that for females the 'discovery' of love relations precedes the 'discovery' of sexuality, while the reverse is generally true for males."

The girl thinks of lasting companionship, and the future; the boy lives for the moment, and in the present (Matzneff 1977, 55). Little wonder, then, that 13- to 15-year-old girls show so little understanding of boys of their age and prefer to socialise with partners some three years older (De Boer 1978, D-1-4). What the thirteen- to fifteen-year-old boy wants seems to them indecent and perverse. The boy complains that his girl-friend doesn't want to touch his penis, play with it, take it into her mouth (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 55). Kentler describes the dilemma of working class girls: "If they give in to the demands of the boys they feel guilty and think of themselves as perverts; if they don't comply with the wishes of the boys they risk losing them. They find themselves in this terrible situation because the boys, once they have a girl-friend, exploit them rather brutally to satisfy their own needs and are totally unable to empathise with the girl's feelings. (...) A boy in my class at an industrial school asked, 'Are there pills to turn women sexually on?' How many frustrating experiences lie behind such a question! 'I always have to run around looking for a girl that's willing. And if one does go with me she just lies there, stiff and cold, doing nothing. It's me that has to do everything.' His dream was to find just one girl who would be spontaneously active with sexual desires like his own, a girl who, for once, would be out to seduce him." (Kentler 1978, 143).

We are generalising, of course. We are speaking of tendencies. But the problem is real enough to make life difficult. One of Dr. Janus's subjects, Michael, said, "The very first time I had intercourse, I was fifteen and the girl was fifteen too, and she was a virgin (...) My mother found out shortly afterward and started asking me about it—she just wanted to make sure that I was using something. She wasn't angry or anything, but she was kind of

concerned." His mother said, "Michael and Anne, his girl friend, were having troubles, and one day Michael came to me in anger and said that adolescence and sex just didn't go together." (Janus 1981, 306)

Michael is probably right: the difficulty is rooted in the nature of adolescence; it may not exist during the pre-pubertal years. Janus quotes a thirteen-year-old girl: "The relationship that meant the most to me was one that I had last summer. We only spent about three weeks together, but I learned a lot from it. When I met him, he was very independent—not shy, just kind of slightly aloof—but he was very innocent. He hadn't ever had sex before, and he was two years older than me—I was twelve and he was fourteen. I really loved teaching him. It was beautiful. I learned an awful lot about people, about myself, and even about boys from him, and I love him for this." (1981, 292-293)

In the ensuing period—puberty and early adolescence—such harmony between sexual partners becomes very rare. In later adolescence, however, with the approach to adulthood, differences and incompatibilities lessen. It remains an open question as to how much of this is biological (gender-dependent) in origin and how much cultural. Lesbians, from the very beginning, are more interested in having an intense and long-lasting "relationship" with a partner than are homophile males (Siegfried 1979, 72; West 1977, 170). In any case, the girl in our society tends to fall in love with a boy and only gradually, out of love for him, becomes willing to permit him the sexual activity he wants, while the boy, having just passed the threshold of puberty, is wholly dominated by his desire for naked coupling and the genital satisfaction of his lust. The voluptuous experience may gradually, or even suddenly, open his heart to love. As a fifteen-year-old boy said to Hass (1979, 18), "Sometimes after sexual contact you feel like you are romantically involved."

Thus for boys more than for girls sexual activity is a means of exploring their own sexual makeup. In one study as many as 46% of homophile boys (against 20% of lesbian girls) were made aware of their sexual preference as a direct result of homosexual activities, while falling in love with someone of the same sex had the same result with 48% of homophile boys—and 80% of lesbian girls (Sanders 1977, 80).

- 101 In one French gay magazine, "Philippe," a 16-year-old Parisian grammar school boy, told how he always felt disappointed in his father ("the only thing that matters is your marks") and his teachers (who knew nothing about solving problems unless they were math problems). There was no one he could talk with about the problem that was uppermost in his mind: sex. One day he saw a man selling gay magazines on the street. The man had a nice face, so Philippe went up to him and invited him into a café for a beer. Afterwards they went to the man's home, where they undressed and had sex.

"It sounds stupid," the boy reported, "but now I think I've fallen in love with him."

In one NISSO investigation, 15- to 17-year-old boys were asked which of the following were worrisome problems for them:

"How well do you have to be acquainted with a girl before you can have sex with her?"—80.6% said yes.

"How do you make the first move without frightening her?"—73.3%

"How do you behave towards a girl once you've done it to her?"—65.0%

"When you're going to fuck her, should you undress her immediately or caress her for a little while first?"—58.3%

Comparing the concerns of 15 to -17-year-olds with those of 18- to 21-year-olds, we see an increasing preoccupation in older boys with the feelings of the girl:

"Do I ejaculate too quickly?"—mounts from 38.2% to 55.6%

"What do you do if the girl has no orgasm?"—mounts from 50.6% to 65.4%

"What do girls actually feel?"—mounts from 60.8% to 79.4%

"What do you do when a girl is afraid of fucking?" rises from 54.7% to 65.1%

More than 50% of all the boys complained that they weren't deriving enough pleasure from coitus because the girl wasn't participating actively enough. This mounted from 50.3% to 58.7% (NISSO 1973, 36).

All in all, this is hardly a picture of unmitigated joy and pleasure. Many boys are so disappointed that they refuse to have sex even when a girl is quite willing and the opportunity is there. Kirkendall (quoted by Straver 1977, 263) said that no less than 45% of the boys he studied had at some time in the past declined an invitation for intercourse.

Boys come through sex to love, girls through love to sex. Younger boys and girls, those just past puberty, are ill-suited as sexual partners for each other. Since the boy urgently needs sexual experience, he can often better get this first with partners of his own sex and wait, for heterosexual coupling, until he finds an older woman willing to help him or until his female contemporaries are more open to physical approach.

- 102 Bernard, 17 years of age and one of my own research subjects, told me quite openly about his sex life: "When I was a little kid I used to shower together with my father. We were always physically affectionate with each other, and, starting when I was eleven, our fondling became undisguisedly sexual. We made sex in many different ways. I felt very good about this. We continued with the sex for years, and only in the last few months has it begun to taper off. I'm getting too old, too much of an adult male, for the erotic tastes of my father—and for me the interest has lessened, too, because I find

myself more and more drawn to girls. I'm now looking for a younger friend for my father, to take my place. Dad has absolutely got to have this—I'll do everything I can to help him. I love him very much. Our relationship was the great central joy of my boyhood. My classmates at school began to run after girls when they were fourteen or fifteen. But boys and girls of that age don't work out sexually together: how much misery and how many tears I've seen! And I was saved all these dramas because I was sexually entirely satisfied by the relations I was having with my father. Now I'm 17, and things go better with girls because they're wiser—and we boys are wiser, too. At last we are in tune!"

Bernard's opinion, which he quite independently arrived at through his own experience, coincides with that of the Danish psychiatrist Hertoft (1968, I-133) who concluded from his research among young males that a boy shouldn't have intercourse with a girl before he is seventeen.

Sex With Other Boys THE "HOMOSEXUAL" PHASE

Human nature suggests a way out. In order to become a good sexual partner, a boy needs experience. But he has no backlog of experience to draw upon when his sexual appetite is no longer stilled by mere tenderness and skin contact but demands, as in the adult man, genital activity involving another attractive body. The original biphilia (attraction to both sexes) he was born with is still very much alive in him, and now it can bear its finest and most genuine fruit.

Let us suppose that the child at birth is sexually an unwritten page, that is to say, equally attracted by every human contact, pan-sexual. Probably this is an oversimplification and there are also certain inborn dispositions. But let us, for the purposes of simplification, forget about this for the moment. The child, then, is like a person placed between two magnets. These magnets are of the same strength, and they attract the pieces of iron he has in his hands with equal force.

Pulled in opposite directions, the person would die on the spot if he didn't have the energy to choose a direction in which to move. He believes—or it is whispered in his ear—that one of the magnets has a nicer colour. He takes a step in this direction. Now it is possible that at just this moment something disagreeable happens to him, or that acquired, vexing inhibitions deter him from going on. So he turns around and now tries to move the other way. The original direction is rejected, cut off as a permissible objective. This can make the person ill—he becomes pseudo-heterophile, pseudo-homophile, pseudo-paedophile.

A healthier scenario is possible: the person moves in the direction of the magnet which seems most beautiful to him or is presented to him as being most beautiful. The force of the other magnet gradually lessens, not because the person is deterred from responding to it but because the first is nearer him and pulls him more strongly.

Thus might we depict the choice of sexual object in male humans. Originally biphile, attracted to both sexes, he moves either toward the female or the male object until he has reached the place where he will stay, somewhere in the force field between the two magnets. In children "at first, their sexuality is rather diffuse, but it becomes more focused as they grow older." (Haeberle 1978, 441). The boy at puberty is somewhere in the middle. He is already aware of which of the two magnets (female, male) attracts him more and what, therefore, would be his first choice. But at the same time he feels the opposite pull (male, female) strongly enough to experience lust in satisfying it.

Along the road from birth to adulthood the sexual appetite grows more and more specialised. The little boy is what Freud called 'polymorphously perverse' (1920, 102). "Young children show an utterly polymorphous sexuality. Before puberty, boys respond with vigorous erections to a great variety of situations, often to situations which arouse any kind of intense excitement. These may include everything from fast rides, getting mad, and seeing big fires to reciting before a class or getting home late—in short, to any combination of fright, anger, or pain that raises tensions and excitement. With the coming of puberty and an increased sex drive, this diversity of response quickly begins to narrow down, first to general sexual situations, then to more specific situations, then to people, and finally to particular kinds of people." (Tripp 1975, 18) Specialisation continues after puberty.

This evolutionary process applies not only to the object of the sexual drive but also to ways of satisfying it. Freud described the process as a contraction of sexual sensibility into erogenous zones: first in the region of the mouth, then the anus, finally on the genitals (Borneman 1978, 1538). "Only gradually, under the influence of social conditioning, do children begin to structure their sexual behaviour in a way that is acceptable to the culture in which they grow up, in other words, they not only learn the 'proper' responses, but also suppress and forget the 'improper' ones. In fact, when they later try to increase their sexual responsiveness, they may spend a great deal of time and energy relearning the very responses they were once taught to suppress." (Haeberle 1978, 146-147).

In comparison with the adult, the sexual imagination of the child is thus much more varied and complicated (Borneman 1978, 2183). At puberty, as we have already seen, the boy is half way along in his sexual simplification, specialisation. Even if, like the majority of boys, he is on the main road to adult heterophilia, he is still quite capable of enjoying sexual intimacy with a

male friend. This capacity is absolutely "normal" (Hanry 1977, 117).

Now, for most boys, access to male friends is much easier than finding a willing girl. Girls are mysterious, different and less enthusiastic about sex. Psychiatrists Sengers and Bieber supposed that homosexuality in adolescents results not so much from homophile attraction as fear of heterosexuality (Sengers 1969, 327). A boy's strong sexual appetite on the one hand, and the lack of specialisation of his sexual instinct on the other, push him toward homosexual activity (West 1977, 247). This tendency is most pronounced in very "macho" boys, those with the most powerful sex drive. In obvious contradiction to popular opinion, it will thus be the most virile boys, those who will later be most active with heterosexual intercourse, who, during adolescence, partake in the greatest amount of homosexual activity. Beech was the first to observe this (Tripp 1975, 31). Males with a low sex drive are most averse to sex with comrades. Giese & Schmidt likewise pointed to the pronounced correlation between a strong sex drive and homosexual activity. They discovered that those boys who had homosexual experiences between the ages of twelve and eighteen were also those who engaged in a high level of masturbation activity. "A strong sexual appetite (or a low tendency to inhibit sexual impulses) is evidently an important factor in homosexuality of youth." (1968, 174-175)

While society pushes a boy toward heterosexuality, it tells him at the same time he mustn't touch girls. "Activities associated with future heterosexuality are more stringently taboo than those associated with homosexuality; this occurs more by default than intention. For whatever reason, adults rarely spontaneously voice explicit prohibitions against sex play among same-sex peers: typically, they do so only when they become aware of homoerotic play." (...) "It is inevitable that homoerotic activity would be a normal adolescent experience in this culture. Limited in the ambisexual explorations of childhood, the opportunities for learning heterosexual self-confidence have been partially narrowed. Burdened with guilt that weighs most heavily upon self-exploration and heterosexual experimentation, early adolescents frequently feel most free to express their newly intense sexual feelings with those around whom they feel most comfortable—their same-sex peers. Such sexuality is certainly not entirely guilt-free, especially the masturbating aspects; it is simply that for many adolescents this is the sexual arena that is least anxiety-producing and least hedged about with taboos." (Gadpaille 1981, 100, 102)

It is the same in all cultures where boys are not allowed sex with girls, but non-Western societies are often more honest and open in their handling of the situation. Some instances are given by Bullough (1976, 28-30, 35, 43): "Similar practices for young boys were tolerated among the Lau in the Fiji Islands. The young Lau boys could not play in mixed groups or in adult ones. (...) The

only emotional outlets for boys of this age is in masturbation or homosexual relations with other *pilos* (prepuberty boys). In many societies homosexuality was acceptable only in certain age groups and not in others. Among the Ngonde, in the 1950s, for example, where boys were confined to boys' villages, homosexual activities were tolerated from the age of 10 to the time the boy was married. When a boy slept with his friend, sexual activity was permissible, provided it was voluntary; the only crime was to force sex upon another boy." (...) "Among the Gond of Central India, sex was not a sin provided relations were with the right people at the right time, in the right place, and in the right way. In the segregated communal dwelling (ghotul) where the young people lived there was freedom of sex, and in the boys' ghotul they played with each other's genitals, rode each other in imitation of the normal sex act, and were often taught to massage the legs of their elders." (...) "One observer believed that homosexuality might have been tolerated among the Makassar, because there were prohibitions against contacts between boys and girls, and the only acceptable outlet for young boys was in homosexuality, but girls were denied this sexual expression." (Bullough 1976, 28-30, 35) "There are known ethnic groups, such as the Batak people of Lake Toba in Sumatra, among whom homosexuality and heterosexuality both are universal customers. They are experienced biphasically. In the first phase, all males are homosexual among themselves between approximately the ages of 9 and 19. During this phase, they sleep in a community house erected specifically for them." (Money 1977, 229-230). "Other societies (e.g. Fang and Marquesas) expect all boys to engage in homosexuality but discourage this behaviour in adults." (Werner 1979, 345).

Rich Roman fathers used to give their adolescent sons a slave boy for their sexual use, and Catullus, in one of his poems, tells how such a slave boy, in turn, molests the local peasant girls (Borneman 1978, 622-723). The Spanish Conquistadores discovered that the same paternal practice existed among the Maya Indians of Guatemala (Bullough 1976, 43).

In ancient Greece, sex between boys was considered normal behaviour for their age.

In having sex with his same-sex peers, the young human male only duplicates what can be observed everywhere else in the animal kingdom. Homosexual play among young individuals has been specifically observed in chicken and monkeys (Kruijt 1976, 27, 35; Langfeldt 1981, 103-104).

Many writers have labelled this phenomenon "the homosexual phase" of boyhood (West 1971, 1), but the term is misleading. Let us first of all recall and repeat that homosexuality and heterosexuality are not mutually exclusive. "Any culture that draws an artificial dividing line between homosexuals and heterosexuals thereby betrays a highly peculiar and very narrow view of human nature. It is a view that has become blind to the gradual character of

human differences, to the shades and nuances of human behaviour, in short, to the natural variety of life." (Haeberle 1978, 235). Both tendencies are present in every human being, therefore in every boy. What happens in puberty is not the emergence of a new tendency, a transitory homosexual phase. It is simply this: at an age when his omnipresent homosexual tendencies, be they strong or weak, are not yet inhibited, when, in other words, his sexual nature is not yet specialised, the boy suddenly has to deal with a greatly increased sexual drive and a much higher sensitivity in his penis, both caused by his entry into puberty. Where the road to heterosexual intercourse is made difficult, or totally blocked off, he has to look for another outlet, and, using his homophilic component still available to him, he enjoys sexual activities with another male. Where the inhibition is weak or absent, homosexual contacts prove to be very satisfying to many individuals (Freud 1920, 98). It is useful "to distinguish between three basic factors:

1. Sexual capacity, i.e. what the individual *can* do.
2. Sexual motivation, i.e. what the individual *wants* to do.
3. Sexual performance, i.e. what the individual *does* do."

(Haeberle 1978, 131). Even if his lust is directed mainly towards girls, the boy can perform with other males, because his sexual capacity is greater than that of adults. Homophilia is not dominant in a larger percentage of boys than of adult men. It is just that the boy's sexual capacity is less specialised, more varied and, for most boys in our society, there is more opportunity for homosexual than heterosexual contact (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 73-74). In a culture like that of the Muria, already mentioned, where every boy is used to having intercourse with a girl every night, the situation is quite different and there is little homosexual activity.

103 In a remarkable book by N. M. Iovetz-Tereschenko called *Friendship-Love in Adolescence*, the diary of a Russian boy called John is subjected to deep analysis. In it John reveals all the wavering feelings characteristic of his age. When he was six, John experienced for the first time conscious sentiments of love for his peers. Shortly thereafter the sight of naked women bathing excited him sexually. But love only became a serious preoccupation when he reached the age of 13 years, 8 months. A half-year later he had his first ejaculation during an erotic dream. Although he had no sexual relations until he was sixteen, he went through long and shorter periods of being in love, first with four boys, one after the other, then with several school girls, then again with a boy; after this it was with two separate girls, then again with a number of school girls, then with his friend Peter, his girl-friend Cleopatra, his friend Karl, his girl-friend Margaret. In different parts of his diary John described his feelings as "an experience of happiness. I would say of beatitude, a peculiar, strange feeling, a pleasant feeling in the breast, an experience of its being something morally positive—more than that, something of a

sublime nature." (1936, 262). There was no conflict between this experience and his religious faith, but there certainly was between it and his sexual desire. He had been brought up to believe that sex was something vile and despicable, and as a result he could not bring it into harmony with his lofty sentiments of love.

Boys who manage to overcome this trauma inflicted upon them by their upbringing, or who learn to accept sexuality as part of human existence, easily resort to sexual play with their comrades during maturation. The earlier they start with these homosexual activities, the less problems they pose (Schmidt, quoted by Schult in *Ein Staatsanwalt sieht rot*). Their bodies and their imaginations drive them toward physical contact with another human; girls are out of reach, strange and intimidating beings; boys are nearer and more familiar (Leonetti 1978, 211). A male comrade is a better advisor than a girl (Gide 1925, 135).

When a boy touches the penis of another boy he knows exactly how the other feels; he knows from his own body exactly what to do to give him pleasure. "A boy caresses much better than a girl, because he knows how he would like to be caressed himself." (Lambert 1979, 211). Masters and Johnson, who observed in their laboratory a great number of subjects between the ages of 18 and 80 perform masturbation and intercourse, were surprised to see that same-sex couples generally had better "love techniques" than anyone else (1980, 221-222).

104 (Continued from No. 28) In this connection, the experiences of 18-year-old Alcide are typical. "Especially when I was younger I had this feeling that it was twice as easy to win over a boy, to get a relationship with him going and to fuck him, as a girl. (...) As a matter of fact, when I first started to sleep with girls I thought it was an enormously difficult thing to do. To begin with, you had to put on this kind of act, which is not at all natural—I really didn't like that. When I slept with a mate it was much nicer: you joked with each other, you laughed, you talked, you told all kinds of stories, you looked at each other's body a little, you compared, you did everything. Afterwards, if you wanted, you just got up and walked away. The first times I slept with a girl—today it's a little different—the fact was I just simply *had* to fuck her, and it was very important to know how to do this or that just right. I found it really a lot better to sleep with a male friend; it was nicer and simpler." (Schärer 1979, 263-264)

Boys and men accept the idea much more easily than females that sexual intimacies may follow directly upon getting acquainted (Leonetti 1978, 140).

Homosexual play with peers is extremely common before puberty. "As a matter of statistical fact, before their tenth birthday boys have more sex play with other boys than with girls." (Haeberle 1978, 156) But data derived from

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

researching this phenomenon are not too reliable, since cultural taboos make many boys unwilling to confess homosexual contacts. Of Biener's 16-year-old Swiss boarding school boys, only 18% admitted to such experiences—13% with a peer, 5% with an adult (1973, 65). An investigation among 19-year-old French boys came up with a 32% figure. Hanry's own research elicited 30%, but no less than 18% of his male subjects refused to answer the question (Hanry 1977, 11-12, 163). Yankowski organised in the United States two investigations of homosexuality, one among young adults, the second among school boys. The replies of the adults may have been more honest, but they are inevitably more distorted by amnesia. The replies of the school boys relate to rather recent experiences but are more distorted by an unwillingness to admit engaging in such activities. Making a distinction between active behaviour ("Do you remember sexual experiments in which you have touched the penis of another male?") and passive behaviour ("Do you remember sexual experiments in which your penis was touched by another male?"), the adults reported as shown in Table 10.

Table 10. Homosexual Behaviour in Youth (Yankowski, 1965)

	Active Behaviour	Passive Behaviour
At the age of 6 years or younger	2%	1%
At the age of 7 or 8	5%	8%
At the age of 9 or 10	14%	16%
At the age of 11 or 12	40.5%	10%
At the age of 13 or older	21%	51%
Never	17.5%	14%
Seventh grade boys (12 and 13 years old) answered affirmatively:	84%	90%
Tenth grade boys (15 and 16 years old) answered about the period since they were in the seventh grade:	29%	31%
Twelfth grade boys (17 and 18 years old) answered about the period since they were in the tenth grade: (Yankowski 1965, 69-77)	19%	38%

SEX WITH OTHER BOYS

Table 11. Experience With Homosexual Acts Leading to Orgasm

9-year-olds	0.2%
10-year-olds	0.6%
11-year-olds	2.0%
12-year-olds	6.3%
13-year-olds	13.7%
14-year-olds	24.1%
15-year-olds	31.1%
16-year-olds	36.0%

Kinsey (1948, 168) heard from 60% of his younger subjects that they amused themselves with comrades; this reached a climax at the age of twelve. Dort (1968, 36) interviewed 213 American boys between the ages of thirteen and nineteen about participation in mutual masturbation groups and was told by 11 that they had participated once, by 73 occasionally and by 33 often. Only if we take into account the enormous impact of anti-homosexuality taboos endemic in North American society, especially during the period of this research, so deeply entrenched in education, upbringing and public opinion (Churchill 1967, 49), can the cumulative percentages for the incidence of homosexual activities leading to orgasm be fully understood. They are shown, for middle class boys in Table 11. The cumulative figures reach a peak of 45% by the age of 19 (Kinsey 1948, 624). This only applies to activities which lead to orgasm. "If all types of homosexual contacts are tabulated for the males, it is estimated that the percentage would approach the 100 mark." (Blake 1970, 35) In the sample of the Hite Report (1981, 856), 54% of the males had masturbated with another boy during his pre-pubertal years; the percentages mounted to 81% at thirteen years, 88% at fourteen, 94% at fifteen, 97% at sixteen and 99% at seventeen.

And what boys actually do, of course, lags behind what is actively desired. Yankowski looked into this aspect, too. His subjects reported that they wanted to have the kinds of homosexual contacts shown in Table 12.

In recent research among Dutch university students, no fewer than 17% of them admitted being strongly attracted by homosexuality (Mede & Spee 1983).

As we have seen, among prepubertal boys homosexual play is more common than heterosexual. Play-wrestling, especially popular at this age, has a clear erotic component: the desire to be in close contact with a comrade's body (Borneman 1978, 882). "Among normally developing pubertal boys, verbal exchange of sexual experiences, curiosity about each other's genitals, mutual display, communal masturbation, and homosexual horseplay are

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

Table 12. *Homosexual Desires of Young Males (Yankowski, 1965)*

	Active Contacts	Passive Contacts
At 6 years of age or younger	1%	1.5%
At 7 to 8 years	24%	6.5%
At 9 to 10 years	38%	18.0%
At 11 to 12 years	10%	21.0%
At 13 years or older	3%	21.0%
Never	24%	32.0%
Boys in the seventh grade (12 and 13 years of age) admitted such desires		
	85%	88%
Boys in the tenth grade (15 and 16 years of age) admitted such desires		
	28%	31%
Boys in the twelfth grade (17 and 18 years old) admitted such desires		
	30%	45%

exceedingly common. (...) Overt homosexual activity at puberty is particularly common in boys, and most authorities agree that usually this has no great significance for future sexual orientation." Professor West (1977, 16), here quoted, calls the policy of teachers who take "drastic action against the young participants (...) unnecessarily cruel." (1977, 18). The victims and their peers always consider such punishments unjust: in the NISSO research, no less than 73.2% of the 15- to 17-year-olds said they thought it all right for two boys to be physically intimate with each other if they both were willing (1973, 23).

One is tempted to agree with 30-year-old Thomas, who travels around with a famous boys choir, when he claims "that all boys are more or less inclined to such relations" (Hennig 1979, 130).

Where boys are thrown on one another for company, "special friendships" proliferate. Mende, who has investigated the behaviour of young people in holiday camps, found out that, though teachers and youth leaders did everything in their power to keep boys from being physically intimate,

SEX WITH OTHER BOYS

nevertheless "homosexual contacts were so frequent that nearly every boy was involved" (Mende & Dubrovich 1971, 12; Krist 1976, 24).

- 105 The boys in a big city Belgian Catholic school formed a secret club. Every member had a button on which was a picture of a well-known automobile. If he put this on the lapel of his jacket it was a signal to the others that he wanted to be masturbated, and he would hang around one of the entrances when school let out, waiting for some fellow member to approach him and agree to satisfy his wish. (Personal communication)
- 106 "One 13-year-old boy described the 'club' that he and a school chum had formed as 'not much of a club—just a bunch of guys that run around together. But we have some fun, too. Whenever someone wants to be a member, we warn him that he's got to go through a tough initiation. If he wants to go through with it we make him promise to keep his mouth shut. Then for the initiation, he has to jack off every guy in the club. After that he has to get his own nut off while all of us watch!'" (Dort 1968, 26)
- 107 "I was twelve years of age when I began to masturbate. Guys from school, groups of six to twelve, used to go to one guy's house, after school, whose parents worked and didn't get home until about 6 p.m. We had jack-off contests like: who could squirt the farthest, who could last the longest, the tempo of the stroke being set by following the beat of a song on a record. Who could come with the most quantity into a Mason jar; who could come the most number of repeat climaxes in measured time. There was mild homosexual contact: touching another guy, never actually stroking another guy to climax, checking out each other's equipment. Group nudity and checking out asses." (Hite 1981, 607-608)

Such arrangements are hardly restricted to the middle class. Davidson found them thriving among London street boys (1971, 181).

- 108 At the age of fifteen, Simon, a Belgian boy, was sent to an agricultural school run by priests. The first day he felt completely lost, but during the free evening hours a pleasant boy of his own age sat down next to him and began talking about the daily routine he could expect, and the customs of the school. At ten o'clock Simon, along with thirty other boys, went into their dormitory. A friar came by to see that everyone was in his bed and then put out the light. After some minutes Simon saw, to his surprise, in the dim light penetrating the curtains, white figures sneaking silently from one bed to the other; he heard whispers and half-stifled giggling. Beds creaked. Suddenly somebody was standing next to him: the boy who had talked with him earlier. "Take your pyjamas off," the boy whispered. "Naked is nicer." A few moments later, for the first time in his life, Simon lay in the embrace of another naked boy. He became enormously excited—more so than ever

before in his life. He completely forgot where he was. Quite by instinct, inspired by his enormous passion, he made the right motions that finally brought relief to both of them. Only then did he become conscious of risk. "What if that friar had come back?" he whispered in the ear of his new friend. The other boy just laughed. "They know perfectly well what is going on, but they never make trouble. They pretend they don't know. They would only interfere if some boy complained about violence or being forced. But that never happens. I talked it over once with one of the teachers I'd gone to for sexual information. He said he thought this went on everywhere in boarding schools. It's something you could never stamp out, so you'd better tolerate it, because boys always behave better if these needs of ours are satisfied." (Personal communication)

- 109 A 59-year-old Englishman recalls: "When I went to Public School as a boarder I found mutual masturbation very common and two older boys fucked me at 17, though before then half a dozen lads had tried to do it but hadn't got right into me. Once it had been done to me I made haste to do it to another lad... In that year I sucked boys off and was sucked off, and fucked and got fucked quite often... The dorm was an orgy room most Saturday nights and two of the young sports masters approved and once or twice picked me out (and other lads!) for 'special tuition'." (Barrington 1981, 214)

While 'special friendships' can be fine, the situation can take a bad turn, too. "One educated ex-prisoner, Heckstall-Smith, has written a lengthy and apparently realistic account of his experiences of homosexuality in English prisons. He blames the influence of ex-borstal boys and inmates of residential schools for delinquents, who have been used to nightly sex orgies in the dormitories, for spreading among prisoners a sordidly uninhibited attitude to homosexual indulgence." (West 1977, 237). An American author was told by a former inmate of a reformatory, "You needed to show them how tough you were right off or you'd be surprised how many cocks you'd have up your ass in one night." (Meers 1975, 429)

- 110 Figger quotes the words of a 16-year-old boy in a German reformatory (borstal): "We've got here in the institute big boys, and these big boys, they want to be satisfied. (...) In the dormitory at night guys normally shack up together in the same bed to get each other off. Once a boy's done this he'll do it over and over again. Think about a smaller boy—he's only fifteen—and he's lying with the big guys—that're jerking off: he's got a pretty face and he isn't stupid, so all the big boys like him; they tell him all sorts of things he'd never hear outside. Then one night everyone is almost asleep. They've barely shut the door on us and someone's jumped on the bed of this kid and lays down beside him. Now, even if the kid wants to yell and fight he's got to stay shut up, because he's the youngest; he's scared of the bigger boy, even though the bigger boy is just being nice to him, pretending all he wants is to tell him

something. But pretty soon the big boy just can't hold off any longer. He grabs the kid's hand and puts it where he wants it. And the kid will do what he wants. And from then on this happens every night, until pretty soon the kid's neck is all spotted with love bites and kisses; from then on he's all right, the favourite kid of the big guys." (Figger 1977, 201)

Jean Genet described similar scenes in French reformatories. Of a Dutch reformatory it has been written, "Sexual intercourse flourished exuberantly. From 13 to 21 years of age they all slept helter-skelter. Sometimes a younger boy was booked up by the older ones two or three nights in advance." (Hoekstra 1969, 953) Havelock Ellis mentions a boarding school where "all the older boys had younger accomplices in mutual masturbation. (...) One very precocious boy of fifteen always chose a companion of ten, because his hand was like a woman's." (Ellis 1913, I-240)

On the condition that no force or coercion is used, such relations should be looked upon as beneficial: "Homosexual friendships between the inmates of reformatories may contribute to their emotional stabilisation." (Kerscher 1977, 8)

The attractiveness of members of his own sex is so strong during these years that it colours even a boy's heterosexual relations, as we have already seen. Many a boy is pushed into the embrace of a girl not because he really wants sex with a female but rather to impress his comrades and prove to them his virility. Adolescents "may want to live up to the standards of their peer group, and thus try to 'go all the way' simply because they hear that 'everybody's doing it'." (Haeberle 1978, 173)

In one very true-to-life novel about young French people in Casablanca, a fourteen-year-old boy is taken by a slightly older friend to a woman who is drawn to young boys and left there alone with her. He becomes completely passive. She pulls off his trousers. "At one point I almost pushed her away; I wanted to get up and put my clothes back on. But then maybe she'd tell my friends: I'll be sure to fall in the eyes of Jacques, and even Daniel." (Daniel was his age-mate with whom he had been having sex which he liked very much.) So he submits to the desires of the woman. (Decrés 1982, 73)

- 111 A boy of fifteen tells about his first experience two years earlier. He was with a group of 16-year-olds talking with a girl of nineteen. They told her he was only thirteen. "She said I didn't look that young, and then she said, 'You know, I really think it would be great to do it with a guy your age.' 'Really?' I said. A couple more of my friends overheard this and started coming over. She said, 'You know I'm propositioning you?' 'No shit!' I said. I really didn't want to do it with this girl. For some reason, something just told me you shouldn't do it, but these guys were all saying, 'Oh, my God, this girl just propositioned Mark!' So they talked me into it. They really talked me into it.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

I wanted to do it slightly, but it was mostly the curiosity or being able to say, 'Wow, you did it, Mark, you're a man, wow!' (Janus 1981, 286)

Professor Kentler agrees: "Just as in the big cities of the USA, the heterosexuality of boys on the lowest social levels and in marginal groups here has the highest degree of homosocial significance." (1978, 145) "How some gangs intimidate new members before admission is well known. So is the custom that to pass muster, a boy must join in the group's common cohabitation with one or several girls." (Bettelheim 1962, 34) In Paris a gang of eleven-to fourteen-year-olds was found led by a twelve-year-old boy and a thirteen-year-old girl. The girl, very elegantly dressed, said she considered herself a very lucky woman, for she had ten such perfect husbands for intercourse (Bloch 1909, 700).

One of Hertoft's subjects told him that in his opinion you have to be 18 or 19 before you can really enjoy intercourse. "When you're younger, you do it only to have done it, just so you can boast about it with your friends; you have no tender feelings at all." (1968, I-299). Hanry shares this view: "When the adolescent boy thrusts his penis between the tightly pressed thighs of a girl, or over her vulva, or inside her vagina, he is looking for an erotically pleasant discharge similar to what he gets by masturbating. (...) He will tell his comrades what has happened; he needs to do this in order to increase his standing within the group." (1977, 124)

- 112 One of Sorensen's subjects had his first coitus at fifteen with the daughter of one of his mother's friends: "She came up to my room and she started doing this whole number on me—on me. I was really scared. I was petrified. I almost wanted to cry. She just started talking to me and all those other things, and we just had sex. It was always something I wanted to do, but I wanted to back out at the last moment with her. (...) It was pretty incredible. I don't know for sure how I felt. It was quite like not knowing what to do. That was the whole overtone of the thing. It wasn't a beautiful or relaxing thing, but I told everybody it was great and I had to tell everybody." (Sorensen 1973, 195)

This kind of forced heterosexuality carried out during a transitional phase in a boy's life when he isn't really ready for it, coupled with sex-negative moralistic indoctrination, may explain why feelings of depression so frequently follow first intercourse. Sorensen's subjects felt, at their first experience: 17% afraid, 9% worried, 3% guilty, 7% embarrassed, 1% sorry, 7% foolish, 3% disappointed (1973, 203).

In still another way may homophilia mask itself as heterosexual behaviour. In imitation of Alexander the Great and his friend Hephaistion, two

SEX WITH OTHER BOYS

male lovers may have intercourse, one after the other, with the same woman.

- 113 A 17-year-old boy was deeply in love with his 15-year-old cousin, but, as the younger boy was always talking about girls, he didn't dare reveal his feelings. However, being on the verge of manhood, he did manage from time to time to find a girl willing to go to bed with him, something his younger cousin couldn't yet manage to do. He would insist, however, that the girl also lie with the other boy. When he succeeded in these arrangements he was able to have the pleasure of watching his handsome cousin strip naked and become aroused, and then look on while the younger boy made love. This spectacle was so exciting that it enabled him to carry off intercourse with the girl immediately afterwards. While so engaged, his eyes would be fixed upon his naked cousin lying satisfied, at his side. The realisation that his penis inside the girl was sliding in the sperm of his beloved was enormously thrilling (cf Stekel 1921, 172-173).

Boys who are strongly attracted to girls but still lack the courage to make the necessary approaches, may discharge their lust with a friend. One fine, sensitive book written by a 17-year-old French grammar school student, Didier Gerval (1957) describes two boys practicing with each other the acts they later hope to perform with girls. The tone and mood of the book is typically adolescent: the desire to conquer, to experiment, the curiosity about "techniques", the almost acrobatic approach to sexual activity, a touch of cynicism but at the same time a feeling of purity and horror of compromise—all come in to play as Silvère tries out on his friend Etienne everything he dreams of doing with his beloved Liliane.

These examples show how close the connection can be at this age between heterophile and homophile tendencies. To experience this calmly and consciously, and to give physical expression to it, can only be beneficial to a boy's mental health and psycho-sexual development.

SPECIAL FRIENDSHIPS

There is another important aspect of all of this. Deep, sensual friendships often spring up between boys of different ages (Schérier 1978, 183). These are the *amitiés particulières*, the "dangerous intimacies" which meet with such implacable disapproval in many boarding schools. The love of two pupils provoking the jealousy of their teachers is a classic theme of literature (Roger Peyrefitte, *Les amitiés particulières* (1945); Henri de Montherlant, *La ville dont le prince est un enfant* (1967) and *Les garçons* (1969); James Kirkwood, *Good Times, Bad Times* (1968)). It is interesting that in Montherlant's novel the boy's mother actually prefers him to make love to another boy (she

perceives this as a passing phenomenon—it therefore doesn't arouse her jealousy) than to lose his heart to a girl.

Every day there are tragedies resulting from the way adults repress, often with naked cruelty, the sexuality of young people. In criminal procedures involving sexual acts upon 10- to 14-year-old children, adolescents are conspicuously over-represented in number (Kerscher 1978, 152).

114 Hans Blüher writes in his autobiography (1953, 218-219), "When I was in the last form at the Steglitz grammar school, the 'erastes' system flourished—or, rather, we made it bloom into a conscious culture where heretofore it had lain dormant. In the first place, all of us—and I don't mean just Rudi and me—had our favourites, or *eromenos*—whom we also called 'Dédé', from a sentimental Belgian novel by Achille Essebac. In our arms and on our lips would hang these beautiful fifteen-year-old blossoms of boyhood, who in the first gush of their youthful vitality, found in us their first lovers. They were better off with us than they were at the dancing lessons. It was a distinction for every well-brought-up youth to have his own boy. We didn't just help them with their homework, we also participated in their family lives, gave them support and counsel. We virtually impregnated these young beings with all that was in our minds. Teachers and parents couldn't praise us enough and fell all over themselves extolling our virtue and altruism: how dear they were! We would certainly have been ashamed if all of this had been done out of virtue and altruism alone! But I didn't hear of one single instance where this boy-love led to salacious molestation. For us it was simply good manners not to touch a boy before he came into puberty. We totally despised bourgeois morality, yet our ethical standards far exceeded its demands. Yet anything which we ourselves permitted we carried out exactly the way we wanted to. (...) Among ourselves, on the other hand, the erotic relationships were much more vigorous; here a fully inflamed Eros had us in his grip and swept us away through every kind of darkness."

"Does there anywhere exist a more delicate and noble feeling than the friendship, at the same time passionate and timid, of one young boy for another? The one who loves dares not betray his affection by a caress, a look, a word." So wrote Jacobsen sixty years ago (quoted by Gide 1925, 136). But there isn't always so much restraint on the part of the older boy—nor would the younger always welcome it himself.

115 In my first book (München 1970) I told the story of a Frenchman, the source of which is a letter written by him years later when he was a married man, the father of a daughter and a son. Maurice, as we shall call him, met while he was in boarding school a somewhat younger student, Roger. For one whole year their mutual attraction was only expressed by ardent looks, sitting hand-in-hand at the movies and by a furtive kiss one night on a

deserted playground. But gradually Maurice became conscious of the strong sexual overtones in his affection for his friend.

"Normally I always started with sex first, and then later got attached to a comrade. But of course it had to be the other way around with true love!"

Finally one night he just couldn't hold out any longer, and he stole into the younger boys' dormitory with a burning desire to touch Roger's body. "I looked at him as he lay there asleep. I was transfixed. The beauty of him! His relaxed face, his closed eyes with the deep shadows around them, his full lips half opened, his tousled hair... The covers had slid down and only partially covered him. I lifted the sheet cautiously, bent over him, and saw that his right hand covered his cock, hiding it from me.... But the heavy, pungent smell of sperm rising from his sleeping body told me very clearly what the darling lad had been up to earlier that night... His whole body smelled sweetly of love and desire, but, strangely, my own desire vanished, as though daunted by the idea of violating him... Suddenly I realised the big risk I was taking. If I was caught here I would be expelled from school and I would never see Roger again. Oh, no! I bent tenderly over the sleeping boy and pressed my burning lips to his mouth." Days passed. "But now the flesh was demanding. I had many boys willing to amuse themselves with me; in fact at that time there were more of them than ever before. But I wanted Roger, and for myself alone. I knew if I waited too long someone else would beat me to it and break him in. I desired his body, his cock; in my nose still lingered the scent of his seed and his sweat as it had emanated from his sleeping body, so delightfully soiled, that night."

On their homeward journey at the beginning of Easter holidays, Maurice and Roger managed to find a railway compartment where they could be alone. "As soon as the train left the station we lay in each other's arms, mouth upon mouth, drunk with joy and passion." Maurice pressed his body against Roger's so the younger boy could feel, through their trousers, his erection. "'I love you,' Roger whispered, his eyes brimming with passion and his eyelids twitching with excitement. 'I love you,' I replied softly. 'Do you feel how much I love you, what you've done to me... down there?' He looked straight into my eyes, very seriously, and said, 'I feel it, of course—and I think it's wonderful.' 'Roger, do you want to do it too?' 'Yes. I want it. I've been waiting for this forever, I've been longing for it. You can do everything you want!'"

Still Maurice hesitated for about a quarter of an hour before he dared go on and undress Roger. When at last he took Roger's penis in his hand, the younger boy heaved a big sigh and whispered, "'That's for you, only for you—for you alone. Nobody else has ever touched it. And when I stroke it myself I always imagine it's your hand doing it.' 'Won't you feel bad about this, later?' 'Of course not. You can do anything you want with me.'"

Now Roger wrapped his fingers around Maurice's erection and they brought each other to climax. With typical schoolboy romanticism, Maurice decided they should mix their sperm together and drink it. "With an intoxicating kiss I shared with Roger the gift of our intimately mingled seed." Later

that night still more intimacies ensued and, as Maurice's finger explored the anus of his friend, Roger said, again very seriously, "'If you want, you can take me this way, Maurice. You can do it to me, even if it hurts—even if it hurts a lot.'"

It wasn't long after Maurice came home that his mother realised what kind of friendship her son had with Roger. She saw how deep and serious the feelings were that united the two boys; she did nothing to hinder them. She even helped Maurice by inviting Roger to stay over one night after they had seen a movie together, and she arranged for the two boys to sleep in the same bed. And so it came to anal intercourse, in which Roger courageously suffered the initial pains but only with difficulty was persuaded to take the active role himself: in his mind, only the passive position was suitable for the younger partner. Their relationship lasted for over two years, until Roger's family moved to the south of France and the German occupation cut off their communications.

Today, the adult Maurice values his boyhood friendship with Roger as one of the treasures of his life, and he is happy to see that his own son, now fifteen, has a sexually expressed intimate relationship with another boy; Maurice has made it plain to his son how heartily he approves.

This phenomenon of love between boys of different ages reveals itself in all cultures and in every period of history. In a primitive tribe in India, the Ho, all the boys sleep together in a dormitory, and it the custom that the smaller boys must serve the mature boys as if they were girls (Elwin 1959, 272). A fine description of two boys, 13 and 10 years of age, awakening to conscious sexuality in their mutual love, is given by Nigel Downsbrough in his novel *Paedomorphs I* (1978). Whether or not sexual intimacies actually occur, a strong erotic element always underlies such relationships, offering enormous educational advantages. "It is evident that the first unfolding of a strong attachment in boyhood or girlhood must have a profound influence; while it occurs between an elder and a younger school-mate (...) its importance in the educational sense can hardly be overrated." (Carpenter 1912, 78-79). And this benefits both partners. The younger feels protected; the elder sets him an example; he is much more willing to let himself be guided and counselled by him than by most adults. The elder learns how to take responsibility; although at this age he may often behave ruthlessly and brutally, he will spontaneously treat his young friend with tenderness and consideration. When society in its all-pervading fear of sex tries to break up such relationships—because, so often, they quickly progress toward a sexual expression of intimacy—it deprives itself of a powerfully constructive pedagogical force and brings down on its younger members untold misery.

For these friendships can be the source of such intense happiness that they can reconcile a boy to a very hard lot indeed.

116 A Belgian who had never known parental affection and passed his whole boyhood as a poor, rejected child in poor orphanages and boarding schools where life was drab and dreary in the extreme, lamented in his diary, "Mérovie—oh, Mérovie, what a wave of longing sweeps through me as I remember your gloomy, dim walls, your bleak, stupid people! What nostalgia I feel for your red and grey buildings, the joyless playing fields—this horrible boarding school where I passed so many dark months! Oh, god of my misfortunes, I would gladly sacrifice all those twenty years between then and now; yes, I would sacrifice the rest of my days if only I could return again to Mérovie, reverse mortal time, just to be with my friend again, as he stood guard in front of the cubicle where I slept embracing a young body. Then, in those long-lost years, I could love. I could have sex: sometimes without repenting it, sometimes repenting it. I could be pure and impure without restraint." (Personal communication)

117 At the age of fourteen Lothar lost both parents in a traffic accident and was taken in by the large, affectionate family of an uncle. There he was to share a bedroom with one of his cousins, Stan, who was about his own age. All during the first day Lothar put on a brave act, but in his bed that night, with the lights off, he broke down and began to weep. Stan heard this and, feeling sorry for the lonely and lost boy, went over to him, kissed him, stroked his hair and finally lay down beside Lothar to try to console him. It was a hot night; both boys were sleeping without pyjamas, and the contact of their naked pubertal bodies soon brought them both into an intensely aroused condition. Stan had already experienced some sex with an adult man and so he knew how to satisfy his desires. Now that first tender and compassionate approach to Lothar quickly led to an impassioned, raving act of love. For Lothar it was a ride into completely unknown realms; he was overwhelmed, but it was so enormously beautiful and made him so happy that afterwards he fell into a deep and untroubled sleep, convinced that he would be accepted and loved in this house as he had been in his own. From that night on the two cousins became inseparable friends. (Personal communication)

A boy on the verge of puberty is insatiably curious about what it means to be physically mature. Nothing could be more natural than for an older friend to demonstrate. Scenes of couples so engaged are often touching in the extreme: you see the evident pride with which the older male exhibits his manly, naked body, his full-sized penis, with an arm protectively and lovingly thrown over the younger boy's shoulders; you observe the equally frank curiosity and admiration in the face of the latter. Together they form a tableau of the most intimate alliance and closest friendship. During group masturbation, so common at puberty and early adolescence, the immature boys are always fascinated by the shooting sperm of the older ones. Sexual prowess thus makes the mature boy very popular with his younger comrades.

FEAR OF HOMOSEXUALITY

118 "At about the age of ten, I made friends with a boy of fifteen who became quite friendly with me (...) Every opportunity, he exposed himself when urinating, or just showing me his hard-on. It was twice as big as mine, and I guess I was a little envious. He talked to me about sex things (...) One day about six months after we started running around together, we were out at our local park (...) We were talking sexy things, and he had his hands in his pockets (...) He stopped, turned, and opened his coat. He had a royal hard-on sticking out of his trousers. It was red from rubbing it, and the head was wet (...) He said to take it out and show it to him. I took it out and we looked at each other's penis for a time (...) He started masturbating. He told me to do the same (...) I did like he said, as he said it would feel good. Well, it sure did. The feeling was just starting for me when he started coming, and I watched as the sperm shot out onto the grass, and his hand was flying up and down to make it come again. The sperm was white and thick over his hand and penis, as he worked towards another one. Just about the time in my excitement that I was coming and my little hand was flying up and down, along came these two old ladies from behind us. They had seen us, and came over to see what we were doing. I quickly started to put mine away, but stopped when my friend kept doing it, and when the old ladies exclaimed, 'My word!' he said, 'Mind your own business!' and started coming almost at their feet. I was so excited seeing him shooting, and I had kept flogging mine, I started to come. It was something I will never forget, it was great. We finished together as the old ladies walked away in a huff babbling to each other." (Hite 1981, 39-40)

119 At the home of friends in Sri Lanka I once met a strikingly handsome, healthy and sparkling boy of fifteen who, I was told, had a very strong sex drive, needing at least three climaxes a day to satisfy it. His greatest delight was in initiating younger, inexperienced boys into the joys of sex. He drew them like a magnet; wherever he went there was always a crowd of young admirers swarming around him.

Love between boys, be they of the same or different ages, can sometimes be very passionate.

120 Carpenter (1912, 139) gives an example from India: "The boys—who were about sixteen years of age—were both at the same school, and were devoted friends; but the day came when they had to part. One was taken away by his parents to go to a distant part of the country. The other was inconsolable at the prospect. When the day arrived, and his companion was removed, he soon after went quietly to a well in the school precincts, jumped in, and was drowned. The news, sent on by wire, reached the departing friend while still on his journey. He said little, but at one of the stations left the train and disappeared. The train went on, but at a little distance out, the boy ran out of the bushes by the line, threw himself on the rails, and was killed."

But even in this paradise of youth a demon lurks: our culture's fear and horror of homosexuality (Hanry 1977, 190). At about the age of twelve, boys begin to fall prey to anti-homophile indoctrination, and between their thirteenth and fifteenth years most of them, for the first time in their lives, hear homosexuality discussed (Hertoft 1968, I-254). They talk about it among themselves and in so doing intensify each other's repugnance. Now the group will consider boys having sex with one another very abnormal (Langfeldt 1981, 42). Of course the desire to conform is strong at this age—everyone wants to do what the others do. This is related to the inner uncertainty of this transitional phase.

Such fears are entirely unjustified, as "early homosexual experience does not automatically lead to adult homosexuality. (...) Homoerotic and incestuous fantasies seem to occur in almost all children and do not seem to distinguish homosexual from heterosexual children." (Langfeldt, 1981, 41) We may well remember Alcibiades, the most handsome youth in Athens of his time, who was said, as a boy, to have lured away all the husbands from their wives, and, as a young man, all the wives away from their husbands (Foucault 1984, 208). Psychiatrists are aware that "perverted behaviour during adolescence may be a development step". Homosexuality, sex with animals, trying to spy on other persons engaged in sexual intercourse, or feeling sexually excited by articles of dress or other objects (fetishism) "can appear in adolescents who give promise of good psychological health." (Markey, quoted by Karpman 1954, 53). Hite (1981, 36) found "No correlation between whether a boy had had sexual experience with other boys and whether he considered himself 'homosexual' or 'heterosexual' in later life. Many 'homosexual' men had never had relations with other boys in youth, and many 'heterosexual' men had had such relationships." In Sorensen's research, 50% of the boys agreed with the statement, "There isn't anything in sex that I wouldn't want to try, at least once." (1973, 60)

"Panic reactions on the part of communities or parents, with the communication of this sense of panic to children, is certainly not positive. (...) It may well be a fact that scare techniques that induce panic cause more widespread interference with children's psychosexual development than do overt abnormal sexual experiences." (Rabinovitch, quoted by Karpman 1954, 556)

The most important result of homophobic indoctrination is hypocrisy. Where a group is not so indoctrinated, nearly every boy may prove willing to participate in homosexual activities and enjoy them thoroughly.

121 A big, healthy and highly gifted German boy of fifteen told me that he went on a camping trip to Corsica with 16 other boys, aged twelve to

eighteen. "On the first day it was already obvious that we had a pair of lovers in our midst: a sixteen-year-old and a thirteen-year-old boy who were absolutely inseparable. Naturally, we started to tease them, but our kidding remained good-natured, never became malicious—and it didn't bother the lovers at all. That night they shared one sleeping bag. It wasn't completely dark inside our tent, as there was a moon outside. The rhythmic movements in the bedroll and the audible panting of its occupants made it pretty obvious what was going on within. In the morning we awakened to see them still sleeping locked in a tight embrace; a tube of vaseline lay beside them. That day the teasing increased; it was a lot more pointed than before, but, again, it never really got nasty; as a matter of fact there was an overtone of envy in it. When finally, at the end of a marvellous day filled with play and sports, we went to sleep, it was obvious that more couples had been formed, and these boys enjoyed themselves just as openly as the first couple had. The third night everyone slept with somebody else. There were couples who remained together for the whole holiday, other boys changed their partners every night. But there wasn't one single boy who didn't join in with these activities, and I know we all enjoyed ourselves immensely. I'm sure, however, that if, on that first day, some senior had really put down that first pair of lovers, none of this would have happened. Nobody would have dared defy him and do what all of us really found so completely delightful."

Sometimes boys evade social repression simply by giving things they want to do a different name. In Langfeldt's studies "boys in such groups seldom considered themselves to be homosexuals, inside the group the homosexual activity was legitimised and considered as play or training, while the same activity outside the group was considered as homosexuality." (1981, 68). Davidson (1971, 181) wrote that in London "there's one kind of emotional attachment very common among working-class boys of the middle teens: a deep unquestioning friendship between two boys, founded on unshakable loyalty and interdependence which neither would recognise as 'love' and which is summed up in the phrase 'me and my mate'. These friendships mean an absolute partnership and concurrence in everything, including sex: one of such a pair wouldn't think of masturbating 'without me mate'." De Brethmas (1980, 26) ascertained that many Parisian boys liked to suck the penis of a comrade, but got quite angry if you'd call this homosexual. It is characteristic that in De Boer's research a substantial number of boys participating in the written questionnaire (where they remained anonymous) admitted they were sexually attracted by males, but that more than half of them denied this afterwards when they were talking face to face with the researcher (1978, II-66).

Boys like to have sex with each other, but usually it has to remain playful ("fooling around" they often call it) and must not become serious.

- 122 A New Zealand boy declared: "Me and the other guys used to suck each other in the toilets. It was really good and I was always trying to get someone to do it with me. But when we got to the fourth form I think they started to realise that I liked it more than most. At first they just wouldn't talk about it. But after a while they started to gang up on me. They'd trip me up and write 'queer' on my back in chalk. Later it got quite nasty and I got bashed up so bad I had to get stitches. After that I went to another school that wasn't so bad." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 187)

The homophobia inspired by society, combining with the strong drive to get sexual relief through same-sex contacts normal to this age group, leads to hypocrisy, self-deception and cruelty. Games are devised where, just as in ancient Greek wrestling competitions, the loser has to abandon himself to anal penetration by the victor, and so can pretend that he didn't give of himself of his own free will but was "raped". Quite literally, this enables him to suffer defeat gladly. Richey's novel *Near Fatal Attraction* (1977), builds its plot around this theme.

- 123 West (1977, 105-106) quotes a psychiatrist whose client was "a particularly submissive minister of religion". "His early sexual experience consisted of wrestling games with an older boy during which he was regularly overpowered and 'forced' to suck his friend's penis."

It is this inner uncertainty which can make boys of this age so uninhibitedly cruel, as Golding (1954) showed so brilliantly in *The Lord of the Flies*. "The cruelty of children, however, never has the quality of premeditation, or irrevocability, that a righteous conscience and lust for power can give to the cruelty of adults." (Schärer & Hocquenghem 1976, 58)

Their minds are filled with images of violence and domination. Among Sorensen's subjects, quite normal adolescents, their masturbation fantasies revolved mainly around "sex with someone who is forced to submit, sex with more than one female, group sex, sex when one is forced to submit, varying degrees of violence to the other person, oral and anal sex." (1973, 137)

The desire to have homosexual relations with comrades, coupled with the desire to act "macho", drive many 13- to 17-year-olds to sexual aggression, often expressed in fighting and outright sadism. The aggressor, however, suppresses from his own consciousness the lustful sensations he experiences from such behaviour, because if he recognised them they would suggest that he might be "queer". The truth, of course, is that he probably isn't "queer" at all—he is just effecting a separation of sensuality and tenderness which may have fatal consequences for the development of his personality (Kentler 1970, 183-184). Sadism caused by inner fear (Mitscherlich 1973, 217) is the central theme of Musil's famous novel *Die Verwirrungen des Zöglings Törless* (1906).

124 Linedecker (1981, 288-289) tells the story of a man who was thrown out of his home in California when he was thirteen "and began living in a tent in a field. He depended for his meals on handouts from a nearby food co-op, where he met an older youth who was a male prostitute. Healthy, blond, tan, and muscular from lounging at beaches and lifting weights, the prostitute offered the boy a home. Soon after that they became lovers, and the younger boy also turned to prostitution. Almost a year later the teenager had his first experience with a girl about his own age. His life changed abruptly. He moved out of the older youth's apartment and began doing everything he could to prove to himself and to others that he was manly. He joined a street gang and fought with other teenagers."

The aggressive veneer over his own homosexual behaviour may fully convince both his fellow-gang-members and himself that he performs anal rape only to demonstrate his virility, to dominate and humiliate his victims. Thus the prevalence of "gang-bangs", brutal, deliberately cruel rape of a younger or weaker individual by a pack of boys. The violent penetration of one penis after another, often deliberately unlubricated even with spit, causes excruciating pain and injuries to the anus; in the end the victim may be left bleeding and unconscious. Flinders (1971) and Salas (1967) gave vivid description of such scenes. According to official American sources, no less than 9% of all men and boys in penitentiaries become victims of this kind of rape. It is a sad commentary on North American culture that homosexuality outside of jail is often severely punished, even where both partners are willing, but prison authorities characteristically do little to stop homosexual rape of the men entrusted to their care: "It doesn't matter, it just happens!" (Den Bouwmeester 1981, 29-30; Davis 1968).

French teenage gangs are often bonded by sex. "Sometimes there are a few female members with whom all the boys in turn have intercourse. However, homosexual activities are more frequent. During a sort of initiation ceremony, every new member of the gang is anally used by its chief. Homosexual contacts between the chief and individual gang members take place according to his sexual needs." (Roumajon, quoted by Schlegel 1962, 205-206)

Where it doesn't find its outlet in violence and cruelty, homosexual fear can lead to the suppression of tenderness. Many boys are so inhibited by it that they cannot give any physical expression to feelings of closeness to a friend so characteristic of their age. This greatly diminishes their happiness and stunts the healthy evolution of their personalities.

125 The strongest theme in Richey's over-charged novel (1977) was the relationship of the two main characters, Roger and Tom. As boys they once camped together alone in the woods. That night they nearly had sex together, but were each too inhibited. The trauma of this unsatisfactory experience

pursues them even into adulthood, so that many years later, as family men, fathers even, they decide to repeat the experience but this time to do it right and satisfy their mutual desires. But it is not successful; it is too late. For Roger, resolution to this dilemma only comes when he meets Tom's young son and the boy calmly, confidently, as though it were his mission, completes the sex his father had begun so many years before and brings the man to climax.

The taboo on homosexual lust places a heavy burden on youth. A physician charged with giving sexual instruction in the Rotterdam schools always told his students that if a boy had intimacies with one of his male friends and derived a lot of pleasure from it, this didn't indicate at all that he was homophile or would become homophile. At this point the doctor invariably heard sighs of relief among his listeners and saw many faces full of happy surprise. Every person giving sexual instructions to young people should follow his example in order to dispel unjustified fears which prey on boys' health and diminish their joy of life. Of course it should also be pointed out, clearly and emphatically, that there is nothing bad or evil in being a homophile and that homophilia is a completely acceptable, fine, loving tendency which, to a greater or lesser degree, is present in every human being. Furthermore, they should be told that sexual orientation comes about quite independently of a person's free will, and it is therefore just as unfair and cruel to taunt a boy for homophilia as to do so about the colour of his skin.

But as long as society in general persists in its stupid and wicked practice of making life miserable for the homophile, it won't be easy to keep young people from parroting the slogans and imitating the sick behaviour of their elders and convince them that a gay male can shape his life as happily and usefully as a "straight".

Homophobia even sours the life of heterophile boys, as a number of males in Hite's research (1981, 20) attest: "In high school and college, when our friendships got too close, it was uncomfortable. We did not know how to deal with our feelings, so we let the friendship go. The taboo or fear must still be with me, because from time to time I have been attracted to a good-looking man and the feeling terrifies me." Another: "The closeness became uncomfortable and so we pulled apart. That is sad. (...) I think we were all afraid of seeming to be gay." Another: "Men are just so uptight about their bodies and out of touch with their emotions and so incredibly afraid (bring out the cross and silver spike) of homosexuality. I must admit I'm uncomfortable myself about it."

If homophobia thus destroys elevating feelings and fine relationships, impairing happiness, among heterophile youngsters, it can make it hell for that minority of their brothers who gradually become conscious that their ultimate orientation will be toward other males.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

- 126 Pieter was very popular at school because he excelled in all kinds of sports and he remembers that sexual games with other boys were rather frequent and enjoyable. At the age of 17, however, Pieter started to realise that his enjoying these sexual games much more than he did the occasional petting he had done with girls could mean that he was a homosexual. He immediately withdrew from all contacts with other boys and men that could lead to anything resembling sex. He lost his popularity and his interest in sports, became isolated "and finally was on the verge of suicide." (Schippers 1983, 363)

In their novel *Special Teachers-Special Boys* (1979) Pete Fisher and Marc Rubin give a vivid picture of the terrifying inner struggle of a teenager who at first, fighting his own sexual inclination, beats up the schoolmate whose physical presence has so strongly aroused it, and who only at the end is ready to acknowledge, *I am this way; this is my nature*.

Here we can see, as in so many other examples, how degrading, corrupting of our culture this aversion to sexuality is. Having your fling, giving vent to youthful homosexual whims, doesn't slow the evolution toward heterosexuality in that majority of boys for whom it is the natural orientation. Quite the contrary. The French sexologist Meignant pointed out (1974, 11) that males should first realise their homophile tendencies, present in every individual, before they can construct the right kind of relationship with a woman. The Roman father who gave his son a young male slave so the boy could satisfy his lust and improve his "technique" until he got married showed sound insight into human nature. Sex play with a partner whose genitals are similar is relatively easy; one doesn't have to be so adroit. Homophile couples, on average, are more expert in making love than their heterophile counterparts, as we noted already from Masters and Johnson's observations (1980). Mutual masturbation, however, does require some learning and practice, for every boy has his own preferences and ways of doing it. Emerging from the solitude of private masturbation, the boy gets used to being seen naked and aroused by someone else in his pursuit of lust and orgasm. All of this increases his self-confidence and self-assurance in sexual situations; it will be a great help to him later when he makes his first approaches to a girl.

Giese and Schmidt found that those youths who, between twelve and eighteen, had had homosexual experiences, were having intercourse with girls almost as often as their fellow students who hadn't. Their success in seducing girls and their "refinement in the techniques of intercourse were even slightly greater" (1968, 177).

Nature has given to maturing boys the capacity to function with both sexes. "It is certainly surprising to discover from my own research and case-histories just how high a proportion of boys 14 to 16 are already leading a

SEX WITH OTHER BOYS

bisexual life with homosexual contacts-to-orgasm more frequent at that age than contacts to orgasm with girls or women." (Barrington 1981, 84)

- 126 A black man of 21, Jamaican, acting in erotic movies in part because of his exceptional 9-inch erect penis, had already "had" 23 girls by the time he was fifteen. "But he'd also discovered his own bisexuality by 13 and had had many white male friendships with gay and bisexual men by 17." (Barrington 1981, 43)

- 127 "I was shown how to masturbate by a similar-age friend and we made many sexual experiments together till I was 15 and I fell in love with a young man of 25 who loved me. He introduced me to every form of homosexual activity, and we had a four-times-a-week sex affair till I was over 16 (...) I fucked a girl-friend many times before I was 16 and was 12 the first time. Other and older girls also let me fuck them, masturbated me and sucked me off. Before I was 16 I developed strong guilt feelings about sex with men and also certain acts with girls, so I stopped going to Confession or taking Communion." (Barrington 1981, 207)

- 128 An Englishman of 20 writes: "I've got twin brothers of 16 and one of them comes to visit me at the school and joins in with the other kids for sex in the store. He has had only three screws with girls and still prefers girls but like me says it's best to take your sex where you can." (Barrington 1981, 39)

- 129 Another Englishman, 34 years: "From the age of 10-and-a-half I had a fuck-affair with my cousin, a girl of 14, for two-and-a-half years (...) Linda showed me about everything one can do with a woman. (...) I got hard alright and did everything she wanted, but I was just pleasing her and passing the time. I didn't ejaculate or get real orgasms till I was nearly 12. I came more in wet dreams than I did with Linda. Those dreams were all about Tim, a boy at school. He was 17 and lived in the next street. I told him about Linda, of course. When he showed me how to wank at 13 he also sucked me off a few days later. Then he used my come to fuck me. We did that sort of thing a lot that summer as well as girls. (...) I fucked a few local girls at 14 and 15, but wasn't very excited by it and when I met Chris in the school showers we started a friendship like I had had with Tim. Then three other boys saw us in the showers. They were friends of Chris's and they made me suck them off and then another day they all fucked me in the showers. That sort of thing went on for a few weeks. I loved it but to them it was all a joke." After another love affair with a boy at school, he went to sea and there had sex with many men. "Most of them prefer cunt to sex with guys, but at sea life is different (...) I've shown 6 boys and 9 teenagers sex acts, mostly just sucking (...) At sea and in foreign ports I've had sex with maybe 100 guys 18 to 30, and about the same in London, Liverpool and Southampton. I like one-night stands and I don't mind paying young guys for sex. (...) I know the game and was paid by guys up to 26, from when I was 17 to 28. (...) I've tried sex about

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

six times with women in ports, mostly because I was with guys I really fancied and I had to join in, since I was 20. If I'm with a guy I really fancy I can screw a girl happily, but I couldn't do it alone. Not anymore. I love watching guys I want fucking a girl, and if they'll let me I like to suck them as they do it. A couple of times I was screwed by a guy while I screwed a chick, and that was terrific!" (Barrington 1981, 126-127)

insert two ←

130 Luke grew up under the most disadvantageous conditions. He was the sixth of seven children. Both parents worked and had good positions, and they lived in one of the better neighbourhoods of a Dutch town. Their children, however, were neglected, not just by lack of love but even in material things. One by one, each left home as soon as he or she was able and totally severed family contact. On the day his adult friend brought Luke to my home for the first time, it was freezing outside and the boy was shivering because he didn't own an overcoat. Luke was a constant truant from school, with the result that now, at fourteen, he sat in a class with ten-year-olds. Two years earlier the child protection authorities had at last become aware of his truancy and intervened. They didn't perceive its cause and the extent of his neglect (such a respectable family, such a decent home!); they were only concerned with his violating the compulsory education law and so sent the recalcitrant boy for three months to a remand home. There Luke heard and learned a lot: how to masturbate at night under his bedsheets, and that there were men willing to exchange money for sex with a boy. So, enriched with this knowledge, Luke returned to his parents. One day when he was thirteen he told his mother, "I can't go to school any longer because my trousers are nothing but rags." His mother gave him some money—about half as much as he would need to buy a reasonable replacement pair—and sent him to the local shopping centre. As he was standing in front of a shop window, a man approached him and, smiling kindly, said, "If you come home with me you can earn 25 guilders." In his whole life Luke had never had so much money in his possession, and what he had heard in the remand home made him immediately aware of what services were expected of him. That night he came home with a very fine pair of trousers indeed—and enriched by experiences which had given him an enormous amount of pleasure and cried out to be repeated. But he was still rather small and naive and he soon fell under the influence of an 18-year-old pimp who took him to various clients and "saved" his earnings for him.

As time went on Luke began to feel more and more lost and lonely, although he liked the sexual activities. One of his clients later told me that little Luke used to fondle and kiss adult male genitals with undisguised passion. One night in a bar he met a sympathetic man and confided in him his misery. The man more or less took him under his wing. When he finished school, Luke went to live with this friend and they developed a close love relationship. For the first time in his life Luke knew what it was like to be loved and to have a real home. But in the meantime his sexual appetite had grown very strong and he found that one sexual partner wasn't sufficient to

SEX WITH OTHER BOYS

satisfy it. So he had sex with other men, and with boys, too, and his adult friend didn't object. I once asked him—he was fifteen at the time—what kind of sexual activity he liked the most, and his answer was, "to be fucked in the ass by a boy about two years older than me." Two years later I put the same question to him, and now he replied, "to fuck the behind of a boy my own age." So now he was more active than passive. Later he slowly became bisexual: at eighteen he claimed to prefer boys, but he could get it on with a girl if she was rather boyish. After a holiday trip to the Costa Brava (Spain) he boasted that he had met two young couples from Holland and had had sex with all four of the people within one week. Then came a birthday party in Amsterdam with some of his young friends: there was no real group sex, but after midnight a number of couples openly made love in the same big room. Luke first had sex with a fourteen-year-old girl and shortly thereafter let himself be penetrated by a sixteen-year-old boy. Two years later, at 21, he was sharing his home with a young woman, and since then his sex life has been exclusively heterosexual. He has carefully avoided contact with his former male friends.

Such histories show how right Jesuit Father McNeill was in assuming that a man can never be certain before he is 25 whether his homosexual activities really express the predominant side of his sexual nature or belong only to a transitional period of his life (1976, 174).

Sex With Men AN IMPOSSIBLE LOVE?

As can be expected, most homosexual activities of pre-pubertal boys take place with their own age-mates. This is also often the case with boys going through puberty (Reiss 1967, 66). Nevertheless, not a few boys prefer an adult partner. In his fine novel *Antinous, Geliebter*, Ulrich Stöwer has the philosopher Epictetus make this sad commentary about love between boy and man to Emperor Hadrian, "Usually it is the youthful body, the guileless laugh, the open-mindedness, the handsome face, the fresh skin which the man loves... As long as he is young himself he will easily find a friend who also desires and loves him. But, while his special attraction to youth persists, the man grows older, and now the potential for a profitable, that is to say equivalent, friendship, diminishes more and more, his successes becoming increasingly rare. For the vanishing appeal of youth he must substitute remedies and devices: the arts of the hairdresser, bath-superintendent, masseur; by pretense, persuasion, seduction; by exciting youthful curiosity; even by violence—and only exceptionally by the superiority of his mind. But none of these can restore what is most important: the radiant, vital, attractive body.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

The relationship between man and boy becomes the more equivocal and fragile the more they differ in age and the longer the bond between them has existed. Each has to resort to new forms of mutual deception, and even their brief moments of shared lust cannot dispel the painful certainty that one day soon they will have to separate." (Stöwer 1967, 237)

Plato, in his belief that love is based upon the veneration of beauty, similarly denied that the boy can love the man, because the man was ugly (Buffière 1980, 402). He could have learned better from Anakreon who, in one of his poems, has a boy, flinging him self into the arms of his lover, cry out, "He is a greybeard but beautiful, really beautiful, and he loves to enjoy himself in bed!" (Peyrefitte 1979, 145)

Is it really beauty that a boy is looking for in a partner? Peter Schult, drawing upon his rich experience, says it isn't. "Children simply don't have this aesthetic judgement about bodily beauty. It's always a source of wonder for me, because I myself have a kind of horror of my body, suffering as I do from the advance of wrinkles, the development of middle-age spread. So I am always frightened of losing my partners, the youngsters, because of this. But although they may sometimes say something like, 'Oh, man, what a paunch you've got!', I've nearly never seen in children of twelve to fifteen this fear of ugliness or old age or experienced rejection because of it. They see the personality rather than the body or the beauty of the body." (1982, 105) What they do expect from the adult partner is pleasure (Nichols 1971, 15)—and more: in 1979, on a program of the Dutch evangelical broadcasting system "Ikon", a fourteen-year-old was interviewed about his sexual relationship with Jan, an adult man. The interviewer asked at one point, "What is there in Jan that is so attractive to you? Do you find him handsome?" The boy appeared confused by the question—it seemed that the idea had never occurred to him. After a moment he replied, "No, but with him I feel safe, protected."

Aesthetic feelings about physical attraction develop in boys only in a later stage. Only then is the ageing boy-lover faced with the dilemma of the Greek poet Dinos Christianopolous of whether to leave the light on or off as he makes love:

*i don't know which I prefer –
in the darkness my ugliness disappears
in the light your beauty glows.*

(translation: Kimon Friar, *Gay Sunshine Journal* 47: 173, 1982) With younger boys it doesn't matter.

131 Nineteen-year-old Albert declares, "When you're very young your sexuality isn't yet differentiated. You're not attracted by just one type of gay

SEX WITH MEN: AN IMPOSSIBLE LOVE?

person. I remember that if they'd presented me with forty different people when I was ten I'd have been willing to sleep with every one of them no matter who..." (Max *et al*, 1980, 71, 76)

In homophiles there is often a nearly pathological fear of growing old (Baudry 1982, 78). "For 'normal' gays, however, there are no common remedies to conquer with bravura the inevitable barricades of getting old. But the pederast, whose sexual impulses are exclusively concentrated on half-grown boys, is paradoxically safe from this fear of old age: scientific research has proved that for 12- to 15-year-old boys having sexual relationships with an adult man the exterior of the partner is not of any importance. The older partner is idealised by the boy for his knowledge, for his professional status, his car, his wallet or—very frequently—for his human understanding. The symptoms of old age or flaws like baldness are only very rarely thought troublesome by pubertal bedfellows. A fifty-two-year-old boy-lover said, 'My whole life through I only slept with heterosexual boys between 13 and 16 years of age. For them I'm friend, father and lover united in one person. And for me they have the same honest (eventually dishonest) feelings, regardless of whether I'm an 18-year-old Apollo or an 80-year-old fairy king.'" (Ziegler, *Homosexualität*, 11)

It can even happen that a boy is fascinated by a man's ugliness. This is the theme, for example, of Peyrefitte's novel *Roy* (1979) and of Isabel Holland's novel *The Man Without a Face* (1972). The German artist Hildebrandt (*Au plaisir des dieux*) draws with evident relish scenes of beautiful, slender adolescents being chased by ugly, satyr-like old men, to whom they willingly abandon themselves.

In his research among 2500 male subjects, Barrington (1981, 180) even found "a large percentage (perhaps as high as 12% or more) of bisexual and homosexual youth and young men who prefer sexual contacts with older men, 50 to 65+."

Sigmund Freud stressed the fact that the first sexual object of the child's desire is an adult and not an age-mate (Schérer 1979, 92). The beloved adult is generally, of course, the mother or the father. However, as the child grows and becomes more and more perceptive of his surroundings, he is faced with two contradictory commands: Love your parents! Don't desire incest! Faced with such a dilemma, the child develops feelings of guilt toward the parents, for whom this is quite a satisfactory development, for it makes their son meek and submissive.

But now, suddenly, a boy-lover crosses his path, and both are touched by Eros. In the eyes of the boy this man is an adult: that is, he belongs to the undifferentiated category of people over 25 years of age. Thus he is similar to his father and can therefore be a kind of substitute—but a substitute with

whom sexual love is possible without committing incest. The boy-lover, then, offers a solution to his inner conflict.

THE PARENTS

Most parents react violently when they discover that their son is being intimate with a boy-lover. Often they have equally well-developed incestuous desires for their son (desires which they abhor and don't wish to acknowledge to themselves and therefore suppress) which now, filled with hate, they project onto the individual "child molester" who "abused" their son (Krist 1976, 66). They thus act as if the child were their property, something belonging to them, which a stranger is now trying to entice away. Times may have changed since Aristotle wrote that "a son or a slave is property, and there can be no injustice to one's own property", or since the Romans granted fathers the right to kill their offspring (Linedecker 1981, 115), but there is still a strong residue of these sentiments lurking in contemporary society. Moreover, during the last hundred years the position of the child in the family has changed. In former times families were larger, and thus parental ties with each individual child more superficial, a tendency re-enforced by the high child mortality rate of the times. Today the tie between parent and child is a lot stronger and this makes for much greater resistance to intimate friendships with other persons (Lochtenberg 1981, 31).

Every individual's sexuality lies somewhere on the scale between pure heterophilia and pure homophilia. That is to say, it integrates a certain percentage of homophile tendencies. It is a great help, then, to his self-awareness if the boy who is evolving into a predominantly heterophile man discovers and investigates this other side of his sexuality. If, by so doing, he reaches the conclusion that homosexual activities give him less pleasure than he feels with a girl, he will thenceforth have nothing to repress and suppress when he begins going around exclusively with women. It will only make him a better balanced, more liberated heterophile than the man in whom the latent desire for homosexual activities was never satisfied or was repressed into the unconscious.

Predicting the final orientation of a boy is impossible. One has to shake one's head in wonder at the easy assurance of some people who believe they can see the "unmistakable signs" of homophilia in a ten-, twelve- or fifteen-year-old boy.

And then, too, many parents experience this as a challenge to their authority. They usually feel, with keen parental intuition, that a change has taken place in their son's relationship with them the moment sexual intimacies with a boy-lover begin (Lotringer 1980, 4).

They are indeed right: a change has occurred, but this doesn't mean that

they should react defensively in response to slighted pride and ego. For no child is ever the property of its parents; it is, rather, a person entrusted to their care on his way to independence—that is, to its own personally stamped destiny. Possessive love is, in the final analysis, no love at all (Plack 1967, 52). Such a reaction is also short-sighted, for it violates an old biblical truth which applies not only to one's own soul but to the soul of another as well: he who wants to possess it will lose it; he who frees it will keep it.

Parents who look upon the man who loves their son, and is loved by their son, not as a rival or competitor, not as a thief of their property, but as a collaborator in his upbringing, someone to be welcomed into their home, will soon see that the ties which bind parent and child become stronger. This is only to be expected, for the inhibitions and prohibitions which frustrated the boy have now vanished and he can relax without ambivalence in his affection for a father and mother who understand and approve of his most profound feelings and desires. Parents who realise that their authority over the child is not granted to them as a self-interested, unlimited, everlasting right, but is a power to be used only for the child's own well-being, gradually to be reduced as he matures, will have fewer worries about this increment in the boy's independence. Actually they retain much more influence over their son if they are involved in this relationship with his adult lover. If they take their share of responsibility for what happens within it and so can exercise some control over it and, when necessary, help or advise the boy, or even interfere (Möller 1983, 81, 85). Parents who react with hostility, forcing the boy to keep everything secret from them, lose control completely. To positive-minded parents, the friendship and sexual activities which unite their son to a person outside the family are not disasters to be postponed as long as possible; they are simply milestones on the road of his evolution to the point where his own knowledge and experience can guide him. They are, thus, a cause for rejoicing. The kind of authority which sets itself up in opposition to human nature will gradually be eroded by repeated, miserable quarrels, leaving behind a wasteland of hatred and despair. Authority which gradually reduces itself, acknowledging the natural development of an independent personality, will retain continuity as a loving and recognised source of wisdom and greater experience.

Mothers, it seems, are the more easily reconciled with the idea of their sons having relationships with men, where the erotic bond is temporary and passing, than with girls, which suggests a life-long union (Matzneff 1974, 108).

- 132 "The mother of a (...) fifteen-year-old boy raised no serious objections when a physician approached her and explained that he and the youngster were lovers. She consented without argument when the doctor said that he was going to keep the boy." (Linedecker 1981, 290-291) A Canadian mother,

who allowed her 13-year-old son to sleep with a man with whom he was very evidently in love, went farther and put forward sound arguments for her decision: "If I say no, he will obey, but at his sixteenth birthday, when the law permits him to fix his own residence, he'll leave me and I'll never see him back. Now, when he reaches that age, he may go to live with his friend, but he'll continue to see me from time to time and I'm sure of his love." (Personal communication) Hetty (40 years) declared, "Yes, in the eyes of a lot of people I may look like a degenerate mother, but I don't care, I'll do it just the same. Look, I don't suggest anything and I don't forbid anything. I leave it up to the boy. This man, Kees, whom my son Menno (12 years) has his relationship with, was in prison once, but I just simply trust this friendship. So why should I try to break it up? I've known Kees for two years, now. After my divorce I had the feeling I was losing contact with my Menno. He had become completely estranged from me. One day I talked this over with Kees, and he said, 'Send the boy to me and I'll talk with him—he can spend the weekend with me.' I thought, well, this will be good for Menno, to have a change of scene. I hoped Kees would have some influence over him. First he went for the day, then for a weekend, and the next weekend, too. Then I thought, poor Kees, he has his own work to do, and now he has the care of somebody else's child, and that's too much, so I told Menno, 'Don't go to him this week.' As soon as Kees heard Menno wouldn't be coming he appeared on my doorstep. He got quite aggressive and said to me, 'Why won't you let him go? It can only be because someone told you I'm a paedophile—child molester, if you don't know what that means.' Now, in grammar school I'd once heard this word, but, it's true, I didn't really know what it meant. Well, since that day Menno has gone off nearly every weekend to Kees. I saw that such great affection had grown up between them that it seemed quite normal that they spend a lot of time together. And I found that Menno was becoming more open towards me. He started to tell me things again. It was amazing how he changed. My oldest boy noticed this, too. Menno had lost his trust in people and he regained it through Kees. I haven't the faintest idea what goes on between them sexually. I've never asked questions about it—quite frankly, I don't need to know. But if something *is* happening, then I believe it is a great advantage for a boy to have a man like Kees to guide him. It seems to me like a sort of natural evolution. If it's based on tenderness and friendship, it can't be wrong, can it? I think it can be a great protection for the child. A security. It certainly is in this case, because I think it's kind of a substitute for the father he doesn't have any more. But Kees isn't a real father figure. He doesn't like to exercise authority; he's not at all dominating. I believe that later, when Menno starts to go out with girls, he will find sex easier, because he'll be more advanced in this area already; he won't be bungling any more. Inexperience can cause of a lot of bitter grief, can't it? Terrible frustrations which stick with you if things at the beginning go badly." (Berkel 1978)

The Ancients knew about the fully consenting parent. At a banquet of

Kallias described by Xenophon a father gives his beautiful son Autolykus, who is about fifteen, and his adult lover the opportunity for an intimate meeting (Buffière 1980, 575-577).

Sandfort investigated 25 cases of man/boy paedophile relationships. (In evaluating the results below, however, one must keep in mind that he was dealing with an especially favourable selection.) In 16 of them the parents of the boys were not explicitly informed about the sexual aspect of the relationship:

In 3 of these cases they weren't even aware of the relationship;

in 6 cases, the adult partner thought that the parents assumed there was a sexual aspect;

in 2 of these cases both boy and older partner thought the parents assumed there was a sexual aspect;

and in 2 cases the parents knew their son's friend was a boy-lover.

In 8 cases the parents knew about and consented to the sexual aspect: the boys said the parents thought it "good", "normal", or "fine".

In 1 case the parents' state of knowledge was unknown.

Where the parents were hostile to the relationships, their sons disagreed with their parents' feelings very strongly. In 5 cases the boys said they could understand them but thought their views "old-fashioned", "out-dated" or "stupid" (Sandfort, 1981, 81-83).

The overall attitude of his parents toward sexuality largely determines whether the boy will discuss with them his friendship, with its sexual aspect, or keep silent. In Pieterse's investigation, 47.2% of the adult paedophiles interviewed said the children would not speak about it, 17.5% thought the children *would* speak about it, while the rest were undecided (1982, II-21-22).

Indignation is most characteristic of those very parents who have been unable to establish the right kind of relationship with their sons. The revelation that their boy has been searching for love and understanding in someone outside of the family comes as an accusation that they have been unable to provide adequately for his needs. In their fury they try to deny this; they want to prove to the world at large (the police, the judge, their neighbours) just how much they take to heart the fate of their child.

Sensitive parents, on the other hand, those with deeper insight into the mind of their son, who have good relations with him, will react more calmly and with better judgement. One father put it well, speaking of his son's adult friend, "You can tell immediately the difference between someone who gives and someone who takes. You just have to look at the boy, because he is your child. You'll be immediately aware of whether he's feeling happy or tense. What's shocking is not the fact that boys have sex with adults, but that afterwards they may feel guilty. And that proves that this particular adult is instilling in him a feeling of guilt." (Hennig 1979, 159)

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

Parents such as this father will interfere when protection is required. Parents who lack this kind of intuition, and don't have a close bond with their son, would do better to leave the decision with the boy.

ADULT LOVERS VERSUS PEERS

Lycurgus, the Ancient Greek legislator, was of the opinion that no boy could grow up to be a good citizen if he hadn't shared his bed with a man (Borneman 1978, 590). And just recently a German author closed his little book *Ein Leben für die Kalokagathia* with the lines: "The natural partner for the small child is his mother; for the boy, his peer; for the adolescent, a man; for the young man, a girl." (Bielefeld 1975, 28-29). He quotes one boy by the name of Jürgen: "Do I have a friend? Yes, I did, for many years. Martin and I understood each other very well. But when you're fourteen, you are looking for more than what a boy your own age can give you." Therefore Jürgen longed for a man who would take an interest in him. In Pieterse's investigation, 62.2% of her paedophile subjects believed that many children felt the need of such a relationship; only 5.4% of them didn't and the rest weren't sure (1982, II-24).

Sons of the "common man" in the great city apartment building complexes are, to their misfortune, inculcated with and inhibited by the homophobic taboos. But removed from their peers, such boys tend to be open and ready for human contacts that will bring them more than their associations with comrades can (De Brethmas 1979, 23). Tony Duvert claims that many boys are much more interested in the company of adults and the genitals of adults than in being with their age-mates. He calls this "enigmatic", but fifty pages later he explains: "As I have already stated, young boys often do indeed show a very strong preference for men, even—indeed particularly—for older men. No wonder: life makes you afraid; those who have already arrived at where you fear to go shouldn't necessarily be despised... As soon as a boy no longer considers you a villain, all his ageist feelings disappear." (1980, 89, 137)

This explanation isn't very convincing, however. Isn't it rather that the boy, arriving at puberty, begins to free himself from parental authority and wishes to be increasingly independent? But each emancipation process is made miserable by the fact that the individual liberating himself will always try to rush things, while the authority from which he is breaking away will at the same time be putting on the brakes. This leads to those continuous and unfortunately bitter conflicts which characterise both the political emancipation of a colony and the social emancipation of an adolescent.

The boy shakes off the yoke of parental authority and wants to forge ahead with his independence faster than his evolutionary stage permits. He is still in need of protection and guidance but is no longer willing to accept them

SEX WITH MEN: ADULT LOVERS vs. PEERS

from his father. This makes him uncertain and, as Schlegel (1966, 197) rightly observes, he needs the help of someone else. He is looking, then, for an authority he can trust, but his striving for independence will only let him tolerate an authority which is of his own choice, to which he submits of his own free will, which, moreover, it is guaranteed he can shake off the moment it becomes too much of a burden. This is how the boy and the adult friend stand with respect to each other; there is a kind of ambiguity in the origin of such a relationship, but at the same time it may achieve a rare perfection because the bond is not limited to mental exchange but is welded by the heat of physical union.

The crumbling of parental authority and the rapid changes in his own body conspire to make the boy in puberty immensely insecure. There is a desperate need for assurance, and this his peers are quite unable to give him: only an adult can perform this function. That a grown-up loves him, thinks him handsome and attractive, rejoices in his growth and maturation is of utmost importance. And at an age when the physical is so all-embracing, nothing can better convince a boy of the sincerity of such feelings as the mute language of the body: the swelling of his big friend's penis and the way, shaking with passion in mutual embrace, he spurts his seed. What better proof that the boy is attractive and loveable? Such a positive evaluation of self is an indispensable condition for being a lover. One can only love another person in the way one loves oneself, and therefore only if one loves oneself. Only if you believe you are loveable can you believe in another's love for you and respond to it. He who despises himself as worthless can only distrust the loving expressions of another person: something must be wrong with anyone who pretends to love me, for I'm not loveable in the least (Frenken 1976, 166-167).

A person who doesn't accept his own body, thinks it ugly or repellent, will be ashamed of showing himself naked to his partner and will often aggressively reject sexuality (Van der Steen 1980, 443).

And so the lover who conveys the conviction that the boy is able to inspire love and excite his partner's lust, that in his sexual behaviour he is beautiful and enticing, pleasing to the eye of an experienced adult, such a lover performs an invaluable service to his boy.

- 133 "Marcel, the fifteen-year-old son of my host, likes to get up late during his holidays from school. But tomorrow he has an appointment at eleven o'clock. I offer to wake him up in plenty of time. He gives me a mischievous smile, as he knows something of my intentions, but he accepts. The next morning I enter his bedroom at the appropriate time without making any noise. He is only half asleep. One of his eyelids flutters. I draw the bed-clothes aside. He is stark naked: a fine, healthy body with fully developed genitals. I caress his chest and belly, and now he moves his head, opens his

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

eyes, looks at me, still saying nothing. My hand now touches his knee and slides up the smooth inside of his thigh to the seat of nature's forces within him. His balls are visible in the beautiful curve of his sack. I handle them, squeezing just a bit. 'The sources of life,' I say softly. 'They're big and solid, and that's usually the sign of a strong desire for discharge, isn't it?' Now he grins, feeling flattered but still not saying anything. Serenely he lets me have my own way, and as I take his penis in my hand it soon swells up big and hard. I strip the foreskin down, uncovering the slick top. 'Isn't it beautiful?' I ask. Now he's completely awake, and very interested. 'What do you mean?' 'Well, look at how marvellous this shape is, the shifting of these curves. This is one of the most beautiful parts of your body, and no wonder, because it's your flower, isn't it?' 'I never thought about it that way.' 'But it's true. We embellish our gardens and homes with the sexual organs of plants, yet we hide a boy's flower. Boys at your age are so beautiful they should all walk around naked as much as possible so everyone can enjoy the spectacle of their bloom. You shouldn't cover your flower but exhibit it proudly, because it's a marvel, and the seat of your finest pleasure.' (Personal communication)

The English poet Raile advocated "an aesthetical appreciation of a boy's manly attributes as a highly necessary accompaniment to a successful Uranian (i.e. homosexual) love-affair" (D'Arch-Smith 1970, 116).

Experiencing the rapid growth of his genitals at puberty, many a boy worries "whether everything down there is all right". This stimulates his curiosity about what these parts look like in adults.

134 De Brethmas parked his car near the gate of a well-known grammar school. "I transfixed with my Gaze Number Four the roe-eyes of the passing boys, until suddenly there was a response. It was the fifteenth or twentieth. My prey is still rather young, about fifteen, white blond, sturdy but not squat. 'Hello, are you free?' 'Yes.'" He takes the boy to his home, makes him sit down on the bed by his side, then pushes him onto his back. "'Is this the first time?' 'Yes.' Their reply to this question is always honest. Only an adult could conceive the idea that they would deny this in order to seem like big boys. Youth doesn't boast, has no pride for what it does in bed; they discuss it frankly, honestly, and they hope, by being plain, to facilitate the task of the partner who initiates them. With detachment they commit themselves to the elder who will guide them to what they have heard talked about, to what they have so often dreamed about, but of what they are still a little bit afraid, because of all one has been told about it. 'But you want to do it anyhow?' 'Yes.' This question is quite superfluous, as is clearly proved by the stiff condition of his barometer. At this age, being inexperienced, they still don't know the pleasure of having yourself slowly undressed. If you touch their hard-ons with your hand, this is a signal for them—as the most natural of reactions—to start pulling off their clothes. Alain is no exception to this rule,

SEX WITH MEN: ADULT LOVERS vs. PEERS

while I find a mischievous pleasure in staying dressed. Trusting and filled with pride, he shows his little garden to me, looking at me in questioning suspense to see my reaction. He awaits the result of my inspection, the certificate of being well-shaped, that I, as an expert, have to grant him. This is part of a boy's motive the first time he decides to exhibit his genitals. It explains why he undresses so willingly and why he so easily overcomes his sense of shame. It is like being examined by a doctor. He expects you to tell him that everything is all right, that he is a handsome fellow and that the girls later will run after him. It's a last test before he gets his driving license. Therefore it is absolutely decisive for the boy's future that, even if you find his penis ugly, curved, too short or too thick, you declare that he has the nicest cock in the whole school, the juiciest balls, the most elegant hair growth, the most seducing crotch you ever saw, and that he'll become a real Casanova with such trinkets." (De Brethmas 1980, 93-94)

This inner lack of self-confidence drives "many boys to enter into only a short-term relationship with an adult. Once, or twice, and then they stop. It is a way to prove to themselves that they have a body, that they exist. And afterwards they don't have to grope any longer. At this point the man should withdraw from the boy's life, without pressing him further." This is the opinion of one thirty-year-old boy-lover (Hennig 1979, 165).

With others there's only curiosity: what really happens? As soon as this is satisfied they are no longer interested.

But for many, many boys, intimate relations with a man fill a deeply felt need during puberty and adolescence. This desire, as Freud long ago dimly perceived, is universal (Maasen 1983, 119). Everyone who has done research in this field has met "some adolescents calmly asserting that they themselves made the first move, brought about the first contact, because they had already been dreaming of this for months, because they felt an imperative need for it and found a mental and physical relief in it which permitted them to work better at school or in their jobs." (Baudry 1982, 123). What Plato said about those "wanting to make friends with men and delighted to lie with them and to be clasped in men's embraces" was certainly not only valid for his own time: "these are the finest boys and striplings, for they have the most manly nature. Some say they are shameless creatures, but falsely; for their behaviour is due not to shamelessness but to daring, manliness, and virility, since they are quick to welcome their like. Sure evidence of this is the fact that on reaching maturity these alone prove in a public career to be men." (*Symposium* 191 E-192 D, in the translation of Lamb)

WILLING BOYS

This may explain why so many boys are willing to abandon themselves sexually to a man. De Brethmas, out of personal experience, believed that

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

among 14- to 20-year-olds 10% have predominantly homosexual tendencies and actively long for contacts, while another 20% would like to try or are passing through a temporary phase of willingness. Thus 30% of all boys would be prepared to have relations with a boy-lover (1980, 40). This agrees entirely with the results of an investigation among 1500 French grammar school students in 1977 performed by Bertrand Boulin: 28% of these 12- to 17-year-old boys declared they were ready to have a homosexual experience (1977, 261). American research came up with much higher figures: not less than 77% of the boy-subjects had consciously desired this kind of sexual activity. More than half of them had intuitively felt that some man had wanted to have sex with them; no less than 48% had been looking for such advances, even encouraged them, and 20% had openly taken the initiative themselves (Bloomingdale, quoted by Williams 1969, 18).

Of 107 German students who had in their boyhood been "seduced" by an adult, only 17 said they had resisted while 90 characterised their behaviour as co-operative (Kirchhoff 1979, 289). There is a striking difference between the reactions of boys—mostly positive—and those of girls—mostly negative—when confronted with an adult's sexual desire (Wegner 1953, 55).

- 135 Mark and his younger brother Daren (12) "are fooling around in the front room. 'I want to go to bed with someone,' says Mark. 'With a woman or a man?' quips Daren. 'I'm not like you!' says Mark. 'Oh?' says Daren immediately, 'I thought everyone wanted to go to bed with men!'" (Moody 1980, 52)

Men with keen intuitive powers may only rarely be turned down.

- 136 A Dutch student who gave private lessons to grammar school boys, once told me that in the course of five years, with over a hundred pupils, he had only met with one refusal. It was a seventeen-year-old boy who didn't want to be masturbated by him, and the boy excused himself, saying he had a girl friend and wanted to save his sperm for her.

It is not his age-mate, it is the adult whom the maturing boy really needs. It may be quite fun to amuse himself simultaneously with his school fellows (Pieterse 1982, I-33)—there is certainly nothing wrong in that!—but the adult fills an existential blank (Schärer 1978, 183). The Italian artist Caravaggio showed the depth of his perception by making the young John the Baptist in one of his most celebrated paintings embrace, symbolically, not the lamb but the buck.

If this is true for boys in general, it applies even more to those who are on the road to becoming adult homophiles. "Grownups have a particular appeal to gay kids because the kids can't take the risk of rejection that comes with

SEX WITH MEN: WILLING BOYS

making a pass at someone their own age. Johnny might shout it all over high school, but Mr. Smith won't. And for gay kids who are already alienated from their peers, having a grown-up friend can mean access to a whole new world—a place where, among other things, it's no longer disgusting to be gay."

Frank Rose who wrote this (1978, 18) quotes a boy-lover who is about 35 years of age: "Respect is what a lot of these kids are lacking. That's why it is so easy for somebody like me to go to bed with them. (...) But I don't think it is really a father figure they're looking for. It's more complicated than that. A lot of these boys—particularly the ones who are so insistent that they're heterosexual—like and very much want a lot of physical affection. That may be something you associate with your father, but I don't."

Following in the footsteps of the Swedish psychiatrist Ullerstam (1964), Borneman suggests that society, instead of fighting such relationships, should help to find a paedophile for every child who is looking for a father figure (1978, 1359).

It has long been common knowledge among boy-lovers that fatherless boys are generally the easiest to establish sexual relations with. But this hardly puts out of the running those whose fathers are very much present in their homes. For there is "an endless need for tenderness in the arms of an adult in every primitive boy" (Augiéras 1970, 170). And not only in "primitive" boys, for every healthy youngster has something of the primitive, the natural instincts, in him, and the tenderness he thus needs he won't get enough of from his father, even where the father is especially caring and devoted. After one boy once "exploded" at his side in bed, Peter Schult said of the inmates of a boarding school for wealthy boys, "Once again I was surprised by this terrific longing for tenderness hidden under the rough shell of these boys, and by their own stock of tenderness from which they were willing to serve you so generously." (1978, 176)

The most natural way of expressing and experiencing such tenderness is through sex. There are exceptions. For some boys—especially the pre-pubescent—the sexual part of their intimate friendships with a man may remain dubious or even unpleasant (Pieterse 1982, I-20). But in a large majority of those approaching puberty, or who have passed on to that stage of maturation when the sex drive is most intense, there is a hunger for sex, and its satisfaction is an important element in their relationship to an older friend. The boys in Sandfort's research affirmed this with hardly an exception. It is not unusual that in a real love relationship the sex means less to the older partner than to the younger.

- 137 Let us quote some of Sandfort's adult subjects. Mark: "Between Gerrit and me, obviously, there is a tremendous amount of understanding and love.

Reaching an orgasm and having sex are not really very important. They are simply events in our lives, and beautiful ones."

Henk: "That's the least important part. It is an extra, but if it had never happened we still would have stayed together over these past two years. For me this wouldn't have made any difference. It was a positive thing, a plus. (...) If it would have been without sex it would still have been nice. Yes, now I wouldn't want to do without it, the sexual contact. (...) It may sound funny to you, but after having sex with him you might even say that I love him more than before."

Paul: "The way Christian usually behaves toward me, the responsibility I feel for him, the love he gives me, the interest he shows in me—all this is just so beautiful that I would put sexual satisfaction in second place." (1979, 167-180)

For the boy the sexual aspect may be of paramount importance. The beginner discovers that an adult is more skilled and better able to arouse his lust and bring it to greater satisfaction than an inexperienced age-mate (Sandfort 1979, 221). For a sensitive initiation, a loving adult is the better partner.

In the beginning many boys, especially younger boys, prefer to take the passive role, just letting their friend bring them to orgasm. With time, however, their youthful, imperious sexual drive may transform them into resourceful and talented lovers. Men having regular intercourse with women as well as boys and "whose goal is pleasure frequently report more fun with boys than with wives." (Rossman 1976, 122) "Some boys are extremely imaginative in sex play, and I know of more than one wife who has benefited in bed by techniques her husband learned from his boyfriend." (Eglinton 1964, 441)

138 A "cautious and conservative junior high school teacher we shall call Mike Milkey" had "for twenty years kept his pederastic desires in check, priding himself on having never in his life crossed the line into illegal sexual activity. His many close pederastic friendships with boys had been chaste and platonic until he encountered a boy whose insatiable sexuality broke down all his inhibitions. The heady wine of his unfolding sexual experience with this enthusiastic boy transformed Mike into a sensuous pederast who can write, 'This marvelous experience would be worth twenty years in prison. It has been like a conversion experience for both of us. For the first time in my life I'm open now to all sorts of new erotic sensations. My relationships with women are much more satisfying and my boy is now a ladies' man no girl can resist.'" (Rossman 1976, 28, 29)

We have already seen that in the gay world shape and size of the penis is most important, the larger of the species being the most desired. This is even

more true among boys who haven't yet attained their full sexual development. "The anatomy and functional capacities of male genitalia interest younger boys to a degree that is not appreciated by older males who have become heterosexually conditioned." (Kinsey 1948, 168; cf. Reeves 1983, 21) A man, thus, is more exciting than an age-mate, for everything about him is bigger (Bernard 1979, 18, 21). Children "are curious about all the biological aspects of a man, his erectable penis, his soft balls" (Möller 1983, 93). Tony Duvert: "When I was only a small boy I strongly desired several adult men; on the beach and other places I felt a terrific hunger for them, and I sought substitutes in older boys (...) I fell in love with the smaller ones; my age-mates excited me, and we did all kinds of dirty things together, but it was the cocks of the older boys that thrilled me through and through while their buttocks left me cold. As for handsome men, I would have utterly abandoned myself to them at the slightest touch." "For an immense number of adolescents (and especially adolescent boys) the company of adults and their physical equipment are infinitely more alluring than that of their age peers." (Duvert 1980, 24-25, 89)

And an American: "I never feel that what I am doing is wrong. For one thing, the boys enjoy what they're doing. They may deny it, but they do all the same. A boy is not as choosy as an adult. Some adults have to have a mixture of Errol Flynn and Sean Connery to be happy—a boy is often satisfied with just a big erect penis to play with. It pleases him to handle an organ larger than his own." (Drew & Drake 1969, 213)

A French fourteen-year-old, "Oh, I'd always somehow dreamt about my age-mates, but last year I fell head over heels in love with my English teacher. He looks like you, a little. Then I realised I couldn't get excited about boys my own age any more, but adults, on the other hand... I need adults; I desire them..." (De Brethmas 1980, 79) A Dutch youngster describes fooling around with his comrades at the age of ten: "There was this man, and he started to join in our games. Also sexually. We thought it was quite exciting, to do this with an older man with such a big cock." (Sandfort 1979, 126)

"The erect sexual organ and the way it works have a symbolic meaning for men, and especially for boys. (...) To the boy the man's phallus thus stands for his bigness, his power, his capacity to dominate, his strength, his courage, his wisdom, his knowledge, his mastery over men and his possession of attractive women, to love them and be loved by them. It is the symbol of victory and everything else that impells a boy to look up to a man such as he wishes he were himself." (Vanggaard 1969, 48-49). This fascination with the phallus was never better put than by Michel Tournier (1975, 123). "I'm like the Africans, wanting a black Mother of God, or like the Tibetans, wanting a slit-eyed infant Jesus, and I cannot imagine God otherwise than as a male member, high and hard, erected upon a pedestal of its two testicles, a

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

monument of virility, principle of creativity, holy trinity, idol with trunk, fixed exactly in the centre of the human body, half way between head and feet just as the Holy of Holies is situated in the Temple half way between transept and apsis, miraculously uniting silklike softness and muscular hardness, a blind, vegetative, dream-like power, but also a clear-sighted, calculating hunter, a paradoxical fountain in its turn ejaculating ammoniac urine, accumulation of all the body's impurities, and sperm, instrument of war, unicorn, catapult, but also trilobate flower, symbol of glowing life."

"When we look at the classic Greek statue the penis seems like a kind of accidental appendage, the innocent part of a body which we otherwise admire for its power and muscularity, the harmony, pose, action and expression which the sculptor has bestowed. Were the penis in erection, however, it would absorb all these qualities into itself, destroying the aesthetic effect of the whole. An erection draws too much attention, and unmistakably sexualises the body. The centre of gravity of the figure shifts to this demonstrative centre, to this raised and tended member behind which the man stands in all his power. It becomes the centre of potency in every sense. In so far as it possesses an aesthetic value, this consists of its frightening and imposing beauty." (Linschoten 1953, 101-102)

Just looking at a penis may make a boy willing.

139 "I was standing behind a tree beside a lonely road playing with my penis, which is very large. A fifteen-year-old messenger-boy passed by on his bicycle and caught sight of it. His face, I saw, immediately got very red. He put on the brakes, stopped, stood as though transfixed, staring at it with bulging eyes. 'Do you want to touch it?' I asked—'Come!' He didn't say a word, but as I turned and walked back into the woods he followed me, pushing his bicycle. Back in the bushes where we couldn't be seen, I brought out my cock again and he took it very carefully, almost with veneration, in his hand. 'Let me see yours,' I said. 'But it is much smaller,' he said, immediately, however, unbuttoning his trousers. I took hold of it. 'You rub mine!' 'Am I doing it right?' Soon my seed shot out of it. 'Wow, what a lot of come!' "(Personal communication)

140 Someone wrote on the wall of a Parisian lavatory, "The first man to fuck me was my gym instructor. I was 15 and he was 30. One day on the playing field I kept staring at his thick cock and his balls, clearly outlined in his small, white slip. He got the message, then he ordered us all to lie down on our backs. And the whole time we were exercising in this position he stood with his legs spread apart above my head, and his hairy cock excited me so strongly that I got a hard-on. When practice was over he asked me to bring a notebook to his study and wait for him there. As soon as he came into the room he locked the door with his key, came over to me and stood by my side, took my hand and rubbed it over his cock. I was terrifically excited; I felt his

SEX WITH MEN: WILLING BOYS

cock getting harder under my fingers, and now I began on my own to mess about with this big thing. Tenderly he started to undress and fondle me. When I was naked at last he stripped off his pullover and, taking my hand, taught it to fondle his muscular, hairy breast. His cock was so stiff that its tip peeped out of his slip. Now he took it completely out, and I saw his..." Here the text breaks off (Ernest 1979, 108).

Many a boy's wishes, however, aren't limited to this purely sexual aspect but expand to broader and more lasting components of relations with an adult: affection, being accepted, warmth, feeling protected, status and satisfaction of other impulses (Sandfort 1980, 190; De Brethmas 1979, 19). Boys have an enormous craving for attention; thus it is most enjoyable just to be with an adult who listens to and is interested in what he is saying (Hennig 1979, 157). Baurmann, analysing over 8,000 cases, found that children accepted sexual relations with adults "because the child is lonely and doesn't feel sufficiently loved and understood by his parents; because he is grateful that an adult cares and talks to him seriously; because the child has needs and desires which have been neglected; because the sexual contact may satisfy unconscious sexual desires of the child; because the child hasn't received accurate sexual information and is now curious and wants to know more about sexuality." (Baurmann 1983, 714)

Among the child-lovers studied by Pieterse, 99.3% saw affection as a motive for the relationship; 95.9% mentioned the attention of the adult; 95.3% feelings of being protected, of being safe; 87.8% sex; 76.4% excitement and adventure; 44.3% protest against parents; 42.6% gifts, money, candy and snacks; 38.5% feelings of superiority; 32.4% showing off (1982, II-23). Well-off adults seldom realise the extent to which boys, especially from the lower classes, enjoy being courted by elderly gentlemen: they may even be ready to prostitute themselves in order to bring this about (Kentler 1978, 145).

In a steady relationship the boy will certainly want more than just sex. A purely sexual relationship becomes, after two or three weeks, quite tedious (Hennig 1979, 156-157).

141 Philippe told Jacques de Brethmas: "With you, I've the feeling you're a real friend: there's more involved than just 'doing it'. With others it seems that's all they're interested in. As far as they're concerned I'm just an arse. I remember the second man I went with—I'd already stripped off my clothes and he didn't even know my name! But when I do it with you it's not like we're doing something wrong; we do it just like we do other things, because we're friends not just for that but for everything else, too." (1979, 109)

142 Thomas, whom we have already quoted in conversation with Hennig, says, "A boy likes to get around, to do things. He doesn't want to stay at

home. If he likes being with you it's often because there is some kind of trouble in his family. Perhaps he has no father, or his parents don't pay much attention to him, or they meddle too much in his affairs. The boy wants to get something from you that is different from what he gets at home; there is something he wants to get away from. If you create a family atmosphere in your home, if you tell him to sit down and stay there, if you tell him not to touch some apparatus because he'll break it, forbid him to open the window because he'll catch cold, he may come to your place once or twice but then he'll stop. And he's right. You have to offer the boy something he doesn't get at home. You don't have to be calculating about it, but if you know the rules of the game you'll do all you can to make him happy so he'll keep coming back. I suppose it is a kind of trap, but on the other hand I believe you give him a lot, too." (1979, 156-157)

One of Leonetti's subjects believed that many boys don't dare to get to know boy-lovers until they are fifteen. Since sexual activity reaches its maximum at age sixteen, they are already then very active. Later their interest will gradually shift toward girls. In their sexual relations they are, of course, seeking pleasure, but also, and more importantly, support and security (1978, 224). When a boy really falls in love with an adult, "he'll admire him like a brother, like a father, like the adult he wants to become himself," to quote Thomas once again (Hennig 1979, 154).

It is through just this sexual contact that a boy so often finds the sense of security he desires. Fourteen-year-old André says, "When I lie naked in his arms and he does it to me, I feel so safe, so secure." (Sandfort, 1981, 61) No wonder, for in the act of sexual conjugation the loving man gives all his attention to the boy, demonstrates his respect for the boy's desires and feelings as the two of them work together to excite one another's lust. The sexual act makes the boy more aware of his own value as a human being (Sandfort 1981, 61; De Klerk 1974, 144), and, as it does, brings up to the surface, often unexpectedly, his "stock of tenderness".

143 "Sam was a poor black boy. Fatherless, he spent his boyhood in children's homes where he suffered every kind of racial discrimination. His pride and joy was his muscular physique, very well developed at fourteen, the age when I got to know him. You couldn't roughhouse with him as you could, to their delight, with other boys, because he was too rough and didn't control his strength: without really wanting to, he would pound his partners black and blue. At last he returned to his home and very quickly thereafter he started getting into trouble. I never had sex with him during this period, despite his good looks. Then one day, after he had turned sixteen, he dropped by for a visit. His athletic coach wanted to write an article on karate illustrated with photos of Sam in the various positions. Would I take the pictures? I was happy to, so, stripped down to his shorts, he posed, and I admired his

muscular brown body, sturdy as a boxer's. After I had finished I asked, 'Can we take some nude pictures, too?' 'Yes, that would be nice!' And right away he kicked off his shorts and proudly revealed his large, well-shaped penis. After a few more shots he said, 'Wait a minute, I'll make it stiff—that's even better.' At last he was posing with a full erection, lying prone on the bed. I put my camera away, undressed and lay down at his side. Immediately he took me in his arms, pressed his naked body against mine and started to caress me. Then he went to work on my genitals, taking them in his hand, and now I was really surprised, for nobody had ever done this so softly, so tenderly, touched me with so much refinement as this coarse boxer. He was the last person I would have expected to show such delicacy and consideration. The whole experience left me with an unforgettable feeling of sweetness." (Personal communication)

Not every boy reveals his inner feelings as nakedly as Sam. Some pretend—not just to other people but to themselves as well—that they're only doing it for money or gifts, never admitting how much they enjoy abandoning themselves to the ecstasy of sex and experiencing the tenderness of an adult. But in their behaviour, even the younger boys hardly act like "victims of male lust", as they are invariably and sensationally described in the media (Bender & Blau 1937, 514; Burton, 1968, 88). Certainly wherever feelings of friendship exist, the sexual activity means a great deal more to the boy than the satisfaction of his sexual needs (in itself a benefit!): where the relationship goes beyond the casual meeting and grows into a lasting bond, it is the base upon which love can be built.

In his novel *Antinous Geliebter*, Ulrich Stöwer has Epictetus, the philosopher, write a deeply reflective letter about this to Emperor Hadrian, who has just made love for the first time with thirteen-year-old Antinous: "As for your friend, he just did what every boy of his age would have done. He was asleep, and you awakened him. But he didn't really wake up right away, and for some time he walked at your side as if in a dream. You were his guide, and without you he would have gone on sleeping for a few more years, after which he would have awakened to an average life. As soon as he perceived you as his guide, his immediate response was unlimited trust and gratitude, expressed with what you call love. And it was love, for how else can a child possibly show he's grateful? But, my great friend, you know as well as I do that this childish love is different from the love of adults. Most importantly, it is more fleeting. It decreases as a child grows into a man, as he becomes more and more conscious of his power and opportunities. As he grows up he doesn't think about this, and it would be most unfortunate if he did: it would stunt all human and moral progress. Because he doesn't reflect, he accepts the benefits bestowed upon him, even true love, as things which simply, and rightly, exist, which put no obligation upon him, especially since he didn't ask for them.

Since to a youth it seems only natural to receive rather than to give, and since real friendship has to be based upon a mutual exchange of the heart, the senses and the intellect, we must ask ourselves to what degree a friendship is possible between two people so substantially divergent in their capacities. You must always keep in mind that you are not not equals and you will never be equals. Your friendship arises from precisely this inequality." (Stöwer 1967, 160-161)

The Ancient Greeks, as we have seen, considered sex between a man and a boy quite normal; they thus recognised the possibility of an adolescent boy fulfilling the two roles of favourite of a man and active lover of a somewhat younger boy. In Xenophon's *Symposium*, Kritoboulos says he is glad he is young enough to attract adult lovers—and then proceeds to describe how much he is in love with his age-mate Klinias. And Plato mentions an adolescent who is so beautiful that all men and boys—even the smallest boys—follow him with their eyes (Foucault 1984, 214-215).

An intimate relationship with an adult, however, has far more importance for a boy than such a relationship with a contemporary, even though its physical expression is the same. The partners engage in the same sort of sexual activities. It is amazing, therefore, to see how obstinately "experts", like most parents, police officers, prosecutors and judges, draw such a sharp distinction here: whatever happens between boys is more or less tolerated today, or given little real importance, but the moment an adult takes the boy's penis in his hand or his mouth, this is viewed with alarm: the act now becomes pernicious (Dolto 1979, 84). There is no reason whatever for making such a distinction (Matzneff 1977, 140; Passay 1979, 44). The handling of a boy's penis by an adult may actually cause a keener pleasure, because older persons are often more intent on satisfying the lust feelings of their partners than are younger people (Max et al 1980, 72).

In an article in *The Village Press*, mention is made of Paul Stanley, a 47-year-old Roman Catholic priest: "He has yet to see proof of psychological damage resulting from man-boy sex that did not involve force, prostitution, physical revulsion, or incest—and, having seen no proof, is loathe to condemn it (...) 'I found the best way to calm down a gay man who wanted to kill a pederast was to probe his own experience. Many of them had had sex with men while they were growing up, and when I asked them about it they said, 'It was wonderful. In fact, I was a horny little bastard and I seduced the guy!'" (Rose 1978, 18)

So we are now confronted with the problem of who takes the initiative. In his investigation of 25 young partners, Sandfort became convinced that what adult boy-lovers had told him in a prior research project came closer to the truth than what was to be found in the scientific literature on the subject. He makes a persuasive distinction: if the boy is already experienced with other lovers, or has been taught by a more experienced comrade, or has been told

that a particular man likes to have sex with boys, he will often rather easily take the initiative. If, on the other hand, the boy is completely naive, the man then, of course, has to make the first moves (Sandfort, 1981, 48, 91-92).

The Speijer Committee, appointed by the Dutch government in 1969 to give expert advice about a proposed reform in the penal law, concluded that it was wrong, in this context, to use the negatively loaded term "seduction". It would be preferable to speak of "initiation". And we shouldn't forget that this is an initiation which, for the most part, young people expect and consciously anticipate with great excitement and ardour (Speijer 1970, Section 7.9).

The homophobic taboo, however, often forces boys to go through a variety of rather comical acts. Sometimes a boy will pretend sleep, even when the man's penis penetrates his anus and is thrusting in the full flood of passion into it; later he will insist that he never knew what had happened (Valentine 1979, 22-23). Even when not pretending sleep, boys may act indifferent and rather passively allow the man to suit himself without really participating or resisting.

144 "During the rush hours I paw nice boys in the underground. Nearly all of them let me have my way, and I get a hard-on. Sometimes I'm successful in getting my hand completely into their pants and then they ejaculate in my hand." (Ernest 1979, 133)

145 Stan, 20 years of age, tells how one night his father took him to a park to listen to a boys' choir. He was standing close behind a man of about 60 and he felt "how this person's hand went in the direction of my crotch. I got a hard-on, sure, and I let him fondle me for an hour, actually an hour and a half. I pulled down my zipper and let him caress me—yes, the whole time, as I was listening to those sweet little sopranos! Afterwards we went home by the metro, and I thought what a really big joke it was that I had let myself be fondled like that without my father or sister having the faintest idea what was going on right next to them. I was only twelve at the time." (Schérer 1979, 241)

Other boys will delude themselves that what they are doing has no connection whatever with homosexuality, which they find abominable.

146 Every school day two fifteen-year-old high school boys went to the home of a teacher, with whom they were on intimate terms, in order to receive some extra tutoring. They also enjoyed having sex with him. As soon as they were in his house they would strip naked, do their homework with him, and then lie down on his bed, where the teacher had sex one day with one, the next day with the other, while the odd boy out looked on and masturbated himself to climax. One day the two boys arrived on the teacher's doorstep very

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

obviously upset. They said that while crossing a park they had met "one of those queer bastards" who had propositioned them. "Well, we gave him a good beating up, to teach him we weren't queer," they said, at the same time stripping off their clothes for their daily all-male sex games. (Personal communication)

It is hardly exceptional for this inner struggle to be revealed in boys' behaviour. It is often more noticeable in the essentially homophile boy than in the predominantly heterophile youngster (Nichols 1976, 91; Oskam 1980, 41). For the first it is, indeed, a step toward adult sex life as it now begins to shape itself. For the heterophile boy, on the other hand, it is just an experiment, albeit a lustful one, but little more than a casual occurrence. Just as the heterophile is so often shy and hesitant at his first coital act with a female, so the homophile boy may be timid and afraid at his first intimacy with a man. One of Hite's gay subjects said that, if somebody would have tried to touch him when he was about 14, he'd have raced, not walked, away (1981, Dutch edition 686).

147 One of Bloch's subjects had realised since the age of six that he was sexually attracted to adult men. During his adolescence he charmed a girl into falling in love with him and had sex with her, quite aware of the fact that he was driven only by physical lust, not by love. "It was during this time that I saw in a public lavatory an elderly gentleman whose appearance made a deep impression on me. He looked me over, then bent cautiously forward to see my penis. He drew closer to me, moved his lightly trembling hand... and touched my member. I was so shocked, so terrified, that I fled the place, and for some time I didn't dare return. But my desire to meet this stranger grew stronger and stronger, and finally this proved not to be so difficult after all." (Bloch 1909, 547)

148 A fourteen-year-old would always try to look at the penis of the man standing next to him in public conveniences. Often, when he was aware of what the boy was doing, the man would turn so that the boy could have a better view. Then one day a man actually took hold of the boy's penis in his hand. Alarmed, the boy shouted and swore, but even as he was running away he began to regret what he had done. The next day he went back, consciously hoping the same thing would happen again, and when it did he accepted it without any fuss (Leonetti 1978, 194).

Boys who are mainly interested in girls will much more easily accept a casual contact with a boy-lover than those who are predominantly homophile. Schofield (1965, 93) asked a number of heterophile and homophile adults, all of whom had had homosexual experiences, how old they were when they had their first experience. Their responses are shown in Table 13.

SEX WITH MEN: WILLING BOYS

Evidently the inhibition is stronger in early adolescence in homophile boys, for they may experience strong desires for same-sex contacts from a very early age. In a research investigation of 1600 French gays (mostly males), 50% stated they had longed for homosexual activities before they were 10 years of

Table 13. Age of First Homosexual Contact (Schofield, 1965)

First homosexual contact	Heterophiles	Homophiles
12 years or younger	25.9%	27.0%
13-16 years of age	55.5%	33.3%
17-20 years of age	7.4%	31.2%
21 years or older	11.1%	8.3%

age, and 70% had had those longings between 10 and 14 (Lacombe 1984, 33). The inhibition is overcome only when the sexual appetite grows too compelling, or when a boy has reached a degree of self-acceptance as a gay male. Then the event is significant and decisive.

149 In a research project carried out by the Institute of Social Psychology at Groningen State University, a 16-year-old declared, "I had sex with a man of 28. It wasn't strange at all, for I was quite aware of being gay... But it was so completely different. You're suddenly swept into a fresh, new world. Immediately I had the feeling, 'This is the real thing; now I'm where I belong; I'm on the right road at last.'" (De Koning & Blom-van Rens 1969, 16, 11)

With heterophile boys the chief inhibition is homophobia—the fear of becoming a "queer" or being regarded as such by his peers.

150 Jacques de Brethmas was in trouble with a gang of nine 15- to 17-year-olds in his neighbourhood. They shouted "Queer!", "Pig!", "Skunk!" at him and threatened him whenever their paths crossed. But gradually, persevering, using all kinds of stratagems, he succeeded, one by one, in enticing each of them to his home. On their own, isolated from their gang-mates, they proved to be pleasant, friendly boys and were soon willing to become sexually intimate with him. In fact the sexual intimacy pleased them so much that they started to bring along friends and younger brothers to share in the fun. Still, with their gang-mates they maintained the utmost secrecy about their intimacies, and the gang as a whole continued to be hostile: only the shouting of insults stopped (De Brethmas 1980, 200).

BISEXUAL BEHAVIOUR

Misgivings about being converted into a homophile himself may evaporate as soon as the boy has had intercourse with a girl and has ascertained for himself that he functions "normally". If there is sufficient opportunity for heterosexual sex, most boys will look for satisfaction that way; if not they may turn to a male friend.

151 Eric is still occasionally visited by his former boy-friend, now seventeen. "He then wants to have a good round of sex with me, like we used to. This happens when he has played with a girl physically but hasn't made love, and for this he needs me. I don't think with another boy I would go along with such an arrangement, but, because of our former relationship, it seems all right to me." (Sandfort 1979, 177)

152 "While fondling me he's talking about his girl-friend," Saint Ours says of his young friend (1973, 98).

153 "Never underestimate the potency of many 15-year-olds. I knew one who would ejaculate with his girl twice in one evening and then would be at my house within an hour of taking her home, acting as if he were sex-starved," says a boy-lover, quoted by Rossman (1976, 143).

An experienced boy-lover may know quite well that an initial refusal is far from being final, that, in fact, it only serves the purpose of keeping up an appearance of being "normal".

154 A tourist, guided around Lisbon by a handsome boy, invited the youngster, at the end of their perambulations, to a restaurant for a good dinner. Afterwards he proposed that the boy spend the night with him, but the youngster indignantly refused: "I have a girl-friend; I don't sleep with men!" The foreigner accepted this calmly, saying, "Well, let's meet tomorrow afternoon for another walk, then." The boy showed up right on time. They made the excursion, followed it with another dinner. When they had finished eating, the man said, "Well, good night. See you again tomorrow." "No," the boy said, "I'd like to come to the hotel with you!" In the bedroom the youngster immediately undressed without being asked to and, naked, approached the man, proudly pointing to his erection. He was very passionate in his love-making. The key to his behaviour was that sleeping with a stranger would be prostituting himself, but now that the man had shown he valued his company despite the lack of sex, the two were friends, and sexual intimacy with a friend was fine. (Personal communication)

155 (Continued from 142) In a vacation camp, Thomas met 13-year-old François. The boy was big for his age, well past puberty, and was furthermore

extremely intelligent. They got into discussions about literature and philosophy. Thinking François most attractive, Thomas managed to meet him again three weeks later. François saw at once that Thomas was falling in love with him, but he confided that "it" had happened to him once already, with a man, but it had been horrible and he never wanted to have an experience like that again. For the next three months Thomas and François lived in the same building, their bedrooms next to each other. The boy enjoyed kissing Thomas, but that was as far as the intimacies would ever go. Then they went on a trip together and suddenly, in a hotel room, François let himself go. Their relationship continued for two years, and at a certain point François, now fifteen, asked Thomas to take him from behind. At first the man refused, because for him this wasn't terribly important. But François insisted. "It was marvellous, and I believe it was the same for him, because he came at the same moment I did, and this certainly proves that something was going on inside him." (Hennig 1979, 151-153)

Ironically, it is sometimes just the traditional "law and order" upbringing that makes smaller boys so docile towards a sexual approach by adults. It is a well-established fact that the so-called "child-molester" is usually no stranger but in 70% to 80% of the cases a member of the family, a neighbour, a teacher, a friend of the parents, or someone with whom the child has long been acquainted (Albrecht 1964, 2; Baurmann 1979, 103; Gebhard 1965, 817; Kerscher 1978, 152; Lafon 1961, 97; Niemann 1974, 115; De Wind 1969, 78). Now if the child has been inculcated with the belief that he has to be polite to adults, never to contradict them and always to do as he is told, he is likely to put this to practice when an adult he is familiar with asks him to feel his penis or undress (Duvert 1980, 43; O'Carroll 1980, 145). Other parents impart a lesson to their sons quite at variance with its intent: by making all that is pleasant and nice forbidden and evil, the boy easily comes to a most logical conclusion—everything that is prohibited must be nice. Since every child is told not to go with a stranger, he may get the idea that the mysterious stranger has something nice in store for him (De Brethmas 1980, 93). Especially open to such ideas are boys whose sexual education at home has been repressive and to whom "the whole domain of sexuality has been taught to be out of bounds for children" (Van der Kwast 1968, 75-76).

Since in pre-pubertal boys curiosity is a powerful incentive (Groffmann 1962, 165), and since its strength is a measure of intelligence, bright boys are, on average, more willing to be initiated than the duller ones (Gerbenner 1966, 88; Niemann 1974, 98; Wegner 1953, 57). On the other hand, they are also better able to defend themselves against unwelcome sexual advances and assault (Hanack 1968, 91).

In some long-term relationships, sexual intimacies may arise only very gradually. They may even be postponed for a long time.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

156 A Dutchman used to share a bed regularly with a ten-year-old boy, and in the course of time he came to love the lad deeply. But the child had once been sexually assaulted by a man in a most brutal way and this left him with a mortal fear of sex. Only after a year and a half did the man dare touch his little friend in an intimate manner. The boy accepted this without any problem, and so put behind him his traumatic experience. (Personal communication) This case is quite similar to that of François (No. 155).

But the male sexual appetite is so imperious that not rarely the first opportunity which presents itself is exploited.

157 "A well-known gay writer I know (...) once advertised for sex with teenage boys. He met a 14-year-old who was quite attractive, but my friend was most disturbed when the boy immediately pulled out his own cock and wanted to see and touch the man's cock within moments of getting in his car. The man wanted courting and romance first; the boy wanted to get to the genital point." (Reeves 1983, 21)

In criminal trial records we come across all kinds of "explanations", often rather peculiarly worded, of how the accused managed to make the boy willing—gifts, enticing him to a certain place, asking for a service, pretending to give sexual instruction, using obscene language, showing obscene pictures, presenting himself as the kind of person who could be trusted, as Niemann (1974, 128) lists them. They show rather clearly that threats and violence are nearly never employed, and that the majority of the so-called "victims" don't have to be "made willing" but are spontaneously ready for the experience or have even taken the initiative. As Groffmann, a forensic medical expert, put it (1962, 164), "Many children and young people meet the offenders with affective willingness conditioned by the evolution of their natural needs."

158 In a letter to a friend a British seaman told how on Pitcairn Island in the Pacific (where the famous mutineers of the *Bounty* went to settle) he met a fourteen-year-old white boy by the name of Donald. He told the boy he had some magazines with pictures of naked women, and Donald, who had never seen such pictures, insisted on going on board ship with him. "When this boy saw the nude girl pictures his eyes went like organ stops. For half an hour the boy sat and through these two nudist magazines he went over and over again. And all the time he had a beautiful erection showing through his thin cotton shorts. So I went to work on him. He had never heard of homosexuality or masturbation, but, if it was 'sex' he would like to try it. So he stripped naked and I done everything to this 14-year-old except penetration. For two hours solid we played around and this boy quivered beautifully, especially when he made sperm (5 times) and he was exquisite to kiss from the lips down. After I finished my love-making on him he just lay on my bed, legs apart, and

SEX WITH MEN: BISEXUAL BEHAVIOUR

murmuring over and over again 'Beautiful, beautiful'. And believe me, he was beautiful, to make it beautiful. He requested one more round, we tried but he couldn't make sperm the sixth time round and my jaws and arms just felt like dropping off with wear and tear." This letter was accompanied by four pictures showing a fine, sturdily-built boy with fully developed genitals. (Archives of Brongersma Foundation)

Provoking a boy's heterosexual response is a very common device. The man shows him pictures of naked women, alone or having sex with men or each other, or he projects movies of such scenes, realising that any boy in sexual arousal wants to do more than just watch: his penis will be crying to be handled. An American with a lot of experiences, John Valentine, advises the boy-lover to bring up the subject of sex in conversation: "We'd ostensibly be talking about balling chicks and how to improve one's performance, and I'd describe and demonstrate things that feel good, showing him both how to do them and how they feel. Nothing compromising to begin with, but progressing at a rate established by the boy. Progress was usually total. (Often in a well-directed discussion of homosexuality, a boy will allow as how he'd kind of like to try it, but didn't know how to go about getting it done. But not often enough). (...) It's always good to establish early that (when it comes to it) you don't generally go in for this kind of thing, but such is the strange & powerful attraction this exceptional boy exerts on you that you just can't help yourself. (...) (In this connection, it furthers one to be 'bisexual.' Many boys who'd never bed down with a faggot have no such prejudice against bi's)." (Valentine 1979, 150-152) The man must not appear over-eager—and by no means sentimentally enamoured, because this frightens a boy, as Hirschfeld (1914, 542) observed many years ago. He should treat the boy neither as a child nor an adult, for he is in a transitional stage (De Brethmas 1979, 76). Valentine recommends that you be "warm and avuncular." "You can seduce a boy by awing him with your wisdom (this is the Guru ploy) or by making yourself the object of his hero worship. (...) You cannot seduce a boy who doesn't admire you. (...) Diffidence is no aid to seduction. If you can't bring yourself to ask for what you want, you're unlikely to get it. (...) The boy must be put at ease before you can begin. He should feel comfortable, and be glad to be with you. (...) It must be obvious that nothing you might do would be disgusting, etc., that you would never hurt him." The man may help the boy in finding excuses, such as a massage. If he has a little alcohol (not even enough to feel it) he can pretend to himself afterwards that he was drunk. Easiest to conquer, Valentine concludes, are the horny ones, the curious, the tired, the poor, those who feel appreciated; more difficult are the frightened, the very insecure, the defensive, the exhausted, the middle-class or rich, the pure intellectuals (1979, 150-155).

Desire for coitus with a woman can drive a boy who has just become sexually mature into a frenzy. If he has allowed an older friend into his confidence, he might implore the man to furnish him the opportunity he is unable to create himself, thus following the classical example of Theseus who, at sixteen and so fresh looking that people on the streets took him for a girl, seduced old Minos in order to sleep with his daughter (Peyrefitte 1977, 194-195).

159 One of Rossman's subjects told him, "When boys ask why I'm not married, I say because I like both boys and girls and the law won't let me marry one of each (...) When I see a boy who is stunned by this, I may say: 'I'm going to bed tonight with a girl who'd just love to have you join us. You want to make it a threesome?' That's an invitation that's rarely refused. Almost any boy of fourteen to sixteen is likely to go wild at that suggestion no matter what his moral or sex education has been. People who say that one could never persuade a really masculine boy to do this or that have obviously never tried giving him a cute girl to enjoy while doing it." (Rossman 1976, 209)

160 (Continued from No. 104) Eighteen-year-old Alcide: "There's a man with whom I afterwards became very good friends. At the very beginning he used a girl in order to seduce me. I was thirteen at the time, and he knew I sort of wanted to sleep with a girl. So he said to her, I know, 'Look, you entice Alcide to your room, then I'll come to you and sleep with him, and so on.' Thus it was arranged, and I had just started to have sex with the girl when he joined us and we turned it into a threesome. It was a sort of charade we had cooked up together, he and I, to involve a third person in our relationship. But when you get right down to it, we had a love relationship, not just a sexual one. I was head over heels in love with this man. I felt a very close bond with him, just as you always do when you're in love with someone. So when people claim that children of thirteen, fourteen are unable to love and have normal sexual intercourse and so on, I believe they're completely wrong. At thirteen you can have regular sexual intercourse just as well as anybody else, with girls and with men." (Schérier 1979, 264)

Alcide, in retrospect, doesn't complain about this ploy. Nevertheless, such tricks should be rejected on principle. Not only do they end up ultimately frustrating both partners, as Kentler perceptively observes (1970, 173), but they are indicative of a fundamentally immoral disrespect for the younger partner. And the man does not succeed in having the boy really abandon himself to him, only in receiving the boy's sexual favours in exchange for something else (a gift, money, drugs or chance for heterosexual coitus).

A married woman having sex with a boy, her husband finding out and then using the boy to satisfy his own lusts is a theme which in Antiquity

Apuleius wove into a fine story. Boccaccio later incorporated it into his *Decamerone*. Martialis pokes fun at a boy-lover who at first refused to marry Telesina because she was a whore—but made her his wife soon after he heard the rumour that she had a preference for boy-clients (II-49). In other epigrams this poet warns boys that they will have to expiate their intimacies with married women by means of their behinds or their mouths (II-47, 60).

161 Gerbener (1966, 83) reports the case of Reinhold. When the boy was thirteen he spent the summer vacation with a married couple. One morning when her husband was away the woman, who was 31, turned the conversation to the subject of sex and finally asked, "Will we have a try at it?" Reinhold immediately agreed, and they had intercourse. The woman told her husband about this, and the next three nights they had a threesome in bed.

THE END OF THE AFFAIR

Since most boys have the capacity to experience the joys of sex with a man as well as with a girl, this eases the gradual transition from homosexual activities to (exclusive) heterosexuality. Where a real love exists between man and boy, it is an evil hour for the older partner when his young friend tells him, with his face beaming, that he is now "going around with" a girl. This invariably presages the end of their erotic relations: the boy has grown up, and outgrown this kind of relationship. It is no use struggling against the inevitable. Quite the contrary: opposing it can only destroy what man and boy have built together and make a gradual reduction of the sexual bond, which is the best solution for both partners, impossible.

In ideal cases—O'Carroll (1980, 83) gives an example—sexual contact becomes less and less frequent. The boy continues to visit his friend, because this is an established pattern in his life, but it becomes ever more rare that such visits end in bed (Hennig 1979, 158).

In other cases the boy may bring about a sudden rupture, which may be caused by a variety of factors. Don't ask him, however, why he has done it, for no boy can ever explain his own conduct. He may, consciously or unconsciously, feel that his relationship with his girl is threatened (Lambert 1976, 107), or develop qualms about being disloyal to her by having sex with a third person. It might also be that he is so strongly pulled toward heterosexuality that he wishes to put a period behind the earlier homosexual phase of his boyhood. Or it could be just the opposite: he becomes aware that heterosexual activity gives him too little pleasure and sex with a man too much, so suddenly he is worried—is it after all true that you become gay for the rest of your life by having homosexual sex? Better stop it immediately and make yourself "normal" by having intercourse with a girl. Only very rarely will a boy give verbal expression to such feelings and doubts.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

- 162 One sixteen-year-old Belgian boy did, and said to the man with whom he had been intimate for three years, "It is better for me not to meet you any more, because I know when I'm with you I'll want to do it again. Sex with you is so marvellous! It's much more delightful than with a girl. But it's better, healthier for me to limit myself to heterosexuality from now on." He succeeded quite well on his first attempt: he is now a husband and father—and can meet his old friend again from time to time as someone with whom he shares many wonderful memories. (Personal communication)

Another boy is fearful of his comrades' reactions were they to find out about his affair with a man.

- 163 Schérer (1978, 17) cites the case of a boy who liked to sleep with an adult. He had told his mother about it and she fully supported the relationship. But he became afraid he would draw the derision of two of his schoolmates whom he liked very much.

When a boy suddenly announces that he wants to stop their sexual contacts, the man's reactions are critical for the future of the relationship. His disappointment may be so great that he gets mad and says, "All right, if that's the case I don't want to see you any more." In so doing he destroys, with one blow, all the other good things which exist in their relationship. The boy leaves him, convinced that his big friend never really loved him as a person but only wanted his body as a vessel into which he could expend his lust. The rupture is complete, the separation final, and both feel deeply disappointed.

There is a better solution.

- 164 Ken lived as a bachelor in a little village some thirty miles outside of London, sharing a house with his elderly mother whom he loved very dearly. When she suddenly died from a heart attack, he was inconsolable: after her burial he became apathetic and just sat in his house staring blankly at the walls, neglecting himself and everything in his home. Suicide seemed the only solution. Now, it happened that, before his mother's death, Ken had frequently visited a swimming pool in a working-class quarter of London where he became good friends with a group of boys who used to meet there regularly. News about Ken's sad condition circulated among these boys, and one fifteen-year-old by the name of Ronny became deeply concerned. Ronny was the typical Cockney boy: strong muscles, an enthusiastic football player, somewhat rude and coarse in his manners but with a sensitive heart hidden in his rough exterior. His family were decent people, his home poor but well kept. Having lost his father at the age of five, he was affectionately close to his mother and sisters. The following Saturday afternoon Ronny hitch-hiked to Ken's village, rang the doorbell and declared simply, "I've come to help you clean up the house after the funeral. Where's the vacuum cleaner?"

SEX WITH MEN: THE END OF THE AFFAIR

When everything was put right and tidy again, he made Ken go with him to the supermarket to buy food. Afterwards they worked together in the kitchen preparing a fine dinner, then looked at television. When it was time to go to bed Ronny, in just as matter-of-fact a manner, stripped naked and crept into Ken's bed and had sex with him, the boy taking the active role. He was already experienced with other men, especially with a certain Jonathan whom he had once accompanied on a holiday trip.

After that Ronny returned every weekend. For Ken these were the high points of his life just then. "Ronny kept me from committing suicide; his love made my existence meaningful once more. I owe my life to him."

That summer I was a guest in Ken's house. Ronny was also there. Their relationship had now lasted for seven months. I saw Ronny looking at magazines with nude pictures and I asked, "What do you prefer, girls or boys?" He smiled, mischievously, and told me, "Boys!" and that he was crazy about the twelve-year-old brother of one of his friends. That evening Ronny willingly posed as a nude model for my camera, sporting a persistent erection the whole time. On my departure I invited Ken and Ronny to pass the Christmas holidays at my home.

They arrived on December 20th. Ken immediately took me aside and said, "Please don't make any allusion to Ronny's sexual past, because that will make him very angry. A month and a half after you stayed with me he suddenly declared that he didn't want to visit me any more, because he wished to put an end to all the sex between us. He had now found a girl. Of course this came as a heavy blow to me. But at the same time I told him I loved him dearly and he would always be welcome, even if there was no sex. Moreover, I promised to respect totally his decision and not try to make him change his mind. He was evidently very impressed by this and since then he has returned regularly for the weekends. At the moment he is somewhat exhausted, since yesterday he took leave of his girl-friend—that is to say they were naked in bed for eight solid hours making love to each other. Even for a boy as potent as Ronny this is quite a feat!"

The firm friendship between Ken and Ronny continued in this fashion for the next two years, devoid of erotic expression. Then suddenly Ronny received a staggering blow. The police accused Jonathan, the man with whom Ronny had been formerly intimate, of sexual activities with boys, but didn't have much solid evidence. Searching his home, however, they had come across Ronny's address and they now hoped to use the boy as their chief witness. Ronny denied everything, but the police weren't so easily put off. His mother and his guardian were informed, and they even forced Ronny to submit to a medical examination. For two months the detectives returned to Ronny's home every Saturday to question him. In their fanatic zeal "to protect children from corruption", they drove Ronny to despair. The boy became mortally afraid of his girl-friend and her family, of the whole neighbourhood being informed, and of himself breaking down under his tenacious lies. The healthy, happy boy changed in a short period of time into a miserable wreck, with pale, sunken cheeks and apathetic demeanour; he

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

seriously contemplated suicide as the only way out. At this point Ken intervened. With considerable risk and expense to himself, he managed to thwart further police meddling with Ronny. On the night when Jonathan's trial had reached its end, without Ronny being compelled to give evidence, with all dangers having at last been averted, the nightmare finally over, Ronny laughed for the first time in weeks and ate dinner with a hearty appetite; later he went to Ken's bedroom, stark naked, stated serenely, "A little bit of cuddling will be allowed now!" and slipped into bed beside Ken. The next morning Ken told me, "I've never spent a night like that, experienced such tremendous passion. Every time he came he started afresh—he was inexhaustible."

Thus the ultimate consequence of the police meddling was that Ronny resumed his forbidden sexual activities with a man, for from that night on he continued to have sex with Ken rather frequently. The fears which had caused the fifteen-year-old to terminate sexual relations with his big friend were no longer present in the seventeen-year-old who had adequately proved he could function as a full-fledged heterosexual. He now found that the heterosexual expression of his love for his girl-friend was quite compatible with a homosexual expression of friendship and gratitude.

A few years later Ronny married, and Ken was best man at the wedding ceremony. (Personal communication)

This story is rather typical. It is not at all unusual for a boy in such a relationship to suddenly one day put a stop to the sexual activity, but to return to his friend, also sexually, after a period of months, or even years. The only requirement is that the man show understanding and respect, and unchangeable affection.

165 One boy-lover was a close friend of a family with three sons spaced two years apart. The oldest, Didier, was a member of the secret society referred to in No. 105 where schoolboys, by putting an automobile badge on their jackets, signalled each other of their desire for mutual masturbation. When he was in a confiding frame of mind one day, Didier told the man about the sex club. The man said, jokingly, "But you never wear that badge when you come to visit me!" Immediately, with a big grin, the boy put it on and said he had always wanted to do it with a man but had never had the chance. After that Didier came every week to the home of his friend and had sex with him. And evidently he boasted to his brothers about it, for soon the second son, Eric, came to the man with the same desire, and later so did the youngest boy, Pierre, when he was twelve. Their parents didn't have the faintest idea of what was happening until Eric, now fifteen and probably more strongly drawn to homosexuality than were his two brothers, began to worry about his sexual makeup and finally told his mother. The parents were shocked and immediately forbade their sons ever to see the man again. Didier and Pierre vigorously denied that they had had sex with the man. They were so furious

SEX WITH MEN: THE END OF THE AFFAIR

about Eric's treachery that for one whole year they cut him out of all of their activities and wouldn't even talk to him.

About a year later Eric, now sixteen, presented himself on the doorstep of his former friend. At first the man refused to let him in. But the boy asked to be listened to, and when at last they were alone together in the man's room he burst into tears and begged forgiveness. The man replied, rather coldly, that he wouldn't blame him any longer for what he had done. Eric said, "There is only one way you can show me that you really forgive me," and before the man could stop him he threw off his clothes and ran to him naked with a big erection. The rest of their meeting took place in bed, where Eric made love with uninhibited passion. After that he returned regularly.

Didier was seventeen, Pierre fourteen, when a married woman, wife of a neighbour, initiated them into heterosexuality. Both boys then put a stop to sex with their male friend, saying they were now too old for it. But they continued to visit him and confided in him all their heterosexual adventures, discussing them in great detail and often asking for advice. More than a year passed in this manner. Then one night Didier arrived and as he talked he was obviously embarrassed about something, beating about the bush, until he suddenly blurted out, "Would you mind going to bed with me?" The man was quite surprised. "Of course I will, it would be a great pleasure. But I thought you didn't like it any more and only did it with girls." "Well," Didier declared a little coyly, "it's fine with a girl, but in bed they let you do all the work, and sometimes I'd just like to stretch out and let everything be done to me." One month later Pierre came to him, quite independently, with the same request. (Personal communication)

There are even instances of adult, married men returning one day to the intimate companion of their receding boyhood, starting a fitful conversation about the good old days, touching upon moments that had been so intensely enjoyable and finally bursting out with the proposition, "Let's do it for old time's sake, like we used to do it then." Their explanations are usually similar to that of Didier: with women you have to do all the work, and once in a while it's nice to be brought to climax passively.

THE BOY AS SEDUCER

We have discussed boys who were initiated into sexual activity by an adult man. They comprise, however, a small minority, for most have already had other kinds of sex experiences. In Sorensen's investigation (1973, 292) only 12% of the boys with homosexual experience had had their initial sexual contact with an adult partner. And even when the first partner was an adult, in two-thirds of the cases the activity was provoked by the boy himself (Gibbens & Prince 1963, 7). This conclusion was derived from criminal court statistics, and they certainly present a negatively skewed picture of what really goes on.

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

This will become obvious if we consider that nonconsensual contacts much more easily and frequently lead to judicial proceedings than contacts where the "victim" freely consents. Such statistics, then, are based upon a very biased sample and badly represent the phenomenon as a whole. Gebhard (1965, 293, 320) judged that the sexual activities of boys eleven years of age and younger were freely consented to by the boys, or even provoked by them, in 70% of the cases, and of boys 12 to 15 in 83% of the cases—this in the opinion of the investigating police officers who, in such affairs, are hardly biased in favour of the accused adult!

Many boys show their willingness beyond any possibility of doubt. Socrates in Plato's *Phaidros* describes the beloved boy as embracing the man in swelling desire, quite prepared to fulfill all his wishes (Buffière 1980, 630). Strato says in one of his poems that you have only to crook your finger at Menedemos and he'd say, "Show me the way; I'll follow you." (Anthologia XII, 184) "The youth's admiration for an older, stronger, and socially more effective male, and the man's desire to play the role of mentor and guide may set the scene for emotions that are easily eroticised." (Churchill 1967, 86; similarly Tripp 1975, 75).

"The melting beauty of a boy (...) Lines, curves, landscapes of flesh more exquisite than any female body shows, more graceful and alive, the strength of his beauty—and more than a body for mine to glorify, but a mind of equal beauty wanting always to be taught, to be to my mind what his body is to mine... To fuck a boy's just high-class jerking off; to make love to a boy you have to teach him something." (Valentine 1979, 89)

166 Moll (1909, 120) reports on a boy who even at the age of seven felt attracted to handsome males, especially soldiers, and experienced strong lust feelings when caressing them.

167 A ten-year-old Belgian boy had to make a bus trip of over an hour to visit his big friend. "As soon as I leave home to come to you I get a hard-on," he told the man. (Personal communication)

168 A Rotterdam teacher had given some sexual education to his elementary school class. A month later a big, blond twelve-year-old rang his doorbell and told him, "I'd like to have sex with you. May I take my clothes off?" (Personal communication)

169 A thirteen-year-old American read in a newspaper "that fags hung around men's rooms, so he went to the beach with his parents and hung around the men's room there; his patience was quickly rewarded." (Rose 1978, 18) A similar story is told by the Dutch author Jef Last (1966, 20). His mother warned her son to stay away from a certain Rotterdam park after dark

SEX WITH MEN: THE BOY AS SEDUCER

because "bad men" loitered there. So he went to that park repeatedly, hoping to be seduced, but never met with any success.

170 A fifteen-year-old German schoolboy, Wolfgang Bettge (1974, 2), published a poem in which he fantasises having run away from home. He gets on a train and shares a compartment with a man in his thirties, and soon he is talking confidentially with the man. The man invites him home. "Okay, I'll come with you," the boy immediately agrees, already looking forward to what is going to happen. Once inside the house the man says, "I'd like to sleep with you." The poem continues:

I said "Why not?"

So we went to the bedroom and switched off the light.

He lay down on the bed and said, "No objections?"

I shook my head and pulled off my clothes.

He was lying on the bed,

He looked handsome, and rather nice.

I went to him, he was very hot, and I sucked his big cock

While he was nibbling at the tip of mine

And spittle flowed out of his mouth.

And when I finally came

He went wild, but only for a moment, and afterwards he was paralysed.

There we were lying, the two of us, one with his own thoughts and the other satisfied.

But thinking it over afterwards in peace,

I had to admit it was just plain fun.

Everyone who has dealt with children knows how often their intense interest in sex makes them provoke a sexual response in others. The boys "often appear to be themselves much more emotionally involved than had previously been thought" (Lambert 1976, 88). It follows from "research and studies that the teenage youth seeking relations with older men is probably more often than not the aggressor" (Blake 1970, 39). A Dutch physician not long ago observed with more than a trace of irony that it was time we created a board for the protection of adults from sexual provocation by young people (De Wind 1969, 78). Child molesters no doubt exist, but there are grown-up molesters as well (Hertoft 1971, I-209).

Pre-pubertal boys and young adolescents love rough housing, because it provides them with skin and body contact. This so often leads to more overt sexual activity: a boy starts play-wrestling with his friend, gets an erection and makes sure that his opponent feels it. Or he simply "forgets" to button his fly after going to the bathroom and so draws attention to that part of his anatomy; if somebody makes a comment he might ask, frankly, "Do you want to see it?"

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

- 171 A man with a Jamaican father, English mother: "I was shown how to toss-off by a schoolmaster and another black friend at 13. (...) I got screwed by an older man, I've forgotten his age, about 35, I guess, when I was 15. I liked it and we were good friends and had sex for about a year. (...) Even at 15 I had a huge cock, it's 9 inches now. I knew I was bigger than anyone else I'd ever seen. (...) So I was very proud of it and showed it off hard whenever I could, even at 14. That's how the master got interested. I also picked up men and boys in parks and loos by flashing it big and hard." (Barrington 1981, 86)

A teacher at a New England prep school writes, "It's almost bedtime, and Phil appears in ripped pajamas which do little to hide his budding masculinity: 'Why do you always look down there, Sir?' A subtle grin, and the subject is switched to 'a letter I just got from my girl. You wanna see it?' I read the letter absently, kid Phil, run my knuckles down his backbone playfully. 'Do that again, Sir. That feels good...' " (Director of Admissions 1960, 39)

Some boys carefully set up their seduction by conversation:

- 173 Ted was an appealing boy of 15, one of twelve children from a "problem family" in America's rural midwest. He worked in a drugstore and one day he was dispatched on a delivery to the home of a 41-year-old customer, a bachelor by the name of Marvin. There Ted saw some scale-model ships which fascinated him, as model ship-building was his hobby. Marvin continues the story: "The next time I was in the drugstore, a week or so later, he commented again about the models, and said he would like to see them sometime. I told him to feel welcome to stop by." A few days later he did. "I could see the boy was lonely, and I saw no harm in being friendly toward him. He asked about the models, and sat for an hour or so looking through a couple of books I had on the subject. (...) After that, Ted came by half a dozen times or so, always when he finished work at night. I picked up a fairly simple kit for a boat model, and encouraged him to begin working on it. Other times we would sit and talk about his school work or things of that sort. Once he brought one of his school books with him, and asked me to help with some homework. I did. Most of the time I spent my evenings alone, and it was good for me to have someone to talk to. (...) It was about the sixth or seventh visit that sex came into the conversation. Ted asked if I had a girl-friend or anything like that. I dodged his questions about that, but a little later he asked if I had any brothers. I told him I had two. Then he asked me if my brothers had ever done things with me. I questioned him about this, and finally he told me that his two older brothers (16- and 18-year-olds) had used him at different times for sexual purposes. (...) Surprisingly enough, he didn't seem to mind his experiences with his brothers, even though he didn't care too much for either of them. Nothing happened that evening, but he was back the next, and he hadn't been there more than a few minutes when he asked if I wanted to 'fool around some'. (...) The fooling around, on this initial occasion, was mutual masturbation. On subsequent occasions, acts of

SEX WITH MEN: THE BOY AS SEDUCER

fellatio took place, although Ted remained a passive partner in these acts. As to anal intercourse, however, the youth was a willing participant actively and passively, admitting that he had been instructed in the passive role of this act by his two brothers. (...) The relationship continued over a period of three years without any major problems" until Ted joined the U. S. Army (Banis 1966, 39-44).

- 174 A 14-year-old newspaper-boy started showing a conspicuous interest in the personal affairs of one of his customers "when he called to collect money for the papers he had delivered. He then began delivering the paper personally, instead of leaving it outside the door as formerly; the next step was a series of sly allusions to all the 'girl friends' that the man, a bachelor, must have. This was followed by allusions to his own sexual adventures and attempts to 'get a girl'. There were offers to run errands, excuses to enter the apartment, and the like. (...) Finally the boy one day, when the subject of conversation had turned to sex, displayed through his clothing an erection, calling the attention of the man to it. Sexual relations followed." (Coon, quoted by Eglinton 1964, 457)
- 175 A 32-year-old married sports instructor, employed at two German high schools, observed, "I'm constantly confronted by quite unambiguous attempts at sexual intimacy by boys, especially by the fourteen- to sixteen-year-olds. On trips and in campgrounds I often get into very difficult situations. I really couldn't reproach any gay colleague of mine if, in a similar situation, temptation got the better of him. I know that even straight men, especially in my profession, become victims of boys' tempestuous instincts." (Werres 1963, 241)
- 176 In half the cases of this kind, writes Worsley (1967, 124), an English teacher: "it is not the older one who makes the advances. There was one attractive, yellow-haired boy who over a space of time regularly used to barge into my bedroom in shorts and singlet, when he knew I was changing back from games; and when I met him later at a party in London, he wanted to know why on earth I hadn't taken advantage of his arrival. That was what he had come for! And this was far from an isolated incident."
- 177 Jersild (1964, 216) mentions the case of a Danish boy-lover who didn't dare turn on the lights in his home at night so that they could be seen from outside, because if he did there would immediately be boys knocking at his door wanting to have sex with him.
- It is not even rare for a boy to sexually assault a man.
- 178 An English boy of sixteen, looking back on his first experience a year earlier, said that he knew exactly what he wanted but not how to go about getting it. One day when his family was away from home and he was alone

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

with his uncle he steered the conversation toward the subject of sex and then asked the man to do it with him. When his uncle refused the boy said he would start to yell for help. At last the man gave in and did what his nephew demanded. Over the next six months they had sex again on several occasions. The boy admitted later that what he had done to initiate the sexual activities might seem most reprehensible, but actually it wasn't so bad, for with sound intuition he had been convinced that his uncle had really wanted it, too, but was afraid to start anything because the boy was so young (Schofield 1965, 32).

On the other hand the inexperienced boy may have longings which at first he cannot clearly understand.

179 In a letter to the Parisian "Service for Children in Crisis", a boy wrote, "I'm fourteen. My parents are rather nice to me, but even so they're making my life awfully difficult. I'm in love with a young man of 22. We have to meet secretly. Our love is intense and enduring. It has overcome all moral, social and family objections. And I can tell you that I most definitely was not seduced by my lover. The seducer was really me."

He had met his friend in a holiday camp. "One night I found I couldn't take my eyes off him... I felt a strong urge to seduce him. He seemed so distant, in his adult world, with his authority. (...) But I didn't hesitate. You can't imagine how full I was with desire and love. Thinking back on it even now I start to shiver. Then one night we went for a walk—it was the first time he really saw me. We discovered each other, we swept each other along in the joy of our lust. And that's how I learned that there was such a thing as lust. My boyhood is going to last such a short time, and I want to enjoy it as fully as I can, but people make this impossible. Yet, when I think of all those things which happen in boarding schools, in holiday camps—all those people who do it secretly and yet are the first to act indignant and denounce others. The bastards! Or pathetic victims. I feel completely normal myself, and I find girls and boys equally nice to look at. Beauty and love are everywhere. But I have to be secretive, when I'd like to shout to the whole world and tell everyone what's so beautiful to me." (Boulin 1977, 40-41)

"No one, I think, will deny that a young boy may be lineally, plastically beautiful; many, however, only hide from themselves that he is desirable. Oddly the boy knows it, and may supplement the effect instinctively, often to an astonishing degree. Many parents neither know, nor believe this. Just how often it is the master who nearly seduces the boy, and just how often it is the boy (yes, nice, like yours) who nearly seduces the master, only someone who has taught at a prep school can tell you." (Toynbee 1961, 84)

Why, then, do most people still persist in talking about "those poor betrayed boys"? Albert J. Reiss, Jr. (1967, 68-69) advances several reasons. Where the boy has liked what happened to him he will keep silent about it,

SEX WITH MEN: THE BOY AS SEDUCER

and so it is much less likely that the people about him, the police and the courts will ever learn about it than in cases where the boy really was victimised, was frightened or traumatised and subsequently complained. And then, too, parents tend to regard their boys as sexually immature, even after they have entered puberty; they are thus usually not aware that their sons are in the most sexually active period of their lives and so don't see them as voluntarily seeking such contacts, especially contacts which they would consider deviant. Upon discovery they will sincerely, if conveniently, explain away the sexual activity by insisting that the child was the victim. Finally, "cases involving a close friend or relative are more likely to be dealt with through informal rather than legal means" which increases the general impression of people, and of the courts, that the older partner is usually a stranger who actually assaults the boy.

180 (Continued from 155) Thomas went to teach in the same boarding school where he had once been a pupil. "The first day a boy sat down by my side and asked, 'Back in your days did you use to fool around the way we do?' I didn't really know how to react to this, but I told him that this sort of thing always went on. Then he immediately brought up the subject of sexual play. I don't remember how this came up... oh, yes, now I remember: his friends teased him and said, 'Who are you going to sleep with tonight?' The boy felt sort of put down, especially because I was grinning, and what he actually asked was: 'What are you laughing at? Were they already doing the same thing back in your days?' I replied, 'Yes, they were.' He said, 'And did you take part in the fun?' I said, 'Yes, that happened sometimes.' 'And do you still do it now?' And then I gave him an answer I should never have let out of my mouth: 'Sitting next to you like this, I'm asking myself the same question.' The boy said you don't talk about these things before you do them; you just do them. He took my hand and put it on his crotch. I simply didn't know what to do. I'm hardly shy, but... I found it rather embarrassing. (...) He was ten, maybe ten-and-a-half. (...) Vincent is today a married man." (Hennig 1979, 147-148)

Stories such as Heinz Birken relates in his book *Knabenträume* are not just wishful thinking!

181 "Tony was just thirteen and bore himself with a superb, solitary aloofness that completely disdained law and order (...) He skied all winter and sat in the Mediterranean all summer, and was solid gold in aspect as well as circumstance. In addition he was ravishingly beautiful. (...) To Tony all the instincts of the 'femme fatale' were first nature, and seemed to flow from deep inside him. By turns I suffered cruelly, the soft pedallings of retreat, streaks of an astonishing tenderness (quite years, I would have thought, beyond his age), and shattering tantrums of bitchiness. (...) Compared to Tony's technique, Sylvia's (a divorced nymphomaniac woman) was that of a frigid child; so

much vestigial coelocanth. Tony was no prudish boy. One of his more engaging habits was to hurl himself on to my knee whenever he found me in a chair. Once established he would snuggle down, and being Tony, would take and give a running commentary on the rate and significance of my pulse. I buried my nose hopeless in his hair." (Toynbee 1961, 85-86)

- 182 The boy's point of view is well depicted in the book *Drei Milliarden Perverse* (X, 1980, 55-56). The narrator was thirteen-and-a-half when he met a young man in a swimming pool and felt strongly attracted to him. They struck up a conversation. "This near-naked young man wearing only a triangular piece of cloth made it clear to me that everything about me betrayed my desire to sleep with him. I was so excited that all at once I asked him, 'What are we waiting for? Why don't we do it in your changing cabin?' He said, 'That's impossible—people would see. But if you come here next Thursday at the same time we'll get a cabin for two.' I dropped my eyes to those thighs, to that little black triangle... The cloth could hardly hide something thick and troublesome. That was all that happened then. We put on our clothes, left the pool together. (...) We talked for a few minutes. Then I boarded my bus. We never met again. Imagine how I felt all the next week. I kept trying to visualise his giant body: I would press myself against it, my head would go down to his belly and I would hide my face between his thighs. I would sniff the salty, crab-like smell of his cock, upon my lips feel the tenderness of its tip, crammed so full and swollen. It would be as though I was a little animal in his nest about to descend to the earth's depths. Was there in all of this—how shall I say it—tenderness, love? (...) Yes, it was love, I have to insist: my fantasies were not vicious; at that time I didn't know, as now, the painful separation between the way of tenderness and the way of sexuality. I would never, for example, have conceived the idea of jerking off while thinking about him. I was mortally excited imagining his naked body, his bronzed skin, his thighs, his mouth upon mine, his arms embracing me, his hands moving from my thighs upwards to my breast and then down again, and his warmth: being paired with him, he to me. How I dreamed about this contact of skin to skin! Would I ever find him again?"

- 183 Fourteen-year-old Bruno was a run-away from an orphanage. Jacques de Brethmas took him in without any ulterior motive. The boy had been roaming about in the rain, had eaten nothing for the past two days and was desperate. "He kissed me as he would have kissed his father, the father he never had had. He snuggled against me. I comforted him, cuddled him, fondled him like a baby. Then he got a hard-on. This was quite spontaneous, something which I hadn't tried to provoke—which proves how human nature, at this age, always prevails, that there is no boundary between the various phases of friendship and physical contact. (...) I was firmly determined not to make any erotic advance, just to see what would happen. I did nothing to guide his mouth toward mine, to make his hand slide beneath my shirt, over my naked skin. Meticulously I only did to him what he had first

done to me. Now he has loved me; I have loved him—we have loved us. I didn't suggest anything to him. He was still totally inexperienced, and yet he overwhelmed me. For he knew instinctively the meaning of a touch, its capacity to unite. He understood the essence of closeness of two persons. He was as one should be at fourteen: charming, delicate, pubic hair only a silky fluff, figure fine and spindle-shaped, gestures clumsy and graceful at the same time. He surrendered himself because he honestly wanted to give me all he had to give, which was himself. He was from start to finish the author of his own sexual initiation. I didn't ask him for anything; he did everything to me, spontaneously, as a matter of course, as if he had been doing it all his life." (De Brethmas 1980, 46-47)

- 184 David Thorstad, a 38-year-old American, wrote, "A few years ago, before I had really discovered an attraction for boys, I myself was seduced by a fourteen-year-old boy, without a word being said about sex. (...) I was not used to boys. I was afraid. In this case, if there was any seduction going on, it was he who was doing the seducing. Seduction is not bad in and of itself. Sometimes it's the best thing that could happen. I like what the Canadian lesbian writer Jane Rule has said about seduction: 'the problem is not to protect children from adult seduction, but to make adults easier to seduce'." (1980, 35)

- 185 One day a very handsome sixteen-year-old came to an artist and suddenly said, "You can draw me if you want."
"Yes, I'd like to very much."
"But I'm ashamed, because it's curved."
"Why? That's the same with every boy—it always hangs down with a curve!"
"No, I mean when it's stiff."

He had given himself away, and now he blushed, afraid. Nevertheless he quickly undressed and revealed a large penis, already erect, bending a bit to one side.

"May I touch it?" the artist asked.

"You can do anything with me you like!"

The artist fondled the excited member and in about two minutes it shot its seed with powerful jets while, at the same time, the boy's face tensed as though in great pain. Later he told the man that with girls, too, he always came that quickly; he had been having coitus now for several months. This boy's upbringing had been strict: his parents had given him very little freedom. But when he was only twelve he was already so sexy that he began to virtually throw himself at men and boys and ever since had been having regular homosexual contacts. Offering himself to this sympathetic artist marked the beginning of a relationship that endured for many years (Personal communication).

III. BOYS AND THEIR SEXUALITY

186 One of Bernard's subjects told him that, as a boy, he used to put on his smartest and cutest shorts and go out on the streets to attract men with the sight of his well-shaped legs, and then allow himself to be "seduced" by them (1979, 37). Likewise, a Frenchman claims that he has hunted men since he was fourteen: "I always got what I wanted." (Leonetti 1978, 203)

A fifteen-year-old boy even wrote a kind of manifesto which declared, "We, the younger ones, no longer want to be the game from which adult hunters can take their pick: the great majority of us wish to actively hunt men ourselves, and chose such of them as please us." (De Brethmas 1980, 12)

Once the rumour starts to circulate that a particular man loves boys, it may draw them like light does moths. When Jacques de Brethmas published his witty *Treatise on how to hunt boys* (1979) he received many letters, a number from boys. "A small minority call me a big, disgusting pervert abusing their ingenuousness, their honesty and a lot of other qualities they pretend to possess, which are quite inconsistent with the grossness of their insults. But a majority longs fervently to meet me, often backing this up by penning love letters and enclosing nude photos." (1980, 12)

187 In a working class district of a Dutch town the rumour spread that a certain man had been arrested by the police for "indecent assault" on boys. When he was sent home again, with the case dismissed, he was annoyed at how many people whispered about him and avoided him. But at night, after dark, boys came knocking at his door, one after the other. This one wanted his transistor radio inspected, the second had problems fixing his bicycle tyre, and so on—all kinds of excuses to come to him. (Personal communication) A Frenchman similarly reported that, home again after serving a prison sentence for indecent assault on a boy, he was simply besieged by boys hanging around him, loitering to meet him, looking for some reason to talk with him (Leonetti 1978, 223).

Given on the one hand this great willingness of many boys and on the other hand the great psychological susceptibility of men to sexual excitement (Frenken 1976, 49); add to that the fact that the average man is much more inclined than is a woman to become sexually active soon after meeting an attractive prospective partner; add further the social repression which renders long-lasting man/boy relationships especially difficult and dangerous, then it can easily be understood how an energetic, spirited, active man who is enterprising rather than timid, endowed with a strong sexual appetite, may have dealings with a considerable number of boys. Hajo Ortil, famous leader of a German youth group, once declared, "I believe during my life I have welcomed some 800 naked boys into my bed, all willing to be satisfied and to satisfy me. Now they've all grown to adult men. Not a single one of them ever

SEX WITH MEN: THE BOY AS SEDUCER

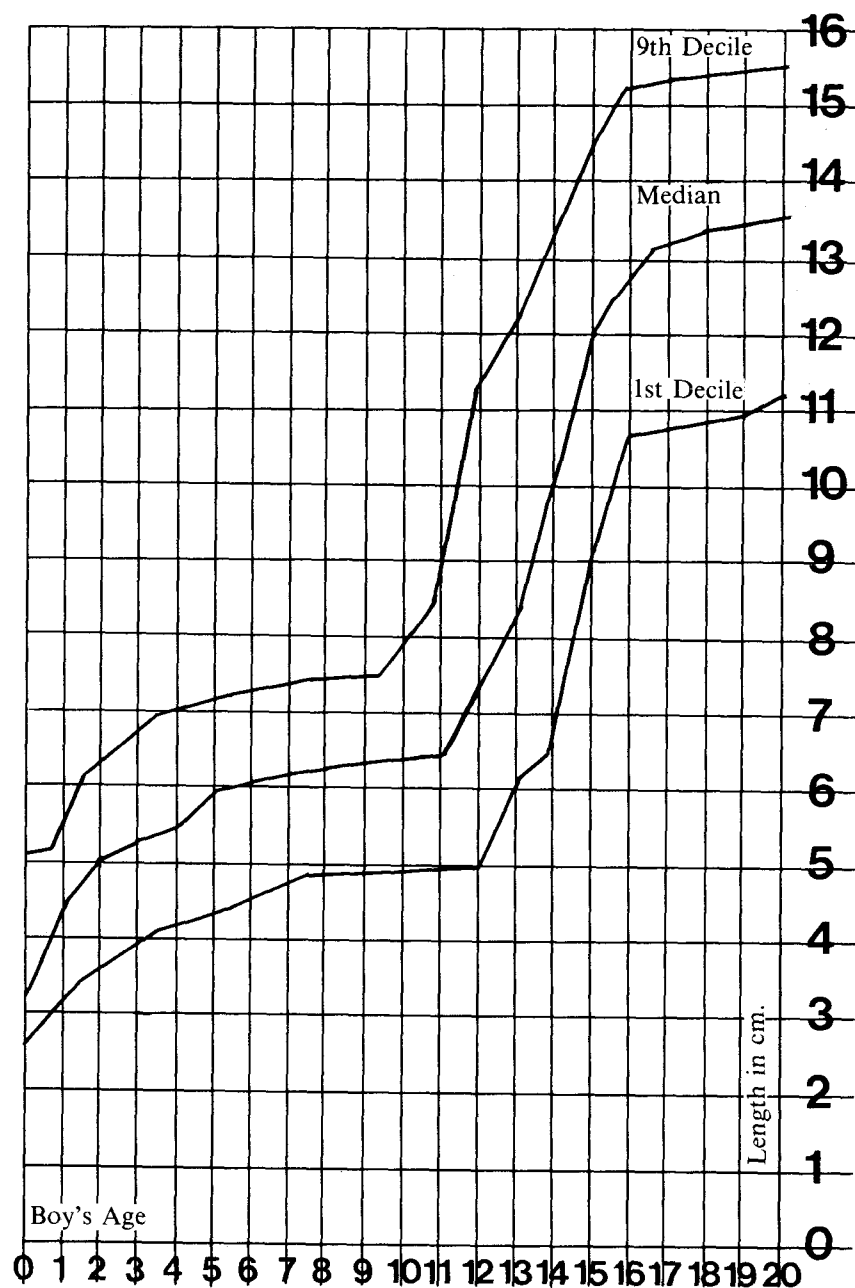
complained." (*PAN* 9, 24, 1981) And when the Australian police, after the death of Clarence Osborne, discovered that this unimpressive court recorder over a twenty-year period had been sexually intimate with 2500 boys, many of whom now occupied important positions in Australian public life, nothing, again, astonished them more than the fact that not a single "victim" had ever complained or protested, and a surprising number appeared to revere his memory (Wilson 1981). We will have more to say about promiscuity in Chapter Four.

★

"No manifestation of the sexual drive is in itself either immoral, criminal, or pathological. But, on the other hand, any manifestation of the sexual drive may be any of these things. What is important is not whether a given type of sexual behavior is heterosexual, homosexual or autoerotic, but what purpose it is put to, what it means to the persons involved, and its connection with the entire life pattern of the individual concerned." (Churchill 1967, 167)

Sexual relations between boys and men are in themselves neither bad nor good. Whether we have to attach a negative or a positive value to them depends entirely upon the circumstances of their occurrence. The negative aspects, both real and presumed, will occupy us in the next chapter.

APPENDIX A: PENIS DEVELOPMENT IN BOYS



Bibliography

The following superscripts denote subject matter of literature cited in this bibliography: ¹Arabian literature and culture. ²Ethics and religion. ³History of civilisation. ⁴Graphic and pictorial description of eroticism and sexual activities. ⁵Ethnology and anthropology. ⁶Fiction, poetry & autobiography. ⁷Greek and Roman antiquity. ⁸Prostitution. ⁹Incest. ¹⁰Rape and violence. ¹¹Medical intervention. ¹²Legislation. ¹³Sexual mysticism. ¹⁴Nudity and sense of shame. ¹⁵Love relations with children and adolescents. ¹⁶Sexual activities with children and adolescents. ¹⁷Sexology. ¹⁸Sado-Masochism. ¹⁹Miscellaneous. ²⁰Sexuality of children and adolescents, sexual education.

- Aalberse, H. B., *De liefde van Bob en Daphne*.⁶ 's-Gravenhage: Oisterwijk.
- Abele, R. von, *The Vigil of Emmeline Gore*.⁶ Cambridge (MA): Riverside Press, 1962.
- Abou Othman Omar Haleby, *El Ktab, de geheime wetten van de liefde*.¹ Amsterdam: Koster.
- Abraham, F., *Les perversions sexuelles*.¹⁷ Paris: Productions de Paris, 1969.
- A. D., *Petits enfants d'Abidjan*.⁵ *Recherches* 37: 115-128, 1979.
- ADVIESCOMMISSIE ZEDELIIKHEIDSWETGEVING, *Eindrapport*.¹² Den Haag: Staatsuitgeverij, 1980.
- Albrecht, O., *Die Unzucht mit Kindern*.¹⁶ Kiel Universität, 1964.
- Albrecht-Désirat, K., *Zur Situation des Lehrers in der schulischen Sexualerziehung*.²⁰ In Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Frankfurt a. M.: Päd. extra, 1978.
- Albrecht-Désirat, K. & Pacharzina, K., *Lehrer und sexualpädagogische Ausbildung*. In: Kerscher, I. (Ed.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*.²⁰ Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Alcock, N., *The Logic of Love*.¹⁷ Oakville (Ont.): CPRI Press, 1976.
- Aldiss, B. W., *The Hand-Reared Boy*.⁶ London: Corgi Books, 1970.
- Allen, C., *The Sexual Perversions and Abnormalities*.¹⁷ London: Oxford University Press, 1949.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Allen, C. & Berg, A., *Les problèmes de l'homosexualité*.¹⁷ Paris: Les Yeux Ouverts, 1962.
- Alsteens, A., *Masturbatie bij de adolescent*.¹⁷ Brugge: Desclee De Brouwer, 1968.
- Amendt, G., *Sex Front*.¹⁷ Frankfurt: März, 1971.
- Amendt, G., Nur die Sau rauslassen?¹⁶ *Konkret* 5: 26-30, 1980.
- Amsberg, A., et al, *Relaties en seksualiteit*.¹⁷ Utrecht: Rijksuniversiteit, 1978.
- AMSTERDAMSE JONGEREN AKTIE-GROEPEN HOMOSEKSUALITEIT, *Jongen-jongen/meisje-meisje*.²⁰ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1971.
- Anand, M. R., *Indien—Die Liebe in der Kunst*.⁵ Genève: Nagel, 1978.
- Anderson, C. M., Molestation of Children.¹⁶ *Journal of the American Medical Women's Association* 23: 204-206, 1968.
- Anderson, P. & Sutherland, A., *Eros—An Anthology of Friendship*.⁶ London: Blond, 1961.
- ANTHOLOGIA GRAECA, Buch XII-XVI, Ed. Hermann Beckby.⁷ München: Heimeran, 1958.
- ARBETSGRUPP COME OUT, Sug och slicka runt.¹⁷ *Revolt* 1: 17-21, 1973.
- Archangelo, A. d', *The Homosexual Handbook*.¹⁷ New York: Ophelia Press, 1968.
- Arch Smith, T. d', *Love in Earnest*.⁶ London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1970.
- Aristophanes, *Die Komödien*.⁷ Ed. Ludwig Seeger. Berlin: Schneider, 1844-1848.
- Armand, E., *Libertinage et prostitution*.³ Paris: Prima, 1931.
- Aron, J.-P. & Kempf, R., *Le pénis et la démoralisation de l'Occident*.³ Paris: Grasset, 1978.
- Ashley Montagu, M. F., Ritual Mutilation Among Primitive Peoples.⁵ *Ciba Symposia* 8, 7: 421-436, 1946.
- Aubry, A., *Cahiers van Solanum Dulcamara* 1-11.⁶ Rotterdam: privately printed, 1972-1975.
- Augiéras, F. (Abdallah Chaamba), *Le vieillard et l'enfant*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1954.
- Augiéras, F. (Abdallah Chaamba), *Le voyage des morts*.⁶ Paris: La Nef de Paris, 1959.
- Augiéras, F., *Un voyage au Mont Athos*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1970.
- Avery-Clark, C., O'Neil, J. A. & Laws, D. R., A Comparison of Intrafamilial Sexual and Physical Child Abuse.¹⁶ In: Cook & Howells, *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Awad, G. A., Father-Son Incest: A Case Report.⁹ *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease* 162, 2: 135-139, 1976.
- Back, G., *Sexuelle Verirrungen des Menschen und der Natur*.¹⁷ Berlin: Standard, 1910.
- Bagge, T., Jeg blev forført af Kim på 14.¹⁶ *Berlinske Tidende* 18-23, 15 Sept., 1981.
- Bailey, D. S., *Homosexuality and the Western Christian Tradition*.² London: Longmans, Green & Co., 1955.
- Baker, R., Kär lek mellan män.¹⁷ *Revolt* 1: 21-25; 2: 43-47, 1977.
- Banens, M. *De homo-aversie*.¹⁷ Groningen: Historische Uitgeverij, 1981.
- Banis, V. J. *Men and their Boys—The Homosexual Relationship Between Adult and Adolescent*.¹⁶ Los Angeles: Medico Books, 1966.
- Barbedette, G., Matzneff, G. & Schérer, R., Pêdoquoi? Pédéraste.¹⁵ *Gai Pied* 13: 6-7, 1980.
- Barbusse, H., *L'enfer*.⁶ Paris: Albin Michel.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barrington, J. S., *The Boys of Taormina and the Baron von Gloeden*.¹⁵ 1974.
- Barrington, J. S., *Sexual Alternatives for Men*.¹⁷ London: Alternative Publishing, 1981.
- Bataille, G., *Gilles de Rais*.³ ¹⁸ Paris: Pauvert, 1965.
- Batselier, S. de & Ross, H. L., *Les minorités sexuelles*.¹⁷ Gembloux: Duculot, 1973.
- Baudry, A., *La condition des homosexuels*.³ Toulouse: Privat, 1982.
- Baurmann, M. C., Angezeigte und verurteilte Sexualkontakte aus viktimologischer Sicht.¹⁶ In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Seksualität und Gewalt*. Bensheim: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Baurmann, M. C., *Seksualität, Gewalt und psychische Folgen*.¹⁶ Wiesbaden: Bundeskriminalamt, 1983.
- Baurmann, M. C., *Seksualität, Gewalt und die Folgen für das Opfer*.¹⁶ Wiesbaden: Bundeskriminalamt, 1983.
- Beccadelli, A. *Hermaphroditus*.⁶ Paris: Bibliothèque des Curieux, 1914.
- Becker, R., de, *L'érotisme d'en face*.¹⁷ Paris: Pauvert, 1964.
- Beemer, Th. C. J., Theologische-anthropologische overwegingen over de homosexualiteit als menselijke bestaanswijze.² *Tijdschrift voor Theologie* 7: 157-175, 1967.
- Beemer, Th. Seksualiteit in een moraaltheologische bezinning.² In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Beers, L. F. van, *Het levenswerk van mr. Regout*.¹² Amsterdam: Instituut voor Perswetenschap, 1968.
- Beets, N., *Lichaamsbeleving en seksualiteit in de puberteit*.²⁰ Utrecht: Bijleveld, 1964.
- Beets, N., *De grote jongen—Psychologie van de vlegelaren*.²⁰ Utrecht: Bijleveld, 1964.
- Bell, A. P. & Hall, C. S., *The Personality of the Child Molester*.¹⁶ Chicago: Aldine Atherton, 1971.
- Bell, A. P. & Weinberg, M. S., *Homosexualities—A Study of Diversity Among Men and Women*.¹⁷ London: Mitchell Beazley, 1978.
- Bender, L. & Blau, A., The Reaction of Children to Sexual Relations With Adults.¹⁶ *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* 7: 500-518, 1937.
- Bender, L. & Paster, S., Homosexual Trends in Children.¹⁷ *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* 11: 730-743, 1941.
- Bendig, B., *Résumé—Private Handreichung zum 5. Wissenschaftlichen Kongress "Sexualität und Gewalt"*.¹⁵ Privatdruck, 1979.
- Bendig, B., *Pädophilie—Handreichung zum 5. Wissenschaftlichen Kongress "Sexualität und Gewalt"*.¹⁵ Privatdruck, 1979.
- Bendig, B., *Paedophilia—The Way to the Future*.¹⁵ Venlo: Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1979.
- Bendig, B., *Pädophile Sexualdelinquenten als politisch Verfolgte*.¹⁵ Privatdruck, 1980.
- Bendig, B., Pädophilie ist ein Talent.¹⁵ In: Hohmann, J. S. (Ed.), *Pädophilie Heute*. Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Bendorf, W., *Unvernunft und Unheil im Sexualstrafrecht*.¹² Wien: Sensen, 1956.
- BEREICH SCHWULE DER ALTERNATIVEN LISTE, *Ein Herz für Sittenstrolche*.¹⁵ Berlin: Sausmikat, 1980.
- Berg, Ch. & Krich, A. M., *Homosexualiteit—Een subjectief en objectief onderzoek*.¹⁷ Rotterdam: Boekenmolen.
- Berg, J. H. van den, *Metabetica of leer der veranderingen*.³ Nijkerk: Callenbach, 1956.
- Berg, J. H. van den, *Dubieuze liefde in de omgang met het kind*.²⁰ Nijkerk: Callenbach, 1958.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Berger, B. M., Liberating Child Sexuality: Commune Experiences.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson, *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Berger, L. H. M., *Moelijkheden op sexueel gebied bij kinderen*.²⁰ Roermond: Romen, 1932.
- Berger, R. & Richter, O., *Eerste liefde, eerste sex*.²⁰ Amsterdam, Becht.
- Bergler, E. *One Thousand Homosexuals*.¹⁷ Patterson (NJ): Pageant Books, 1959.
- Bergmans, A. *Homosexualiteit en strafrecht*.¹² Leuven: Katholieke Universiteit, 1970.
- Bergmans, A. & Dubois, J., *Verslag en advies met betrekking tot art 372bis Belgisch Strafwetboek*.¹² Antwerpen: Dubois, 1973.
- Bergusson, A., *La pédophilie comme source d'éducation sexuelle*.¹⁵ Paper presented at the symposium on Childhood and Sexuality, University of Québec, 1979.
- Berliner, R., *The Manhood Ceremony*.⁶ New York: Simon & Schuster, 1978.
- Berkel, M., De pedofielen.¹² *Haagse Post* 65, II: 26-32, 1978.
- Bernard, F. *Costa Brava*.⁶ Rotterdam: Enclave, 1960.
- Bernard, F., De gevolgen voor het kind.¹⁵ In: Eeten, P. van (Ed.), *Sex met kinderen*. Den Haag: NVSH, 1972.
- Bernard, F., Pädophilie—eine Krankheit?¹⁵ *Sexualmedizin* 9, 438-440, 1972.
- Bernard, F., An Enquiry Among a Group of Pedophiles.¹⁵ *Journal of Sex Research*, 11, 3: 242-255, 1975.
- Bernard, F., Persoonlijke aspecten bij pedofielen.¹⁵ *Medisch Contact* 30: 313-314, 1975.
- Bernard, F., Paedophilia erotica van verschillende kanten bekeken.¹⁵ *Medisch Contact* 30: 711-712, 1975.
- Bernard, F., Pädophilie und Neurotizismus.¹⁵ *Sexualmedizin* 4: 441-445, 1975.
- Bernard, F., *Pädophilie—Liebe mit Kindern*.¹⁵ Lollar: Achenbach, 1979.
- Bernstein, I., Integrative Aspects of Masturbation.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis, *Masturbation*. New York: International University Press, 1975.
- Bethe, E., Die dorische Knabenliebe, ihre Ethik und ihre Idee.⁷ *Rheinisches Museum für Philologie, neue Folge* 62, 438-475, 1907.
- Bettelheim, B., *Symbolic Wounds—Puberty Rites and the Envious Male*.⁵ New York: Collier, 1962.
- Bettge, W., Wohin?⁶ *Ben* 2: 11, 1974.
- Beurdeley, C., *Beau petit ami*.⁶ Fribourg: Office du Livre, 1977.
- Beyaert, F. H. L., Profiel van een dader?¹⁶ In: Wolters, W. H. G. (Ed.), *Sexueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro, 1982.
- Bezemer, W. et al, *Handboek seksuele hulpverlening*.¹⁷ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1983-....
- Bianchi, H. et al, *Der homosexuelle Nächste*.² Hamburg: Furche, 1963.
- Bieber, I. et al, *Homosexuality—a Psychoanalytic Study of Male Homosexuals*.¹⁷ New York: Vintage Books, 1962.
- Bielefeld, H., *Ein Leben für die Kalokagathia*.¹⁵ Hameln: Bielefeld, 1975.
- Biener, K., *Jugendsexualität und Präventivmedizin*.²⁰ Stuttgart: Fischer, 1973.
- Biener, K., *Pädagogische Sexual-Medizin*.²⁰ Derendingen: Habegger, 1983.
- Birken, H., *Jungen an meinen Wegen*.⁶ Berlin: Magnet.
- Birken, H., *Knabenträume*.⁶ Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Birken, H., *Jede Liebe ist Liebe*.⁶ Holbaek: Coq, 1981.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Birkin, A., *J. M. Barrie and the Lost Boys*.¹⁵ London: Macdonald Futura, 1980.
- Blais, M.-C., *The Wolf*.⁶ Toronto: McClelland & Stewart, 1974.
- Blake, R., *The Sexually Precocious Teenager*.¹⁷ Cleveland: Century Books, 1970.
- Blank, J., *The Playbook For Kids About Sex*.²⁰ Burlingame (CA): Down There Press, 1980.
- Blauboer, O., Homo-prostitutie in Amsterdam.⁸ *Panorama* 39: 24-29, 1982.
- Bledsoe, R. *Male Sexual Deviations and Bizarre Practices*.¹⁷ Los Angeles: Sherbourne, 1964.
- Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg, G., *Tabu Homosexualität—Die Geschichte eines Vorurteils*.³ Frankfurt: Fischer, 1978.
- Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg, G., Pädophilie und Gewalt in naturvölkischen Gesellschaften und aussereuropäischen Hochkulturen.⁵ In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Sexualität und Gewalt*.⁵ Bensheim: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg, G., *Mannbarkeitsritten—Zur institutionellen Päderastie bei Papuas und Melanesiern*.⁵ Frankfurt: Ullstein, 1980.
- Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg, G., Der Streit um die Pädophilie.¹⁵ *Spontan* 13, 8: 21-22, 1980.
- Bloch, H. & Niederhoffer, A., *Les bandes d'adolescents*.³ Paris: Payot, 1963.
- Bloch, I., *Das Sexualleben unserer Zeit*.³ Berlin: Marcus, 1909.
- Bloch, I., *Die Prostitution*.⁸ Berlin: Marcus, 1912.
- Bloom, W., *A Game for Children*.⁶ New York: Grove Press, 1971.
- Blüher, H., *Die Rolle der Erotik in der männlichen Gesellschaft*.³ Jena: Diederichs, 1921.
- Blüher, H., *Werke und Tage*.³ München: List, 1953.
- Blüher, H., *Die Rede des Aristophanes*.⁷ Hamburg: Kala, 1966.
- Boccaccio, G., *De Decamerone*.⁶ ed. Rensburg. Amsterdam: Letteren en Kunst.
- Boer, J. de, *Gevoelige kwesties omtrent seksuele kontakten van jongeren*.¹⁷ Zeist: NISSO, 1978.
- Boer, R., *Niet zo verlegen*.⁶ Utrecht: Privé-uitgave, 1977.
- Bond, T., *Hello, what's your name, then? Tourists, Boys and Sri Lanka. The Results*.⁸ Report in manuscript, 12 December 1980.
- Bontekoe, E. H. M., De relatie tussen sociale en psycho-biologische factoren bij agressie en agressieve criminaliteit.¹⁹ *Tijdschrift voor Criminologie* 25: 274-292, 1983.
- Born, E. O., *Pedofiele integratie na 1959*.¹⁵ Utrecht: Storm, 1973.
- Borneman, E., *Von der Einsamkeit des Kindes in der Welt der Erwachsenen*.²⁰ Rundfunksending 20 Februar 1977.
- Borneman, E., *Lexikon der Liebe*.¹⁷ Frankfurt: Ullstein, 1978.
- Borneman, E., Elternrecht und Kindersexualität.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Boschmann, R. & Hunold, G., *Liefdeslessen zonder taboes*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Triton, 1975.
- Bosman, J. & Buunk, B., De seksuele revolutie onder vrouwen: verandering in seksueel gedrag of in antwoord-gedrag?¹⁷ *Sociale Wetenschappen* 25, 3: 185-203, 1982.
- Boulin, B. et al, *La Charte des enfants*.²⁰ Paris: Stock, 1977.
- Bousquet, G. H., *La Morale de l'Islam et son éthique sexuelle*.¹ Paris: Maisonneuve,

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1953.
 Bouwmeester, Ph. den, Ruig.¹⁷ *Sekstant* 7/8: 29-30, 1981.
 Bowyer-Jones, Chr., Nature, raison et sexualité.¹⁷ *Masques* 18, 75-81, 1983.
 Bradbury Robinson, C. J., *Bare Knees, Boy Knees*.⁶ San Diego (CA): Greenleaf Classics, 1971.
 Bradbury Robinson, C. J., *Young Thomas*.⁶ San Diego (CA): Greenleaf Classics, 1971.
 Bräutigam, W. *Formen der Homosexualität*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1967.
 Bremmer, J., An Enigmatic Indo-European Rite: Paederasty.⁵ *Arethusa* 13: 2, 279-298, 1980.
 Brenner, J., *Trois jeunes tambours*.⁶ Paris: Julliard, 1965.
 Brethmas, J. de, *Traité de chasse au minet*.¹⁵ Paris: Perchoir, 1979.
 Brethmas, J. de, *Détournement de majeur*.¹⁵ Paris: Perchoir, 1980.
 Breton, G., *Histoires d'amour de l'histoire de France*.³ Paris: Noir et Blanc, 1956-60.
 Breusers, F., *Het geweld der aanrollende baren-Adviezen aan ouders m.b.t. de sexuele opvoeding tussen 1820 en 1940*.²⁰ Doctoraalscriptie Universiteit van Amsterdam, 1982.
 Broderick, C. B., *Kind, jeugd en seksualiteit*.²⁰ Utrecht: Spectrum, 1971.
 Brongersma, E. et al, *Zeden en straffen*.¹² Amsterdam: COC, 1984.
 Bronslau, N. & Neil, G., *Sex Before 12*.²⁰ Atlanta: Pendulum Books, 1968.
 Brückner, P., *Schülerliebe*.²⁰ Hamburg: Konkret, 1971.
 Brüggemann, O., *Sexuelle Konflikte in Gymnasien*.²⁰ Heidelberg: Quelle & Meyer, 1967.
 Brunold, H., Beobachtungen und katamnestische feststellungen nach im Kindesalter erlittenen Sexualtraumen.¹⁶ *Praxis* 51, 39: 965-971, 1962.
 Brunsendorff, O. & Henningsen, P., *A History of Eroticism-Antiquity*.⁷ København: Veta, 1963.
 Bruyn, E. B. de, *Sex en Eros-300 epigrammen van Martialis*.⁶ Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1979.
 Bruyn, G. de, *Lichaamsbeleving bij jonge kinderen*.²⁰ Zeist: NISSO, 1972.
 Bruyn, H. G. M. de, Sekserol en seksualiteit.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
 Bryk, F., *Neger-Eros*.⁵ Berlin: Marcus & Weber, 1928.
 Bryk, F., *Die Beschneidung bei Mann und Weib*.⁵ Neubrandenburg: Feller, 1931.
 Buck, P., *Dragon Seed*.⁶ Stockholm: Continental Book, 1945.
 Buffière, F., *Eros adolescent-La pédérastie dans la Grèce antique*.⁷ Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1980.
 Bühler-Oppenheim, K., L'initiation.⁵ *Revue Ciba* 61: 2178-2218, 1947.
 Buikhuisen, W., Ongeregistreerde criminaliteit onder studenten.¹⁹ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Criminologie* 11: 69-89, 1969.
 Bullinga, M. et al, *Van de liefde kun je niet leven*.⁸ Nijmegen: SOF, 1982.
 Bullough, V. L., *Sexual Variance In Society and History*.³ Chicago: University of Chicago, 1976.
 Bullough, V. L., *Homosexuality-A History*.¹⁷ New York: Garland, 1979.
 Bullough, V. L. et al, *An Annotated Bibliography of Homosexuality*.¹⁷ New York: Garland, 1976.
 Bullough, V. L. et al, *A Bibliography of Prostitution*.⁸ New York: Garland, 1977.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bultena, L., *Deviant Behavior in Sweden*.³ New York: Exposition Press, 1971.
 Burford, L., *Edward, Edward*.⁶ London: Corgi Books, 1974.
 Burg, B. R., Ho Hum, Another Work of the Devil.³ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 1/2: 69-78, 1980/81.
 Burg, C. P. J. van der, *Onze grotere jeugd aan Christus*.² Amsterdam: Van Munster, 1948.
 Burkhardt, C. A. H., *Goethes Unterhaltungen mit dem Kanzler Friedrich von Müller*.¹⁹ Stuttgart: Cotta, 1870.
 Burnet, E., *Lucrèce notre contemporain*.⁷ Tunis: Maison Tunisienne de l'Édition, 1984.
 Burns, R. B., *The Ordeal of the Rod*.⁶ Paris: Ophelia, 1958.
 Burton, L., *Vulnerable Children*.¹⁶ London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1968.
 Burton, R. F., *The Book of the Thousand Nights and a Night-A Plain and Literal Translation*.¹ London: Burton Club, 1885.
 Burton, R. F., *Terminal Essay Upon the History of the Arabian Nights Entertainments*.¹ London: Burton Club, 1886.
 Burton, R., *The Perfumed Garden of the Shaykh Nefzai*.¹ London: Spearman, 1963.
 Busson, J., *Que passe le vent d'avril*.⁶ Paris: Editions du Lys, 1950.
 Buuren, I. van, Kinderen moeten zelf hun relaties kunnen kiezen - Een pedofiel houdt gewoon van een kind.¹⁵ *Jeugdwerk Nu* 8: 12-17, 1976.
 Buuren, I. van, Kinderbescherming ontnam Henk tweede vader. *Jeugdwerk Nu* 9: 7-9, 1977.
 Buytendijk, F. J. J., De onbevangen omgang.¹⁴ In: Buytendijk et al, *De onbevangenheid*. Bilthoven: Ambo, 1973.
 Cabanis, D. & Phillip, E., Der pädophil-homosexuelle 'Inzest' vor Gericht.¹⁶ *Deutsche Zeitschrift der gesamten gerichtlichen Medizin* 66: 46-74, 1969.
 Cakravarti, C., *Sex Life in Ancient India*.⁵ Calcutta: Mukbo Padhyay, 1963.
 Calderone, M. S., Fetal Erection and its Message to Us.²⁰ *SIECUS-Report* May-July, 1983: 9-10.
 Calderwood, D., Differences in the Sex Questions of Adolescent Boys and Girls.²⁰ *Marriage and Family Living* 25: 492-495, 1963.
 Caldwell, E., *Tobacco Road-God's Little Acre-Twenty Short Stories*.⁶ Cleveland: World Publishing, 1946.
 Califia, P., The Age of Consent: An Issue and its Effects on the Gay Movement.¹⁵ *The Advocate* 303: 18-23 & 304: 16-23, 45, 1980.
 Camilla, Toward a Feminist Position for Boy-Lovers.¹⁵ *Nambla Journal* 6: 7-9, 1983.
 Caminha, A., *Bom-Crioulo*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1982.
 Camp, J. van der, Dossier Taboe-Incest begint thuis.⁹ *Humo* November 1983: 80-90.
 CAMPAIGN AGAINST PUBLIC MORALS, *Paedophilia and Public Morals*.¹⁵ London: CAPM, 1980.
 Campbell, M., *Lord Dismiss Us*.⁶ London: Book Club, 1967.
 Campenhout, E. van, Om de vrijheid van het kind.¹⁵ In: *Congresbundel Pedofilie en Samenleving*. Den Haag: NVSH, 1977.
 Capote, T., *Other Voices, Other Rooms*.⁶ New York: Signet, 1948.
 Card, R., Paedophilia and the Law.¹² In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London, Batsford, 1981.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Carlier, B., Wat weten wij over pedofilie?¹⁵ *De Homokrant* 5: 18-19, 1980.
- Carlier, B., Het 'kinderlijke' in de seksualiteit.²⁰ *'t Heen ½ Weer* 76: 3-8, 1983.
- Carlier, F., *Les deux prostitutions*.⁸ Paris, 1887.
- Carp, E. A. D. A., *Sexuele misdadigheid*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Strengholt.
- Carpenter, E., *Love's Coming of Age*.¹⁷ New York: Mitchell Kennerly, 1911.
- Carpenter, E., *The Intermediate Sex*.¹⁷ New York: Mitchell Kennerly, 1912.
- Carpentier, Ph., *S'aimer entre enfants et adultes*.¹⁵ Manuscrit.
- Casanova de Seingalt, J. *Mémoires*.⁶ Paris: Garnier.
- Cassidy, J. H., Psychological Considerations of Pedophilia.¹⁶ *The Psychoanalytic Review* 13: 189-199, 1926.
- Catullus, Q. V., *Gedichte*,⁶ ed. E. Saenger. Leipzig: Reclam.
- Cauwenberg, J. Homosexualiteit bij primitieve volkeren.⁵ *Ontmoeting* 6: 13-16 & 11-15, 1967.
- Cavafy, C., Poems,⁶ in Galloway and Sabisch (Eds.), *Calamus*. New York: Quill, 1982.
- Celli, G., *L'omosessualità negli animali*.¹⁷ Milano: Longanesi, 1972.
- Chaamba, A.: See Augiéras, F.
- Challot, D., *The Sexual Love of Children*.¹⁶ Chatsworth (CA): Brandon, 1972.
- Chardans, J. L., *History and Anthology of Homosexuality*.¹⁷ Paris: Centre d'Etudes, 1970.
- Charing, S., Dirsche, N & Patro, M., 'Bodies for Bucks' on Eastern Avenue.⁸ *The Gay Paper* 12: 22-23, 1982.
- Chesser, E., *Odd Man Out*.¹⁷ London: Gollancz, 1959.
- Chevalier, J., *L'inversion sexuelle*.¹⁷ Lyon: Storck, 1893.
- CHILDHOOD SENSUALITY CIRCLE, Position Paper.¹⁵ San Diego: CSC, 1981.
- Christian, G., *Männer und Bisex*.¹⁷ Holbaek: COQ, 1980.
- Churchill, W., *Homosexual Behavior Among Males*.¹⁷ New York: Hawthorn, 1967.
- Claesson, B. H., *Jongen en meisje/man en vrouw*.²⁰ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1970.
- Cleugh, J., *Love Locked Out—A Survey of Love Licence and Restriction in the Middle Ages*.³ London: Blond, 1963.
- Cline, W., *Notes on the People of Siwah and El Garah in the Libyan Desert*.⁵ Menasha (WI): Banta, 1936.
- Clower, V. L. Masturbation in Female Sexuality.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- COC—Werkgroep Konsult van de N.V.I.H., Pleegschap en homosexualiteit.¹² *Gog* 24, 4, 9: 14-23, 1978.
- COC, Landelijk Bestuur van de N.V.I.H., *Pedofilie - Discussienota*.¹⁵ Amsterdam: COC, 1980.
- Coccioli, C., *Le case del lago*.⁶ Milano: Rusconi, 1980.
- Cohen-Matthijsen, Th., Waar ligt de grens?¹⁶ In: *Waar ligt de grens?* 's-Gravenhage: Nationale Raad voor Maatschappelijk Welzijn, 1982.
- Coleman, E., Toward a New Model of Treatment of Homosexuality.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 3, 4: 345-359, 1978.
- Comfort, A., *Der aufgeklärte Eros*.¹⁷ München: Szczesny, 1963.
- COMMITTEE ON THE AGE OF MAJORITY, Report.¹² London: H. M.'s Stationery Office, 1967.
- COMMISSION ON OBSCENITY AND PORNOGRAPHY, *The Illustrated Presidential Report*.⁴

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- San Diego: Greenleaf, 1970.
- Constantine, L., The Sexual Rights of Children—Implications of a Radical Perspective.²⁰ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Constantine, L. L., *Child Sexuality: Recent Developments*.²⁰ Paper presented at a conference in Nijmegen, 19 August, 1981.
- Constantine, L. L., The Effects of Early Sexual Experiences; The Sexual Rights of Children.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.) *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Constantine, L. L. & Martinson, F. M., Child Sexuality.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.) *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Corraze, J., *Les dimensions de l'homosexualité*.¹⁷ Toulouse: Privat, 1969.
- Corstjens, J. M. H., *Opvoeding en pedofilie; sexualiteitsbeleving en attitudes ten aanzien van pedofilie*.¹⁵ Doctoraalscriptie Nijmegen, 1975.
- Corstjens, J. M. H., Pedofilie: what's in a name? Een empirisch onderzoek.¹⁰ *Tijdschrift voor Criminologie* 22: 273-286, 1980.
- Costanzo, M., *L'Amore in provincia*.³ Milano: Sugar, 1973.
- Couperus, L., *De berg van licht*.⁶ Amsterdam: Veen.
- Courouve, C., *Les origines de la repression de l'homosexualité*.³ Paris: Courouve, 1978.
- Crawford, D. A., Application of Penile Response Monitoring to the Assessment of Sexual Offenders.¹⁷ In: West (Ed.) *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Crawford, D. A., Treatment Approaches with Pedophiles.¹⁶ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Crompton, L., Jeremy Bentham's Essay on 'Paederasty'.³ *Journal of Homosexuality* 3, 4: 383-405 and 4, 1: 91-107, 1978.
- Cummings, P., The Crime Wave that Won't Stay in the Closet.⁸ *Baltimore Magazine* 5: 76-79, 108-111, 1982.
- Currier, R. L., Juvenile Sexuality in Global Perspective.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.) *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Curtis, J.-L., Une énigme littéraire érotique: les sonnets de Shakespeare.³ *Arcadie* 28, 327: 149, 1981.
- Cuyvers, G., De affectieve relatie bejaarde-kind.¹⁶ *Streven* 30: 128-136, 1976.
- Dalbiez, R., *Psychoanalytical Method and the Doctrine of Freud*.¹⁷ London: Longmans, Green & Co., 1941.
- Dallayrac, D., *Dossier homosexualité*.¹⁷ Paris: Laffont, 1968.
- Dam, H.-J. van, Romeinse delicatessen.³ *Groniek* 12: 8-9, 1980.
- Danch, W., *Sexual Perversion and the Teen-Ager*.²⁰ North Hollywood (CA): Brandon, 1968.
- Daniel, M., *Des dieux et des garçons*.⁷ Paris: Arcadie, 1968.
- Daniel, M. & Baudry, A., *Les homosexuels*.¹⁷ Paris: Casterman, 1973.
- Daniélou, A., *Les fous de Dieu*.⁶ Paris: Buchet/Chastel, 1975.
- Daniélou, A., *Shiva et Dionysos*.³ Paris: Fayard, 1979.
- Daniélou, A., *Le chemin du labyrinthe*.⁶ Paris: Laffont, 1981.
- Daniélou, A., *Le bétail des dieux*.⁶ Paris: Buchet/Chastel, 1983.
- Dannecker, M., Spezifische Form narzistischer Objektwahl.¹⁷ *Emancipation* 2: 6-7, 1978.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Dantzig, A. van, *Homoseksualiteit bij de man*.¹⁷ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1969.
- Dasberg, L., *Grootbrengen door kleinhouden als historisch verschijnsel*.³ Meppel: Boom, 1975.
- Davidson, D., *Male Deviates and Their Partners*.¹⁷ New York: Dalhousie, 1967.
- Davidson, M., *The World, the Flesh and Myself*.⁶ Washington: Guild Press, 1962.
- Davidson, M., *Some Boys*.⁶ London: Bruce & Watson, 1971.
- Davis, A. J., Sexual Assaults in the Philadelphia Prison System and Sheriff's Vans.¹⁰ *Trans-Action* 6, 2: 8-16, 1968.
- Decrès, O., *Chronique des garçons de Casa*.⁶ Paris: Oswald, 1982.
- Dejager, B., *Lettre à Madame Florence Péty*.¹⁵ Manuscrit, 16 Juin 1976.
- Dekker, J., Mannen, seksuele motivatie en heteroseksualiteit.¹⁷ In: *Studium Generale: Lezingen seksualiteit*. Maastricht: Rijksuniversiteit Limburg, 1983.
- Delfgaauw, B., *Sexualiteit, pauselijk gezag, geweten*.² Baarn: Wereldvenster, 1968.
- Demaue, L., Our Forebears Made Childhood a Nightmare.³ *Psychology Today* 4: 85-88, 1975.
- Denis, A., *Taboe-Sex en moraal in de gehele wereld*.⁵ Den Haag: Stok, 1966.
- Deschner, K., *De kerk en haar kruis*.² Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1978.
- Deutsch, A., *Sexuele gewoonten*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Bigot & Van Rossum.
- DEUTSCHEN BISCHÖFFE, DIE, *Zu Fragen der menschlichen Geschlechtlichkeit*.² München: Sekretariat der Deutschen Bischofskonferenz, 1973.
- Devereux, G., Institutionalized Homosexuality of the Mohave Indians.⁵ In: Ruitenbeek (Ed.), *The Problem of Homosexuality in Modern Society*. New York: Dutton, 1963.
- Dickinson, R. L., *Human Sex Anatomy*.¹⁷ Baltimore: Williams & Wilkins, 1949.
- Dieckhoff, A. D., *Kriminologie und Moraltheologie in England*.² Husum: Petersen, 1959.
- Dieckhoff, A. D., *Der Protestantenbericht, nebst vollständiger Übersetzung des Griffin-Report*.² Schmiden: Decker, 1961.
- Dingwall, E. J., *Male Infibulation*.⁵ London: Bale, Sons & Danielsson, 1925.
- DIRECTOR OF ADMISSIONS, A., Admission of a Director of Admissions.¹⁵ *International Journal of Greek Love* 1, 2: 38-39, 1960.
- Dodson, V., *Pederasty: Sex Between Men and Boys*.¹⁶ North Hollywood (CA): Barclay House, 1968.
- Dolto, F., Extraits d'une lettre à propos d'un procès en cours.¹⁶ *Recherches* 37: 83-86, 1979.
- Donders, W., Een ouderavond over 'pedofilie'.¹⁵ *Maandblad voor Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 30: 45-48, 1975.
- Donkers, G., Janssen, J. & IJssel, H. van der, *Seks is meer... dan recht op en neer*.²⁰ Nijmegen: SOF, 1980.
- Doomen, J., Beperkte kijk op pedofilie.¹⁵ *De Volkskrant* 15, 25 February 1982.
- Döring, D., Soviel Liebe und Zärtlichkeit.¹⁵ In: Hohmann (Ed.) *Pädophilie Heute*. Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Dort, N. M., *Teen-age Masturbation*.²⁰ Los Angeles: Spartan House, 1968.
- Doshay, L. J., *The Boy Sex-Offender and his Later Career*.²⁰ New York: Grune & Stratton, 1943.
- Dover, K. J., *Greek Homosexuality*.⁷ London: Duckworth, 1978.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Downsborough, N., *Paedomorphs I*.⁶ Taipei: Kiryudo Publishing Co., 1978.
- Drew, D. & Drake, J., *Boys for Sale*.⁸ New York: Brown, 1969.
- Drilhon, F., *Le peuple inconnu-Big Nambas*.⁵ Paris: Amiot, Dumont, 1955.
- Driver, C., *Foc'sle Boy*.⁶ North Hollywood: Barclay House, 1969.
- Drogendijk, A. C. et al, *Opvoeding op het gebied der sexualiteit*.²⁰ Kampen: Kok, 1961.
- Droogers, A., *De gevaarlijke reis-Jongensinitiatie bij de Wagena van Kisangani (Zaire)*.⁵ Amsterdam: Vrije Universiteit, 1974.
- Duberman, M. B., Boys and Boy-Loving.¹⁵ *New York Native* 79: 10, 1981.
- Duca, L., *Moderne Enzyklopädie der Erotik*.¹⁷ München: Desch, 1962.
- Duca, L., *Die Geschichte der Erotik*.³ München: Desch, 1965.
- Dühren, E., *Englische Sittengeschichte*.³ Berlin: Marcus, 1912.
- Dühren, E., *Der Marquis de Sade und seine Zeit*.³ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1927.
- Dukahz, C., *The Asbestos Diary*.⁶ New York: Layton, 1966.
- Dukahz, C., *Knabenliebe (Vice Versa)*.⁶ Frankfurt a.M.: Melzer, 1971.
- Dulaure, J. A., *Die Zeugung in Glauben, Sitten und Bräuchen der Völker*.³ Leipzig: Deutsche Verlag A.G., 1909.
- Dungen, M. van den, *De jeugdige mens en de machteloosheid der volwassenen*.²⁰ Utrecht: Spectrum, 1958.
- Duuren, D. A. P. van, *Trobianders*.⁵ De Meern: Spectrum, 1978.
- Duvert, T., *Paysage de fantaisie*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1973.
- Duvert, T., *Le bon sexe illustré*.²⁰ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1974.
- Duvert, T., *Journal d'un innocent*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1976.
- Duvert, T., *Quand mourut Jonathan*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1978.
- Duvert, T., *L'enfant au masculin*.¹⁵ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1980.
- Dux, Speciaal nummer over sexualiteit en opvoeding, Jrg. 16, No. 517, 1949.
- Eaton, A. P., & Vastbinder, E., The Sexually Molested Child.¹⁶ *Clinical Pediatrics* 8, 8: 438-441, 1969.
- Eck, M., *Homoseksualiteit*.¹⁷ Antwerpen: Spectrum, 1969.
- Edwardes, A. & Masters, R. E. L., *The Cradle of Erotica*.⁵ New York: Julian, 1963.
- Edwards, C., How Hollywood Homos Trafficked in Young Boys!⁸ *Master Detective* 88, 4: 16-21, 48-49, 1974.
- Euwijk, B. A. P. van, *Het verhoor van kinderen, die slachtoffer zijn van zedendelicten*.¹² Apeldoorn: Nederlandse Politie Academie, 1978.
- Eggenkamp, H., *Seks en relaties*.²⁰ Servicebureaus voor jongeren, 1978.
- Eglinton, J. Z., *Greek Love*.¹⁵ New York: Oliver Layton, 1964.
- Ehrenberg, G., *Deutschlands Hoffnung*.⁶ München: Steinhausen, 1979.
- Eigeltinger, W., *Graffiti für Vespasian*.³ Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1983.
- Eiselen, W., *Initiation Rites of the Bamasemola*.⁵ Kaapstad: Nasionale Pers, 1932.
- Elias, J. & V., Dimensions of Masculinity and Female Reactions to Male Nudity.¹⁷ In: Cook & Wilson (Ed.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Ell, E., Sexualethik und kriminalisierte Sexualität.¹² In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Sexualität und Gewalt*. Bensheim: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Ellis, H., *Studies in the Psychology of Sex*.¹⁷ Philadelphia: David, 1913.
- Elsen, A. E., Nog eens: pedofilie, een plaatsbepaling.¹⁵ *Tijdschrift voor Seksuologie* 6, 2: 118-120, 1981.
- Elwin, V., *Maison des jeunes chez les Muria*.⁵ Paris: Gallimard, 1959.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Emde Boas, C. van, *De sociogenese van de vitale afkeer tegen de homosexualiteit*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Wereld Bibliotheek, 1951.
- Emde Boas, C. van, *Inleiding tot de studie van de pornografie*.⁴ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1966.
- Emde Boas, C. van, *Obsceniteit en pornografie anno 1966*.⁴ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1966.
- Emde Boas, C. van, *De arts en de sexuele (r)evolutie*. Amsterdam: Bohn, 1973.
- Emde Boas, C. van, *Homosexualiteit*.¹⁷ Kampen, Kok, 1975.
- Emde Boas, C. van, Socioculturele aspecten.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Emde Boas, C. van, Die sexuelle (R)evolution.¹⁷ In: Kerscher (Ed.), *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Emde Boas-Starkenstein, M. van., *Pornographie en beeldende kunst*.⁴ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1966.
- Englisch, P., *Geschichte der erotischen Literatur*.⁴ Stuttgart: Püttmann, 1927.
- Englisch, P., *Sittengeschichte Europas*.³ Berlin: Kiepenheuer, 1931.
- Englisch, P., *Sittengeschichte des Orients*.³ Berlin: Kiepenheuer, 1932.
- E. P. P. I., *Homofiele houdingen*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: E. P. P. I.
- Eppink, A., *Sexualiteit en verliefdheid bij Marokkaanse jongens en meisjes*.¹ Amsterdam: Averroës Stichting, 1976.
- Eppink, A., *Familierelaties en persoonlijkheidsontwikkeling in Marokko*.¹ Amsterdam: Averroës Stichting, 1977.
- Erman, A., Ethnographische Wahrnehmungen und -erfahrungen an den Küsten des Beringsmeeres.⁵ *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie* 3, 149-175, 1871.
- Ernest, E. *Sexe et graffiti*.³ Paris: Moreau, 1979.
- Ernst, M. L. & Loth, D., *American Sexual Behavior and the Kinsey Report*.¹⁷ New York: Bantam, 1948.
- Evans, M. E., *The Phallus in History and in Fact*.¹⁷ Washington (DC): Guild Press, 1969.
- Everaerd, W., Seks—En als dat nu eens niet lukt...¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.) *Seksuologie*, Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Everts-Goddard, J. E., *Kort begrip van kindermishandeling*.¹⁷ Den Haag: Vereniging tegen kindermishandeling, 1972.
- Ewijk, H. van, Dan blijft het kinderlijk.²⁰ *Jeugd en Samenleving* 13, 2: 66-67, 1983.
- Faber, L., Pedofielen: kindervrienden of kinderlokken.¹⁵ *Mensen van nu* 10: 56-61, 1979.
- Fackeltanz, F., Als Homohass die Welt in Flammen setzte.³ *Him* 7: 42-47, 1972.
- Farson, R., *Birthrights*.²⁰ New York: Macmillan, 1974.
- Feenstra-Kuiper, E. T., *Jeugdige zondaars te Konstantinopel*.⁸ Amsterdam: Koster.
- Ferenczi, S., The Nosology of Male Homosexuality.¹⁷ In: Ruitenbeek (Ed.), *The Problem of Homosexuality in Modern Society*. New York: Dutton, 1963.
- Fernandez, D., *L'étoile rose*.⁶ Paris: Grasset, 1978.
- Fernandez, P., Jongeren en homoseksualiteit in de laat-middeleeuwse Nederlanden.³ *Homologie* 6, 1: 10-12, 1984.
- Fernau, J., *Rosen für Apoll—Die Geschichte der Griechen*.⁷ Berlin: Herbig, 1961.
- Figger, W., Sexuelle Konflikte in der Heimerziehung.²⁰ In: Kerscher (Ed.), *Konflikt-*

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- feld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Finch, S. M., Sexual Activity of Children with Other Children and Adults.^{16 20} *Clinical Pediatrics* 6, 1: 1-2, 1967.
- Finch, S. M., Adult Seduction of the Child: Effects on the Child.¹⁶ *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* 7: 170-187, 1973.
- Finkelhor, D., *Sexually Victimized Children*.¹⁶ New York: Macmillan, 1979.
- Finkelhor, D., Sex Between Siblings.⁹ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Fisch, M., *Unzucht mit Kindern*.^{16 2} Frankfurt a.M.: Gemini, 1971.
- Fisher, G., & Howell, L. M., Psychological Needs of Homosexual Pedophiliacs.¹⁶ *Diseases of the Nervous System* 31, 9: 623-625, 1970.
- Fisher, P. & Rubin, M., *Special Teachers, Special Boys*.⁶ New York: St. Martin's Press, 1979.
- Fishman, J. F., *Sex in Prison*.³ London: John Lane The Bodley Head, 1935.
- Fitch, J. H., *A Descriptive Follow-Up Study of a Group of Men Convicted of Sexual Offences Against Children*.¹⁶ London: Prison Commission, 1961.
- Fitzgerald, Th. K., Trois analyses culturelles.³ *Arcadie* 112: 177-180; 113: 229-232; 114: 287-292, 1963.
- Fitzgerald, Th. K., A Critique of Anthropological Research on Homosexuality.⁵ *Journal of Homosexuality* 2, 4: 385-397, 1977.
- Flacelière, R., *Love in Ancient Greece*.⁷ New York: Crown, 1962.
- Flechtheim, O. K., Herrschaft und Familie.¹⁷ In: Kerscher (Ed.) *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Flinders, K. *The Boy Avengers*.⁶ New York: Traveller's Companion, 1971.
- FLORIDA LEGISLATIVE INVESTIGATION COMMITTEE, *Homosexuality and Citizenship in Florida*.¹⁷ Tallahassee (FL): F.L.I.C., 1964.
- Fontanié, P., Sport et homophilie.¹⁷ *Arcadie* 26, 307-308: 525-532, 1979.
- Fontanié, P., Rires et sourires.³ *Arcadie* 27, 313: 39-45, 1980.
- Fontanié, P., Dialogues des morts illustres.³ *Arcadie* 27, 323: 647-653, 1980.
- Foral, S., *Die Orgie*.³ München: Heyne, 1981.
- Forberg, F.-Ch, *Manuel d'érotologie classique*.⁷ Paris: Liseux, 1882.
- Ford, C. S. & Beach, F. A., *Formen der Sexualität*.⁵ Berlin: Rowohlt, 1968.
- Forel, A., *Die sexuelle Frage*.¹⁷ München Reinhardt, 1909.
- Foucault, M., *L'usage des plaisirs*.⁷ Paris: Gallimard, 1984.
- Foucault, M., Hocquenghem, G & Danet, J., La loi de la pudeur.¹⁴ *Recherches* 37: 69-82, 1979.
- Fox, Ch., The Non-Violent Sex Offender.¹⁶ In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Francis, J. J. & Marcus, I. M., Masturbation—A Developmental View.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis (Ed.) *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- F(ranco), G., *Desert Patrol*.⁸ Paris: Editions de la Jungle, 1980.
- Frank, L., *Vom Liebes- und Sexualleben*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Thieme, 1926.
- Franks, L., Homosexuals as Foster Parents.²⁰ *The New York Times*, 7 May, 1974: 1, 55.
- Fraser, G. M., *Flash for Freedom*.¹⁶ London: Pan, 1972.
- Fraser, M. *The Death of Narcissus*.²⁰ London: Secker & Warburg, 1976.
- Fraser, M., The Child.²⁰ In: Taylor (Ed.) *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London: Bats-

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- ford, 1981.
- Freimark, H., *Okkultismus und Sexualität*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Leipziger Verlag.
- Frenken, J., *Afkeer van seksualiteit*.¹⁷ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1976.
- Frenken, J., Het voorkomen van seksuele problemen in man-vrouw relaties.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.) *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Frenken, J., Liever incest dan spreken.⁹ *De Volkskrant*, 7 mei 1983: 9.
- Freud, S., *Drei Abhandlungen zur Sexualtheorie*.²⁰ Frankfurt a.M.: Fischer, 1920.
- Freund, K., *Die Homosexualität beim Mann*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Hirzel, 1963.
- Freund, K., Assessment of Pedophilia.¹⁶ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Friday, N., *Men in Love*.¹⁷ New York: Dell, 1981.
- Friedemann, A., Spätschäden bei Kindern und Jugendlichen.¹⁶ In: Von Stockert (Ed.), *Das sexuell gefährdete Kind*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1965.
- Friedenberg, E. Z., *The Vanishing Adolescent*.²⁰ New York: Dell, 1959.
- Frosch, J. & Bromberg, W., The Sex Offender—A Psychiatric Study. ¹⁷ *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* 9: 761-776, 1939.
- Fuchs, A., *Die konträre Sexualempfindung und andere Anomalien des Sexuallebens*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1926.
- Fuchs, E., *Geschichte der erotischen Kunst*.⁴ München: Langen, 1908.
- Fuchs, E., *Illustrierte Sittengeschichte*.³ München: Langen, 1909-1912.
- Füss, B., Over sexuelle opvoeding en het klein worden van de NVSH.²⁰ *t Heen & Weer* 74: 3-13, 1983.
- Füss, B. & Goslinga, G., *En me vriendje houdt van mij*.¹⁵ Leiden: NVSH Werkgroep Pedofilie, 1976.
- Gadpaille, W. J., The Delay of Normal Psychosexual Development.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Gagnon, J. H., Sexuality and Sexual Learning in the Child.²⁰ *Psychiatry* 28, 3: 212-228, 1965.
- Gagnon, J. H. & Simon, W., *Sexual Encounters Between Adults and Children*.¹⁶ New York: SIECUS, 1970.
- Gagnon, J. H. & Simon, W., *Sexual Conduct*.¹⁷ London: Hutchinson, 1973.
- Galan, L. de, Kinderporno.⁴ *Panorama* 10: 24-27; 11: 84-87, 1980.
- Galloway, D. & Sabisch, Chr., Introduction.¹⁹ In: Galloway & Sabisch (Eds.), *Calamus*. New York: Quill, 1982.
- Garnier, P., *Onanisme seul et à deux*.¹⁷ Paris: Garnier, 1923.
- Gauthier, X., *Dire nos sexualités*.¹⁷ Paris: Galilée, 1976.
- GAY BOOKS BULLETIN, Review of Frank Deford "Big Bill Tilden".¹⁵ *Gay Books Bulletin* 1, 3: 12, 1979.
- GAY JOURNAL, *Sex-entführt*.¹⁷ *Gay Journal* 23, 11: 9, 1978.
- GAY LEFT COLLECTIVE, Happy Families? Pedophilia Examined.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.) *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- GAY LIBERATION, Behandelingsformer som kan drabba homoseksuelle.¹⁷ *Revolt* 7: 14-17, 1974.
- GAY TEACHERS AND STUDENTS GROUP OF MELBOURNE, et al, *Young, Gay and Proud!*¹⁷ Boston: Alyson, 1980.
- Gebhard, P. H., Gagnon, J. H., Pomeroy, W. B. & Christenson, C. V., *Sex Offen-*

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- ders*.¹⁷ New York: Harper & Row, 1965.
- Geiser, R. L., *Hidden Victims—The Sexual Abuse of Children*.¹⁶ Boston: Beacon Press, 1979.
- Geisler, E., *Das sexuell missbrauchte Kind*.¹⁶ Göttingen: Verlag für Medizinische Psychologie, 1959.
- Geisler, E., Psychische Schäden nach sexuellen Widerfahrnissen.¹⁶ *Jahrbuch für Jugendpsychiatrie und ihre Grenzgebiete* 3: 124-133, 1962.
- Genet, J., *Oeuvres complètes*, tome 2 & 3.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1951-1953.
- Gennep, A. van, *Les rites de passage*.⁵ Paris: Librairie Critique, 1909.
- Gennep, A. van, Initiationsriten.⁵ In: Popp (Ed.), *Initiation*. Frankfurt a.M.: Suhrkamp, 1969.
- Geradts, W. F., *Homofilie*.¹⁷ Den Haag, PSVG.
- Geradts, W. F., *De kinderlokker*.¹⁶ Den Haag, PSVG.
- Geradts, W. F., *Sex van 12 tot 20*.²⁰ Den Haag, PSVG.
- Gerassi, J., *The Boys of Boise*.³ New York: Collier, 1968.
- Gerbener, H., *Die Kriminalität der Kinderschändung im Landgerichtsbezirk Duisburg in den Jahren 1950-1954*.¹⁶ Bonn: Universität, 1966.
- Gerretsen, Th., *Een witte duif achter grauwe tralies*.⁶ 's-Hertogenbosch: Associated Free Press, 1982.
- Gervail, D., *L'âge des gestes*.⁶ Paris: Buchet/Chastel, 1957.
- Gervais, P., *C'est arrivé dans la Sierra Leone*.⁵ Paris: Albin Michel, 1957.
- Gesell, A., Ilg, F. L. & Ames, L. B., *Youth—The Years from Ten to Sixteen*.²⁰ London: Hamish Hamilton, 1956.
- Gibbens, T. C. N. & Prince, J., *Child Victims of Sex Offences*.¹⁶ London: I.S.T.D., 1963.
- Gibbens, T. C. N., Soothill, K. L. & Way, C., Child Molestation.¹⁶ In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Gide, A., *L'immoraliste*.⁶ Paris: Mercure de France, 1902.
- Gide, A., *Corydon*.¹⁷ Paris: Gallimard, 1925.
- Gide, A., *Si le grain ne meurt*. Paris: Galimard, 1955.
- Giese, H., *Der homosexuelle Mann in der Welt*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1964.
- Giese, H. & Schmidt, G., *Studenten-Sexualität*.¹⁷ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1968.
- Gigeroff, A. K., *Sexual Deviations in the Criminal Law—Homosexual, Exhibitionistic and Pedophilic Offences in Canada*.¹⁶ Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1968.
- Gindorf, R., Sexualwissenschaft und Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Glennier, Sv., Hvilken betydning tillægger vi seksualundervisningen?²⁰ In: Hertoft et al (Eds.) *Pædagogisk sexologi*. Copenhagen, Gyldendal, 1971.
- Goethe, J. W. von, *Faust*.⁶ Leipzig: Weber, 1921.
- Golding, W., *Lord of the Flies*.⁶ New York: Capricorn Books, 1959.
- Goldschmidt, V., Social kontrol og sexuel adfærd.¹⁷ In: Hertoft et al (Eds.) *Pædagogisk sexologi*. Copenhagen, Gyldendal, 1971.
- Goldstein, J., Dershowitz, A. M. & Schwartz, R. D., *Criminal Law—Theory and Process*.¹² New York: Free Press, 1974.
- Gomez-Arcos, A., *L'agneau carnivore*.⁶ Paris: Stock, 1975.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Gopal, K. Schon im Kama Sutam.⁵ In: Italiaander (Ed.), *Weder Krankheit noch Verbrechen*. Hamburg: Gala, 1969.
- Gordon, R., Paedophilia: Normal and Abnormal.¹⁵ In: Kraemer et al (Eds.) *The Normal and Abnormal Love of Children*. Kansas City (MO): Sheed Andrews & McMeel, 1978.
- Göring, L., 491.⁶ Stockholm: Bonniers, 1962.
- Goslinga, G., NVSH niet gelukkig met sekstoerisme.⁸ *De Volkskrant*, 4 Feb 1982, 15.
- Goslinga, G., Anti-pedagogen: opvoeding is kindermishandeling.²⁰ *'t Heen & Weer* 73: 3-8, 1983.
- Gottschalk, J. B. F., De pastorale praktijk.² *Tijdschrift voor Theologie* 7: 151-159, 1967.
- Gottschalk, J. B. F., Het pastorale gesprek met de homofiël.² In: Gottschalk et al, *Pastorale zorg voor homofiëlen*. Utrecht: Spectrum, 1968.
- Grass, G., *Katz und Maus*.⁶ Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1961.
- Grassel, H., *Jugend-Sexualität-Erziehung*.²⁰ Berlin: Staatsverlag der Deutschen Demokratischen Republik, 1967.
- Graven, Ph., La pudeur enfantine (art. 191 CP).¹² In: *Recueil Offert au Tribunal Fédéral*. Basel: Helbring & Lichtenhahn, 1975.
- Green, R., Children's Quest for Sexual Identity.²⁰ *Psychology Today* 2: 45-51, 1974.
- Greifenhagen, A., *Griechische Erosen*.⁷ Berlin: De Gruyter, 1957.
- Greulich, W. E. et al, *Somatic and Endocrine Studies of Pubertal and Adolescent Boys*.²⁰ Millwood: Kraus Reprint, 1942, 1976.
- Griffin, F. A., *The Ugly Duckling-Pedophilia, Pederasty, the Anal Complex*.¹⁵ San Diego: Greenleaf Classics, 1971.
- Grobbe, J., Tieners en sexualiteit.²⁰ *Humo* 2202: 20-24; 2203: 20-26; 2204: 28-38, 1982.
- Groffman, K. J., Die psychischen Auswirkungen von Sittlichkeitsverbrechen bei jugendlichen Opfern.¹⁶ In: Blau & Müller-Lückmann: *Gerichtliche Psychologie*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1962.
- Groot, B. de., *Homosexuelen en kinderen krijgen*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Universiteit van Amsterdam, 1982.
- Groot, D. de., *Pedofilie*.¹⁵ 's-Gravenhage: PSVG, 1981.
- Groot, D. de., De seksuele revolutie in Nederland.¹⁷ In: *Studium Generale-Lezingen seksualiteit*. Maastricht: Rijksuniversiteit Limburg, 1983.
- Groot, Th. de., Sekstoerisme vaak uitkomst voor pedofiël.⁸ *De Volkskrant*, 26 Jan 1982, 11.
- Groot, Th. De, Pedofiël wordt slachtoffer van kruistocht.⁸ *De Volkskrant*, 23 Feb 1982, 13.
- Gros, Chr., Les deux misères des enfants de Manille.⁸ *Telerama* 1663: 59-60, 1981.
- Groth, A. N., Patterns of Sexual Assault Against Children and Adolescents.¹⁶ In: Burgess, Groth, Holmstrom & Sgroi, *Sexual Assault of Children and Adolescents*. Lexington: Lexington Books, 1978.
- Groth, A. N. & Birnbaum, H. J., Adult Sexual Orientation and Attraction to Underage Persons.¹⁶ *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 7, 3: 175-181, 1978.
- Groth, A. N. & Burgess, A. W., Der sexuelle Angriff auf das Kind.¹⁶ *Sexualmedizin* 7: 706-712, 1978.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- GROUPE D'ETUDE SUR LA PEDOFILIE, *S'aimer entre enfants et adultes*.¹⁵ Bruxelles: Infor-Homosexualité, 1979.
- Grubben, J., Homoseksualiteit: een psychische stoornis.²¹⁷ In: Gottschalk et al, *Pastorale zorg voor homofiëlen*. Utrecht: Spectrum, 1968.
- Guersant, M. Jean-Paul.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1953.
- Gundersen, B. H., Melaas, P. S. & Skaar, J. E., Sexual Behavior of Preschool Children.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Gundlach, R. H., Sexual Molestation and Rape Reported by Homosexual and Heterosexual Women.¹⁰ *Journal of Homosexuality* 2, 4: 367-384, 1977.
- Gurlitt, L., *Erotica Plautina*.⁷ München: Müller, 1921.
- Gürtler, W., Von der Kindertherapie zur Antipädagogik.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Gurwell, J. K., *Mass Murder in Houston*.¹⁸ Houston: Cordovan, 1974.
- Gury, Chr., Les journées nationales d'Arcadie.¹⁷ *Arcadie* 27, 11 (323): 654-660, 1980.
- Guyomar, J.-Y., *La muraille ou l'exercice de la parole*.³ Paris: Sagittaire, 1978.
- Guyon, R., *La sessualità liberata*.¹⁷ Torino: Bresci, 1973.
- Guyotat, P., *Tombeau pour cinq cent mille soldats*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1967.
- Haagsma, I., De pedofiël aan het woord.¹⁵ In: Van Eeten (Ed.) *Sex met kinderen*. Den Haag: NVSH, 1972.
- Haan, H. de & Brederode, P. van, *Feiten over jeugdseksualiteit*.²⁰ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1970.
- Haan, J. I. de, *Pijpelijntjes*.⁶ 's-Gravenhage: Kruseman, 1904.
- Haddad, G., *L'adolescence de Jéhovah*.⁶ Paris: Julliard, 1963.
- Haddenbrock, S., Das psychiatrische Gutachten zur Beurteilung der Schuldfähigkeit von Triebtätern mit besonderer Berücksichtigung der Pädophilie.¹⁶ In: Stockert (Ed.), *Die Pädophilie und ihre strafrechtliche Problematik*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1965.
- Haerberle, E. J., *The Sex Atlas*.¹⁷ New York: Seabury, 1978.
- Hahn, J. G. von, Albanesische Studien.⁵ In: Italiaander (Ed.), *Weder Krankheit noch Verbrechen*. Hamburg: Gala, 1969.
- Hakim, Crowstone: *The Chronicles of Qamar*.⁶ Amsterdam: The Coltsfoot Press, 1983.
- Hallbeck, N., *Mannen och pojken*.¹⁵ Stockholm: Hallbeck, 1980.
- Hamilton, W., Kevin.⁶ New York: St. Martin's Press, 1980.
- Hamilton, W., Chemical Castration.¹¹ *The New York Native*, 27 July/9 Aug 1981, 23.
- Hammond, T., Paidikion: a Paederastic Manuscript.³ *International Journal of Greek Love* 1, 2: 28-37, 1966.
- Hanack, E.-W., *Empfiehl es sich, die Grenzen des Sexualstrafrechts neu zu bestimmen?* München: Beck, 1968.
- Hancarville, D., *Monuments de la vie privée des douze césars*.⁷ Rome: Imprimerie du Vatican, 1786.
- Hanley, J., *Boy*.⁶ New York: Knopf, 1932.
- Hanlo, J., *Go to the Mosk*.⁶ Amsterdam: Van Oorschot, 1971.
- Hannon, G., Men Loving Boys Loving Men.¹⁵ *The Body Politic* 6, 39, 1977/78.
- Hannon, G., Men Loving Boys Loving Men Again.¹⁵ *The Body Politic* 8, 51: 21-27, 1979.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hanry, P., *Erotisme africain*.⁵ Paris: Payot, 1970.
- Hanry, P., *Les enfants, le sexe et nous*.²⁰ Toulouse: Privat, 1977.
- Harden, C., *Hab keine Angst-Broschüre gegen den sexuellen Missbrauch von Kindern*.¹⁶ Innenministerium Baden-Württemberg.
- Harmon, D., *Boy-lovers*.¹⁵ New York: Jumeaux, 1968.
- Harriman, E., De ethiek van chemische castratie.¹¹ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 13 Jan 1979, Z-3.
- Harris, F., *My Life and Loves*.⁶ Paris: Obelisk, 1958-1960.
- Harris, M., *The Dilly Boys-Male Prostitution in Piccadilly*.⁸ London: Croom Helm, 1973.
- Harris, Ph., The Boston Hustling Scene,⁸ *The Real Paper* 29, 7: 15-20, 1978.
- Hart de Ruyter, Th., De psychoseksuele ontwikkeling bij zuigeling en kleuter;¹⁷ Het kind als slachtoffer, als 'dader' en als verleider;¹⁶ Seksuele voorlichting en opvoeding.²⁰ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Hart De Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*.²⁰ Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Hart de Ruyter, Th. & Zijl, L. B. M. van der, Psychoanalytische gezichtspunten. Puberteit en adolescentie.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Hass, A., *Teenage Sexuality*.²⁰ New York: Macmillan, 1979.
- Hauptmann, W., *Gewaltlose Unzucht mit Kindern*.¹⁶ München: Fink, 1975.
- Hauser, R., *La société d'en face*.¹⁷ Paris: Table Ronde, 1962.
- HEARINGS BEFORE THE SUBCOMMITTEE ON CRIME OF THE COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY, HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, *Sexual Exploitation of Children*.¹⁶ Washington: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1977.
- Heid, H., Zur prophylaktischen Funktion der Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Kerscher (Ed.) *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Heine, M., *Recueil de confessions et observations psycho-sexuelles*.¹⁷ Paris: Terrain Vague, 1957.
- Heinemans, J. & Klein, W. F., Wij weten niet wat erger is: je kind vermoord of een moordenaar.¹⁶ Elsevier, 16 Nov. 1974, 200-203.
- Heister, R., Die normale Pubertätsentwicklung.²⁰ In: Grunert-Bronnen (Ed.) *Pubertät*. München: Deutscher Taschenbuch Verlag, 1973.
- Hemmes, G., Homoseksualiteit in kinderboeken.²⁰ *Orlando* 1: 20-23, 1982.
- Hendriks, M., Kind door hard en zacht opvoeden gemanipuleerd.²⁰ *De Volkskrant*, 12 Maart 1983, I17.
- Hennig, J.-L., *Les garçons de passe*.⁸ Paris: Hallier, 1978.
- Hennig, J.-L., Thomas, 30 ans: Bruno, 15 ans: le nouveau couple zig-zag.¹⁵ *Recherches* 37: 137-166, 1979.
- Henriques, F., *Facetten der liefde*.³ Antwerpen: Egelantier.
- Henry, G. W., *Sex Variants*.¹⁷ New York: Hoeber, 1948.
- Hentig, H. von, *Die Kriminalität des homophilen Mannes*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1960.
- Herbart, P., *L'âge d'or*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1953.
- Herd, G. H., *Guardians of the Flute-A Study of Ritualized Homosexual Behavior*.⁵ New York: McGraw-Hill, 1981.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Herd, G. H. (Ed.), *Rituals of Manhood-Male Initiation in Papua New Guinea*.⁵ Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.
- Herd, G. H., A Comment on Cultural Attributes and Fluidity of Bisexuality.⁵ *Journal of Homosexuality*, 10: 3/4, 53-61, 1984.
- Herman, M., Effects of Child Molestation.¹⁶ *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* 6: 58-60, 1972.
- Hertoft, P., *Unge mænds seksuelle adfærd, viden og holdning*.²⁰ København: Akademisk Forlag, 1968.
- Hertoft, P., Sexuelle afvigelser.¹⁷ In: Hertoft (Ed.), *Pædagogisk Sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal, 1971.
- Hertoft, P., Orgasmus und Nähe. ¹⁷ In: Nørretranders (Ed.), *Hungabe, Über den Orgasmus des Mannes*. Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1983.
- Hervé, G. & Kerrest, Th., *Les enfants de Fez*.⁸ Paris: Hallier, 1980.
- Heyden, A. A. M. van der, *Atlas van de antieke wereld*.⁷ Amsterdam: Elsevier, 1958.
- Heymann, R., *Das Verbrechen-Sexualverbrecher*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Lykeion, 1930.
- Himmelein, K., *Grundsatzklärung und Ziele der Pädophilieforschung*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Hirschfeld, M., *Die Homosexualität des Mannes und des Weibes*.¹⁷ Berlin: Marcus, 1914.
- Hirschfeld, M., *Sexualpathologie*.¹⁷ Bonn: Marcus, 1920.
- Hirschfeld, M., *Geschlechtskunde*. Stuttgart: Püttmann, 1930.
- Hirschfeld, M., *Sittengeschichte des Weltkrieges*.³ Leipzig: Schneider, 1930.
- Hirschfeld, M. & Spinner, J. R., *Geschlecht und Verbrechen*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Schneider, 1930.
- Hite, Sh., *The Hite Report on Male Sexuality*.¹⁷ New York: Ballantine, 1981.
- Hite, Sh., *Het Hite Rapport over de sexualiteit van de man*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1982.
- Hocquenghem, G., *Les petits garçons*.⁶ Paris: Albin Michel, 1983.
- Hocquenghem, G. & Thorstad, D., Boy Lover.¹⁵ *Semiotext(e) Special* 1: 18-35, 1980.
- Hoekstra, R. C., *Sexuele doding*.¹⁷ Groningen: Van Denderen, 1969.
- Hoffman, R. J., Some Cultural Aspects of Greek Male Homosexuality.⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 5, 3: 217-226, 1980.
- Hoffmeyer, H., Samlejets anatomi og fysiologi¹⁷; Psykoanalytisk udviklingsteori og sexualoplysning²⁰; Puberteten²⁰. In: Hertoft (Ed.) *Pædagogisk Sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendahl, 1971.
- Hogan, B., Reform of the Law Relating to Sexual Offences: Various Proposals.¹² In: West (Ed.) *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Hohmann, J. S., Kindersexualität und Pädophilie¹⁵; Sexualethik und Katholizismus.² In: Hohmann (Ed.) *Pädophilie Heute*, Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Holdredge, C. P. & Young, K., Circumcision Rites Among the Bajok.⁵ *American Anthropologist* 29: 661-668, 1927.
- Holland, I., *The Man Without a Face*.⁶ New York: Bantam Books, 1972.
- Holm, M., *Udda Eros*.¹⁷ Stockholm, Larson, 1971.
- Holtrop, A. & Sijmons, R., Androcur.¹¹ *Vrij Nederland* 40: 7, 1979.
- HOMOGROEP PvdA, *Homoseksualiteit in Europa*.¹² Amsterdam: Partij van de Arbeid, 1983.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hopfner, Th., *Das Sexualleben der Griechen und Römer*.⁷ Prag: Calve, 1938.
- Horatius Flaccus, Q., *Satires-Épîtres-Art poétique*.⁶ Paris: Garnier, 1950.
- Horn, P., *Phänomenologie der Sexualität*.³ Köln: Ellenberg, 1980.
- Hotchkiss, R. D., *Fertility in Men*.¹⁷ London: Lippincott, 1944.
- Houillon, Ch., *Sexualität*.¹⁷ Braunschweig: Vieweg, 1969.
- Howells, K., Social Reactions to Sexual Deviance.¹² In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Howells, K., Adult Sexual Interest in Children: Considerations Relevant to Theories of Aetiology.¹⁶ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Hucko, E., *Sexualdelikte an Kindern und Jugendlichen*.¹⁶ München: Goldmann, 1971.
- Hueber, A.-M., *La séduction inachevée*.⁶ Paris: Editions du Seuil, 1972.
- Hughes, B., *The Martini-Henry Modification*.⁶ New York: Norton, 1978.
- Huizinga, C., Gewenstheid of ongewenstheid van homo-pedofiele relaties niet in het algemeen te beoordelen.¹⁵ *Sjow* 4, 18: 399-404, 1976.
- Huizinga, C., De wet kent grenzen, de liefde niet.¹⁵ *Sjow* 5, 4: 78-81, 1977.
- Huizinga, C., *Verslag van een onderzoek naar oudere-jongere relaties 1978-1979*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Hülsebeck, C., et al, *Het rode boekje voor scholieren*.²⁰ Utrecht: Bruna, 1970.
- Hulsman, L. H. C., Kriminele politiek en (strafrechtelijke) zedelijkheidswetgeving.¹² In: André de la Porte et al (Eds.), *Bij deze stand van zaken*. Arnhem: Gouda Quint, 1983.
- Humphries, L., *Tearoom Trade—A Study of Homosexual Encounters in Public Places*.¹⁷ London: Duckworth, 1970.
- Hunger, H., *Das Sexualwissen der Jugend*.²⁰ München: Reinhardt, 1960.
- Hunold, G., *Atlas der seksualiteit in woord en beeld*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Triton, 1973.
- Hurlock, E. B., *Adolescent Development*.²⁰ New York: McGraw-Hill, 1949.
- Huijts, J. H., Pedofilie na Willem Duys.¹⁵ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 28: 438-439, 1973.
- Hijmans, A., *Vrouw en man in de prostitutie*.⁸ 's-Gravenhage: Van Keulen, 1956.
- Ilcken, M., *Pedofielen het woord ontnomen*.¹⁵ Maastricht: Werkgroep Pedofilie, 1982.
- ILLINOIS LEGISLATIVE INVESTIGATING COMMISSION, *Child Molestation*.¹⁶ Chicago: State of Illinois, 1980.
- ILLINOIS LEGISLATIVE INVESTIGATING COMMISSION, *Sexual Exploitation of Children*.¹⁶ Chicago: State of Illinois, 1980.
- Ingram, M., "Filthy"—Reaction to Paedophilic Acts.¹⁵ *Libertarian Education* 21: 4-5, 1977.
- Ingram, M., The Participating Victim—A Study of Sexual Offences against Pre-Pubertal Boys.¹⁶ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Ingram, M., Participating Victims—A Study of Sexual Offences with Boys.¹⁶ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- INSTITUT FÜR SEXUALFORSCHUNG, *Bilder Lexikon*.³ Wien: Verlag für Kulturforschung, 1930.
- INSTITUUT VOOR TOEGEPASTE SOCIOLOGIE, *Rechtspositie van minderjarigen*.¹² Nijme-

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- gen: Instituut voor Toegepaste Sociologie, 1977.
- Iovetz-Tereshchenko, N. M., *Friendship-Love in Adolescence*. London: Allen & Unwin, 1936.
- Italiaander, R., Beobachtungen bei den Negeren.⁵ In: Italiaander (Ed.), *Weder Krankheit noch Verbrechen*. Hamburg: Gala, 1969.
- Jackson, Chr., *Manuel*.⁶ New York: Knopf, 1964.
- Jackson, S., *Childhood and Sexuality*.²⁰ Oxford: Blackwell, 1982.
- Jacobs, E., Als ze aan mijn kind komen, dan...¹⁶ *Wij en Onze Kinderen* 8: 65-69, 1978.
- Jagt, B. B., *Pijnboomspeek*. Amsterdam: Elsevier, 1979.
- Jans, J., Seksualiteit en persoonlijkheidsontwikkeling in de jeugdijaren.²⁰ *Verbum* 44, 6: 245-246, 1977.
- Janse De Jonge, A. L., et al, *De homoseksuele naaste*. Baarn: Bosch & Keuning, 1961.
- Janus, S. *The Death of Innocence*.¹⁶ New York: Morrow & Co., 1981.
- Janus, S. S. & Bess, B. E., Latency: Fact or Fiction?²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Jeanchard, P., *La cravache*.⁶ Paris: Fayard, 1970.
- Jensen, A. E., *Beschneidung und Reifezeremonien bei Naturvölkern*.⁵ Frankfurt am Main: Strecker & Schröder, 1933.
- Jensen, O. S., Körperpsychologie und Orgasmus.¹⁷ In: Nørretranders (Ed.), *Hingabe, Über den Orgasmus des Mannes*. Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1983.
- Jersild, J., *Boy Prostitution*.⁸ Copenhagen: Gad, 1956.
- Jersild, J., *De pædofile-Børneelskere*.¹⁶ København: Nyt Nordisk Forlag, 1964.
- Jersild, J., *The Normal Homosexual Male versus the Boy Molester*.¹⁶ København: Nyt Nordisk Forlag, 1967.
- Jippes, H., Zelfmoord van kinderen.³ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 25 Sep. 1982, Z-5.
- Johnson, W. R., Childhood Sexuality: The Last of the Great Taboos?²⁰ *SIECUS-Report* V, 4: 1-2, 15, 1977.
- JOINT COUNCIL FOR GAY TEENAGERS, I Know What I am: Gay Teenagers and the Law.²⁰ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Jones, G. P., The Social Study of Pederasty: in Search of a Literature Base.¹⁵ *Journal of Homosexuality* 8, 1: 61-95, 1982.
- Jouhandeau, M., *Du pur amour*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1955.
- Jouhandeau, M., *Bréviaire-Portrait de Don Juan-Amours*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1981.
- Jourdan, E., *Les mauvais anges*.⁶ Paris: Editions de la Pensée Moderne, 1955.
- Joyce, J., *Dubliners*.⁶ Hamburg: Albatross, 1932.
- Joyce, J., *Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*.⁶ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1973.
- J&P, *Symposium omgaan met kinderseksualiteit en pedofilie, 16 maart 1982*.¹⁵ Venlo: NVSH, 1982.
- Junod, H. A., *Moeurs et coutumes des Bantous*.⁵ Paris: Payot, 1936.
- Juvenalis, D. J., *Oeuvres complètes*.⁶ Paris: Garnier.
- Kaiser, G., Ungenau, fragwürdig, zweifelhaft—Bernards Methodengenaugigkeit.¹⁵ *Beitriff: Erziehung* 6, 4: 29-30, 1974.
- Kalma, B., De politie als hulpverlener.¹² In: *Congresbundel Pedofilie en Samenleving*. Den Haag: NVSH, 1977.
- Kameneff, L., *Ecoliers sans tablier*.²⁰ Paris: Simoën, 1979.
- Kapel, S., Child Molestation Needn't Be Long-term Trauma.¹⁶ New York: *Daily News*,

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 20 Feb. 1979.
- Karpman, B., *The Sexual Offender and his Offenses*.¹⁷ New York: Julian Press, 1964.
- Karsch-Haack, F., *Das gleichgeschlechtliche Leben der Ostasiaten: Chinesen, Japaner, Koreaer*.⁵ München: Seltz & Schauer, 1906.
- Karsch-Haack, F., *Das gleichgeschlechtliche Leben der Naturvölker*.⁵ München: Reinhardt, 1911.
- KATHOLIEKE ACTIE, Landlijke Centrum voor, *Documentatie bij het rapport aan de Nederlandse bisschoppen over de situatie in huwelijk en gezin*.² Heemstede: Katholieke Actie, 1960.
- Ka-Tzetnik 135633, *Piepel*.⁶ London: Blond, 1961.
- Kazantzakis, N., *Christus wordt weer gekruisigd*.⁶ Utrecht: Fontein, 1952.
- Kelly, B., On "Woman/Girl Love"—or, Lesbians Do "Do It".¹⁵ *Gay Community News* 3: 5, 1979.
- Kelly, D., *Size Queen and Other Poems*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1981.
- Kemmerich, M., *Kultur-Kuriosa*.³ München: Langen, 1910.
- Kempe, G. Th., Les homophiles et la société.¹⁷ In: ICSE, *L'homosexualité et la santé morale publique*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: ICSE, 1953.
- Kempe, G. Th., Maatschappelijke aspecten van homofilie.¹⁷ In: Overing et al, *Homosexualiteit*. Hilversum: Brand, 1961.
- Kempff, R., Bourgeoisie and Sexuality in France.³ In: Duyves et al (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Kentler, H., *Sexual-erziehung*.²⁰ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1970.
- Kentler, H., Sexualpädagogische Aufgaben bei Jugendlichen der Unterschicht.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Kentler, H., Sexualität und Gewalt.^{18 10} In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Sexualität und Gewalt*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Kerscher, K.-H. I., Zur Schädlichkeit nichtgewaltsamer sexueller Handlungen mit Kindern.¹⁵ *Neue Praxis* 3: 145-156, 1973.
- Kerscher, K.-H. I., *Emanzipatorische Sexualpädagogik und Strafrecht*.^{20 12} Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1973.
- Kerscher, K.-H. I., Unzucht mit Kindern.¹⁶ *Sexualmedizin* 3, 11: 560-565, 1974.
- Kerscher, K.-H. I., Sexuelle Handlungen zwischen Kindern und Erwachsenen.¹⁶ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Kerscher, I., Moral und Gewaltkriminalität.² In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Sexualität und Gewalt*. Bensheim: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Kerscher, I., Kubitzek, D. & Schütz, Chr., Didaktisch-methodische Aspekte einer emanzipatorischen Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Kerscher (Ed.) *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Khella, K. N., Das Liebesleben des arabischen Dichters abu-Nuwas.¹ In: Italiaander (Ed.), *Weder Krankheit noch Verbrechen*. Hamburg: Gala, 1969.
- Kiell, N., *Varieties of Sexual Experience*.⁶ New York: International Universities Press, 1976.
- Killias, M., *Jugend und Sexualstrafrecht*.¹² Bern: Haupt, 1979.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Kinsey, A. C. et al, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*.¹⁷ Philadelphia: Saunders, 1948.
- Kinsey, A. C. et al, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*.¹⁷ Philadelphia: Saunders, 1953.
- Kirchhoff, C. & G. F., Untersuchung im Dunkelfeld sexueller Viktimisation.¹⁶ In: Kirchhoff & Sessar (Eds.), *Das Verbrechensopfer*. Bochum: Brockmeyer, 1979.
- Kirkendall, L., *A New Bill of Sexual Rights and Responsibilities*.² Buffalo: Prometheus, 1976.
- Kirkendall, L. A. & Moglia, R., The Sexual Rights of Children and Youth.²⁰ Paper presented to the Fifth International Symposium on Sex Education, Tel Aviv, 1979.
- Kirkwood, J., *There Must Be a Pony*.⁶ New York: Avon, 1960.
- Kirkwood, J., *Good Times, Bad Times*.⁶ Greenwich (CT) Fawcett, 1968.
- Kittel, G. (Ed.), *Theologisches Wörterbuch zum Neuen Testament*.² Stuttgart: Kohlhammer, 1954.
- Kjellin, B. et al, *Sexuella övergrepp*.¹² Stockholm: Justitiedepartementet, 1976.
- Klamer, A., Ze moesten het eens weten.² *Mensen* 6: 2-7, 1976.
- Kleeman, J. A., Genital Self-stimulation in Girls.²⁰ In: Marcus & Francis: *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Klerk, J. de, *De Platwormen vervelen zich*.³ Amsterdam: Agon Elsevier, 1974.
- Klimmer, A. G. R., Verführung—ein Witz.²⁰ *Gay Journal* 11: 9, 1977.
- Klimmer, R., *Die Homosexualität*.¹⁷ Hamburg: Kriminalistik, 1958.
- Klossowski, P., *Le Baphomet*.⁶ Paris: Mercure de France, 1965.
- Knutson, D. C., Introduction to Homosexuality and the Law.¹² *Journal of Homosexuality* 5, 1/2: 5-23, 1979/80.
- Koch, F., Gesellschaftliche Implikationen in der neueren Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Kerscher (Ed.) *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Koch-Harnack, G., *Knabenliebe und Tiergeschenke*.⁷ Berlin: Mann, 1983.
- Koeck, P., De dag dat mijn minaar zijn plechtige communie deed.¹⁵ *Humo* 4: 137-153, 1983.
- Kolansky, H. & Moore, W. Th. Marihuana Use and Autoerotic Activity.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- KOMMITEN FÖR LAGSTIFTNINGEN, *Yttrandefrihetens gränser*.^{12 4} Stockholm: Justitiedepartementet, 1969.
- Koning, P. P. J. de, *Een kwalitatieve analyse van de levensgeschiedenis van een aantal homoseksuelen*.¹⁷ Groningen: Instituut voor Sociale Psychologie, 1967.
- Koning, P. P. J. de & Blom-Van Rees, Th. A. H. M., *Een kwalitatieve analyse van de keuze van een homoseksueel gedragspatroon door een aantal minderjarige jongens*.²⁰ Groningen: Instituut voor Sociale Psychologie, 1969.
- Koning, P. P. J. de & Sanders, G. J. E. M., *Een kwalitatieve analyse van de levensgeschiedenis van een aantal homoseksuelen*.¹⁷ Bijlage. Groningen: Instituut voor Sociale Psychologie, 1967.
- Kooy, G. A., *Jongeren en seksualiteit*.²⁰ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1976.
- Kops, H., Ongure heren, regenjassen en handevol snoep.¹⁶ *Panorama* 8 Feb. 1980: 64-67.
- Kops, H. Alex (13): Ik vind het hartstikke goed zo.¹⁵ *Panorama* 15 Feb. 1980: 54-57.
- Kors, T., Jeugdprostitutie.⁸ *Nieuwe Revu* 27 Okt. 1978: 18-33.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Kors, T., De hoerenjongens van Sri Lanka.⁸ *Nieuwe Revu* 15 Jan. 1982: 36-45.
- Kraamwinkel, R. *Mini-Love*.²⁰ Amsterdam: Gandalf.
- Kraemer, W., A Paradise Lost.¹⁵ In: Kraemer, Gordon, Lambert & Williams, *The Normal and Abnormal Love of Children*. Kansas City (MO): Sheed Andrews & McMeel, 1978.
- Kraemer, W. et al, *The Forbidden Love*.¹⁶ London: Sheldon, 1976.
- Krafft-Ebbing, R. von, Flagellatio puerorum als Ausdruck des larvirten Sadismus eines paedophilen Conträrsexuellen.¹⁸ *Allgemeine Zeitschrift für Psychiatrie* 58, 4: 545-557, 1901.
- Krafft-Ebbing, R. von, *Psychopathia sexualis*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1903.
- Krauss, F. S., *Das Geschlechtsleben der Japaner*.⁵ Leipzig: Deutsche Verlags A.G., 1907.
- Krauss, F. S., Auch in Japan seit uralten Zeiten bekannt.⁵ In: Italiaander (Ed.), *Weder Krankheit noch Verbrechen*. Hamburg: Gala, 1969.
- Kremer, J., Stoornissen in de ontwikkeling van de genitalia.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Krist, G., *Pedofilie*.¹⁵ Leuven: Katholieke Universiteit, 1976.
- Kristensen, H. J., Tilrettelæggelse af seksualundervisning.²⁰ In: Hertoft (Ed.), *Pædagogisk Sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal, 1971.
- Kroll, W., *Freundschaft und Knabenliebe*.¹⁵ München: Heimeran, 1927.
- Kronhausen, E. & Ph., *Pornography and the Law*.⁴ New York: Ballantine, 1959.
- Kronhausen, E. & Ph., *Sex Histories of American College Men*.¹⁷ New York: Ballantine, 1960.
- Kronhausen, E. & Ph., *Erotic Art*.⁴ Copenhagen: Unprint, 1968.
- Kronhausen, E. & Ph., *Erotic Art*.⁴ Copenhagen: Unprint, 1969.
- Kruithof, J. & Ussel, J. van, *Jeugd voor de muur-Vlaamse studenten over hun seksuele problematiek*.²⁰ Antwerpen: Ontwikkeling, 1963.
- Kruysman, J., *Bob Vredevelde wordt man*.⁶ Utrecht: Fontein, 1948.
- Kruijt, C. S., Het verloop van de zelfmoordcijfers in de westerse wereld sedert de tweede wereldoorlog.³ *Demografie* 15: 1-4, 1975.
- Kruijt, J. P., Ethnologische gezichts punten.⁵ In: Hart de Ruyter (Ed.), *De sexuele ontwikkeling van het kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Kuhlmann, J., Gehirnehirnchirurgie.¹¹ *GLF-Journal* 12: 13-14, 1975.
- Kuhn, Ga., *Das Phänomen der Strichjungen in Hamburg*.⁸ Bonn: Bundeskriminalamt, 1957.
- Kuik, A., *Het schot*.⁶ Amsterdam: Meulenhoff, 1976.
- Kuitenbrouwer, F., Hoe zedelijk is Vrouwe Justitia?¹² *NRC-Handelsblad*, 13 Jan. 1979: Z-3.
- Kunert, D., Gesellschaftliche Bedingungen der Einführung der Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Kupffer, H., Die "Gleichberechtigung des Kindes" unter sexualpädagogischem Aspekt.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Kuppens, C., Lekker gevoel na de groepssexavond voor paren.¹⁷ *Info* 9, 9: 12-13, 1978.
- Kurland, M. L., Pedophilia erotica.¹⁶ *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease* 131:

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 394-403, 1960.
- Kuster, H. J., *Over homoseksualiteit in middeleeuws West-Europa*.³ Proefschrift Rijksuniversiteit Utrecht, 1977.
- Kutchinsky, B., *Deviance and Criminality: The Case of Voyeur in a Peeper's Paradise*.¹⁷ Manuscript.
- Kutchinsky, B., *Towards an Explanation of the Decrease in Registered Sex Crimes in Copenhagen*.³ Manuscript.
- Kutchinsky, B., *Studies on Pornography and Sex Crimes in Denmark*.⁴ New Social Science Monographs, 1970.
- Kutchinsky, B., Erotik ohne Zensur.⁴ *Sexualmedizin* 4, 2: 95-96, 1975.
- Kvamme, J. C., Cumulative Annotated Bibliography.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 1, 1: 137-143, 1974.
- Kwast, S. van der, *Over de incest*.⁹ Meppel: Boom, 1963.
- Kwast, S. van der, *Seksuele criminaliteit*.¹² Leiden: Stafleu, 1968.
- L., Die Araber und wir.¹ In: Dieckmann & Pescatore (Eds.), *Drie Milliarden Perverse*. Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1980.
- Lafon, R., Trivas, J., Faure, J.-L. & Pouget, R., Victimologie et criminologie des attentats sexuels sur les enfants et les adolescents.¹⁶ *Annales médico-psychologiques* 41, 1: 97-106, 1961.
- Lambert, J., *Histoire véridable*.⁶ Paris: Fayard, 1979.
- Lambert, K. The Scope and Dimensions of Paedophilia.¹⁶ In: Kraemer, Gordon, Lambert & Williams, *The Normal and Abnormal Love of Children*. Kansas City (MO): Sheed Andrews & McMeel, 1978.
- Lamping-Goos, M. D., Hulpverlening aan reclassenten.¹⁶ In: Wolters (Ed.), *Seksueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro, 1982.
- LANDELIJKE WERKGROEP PEDOFILIE, *De wet kent grenzen, de liefde niet*.¹⁵ Utrecht: Private Press, 1978.
- Landis, J. T., Experiences of 500 Children with Adult Sexual Deviation.¹⁶ *Psychiatric Quarterly Supplement* 30: 91-109, 1956.
- Lane, E., *Game-Texts-A Guatemalan Journal*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1978.
- Langemeijer, G. E. et al, *Delicten betreffende de seksualiteit*.¹² Deventer: Kluwer, 1968.
- Langfeldt, Th., Homosexualitet og forføring.²⁰ *Norsk Juridisk Tidsskrift Lov og Rett*: 128-131, 1975.
- Langfeldt, Th., Processes in Sexual Development.²⁰ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.) *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Langfeldt, Th., Processes in Sexual Development²⁰; Childhood Masturbation.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Langfeldt, Th., Sexual Development in Children.²⁰ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Larin, L., *Childhood Sexuality-Outlook Determines Outcome*.²⁰ Manuscript.
- Laroche, G., *La puberté*.²⁰ Paris: Masson, 1938.
- Last, J., *Mijn vriend André Gide*.⁶ Amsterdam: Van Ditmar, 1966.
- Launay, Cl. Les inhibitions sexuelles chez l'adolescent.²⁰ *Acta Paedo-psychiatrica* 36, 2: 23-26, 1969.
- Laurent, E., *Sadismus und Masochismus*.¹⁸ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1912.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Lauritsen, J., *Religious Roots of the Taboo on Homosexuality*.² New York: Lauritsen, 1974.
- Lautmann, R., Sexualdelikte—Straftaten ohne Opfer?¹² *Zeitschrift für Rechtspolitik* 13, 2: 44-49, 1980.
- Lawrence, B. (pseudonym), How Ties was Made between Boys and Men!¹⁶ *Boy* 49: 12-16, 1980.
- Lawrence, B. (pseudonym), *A Theory on the Nature of Boy-love*.¹⁶ Manuscript.
- Laws, D. R. & Pawlowski, A. V., An Automated Fading Procedure to Alter Sexual Responsiveness in Pedophiles.¹¹ *Journal of Homosexuality* 1, 2: 149-163, 1974/75.
- Lazare, D., Pedophilia: Some Call it Love; Most Call it a Crime.¹⁶ *The Record* (Hackensack, NJ), 9 Feb. 1983, B-1 & 11.
- Lebrun, P., Le Tantra ou l'amour extase.¹³ *Châtelaine* 3: 65-70, 1983.
- Leist, W., Kinder gegen Kummersex.²⁰ *Betrifft Beziehung*, Jan. 1980: 8-10.
- Leist, W., *Kindersexualität und die Bedrohung der Erwachsenen-Unschuld*.²⁰ Venlo: Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1980.
- Leist, W., Kinderfreunde.¹⁵ *Heidelberger Rundschau* 24 Feb. 1981: 17-18.
- Lelyveld, M. *Snoepjes*. Manuscript, 1979.
- Lemaire, T., *De tederheid*.¹⁷ Utrecht: Ambo, 1968.
- Lemaire-Mertens, R., Over seksualiteit, erotiek en religie.² In: Hutsebaut et al, *Is er meer tussen ons?* Baarn: Ambo, 1980.
- Lempp, R., Seelische Schädigung von Kindern als Opfer von gewaltlosen Sittlichkeitsdelikten.¹⁶ *Neue Juristische Wochenschrift* 21, 49: 2265-2268, 1968.
- Lempp, R., Seelische Schädigung von Kindern durch Sittlichkeitsdelikte.¹⁶ *Aktion Jugenschutz Information* 4, 1-3, 1977.
- Lenders, H. J. H., *Sex-films I. Een exploratief onderzoek naar de invloed van sexueel geladen beeldmateriaal op jongeren*.⁴ Zeist: NISSO, 1970.
- Leonetti, P.-F., *Je suis un homo... comme ils disent*.¹⁷ Paris: Lefeuve, 1978.
- Leonhard, R. H., Auch Novalis war ein Sexualdelinquent.³ *Die Zeit*, 12 Sep. 1969, 20.
- Leslie, Ch. *Wilhelm von Gloeden, Photographer*.⁶ New York: Soho, 1977.
- Leslie, R., *Casebook: Homophile*.¹⁷ New York: Dalhousie, 1966.
- Lessing, Th., *Haarmann—Die Geschichte eines Werwolfs*.¹⁸ Berlin: Schmiede, 1925.
- Lever, M., *Les bûchers de Sodome*.³ Paris: Fayard, 1985.
- Levie, L. H., *Sexiatrie*.¹⁷ Leiden: Stafleu, 1971.
- Levin, S., Affects and Masturbation Conflicts.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Levine, B. B., Die Initiation der Mädchen in Nyansongo (Kenya).⁵ In: Popp (Ed.) *Initiation*. Frankfurt am Main: Suhrkamp, 1969.
- Levine, M. P., The Sociology of Male Homosexuality and Lesbianism—An Introductory Bibliography.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 5, 3: 249-275, 1980.
- Lewis, M. & Sarrel, Ph. M., Some Psychological Aspects of Seduction, Incest, and Rape in Childhood.⁹ *Journal of the American Academy of Child Psychiatry* 8: 606-619, 1969.
- Leyten, H., *Nuba*.⁵ Utrecht: Spectrum, 1978.
- Licht, H., *Beiträge zur antiken Erotik*.⁷ Dresden: Aretz, 1924.
- Licht, H., *Liebe und Ehe in Griechenland*.⁷ Berlin: Aretz, 1925.
- Licht, H., *Sittengeschichte Griechenlands*.⁷ Zürich: Aretz, 1926.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Linedecker, C. L., *Children in Chains*.²⁰ New York: Everest House, 1981.
- Linnér, E., *The New Handbook on Instruction in Sex and Personal Relationships in the Swedish Schools*.¹⁷ Stockholm: Svenska Institutet, 1980.
- Linschoten, J., Aspecten van de sexuele incarnatie.¹⁷ In: Van den Berg & Linschoten (Eds.), *Persoon en wereld*. Utrecht: Bijleveld, 1953.
- Linse, I. & Goch, S. van, Waarschuwing tegen warme bedden.²⁰ *En nu over Jeugdliteratuur* 9, 3: 99-103, 1982.
- Lloyd, R., *For Money or Love*.⁸ New York: Vanguard, 1976.
- Lochtenberg, H., *Pedofilie*.¹⁵ Manuscript, 1981.
- Loeb, E. M., *The Blood Sacrifice Complex*.⁵ New York: Kraus Reprint, 1974.
- Lohausen, W., Beethoven och lille Karl.³ *Revolt* 7: 54-55, 1977.
- LONGFORD COMMITTEE, *Pornography*.⁴ London: Corkonet, 1972.
- Los, M. & Anderson, P., The Second Life—Peer Subculture in Correctional Institutions.¹⁰ *Symposium Sociology of Law*, Noordwijk, 1972.
- Lotringer, S., Dirty Old Minds.¹⁵ *Semiotext(e) Special Loving Boys*, Summer, 1980: 2-7.
- Lotringer, S. & Moffett, M., Man Lover.¹⁵ *Semiotext(e) Special Loving Boys*, Summer, 1980: 8-16.
- Louvet de Couvray, J.-B., *Les amours du Chevalier de Faublas*.⁶ Paris: Garnier, 1919.
- Louys, P., *Les chansons de Bilitis*.⁶ Paris: Modern, 1894.
- Lucianus (Samosate), *L'oeuvre amoureuse*.⁶ Paris: Bibliothèque des Curieux, 1923.
- Lumby, M. E., Men Who Advertise for Sex.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 4, 1: 63-72, 1978.
- Lund, A., *The Boy and the Dagger*.⁶ Amsterdam: Spartacus, 1982.
- Maasen, Th., *Het pedagogisch paar*.²⁰ Manuscript.
- Maasen, Th., En toch beweegt het!¹² *Homologie* 3, 3: 18-19, 1981.
- Maasen, Th., De smalle marges van de pedofilie.¹⁵ *Jeugd en samenleving* 13, 2: 116-125, 1983.
- MacDonald Jr., A. P., Bisexuality—Some Comments on Research and Theory.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 3: 21-35, 1981.
- Macé, J. C., *Le mignon*.⁶ Nice: Lefeuve, 1978.
- Mackay, J. H. (Sagitta), *Die Bücher der namenlosen Liebe*.⁶ Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1979.
- Madru, J., NAMBLA and Gay Liberation.¹⁵ *Fag Rag* 40: 3-4, 1983.
- Maisch, H., *Inzest*.⁹ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1968.
- Majapurja, T. Ch. & I., *Erotic Themes of Nepal*.² Kathmandu: Devi, 1981.
- Malinowski, B., *Das Geschlechtsleben der Wilden in Nordwest-Melanesien*.⁵ Leipzig: Grethlin, 1929.
- Manière, M., *Les nuits parfumées du petit Paul*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1977.
- Mann, Th., *Der Tod in Venedig*.⁶ Berlin: Fischer, 1925.
- Mann, Th., *Tagebücher 1918-1921*.⁶ Berlin: Fischer, 1979.
- Manning, J. E., *Their Crime is Love*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Mantegazza, P., *Die Geschlechtsverhältnisse des Menschen*.⁵ Berlin: Schillerbuchhandlung.
- Marcadé, J., *Eros kalos*.⁷ Genève: Nagel, 1965.
- Marcadé, J., *Roma amor*.⁷ Genève: Nagel, 1968.
- Marceau, W., *Paysages d'enfance*.⁶ Paris: Saint-Germain-des-Prés, 1980.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Marcus, I. M. & Francis, J. J., Introduction.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Marcuse, M., *Handwörterbuch der Sexualwissenschaft*.¹⁷ Bonn: Marcus & Weber, 1926.
- Marinkelle, A. B., Leertheoretische gezichtspunten.¹⁷ De ontwikkeling van deviaties en variaties.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Mariotti, E., *La neofilia*.¹⁵ Roma: Mediterranea, 1952.
- Marlet, J. J. C., Van verwondering tot mystiek.¹³ In: Gyselen et al, *Hoe menselijk is mystiek?* Baarn: Ambo, 1979.
- Marshall, G., *The Beginner's Guide to Cruising*.¹⁷ Washington: Guild Press, 1964.
- Marshall, G., *Advanced Guide to Cruising*.¹⁷ Washington: Guild Book, 1965.
- Martel, A., *Les lionceaux*.⁶ Manuscript.
- Martel, A., *Révolte à la Cité de Transit*.⁶ Paris: Duculot, 1983.
- Martialis, M. V., *Oeuvres complètes*.⁶ Paris: Garnier.
- Martinson, F. M., Eroticism in Infancy and Childhood.²⁰ *The Journal of Sex Research* 12, 4: 251-262, 1976.
- Martinson, F. M., Infant and Child Sexuality—Capacity and Experience.²⁰ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1979.
- Martinson, F. M., Eroticism in Infancy and Childhood²⁰; Preadolescent Sexuality²⁰; Childhood and the Institutionalization of Sexuality.²⁰ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Masters, R., *Sexuelle Tabus und Moral*.⁷ Hamburg: Kala, 1965.
- Masters, W. H. & Johnson, V. E., *Human Sexual Response*.¹⁷ London: Churchill, 1966.
- Masters, W. H. & Johnson, V. E., *Homoseksualiteit*.¹⁷ Deventer: Van Loghsum Slaterus, 1980.
- Matthews, R., Assessment of Sexual Offenders at Wormwood Scrubs.¹⁶ In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Matzneff, G., *Les moins de seize ans*.¹⁵ Paris: Julliard, 1974.
- Matzneff, G., *Cette camisole de flammes*.⁶ Paris: Table Ronde, 1976.
- Matzneff, G., *Le défi*.⁶ Paris: Table Ronde, 1977.
- Matzneff, G., *Les passions schismatiques*.¹⁵ Paris: Stock, 1977.
- Matzneff, G., Lycée Montaigne¹⁵; Lettres de l'île des Bienheureux.¹⁵ *Recherches* 37: 105-106; 129-132, 1979.
- Matzneff, G., L'interview d'un philopède.¹⁵ *Gai Pied* 31: 33, 1981.
- Maughan, R., *Journey to Siwa*.⁵ London: Chapman & Hall, 1950.
- Maughan, R., *The Wrong People*.⁶ London: Heinemann, 1967.
- Maughan, R., *Escape from the Shadows*.⁶ New York: McGraw-Hill, 1972.
- Maughan, R., *Testament Cairo*.⁶ London: De Hartington, 1972.
- Maughan, R., *The Boy from Beirut*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1982.
- Max, Truc, Albert & Jérôme, Die Pädophilie.¹⁵ In: Dieckmann & Pescatore (Eds.), *Drie Milliard Perverse*. Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1980.
- McBride, W. & Fleischhauer-Hardt, H., *Zeig mal!*²⁰ Wuppertal: Jugenddienst, 1974.
- McCaghy, Ch. H., Child Molesters—A Study of Their Careers As Deviants.¹⁶ In: Clinard & Quinney (Eds.), *Criminal Behavior Systems*. New York: Holt, Reinhart

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- & Winston, 1967.
- McCaghy, Ch. H., Child Molesting.¹⁶ *Sexual Behavior* 1, 5: 16-31, 1971.
- McConville, S., What Fit Punishment?¹² In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- McDonald, B., *Meat*.¹⁷ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1981.
- McNeill, J. J., *The Church and the Homosexual*.² New York: Pocket Books, 1976.
- Mead, M., *Coming of Age in Samoa*.⁵ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1928.
- Mead, M., *Growing up in New Guinea*.⁵ New York: Mentor Books, 1930.
- Mead, M., *Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies*.⁵ New York: Mentor Books, 1935.
- Mead, M., *Male and Female*.⁵ New York: Mentor Books, 1954.
- Mede, P. van der & Spee, J., *Sexualiteit '82*.¹⁷ Zeist: NISSO, 1983.
- Meers, D. R., Precocious Heterosexuality and Masturbation.²⁰ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Mehta, R. J., *Scientific Curiosities of Sex Life*.¹⁷ Bombay: Taraporevala, undated.
- Meier, M. H. E. & Poge-Castries, L. R. de, *Histoire de l'amour grec dans l'antiquité*.⁷ Paris: Stendhal, 1930.
- Meignant, M., Le droit à l'orgasme.¹⁷ *Arcadie* 21, 2 (232): 106-115, 1974.
- Meilof-Oonk, S., *Meningen over homosexualiteit*.³ Amsterdam: Stichting tot Bevordering Sociaal Onderzoek Minderheden, 1969.
- Mende, J. & Dobrovich, G., *Schülersexualität*.²⁰ Frankfurt am Main: Melzer, 1971.
- Menen, A., *Fonthill*.⁶ London: Hamish Hamilton, 1975.
- Mergen, A., Sexuality and Criminal Law in Terms of Anthropological and Social Conflict.¹² In: Jasperse, Leeuwen-Burow & Toornvliet (Eds.), *Criminology between the Rule of Law and the Outlaws*. Deventer: Kluwer, 1976.
- Mertner, E. & Mainusch, H., *Pornotopia*.⁴ Frankfurt am Main: Athenäum, 1970.
- Meijer, R., *Over homofiele jongens en jonge flikkers*.²⁰ Manuscript, 1981.
- Mishima, Y., *Confessions of a Mask*.⁶ London: World Distributors, 1958.
- Mitscherlich, A., Pubertät und Tradition.²⁰ In: Grunert-Bronnen (Ed.), *Pubertät*. München: Deutscher Taschenbuch Verlag, 1973.
- Mitzel, J., Common Sense: Pedo Info.¹⁵ *Gay News*, 21 Sep. 1979, 8.
- Mitzel, J., *The Boston Sex Scandal*.³ Boston: Glad Day, 1980.
- Mitzel, J., Recipe for a Witchhunt.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Mödling, P., Mit 7 auf dem Strich...⁸ *Gay Journal* 23, 11: 12, 1978.
- Moerings, M., *Homofiele jongeren in relatie tot hun omgeving*.¹⁷ Zeist: NISSO, 1970.
- Mohr, J. W., A Child Has Been Molested.¹⁶ *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality* 2: 43-50, 1968.
- Mohr, J. W. & Turner, R. E., Sexual Deviations—Paedophilia.¹⁶ *Applied Therapeutics* 9, 4: 362-365, 1967.
- Mohr, J. W., Turner, R. E. & Jerry, M. B., *Pedophilia and Exhibitionism*.¹⁶ Toronto: University of Toronto, 1964.
- Moll, A., *Das Sexualleben des Kindes*.²⁰ Berlin: Walthers, 1909.
- Moll, A., *Handbuch der Sexualwissenschaften*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Vogel, 1921.
- Möller, M., Dubieuze liefde?¹⁵ In: Verkoyen & Reiners (Eds.), *Documentatiemap ten behoeve van het Studium Generale over Seksualiteit*. Maastricht: Rijksuniversiteit

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Limburg, 1982.
- Möller, M., *Pedofiele relaties*.¹⁵ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1983.
- Money, J., Bisexual, homosexual and heterosexual.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 2, 3: 229-233, 1977.
- Montgomery Hyde, H., *Zestig eeuwen pornografie*.⁴ Amsterdam: Strenght, 1966.
- Montgomery Hyde, H., *The Cleveland Street Scandal*.³ New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, 1976.
- Montherlant, H. de, *La ville dont le prince est un enfant*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1967.
- Montherlant, H. de, *Les garçons*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1969.
- Montherlant, H. de & Peyrefitte, R., *Correspondance*.⁶ Paris: Laffont, 1983.
- Moody, R., *Love for Children*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Moody, R., *Indecent Assault*.¹⁵ London: Word is Out, 1980.
- Moody, R., Man/Boy Love and the Left.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Moonen, A., *Stadsgerechten*.⁶ Amsterdam: De Bezige Bij, 1978.
- Moore, M. C., Skipper, J. K. & Willis, C. L., Rock-and-Roll—Arousal Music or a Reflection of Changing Sexual Mores?³ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Moore, W. Th., Masturbation in Adolescence.²⁰ In: Marcus & Francis (Eds.), *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Moravia, A., *Il conformista*.⁶ Milano: Bompiani, 1951.
- Moravia, A., *Agostino*.⁶ Milano: Bompiani, 1962.
- Moravia, A., *Io e lui*.⁶ Milano: Bompiani, 1971.
- Morris, D., *The Naked Ape*.³ London: Corgi Books, 1967.
- Morris, D., *The Human Zoo*.³ New York: Dell, 1976.
- Muchow, H. H., *Sexualreife und Sozialstruktur der Jugend*.²⁰ Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1959.
- Mulder, W. G., Prostituee en prostituant.⁸ In: Albarda (Ed.), *Gewoon bijzonder*. Amsterdam: Humanitas, 1969.
- Murdoch, I., *The Nice and the Good*.⁶ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1969.
- Murdoch, I., *Henry and Cato*.⁶ London: Chatto & Windus, 1976.
- Murray, S. O., *Sociological Theories/Homosexual Realities*.¹⁷ New York, 1984.
- Musaph, H., *Sex in wording*.²⁰ Baarn: Bosch & Keuning, 1971.
- Musaph, H., Pedofilie.¹⁶ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Geneeskunde* 124, 51: 2161-2164, 1980.
- Musaph, H., Pedofilie, een plaatsbepaling.¹⁶ *Tijdschrift voor Seksuologie* 6, 1: 3-7, 1981.
- Musil, R., *Die Verwirrungen des Zöglings Törless*.⁶ Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1906.
- Myjer, E., Castratie onder dwang.¹¹ *Het Parool*, 9 Feb. 1979, 57.
- Naecke, P., Le monde homosexuel de Paris.³ *Archives d'Anthropologie Criminelle* XX: 182-185, 1905.
- Naecke, P., Über Homosexualität in Albanien.⁵ In: *Jahrbuch für Sexuelle Zwischenstufen* IX. Leipzig: Spohr, 1908.
- Naerssen, L. van, De liefde voor kinderen in een ander daglicht.¹⁵ *Homologie* 2, 2: 5, 1979.
- Naerssen, L. van, Blans, J. & Nijnatten, C. van, Sexueel misbruik van kinderen en

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- jonge adolescenten.¹⁶ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 38, 3: 276-283, 1983.
- Nair, N., *Narayana-Roman tantrique*.⁶ Martineau, 1968.
- Nake, H. P., *Jugendliche Sittlichkeitstäter in Hamburg (1956-1958)*.²⁰ Hamburg: Universität, 1966.
- NAMBLA, The Case for Abolishing the Age of Consent Laws.¹² In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Naslednikov, M., *Le chemin d'extase—Tantra: vers une nouvelle sexualité*.¹³ Paris: Albin Michel, 1981.
- NATIONAAL CENTRUM VOOR GEESTELIJKE VOLKSGEZONDHEID, *Pedofilie*.¹⁵ Utrecht: Nationaal Centrum, 1976.
- NATIONAL COUNCIL FOR CIVIL LIBERTIES, *Sexual Offences*.¹² London: NCCL, 1976.
- NATIONALE RAAD VOOR MAATSCHAPPELIJK WELZIN, Forumdiscussie.¹⁶ In: *Waar ligt de grens?* 's-Gravenhage: Nationale Raad, 1982.
- Nau, E., Die Persönlichkeit des jugendlichen Zeugen.¹⁶ In: Von Stockert (Ed.), *Das sexuell gefährdete Kind*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1965.
- Navin, H., Medical and Surgical Risks in Handballing.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 3: 67-76, 1981.
- Nefzawi, Sh., *The Perfumed Garden*.¹ London: Neville Spearman, 1975.
- Neill, A. S., *Summerhill*.²⁰ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1962.
- Nelemans, W., *Leefstijd, duur en wijze van bewustwording van de homofiele gerichtheid*.²⁰ Tilburg: Katholieke Hogeschool, 1977.
- Nelson, J. A., The Impact of Incest.⁹ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Newton, D. E., Homosexual Behavior and Child Molestation.¹⁶ *Adolescence* 13, 49: 29-43, 1978.
- Nichols, D., *Ethics, Goals and Responsibilities to Be Encouraged in the Man/Boy Relationship*.¹⁵ Lansing (MI): Editorial Creative Products, 1976.
- Nichols, D., *Towards a Perspective for Boy-lovers*.¹⁵ Lansing (MI): Editorial/Creative Products, 1976.
- Niemann, H., *Unzucht mit Kindern*.¹⁶ Göttingen: Schwartz, 1974.
- NISSO, *Onderzoek jeugd en sex. Eerste bericht*.²⁰ Zeist: NISSO, 1973.
- Nobile, Ph., Introduction.¹⁵ In: Kraemer, Gordon, Lambert & Williams, *The Normal and Abnormal Love of Children*. Kansas City (MO): Sheed, Andrews & McMeel, 1978.
- Nordhoff, J. D. et al, *Sex in Nederland*.¹⁷ Utrecht: Spectrum, 1969.
- Nørretranders, T. et al, *Hingabe—Über den Orgasmus des Mannes*.¹⁷ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1983.
- Nortal, A., *Le fruit vert et la chair fraîche*.⁶ Curio.
- NVSH, *Praten over voorlichten*.²⁰ Den Haag: NVSH, 1980.
- Nijhof, G., Nederlanders over pedofilie.¹⁵ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 33, 1: 41-43, 1978.
- OBC-RESEARCH, *Young Boys and Bondage*.¹⁸ New York: Overstock.
- O'Carroll, T., *Paedophilia—The Radical Case*.¹⁵ London: Peter Owen, 1980.
- Offenberg, L., Mutilations et circoncision en Afrique noire.⁵ *Journal des Voyages* 253: 7-21, 1965.
- Ogrinc, W., De Praagse Metten.⁶ *Maatstaf* 30, 4: 46-64, 1982.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Oliver, A. D., The Sex Offender—Lessons from the California Experience.¹⁷ *International Journal of Law and Psychiatry* 5, 3/4: 403-411, 1982.
- Oliver Jr., B. J., *Sexual Deviation in American Society*.¹⁷ New Haven: College and University Press, 1967.
- Ollendorff, R. H. V., *The Juvenile Homosexual Experience and its Effect on Adult Sexuality*.¹⁶ New York: Julian Press, 1966.
- Ollivier, E., *L'escalier des heures glissantes*.⁶ Paris: Laffont, 1970.
- Olsen, J., *The Man with the Candy—The Story of the Houston Murders*.¹⁸ New York: Pocket Books, 1974.
- Onstott, K., *Mandingo*.⁶ London: Pan Books, 1959.
- Onstott, K., *Drum*.⁶ London: Pan Books, 1963.
- Oort, C. van, Tieners over zelfbevrediging.²⁰ *Nieuwe Revu* 23: 20-28, 1982.
- Ortil, H., Was ein alter Junge dazu sagt.²⁰ In: *Jugend und Sexualität*. Lauf: Zitzmann, 1960.
- Orto, G. Dall', Antonio Rocco and the Background of his "Alcibiade Fanciulo a Scola".³ In: Duyves et al (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Osborne, C., *Boys und Homosex*.²⁰ Holbæk: COQ, 1977.
- Osborne, C., *Boys und Onanie*.²⁰ Holbæk: COQ, 1977.
- Osborne, C., *Boys und ihr Penis*.²⁰ Holbæk: COQ, 1977.
- Osborne, C., *Boys und Verführung*.²⁰ Holbæk: COQ, 1977.
- Oskamp, A., *Man en macht—11 Gesprekken met mannen over seksualiteit en relaties*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Van Gennep, 1980.
- Oster, J., Further Fate of the Foreskin.³ *Archives of Diseases of Childhood* 43: 200-203, 1968.
- Ostermeyer, H., Das Recht des Kindes auf eine ungestörte Sexualerziehung.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Ovidius Naso, P., *Ars Amatoria—L'art d'aimer*.⁶ Paris: Garnier.
- Pacharzina, K., *Anstaltssexualität*.¹⁰ In: Albrecht-Désirat & Pacharzina (Eds.), *Sexualität und Gewalt*. Bensheim: Päd-extra, 1979.
- Pacharzina, K. & Albrecht-Désirat, K., Vorwort²⁰; Zusammenfassung.²⁰ In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt a.M.: Päd-extra, 1978.
- PÄDOSEXUELLEN GRUPPE IN DER HAH, Sexualität mit Kindern?—Na klar!¹⁵ In: Hohmann (Ed.), *Pädophilie Heute*. Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- PÆDOPHILE INFORMATION EXCHANGE, See PIE.
- Pallavicini, F., *Alcibiade enfant à l'école*.⁶ Bruxelles: Marteau, 1891.
- Pardo, J. A., *Sex Before Eight, or Else it's Too Late*.¹⁰ Beverly Hills: Better Life, 1975.
- Parker, T., *The Twisting Lane—Some Sex Offenders*.¹⁷ London: Panther Books, 1970.
- Partridge, B., *A History of Orgies*.³ London: Spring Books, 1958.
- Passay, J.-J. L'incapacité juridique au plaisir.¹² *Recherches* 37: 7-68, 1979.
- Patzner, H., *Die griechische Knabenliebe*.⁷ Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1982.
- Paul & Ruud, Knapenliefde-lust.¹⁵ *Mietje* 1, 1: 11-12, 1977.
- Paupert, J. M., *Thomas*.⁶ Paris: 1970.
- Peborgh, F. van, Zelfmoorden.³ *De Nieuwe Gazet*, 11 Aug. 1978.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Peborgh, F. van, Jonge zelfmoordenaars.³ *De Nieuwe Gazet*, 5 March, 1979.
- Pedrals, D. P. de, *La vie sexuelle en Afrique noire*.⁵ Paris: Payot, 1950.
- Perrin, A., *Mario*.⁶ Paris: Julliard, 1955.
- Peters, F., *The World at Twilight* (Finisterre).⁶ New York: Lancer, 1951.
- Peters, J. J., Children Who Are Victims of Sexual Assault and the Psychology of Offenders.¹⁶ *American Journal of Psychotherapy* 30, 3: 398-421, 1976.
- Petri, M., Ben ik pedofiel!¹⁵ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 29, 10: 503-505, 1974.
- Petronius: *Satyricon*.⁶ Paris: Bibliothèque des Curieux, 1923.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Les amitiés particulières*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1945.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Les amours singulières*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1949.
- Peyrefitte, R., *La nature du prince*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1963.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Noire amour*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1967.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Les Américains*.³ Paris: J'ai Lu, 1968.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Un musée de l'amour*.⁷ Paris: Editions du Rocher, 1972.
- Peyrefitte, R., *La jeunesse d'Alexandre*.⁷ Paris: Albin Michel, 1977.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Roy*.⁶ Paris: Albin Michel, 1979.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Les conquêtes d'Alexandre*.⁷ Paris: Albin Michel, 1979.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Alexandre le Grand*.⁷ Paris: Albin Michel, 1981.
- PIE, *Evidence on the Law Relating to and Penalties for Certain Sexual Offences Involving Children*.¹² Manuscript.
- PIE, *Survey of Numbers*.¹⁵ London: PIE, 1976.
- PIE, *Pædophilia—Some Questions and Answers*.¹⁵ London: PIE, 1978.
- Pierrugues, P., *Glossarium eroticum linguae latinae*.⁷ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1908.
- Pieterse, M., *Pedofilie*.¹⁵ Doctoraalscriptie Rijksuniversiteit Leiden, 1978.
- Pieterse, M., *Pedofielen over pedofilie*.¹⁵ Zeist: NISSO, 1982.
- Pietropinto, A. & Simenauer, J., *Gonado (Beyond the Male Myth)*.¹⁷ Katwijk aan Zee, Servire, 1979.
- Pittman, D. J., The Male House of Prostitution.⁸ *Trans-Action* 8, 5/6: 21-27, 1971.
- Plack, A., *Die Gesellschaft und das Böse*.² München: List, 1967.
- Placzek, *Freundschaft und Sexualität*.¹⁷ Bonn: Marcus, 1919.
- Plato, *Symposium—Le banquet*.⁷ Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1951.
- Plato, *Nomoi*.⁷ Übertragen von R. Rufener. Zürich: Artemis, 1974.
- Plättner, K., *Eros im Zuchthaus*.¹⁷ Hannover: Witte, 1930.
- Plautus, T. M., *Théâtre complet*.⁷ Paris: Dubochet, le Chevalier & Cie., 1851.
- Plehn, K., Wie denken Kinder über FKK?¹⁴ *FKK* 11: 326-327, 1970.
- Ploem, R. et al, *Porno*.⁴ Boskoop: Woelrat, 1982.
- Ploscowe, M., *Sex and the Law*.¹² New York: Prentice-Hall, 1951.
- Ploss, H., *Das Kind in Brauch und Sitte der Völker*.⁵ Leipzig: Grieben, 1884.
- Plummer, K., *Sociological Aspects of Pedophilia*.¹⁵ Manuscript, 1977.
- Plummer, K., *The Pædophiles Progress*.¹⁵ Manuscript, 1979.
- Plummer, K., Images of Pedophilia.¹⁵ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1979.
- Plummer, K., Self Help Groups for Sexual Minorities—The Case of the Pædophile.¹⁵ In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Plummer, K., Pedophilia: Constructing a Sociological Baseline.¹⁵ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Plummer, K., "The Paedophile's" Progress—A View from Below.¹⁵ In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Pædophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- Plutarchus, *Vergleichende Lebensbeschreibungen*.⁷ Übersetzung von Kaltwasser. Leipzig: Reclam, 1921.
- Pohl, H.-E., Selbstverantwortetes Geschlechtsverhalten.² *Pädagogische Welt* 28: 239-246, 1974.
- Pohlschneider, J., *Zedelijke normen voor de christelijke seksuele opvoeding*.² Gent: Opera Sacerdotalia, 1977.
- Pollens, B., *The Sex Criminal*.¹⁷ London: Putnam, 1939.
- Pomeroy, W. B., *Boys and Sex*.¹⁰ New York: Dell, 1968.
- Pompe, W. P. J. et al, *Sexuele criminaliteit*.¹⁷ Assen: Van Gorcum, 1963.
- Pons, Ph., Enfants de Manille.⁸ *Le Monde Dimanche*, 19 avril 1981: 1, 8.
- Popp, W., *Sexualität in der literarischen Darstellung von Kindheit und Pubertät*.²⁰ Manuscript, 1979.
- Potrykus, D. & Wöbke, M., *Sexualität zwischen Kindern und Erwachsenen*.¹⁶ München: Goldman, 1974.
- Poulsen, H. & Möller, G., Dyrenes seksualliv.¹⁷ In: Hertoft (Ed.), *Pædagogisk Sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal, 1971.
- Powell, G. E. & Chalkley, A. J., The Effects of Pædophile Attention on the Child.¹⁶ In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Pædophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- Powers, R. T., *First-time Homosexuals*.²⁰ North Hollywood: Barclay House, 1969.
- Prætorius-Israel, U. & Monberg, T., Sexuel adfærd i etnografisk belysning.⁵ In: Hertoft (Ed.), *Pædagogisk Sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal, 1971.
- Premmer, J., *An Enigmatic Indo-European Rite: Paederasty*.⁵ Manuscript, 1980.
- Prescott, J. W., Body Pleasure and the Origins of Violence.²⁰ *The Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* 31, 9: 10-20, 1975.
- Prescott, J. W., Sex for Children?²⁰ *Chic* 3: 1980.
- Presland, E., Whose Power? Whose Consent?¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Priapea Carmina*.⁷ Leipzig: Teubner, 1904.
- Prigny, J.-M., *Marc*.⁶ Paris: Table Ronde, 1959.
- PRINZ EISENHERZ, *Die Liebe zum Knaben—Literaturkatalog*.¹⁶ Berlin: Prinz Eisenherz, 1981.
- Proffers, J. J., *The Boy Lovers*.¹⁵ Washington (DC): Potomac News Company, 1970.
- Propercius, S., *Carmina*.⁶ Leipzig: Teubner, 1904.
- Punzo, G., *Prolegomina erotologica*.¹⁵ Napoli: Martello, 1961.
- Punzo, G., *Dialoghi dell'amore olarrenico*.¹⁵ Napoli: Martello, 1964.
- Pierre, J., *Les embrassades*.⁶ Paris: Martineau, 1969.
- Quispel, Y., Porno nu niet uit de strafwet halen.⁴ *Kri* 11, 7: 9-12, 1981.
- Rachewiltz, B. de, *Black Eros*.⁵ London: Allen & Unwin, 1964.
- Raffalovich, M.-A., L'uranisme.¹⁷ *Archives d'Anthropologie Criminelle* X: 99-127, 1895.
- Raffalovich, M.-A., *Uranisme et unisexualité*.¹⁷ Lyon: Storck, 1896.
- Rasmussen, A., Die Bedeutung sexueller Attentate auf Kinder unter 14 Jahren für die

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Entwicklung von Geisteskrankheiten und Charakteranomalien.¹⁶ *Acta Psychiatrica* 9: 351-434, 1934.
- Rau, H., *Die Grausamkeit*.¹⁸ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1921.
- Rauschert, K., Sexualvergehen im Heim.¹⁶ *Unsere Jugend* 33, 9: 398-404, 1981.
- Raven, S., Boys Will Be Boys—The Male Prostitute in London.⁸ In: Ruitenbeck (Ed.), *The Problem of Homosexuality in Modern Society*. New York: Dutton, 1963.
- Rechy, J., *Het sterven van een lange dag*.⁶ Uithoorn: Nieuwe Wieken, 1971.
- Redhardt, R., Zur gleichgeschlechtlichen männlichen Prostitution.⁸ In: Reng & Redhardt, *Prostitution bei weiblichen und männlichen Jugendlichen*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1968.
- Ree, F. van, *Doodslag op een kind van 8 jaar*.¹⁸ Manuscript, 1982.
- Reeves, T., Of Boys and Baltimore.⁸ *Fag Rag* Feb/Mar 1978: 3-11.
- Reeves, Th., Man-Boy Scenes in the United States.¹⁵ In: Duyves et al (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Regt, W. de, *Meisjes en jongens en hun seksualiteit*.¹⁰ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1982.
- Reich, W., *The Function of Orgasm*.¹⁷ New York: Orgone Institute, 1942.
- Reid, A., *Ralph Chubb, the Unknown*.⁶ The Private Library, 1970.
- Reid, A., *Some Epigrams of Martialis*.⁶ Manuscript, 1984.
- Reinacher, J., Deshalb lieben wir uns.¹⁵ In: Hohmann (Ed.), *Pädophilie Heute*. Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Reiss Jr., A. J., The Social Integration of Queers and Peers.⁸ In: Ruitenbeck (Ed.), *The Problem of Homosexuality in Modern Society*. New York: Dutton, 1963.
- Reiss Jr., A. J., Sex Offenses: the Marginal Status of the Adolescent.²⁰ In: Gagnon & Simon (Eds.), *Sexual Deviance*. New York: Harper & Row, 1967.
- Reitzel, H., *Den der hvaderdetnudenhedder!*¹⁶ København: Reitzel, 1969.
- Renault, M., *Fire from Heaven*.⁶ New York: Vintage Books, 1969.
- Renault, M., *The Persian Boy*.⁶ New York: Bantam Books, 1972.
- Reniers, M., *Seks, dat hoort toch bij de mens?*²⁰ Stageverslag, manuscript.
- Rennert, H., Untersuchungen zur Gefährdung der Jugend und zur Dunkelziffer bei sexuellen Straftaten.¹⁶ *Psychiatrie, Neurologie und Medizinische Psychologie* 17, 10: 361-367, 1965.
- Reve, G. K. van het, *A Prison Song in Prose*.⁶ Amsterdam: Polak & Van Gennep, 1960.
- Reve, G. K. van het, *Nader tot U*.⁶ Amsterdam: Van Oorschot, 1966.
- Revitch, E. & Weiss, R. G., The Pedophilic Offender.¹⁶ *Diseases of the Nervous System* 32: 73-78, 1962.
- Rey, M., Sexual Ambiguity and Definition of a Particular Taste: Male Relationships, from the End of Middle Ages to the French Revolution.³ In: Duyves et al (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Reynolds, E. L. & Vines, J. V., Physical Changes Associated with Adolescence in Boys.²⁰ *American Journal of Diseases of Children*, 82, 529-547, 1951.
- Rhyxand, A., *Pithécantrophe*.⁶ Blamont: Amitié—Par Le Livre, 1978.
- Richards, D. A. J., Homosexual Acts and the Constitutional Right to Privacy.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 5, 1/2: 43-65, 1979/80.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Richepin, J., *Nouvelle mythologie illustrée*.⁷ Paris: Sant'andrea & Marcerou, 1920/21.
- Richey, H., *Near Fatal Attraction*.⁶ Port Washington (NY): Ashley, 1977.
- Riefenstahl, L., *Die Nuba*.⁵ München: List, 1973.
- Riefenstahl, L., *Die Nuba von Kau*.⁵ München: List, 1976.
- Riese, W., *Das Triebverbrechen*.¹⁷ Bern: Huber, 1933.
- Righton, P., *The Adult*.¹⁵ In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- Robida, M., *Sourires siciliens*.⁶ Paris: Julliard, 1958.
- Robischon, Th., Sexual Issues of the '80s.¹⁷ *Sexology* Feb. 1980: 15-20.
- Rocco & Antonia, *Schweine mit Flügeln—Sex & Politik*.³ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1976.
- Rocheport, Chr., *Printemps au Parking*.⁶ Paris: Grasset, 1969.
- Rogier, J., *Pompe of verzuipen*.¹⁶ Amsterdam: Contact, 1973.
- Rohleder, H., *Vorlesungen über Geschlechtstrieb und gesamtes Geschlechtsleben des Menschen*.¹⁷ Berlin: Kornfeld, 1907.
- Rolfe, F. (Baron Corvo), *The Venice Letters*.⁶ London: Woolf, 1974.
- Rombach, C., *Schleichwege und Annäherungsversuche sexuell Verirrter*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Leipziger Verlag.
- Romé, L. & L., *L'érotisme primitif*.⁵ Fribourg: Solar, 1982.
- Ronk, D., The Run-aways of Rizal Park.⁸ *The Asia Magazine* 6 Dec. 1981: 6-14.
- Rood-De Boer, M., Zelfmoord van kinderen.¹⁹ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 32: 627-647, 1977.
- Rood-De Boer, M., Zelfdoding bij kinderen en adolescenten.¹⁹ *Tijdschrift voor Ziekenverpleging* 32, 22: 1003-1008, 1979.
- ROOIE VLINDERSCHRIFT No. 3, *Pedosexualiteit*.¹⁵ Gent: Elegeert.
- Roon, J. van, *Steels of speels? Jeugd en voorbehoedsmiddelen*.¹⁰ Hilversum: Brand, 1968.
- Rose, F., Men and Boys Together.¹⁵ *The Village Voice* 23, 9: 1, 17-21, 1978.
- Rossmann, P., Literature on Pederasty.¹⁵ *The Journal of Sex Research* 9, 4: 307-312, 1973.
- Rossmann, G. P., The Pederasts.¹⁵ *Transaction/Society* 10, 3: 28-35, 1973.
- Rossmann, P., *Sexual Experience Between Men and Boys*.¹⁵ New York: Association Press, 1976.
- Roth, J., Zum Beispiel Kinderheime—Kindersexualität.²⁰ *Betrifft: Erziehung* 6, 4: 31-36, 1974.
- Rothenborg, J., *Sexorgier gennem tiderni i billider*.³ Copenhagen: Point Press, 1967.
- Rouweler-Wutz, L., *Pedofielen, in contact of conflict met de samenleving?*¹⁵ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1976.
- Rovsing, L., *I tropesol og måneskin*. Hellerup: Privat Tryk, 1959.
- Rubin, G., Thinking Sex: Theory of the Politics of Sexuality.¹⁷ In: Vance (Ed.), *Pleasure and Danger: Exploration in Female Sexuality*. New York: Routledge, Kegan Paul, 1984.
- Rud-Petersen, O., Peter, trækkerdreng, 14 år.⁸ *Pan* 29, 3: 8-10, 21, 1983.
- Rule, J., Teaching Sexuality.²⁰ *The Body Politic* 8: 28-29, 1979.
- Rush, F., *Le secret le mieux gardé—L'exploitation sexuelle des enfants*.¹⁶ Paris: Denoël/Gonthier, 1980.
- Ruting, J., *Romeinse slaaffjes*.⁶ Amsterdam: Meulenhoff, 1974.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Rijssel, W. van, *Jeugd en seksualiteit*.²⁰ 's-Gravenhage: Wetenschappelijk Bureau NVSH, 1973.
- Rijssel, W. van, *Enige kanttekeningen bij het pedofilie-vraagstuk*.¹⁵ 's-Gravenhage: Wetenschappelijk Bureau NVSH, 1973.
- Rijssel, W. van, Wat weten wij over pedofilie?¹⁵ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 29: 146-150, 1974.
- Sables, L. de (pseudonyme), Résultats d'une enquête auprès d'un groupe de pédérastes.¹⁵ *Arcadie* 276: 650-657; 277: 35-45, 1976/77.
- Sackser, D., "Kinderfreunde" eine Gefahr?¹⁶ *Handreichungen zur Sexualerziehung A* 59, 1977.
- Sadger, J., *Die Lehre von den Geschlechtsverirrungen*.¹⁷ Leipzig: Deuticke, 1921.
- Sagarin, E., Prison Homosexuality and its Effect on Post-prison Sexual Behavior.¹⁷ *Psychiatry* 39: 245-257, 1976.
- Sagitta (J. H. Mackay), *Die Bücher der namenlosen Liebe*.⁶ Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1979.
- Saikaku, I., *The Temple of Pederasty*.⁶ North Hollywood (CA): Hanover House, 1970.
- Saint Ours, *Un ange à Sodome*.⁶ Paris: Authier, 1973.
- Saint Paul, G. (Docteur Laupt), *L'homosexualité et les types homosexuels*.¹⁷ Paris: Vigot, 1910.
- Salas, F., *Tattoo the Wicked Cross*.⁶ New York: Grove Press, 1967.
- Salden, M., Art. 248bis Wetboek van Strafrecht.¹² *Groniek* 12, 66: 38-48, 1980.
- Salholz, E. et al, Beware of Child Molesters.¹⁶ *Newsweek*, 9 Aug. 1982: 49-51.
- Sanders, G. J. E. M., *De zelf-beleving als uitdagingssituatie*.¹⁷ Groningen: Instituut voor Sociale Psychologie, 1968.
- Sanders, G., *Het gewone en het bijzondere van de homoseksuele leefsituatie*.¹⁷ Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1977.
- Sanders, G., Jongeren verdienen een grotere vrijheid bij hun seksuele ontwikkeling.²⁰ *Welzijnswaekblad*, 20 Juli 1979: 12-15.
- Sanders, G. J. E. M., Het gewone en het bijzondere van de homoseksuele leefsituatie.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Sandfort, Th., *De ervaringswereld van kinderen in pedofiele relaties*.¹⁵ Doktoraalskript Katholieke Universiteit Nijmegen, 1979.
- Sandfort, Th., *Pedoseksuele contacten en pedofiele relaties*.¹⁵ Zeist: NISSO, 1979.
- Sandfort, Th., Pedofilie en pedoseksuele contacten.¹⁵ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Sandfort, Th., Het COC en de pedofilie.¹⁵ *Homologie* 3, 1: 9-13, 1980.
- Sandfort, Th., *Het seksuele aspect van pedofiele relaties*.¹⁵ Utrecht: Sociologisch Instituut, 1981.
- Sandfort, Th., *Sex in Paedophile Relationships*.¹⁵ Paper presented at the Symposium on "Child, Adult and Sexuality". Nijmegen, 1981.
- Sandfort, Th., Pedofilie: wat het is en wat we ervan weten.¹⁵ In: Van der Velde, *Wat doe jij met mijn kind?* Utrecht: Veen, 1981.
- Sandfort, Th., *The Sexual Aspect of Paedophile Relations*.¹⁵ Amsterdam: Pan/Spartacus, 1982.
- Sandfort, Th., Seksualiteit in pedofiele relaties.¹⁵ *De Psycholoog* 17, 3: 118-131, 1982.
- Sandfort, Th., Paedophile Relationships in the Netherlands—Alternative Lifestyle for Children?¹⁵ *Alternative Lifestyles* 5, 3, 164-183, 1983.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Sandfort, Th., Meisjes over hun pedofiele vriendschappen met mannen.¹⁵ *Jeugd en samenleving* 13, 2: 105-155, 1983.
- Sandfort, Th., *Inventarisatie van onderzoek naar seksualiteit van kinderen en jeugdigen*.²⁰ Utrecht: Vereniging voor Seksuologie, 1984.
- Sandfort, Th. & Hoogma, M., *Ervaringen van jongens in pedofiele relaties*.¹⁵ Utrecht: Sociologisch Instituut, 1982.
- Sarlin, Ch. N., Masturbation, Culture and Psychosexual Development.¹⁷ In: Marcus & Francis: *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Sarnoff, Ch. A., Adolescent Masturbation Fantasies.²⁰ In: Marcus & Francis: *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Sarphatie, H. R., De seksuele ontwikkeling van het kind.²⁰ In: Wolters (Ed.), *Seksueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro, 1982.
- Savramis, D., Religion and Sexualität.² In: Kerscher (Ed.) *Konfliktfeld Sexualität*. Neuwied: Luchterhand, 1977.
- Schachter, M., La prostitution masculine juvenile.⁸ *Ospedale Psichiatrica* 37, 1/2: 123-143, 1969.
- Schalken, T., *Pornographie en strafrecht*.⁴ Arnhem: Gouda Quint/Brouwer, 1972.
- Scheller, H. S., *Die manipulierte Psyche-Heterophile Pädophilie*.¹⁵ Tegelen: Sandra Verlag, 1979.
- Scheller, H. S., *In Namen der Vernunft-Plädoyer in Sachen Pädophilie*.¹⁵ Venlo: Stichting Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1980.
- Scheller, H. S., *Pädofilie eine Domäne der Homophilie?*¹⁵ Venlo: Stichting Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1980.
- Scheller, H. S., *Die propädophile Emanzipation*.¹⁵ 1980
- Scheller, H. S., *Sex Education a Problem?*²⁰ Venlo: Stichting Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1980.
- Scheller, H. S., *Was ist Pädophilie?*¹⁵ Venlo: Stichting Studiegroep Pedofilie, 1980.
- Scheller, H. S., *Obszönität oder Realistik?*²⁴ Venlo: Stichting Studiegroep Pedofilie.
- Schéer, R., *Emile perversi*.²⁰ Paris: Laffont, 1974.
- Schéer, R., *Une érotique puérile*.²⁰ Paris: Galilée, 1978.
- Schéer, R., *L'emprise. Des enfants entre nous*.²⁰ Paris: Hachette, 1979.
- Schéer, R., A propos de la pédophilie¹⁵; La vertu d'un amendement.¹⁵ *Recherches* 37: 87-104, 1979.
- Schéer, R. & Hocquenghem, G. Co-ire—Album systématique de l'enfance.²⁰ *Recherches* 22, 1976.
- Schertel, E., *Knabenliebe und Erziehung*.¹⁸ Berlin: Pergamon.
- Schickendanz, H.-J., *Homosexuelle Prostitution*.³ Frankfurt: Campus, 1979.
- Schidrowitz, L. et al, *Sittengeschichte des Lasters*.³ Wien: Verlag für Kulturforschung, 1927.
- Schild, M., *De Islam en homoseksueel gedrag in het Midden-Oosten—Theorie en werkelijkheid*.¹ Manuscript, 1982.
- Schild, M., *Jongens en mannen*.¹ Manuscript, 1983.
- Schild, M., *Sufis en homoseksueel gedrag*.¹ Manuscript.
- Schilgen, H., *Jonge helden*.² Voorhout: Foreholte, 1930.
- Schillemans, A., Vrouwen tegen pedofilie.¹⁶ *Jeugd & Samenleving* 13, 2: 133-139, 1983.
- Schippers, J., Relations and Interaction Between Homosexual Men.¹⁷ In: Duyves et al

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Schlegel, W. S., *Die Sexualinstinkte des Menschen*.¹⁷ München: Rütten & Loening, 1962.
- Schlegel, W. S., Über die Ursachen homosexuellen Verhaltens.¹⁷ In: Schlegel (Ed.), *Das grosse Tabu*. München: Rütten & Loening, 1967.
- Schlegel, W. S., Homosexualität—Soziales Ordnungsprinzip.¹⁷ *Sexualmedizin* 2: 296-298, 1973.
- Schlichtegroll, C. F. von, *Das Liebesleben im klassischen Altertum*.⁷ Leipzig: Leipziger Verlag.
- Schmidt, Chr., Børne-porno hindrer sex-overgreb.⁴ *Politiken*, 9 Jan. 1980: 2.
- Schmidt, G. & Sigusch, V., *Zur Frage des Vorurteils gegenüber sexuell devianten Gruppen*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Enke, 1967.
- Schmidt, R., *Beiträge zur indischen Erotik*.⁵ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1922.
- Schmidt, R., *Das Kamasutram des Vatsyayana*.⁵ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1922.
- Schmidt-Relenberg, N., Körner, H. & Pieper, R., *Sirichjungen Gespräche*.⁸ Darmstadt: Luchterhand, 1975.
- Schmitz, C. A., Die Initiation bei den Pasum in Neuguinea.⁵ In: Popp (Ed.), *Initiation*. Frankfurt am Main: Suhrkamp, 1969.
- Schmutz, M. & Thommen, P., *Die Unzuchtsparagrafen 191 und 194 im Schweizerischen Strafgesetzbuch*.¹² Basel: Arcados, 1980.
- Schneebaum, T., *Keep the River on your Right*.⁶ New York: Grove Press, 1969.
- Schnitzler, A., *Frau Beate und ihr Sohn*.⁶ Berlin: Fischer, 1922.
- Schofield, M., *The Sexual Behaviour of Young People*.¹⁰ London: Longmans, 1965.
- Schofield, M., *Sociologische aspecten van de homoseksualiteit*.¹⁷ Utrecht: Spectrum, 1965.
- Schulte, H., *Gids voor Griekenland*.⁷ Amsterdam: Allert de Lange, 1958.
- Schonfeld, W. A., Management of Male Pubescence.¹⁰ *Journal of the American Medical Association* 121, 3: 177-182, 1943.
- Schonfeld, W. A., Primary and Secondary Sexual Characteristics.²⁰ *American Journal of Diseases of Children* 65: 535-549, 1943.
- Schonfeld, W. & Beebe, G. W., Normal Growth and Variation in the Male Genitalia from Birth to Maturity.²⁰ *Journal of Urology* 48: 759-777, 1942.
- Schönfelder, Th., Die Initiative des Opfers.¹⁶ In: Von Stockert (Ed.), *Das sexuell gefährdete Kind*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1965.
- Schorsch, E., Häufige Merkmalskombinationen bei Sexualstraftätern.¹⁷ *Monatschrift für Kriminologie und Strafrechtsreform* 56, 4: 141-150, 1973.
- Schorsch, E., Liberalität reicht nicht.¹⁵ *Betrifft: Erziehung* 6, 4: 23-26, 1974.
- Schouw, Th., Pedofilie.¹⁶ *Kri* 7, 3: 9-12, 1977.
- Schroeder, F. Chr. *Das neue Sexualstrafrecht*.¹² Karlsruhe: Müller, 1975.
- Schult, P., *Ein Staatsanwalt sieht rot*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Schult, P., Für eine sexuelle Revolution.¹⁵ *Autonomie* 5: 86-96, 1977.
- Schult, P., *Besuche in Sackgassen*.⁶ München: Trikont, 1978.
- Schult, P., Die Pädophilie-Bewegung in Westdeutschland.¹⁵ In: Hohmann (Ed.), *Pädophilie Heute*. Berlin: Foerster, 1980.
- Schult, P., Eiszeit.¹⁵ *Klappentexte* 2/3: 28-30, 1981.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Schult, P., *Gefallene Engel*.¹⁵ Berlin: Gmünder, 1982.
- Schultz, L. G., The Child Sex Victim.¹⁶ *Child Welfare* 52, 3: 147-157, 1973.
- Schumann, H. J. von, *Homosexualität und Selbstmord*.¹⁷ Hamburg: Kriminalistik, 1965.
- Schuyter, J., (Ed.), *Leeftijdgrenzen in de Zedelijkheidswetgeving*.¹² Den Haag: NVSH, 1978.
- Schwartz, A. A., Het kind als getuige-slachtoffer in zedenzaken.¹⁶ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Criminologie* 2: 12-21, 1960.
- Schwarz, O., *The Psychology of Sex*.¹⁷ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1949.
- Schwarzer, A., Emanzipiert Pädophilie?¹⁶ *Emma* 4: 5, 1980.
- Schwarzer, A. & Amendt, G., Wie frei macht Pädophilie?¹⁶ *Emma* 4: 26-31, 1980.
- Schwenk, A., *Die körperliche Entwicklung im Jugendalter und ihre endokrinologischen Grundlagen*.²⁰ Basel: Karger, 1965.
- Searight, A. K., *Paidikion*.⁶ Manuscript, 1917.
- Sebban, L., *Le pédophile et la maman*.¹⁶ Paris: Stock, 1980.
- SELECT COMMITTEE ON CHILD PORNOGRAPHY OF THE TEXAS HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, *Interim Report*.⁴ Houston, 1978.
- Sengers, W. J., Homofilie en homoseksualiteit in de medische praktijk.¹⁷ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Geneeskunde* 111, 8: 350-354, 1967.
- Sengers, W. J., De pastorale begeleiding van pedofielen en efebofielen.² *Tijdschrift voor Theologie* 7: 141-151, 1967.
- Sengers, W. J., De homofilie in het gezin.¹⁷ In: *Pastorale zorg voor homofielen*. Utrecht: Spectrum, 1968.
- Sengers, W. J., *Gewoon hetzelfde? Een visie op vragen rond de homofilie*.¹⁷ Hilversum: Brand, 1968.
- Sengers, W. J., *Homosexualiteit als klacht*.¹⁷ Bussum: Brand, 1969.
- Sengers, W. J., Pedofilie.¹⁵ In: Albarda (Ed.), *Gewoon bijzonder*. Amsterdam: Humanitas, 1969.
- Sengers, W. J., Op zoek naar de werkelijkheid.¹⁵ In: Van Eeten (Ed.), *Sex met kinderen*. Den Haag: NVSH, 1972.
- Servatius, V. (see Bernard, F.)
- Settembrini, L., *I Neoplatonici*.⁶ Milano: Rizzoli.
- Seumeren, E. G. C. van, Is medisch onderzoek noodzakelijk?¹⁶ In: Wolters (Ed.), *Sexueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro., 1982.
- Shively, M. C. & Cecco, J. P. de, Sexual Orientation Survey of Students on the San Francisco State University Campus.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 4, 1: 29-39, 1978.
- Siegfried, C.-F., *Gesellschaft und Homosexualität*.¹⁷ Burckhardtverlag, 1979.
- Sigus, N., *Medizinische Experimente am Menschen—Das Beispiel Psychochirurgie*.¹¹ Berlin: Argument Verlag, 1977.
- Sigus, V. & Schmidt, G., *Jugendsexualität*.¹⁰ Stuttgart: Enke, 1973.
- Silverman, M., Children's Rights and Social Work.³ *Social Service Review* 51, 1: 171-178, 1977.
- Simon, W. & Gagnon, J. H., The Lesbians: a Preliminary Overview.¹⁷ In: Gagnon & Simon (Eds.), *Sexual Deviance*. New York: Harper & Row, 1967.
- Simons, G. L., *Het grote seksuele records boek*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Triton, 1977.
- Simpson, G. & Geerds, F., *Straftaten tegen die Person und Sittlichkeitsdelikte in*

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- rechtsvergleichender Sicht*.¹² München: Beck, 1969.
- Slob, A. K. & Pisa-Minderman, J. L. Y., "Niet kunnen klaarkomen"—Een rondgang door de geneeskunde.²⁰ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Geneeskunde* 126, 33: 1484-1487, 1982.
- Slocum, E. M., *Men and Boys*.⁶ New York: Coltsfoot, 1978.
- Smit, B., Een pedofiel is geen kinderlokker.¹⁵ *Ouders van Nu* 12: 51-53, 1978.
- Smith, D. C., *The Naked Child*.¹⁴ Saratoga (CA): Century Twenty One, 1981.
- Smolders, A., *De seksuele perversies*.¹⁷ Meppel: Boom, 1971.
- Socarides, Ch. W., Meaning and Content of a Pedophilic Perversion.¹⁶ *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association* 7: 84-94, 1954.
- Sonenschein, D., *What is Pedophilia Anyway?*¹⁵ 1983.
- Sorensen, R. C., *Adolescent Sexuality in Contemporary America*.²⁰ New York: World Publishing, 1973.
- SOS-ENFANTS, *Dossier d'information sur la prostitution et la pornographie d'enfants mineurs des deux sexes*.⁸ Manuscript.
- Soya, C. E., *Zeventien*.⁶ 's-Gravenhage: Oisterwijk.
- Spencer, R. F., The Cultural Aspects of Eunuchism.⁵ *Ciba Symposia* 8, 7: 406-420, 1946.
- Speijer, N., et al, *Advies inzake homoseksuele relaties met minderjarigen. Bijlage bij de Memorie van Toelichting. Ontwerp van wet tot intrekking van artikel 248bis van het Wetboek van Strafrecht*.¹² 's-Gravenhage: Staatsuitgeverij, 1970.
- Spitz, R. A., Authority and Masturbation.²⁰ In: Marcus & Francis: *Masturbation*. New York: International Universities Press, 1975.
- Sprague, G. A., Male Homosexuality in Western Culture.³ *Journal of Homosexuality*, 10 3/4, 29-43, 1984.
- Spreeuwel, M. van, *Groeps therapie met homofielen*.¹⁷ Scriptie Universiteit van Amsterdam, 1975.
- Spijker, A. M. J. M. H. van de, *Die gleichgeschlechtliche Zuneigung*.² Olten: Walter, 1968.
- Staats, G. R., Stereotype Content and Social Distance: Changing Views of Homosexuality.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 4, 1: 15-27, 1978.
- Steen, C. van der, Seksualiteit bij lichamelijk gehandicapten.¹⁷ In: *Reader Cursus Seksuologie*, deel II, tweede boek. Amsterdam: NIP, 1978.
- Steen, C. van der, Belemmeringen bij de beleving van seksualiteit bij gehandicapten.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*, Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Steen, R., Seksuele moeilijkheden en hulpverlening.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*, Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Steinberg, L., The Metaphores of Love and Birth in Michelangelo's Pietàs.³ In: Bowie et al, *Studies in Erotic Art*. New York: Basic Books, 1970.
- Stekel, W., *Onanie und Homosexualität*.¹⁷ Berlin: Urban & Schwarzenberg, 1921.
- Stekel, W., *Psychosexueller Infantilismus*.¹⁷ Berlin: Urban & Schwarzenberg, 1922.
- Stekel, W., *Sadismus und Masochismus*.¹⁸ Berlin: Urban & Schwarzenberg, 1925.
- Stephanus, P., Der paidoon eroos in der griechischen Dichtung—Die Gedichte der Anthologie.⁶ In: *Jahrbuch für sexuelle Zwischenstufen* IX. Leipzig: Spohr, 1908.
- Stern, B., *Medizin, Aberglaube und Geschlechtsleben in der Türkei*.⁵ Berlin: Barsdorf, 1903.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Stewart, A., *Sandel*.⁶ London: Panther, 1968.
- Stieber, H., *Verführt...*¹⁶ Bonn: Europäische Bücherei, 1971.
- Stoll, O., *Das Geschlechtsleben in der Völkerpsychologie*.⁵ Leipzig: Veit, 1908.
- Stolz, H. R. & L. M., *Somatic Development of Adolescent Boys*.²⁰ New York: Macmillan, 1951.
- Stoppelaar, C. de, Educatief gruwelen.¹⁷ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 31 Aug. 1983: 12.
- Störzer, H. U., Sittlichkeitsprozess und junges Opfer.¹² In: Hess, Störzer & Streng: *Sexualität und soziale Kontrolle*. Heidelberg: Kriminalistik, 1978.
- Stotijn, C. P. J., *Pubertas præcox*.²⁰ Leiden: Universitaire Pers, 1946.
- Stöwer, U., *Antinous, Geliebter*.¹⁶ München: List, 1967.
- STRAFFELOVRAAD, *Straf for pornografi*.⁴ København: Statens Trykningskontor, 1966.
- Stratz, C. H., *Der Körper des Kindes und seine Pflege*.²⁰ Stuttgart: Enke, 1922.
- Straver, C. J., Jeugd-seksualiteit.²⁰ *Verbum* 44, 6: 256-267, 1977.
- Straver, C. J. & Geeraert, A., De seksuele en relationele ontwikkeling als leerproces.²⁰ In: Frenken (Ed.), *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Strien, P. J. van, Vorm en vent in theorie en praktijk.¹⁹ In: *Psychologie in 1975*. Groningen: Tjeenk Willink, 1975.
- Struyker Boudier, K., Ubi caritas et amor, Deus ibi est.² In: Hutsebaut et al, *Is er meer tussen ons?* Baarn, Ambo, 1980.
- Stüben, O., Ich liebe Jungs.¹⁵ *Grosse Freiheit* 24-25: 10-12, 1979.
- Stüben, O., Die unwiderstehliche Geilheit.¹⁵ *Klappentexte* 2/3: 27, 1981.
- STUDIEGROEP PEDOFILIE, *Pedofilie Projectgroep*.¹⁵ Antwerpen: De Wrikker.
- Stumpel, F., Die Persönlichkeit des Pädophilen.¹⁶ In: Von Stockert (Ed.), *Die Pädophilie und ihre strafrechtliche Problematik*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1965.
- SUBCOMMITTEE ON SELECT EDUCATION, *Sexual Exploitation of Children*.¹⁶ Chicago: State of Illinois, 1982.
- Summit, R. & Kryso, J., *Sexual Abuse of Children*.¹⁶ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.) *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Surieu, R., *Eine Studie über die Liebe und erotische Darstellungen in der alt-persischen Kunst*.⁵ München: Nagel, 1967.
- Sutor, J. (Docteur Jacobus X.), *L'art d'aimer aux colonies*.⁵ Paris: Georges-Anquetil, 1927.
- Sutor, J. (Docteur Jacobus X.), *L'acte sexuel dans l'espèce humaine*.⁵ Paris: Prima, 1936.
- Sutor, J. (Docteur Jacobus X.), *The Erogenous Zones of the World, by a French Army Surgeon*.⁵ New York: Book Awards, 1964.
- Swanson, D. W., Adult Sexual Abuse of Children.¹⁶ *Diseases of the Nervous System* 29, 10: 677-683, 1968.
- Symonds, C. J., Mendoza, M. J. & Harrell, W., Forbidden Sexual Behavior Among Kin.⁹ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.) *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Symonds, J. A., *A Problem in Greek Ethics*.⁷ London: Areopagitica Society, 1908.
- Szasz, Th., *Sex op recept*.¹⁷ Meppel: Infopers, 1982.
- Tame, A., Monster or Martyr? Shadowy World of a Mass Seducer.¹⁵ *Truth*, 3 Oct. 1981: 33-36.
- Tanner, J. M., *Growth at Adolescence*.²⁰ Oxford: Blackwell, 1962.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Tarnowsky, B., *Pederasty in Europe*.¹⁷ North Hollywood: Brandon House, 1967.
- Taylor, B., Motives for Guilt-free Pederasty: Some Literary Considerations.¹⁵ *Sociological Review* 24, 1: 97-114, 1976.
- Taylor, B., Introduction.¹⁵ In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- Taylor, G. R., *Sex in History*.³ London: Panther Books, 1953.
- Tesch, G., *Never the Same Again*.⁶ New York: Pyramid Books, 1956.
- Theokritos, *Gedichte*,⁶ übersetzt von J. H. Vos. Leipzig: Reclam.
- Thesing, C., *Stammesgeschichte der Liebe*.⁵ Berlin: Brehm, 1932.
- Thorstad, D. & Hocquenghem, G., Loving Boys.¹⁶ *Semiotext(e) Special*, Summer 1980: 1, 18-35.
- Thorstad, D., *Boys Speak Out on Man/Boy Love*.¹⁶ New York: NAMBLA, 1981.
- Tibullus, *Carmina*.⁶ Leipzig: Teubner, 1904.
- Tielman, R., Niemand is heilig.¹⁷ *Sek* 7, 6: 9, 1977.
- Tifächí, A. Al, *Les délices des coeurs*.¹ Paris: Martineau, 1977.
- Tillet, G., Paedophilia.¹⁶ *Forum* 9: 9-15, 95-98, 1980.
- Tindall, R. H., The Male Adolescent Involved With a Pederast Becomes an Adult.¹⁵ *Journal of Homosexuality* 3, 4: 373-382, 1978.
- Tolsma, F. J., *De betekenis van de verleiding in homofiele ontwikkelingen*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Van Rossen, 1957.
- Tolsma, F. J., *Homoseksualiteit en homoërotiek*.¹⁷ Tweede druk. Den Haag: Bakker/Daamen, 1963.
- Toobert, S. & Jones, E. S., Some Factors Related to Pedophilia.¹⁶ *International Journal of Psychiatry* 4: 272-280, 1959.
- Torey, F. (Ed.), *Panthology One*.⁶ Amsterdam: Pan/Spartacus, 1981.
- Torey, F. (Ed.), *Panthology Two*.⁶ Amsterdam: Coltsfoot, 1982.
- Torey, F. (Ed.), *Panthology Three*.⁶ Amsterdam: Coltsfoot, 1984.
- Tournier, M., *Les Météores*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1975.
- Toynbee, Th., *Underdogs*.⁶ London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1961.
- Trainor, D., Molesters Use Denial to Justify Actions.¹⁶ *Psychiatric News* 11, 16: 6-7, 1979.
- Treffz, H. A. W., Homosexualität in Indonesien und Ozeanien.⁵ *Him* 7: 18-19, 1972.
- Trent, M., Het verhaal van een homofiel voor de klas.¹⁰ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 3 mei 1978: 12.
- Trimble, J. F., *Pedophilia*.¹⁶ Torrance (CA): Moogram Books, 1968.
- Trimbos, C. J. B. J., Homoseksualiteit: een inleidende beschouwing.¹⁷ In: *Pastorale zorg voor homofielen*. Utrecht: Spectrum, 1968.
- Tripp, C. A., *The Homosexual Matrix*.¹⁷ New York: New American Library, 1975.
- Tsai, M., Feldman-Summers, S. & Edgar, M., Childhood Molestation.¹⁶ In: Constantine & Martinson (Eds.), *Children and Sex*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1981.
- Tsang, D., Men and Boys: the Boston Conference.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Tuohy, F. & Murphy, M., *Down Under the Plum Trees*.²⁰ Waiura (New Zealand): Alister Taylor, 1976.
- Uffelen, J. van, Pedofilie, het laatste grote taboe.¹⁵ *De Tijd* 7, 355: 41-45, 1981.
- Ullerstam, L., *De erotische minoriteter*.¹⁷ Stig Vendelkaers, 1964.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ungaretti, J. R., Pederasty, Heroism, and the Family in Classical Greece.⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 3, 3: 291-300, 1978.
- Ungaretti, J. R., De-moralizing Morality: Where Dover's "Greek Homosexuality" Leaves Us. ⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality*, 8, 1, 1-17, 1982.
- Uschi, B., Bodar, A & Peereboom, E., *Onderwerp: jeugdprostitutie*.⁸ Amsterdam: Bezige Bij, 1971.
- U. S. HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, *Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Crime of the Committee on the Judiciary on Sexual Exploitation of Children*.¹⁶ Washington (DC): General Accounting Office, 1977.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, *Geschiedenis van het seksuele probleem*.³ Meppel: Boom, 1968.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, *Inleiding op het Studiecongres van de NVSH*,¹⁷ 29 nov. 1969. Manuscript.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, Seksuele revolutie in het Westen.³ *Oost-West* 8, 4: 145-159, 1969.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, *Afscheid van de seksualiteit*.¹⁷ Meppel: Boom, 1970.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, *Intimiteit*.¹⁷ Deventer: Ven Loghum Slaterus, 1975.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, Wie houdt er niet van kinderen?¹⁵ *De Gids* 139, 7: 443-454, 1976.
- Ussel, J. M. W. van, *De seksuele revolutie beschouwd vanuit sociologisch en humanistisch standpunt*.³ Manuscript.
- Vaal, O. M. de, *Modern medisch advies*.¹⁹ Amsterdam: Querido, 1968.
- Valpy, M., The Pedophile Who Faces a Lifetime Behind Bars.¹⁶ *The Globe and Mail*, 9 Dec. 1972: 7.
- Vangaard, Th., *Phallós*.⁷ København: Gyldendal, 1969.
- Vangaard, Th., De homoseksuele mænd, kvinden og den unge mand.¹⁷ *Politiken*, 10 Sep. 1974.
- Veer, G. van der, Vrijen met een jongen.¹⁵ *De Homokrant* 5, 10: 16-18, 1979.
- Veer, G. van der, Wie helpt de homoseksuele leerlingen?²⁰ *Jeugd en Samenleving* 11, 11/12: 831-844, 1981.
- Veer, G. van der & Royen, R., Twintig jongeren over hun eerste ervaringen.²⁰ *Orlando* 1: 4-11, 1982.
- Velde, S. van der, *Leer ze het vrijen niet af*.²⁰ Eindhoven: Werkgroep Jeugdemancipatie, 1980.
- Velde, S. van der, *Wat doe jij met mijn kind*?⁶ Utrecht: Veen, 1981.
- Velde, S. van der & Gienow, R., *Groot en klein-Informatie over pedofilie*.¹⁵ Eindhoven: Stichting Jeugdemancipatie, 1982.
- Vergiat, A. M., *Les rites secrets des primitifs de l'Oubangui*.⁵ Paris: Payot, 1951.
- Verlaine, P., *Oeuvres libres*.⁶ Segovia: de Herlagnez, 1868.
- Verlaine, P. & Rimbaud, A., *A Lover's Cock and Other Gay Poems*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1979.
- Verschuren, H., Van eerste keer tot volgende morgen—Erotische scènes uit jeugdliteratuur.⁶ *En Nu over Jeugdliteratuur* 9, 3: 110-115, 1982.
- Verstraete, B. C., Slavery and the Social Dynamics of Male Homosexual Relations in Ancient Rome.⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 5, 3: 227-236, 1980.
- Verveen, A. A., Seksuele aktiviteit van de mens.¹⁷ In: *Intern Rapport 1977 Laboratorium voor Fysiologie*. Leiden: Rijksuniversiteit, 1977.
- Verveen, A. A., Seksualiteit en variabiliteit—Enkele aspecten.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.) *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Vichniac, I., Le traitement des délinquances sexuelles.¹² *Le Monde*, 4 juillet 1973: 9.
- Vickers, J., Prostitution in the Context of the Street Offences Act.⁸ In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- Vilbert, J.-Cl., Les homosexuels et la chute de l'Empire Romain.⁷ *Arcadie* 26, 301: 125-129, 1979.
- Villerot, G., *Lettre d'un pédéraste aux mal-aimants*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- Vilson, B., *Letter to the Secretary General of the United Nations*.¹² Manuscript, 1972.
- Virkkunen, M., The Child as Participating Victim.¹⁶ In: Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Visser, A. S. C., Seksueel misbruik van kinderen en de rol van de politie.¹⁶ In: Wolters (Ed.), *Seksueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro, 1982.
- Visser, J. H., Prostitutie en seksueel misbruik van minderjarigen.⁸ In: Wolters (Ed.), *Seksueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten*. Nijkerk: Intro, 1982.
- Visser, H. K. A., Groei en geslachtelijke rijping.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al, *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Vlodrop, J. van, Het houden van kinderen.¹⁶ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 16 aug. 1980.
- Voestermans, P., Kinderseksualiteit: seksuele gevoelens in dienst van orde.²⁰ *Jeugd en Samenleving* 13, 2: 140-157, 1983.
- Vogel, B., *Alf*.⁶ Lollar: Achenbach, 1977.
- Vogel, W., *Verbotene Liebe-Pädophilie und strafende Gesellschaft*.¹² Regensburg: Roderer, 1984.
- Voltaire, *Dictionnaire philosophique*.¹⁹ Paris: Garnier.
- Vorberg, G., *Antike Erotik in Kleinkunst und Keramik*.⁷ München: Müller, 1920.
- Vorberg, G., *Die Erotik der Antike in Kleinkunst und Keramik*.⁷ München: Müller, 1921.
- Vorberg, G., *Glossarium eroticum*.⁷ Stuttgart: Püttmann, 1932.
- Vos, R. de & Kors, T., Sex in Nederland.¹⁷ *Nieuwe Revu* 30: 10-19, 1981.
- VPRO, Radioprogramma "Expres VPRO" over pedofilie.¹⁵ 10 april, 1981.
- Vries, L. de, *Eros' Lusthof*.⁶ Amsterdam: Meulenhoff, 1965.
- Vries, R. de, De emancipatie in het denken van de LWG Pedofilie.¹⁵ *'t Heen en Weer* 27: 10-11, 1977.
- Vries, R. de, De drie fasen van Jos van Ussel.¹⁷ *'t Heen en Weer* 70: 30-33, 1982.
- Vulto, M., *Een kwestie van overleven—Over prostitutie, sextoerisme en feminisme*.⁸ Amsterdam: De Graaf Stichting, 1983.
- Wadsworth, A., Felice Picano "A True Likeness—Lesbian and Gay Writing Today" Reviewed.⁶ *Fag Rag* 30-39: 125-127, 1982.
- Wafelbakker, F., De voorhuid in de adolescentie.¹⁷ *Tijdschrift Sociale Geneeskunde* 54: 885-888, 1976.
- Wafelbakker, F., De top-twintig van de adolescent.¹⁹ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Geneeskunde* 122, 40: 1483-1490, 1978.
- Wafelbakker, F., Sissy-boys en tom-girls.²⁰ *Homologie* 3, 5: 12-14, 1981.
- Wafelbakker, F., Seksueel misbruik van kinderen.¹⁶ *Jeugd en Samenleving* 13, 2: 92-104, 1983.
- Wagner, E., *Abu Nuwas*.¹ Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1965.
- Wagner, Th., Reaktion auf eine "Neue Moral".² In: Pacharzina & Albrecht-Désirat

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (Eds.), *Konfliktfeld Kindersexualität*. Frankfurt am Main: Päd-extra, 1978.
- Wagner, Th., *Neue Perspektiven in der Homophilenpastoral*.² Manuscript, 1979.
- Wallenburg, A. van, *Jorg en de houten kraal*.⁶ Rotterdam: Vier Leeuwen, 1972.
- Wallenburg, A. van, *Albert*.⁶ Bussum: Aquarius, 1974.
- Wallerstein, E., *Circumcision—An American Health Fallacy*.¹⁹ New York: Springer, 1980.
- Walsweer, A., Misschien ben ik wat meer betrokken op jongens dan op meisjes.¹⁵ *Sjouw* 4, 18: 412-415, 1976.
- Walters, D. R., *Physical and Sexual Abuse of Children*.¹⁶ Bloomington (IN): Indiana University Press, 1975.
- Walters, M., *The Male Nude*.³ Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1978.
- Wauben, J., Feminisme en pedofilie/incest.¹⁶ *'t Heen en Weer* 74: 14-17, 1983.
- Weeks, J., Inverts, Perverts, and Mary-Annes.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 1/2: 113-134, 1980/81.
- Wegner, A., *Die Sittlichkeitsdelikte an Kindern und Jugendlichen in der Nachkriegszeit*.¹⁶ Bonn: Röhrscheid.
- Weinberg, G., *Society and the Healthy Homosexual*.¹⁷ Garden City (NY): Anchor, 1973.
- Wellen, W., Kruis of munt. Een onderzoek naar aanbod en inhoud van harde porno.⁹ In: *Brochure Pornografie. Themadag Pornografie: Geweld of bevrijding?* Nijmegen, 10 Nov. 1981.
- Wells, H. M., *Le droit de votre enfant à la sexualité*.²⁰ Paris: Presses de la Renaissance, 1977.
- Werff ten Bosch, J. J. van der, Seksualiteit en geslachtshormonen.¹⁷ In: Frenken (Ed.) *Seksuologie*. Deventer: Van Loghum Slaterus, 1980.
- Werff ten Bosch, J. J. van der, Endocriene Aspecten van Seksualiteit.¹⁷ In: Moors-Mommers et al (Eds.), *Handboek seksuele hulpverlening*. Deventer: van Loghum Slaterus, 1983.
- WERKGROEP JEUGDEMANCIPATIE DER NVSH, Beleidsnota jeugdemancipatie.¹⁹ *'t Heen en Weer* 47: 19-30, 1979.
- WERKGROEP PEDOFILIE VAN HET NATIONAAL CENTRUM VOOR GEESTELIJKE VOLKSGEZONDHEID, Brief aan de Adviescommissie Zedelijkheidswetgeving.¹⁶ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 30, 1: 49-50, 1975.
- WERKGROEP PEDOFILIE VAN HET NATIONAAL CENTRUM VOOR GEESTELIJKE VOLKSGEZONDHEID, *Pedofilie*.¹⁶ Tweede versie van het rapport. Utrecht: Nationaal Centrum, 1976.
- Werner, D., A Cross-Cultural Perspective on Theory and Research on Male Homosexuality.¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 4, 4: 345-362, 1979.
- Werres, J., Instinkt und "gesundes Volksempfinden".¹² *Geist und Tat* 18: 239-242, 1963.
- Werres, J., *Die Knabenliebe im Rahmen der Lehre Dr. Schlegels*.¹⁵ Manuscript.
- West, D., *Homosexuality Re-Examined*.¹⁷ London: Duckworth, 1977.
- West, D., Treatment in Theory and Practice¹²; Points from the Discussion.¹² In: West (Ed.), *Sex Offenders in the Criminal Justice System*. Cambridge: Institute of Criminology, 1980.
- West, D. J., Adult Sexual Interest in Children—Implications for Social Control.¹⁶ In:

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cook & Howells (Eds.), *Adult Sexual Interest in Children*. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- West, M., *The Devil's Advocate*.⁶ London: Heinemann, 1959.
- Westerbeek Van Eerten, Th., Interview met een pornomodel.⁹ *Homologie* 5, 3: 29-31, 1983.
- Westrup, A., Om seksualevejledning.²⁰ In: Hertoft et al (Eds.), *Pædagogisk sexologi*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal, 1971.
- Westwood, G., *A Minority*.¹⁷ London: Longmans, 1960.
- Weterman, C. F. A. et al, *Rapport aan de Nederlandse bisschoppen over de situatie in huwelijk en gezin*.³ Manuscript, 1960.
- Whiting, J. W. M., Kluckholm, R. & Anthony, A., The Function of Male Initiation Ceremonies at Puberty.⁵ In: Maccoby, Newcomb & Hartley (Eds.), *Readings in Social Psychology*. New York: Holt, Reinhart & Winston, 1958.
- Wickler, W., *De aard van het beestje*.¹⁷ Amsterdam: Ploegsma, 1969.
- Willenbecher, Th., A Letter from Boston.⁸ *Christopher Street* 3: 53-56, 1978.
- Williams, F. E., *Papuans of the Trans-Fly*.⁵ Oxford: Clarendon, 1969.
- Williams, J., *Men and their Boy-Studs*.¹⁵ Los Angeles: Medco Books, 1969.
- Williams, M., A Struggle for Normality.¹⁶ In: Kraemer (Ed.), *The Forbidden Love*. London: Sheldon Press, 1976.
- Wilson, C., *Origins of the Sexual Impulse*.¹⁷ London: Baker, 1963.
- Wilson, C., *Sex and the Intelligent Teenager*.²⁰ London: Arrow Books, 1966.
- Wilson, G. D. & Cox, D. N. *The Child Lovers*.¹⁶ London: Peter Owen, 1983.
- Wilson, P., *The Man They Called a Monster*.¹⁵ North Ryde: Cassell Australia, 1982.
- Wind, E. de, *Variatie of perversie*.¹⁷ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1969.
- Winkel, C., *De seksuele ontwikkeling van het kind*.²⁰ Zeist: NISSO, 1972.
- Winterberg, H. G., *Die gleichgeschlechtliche Prostitution in der männlichen Jugend und die Gesellschaft*.⁸ Frankfurt am Main: Dipa, 1962.
- WOLFENDEN COMMITTEE, *The Wolfenden Report*.¹² New York: Stein & Day, 1963.
- Wolfensberger, Chr., Je vel is omdat je anders uit elkaar zou vallen.²⁰ *Ouders van Nu* 10: 49-50, 1975.
- Wolters, W. H. G., Sexueel misbruik van kinderen en jonge adolescenten.¹⁶ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 37, 6: 613-629, 1982.
- Wolters, W. H. G., Deenen, T. A. M., Wagenaar-Schwencke, P. & Zwaan, E. J., Bij de politie gemelde gevallen van sexueel contact tussen ouderen en kinderen.¹⁶ *Maandblad Geestelijke Volksgezondheid* 37, 6: 630-639, 1982.
- Woltz, W., Engeland spaart de roede niet.¹⁸ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 10 nov. 1979: Z4.
- Wörenkamp, H. & Perkauf, G., *Erziehungsflagellantismus*.¹⁸ Wien: Verlag für Kulturforschung, 1932.
- Worsley, T. C., *Flannelled Fool*.⁶ London: Alan Ross, 1967.
- Wulffen, E., *Sexualspiegel von Kunst und Verbrechen*.⁸ Dresden: Aretz.
- Wijk, J., van, Portret van een pederast.¹⁵ *De Nieuwe Stem* 20, 6: 323-336, 1965.
- Wyneken, G., *Eros*.²⁰ Lauenburg: Saal, 1922.
- Wyss, R., Zur Frage der Spätschäden bei kindlichen Opfern von Sittlichkeitsdelikten.¹⁶ *Schweizerische Zeitschrift für Strafrecht* 3: 273-292, 1963.
- Wyss, R., *Unzucht mit Kindern*.¹⁶ Berlin: Springer, 1967.
- X., *Præputii incisio—A History of Male and Female Circumcision*.¹⁶ New York: Panurge

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Press, 1931.
- X., *My Secret Life*.⁶ New York: Grove Press, 1966.
- X., *Masturbation and the Phallus*.¹⁷ Hollywood: Ken Green, 1969.
- X., *Phallic Development in the Adolescent*.²⁰ New York: Media Arts, 1969.
- X., Impressions d'un touriste.⁸ *Recherches* 37: 133-136, 1979.
- X., Ärsche und Energien.¹⁷ In: Dieckmann & Pescatore (Eds.), *Drei Milliarden Perverse*. Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1980.
- X., Zwanzig Jahre der Anmache.¹⁷ In: Dieckmann & Pescatore (Eds.), *Drei Milliarden Perverse*. Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1980.
- X., A Militant Young Dyke's Feminist Perspective on the Age of Consent Question.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- X., *Anal Masturbation and Ejaculation in Youths*.²⁰ San Francisco: More & Co.
- Yaffé, M., The Assessment and Treatment of Paedophilia.¹¹ In: Taylor (Ed.), *Perspectives on Paedophilia*. London: Batsford, 1981.
- Yankowski, J. S., *Sex vor der Ehe*.¹⁷ München: Lichtenberg, 1965.
- Young, W., Prostitution.⁸ In: Gagnon & Simon (Eds.), *Sexual Deviance*. New York: Harper & Row, 1967.
- Yourcenar, M., *Mémoires d'Hadrien*.⁶ Paris: Plon, 1951.
- YOUTH LIBERATION, Children and Sex.¹⁵ In: Tsang (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Zanten, G van, Bejaarde wet houdt jeugd niet bij.¹² *Accent* 11, 32: 31-32, 1978.
- Zeegers, M., *Ontucht in Nederland*.¹⁷ 's-Gravenhage: NVSH, 1968.
- Zeegers, M., Wat je kinderen doen en ervaren¹⁶; Wat ouders kunnen doen en moeten laten.¹⁶ In: Rietman (Ed.), *De kinderverleider*. Apeldoorn: Semper Agendo, 1970.
- Zeegers, M., Strafbare liefde en gevaarlijke bescherming.¹² *Proces* 56, 7/8: 167-171, 1978.
- Zeegers, M., Seksuele contacten met afhankelijke personen en kinderen.¹⁶ *Gezond Gezin* 20, 6: 9-12, 1981.
- Zeegers, M., Seks met kinderen in de strafwet.¹² In: *Waar ligt de grens?*'s-Gravenhage: Nationale Raad voor Maatschappelijk Welzijn, 1982.
- Zeegers, M. & Krul-Steketee, J., Het onheil van artikel 248bis.¹² *Tijdschrift voor Psychiatrie* 22, 10: 606-617, 1980.
- Zeller, M., *Die Knabenweihen*.⁵ Bern: Haupt, 1923.
- Zeller, W., *Entwicklung und Körperform der Knaben und Mädchen von vierzehn Jahren*.²⁰ Berlin: Schoetz, 1939.
- Zetterberg, H. L., *Het seksuele leven in Zweden*.¹⁷ Den Haag: NVSH, 1969.
- Ziegler, A., *Die Konsequenz*.⁶ Zürich: Schweizer Verlagshaus, 1975.
- Ziegler, A., *Kein Recht auf Liebe*.¹⁷ Zürich: Schweizer Verlagshaus, 1978.
- Ziegler, A., *Angsträume*.⁶ Berlin: Foerster, 1981.
- Ziegler, A., *Homosexualität*.¹⁷ Hannover: Leine.
- Zijl, L. B. M. van der, Een ontwikkelingspsychologische rubricering van enkele deviaties en variaties.¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter (Ed.), *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Zilinsky, U., *Middle Ground*.⁶ London: Longman, 1968.
- Zimmer, D. E., Niet alleen fascist en sadist folteren.¹⁸ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 7 Jan, 1982: 8.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Zimmer, D. E., Gezelligheid is gevaarlijker dan egoïsme.¹⁸ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 14 Jan, 1982: 8.
- Zwerus, H., Een onderscheid dat ik nog niet lust.¹⁶ *NIKS* 1, 7: 93-97, 1977.

CONTENTS OF VOLUME TWO

Chapter 4. Negative Aspects of Man/Boy Relations — Presumed and Real

The usual objections:

The child is not yet ripe for sex — He cannot give informed consent — The child will be traumatized — A boy will become homophile for the rest of his life — The partners are so unequal — The boy is dominated and manipulated by the adult.

Circumstances which cause concern

Incest — Prostitution — Posing as a model for nude or erotic pictures — Experience with sadism and masochism — Police investigations.

Collisions with society

Laws on age of consent — Medical attempts to “cure” boy-lovers — Sex with boys is an encroachment on generally accepted norms — The need for secrecy — Over-riding age-group boundaries.

Inherent problems

Boys’ affections are often superficial — The bloom of youth is so ephemeral — The sudden end of a relationship — Male promiscuity.

Chapter 5. Sexual Oppression and Sexual Liberation

The effects of sexual oppression

Nervous trouble — Aggression — Guilt feelings — Sexual obsession.

The cultural roots of oppression

Boy-love and sexual liberation — Sexual instruction and education — How to discuss sex — Nudity and shame — Freedom from shame in words and behaviour — Instruction with visual aids — Pictures, live shows — Self-control versus abstinence — Sexual exercise and practice — Casual contacts and love relationships

The benefits for the boy — The ethics of boy-love — Discussion of “The Pedagogical Eros” — An education to love — The boy-lover and the parents — Boys speaking out on man/boy love — Adults looking back on their boyhood

The benefits for the man

CONTENTS OF VOLUME TWO

Chapter 6. Sex and Eroticism with boys

The distinction between sex and eroticism

The various practices

Active and passive — The preferred acts — Adaptation to the boy’s stage of development

Manual contacts — Hugging contacts — Oral contacts — Anal contacts

Surrender to the forces of Nature — The mystical aspect of sex — The orgy — Group sex

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Edward Brongersma was born in Haarlem, in The Netherlands, in 1911, the son of a medical doctor. He studied law at the University of Amsterdam between 1931 and 1935, and for the next five years worked on his Doctor's thesis on Constitutional Law and wrote articles for a number of legal and general interest publications. In 1940 he received the degree of Doctor of Law at the Catholic University of Nijmegen.

During the war years, and until 1950, he was a barrister in Amsterdam, becoming a Labour Party member of the First Chamber of the States General (the Dutch Upper House of Parliament, or Senate) in 1946. Both careers were interrupted in 1950, when he was arrested, tried and convicted for having sex with a 16-year-old boy, and the next 11 months he spent in prison. Upon his release in 1951 he made a living as a journalist and was also employed as a social worker, becoming in 1956 Director of the Federation for Social Assistance to Problem Families in Haarlem, a post he held for the next three years. Debarred with his conviction, he was reinstated at the bar in 1959 and thereafter carried on a legal practice in Haarlem until his retirement in 1980.

From 1960 until 1968 he was Chief Scientific Collaborator at the Criminological Institute, State University Utrecht, and two years later the Labour Party once again asked him to consider becoming a member of the Dutch Senate. He accepted this call; from 1963 until 1977 he served his second period in the Upper House, from 1968 until 1977 as chairman of the Permanent Committee for Justice. In 1975 the Queen made him Knight of the Order of the Dutch Lion for distinguished service as Member of Parliament. He founded the Dr. Edward Brongersma Foundation in 1979 to receive and preserve his collection of literature and private documents on sexuality and make it available on a confidential basis for responsible research.

Dr. Brongersma has authored numerous articles and professional papers on law, politics, social conditions, philosophy and religion. Able to read virtually all of the Western European languages, he has written books on the Civil War in Spain, Portugal and the Portuguese, Penal Law and social problems. Beginning with his years at the Criminological Institute, he has written extensively in the area of sexology, especially on pornography and paedophilia. His books on these subjects include *Das verfemte Geschlecht* (on boy love, 1970), *Sex en Straf* (Sex and Punishment, 1972) and *Over Pedofielen en 'Kinderlokkers'* (Paedophiles and 'Child Molesters', 1975). He contributed chapters in *Sex met Kinderen* (Sex with Children, Van Eeten, Ed., 1972), *Sexuologie* (Frenken, Ed. 1980) and *Handboek voor seksuele hulpverlening* (1983).

Since his retirement in 1980, he has devoted his working time to the Brongersma Foundation collection of material on youthful sexuality and to public enlightenment on sexual matters. Always an enthusiastic photographer and avid traveller, he has visited by car nearly all of the European,

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Scandinavian and Iberian countries, as well as much of North Africa. Some ten years ago he made a Land-Rover safari with friends down through the Sahara, into Nigeria, the Camaroons, Central Africa, Congo and Angola. He has travelled by plane around the world twice, visiting India, Sri Lanka, Singapore, The Philippines, the USA, the Netherlands Antilles, Dominican Republic and Haiti.

DR. EDWARD BRONGERSMA

LOVING BOYS VOL. 2



GLOBAL
ACADEMIC
PUBLISHERS

INTRODUCTION BY
VERN. L. BULLOUGH

A MULTIDISCIPLINARY
STUDY OF SEXUAL
RELATIONS BETWEEN
ADULT AND MINOR MALES

HMTD VS SHARPE
EXHIBIT TAG SUPREME PROVINCIAL COURT
CASE NO. X050427
MARKED 17 V.D. ENTERED
EXHIBIT CARD No. 318904
SUBMITTED BY:
☐ PROSECUTION/PLAINTIFF/APPLICANT
☒ DEFENCE/RESPONDENT/DEFENDANT
CLERK ACKNOWLEDGEMENT DATE Nov 19/78
FORM ADM 051 REV 08/93

Praise for Loving Boys, Vol. 1:

"A moving plea for boy-love."

— Dr. Theo Sandfort, in *Sec.*

"Epoch-making work..."

— Pim Wiersinga in *De Warheid*.

"Destined to become, and rightly so, the definitive work on the subject of man/boy love."

—Warren Middleton, Editor of *The Betrayal of Youth*.

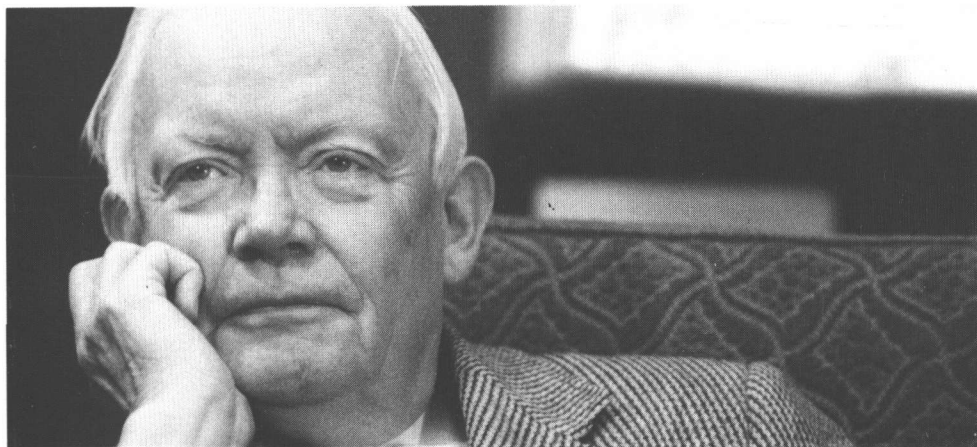
"The author, with his careful, exuberant and occasionally idealised report of sex between men and boys, has broken new ground in the one-sided way the sexuality of young people is perceived today."

— Dr. Lex van Naerssen, in *Haagse Post*.

Volume One, published in 1987, covered how boy-lovers think of the boys they love, the roles they play in their boys' lives, the sexuality of boys, and how boys in paedophile relationships perceive the friendships and sex they share with their older friends.

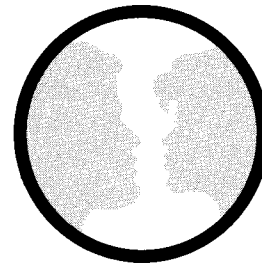
This second volume takes up the difficult subject of the negative aspects of man/boy relations, real and imaginary. It contrasts the effects of sexual repression and sexual liberation. The final chapter is devoted to an extensive description of just what transpires during sexual contacts between men and boys — how they are brought about, what precisely happens, and how different kinds of contacts within different kinds of relationships are viewed by both of the involved participants.

Dr. Edward Brongersma was born in 1911 and after World War Two became one of Holland's most distinguished jurists. For many years he was chairman of the important Judiciary Committee of the Dutch Senate — this despite previously serving a term in prison for sexual contact with a 16-year-old consenting boy under an archaic law which he later helped repeal. He is now retired but is still active in public affairs and remains a prolific writer on sexological and legal subjects.

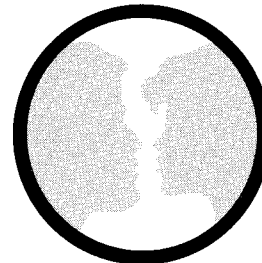


DR. EDWARD BRONGERSMA

LOVING BOYS VOL. 2



GLOBAL
ACADEMIC
PUBLISHERS



INTRODUCTION BY
VERN. L. BULLOUGH

A MULTIDISCIPLINARY
STUDY OF SEXUAL
RELATIONS BETWEEN
ADULT AND MINOR MALES

Also available:

Brongersma, Edward: Loving Boys, Volume 1
Published December, 1986, 335 pages

Cloth-bound library edition:
ISBN 1-55741-000-3
Soft-cover student edition:
ISBN 1-55741-001-1

Printed by Krips Repro Meppel, Netherlands

Global Academic Publishers
80-50 Baxter Ave.
Suite 500
Elmhurst, NY 11373
U.S.A.

European Editorial Office:
P. O. Box 22167
NL-1100 KD Amsterdam
The Netherlands

Copyright © Edward Brongersma 1990

Except for brief passages quoted in a newspaper, magazine, radio or television review, no part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying and recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

First edition published in April, 1990

Cloth-bound library edition:
ISBN 1-55741-002-X
Soft-cover student edition:
ISBN 1-55741-003-8

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Contents

of Volume 2.

Chapter Four: NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS: PRESUMED AND REAL / 9

Introduction: *A Cautionary Tale* / 9

The Usual Objections / 12

'The Child is Not Yet Mature Enough for Sex' (12) — 'The Child Cannot Give Informed Consent' (13) — 'A World Where the Child Doesn't Yet Belong' (15) — 'The Child Will Be Traumatized' (16) — 'The Boy Will Be Turned Into a Homophile' (27) — 'The Partners are So Unequal' (30) — 'The Child is Manipulated' (41)

Circumstances Which Cause Concern / 46

Incest (46) — Sexual Activities and Remuneration (56) — The Depiction of Sexuality: Boys as Models and Observers (80) — Sexual Violence and Cruelty (93) — Penal Law (121) — Attempts to 'Cure' (138)

Collision with Social Norms: Secrecy and Discovery / 142

The Age Groups (153) — Depth and Superficiality of Love (155) — The Brevity of Bloom (158)

Chapter Five: SEXUAL REPRESSION AND SEXUAL LIBERATION / 175

The Effects of Sexual Repression / 175

Nervous Troubles (177) — Aggression (182) — Guilt Feelings (189) — Obsession (196) — The History of Repression (200) — The Substrata of Sexual Repression (206)

Sexual Freedom / 211

Sexual Information (216) — How to Talk About Sex (229) — Freedom from Shame (233) — The Cult of the Phallus (239) — Shame (241)

Sexual Abstinence and Self-Control / 255

Sexual Distress of Youth (263) — Exercise and Practice (273)

Ethics for Boy-Lovers / 310

Benefits to the Boy (311) — Retrospective Judgements (342) — The Benefits for the Man (354)

Chapter Six: SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM / 359

Importance of Sexuality and Eroticism / 359

The Various Practices / 363

The Preferred Practices (369) — Adapting to the Child's Evolution
(377)

Hand Techniques / 388

Interfemoral Intercourse and Similar Techniques / 393

Sexual Activity with the Mouth / 397

Anal Intercourse / 412

Active & Passive (426)

The Primordial Force / 454

Supplemental Bibliography / 477

Index of Persons and Sources / 484

Index of Subjects / 502

LOVING BOYS

VOLUME TWO

Chapter 4.

Negative Aspects of Man/Boy Relations: Presumed and Real

Introduction

A Cautionary Tale

Once, long, long ago it was customary for men to sleep with boys and have sexual relations with them. All the men did this, and the real boy-lovers among them did it with even greater joy than the others.

Then the Christians appeared on the scene and told everyone that it was a very great sin to sleep with boys. And from that moment on whenever the Authorities managed to get hold of them, boy-lovers were burnt alive, strangled, drowned or beheaded.

That went on until the French Revolution, when a new breed of philosopher began to say that penal law should be used only to protect society and prevent individuals from being illegally harmed, not to enforce morality.

The boy-lovers took heart; they started sleeping with their young friends again, and nobody bothered them.

But it wasn't long before some people began to preach that this kind of activity was enormously harmful to the child, for children were pure, innocent creatures who were quite unaware of such a vile thing as sex. So once again boy-lovers were hunted down, and when the authorities got hold of them they were ruined and cast into prison.

Then came Freud and his followers who affirmed that children weren't asexual creatures at all. He even went so far as to call them "polymorphously perverse".

Boy-lovers, of course, had known this for centuries; once again they took heart.

But along came the medical doctors, the same ones who had been busy telling everyone that masturbation caused horrible illnesses and brought on premature death; now they said that any boy who had sex with a man would invariably be turned into a homophile himself, and would remain one for the rest of his life. Legislators listened to these expert opinions and they made the laws much

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

tougher; now men were sent to prison for having sex not just with pre-pubertal boys, but with adolescents and even young men.

Then some psychiatrists were able to demonstrate that this was all nonsense and gave rise only to misery and injustice. In several countries the old harsh laws were repealed.

But now another group of scientists started to maintain that it may very well be true that children were sexual from head to toe, and it may be quite healthy for them to have sexual play among themselves, but this by no means proved that they wanted to play in the same way with adults. Children had not matured enough for that. So the boy-lovers whom the police had managed to catch stayed in their prison cells. Moreover, as the aggression of society grew stronger and science progressed, they were subjected to torture by brain surgery and aversion therapy.

Now a group of researchers came forward with many examples of boys who wanted to establish intimate relationships with adults because adults could give them a feeling of security and protection which friends of their own age simply could not.

Once again, the boy-lovers began to take heart.

But the traditional psychiatrists and psychologists immediately raised the objection that in this kind of relationship the partners weren't equal: the adults dominated the boys. There was, of course, nothing wrong with dominating boys as long as it was done to teach them their lessons, send them to church, discipline them and bring them up properly, but where sex was involved, it was absolutely impermissible. And so boy-lovers caught by the Authorities continued to go to prison.

Then one psychologist came up with the crazy idea that even this concept of the man dominating the boy needed to be investigated. He studied in detail a number of such relationships and how the balance of power actually was held. And in none of them did he find any evidence that the man dominated the boy. On the contrary, in several instances it was the boy who dominated the man! In each case the boy wholeheartedly consented to the relationship, including all its sexual aspects. Boy-lovers once more began to take heart.

Then, however, a psychiatrist who had evidently studied the work of Jung rose to declare that when children involved in such relationships say "yes", what they really mean to say is "no".

"And when they say 'no'?" the boy-lovers asked hopefully.

"Then they also mean 'no'!" the psychiatrist replied.

So when the police managed to catch boy-lovers they still went to prison, and stayed there for years on end.

And the universities began to enlarge their medical faculties enormously, for wasn't it evident that, in the future, every child had to be provided with his own individual psychiatrist? Otherwise who could tell his parents, teachers and

Introduction

pedagogues what he really meant when he said "yes" and what he really meant when he said "no"?

But now a group of scientists came along doing follow-up studies of individuals who, as children, had consented to sexual activity with adults. These researchers agreed that they could find no trace, even after fifteen years, of damage resulting from their youthful sexual experiences.

Once again the boy-lovers began to take heart, but almost immediately the psychiatrists answered that the lasting damage done by early sex with adults might take *longer than* fifteen years to become apparent.

The boy-lovers shrugged their shoulders and asked for proof. And, lo and behold, along came a physician who shouted triumphantly, "It's not up to us to prove there *is* damage; it's up to you to prove there *isn't*!"

Now this threw the boy-lovers into considerable confusion. No researcher had ever been able to prove that sexual relations with a boy were harmless, nor had it ever been satisfactorily established that sexual relations with *anyone* were harmless—nor, for that matter, that travelling in a train was harmless, nor the eating of green peas. And we all well know that under penal law every man is guilty until acquitted, that in this world everything is forbidden unless one's government specifically permits it.

The situation became even more confused when another psychiatrist (Fraser, 1981, 41) proposed that we should ignore entirely any data or arguments submitted by people showing even the slightest trace of paedophilic desires themselves. The principle in itself seemed sound. Only bachelors should be allowed to write treatises on marriage; all sexological books should be compiled by scholars utterly devoid of sexual feeling. Never listen to the man with personal experience, never listen to the man who comes to the defence of something you don't like, for isn't that the essence of mental health?

The problem with this proposal, however, was that sexologists had long ago established that there was a bit, and sometimes more than a bit, of paedophilia in every human adult, thus *all* discussion of boy-love would have to cease immediately. How, then, could you send boy-lovers to prison if you couldn't even talk about what they did? So this idea had to be dropped.

For a brief moment boy-lovers thought they again saw a glimmer of light at the end of the tunnel when a few psychiatrists declared that any kind of sex in which a child willingly engaged was in itself completely benign, but then their hopes were dashed when these men of science added, "Such activity, however, brings the child into conflict with the standards of his environment and the society in which he lives, and *that* is very detrimental."

So the boy-lovers, half-crushed already, surrendered. They were well aware of how powerful the standards of society were. In Hitler's Third Reich a Jewish girl was in deep trouble if an Arian became enamoured of her. In South Africa a black youth is lost if a white woman takes him as her lover. So the boy-lovers

ran weeping to the psychiatrists, begging for help, for it isn't only in Soviet Russia that psychiatrists are called upon to adapt people to the standards of society.

But the children didn't give in. They continued to seduce nice adults and called those who reproached them for this silly fools. For in the meantime they had learned a bit about psychoanalysis. They said, "For every objection they were forced to abandon, these stupid men and women immediately produced another. Could it be that, though they don't realise it, they are just trying to hide the secrets of their *own* innermost souls? Aren't they simply a little bit afraid of sex itself?"

But nobody bothered to listen to what they said, for how could truth ever come from the mouths of children?

The Usual Objections

Boy-love can occur in both casual and more enduring relations. Just as in all relations between human beings, it has its pleasant and unpleasant sides. In this chapter we will concentrate on the unpleasant aspects, leaving the pleasant ones to the next.

Many of the unpleasant sides of boy-love exist only in the imagination and have no basis in reality. We gave a few examples in the introductory satire. Others, unfortunately, do exist, but we must be careful to make the proper distinctions. Some—as, for example, prostitution—are common to sexual relations of every kind and are therefore not peculiar to boy-love. Others—as, for example, the fact that the sexual attractiveness of the younger partner is linked to a particular period of his life—are specific problems of boy-love.

"The Child is Not Yet Mature Enough for Sex"

Under contract from the Swedish government, child psychiatrist Elsa-Brit Nordlund studied between 1944 and 1949 hundreds of cases of sexual contacts involving children which had resulted in criminal trials. She came to the conclusion that the sex itself didn't cause any harm to the child, providing the adult partner didn't use any violence (Ullerstam 1964, 56-57).

Since indecent assault and rape will be discussed a little later in this chapter, we will here consider only those activities which do not come into conflict with the boy's will.

The outcome of Nordlund's research is hardly surprising. How could any activity which is so clearly a part of human nature ever hurt a child? (Bendig 1980, 157) People may say that the child is not yet mature enough for it, but precisely what kind of maturity are they talking about? Certainly he is mature

enough to experience feelings of lust; the frequency of masturbation in babies and orgasm in toddlers clearly shows that a child is ready for these feelings from the moment of his birth (von Stockert 1956, 10, 24; Borneman 1978, 114). As for the objection that he is not yet mature enough to have the "deeper" experience of being emotionally related to the partner, boys may well be unable to have certain feelings yet which adults value highly, and therefore certain potentials of a relationship won't be understood or even noticed. This is quite normal and quite common in youth. Why should this suddenly be viewed with such intense concern if it happens in a sexual setting? (Pieterse 1978, 67; Möller 1983, 26).

In the first chapter we saw that there are different aspects of sexuality. For the aspect of lust, of pleasure, the child is prepared from the moment he is born; to the aspect of love he will gradually develop receptivity from infancy on; for the aspect of a dionysic union with the forces of primordial nature he might have to wait until puberty; to participate in its procreative aspect he will probably have to attain adulthood in his society.

Once the boy reaches puberty the objection that he is not yet mature enough loses conviction even in the minds of those who offer it. Fifteen-year-old Achilles in his love for Patroklos, boys in history showing their willingness to sacrifice their lives for the men they loved (Dover 1978, 191), or the Jerome whose diary we have already quoted (No. 37)—one would have a hard time convincing any of them that they "weren't old enough".

"The Child Cannot Give Informed Consent."

But already a new objection is being raised: the adult in having sex with the child places him in a situation over which he has no control and of which he cannot foresee the consequences (Wolfenden 1963, Sect. 71).

This objection is rather surprising. First of all, in raising a child parents and others close to him are constantly bringing him into situations over which he has no control. They force him to make decisions or impose decisions upon him, often of the greatest importance for his future. There is the choice of school and professional instruction, of a job, of joining some youth group, music lessons, swimming classes, sports, hobbies. Can the child foresee the consequences of engaging these activities? (CAPM 1980, 26) Is he able to weigh the advantages and disadvantages of baptism and confirmation, of going to church, to confession, of being inculcated with a religion? Is the seven-year-old in command of the situation when he receives holy communion for the first time, or the twelve-year-old when he takes the oath on renewing his baptismal vows, or the sixteen-year-old when he volunteers for years of military service, or the twenty-year-old when he marries? If all these important things are

accepted by society as a matter of course, why the sudden worry when sexual activity is concerned?

Abel *et al.* (1984, 94-97) build their attack on children having sex with adults entirely upon this issue. Their conceit is to define "informed consent" in such a way that almost no form of human interaction could pass the test: complete understanding, awareness of community standards, knowledge of all possible consequences, participants of exactly equal power positions.

The objection that the child is put in a situation over which he has no control would only make sense if it could be contrasted with an adult entering into a sexual relationship entirely in control and aware of all possible consequences. This, however, can only happen if we limit our view of sex to its procreative aspect. Here there are very real rational considerations (contraception or not, and, if so, what form?) and predictable consequences. But all the other aspects of sexuality—as a source of pleasure, expression of love, uniting with primordial nature—are quite mysterious and not at all subject to rational argument. Even the most sensitive and intelligent adult will find himself lacking in real insight (O'Carroll 1980, 145, 170).

In man/boy relations, procreation, of course, is impossible, so only the other aspects are present. A child knows just as well as an adult whether some activity is pleasurable to him or not. A baby readily shows, if only by the expression on its face, whether he likes someone or finds him unsympathetic. And the experience of abandoning oneself to the primitive forces of nature might well be more clearly perceived by a young mind than by an older one.

And the consequences for the boy in engaging in a sexual activity? They will mostly be limited to the satisfaction of his sexual appetite, just as in masturbation, with the same feelings as an adult experiences. Moreover, one result could be that he feels increasing love for his partner, so it is an enriching experience. Another result could be loathing and disgust—a pity, but it is precisely through such experimentation that mankind gains understanding and learns how to avoid certain unpleasant situations in the future. Nothing is irrevocable here, nothing irremediable.

We are discussing—and this must constantly be kept in mind—the consequences of the sex *per se*. If later a boy is disturbed, to a greater or lesser degree, about his earlier sexual activity, it is never because the sex itself harmed him, but because it has collided with the ethical standards of the people about him. This collision with social morality will occupy us elsewhere in this chapter.

So I think we can dismiss the objection that a child cannot give informed consent. It is badly formulated and superficial. It is based upon sex-negative superstition, the conviction that any child has an underlying loathing of sexuality, that he is afraid of it and is then dragged along by the adult into an unknown domain where horror follows horror, from which there is no return. The psychiatrist De Levita, for example, in his blanket condemnation of all

paedophile activities, proclaims that "children are taught to do disagreeable things with pleasure" (quoted by Sandfort 1979, 138). This learned man evidently is projecting his own feelings of sexual distaste upon the children. Quite without justification! In Chapter Three we saw how far removed this superstition is from reality. (Let us not raise the issue of the number of parents who discipline their children to do disagreeable things with pleasure. This seems to be considered damaging only where sex is involved!)

"A World Where the Child Doesn't Yet Belong"

Our discussion in Chapter Three bears on a new objection: that sexual contact with an adult brings the child into an unsuitable realm of existence, one where he doesn't yet belong. Sexual activity, therefore, should be reserved for adults. If a child samples prematurely the forbidden fruit he will get into trouble because in so doing he will sever his connection with childhood and his relations with peers will be endangered. Those children who are happy in their sexually expressed relationships with adults are abnormal and need psychotherapy (De Levita, quoted by Sandfort 1979, 138; Socarides, quoted by Kessler 1981, 92).

But, as we have already seen, nature doesn't recognise a closed domain for adults only and in which children are prohibited. Every new-born child is receptive of sexual sensations; he enriches his understanding of them by acquiring new elements of cognition. Where his comprehension fails a sexual activity will simply go unnoticed. Give a pornographic photo to a toddler and he will put it in his mouth or tear it up and not be emotionally affected by what it represents. Adults are all to prone to project their own feelings and responses upon the childish mind. It is simply impossible to induce in a child feelings he is not yet mature enough to have; one cannot force him to enter a sexual domain which he is not yet ready to perceive.

In this context we must stress that adults in our culture usually underrate by far the maturity and capabilities of the child (O'Carroll 1980, 134-135). Only a few centuries ago European boys married at the age of twelve, thirteen and fourteen (Taylor 1953, 35). In the Middle Ages and the Renaissance there were competent thirteen-year-old army commanders and cardinals of the Roman Church, fourteen-year-old fleet admirals, fifteen-year-old governors. In his "School on Boats" Léonid Kameneff (1979) discovered that contemporary boys and girls are capable of surprising achievements, provided they are entrusted with all the responsibility. A nine-year-old cook dealt competently and faultlessly with all the meals for a group of travellers, from purchasing the food to its preparation. Two fourteen-year-olds steered a sailing ship through a heavy storm along a rocky coast.

Thus it is not unreasonable to suppose that children possess far greater capacity in the realm of sexuality than adults commonly suppose. Until about

two hundred years ago boys simply participated, and nobody thought twice about it (Matzneff 1977, 145). The essential truth—as we have seen—is that any problem here is imaginary: you cannot elicit from a person something that is not yet inside him (Sengers 1969, 22). A child who doesn't yet have the capacity to experience everything an adult might in a sexual episode will simply not experience it completely.

A man making love to smaller boys is usually quite aware of this and adapts his behaviour accordingly, limiting himself to kisses, fondling, cuddling and the like. A psychiatrist like Van der Kwast (1968, 55) is thus more concerned about the infantile level on which the adult must act than the adult level to which the child is supposedly forcefully brought.

Certainly it would overburden a child to demand from him fully grown-up and responsible behaviour in a love relationship (Schillemans 1983, 139). Any adult too stupid to recognize this may well hurt his younger friend by demanding he accept a load too heavy for his mind and, like certain kinds of religious instruction, crush it. But what causes the psychological damage in this case are the unreasonable demands, not the sex itself.

When it comes to enjoying sexual activity, it is well to keep in mind that Freud (1920, 102) called the child "polymorphous perverse", referring to the child's almost unlimited capacity to be sexually excited in many ways closed to grown-ups. Nobody is less sexually "innocent" than the child: he displays a far greater and more varied capacity for sexual pleasure than the adult.

How a boy reacts to adult orgasm and ejaculation will depend upon his own developmental stage and how he was raised. He may perceive it as strange, unsavoury, or he may think it is nice and important (Sandfort 1981, 191). One boy-lover confessed to me that for years he never let himself climax while making love to his beloved boy because he didn't want to shock the child.

"The Child Will Be Traumatized"

During the time when people in Europe believed sex was something sub-human, bestial, dirty, disgusting and sinful, and the child was pure, innocent and asexual, it was self-evident to them that if the angelic child was confronted with this dark aspect of human existence the initiative could only have come from a criminal adult and the effect on the child of such an encounter would be disastrous. At first the supposed damage was thought to be primarily moral. Later, as the medical profession gained more and more social influence, psychological and/or psychosomatic traumatization was presented as proven fact (Killias 1979, 186).

Physical damage, or pain inflicted by violence, during a sexual encounter is extremely rare in the case of boy-victims (as it is not in the case of girls). We will return to this point later in the chapter. Hurting or even wounding a boy,

it seems, is in the opinion of the average citizen, and even of many judges, much less objectionable than in having sex with him (Baurmann 1983, 225).

What are the reported symptoms of this supposed traumatization? Baurmann in his study published by the West German Ministry of Justice, gives an extended summary of those claimed by different authors. Covering the literature only of the past thirty years, and eliminating symptoms which only girls could have, mention is made of depression, guilt feelings, learning difficulties, bossiness, sexual promiscuity, running away, somatic complaints, anxiety, disturbed sense of reality, regression, hostility, sexualisation of object relationships with both men and women, asceticism, repeated sexual delinquency, paralysis of the will, embarrassment when thinking about childhood, lack of adaptability, sleeplessness, bragging and general showing off, telling friends of experience, sexual deviance, symbolic thefts, exhibitionism, neglect, tendency to prostitution, fear of the perpetrator, fear of males in general, fear of the locality where things happened, appearance or reappearance or increase of neurotic symptoms or infantile behaviour troubles such as stammering or compulsive behaviour, oedipal regression, seduction of other children (1983, 197-198). The reports of the Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission moreover mention difficulty in eating, sleep-walking, possible self-destructive behaviour, drug or alcohol abuse, self-mutilation (1980, 113). Nicholas D. Groth is quoted (1983, 218), adding headaches, stomach aches, poor social behaviour while in school, decline in grades, increase in fighting with peers, arguing with family members, refusal to attend church, withdrawal, nightmares, talking in one's sleep, mood swings. Taken all together it seems a rather curious hodgepodge, and Baurmann rightly observes that many authors claiming these effects fail to distinguish between those which manifested themselves before the sexual encounter or encounters and those which appeared afterwards—and moreover fail to establish any causal link between the sex and its supposed consequences (1983, 409).

Groffmann (1962, 153) wrote that the damage inflicted on the child showed up as "disorders in the balance of the personality which in the short term adversely affect the social abilities of the individual or later cause anomalies in the evolution of his personality." Baurmann (1983, 202) wrote: "Damage as a result of a sexual encounter is a reactive disorder on the sexual, social, psychological or physical level culpably inflicted upon the victim. The disorder may either be subjectively perceived by the traumatised individual himself, or diagnosed with the help of expert scientific methods."

In his own analysis of 8051 criminal cases (7181 concerning girls, 870 concerning boys under 14 years of age) he found evidence of serious damage sustained by the victim in about 34% of the cases, lesser damage in about 18% and no damage at all in about 48% (1983, 415). All boys, without exception, fell into the "no damage" category (1983, 397). This suggests that the whole

concept of traumatisation through sexual activity with adults is applicable almost exclusively to girls and not to boys. In this chapter we will see much more evidence and many other instances of boys reacting quite differently than girls in sexual situations. It is, then, rather dangerous to talk about "children" in these matters. Conclusions which may be valid for girls may be entirely invalid where boys are concerned.

To the people of the Victorian Age it seemed self-evident that a child, that innocent being, would be hurt by sexual contact with an adult. Thus it was not until 1926 that Goroncy in Germany attempted to investigate the fate of women who had been raped in their childhood. He could discover no mental diseases resulting from the assaults (Baurmann 1983, 171). This research was followed in 1934 by the Norwegian psychiatrist Augusta Rasmussen, who limited her sample to 54 females who were raped before their fourteenth birthday. Despite this extremely unfavourable sample, she too concluded: "Mental diseases resulting from the acts they were subjected to were not demonstrable in any way, and it seems that the lives of the victims were hardly affected in any other respect by these affairs..." (Rasmussen 1934, 432).

Laurette Bender who, with A. Blau studied in 1937 a group of 16 children 5 to 12 years of age having had sexual contacts with adults, examined the same group 16 years later with A. L. Gruett and found "no problem which she felt could reasonably be attributed to the sexual experiences" (O'Carroll 1980, 62; Baurmann 1983, 174-175).

Over a period of four years, from 1951 to 1954, Judson T. Landis, using an entirely different technique, carried out a much larger investigation among some 1800 students of the University of California. 30% of the males and 35% of the females had been sexually approached while they were children. After a careful analysis of 500 such cases, Landis declared, "In general, the great majority of the victims seem to recover rather soon and to acquire few permanently wrong attitudes from the experience." (1956, 108)

Dr. H. Brunold, once again following in the footsteps of Rasmussen, investigated 62 child victims of "substantial sexual abuse" (50 girls and 12 boys aged 5 to 15) 15 to 23 years after the event. Lasting psychological traumatisation was rather infrequent and where it occurred was often more due to the reactions of the victim's social environment than to the sexual events themselves (1962, 970).

Prof. Reinhart Lempp, a doctor of medicine at Tübingen, published in the *Neue Juristische Wochenschrift* of 1968 a paper on "mental traumatisation of children as victims of non-violent sexual criminality". He personally examined 97 such children (1963, 2267). He observed: "If we take into account the positive attitude of the children at the beginning of the indecent activities, this alone makes primary traumatisation by the activities themselves highly improb-

able. It becomes even more doubtful when we recognise the frequency with which such indecencies occur." After emphasising their frequency he continues with his conclusions, "Most of the contacts remain undiscovered and thus the frequency of these indecent assaults must be assumed to be very high. This makes it impossible to claim as self-evident that children involved in these activities will always be psychologically traumatised. We can in no way assume that such a large number of people have been permanently and considerably hurt in their psychic evolution. My own investigation of 97 children involved in 93 criminal affairs did not establish clearly in any single case that traumatisation of the child had been directly caused by the sexual activity."

McCaghy (1971, 24) wrote, "An incident of molesting is not likely to be traumatic for a child unless the parents themselves make it so."

Dr. Frits Bernard, a Rotterdam psychologist, began an investigation in 1971 which in 1979 he described as "still in progress". (This is probably why exact data are lacking about his "around 30" subjects, their age and sex, and his sample selection—data normally provided by researchers.) His tentative conclusion is, "We cannot confirm a traumatising influence, nor the development of fear of adults." (1979, 51)

Another Dutch psychologist, John M. H. Corstjens, published in 1975 the results of an enquiry among students of the Catholic University of Nijmegen, yielding completed responses from 224 males and 215 females. 13% of the males and 18% of the females said that as children they had had sexual contact one or more times with an adult. At the end of his report Corstjens wrote, "We have demonstrated that there is no evidence of any influence of such contacts on later sexual experience." (1975, 122; 1980, 282)

Youth counsellor Father Michael Ingram, an English Dominican friar, reported in 1977 at the Swansea conference on "Love and Attraction" that he had studied 91 pre-pubertal boys who had had sexual experiences with men. "There is no evidence that sexual contacts with adults do any damage, psychological or moral, to the children any more than the 'rude games' that many of them play." (1977, 5) "The activity itself evidently performs some function for the child, or fulfils some need, or is a passing act of little significance." (1979, 517; 1981, 186)

An extremely fine piece of research was carried out by the English psychologist Lindy Burton in 1968. She compared 41 children (6 boys, 35 girls, ages 5 to 15) who, according to police records, had been involved in sexual delinquency with adults with a similar group of children who had had no such contacts. She concluded, "that sexual assault of children by adults does not have particularly detrimental effects on the child's subsequent personality development." (1968, 169) Even a noticeable acceleration of the child's sexual evolution, as might well have been expected, was not empirically observed (Kirchhoff 1979, 294-295).

Research is commonly complicated by other factors: children involved in criminal cases often come from problem families. Burton observed "that the item which discriminated most significantly" between her subject group and its control population was "the affection seeking": "these sexually assaulted children certainly showed every evidence of needing affection of this sort" and the sexual experience with an adult often served "to satisfy unconscious personality needs" (1968, 122, 169, 161). Since these were not satisfied at home, the children sought for affection with adults outside of the family. A fairly large percentage of such children are psychologically traumatised by their living conditions (Gibbens and Prince 1963) or by the unbalanced reactions of their social environment and/or police interrogation (Burton 1968, 168). Thus it is most remarkable that Rasmussen, Brunold, Lempp and Burton, working with samples of especially unfavourable cases, arrived at the same conclusions as the other researchers.

A close study of the relevant literature and his own experiences as a child psychologist made K. J. Groffmann propose the following hypothesis: "Mentally sound children and adolescents who find both support and understanding in their human environment will generally not be permanently troubled in their evolution by sexual assault." (1962, 178)

Prof. Ernst-Walter Hanack of Heidelberg told the annual meeting of German lawyers in 1968, "In general we can assume in any particular case—always excepting the most violent executions of this crime—that the psychological damage inflicted upon a healthy child will not be particularly serious and certainly will not disturb the child permanently—if, in fact, (and this would be most exceptional) there is any damage at all. The contrary view, however generally accepted it may be (...) is based largely on the mistaken assumption that the child is a non-sexual being, and we should treat it with the utmost scepticism, particularly in the interest of the children themselves." (1968, 95)

The Dutch psychiatrist Zeegers wrote in 1970, "A great many children have sexual experiences at a young age without sustaining any harm." Pondelickova (quoted by Powell & Chalkley 1980, 70) wrote, "It is not very probable that pedophile behavior causes psychic trauma to the object." Dean Challot wrote, "in a vast majority of the cases no appreciable harm resulted from such contacts." (1972, 9)

Dr. Eberhard Schorsch after analysing the relevant literature, made this summary: "There is no evidence of a direct causal link between such experiences and a misdirected evolution of the personality. Empirical research forces one to accept the fact that permanent damage does not occur." (1974, 24) See also Goldstein (1974, 31). Dr. Karl-Heinz I. Kerscher of Hamburg University and the Evangelical Professional Academy seconded this opinion (1974, 564) and in the same year Dagmar Potrykus and Manfred Wöbcke wrote in their book that "it has become impossible to sustain the assumption that

negative consequences generally occur", adding "Among the authors who claim that the sexual activity itself has negative effects, not a single one presents the slightest empirical base for his assumption. They generally produce their allegations uncritically, as premises, moralistically, without mentioning conflicting data and arguments." (1974, 70-71). This is also the position of the Swiss researcher Killias (1979, 184). For a fine example of such theorising unsupported by any data, see von Stockert (1956, 54).

In 1975 this view was voiced by:

a) Philippe Graven, Professor of Law at the University of Geneva: "Disastrous short-term or long-term consequences of non-violent contacts—in reality by far the most common form—are unsubstantiated. As far as we can tell at the present time, any later disturbances which may occur cannot be blamed, either in whole or in part, upon the sexual activities." (1975, 289)

b) The Austrian criminologist Dr. Walter Hauptmann mentioned several examples "of the common absence of serious psychological troubles after paedophile contacts." Even among boy prostitutes "there was no evidence of any link between hetero- or homosexual experiences of the child and later deviancy." The "commonly accepted fiction of nearly omnipresent 'lasting damage' and 'aftereffects' from sexual experiences" has "for a long time now no longer been acceptable." (1975, 42-43)

c) The American youth psychiatrist D. R. Walters calls the theory that "psychologically, the sexually abused child is permanently damaged" a myth (1975, 113).

The Swedish government appointed a commission, presided over by Chief Justice Kjellin, to prepare suggestions for the reformation of the sexual offences section of the penal code. Summarising a number of publications on the subject, the commission concluded: "Possible sexual contacts between children and adults often pass over a child without any apparent negative effect on his psychology." (1976, 80)

In 1978 the distinguished Austrian psychiatrist Borneman wrote, "The negative effect of youthful sexual intercourse with adults have been exaggerated by the press. The results of research by youth psychologists, forensic physicians and sexologists are almost completely the reverse of what the layman takes as truth." (1978, 1011) And in San Francisco Prof. Haeberle declared, "By no means all of such contacts are harmful, and it seems irrational to punish them all in a summary fashion." (1978, 444). Geiser (1979, 87) came to the same conclusion.

The Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission, a body one would hardly suspect of any leniency toward paedophiles, said in a report to the Illinois General Assembly (1980, 113) that, "the effects of sexual molestation of children can be devastating. They need *not* be, depending on many variables,

not the least of which is how the victims are treated within the context of the system that investigates and may prosecute an offender." In other words, if there is damage it is not caused by the sex but by a secondary factor, the police examination. The Commission quotes as confirmation the opinion of Leroy G. Schultz, noting "that, in and of themselves, non-violent sexual assaults do not usually have a serious effect on a child's personality development." In another report published in the same year the Commission observes, "It has been demonstrated in the literature that a completely mutual consensual relationship between a young man and an older usually does not result in deleterious effects on the younger of the two." (1980, 205) See also Fraser (1980, 56); Powell & Chalkley 1980, (59, 68-69, 71, 73-75).

Sam Janus, PhD (1981, 232) quoted with approval the opinion of one of his colleagues: "In my experience a child who is pretty well together in other respects and is doing well in the world, getting along with his parents and in school, will not be permanently harmed." Larry L. Constantine in the same year reviewed 30 independent investigations on this subject. Only five of the researchers concluded that there could be some long-term negative effects, but in these cases the subjects had been juvenile delinquents and psychopathic and it was therefore difficult to distinguish between cause and effect. Where the sample studied was selected from the general population, no mention was made of negative results. Six of the researchers commented on positive long-term effects (1981, 220-225, 259).

Baurmann in his analysis for the West German Ministry of Justice of 8058 criminal cases, wrote that the prevailing view of the dangers to children of sexual contacts with adults has simply been copied by one author from another without any empirical base. What is advanced as scientifically established is in reality no more than individual prejudiced opinion. Or, as in the case with Geisler, the whole sample was taken from a selected, disturbed group so that the outcome was determined in advance. Baurmann himself shares the opinion of such investigators as Landis and Lempp quoted above (1983, 169-70, 176, 195, 484, 486).

Wilson and Cox, although adverse to legalising paedophile activity, conclude, "Numerous empirical attempts to demonstrate that lasting psychological harm is done to a child through sexual contact with adults (e.g. changing his sex orientation, or making him impotent) have generally failed to adduce any such evidence. Most researchers seem to be agreed that except in the case of physical assault against an unwilling child (tantamount to rape), no lasting harm to the sexual or social development of the child 'victim' can be detected." (1983, 129)

Monique Möller likewise writes, "Neither scientifically nor statistically has the harmfulness of paedophile relations been demonstrated." She continues with the wise remark, "No relation is in itself either beneficial or harmful, regardless of whether it is between adults, as in professional or married life, or

children, or between adults and children. Sexuality in itself, of whatever kind, does not render a relation between people desirable, undesirable, good or bad. The people themselves are of more importance than what happens between them. They define the atmosphere in which the events occur by their personalities, their capacity to sympathise with others, their respect for their partners and their willingness to love one's neighbour as themselves." (1983, 98-99)

When we consider all the horrible consequences which public opinion ascribes to sexual experiences with adults, it is amusing to read the account of Dutch psychologist Rouweler-Wutz (1976, 14). While studying paedophilia she contacted nine pedagogical and orthopedagogical institutes requesting them to provide her with cases which demonstrated harm. Every one of them replied that they had never actually seen any "victim" of consensual contacts.

Even if in Western societies the incidence of adult/child sex is lower than in Hindustan, where it is the general custom for adults to caress the sexual organs of children (Möller 1983, 35), there is no reason to suppose that the number of "victimised children" in the West is insignificant (McCaghy 1971, 24; Zeegers 1970, 44; Sandfort 1979, 242). A number of reports, on the contrary, point to rather high figures for children involved.

The most conservative estimates are given by Rennert (1965, 362): 12.4% of all girls and 8.9% of all boys; and by Van Ewijk (1983, 66): 20% of all girls and 10% of all boys (also used by Rush 1980, 246).

Corstjens (1975, 127) found that among students at the Catholic University of Nijmegen 13% of all males and 18% of all females reported sexual experiences as children with adults.

Hertoft (1968, I-239, II-69) found that among 400 Danish recruits 9 had had sexual experiences with women before the age of 12, 51 had had sexual experiences with men before the age of 15, making a combined total of 15% of the recruits.

Walters (1975, 116) reported that among 412 American students 21% were approached by men before they attained puberty, which led to sex in 17% of these 412 boys.

Kinsey reported that 24% of his female subjects had had, as pre-adolescents, sexual experiences with adults. The Kinsey figures have proved to be valid for countries other than the U.S.A. as well: Baurmann (1983, 216); Italiaander (1969, 138). West (1981, 252) however thinks that Kinsey's 24% "under-estimates the true position".

Wolters (1982, 16) said that 25-33% of all boys have sexual experiences with adults; the same percentages are given by Mrazek (quoted by Fraser 1981, 50).

Gibbens (quoted by West 1977, 217) said 33% of his boys, both those with heterosexual and homosexual tendencies, had been sexually approached by adults.

The Dutch newspaper *De Volkskrant* (14 June, 1984) referred to an investigation of "intimacies" in secondary school. Of 68 boys, 22 had been "molested" by their own teachers; 5 claimed to have liked it.

Landis (1956, 93) reported that 30% of the male and 35% of the female Californian students he studied had had such experiences as children. Robin Badgley of the University of Toronto interrogated 1000 minors and found that 33% of the boys had been the victim of undesired sexual activities (*Journal de Montréal*, 19 Feb 1985). Of 1800 New England children, mostly from the middle and upper classes, 33% had been "sexually abused" (Geiser 1979, 10).

Schofield (1965, 58, 122) found that 35% of 15-19-year-old English boys claimed to have at least once been the subject of a man attempting sex.

The highest incidence is given by Kirchhoff (quoted by Baurmann 1983, 106): 37% of females and 45% of the males had had as children sexual experiences with adults.

Thus it is clear that sexual contacts between older and younger partners are rather commonplace occurrences and that the number of cases reflected in criminal statistics is only a faint echo of what really goes on (Beyaert 1982, 97; Frisch 1971, 7; Möller 1983, 12; Taylor 1981, xv; Pieterse 1982, I-35). In an article in the weekly *Intermediar* (1975) I estimated that only one in 3,000 sexual events of this kind comes to the attention of the judicial authorities, and Léonard des Sables (1977, 43), using an entirely different method of calculation, arrived at exactly the same result. The total number of such sexual events in any one year in any one country are not to be estimated in hundreds of thousands but in millions. We are faced with the same situation our forebears faced with respect to masturbation: it was only possible to claim mortal danger from masturbating as long as the universality of this practice could be kept hidden. After the publication of the Kinsey reports nobody could spread the old masturbation scare stories with a clean conscience. Likewise, no one who is acquainted with the relevant research proving the frequency and universality of sex with children can any longer promulgate in good faith the myth of its traumatic consequences.

If parents really loved their children above all else they would be happy to see science prove that something which they had feared, regarded as threatening or horrible, was really quite harmless. But most people appear to be more attached to their sexual phobias than to their children, and so they cling compulsively to the myth of traumatising. This reluctance to give up old terrors is especially to be deplored since the myth itself may really hurt children.

First of all, the myth creates fear of the evil stranger who decoys children with candy and promises in order to torture or kill them. Instead of teaching young children never to go away with anybody (including uncles and grandparents) without checking with his parents first—a comprehensible, clear and non-frightening instruction—they are made mortally afraid of all strangers. "The

danger of creating paranoid and xenophobic (fear of strangers) attitudes can be more damaging to child-rearing in general than pedophilic occurrences." (Mohr & Turner 1967, 362; Baurmann 1979, 108; van der Zijl 1976, 183). This practice, in fact, is not very effective in combating sexual approaches, since in 80 out of 100 cases (with boys, 84 out of 100 cases) it is not a stranger but an uncle, a neighbour, a family friend, a teacher or a youth leader who attempts to have sex with the child (Baurmann 1983, 251, 375; Righton 1981, 33; Taylor 1981, xiv). Moreover, sexual contacts with a stranger tend to be much less intense and frequent and of a more "harmless" nature than those with acquaintances or family members (Baurmann 1983, 144, 251, 262-275, 468, 477).

Considering that 30% of all boys will at some time or another be approached by a man for sexual contact, in only 6%, then, of all boys will this be by a stranger. Thus in order to protect children from a supposed threat which may affect only 6%, the practice of inculcating in children fear of the wicked stranger inflicts real damage on 100% of them, a damage, moreover, which child psychologists consider far worse than the actual sexual activity which the parents seek to prevent. This can hardly be considered wise procedure! "It may well be a fact that scare techniques that induce panic cause more widespread interference with children's psychosexual development than do overt abnormal sexual experiences." (Rabinovitch, quoted by Karpman 1954, 556) The psychiatrist Zeegers even says that this kind of sexual education could better be characterised as sexual offence against the child (1970, 52). Neill, the famous headmaster of Summerhill, justly remarks, "to introduce fear into a child's life is the worse of all crimes." (1962, 217) I once saw a delightful spoof of harmful sexual nonsense plastered on a German car: "We are the people our parents were always warning us about!"

Secondly, the legend of the wicked stranger is one of those self-fulfilling prophecies. Sexuality in itself is not harmful, but when it is connected to the taboos with which parents fill their children's heads, it may well become so (De Wind 1969, 12). If a child, as a result of sexual mis-education, panics at the approach of a stranger, this may trigger an even more dangerous panic in the man who, in *his* fright, may commit some kind of violent or even murderous act.

In the third place, experience shows that scare stories about the wicked stranger are highly ineffectual. In small children they give rise to great confusion and misunderstanding (Janus 1981, 190). When it comes to older boys, who are most concerned in these matters, it is interesting to read an account of what happened in Atlanta, Georgia when some years ago no less than 30 black boys were being killed by a mysterious murderer: "The city's schools, press, TV and radio having scarily warned children of the dangers of even talking to strangers, two plain clothes men conducted an experiment. In an unmarked car they drove

slowly through a black area one night, at intervals asking boys of 9 to 15 if they'd like to get in and earn \$10. The danger discounted, the urge for money, excitement and fun paramount, the activity expected from them thoroughly understood and accepted, every single boy approached was willing." (Personal communication by D. W.)

So we can see that the legend of the wicked stranger is very dangerous. Nonetheless, many a caring parent continues to spread it. These are the same caring parents who do a more thorough job of distorting their children's sexual evolution than any child molester could have done. "Instead of simply asking what damage is inflicted upon the child by having sexual contact with an adult, we should ask as well what damage is inflicted upon the child by frustrating his sexual needs. Putting it even more generally, what damage does he suffer in his non-sexual relationships with adults?" (Rouweler-Wutz 1976, 73)

Léonid Kameneff, founder of the "School on Boats", describes cases where sexual contacts could have released boys from psychic isolation—contacts which failed to materialise, however, because of legal prohibitions and the realisation that breaking the laws could have imperilled the very existence of the school (1979, 96).

Even today, in some places, we hear echoes of the horrible anti-masturbation campaign fought for almost two centuries with such dedication and enthusiasm, and with such disastrous results, by doctors, the clergy and pedagogues. How many boys did these experts bring to the depths of despair? How many boys had their entire youths made miserable?

It is not even necessary to mention extreme cases, such as the French physician Meignant cites from his own practice of boys committing suicide after reading moralistic books about human sexuality (1974, 106-115). The incidence of adolescent suicide is always high: traffic accidents are the most important cause of death among 10- to 18-year-olds; suicide comes in second place (Wolters 1981, 449-451). No less than half of these suicides are attributable to sexual difficulties (Deschner 1978, 373). A radio programme on homosexuality produced by the Dutch "Evangelical Broadcasting Service" in 1974 directly caused eleven young people to put an end to their lives (Van Spreeuwel 1975, 4).

In opposition to all of this, I would like to quote from a personal letter I received some years ago from an Austrian correspondent: "I love boys with every fibre of my being. How could I ever hurt one of them? If I weren't unshakeably convinced—and experience has proven me right—that the boy also enjoys it and suffers absolutely no harm, I would renounce all sexual pleasure and suffer myself instead."

So the question really is, Who threatens children the most? Somebody who denounces boy-lovers for traumatising their young friends and brings up his son along traditional lines is like a burglar shouting 'stop thief!' The Sioux Indians

who teach their sons how to masturbate seem to hit the mark when they call the conventional sex education methods of the Pale Faces "simply barbaric" (Schérer 1974, 163).

We will have more to say about this in Chapter Five. For the present we will limit ourselves to observing that the only acceptable and effective way to protect a boy against unwanted physical attentions by an adult is to give him honest and ample information about the possible dangers, to increase his self-confidence and to teach him that he and only he must decide who may touch his body in an intimate way (Lamping-Goos 1982, 117; Baurmann 1983, 276, 480-481). Children taught to hold adults in awe and always obey them, who come from families with very rigid views about sexuality and who enjoy less freedom than the majority of their peers have proved more liable to hurt and traumatising by sexual offenders than those with a more liberal upbringing (Baurmann 1983, 454).

"The Boy Will Be Turned Into A Homophile"

For years everyone believed that if a boy had sexual relations with a man it would make the boy homosexual, and he would remain homosexual for the whole rest of his life. Obviously, then, boys should be protected from such contacts.

Despite the finding of Bell & Weinberg that, even in as desperately homophobic a society as that of North America, homophiles on the whole do not feel less happy than heterophiles (1978, 432), it is not unreasonable to suppose that a young man would prefer not to belong to a minority with a considerably higher suicide rate (Baudry 1982, 82; Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 402; Ell 1979, 140; Tielman 1982, 168; Siegfried 1979, 94; Wagner 1979, 141; West 1977, 198), which is discriminated against, rejected and persecuted in every society which has been heavily influenced by Christianity (Masters & Johnson 1988, 254). It is pleasant to read in Ford and Beach (1968, 139) that homosexuality is considered a quite normal phenomenon in 64% of the cultures which they investigated, but neither the European, nor the North American, nor the Soviet powers belong to this cultural majority of theirs. In many countries homophiles have no legal rights and so are at the mercy of their rulers, as in Cuba and in China (Haeberle 1978, 385-386), and this does not seem to cause undue worry to those idealistic people among us who claim to be fighting for human rights. Thus it is quite understandable that parents prefer their sons to grow up as heterophiles rather than homophiles.

That a boy could be "converted" or "perverted" to homosexual preferences had already been proposed in Greek antiquity by the peripatetic school of philosophers—not in the absurd form it assumed later in the nineteenth century, but in teaching that passivity in anal intercourse might become a preferred

sexual technique if continued over a long period of time (Buffière 1980, 440; Bullough 1976, 104; Wagner 1979, note 39).

It was left to a more enlightened age to promulgate the blind belief that a single "seduction" by a man would make the poor boy ineluctably and inevitably and forever homophile. No honest heterophile could ever have invented this absurdity, for it presupposes that the homosexual experience was so fantastically wonderful that in one single sexual cataclysm all the effects of heterosexual indoctrination to which every boy is subjected by society for years on end is eliminated. Whoever has drunk but once from the source of homosexuality will ever after long for a repetition, so weak is the heterosexual impulse in comparison!

Such a *testimonium paupertatis* of heterosexuality was, of course, not invented by real heterophiles but by homophiles standing trial for homosexual "offences". To excuse their "criminal conduct" they claimed to have been victims in their youth of homosexual seduction. Perhaps they thought if they were going to be prosecuted by idiots it would be best to put forward an idiotic defence. But the sword they used cut both ways. Judges and public prosecutors gullibly swallowed the argument, only to conclude that they must fight all the harder against homosexuality as a corrupting influence on youth.

In reality the sequence of events is quite the reverse. If a boy reacts positively to a homosexual approach the reason is the presence within him of homosexual tendencies which, at least at the time, are strong enough to allow him to become sexually aroused (Harry 1977, 117-120; West 1977, 54). In which direction his sexual preferences will gradually evolve is either inately determined or determined by environmental influences active during the very first years of his life—certainly before he goes to school (De Batselier 1967, 444; Baurmann 1983, 72; Bieber 1962, 173; Bleuler, quoted by Wolfenden 1963, Sect. 68; Churchill 1967, 214; Hart de Ruyter 1976, 143; Harry 1984, 122; Hoult 1984, 125; Klimmer 1958, 93; Van der Kwast 1968, 118; Sengers 1967, 144; Wyss 1967, 44-45). All fear of "homosexual propaganda" or "homosexual proselytising" is therefore groundless. It is as senseless to propagandise for homophilia as it is to propagandise for redheadedness, left-handedness or having crossed eyes.

At the time when I was writing *Das verfeimte Geschlecht* this problem of "seduction to homosexuality" was still central to all discussions about penal law reform. I thus devoted many pages to the issue, pointing to the shift in position of the Dutch psychiatrist Tolsma who as late as 1948 energetically supported the traditional seduction-to-homosexuality thesis but who was so laudably honest that when later he was confronted with conflicting fact he confessed that he had been mistaken and had altered his professional opinion. Thus in the 1963 edition of his book he wrote: "Permanent homosexual orientation is in our culture only to be found in individuals with a predisposition

to it, that is to say in those in whom the tendency is already present before the seduction." (1963, 141) As sharing this point of view, I quoted from Naecke (1905), Havelock Ellis (1915), Moll, Placzek (1919), Hirschfeld (1926), von Krafft-Ebing, Schwarz, Rozanoff (1935), Doshay (1945), Bender & Gruett (1952), Berg (1954), West (1955), the Roman Catholic committee presided over by the English cardinal Griffin (1956), the official British committee presided over by Sir John Wolfenden, Coon (1957), Klimmer (1958), Westwood, Rainer (1960), Schlegel, Freund, Bieber (1962), Schofield, Marmor (1965), Sengers (1966), Churchill, de Batselier, Bräutigam (1967), Trimbois (1968), the Dutch official commission presided over by Prof. Speijer (1970). We may add Abraham (1969, 209, 237), Gagnon (165, 226), Geiser (1979, 92); Harry (1984, 118); Langfeldt (1981, 41, 71-72); Powell & Chalkley (1981, 71); Righton (1981, 38); Zeegers (1977, 205); Everaerd (1980, 11); Haeberle (1978, 176). It seems unnecessary now to cite all those passages which show how the seduction-to-homosexuality theory is nothing more than "an old wives' tale", as Hanack, law professor at the University at Heidelberg, and Bräutigam, his medical colleague there, called it (Hanack 1968, 151). Every so often we still hear its echoes, unfortunately not only from old wives but from the likes of Dr. Johannes Pohlschneider, bishop of the diocese of Aachen, who in 1976 repeated it with complete peace of mind in a treatise called *Ethics of Christian Sexual Education*.

A most convincing witness to its lack of veracity is the experience of the Sambia boys in New Guinea, as described by Herdt. In their tribal villages the Sambia segregate the sexes as much as possible. Men and women each have their own paths and meeting places. The boys have no contact whatever with the girls. The initiation process for them begins somewhere between ages 7 and 10. During the first phase, which lasts until they are about fifteen, they are expected to suck the penis of a mature boy every night and swallow his sperm. Without regular ingestion of male seed, the Sambia believe, boys will never grow up into strong, mature men. At first some of the boys dislike having to do this, but gradually all come to enjoy it and often strong ties of friendship are formed between the sucker and the sucked. After puberty the boys enter the second phase of initiation: it is now their turn to provide seed for the benefit of the younger ones. They do this until, at around age 22, they marry. Marriage terminates the young man's homosexual life, since once his penis has penetrated a woman's vagina it is no longer considered clean and it would be dangerous for any other male to touch it. What is of especial interest to us at this point is that after 10 to 15 years of exclusive homosexual activity carried on by 100% of the young male Sambia population, the incidence of adult homosexual orientation is only 5%—exactly the same as in Western society (Herdt 1981, 2-4, 233-234, 238, 280-282, 288, 319).

Homosexual activity before or in the first years after puberty is neither cause nor early evidence of adult homosexual orientation. At puberty a boy needs to experiment with his sexuality, just as he has to try out his other physical and mental capacities, until he has found what suits him the best. This is the normal way every human being learns. Boys who have not been warped by their upbringing but are healthy in their psychosexual development will be observed experimenting with homosexuality, animal sex, exhibitionism, voyeurism (being peeping Toms) and fetichism (Karpman 1954, 53). As long as boys, in their sexual activities, respect the rights of others, there is not the least cause for concern. Such experiments will never hurt the youngsters themselves, only the possible panic reactions of the people around them (Rabinovitch, quoted by Karpman 1954, 556).

We might ask ourselves whether only adults should be allowed their exhibitionistic pleasures, to dress up and pose, to take voyeuristic delight in spying on the intimacies of others in the pages of the yellow press, to sadistically enjoy acid criticism and biting jokes at the expense of absent persons, to derive sexual pleasure watching strip shows or looking at porno magazines, to experience homosexual sadistic excitement at a boxing match or auto races with the greatest chance of lethal, bloody accidents. Is not all of this veiled mental perversity far more symptomatic of a sexually traumatised personality than the adolescent boy's open experimentation with sex could ever be?

In having sex with a peer or a man, the adolescent boy tries out the homosexual possibilities of his mental makeup instead of repressing them. Repression means not having them under control, and that could result in being obsessed by them. The man who in his youth has had his fling expressing his homosexual component, and then put it all by, will feel less driven as an adult by homosexual impulses than the man who didn't. He will also find homosexuality less disturbing, view it with more understanding, because it is, for him, no longer a skeleton in the closet.

Of beautiful Alcibiades the story was told that as a boy he drove all husbands mad with love and enticed them away from their wives, while as a man he drove all women mad with love and enticed them away from their husbands (Buffière 1980, 468).

"The Partners are So Unequal"

If it were really true that a man becomes paedophile because he did not receive enough affection when he was young, then all the tenderness bestowed by the boy-lover on his young friends would tend to prevent them from acquiring tendencies deviant from "normal" heterosexuality. Boy-love, then, would be a "normalising" rather than a "perverting" influence upon boys!

But immediately the objection is raised that in paedophile relations the partners are grossly unequal. Even if we agree with most present-day authorities "that sexual experimentation among children the same age is normal, healthy, and perhaps even to be encouraged" and "to say that it's bad is to deny children an essential part of their growth" (Janus 1981, 318-319), the situation changes completely as soon as an adult enters the picture. Sexual play among children is permissible but an adult will spoil it (Sebbar 1980, 292). Wolters (1982, 13-14), for example, describes all sexual activities between adults and children as "sexual abuse" because "1) the relationship is unequal; 2) the adult has all the power on his side; 3) freedom and opportunity of choice are limited; 4) the older partner is strongly motivated by the desire for satisfaction of his own personal sexual desires." Writers like Wolters and A. Nicholas Groth who begin with the assumption that all adult/child relationships are due either to sexual pressure or sexual force exerted by the man (Howells 1981, 82) have from the very start made it impossible for themselves to gain any real understanding of the phenomenon. They are acting exactly like those feminists who consider every form of sexual activity, even if it is mutually consensual, rape if the partners are in some way unequal (Califia 1981, 137-139).

If only those human relationships where the partners are equal were morally and legally permitted, few indeed would exist. "It is a glib notion of power, however, that assumes that equality in all things is either strictly possible, or that assumes absolute equality is necessary for fairness and genuine reciprocity." (Reeves 1983, 12) It is not inequality which makes a relationship objectionable, but the exploitation of this inequality by one partner at the expense of the other. Such exploitation may occur, but it doesn't have to. There are good parent/child, good husband/wife, good employer/employee, good doctor/patient relationships despite the obvious inherent inequality in all of them. And so there are also good man/boy relationships.

On the other hand all human relationships can deteriorate, or be poisoned from the start. Things may occur between a man and a boy to which all of our objections would apply. To the worst of these, such as rape, physical violence or abuse of authority, we will return later in this chapter.

In this section we will limit our discussion to those friendships which obey the fundamental conditions demanded of any sexual relationship: they be free of force or compulsion and of any abuse of dominance. The younger partner should never be considered a property of the older; he should be freely consenting not only to the sexual contact but to the form it takes and under what conditions it will proceed. And at any moment—even in the middle of the sexual activity—he should be free to withdraw his consent (Duvert 1980, 112).

If such conditions are met it should be evident that this very inequality between man and boy may deepen and enrich the relationship between them.

For the man is usually the more experienced of the two, is more knowledgeable and uses these advantages not to dominate his young friend but to help him. The boy on the other hand has the complementary gifts of spontaneity, freshness and curiosity. Each benefits, and learns, from the other.

The English poet Auden makes the lovely observation, "A girl of eleven (or a boy of twelve)... can be a most remarkable creature. No longer a baby, she has learned self control, acquired a sense of her identity, and can think logically without ceasing to be imaginative. She does not know, of course, that her sense of identity has been too easily won—the gift of her parents rather than her own doing—and that she is soon going to lose it, first in the *Sturm und Drang* of adolescence and then, when she enters the adult social world, in anxieties over money and status. But one cannot meet a girl or a boy of this kind without feeling that what she or he is—by luck or momentarily—is what, after many years and countless follies and errors, one would like, in the end, to become." (quoted by Fraser 1976, 182)

An objection to be taken much more seriously is that if a boy becomes too intimately involved with his adult friend he may deprive himself of necessary and beneficial relationships with his peers. Where this happens the man egotistically sacrifices the best interests of the boy to his own pleasure (Bernard 1979, 19; Nichols 1976, 75). Sandfort, carefully analysing 25 man/boy relationships, concluded that this sort of situation was far from universal, at least in his small sample: a number of his subjects maintained at the same time as their paedophile friendships strong, positive relationships with their age-mates (1981, 97). Nevertheless, this must be recognised as a possible danger.

If the relationship continues over a long period the man often acquires considerable influence over the boy (De Brethmas 1979, 98). The boy is at an age when the body and its capacities are of overwhelming importance. In their shared intimacy the naked bodies of the man and the boy speak to each other in their own wordless language which has such deep significance to the evolving youth (Krist 1976, 45). The boy finds something here which he cannot find elsewhere; "elsewhere" is even denied him. An adult abandons himself to him, reveals himself to him, confides in him as to no one else. Confidence evokes love, love evokes tractability.

In itself this powerful influence of the adult is neither negative nor positive; it all depends upon how the man uses it. The adult has a greater propensity for good as well as for evil than the child (O'Carroll 1980, 166). In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation there are notebooks in which a 30-year-old man carefully kept score, in order to show his affection for his 12-13-year-old friend, of all the shop-liftings the boy was busy committing. In this man's mind his sharing in this way in the boy's thefts cemented their close alliance as well as expressed their mutual love of adventure, their dexterity and their courage; in so doing he praised the boy for his thievery. The total value of items stolen

over the years was quite high. When finally the two were caught the court, quite justly, blamed the man for his complicity.

In a healthy society where man/boy relationships didn't have to remain hidden and could be openly revealed, parents would evaluate and judge the man who was in love with their son and, if necessary, reject him. They would have the right to veto his association with their boy—not, of course, because of its sexual element, for this they would consider quite normal and healthy, but because of some character defect in the man which they felt would be detrimental to the boy. In such a world the real power of parents would be much greater than it normally is now, when many boys have to keep their relationships secret.

At present the oppression of a morally condemning society often makes boy-lovers—compelled as they are to hide their sexual inclinations and so driven to promiscuity, threatened as they are with arrest and loss of livelihood—to become nervous, unbalanced and full of internal conflicts, in other words, less able to play a constructive role in the boy's growing up (Matzneff 1977, 142-143). When they are caught and brought to trial, society blames them for the unfortunate personality traits for which itself was responsible. "The day we are free to show openly our affection for the boys and girls we love, we will love them better." (Matzneff 1977, 143).

How much more desirable it would be if society took advantage of the enormous pedagogic potential of boy-love!

188 "A school social worker in a large Northern city was astonished when four brothers all under sixteen years old—young hoodlums, the eldest of whom had been arrested 81 times for stealing, mugging, and other violent offenses against elderly citizens—suddenly calmed down and behaved themselves for two months running. They started attending school regularly and doing good work while there. The social worker reasoned that the explanation must be that some dominant personality had become involved with the young delinquents. Her investigation found that a 'boy-lover' (her term for pederast) had entered into a relationship with the family which was transforming the boys into good citizens. The social worker asked herself: 'Shall I ask the police to tail the man, who is the first constructive influence the boys have let into their lives in two or three years? How important is it to have this type of sex offender arrested, when the result may be a new reign of terror for the elderly of the neighborhood?' " (Rossman 1976, 19-20)

189 In another American city, a man, acting as social worker for the court, achieved miracles in making decent people out of delinquent boys. The community threw a party for him, and at it he was asked to reveal the secret of his success. He was acutely embarrassed, and later he told his wife, "How could I say to them that so many of these boys had been made aggressive and turned criminal by sexual frustration, and that they began to love and trust me only when I began to meet their sexual needs?" Some months later, however, the secret was out. The social worker was sent to prison and the boys resumed their violent activities. This true story was told by an American

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

professor at an international congress of psychiatrists and lawyers at The Hague in 1981, and it is quite similar to another case cited by Rossman (1976, 55).

How many judges of juvenile courts and non-paedophile pedagogues have been able to make boys quit their criminal gangs and throw away their stilettos, as has Jacques de Brethmas and others like him despite being branded by society as "child molesters" and "corruptors of youth"? (De Brethmas 1980, 42)

190 A German surgeon was aware of the fact that his son was having intimate relations with a youth leader, but he did not interfere. When the boy was about 19 he began to show more interest in girls. These, however, did not have a very good influence upon him. "In the old days when he slept with you he behaved much better," the father complained to the youth leader. (Personal communication)

At an age when the boy is still finding his way in life, he easily patterns his behaviour after the man he loves. Therefore the man should carefully consider what the younger partner (the more unsettled, the more vulnerable) may expect of him. There are boys who, in their contacts with paedophiles, are looking only for the joys of sex, and thus are less inclined to enter into a steady relationship with a man. In such cases there is no good reason why the man, if he is similarly inclined, shouldn't pleasure the boy and make love with him. The boy might very well know that, under these circumstances, the adult will the very next day be similarly united himself with one of his comrades. The boy himself will probably be doing the same thing.

But there are also boys seeking to establish deep companionship in love. Sex, although indispensable, is then of secondary importance. If the man feels unable to respond to the boy's deeper needs he should say so at once. It is dishonest for the man to profit from the willingness of the boy to share his body if he is unwilling to share love with him, too, and give the boy what he is seeking. In such cases the boy's disappointment can be extreme (O'Carroll 1980, 172).

In boy-love, too, the nefarious double standard is sometimes encountered: the man insisting that the boy be sexually faithful, creating terrible scenes of jealous rage when he suspects that the youngster isn't, while at the same time permitting himself all kinds of "adventures" on the side. Here the partners really are unequal in their sexual life, just as with heterosexual couples, especially in former times.

The choice as to whether they will have sex just for pleasure or for both pleasure and love should be considered carefully and made consciously. It should be agreed upon by both partners and be equally binding on each.

The common image of the man subduing the child by the force of his adult dominance in order to "sacrifice the child to his lust" is simply ridiculous, especially in the case of bigger, older boys. Modern youths are hardly docile

The Usual Objections

and are certainly not easily compelled to perform acts which they consider repellent. If the child doesn't like the situation he is getting into, he just stays away, or runs away (Pieterse 1982, II-53). Even very young children know perfectly well that one word whispered in the ear of their parents, or to a teacher or to the police would put an end to the man's attentions at once. In no way is the child wholly without power.

But in most cases this word is never spoken. Why? Let us turn for explanation to the report of the Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission (a body to whom boy-lovers are "suspects" and "offenders" and their young friends "victims"): "The suspects gave the children attention and affection which was often lacking in their homes because of parental indifference. More than one victim referred to a suspect as his 'best friend...' in fact, often the relationships established with the offenders seemed, at least at the time, to be the only valid relationships many of the victims ever had had." (1980, 7) Therefore these "abused", "dominated", "piteous" children don't try to escape from their plight. Therefore, on the contrary, they often bring their comrades to the home where they are welcome (Pieterse 1982, II-22). Therefore, rather than reporting, they hide these relationships from their parents and teachers and refuse to talk to the police.

The fact that children like these relationships is not sufficient, of course, to prove they are beneficial (Möller 1983, 100-101). This point we will take up in Chapter Five. Here our concern is simply whether the child feels happy and free in it or dominated and coerced.

In the case of long-term relationships, where deep friendship exists between man and boy, it is unknown for the boy to complain to a third person (Hennig 1979, 162-163; Schult 1978, 120)

191 The same youth leader mentioned in example 190 told me, "During the course of my life I had sex, I believe, with about 800 boys. They are all grown up now. Not a single one of them has ever complained about our intimacies or tried to stop my work with young people. Some of the boys in my group rejected my advances, and then, of course, nothing happened."

In fact only people who do not accept such a refusal and persist in their advances run real risk of having the boy make a complaint. If he does, for the most part it will be his parents he will go to, and parents are the main source of complaints lodged with the police. Otfried Albrecht, analysing "indecent assault" upon children from trial records, found that charges were brought by the child's parents in 57.6% of cases, by the police itself in 16.7%, by eye-witnesses in 6.1%, by youth protection authorities in 4.6%, by colleagues of the accused, mother of another child, neighbours, school staff, each 3%, finally by the child himself or his brother, each in 1.5% of the cases (1964, 272).

Only rarely do conditions reach the point where the child is forced to physically resist. A child knows perfectly well when he is being humiliated and exploited (Rush 1980, 122). Under certain circumstances a child will tolerate on-going abuse of authority, usually because the man who is supposed to protect him is also the aggressor. We will return to this matter later in this chapter; for the present we must stress again that we are dealing here only with relationships which are carried on with the free consent of the boy.

Is it, then, true that the adult man is invariably the most powerful, the dominant partner? Surely this can only be the case when it is the boy who insists the more strongly upon sexual intimacies. But aren't these exactly the conditions which make the sexual activities in no way objectionable? If it is the man who most desires sex, then one should recall a poem by the Arab Shihab Al-Abchichi:

*I'm totally in love with a beggar boy,
But a beggar boy who is so beautiful
That his face is a treasure.
He tells me I'm lowering myself.
This isn't true: it is I who am poor
It is I who begs—for his love.
(Leyland 1977, 128)*

The boy is much more in command of the situation than the man (Hannon 1979, 26). A direct or even scornful refusal is very painful. He who needs the contact most has the least real power (O'Carroll 1980, 147, 173).

- 192 Theo (13 years, 9 months) said that he sometimes misled Bert (35 years, 9 months) and sometimes coerced him when they had sex. In response to the question of when he did that, it appeared that he realised that he could withhold the sexual contact from his older partner and that sex as such could be a tool of power.

"When do you mislead Bert in your love-making?"

"Well, let's say he wants to suck me off or something, and I say it hurts; then I'm tricking him."

"Because it doesn't really hurt?"

"No."

"You also said you sometimes coerced him when you are making love."

"Yes. He'll say, 'Come on, we're going to bed,' and I'll go watch TV or something, and then he'll turn the TV off. And I say, 'If there's no TV I'll go sleep by myself,' and then I get to watch TV a little longer.

(Sandfort 1982, 48-49)

The idea of the helplessly overpowered child, however, was never substantiated when confronted by real research (Sandfort 1981, 57). "Only a person with no experience with children could talk about a youngster's one-sided dependence upon the boy-lover." (Schult 1982, 76)

- 193 A 12-year-old: "When I'm not in the mood I just don't do it, and then he stops, too." His adult friend: "Of course. I love him too much to do anything else." (Berkel 1978, 27)

- 194 A ten-year-old in a broadcast interview: "Sometimes I'm not so much in the mood for it, and sometimes I am. Sometimes I am thinking, 'I don't really want to do it.' And then I can just say so and he won't do it." His mother: "He knows quite a bit about sex; when it comes to making love he's quite aware of what goes on. So he's perfectly capable of deciding how far he wants to go, and I believe he really does decide how far he'll go or not go. I don't need to interfere." (Sandfort 1979, 125)

- 195 (Continued from 94) Conny, looking back at the long-standing relationship which he, at 12, had had with Jan, said later, at age 16, "I felt quite free when we were together. I could do, or not do, just what I wanted. He never condescended to me. I saw him as the kind of friend you'll never find again." (Fuss & Goslinga 1976, 72)

- 196 (Continued from 155) Thomas gives a good explanation of how his relationship with his young friend was shaped: "Yes, we played tennis a lot, we went to movies, to concerts. I was very tractable. A little bit of a grandfather. He decided what we were going to do, because to me it was enough just to be with him. To be with him anywhere where he felt fulfilled and was happy (...) I always let them be completely free, just so I can be with them and they are happy. I let them carry on any activity they want."

"Did you ever feel that these decisions limited your freedom?"

"No, because actually the choice is always mine. If, for instance, he tells me he wants to see a movie, I choose the movie. And if I want to go to a concert I take into account his tastes and my tastes both and choose accordingly.

"Do you choose or does he?"

"We consider both of our tastes. He decides the kind of thing we are going to do and I decide how we're going to do it."

(Hennig 1979, 143)

Sandfort analysed 25 cases of 10-16-year-old boys involved in sexually expressed friendships. They associated with their relationships such affective concepts as "fine", "jolly", "content", "free", and, slightly less often, "safe". Negative feelings were seldom associated with the sexual activities, and when they were they related to fear of discovery, etc., never to the sex itself. This fear, incidentally, tends to make man and boy feel like accomplices and increases their sense of equality (Schärer & Hocquenghem 1976, 34).

The ancient Greeks had a far clearer idea of what happens in such relationships than many a modern child psychologist worrying about the oppression of the boy. They conceived of the beautiful boy as a lion and the man as his prey (Dover 1978, 58). Plato confessed he felt this way (Koch-Harnack 1983, 200). On Attic vases the loving man "is nearly always represented as a supplicating figure standing with bent knees in front of the boy he admires and gripping the boy's chin and genitals entreatingly." (Koch-Harnack 1983, 52, 68) Some of these drawings show the boy apparently

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

accepting the man's courtship and exhibiting his naked beauty; some, on the other hand, show him refusing, with such written comments as "Leave me alone" or "Stop", with the boy covering his genitals (Koch-Harnack 1983, 53, 72, 75-76). Zeus may have been frequently unfaithful to Hera but he never was to Ganymede; in fact he never dared contradict the boy (Buffière 1980, 357). On a stamnos in Oxford Ganymede, opening wide his cloak, exhibits his naked body to Zeus who is kneeling devotedly in front of him (Koch-Harnack 1983, 233-234). Xenophon deplores the boy's presumptuous attitude which stems from the youngster's sense of superiority (Koch-Harnack 1983, 220). There are many epigrams about a man being enslaved by the boy he loves. We will cite just one, by Meleagros:

"I was still untouched by love, but suddenly Myiskos, with his eyes, shot his arrow straight into my heart, and cried, 'See how I break his pride, and the fierce regal wisdom of his face I trample in the dust with my feet!' When I could breathe again I said, 'What do you want of me, my beloved? Didn't Eros make even Zeus step down from Olympus?' " (*Anthologia Graeca* xii, 101)

Two thousand years later we hear this echoed by the English poet Nicholson rhapsodising about his beloved Victor: "I can be his slave, and he'll behave as Prince with charming grace." (D'Arch Smith 1970, 128)

"The boys usually control these relationships. Both in initiating them and in continuing them. They control what kind of sexual acts are performed, they control when the sex will take place, and they have just as much control as the man over when the relationship will end. These are probably among the most democratic of all relationships, despite the age disparities and the risks for the man," says Thorstad (1981, 21), a founding member of NAMBLA. In a case study published by Wilson & Cox (1983, 78), the man declares, "All my kids have one word they can use with me, 'no', and if they say 'no', that's it, and they know this. They can use the veto if they want to." Sandfort's research in many instances confirmed such assertions. Some examples from his research into what adults told him:

197 Jan: "Sometimes I'm in the mood to have a nice session in bed with him. But when he's not in the mood, then, of course, it doesn't happen. However, when he's in the mood and I'm not, I do what he wants."

Frans: "I propose and he decides. He sets the limits."

Mark: "What takes place depends on the child."

Ton: "He basically decides what will happen and how far we'll go. I can try to persuade him, at least very cautiously, like, 'Maybe we can go just a little farther...' But if he says 'no', it is no."

"Isn't this hard on you?"

The Usual Objections

"No. Well, yes, at times, in certain situations, I have the feeling he's deceiving me a bit. But I respect it. It's his choice. I think you just have to adjust to this."

So it is the boy in such relationships who decides whether sex will take place and, if so, what kind of acts he wants, permits or rejects (Sandfort 1980, 190, 194). It is of utmost importance that the boy be able to order the man to stop doing something he doesn't like.

198 John Valentine, an American boy-lover, says on this point, "Every time I have ever been offered genuine resistance, I have withdrawn. Whenever I have been told, 'Stop that'—alas—I have stopped. I'm easily deterred. I suspect this is true of most people, certainly for most people in my field. A resistance that doesn't stop *me* needs redefining." (1972, 22)

The reader who keeps in mind what was said in Chapter Two about the paramount importance for the boy-lover of the boy's pleasure in sex will understand how any other response would be in flagrant contradiction to this. If a particular sex act disgusts the boy and deprives him of all the pleasant feelings he should be experiencing, the act is not suitable for the loving man to perform. This is another guarantee of the younger partner's freedom of decision.

Sandfort found that the picture he formed from the adult partner, and had confirmed later by the boy, of their sexual contacts did not in the least coincide with the usual picture psychologists and psychiatrists have drawn for us in their professional reports. It is a pity that these people (and all others who present the theoretical figments of their imaginations as fact) are never present when a man and his young friend go to bed together. A look at what happens there, and how it happens, could dispel a lot of mental fog.

Modern youth is not so sweet and docile as to put up with everything adults want to do with him. "They have bad manners and despise all authority. They don't respect older people. They would rather chatter than learn. At home, children today are tyrants rather than servants." This complaint was made by Socrates, who died in 399 BC (quoted by Hoffmeyer 1971, I-232). It would seem that youth (and it's elderly judges) have changed little in the course of 23 centuries!

The criticism of dominating the child and restricting his freedom, made so unjustly of boy-lovers, should be turned instead against those who utter it. With all of their laws and prohibitions, they undeniably protect the child's freedom to say 'no' to any sexual approach—and we cannot criticise them for that—but they deprive him of the parallel freedom, the right to say 'yes'! They have given the child freedom only in a negative sense (Baumann 1983, 53-54). "It is simply assumed that children cannot give consent to a sexual act and that any such act is always harmful. However, this view is irrational and oppressive."

(Haerberle 1978, 355) Parents are not allowed to cut off their son's hand, so why are they permitted to cut off his sexuality? (Duvert 1980, 126)

"It is incredible. In our society a 14-year-old is forbidden to make love with whom he wants, and if, despite the prohibition, this accidentally happens, everything is done to persuade him that he was coerced by a wicked man and that, in order to punish this criminal, he should report him, lodge a complaint and sue him for damages. If laws are to be consistent they must be logical too. If a boy is incapable of giving his consent, why, then is he capable of refusing his consent? Why won't people listen to him when he says, 'I wanted it,' just as they listen to him when he says, 'I didn't want it?'" (Boulin 1977, 183-184)

The child under the legal age of consent is not free; he is subject to anti-sexual force. When boy-lovers fight to set him free, to emancipate him, they are accused of being hypocrites, of not really caring about the child's freedom, only their own freedom to seduce children without being threatened by the law. This accusation is hardly based upon reason, for the emancipated child is much more capable of rejecting an unwelcome approach than is the "properly educated", disciplined child who has been brought up to obey and so doesn't dare cross his uncle, the family friend, his teacher, scout master, football coach (Duvert 1980, 169-170; Constantine 1981, 240; Wright 1980, 107, 109; Geiser 1979, 163; Baumann 1979, 106).

An experienced psychiatrist, Dr. Maas, once observed in this connection: "I believe that children, in knowing what is beneficial to them, err less than adults. I also believe that most children experience these things without being compelled. Compulsion and aggression do exist, of course, but they are in no way characteristic of paedophilia." (Rogier 1973, 48)

Not all of his colleagues would share his opinion. There are psychiatrists—and lawyers who prepare legislation have taken their side—who claim that consent by the child is impossible and so this possibility does not have to be taken into consideration. The child is simply not able to give consent; any *apparent* consent he might give is invalid, thus sexual activity with a child of any kind is equivalent to rape. One could even say that it's worse where the child actually gives what he believes to be his consent, for this proves to what extent the poor victim has been mentally corrupted by the perpetrator. It is not denied that children often actually seduce adults and solicit sexual activity, but this only shows to what an extent they must already have been traumatised, manipulated. No child really wants sex with an adult, according to these psychiatrists; even if the boy says 'yes' what he really means is 'no'.

At this point the discussion becomes rather comic. First, the child *couldn't* have said 'yes'. Then, when it appeared that he actually had said 'yes', he *couldn't* have been expressing his real feelings (Sebban 1980, 291-292). And the child is subject to all this disbelief only so that he might be honoured and his liberty defended. Out of our profound respect for the child we cannot believe

anything he says. Only when he accuses a man is the child speaking the truth. When he is a witness for the defence he lies. So we can see that every declaration of the child is manipulated by such psychiatrists in order to make it conform to their preconceived theories. And they call this defending the child against the manipulation of his consent!

One psychiatrist of this species quite seriously said that in a perfect world every child would have at his side his own psychiatrist to interpret what he said (Dolto 1979, 71, 74, 80-81, 84). An ideal world indeed... for psychiatrists!

"The Child Is Manipulated"

This is not to say, however, that children cannot be manipulated. They can, even grossly so. Research shows that young people often just copy the opinions on many subjects of their parents. A majority say they are in favour of the family system, even when their families oppress them—and a few even say that their parents give them too much freedom and they would like to be subject to more discipline (Schärer 1979, 148-150; Instituut voor Toegepaste Sociologie 1977, 101). In Chapter Three we have already described sex-negative indoctrination and the feelings of anxiety it causes. There are few things sadder than the sight of children cruelly and systematically battered by their parents declaring that they brought the punishment on themselves by their bad and annoying behaviour. Certainly in bringing up a child a great deal of manipulation is used, and this is generally accepted. Only when the manipulation concerns sex is it suddenly perceived to be so detrimental to his well-being.

And yet nowhere else may it be so unsuccessful. Research by the American psychologist Joan Esserman on the effectiveness of television programs showed that children were not so easily influenced in matters of taste. The enormous popularity of Popeye never induced many children to like spinach. Similarly it is not possible for a man to convince a boy that sexual contact with him would be pleasant if the boy doesn't already think so himself. He would either find it to his taste, like ice-cream, or not so, like spinach. No ruse, no manipulation will be successful in changing his taste.

- 199 Jean-Claude (34 years old), one of Leonetti's subjects, declares: "I have had sex with about 150 boys. With some my friendships extended over ten years. I can state unequivocally that none were one-sided. You always hear—this is pure pretence on the part of psychiatrists, doctors and judges—that the children are subjected to pressure. Based on my experience I can say this is absolutely untrue. Even if you are a teacher, as I was, and you invite a pupil over to visit you, he may come one time, but if he doesn't like it there he won't come back. If he does return it is because he feels a need to do so. Children experience their sexuality in a passive manner, and thus the sexual relationship enables them to discover their body and their sexuality. If you respect this,

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

you limit yourself to fondling them, because they really desire nothing else.” (Leonetti 1978, 163-164)

Wilson and Cox quote Rex, a boy-lover: “ ‘Children know instinctively what is good for them, and therefore a paedophilic relationship is hardly likely to be psychologically damaging. The child must be respected and allowed to take any initiative he wants to.’ Rex views the child as a person rather than a ‘mere child’ and the paedophilic relationship as a two-way situation with both parties contributing and benefiting.” (1983, 73)

In everyday life adults frequently show little enough concern over whether the child will consent to something or not. They say, “You’re going to do this!” “Parents especially are prone to confuse their right to voice their own convictions with the right to impose these upon their offspring; their right to live according to their own convictions with their right to compel their children to live according to them too. With no other alternative than to live with their family, subject to parental control, parental will, parental ethics and life style, dependent upon family circumstances, culture, religious beliefs, ideals, prejudices, hatreds, intents, children see themselves permanently subject to unlimited compulsion. Were they not under such pressure, threatened with deprivation of love or food, blackmailed about their futures and given an occasional box on the ears, what really would be left of one’s right to bring up one’s children in the way one would wish?” (Duvert 1980, 122)

Modern education, Duvert says elsewhere with biting sarcasm, maintains “that in a democracy everybody is entitled to the free development of his own personality, but that—if you wish to be happy and develop yourself properly—it is better to behave just like everyone else. A twisted mind like mine, however, turns up a number of interesting implications of this truth. If a man whose tendencies deviate from those of the others is rejected by them, this means that such properly developed people (going along with the crowd) enjoy persecuting those who behave differently. A curious demonstration of their proper development! Consequently it is necessary for happiness to destroy others and to value a person as the better developed, balanced and normal to the degree that he is intolerant, malevolent, discriminating and stupid. Is it because the majority really has discovered the key to happiness that you have to behave like everybody, or simply because of its brutal dominance that an outside position inflicts more suffering than a position within? The educators keep silent on this question. But they use words like equality, health, justice, liberty, wisdom; they tell us on which side you’ll find these virtues; they tell us which side has the unexpected right to treat other people brutally and without mercy; but they don’t tell us that the key to human happiness, in any society where you may live, consists in belonging to the least intelligent crowd, in howling with the worst wolves in the wood, and in rallying to the side of the strong. They don’t

The Usual Objections

dare say this openly, but their pupils understand them well enough.” (Duvert 1976, 209-210)

Jacques de Brethmas dreams of a children’s revolution: “How many lashes of the whip, how many blows, how much more caning will there have to be before this happens? How much thrashing, go-to-bed-without-your-supper, don’t touch your thing!, how many hostile teachers, long hours of being kept after school or even of confinement, of being ordered to stand at attention ‘in shorts in the snow’, of fingers cracked with a ruler, of early masses before day-break on an empty stomach in a cold chapel, of being tortured by having to kneel on a ruler, of having to make humiliating confessions, of degrading penances, of ‘Don’t do this; don’t do that!’, of ‘Do what your father does,’ of ‘Get your hair cut,’ of ‘Can’t you behave like other people!’, of ‘That’s for grown-ups, not children,’ of ‘Say good morning nicely to Mrs. X,’; how much more moral crippling, injured self-respect, humiliation, abuse of power?” (1980, 180)

Rousseau was the godfather of our pedagogical thinking. In his *Emile* he told teachers, “Let the child feel that he is weak and that you are strong, that because of his circumstances and yours he is of necessity entirely at your mercy; let him know this, let him learn this, let him feel this, let him experience early in life upon his resisting shoulders the hard yoke nature places upon mankind, the heavy yoke of necessity under which every mortal being must toil...; a ‘no!’ should be a brass barrier against which he may waste his energy five or six times trying to defy and then never try again.” (quoted by Schérer 1974, 21-22)

Would things be different after the decline of the bourgeoisie, the fall of capitalistic society? It is said that Makarenko, the leading pedagogue of Soviet Russia, based his educational principles entirely on prison regulations (Schérer 1974, 46).

René Schérer says modern middle-class society put together a concept of the child as a mixture of infantilism, subjectivity, cruelty, arbitrary behaviour, complacency, forcing senseless tastes upon others and manic repetition. And so this pedagogic philosopher distrusts the motives of those who work in this disagreeable field: they are either people luxuriating in their power or dominance over lesser and immature creatures, or child-lovers. Sometimes they are both. “Any desire to educate is a perverted paederastic desire.” (1974, 192, 195)

To what extent is the liberty of the child respected at home, at school, in religious instruction, by the law? The child is often ordered about in the cruelest way (Kameneff 1979, 93). Children are perceived and treated as their parents’ property, even if the father no longer has the right, as he did in Roman antiquity, to sell them into slavery or to kill them (Borneman 1978, 1032, 1042). It is only in his relationship with a loving man that the boy can say, “I don’t want to know you any more.” “Inside the strictures of the family and the state the child has no power of consent or dissent. (...) Yet they can cry ‘abuse of power’

at an adult with whom the child can actually choose to see or not to see, to know or not to know, to love or not to love. A strange logic." (CAPM 1980, 25)

It is always supposed that an adult involved in an educational association with young people is able to maintain his superiority in a responsible way. Only where sex comes into the picture is this thought impossible (Sandfort 1980, 195). Why? Perhaps because the relationship of the heterophile adult to a boy is always one of dominance; therefore such an adult simply cannot imagine a situation in which a loving man can deal with his young friend without resorting to power (Duvert 1980, 144).

Young people themselves are less concerned, even in situations where the adult partner has considerable authority over the younger and might easily abuse it. In an inquiry among French grammar school pupils it appeared that over 78% of them saw no objection to love relationships between teachers and students (Schérier 1979, 103).

200 Twelve-year-old Frank said: "The swimming instructor had touched my penis several times under the water. Later he came into my cubicle and locked the door from the inside. We took off our swimming trunks and compared our penises. His was larger; he showed me how it looked when he drew back the foreskin. Then he asked me if I knew how you 'did it' with yourself. I told him not exactly. So he showed me how you rubbed your penis with your hand in order to make it come. I tried that, but nothing came out. I was real disappointed, and he told me he couldn't understand it because I already had hair down there. Then he took me to his home. There we undressed and he started doing it to me, and suddenly I came. I was glad and I asked him to do it again right away. But he laughed and told me you couldn't come again so soon afterwards. He now wanted to put his penis in my arse; I wouldn't let him do that, but I did let him put it between my legs until he came (Stieber 1971, 52).

201 Vincent, a 19-year-old German boy who spent his whole childhood in youth homes, wrote, "I was beaten often, right up until I was sixteen, but even worse was the humiliation I endured at 13 or 14 from the Sisters. Sister Theresa, the head nun, always watched when I took a shower. The hot water usually gave me a quick hard-on, and then her face would go red. She always checked me over for dirt. One time she found some—I hadn't washed my neck—and she took me to the bath tub, with me thinking, 'Just like a little boy!' There she gave me a good scrubbing—after locking the door. She was just horny because I had a long cock. Afterwards she grabbed a sponge. 'Stand up, boy!'—I can still hear her saying it. She kept rubbing me with this real soapy sponge between my legs. She was doing it from behind me and she kept touching my thing, and it went stiffer than hell. Then she said, 'Now, turn around, boy!' I found this terribly embarrassing. 'Come on, turn around. You don't have to be ashamed, not when you're in a home.' I turned around, and when she saw my long hard-on she ran away, crossed herself and roared, 'Now into the shower! Right away!' Even after I'd rinsed off her face was red with fear. Then she asked me whether I had unchaste thoughts and whether I did it to myself very often. I didn't want to answer. So she gave me a beating. I just accepted it. Because I thought if I fought back they'd just send me to another home, which would be worse and a long ways away from my

friends. She made me hop to her like a frog. She said, 'Come here. Quick!' I was still naked. She took up a thick stick and said, 'This will drive away your sins.' I had to bend over the bathtub and got ten cuts on my bare arse. I'll never forget that shitty nun. Afterwards we got male teachers. They couldn't control us without beatings, either."

Vincent gives some examples of this treatment and we will return to them later in the chapter. Finally a new teacher came to the home. "He became my friend. We called him Timmy. He was the one who set me free. When he had dormitory duty one night he took me from my cubicle and led me to his room. I was just 16 but I'd never had any experience of this sort, so I was enormously curious to see just what he would do. It was love right from the beginning. We immediately started kissing, fondling. I promised not to tell anyone, and he promised my life in the home would be better from now on. Pretty soon he told me, 'Vincent, I love you so much, will you do something for me just out of love?' I said I would gladly. Then he said, 'I would like to see you completely naked.' He was wearing corduroy trousers and he made me sit naked on his knees. He fondled me and said, 'You have a nice long cock, my boy.' He wanted to suck it, and that was very sexy. We had from one o'clock to five to ourselves. He went to the bathroom and returned with a handful of cold cream. He kept asking, 'Do you love me? Can you keep a secret?' Then he really started in. 'Kneel upon my bed, with your head down and your behind in the air.' I did as I was told. He saw some weals on my buttocks and said, 'You'll never be beaten with the stick again.' This was all terribly exciting to me, and I wanted to abandon myself to him out of love. Since I had just turned 16 and was still really naive, he went about it very carefully. (...) I felt exactly how Timmy spread my buttocks with two fingers and put one finger of the other hand into my opening, getting everything nice and greasy. This was terribly exciting, very sexy, and it went on for quite a while. I had to keep my arse high, and this was quite a turn-on for him. He whispered, 'Don't worry about anything. Just think about love, Vincent, my dear pupil!' I'll never forget that night. I saw my teacher also had a nice long cock, for suddenly he too had undressed. Then he put it into me, whispering, 'Oh, my dear, dear boy, sweet lad, oh how I love you! How I love fucking you!' It was a delicious experience. I'll never forget it. He repeated it twice, once with me bending over, once with my legs over my head.

It happened another time when I had to clean his room. I now had love instead of lashes, and my first friend. From then on everything went well for me in that home. Isn't this maybe one way to teach? If the teacher is acting with love he won't have to beat his pupils very much; if he has love he won't need a stick. After this happened with Timmy I became a model student. He passed the word to all of the other teachers, and nobody hurt me any more. They didn't have the faintest idea how he'd gotten the result he had. I was completely under his spell—and he fucked me many, many times! Being fucked made me come, too—and very nicely. It's all a great mystery, but I remember it with enormous pleasure, this teacher who was so good to me. He took me under his wing, and then everything went O.K. I did everything I did out of love for him..." (Personal Communication)

Such relationships, however, can create substantial problems. If a youth leader starts a love affair with a boy who is a member of his group and the two of them are unable to hide their feelings, the other boys can become so angry and

jealous that they turn on their mate and make his life miserable, and the leader, too, can experience a lessening of his authority. Such situations in educational institutions, borstals, reform schools, etc. require a great deal of discretion. The inmates are for the most part starved for affection; they long for tenderness and love. An encounter with a boy-lover teacher may, as Straver and Geeraert (1980, 111) affirm, "be, for them, a positive experience, a rich educational experience." On a daily basis miracles occur: boys long regarded as problem children suddenly start behaving, going back to school, regaining their sense of confidence, becoming happy, losing their aggression—only because they have found a man responsive to their need for tenderness. But the group leader is faced with the problem of how not to neglect the others and not let the beloved boy manage to dominate him in a dangerous way. Many make the mistake of treating their loved ones either too leniently or too strictly. Long neglected boys lose the capacity to establish proper human relationships; they simply cannot deal with such a situation; they are liable to act in ways that appear to adults as guileful and disloyal. For how can anybody be loyal who has never experienced loyalty?

We have seen, then, that the usual blanket objections to man/boy relationships are invalid. There are, nevertheless, situations which can render them risky or even undesirable. We will now examine a few of them.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

Incest

A special case of problems arising in connection with authority is incest: sexual relations with members of the family. Incest is often called the last and strongest taboo. Yet all students of the subject agree that in the real world it is not all that rare (Geisler 1959, 5; Wegner, 38; Righton 1981, 30; Taylor 1981, 11). But there is often only silence surrounding its occurrence. This silence favours its frequency and impedes its detection (Geisler 1979, 47; Walters 1982, 56; Maisch 1968, 63; Baumann 1963, 656-666; Linedecker 1981, 94-95; Janus 1981, 128; Hearings of Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 362).

This phenomenon was recognised as long ago as in Greek Antiquity. The poet Strato addressed a handsome boy:

*Hello! Who crowned you with roses?
Your lover? How fortunate, then, he is!
Or was it your father?
Well, he too has an eye for beauty!
(Anthologia XXII, 189)*

"The number of undiscovered sexual relations between kindred is very high. Incest may be taboo, but it is a taboo violated on all social levels to an enormous degree." (Stieber 1971, 1960; Nelson 1981, 164, 172) American statistics have unveiled the fact that 25% of all children have incestuous contacts in their homes (Kurier 13 Jan, 1984).

Where, as in contemporary society, the family as an institution is so hotly defended and such bitter struggles are fought for its preservation, the reason might well be that it is the last refuge where a sensual relationship with a child is still possible (Schärer 1979, 175). For many adults it is absolutely necessary to be tender with children, and here it is permitted. Children respond avidly (Summit & Kryso 1981, 113). In the beginning they see no difference between culturally acceptable expressions of tenderness and sexuality—simply because they have no well-defined concept of sexuality. "The consciousness of being a desired sexual object by no means always upsets children or makes them ashamed," is the opinion of many psychiatrists, says Stieber (1971, 162). Actually a child just doesn't see himself as a "sexual object". He becomes aware that he is "desired", and that is sufficient. Nor is it true that parent-child incest indicates a breakdown of family discipline. Theoretically the one would seem to follow the other, but in the real world this fear has proven to be unfounded (Symonds 1981, 160-161).

Let us summarise Stieber, omitting his description of the emotional aspects, as he follows the usual evolution of an incestuous relationship. 1) Seduction, playful caresses, initiating all kinds of sexual activities up to complete sexual intercourse. 2) A pause of one to three months. Renewed impulse to come together again, resumption of sexual activities which become less inhibited even if there are still moral reservations. 3) A short pause, during which both parties desire a resumption of activities; when this happens the child for the first time participates actively. 4) Ever more frequent activities, desired by both partners. The child is now sexually conscious and satisfied. 5) Ever greater intimacy and often real love-making, until all acts are explored. This close relationship may last for several years. 6) The child finds a "normal" lover and suddenly turns away from the partner, who becomes obnoxious to the child in scenes of jealousy. Finally there is betrayal; often a complaint is lodged; it may even end in murder or suicide (1971, 164-166).

If we reflect for a moment on this recital, we are struck by the fact that nowhere is the situation considered tragic or horrid except in the final phase. But here Stieber is caught in his own contradictions: if, as he maintains, there is "an enormous amount of incest on all social levels", there would also be, assuming phase 6 is commonly reached, a deluge of jealous fights, complaints, murders and suicides. Actually statistics show no great quantity of such complaints. So it is best to confine ourselves to an examination of phases one to five.

Again, there is nothing horrid here. And so we can understand why, during the international "Symposium on Family Sexuality" held in 1980 at the University of Minnesota, researchers James Ramey, Warren Farrell and Joan Nelson advocated a revision of traditional opinion on this matter and said it was not realistic to put every case of incest on par with child abuse. Their research had shown that 80% of the people concerned had positive memories. An American sexologist told his colleagues he was very disturbed to discover in his research that many benefits, in fact, ensued from incestuous relationships. Recent research, then, shows that there is no reason to view incest in itself as very different from any other kind of sexual relationship; it is neither more nor less damaging than intercourse with persons not belonging to the family; everything depends upon the conditions under which it all takes place (Constantine 1981, 238).

It is rather the *fear* of incest which creates havoc. Helmut Ostermeyer, a judge from 1952 on, juvenile judge for ten years and, since 1977, a judge for family affairs, wrote: "lack of sexual knowledge and inhibitions between adults and children result from an age-old tradition of suppressing impulses. Masturbation is no longer prohibited, but the natural physical tenderness and attraction between parents and children is still universally repressed and put under the incest taboo. (...) If we don't eradicate the taboo on the incest complex we will never have a trouble-free sexual evolution." (Ostermeyer 1978, 126). We have already cited Wainwright Churchill's opinion (1967, 160) that the emotional coldness and hardness of American boys is due to the homophobia of American men; fathers are fearful of touching, let alone hugging, their sons and so giving them the tenderness they need to grow into loving, feeling human beings (cf. Gundersen *et al.* 1981, 51).

And yet "it is quite common and probably normal for parents occasionally to have sexual feelings for their children. The younger they are, the more most children need, and provoke, loving physical contact, which at moments may become eroticised for the parents." (Janus 1981, 105; Martinson 1981, 4) "All parents, at some time, and at some level of consciousness or unconsciousness, have experienced sexual feelings toward an opposite-sex child." (Hass 1979, 164) Wolters, a Dutch psychologist, thinks it is of utmost importance to make it clear to parents that they may have physical and sexual sensations in their daily contact with their children (1982, 24). Françoise Dolto, a well-known French psychiatrist, states as fact that many mothers (and at times the grandparents or the father) can, strictly speaking, be called pederasts in their behaviour towards their offspring (quoted by Schérer 1978, 42). It is not rare for mothers to experience complete orgasm from their babies' breast-suckling; many feel troubled and guilty over this quite normal phenomenon (Haeberle 1978, 87; Möller 1983, 19; Bieber 1962, 52; Cohen-Matthysen 1982 37;

Presland 1981, 77). Freud caused a scandal by declaring that he saw little difference between parental love and sexual love and by describing the child's affection for those who attend to his needs as essentially sexual (Borneman 1978, 514; Freud 1920, 92).

The interdiction of incest is strongest against parent-child relations and weakest against sexual contacts between brothers, a very common occurrence (Barrington 1981, 125-126). In the Yankowski research not less than 62% of the male subjects reported having made sexual experiments with a brother (1965, 93). Only 22% of a sample of boys reported it as unpleasant (Finkelhor 1981, 139). The best description in fictional literature of such a love between older and younger brothers was given by Agustín Gomez-Arcos in his novel *L'agneau carnivore* (1975). See also Wood and Geasland's *Twins* (1977).

202 Wegner (1953, 38) reports the case of a 17-year-old boy who performed anal intercourse upon his 10-year-old brother in the presence of their 13-year-old sister. The girl then asked him to do the same to her, and he had intercourse with her while the younger boy looked on.

203 In the February 1982 issue of *Fag Rag* a 35-year-old married man, father of a 13-year-old son, told of his early sexual experiences with five of his six brothers. The first time was when he was 12 years old. His 19-year-old soldier brother was taking a shower and caught him peeking. "His cock was the biggest I'd ever seen—over 13 inches long and 8 inches around. 'You tryin' to get a look at my dick?' I said nothing. I was pretty scared by now. He stared at me for a few minutes before I realised that he was getting hard. He then straddled my face, sitting on my chest and pinning my arms with his thighs. His dick was just touching my face without him even moving forward. He rubbed his dick across my lips, telling me to open my mouth. I refused and he gently but firmly put his hand behind my head and pushed my face into his groin. I remember how clean but special (unique?) the aroma was. His cock was roaring hard by now. He pulled my head back and pushed his cock in my mouth. I didn't resist this time. I could only get a few inches in my mouth. He stroked it just a few times and suddenly came in my mouth. (...) I loved it and wanted more. (...) After the 1st sexual encounter, he was warm and protective. Before the sex he was indifferent."

Melanie Klein, the famous child psychiatrist, thinks that sex play between siblings has a positive influence on their further evolution (Baurmann 1983, 168). This is confirmed by Finkelhor (1981, 143) and Symonds (1981, 157).

There are few reliable data on sex between mother and son (Baurmann 1983, 65; Geiser 1979, 43), but its frequent occurrence in fiction shows its general appeal. It is an important part of the cults of most matriarchal religions and of Greek mythology (Borneman 1978, 665, 670, 809, 810, 891, 892). Janus (1982, 134) mentions a "case of a father forcing a son to copulate with his mother while the father watches." The Amsterdam Children's Telephone over a period of 29 weeks in 1984 had 675 emergency calls about incest, 27 from boys. Of

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

these, 12 had been abused by their mothers, 11 by a sister and one by his father (Scheepmaker 1985). Louis Malle's movie *Le souffle au coeur* (1971) portrays mother-son incest as a tender secret and wonderful initiation of a 15-year-old boy. In an inquiry into cases of incest in upper-class families, 26 instances of mother-son relations were reported by the 109 subjects (Symonds *et al.* 1981, 154).

This form of incest was common among the nobility during the Middle Ages (Armand 1931, 158), and in some parts of Indonesia (for example, the Kalang on Java) and Africa (Taite) it still receives moral approval (Van Camp 1983, 81; Bloch 1912, 56).

"For the very reason that she is the original love object of all her children, it is easy for a mother to go on to bind a young son close to her in an erotic liaison which appears to be 'normal' mother love." (Janus 1981, 94) In a famous English court case, the mother declared, "If it is necessary for a boy to do such things, it is better that he does so at home." (Borneman 1978, 667) In other instances mothers have justified their relations with their 14-year-old sons as "sexual instruction". (Symonds 1981, 160)

204 Walter, a 16-year-old, told how, as a very small child, he was given to his grandparents to bring up when his mother, after her divorce, remarried and went to live in Australia. She returned to Germany on leave at the time of his 15th birthday. "My mother at first seemed like a stranger to me. She looked very young despite her 40 years, but we liked each other right from the start. The first night we slept in the same room at grandmother's house and she whispered to me to come to her bed. I got up, went to her and asked what she wanted. She then embraced me and kissed me. I kissed her, too, without thinking about it, just as any boy might do who hadn't seen his mother for such a long time. But suddenly she drew me to her under the covers. Her hand sought my member. She caressed me there over and over again, until I completely lost my self-control. We had intercourse, and I did it three times. From then on I lived with my mother like husband and wife—and without my grandmother having the least suspicion. Neither my mother nor I ever forced each other. Quite the contrary: by afternoon we could hardly restrain ourselves. Finally it would be night and time for bed. (...) Throughout her entire visit, which lasted about nine months, we did it with each other... how often?... nearly every night."

Ultimately the affair was discovered and the mother was sentenced to two years of imprisonment. (Stieber 1971, 35)

If a mother is deeply involved with her child this is generally thought to be in her child's best interest. The moment, however, sex is involved, everybody is convinced of the opposite. Why this exception? (Bendig 1979, 11) The child for his part often responds to his mother's care with overt sexual excitement.

205 "I started masturbating when I was ten or eleven, and I remember clearly getting

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

erections in the water while my mother and aunt were bathing me, and yet it didn't bother them." (Janus 1981, 97)

206 "I can remember once when I was very little lying in bed with my mother, holding her, and feeling myself get an erection. (...) I wasn't even ten years old, but she didn't seem to mind at all; she just hugged me and kept me with her that night the same as always." (Janus 1981, 101)

The taboo on mother/son incest is stronger than on father/daughter relations (Borneman 1978, 669; Fraser 1981, 48). In some cultures the latter is a legal obligation: the father has to deflower his daughter before marriage (Maisch 1968, 24). For the purposes of this book, relations between father and son, doubly tabooed, are especially important. They are generally held to be much less frequent (Fisher & Howell 1970), but a distinguished student in this field, Prof. Van der Kwast, believed they were less rare than is commonly supposed (1970, 93). In Germany 5% of reported incest cases fall into this category (Geiser 1979, 45). This opinion is shared by Dixon (Fraser 1981, 49-50; Barrington 1981, 108). An analysis of 100 child abuse cases in California revealed that 14 of them concerned boys, and 12 of these boys had had relations with their fathers or stepfathers (Linedecker 1981, 98).

For some fathers the gender doesn't seem important. In one case a father had sex with all of his seven children: three sons and four daughters, their mother being fully aware of all that went on (Van Camp 1983, 90). But the father/son relationship is in general markedly different from father/daughter incest, for in the latter the girl is usually a substitute, which points toward a pseudo paedophile situation (Lochtenberg 1981, 4; Sandfort 1980, 185). If we overlook his biased terminology and emotive judgements we could agree with Stieber when he writes: "No father freely abandons his incest victim. There is a real difference here with other seducers of the young who, after a certain length of time or upon the young person reaching a certain age, show no further interest in their victims." (1971, 166) Few fathers or mothers are real paedophiles, therefore the sexual attraction inspired by their offspring will tend to increase with the opposite-sex child's growing up. Father/son incest, on the other hand, might more often be caused by real boy-love and will thus lessen as the son grows older. This may have been the case with the erotic attraction Thomas Mann felt for his 15-year-old son Klaus (Nugteren 1983, 71).

Dr. Bernard quotes a 12-year-old who told him, "If my father did it with me I wouldn't mind at all, but I wouldn't like to do it with my mother." (1979, 18) A highly intelligent, sturdy and sport-minded German 15-year-old told me that he would like to have sex with both of his parents, since as far as he was concerned this was the most wonderful expression of love.

Some examples:

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

207 A Los Angeles father fought against his increasing desire to have sex with his son. He resolved his conflict by visiting a boy's brothel and, while satisfying his needs, fantasised that it was his own son he was embracing.

208 G. A. Awad saw a Canadian 14-year-old whose father had sex with him three times over a period of a month and a half. The activities varied from fondling of the genitals to anal intercourse, which the boy permitted. Each time the father had been drunk; with the loosening of his inhibitions, long-repressed sexual tendencies asserted themselves (1976, 78).

Another instance is Barrington (1981, 26).

209 Fraser (1981, 43) mentions a case in which a father had anal intercourse with his 10-year-old son, who had crawled into his bed, as well as an older son. Geiser (1979, 70) cites a case of a boy being anally used by his father and five brothers.

210 Ernest discovered the following graffiti in French public toilets: "I am a widower, 33 years old. For the last three years I have been sleeping with my son; he is now 14. In bed he is truly a woman." "I'm 34. I jerk off and suck off my 14-year-old son. He comes into my mouth four times a day. I swallow every bit of it. Yesterday I fucked him." Whether fact or fiction, such texts bear witness to real desires (1979, 198).

211 An English Lord was prostrated with grief when his beloved wife died in an auto accident. Their only child, a 15-year-old boy, returned from his school for the funeral. The next night the son was unable to sleep, so he stepped into the bathroom for a glass of water, and there he heard his father sobbing. He went to his father and crawled into bed and tried to console him. Both habitually slept in the nude so both were now naked. In the tenderness of his son's embrace the father found himself becoming sexually aroused—and so did the son. Their caresses became more and more intimate and impassioned until they finally climaxed in orgasmic fusion. This experience was so enthralling for both of them that they regularly repeated it, so forging a closer than ever tie with each other. (Personal communication)

212 The initiative may come from the boy. The Swedish monthly *Revolt* (July 1972) wrote about a 15-year-old boy who always tried to creep into his father's bed in order to grasp the man's penis and suck it.

213 One of Stekel's patients remembered how, when he was a boy, "his father jumped from his bed to discipline one of his brothers. His father's imposing genitals swung to and fro while this was going on. It impressed him deeply." The man wrote: "I now remember often having had the burning desire to play with those genitals, to take the big phallus in my hand and fondle those giant balls which rolled back and forth so neatly and easily. To me my father's genitals were absolutely enormous, things to be admired..." (1925, 516-517)

214 Among the Parisian graffiti (see example 210) were a few written by sons: "When

I was 15 I let my father fuck me." "My father has been fucking me for ten years. I'm now 20. Has this happened to anybody else?" (Ernest 1979, 198)

215 In example 102 in Volume One we told about the relationship between 17-year-old Bernard and his father. Bernard related how he had been having intercourse with his father, who held down a good managerial position, since his 11th year. "A little later I had, in addition, relations with a teacher. My sexual intimacies with my father are now coming to an end, since I am getting too old for his erotic tastes. I still sleep with the teacher from time to time, but less frequently than before. This is because I become more and more involved with girls. I've already petted with a girl, but not gone much farther. There's never been any question of fucking. I consider my experiences with my father and that teacher completely beneficial. They made me turn to girls at a later age than did my schoolmates, but that's certainly no disadvantage."

"Didn't this sexual relationship weaken your father's authority over you? Weren't there ever any clashes with your father, as is common at puberty?"

"Yes, of course. I wasn't always the good, hard-working boy, and sometimes my father got really mad at me. I don't think my reactions then were much different than any other boy's when his father is furious. I shouted back a lot. But I had to obey him. And that was one beautiful aspect of our relationship: we never were mad at each other for long. At night, in bed, we celebrated our reconciliations with sex, just as married people do. It was marvellous. I was never overly interested in sex. As a little boy I fooled around a bit sexually with my friends, but later I never did. I went into puberty at 13. Jerking off seems to me to be a good, healthy habit. My needs vary a whole lot. At times I do it every day; a little later once every two weeks is enough. Sometimes I buy a porno magazine—heterosexual—and I like reading the stories. I hide them from my father. I had great fantasies about what sex movies would be like, but they turned out to be a disappointment. I think it's a good thing that men who love boys are banding together, but it's unfair that there's nothing for us boys. We need some sort of a club where we can talk about our experiences and exchange views, where we can give somebody help if the police threatens to break up a relationship. It also ought to be made a lot easier for boys to get really good books full of sexual information, where everything is explained. A sexual relationship with an adult man is a fine thing for every boy, and it should be supported. I wish every boy had had one, like me. It's such a shame you can't talk openly about it." (Personal communication)

Once again we find it is a female author who draws a moving, romantic picture of a father/son relationship with keen sensitivity to the complex situation: Lolah Burford (1974) with her historical novel *Edward, Edward*. The relationship between the Earl of Tyne and his bastard son Edward, set at the beginning of the 19th Century, is strongly impregnated with feelings of love-hate and sadomasochism. The boy is torn apart by feelings of guilt even though he experiences the utmost ecstasy during sexual intercourse. An admirable book.

As for myself, I believed that sexual intimacy was incompatible with authority (see Voestermans 1983, 148-149) until my observation of some actual incest relationships convinced me that this was not necessarily so. It is always difficult

for the legislator to decide just where he should intervene. In the first place, it is impossible to set the limit beyond which a tender caress of a loving father becomes a forbidden incestuous act. Second, the legislator should have no right to interpose himself between parent and child when they freely engage in intimacies which make them both happy. Brutal interference with this secret understanding, an interference which leads to highly upsetting examinations of the child as a court witness, will always be traumatic for the boy and lead to the destruction of his family. In all likelihood incestuous relationships are rather frequent; of course they seldom come to the attention of the police since both partners wish to hide what they do together from other people. Discovery and conviction, then, is arbitrary and accidental, striking down one relationship in a thousand. Thus there are many reasons why the legislator should abstain from enacting penal laws in this area.

As head of his "School on Ships", Léonid Kameneff saw horrible examples of parents sacrificing their children to their own selfish interests. He wonders why this cannot legally be punished, why police and child protection authorities are so tolerant of it, while if sex becomes an issue they immediately intervene. Is the father who deprives his son of a proper upbringing so much better than the father who sometimes helps his son to orgasm?

It would appear that the incidence of incest is especially high in nudist families, but the younger partners in such cases are later quite willing to repeat the experience (Smith 1981, 96). The effects of repressing incestuous desire may well be worse than expressing it. "To stunt passive homosexual feelings for a father can have serious repercussions upon a boy's emotional development and can produce unsatisfying yearning-rebellious feelings towards male authority. (...) It can hamper the boy's ability to accept and learn from his father much that would enable him to achieve a sense of male identity. It robs him of the feeling of being sexually accepted by his father. (...) This acceptance does not involve actual sexual acts but does have a basis in sexual feelings and appreciation." (Lambert 1976, 85) "Some fathers contend that incest within an endorsing family can be nontraumatic (Bender & Blau 1937) or even beneficial (Rascovsky & Rascovsky 1950) to the child's emotional growth." (Martinson 1981, 273; Summit 1981, 124; Tsai 1981, 202) "Contact between parents and children can sometimes offer the child a well-rounded introduction to sexual functioning in a secure and nonthreatening environment." (Symonds 1981, 161) "When I was a child I experienced an ongoing incestuous relationship that seemed to me to be caring and beneficial in nature." (Joan A. Nelson 1981, 163) In her study of 137 incestuous relationships, 53% were described as positive, by the male substantially more (62%) than by the female. Of non-exploitative incidents, more than 75% were valued as positive (Nelson 1981, 166, 168, 171; Constantine 1981, 228).

Prof. Leroy G. Schultz of West Virginia University wrote in 1979 that sometimes incest "may be either a positive, healthy experience or, at worst, neutral and dull." (quoted by Janus 1981, 126) We must keep in mind, however, that despite all the possible benefits to the child, there are incestuous relations where really terrible forms of physical child abuse take place. Since sexual violence against boys is rather rare, victims are characteristically daughters rather than sons. But fathers may abuse children of both genders in more subtle ways that are deeply traumatic, humiliating, horrifying and pregnant with potential disaster. It is much worse, much more damaging and traumatising, to be compelled to accept sex passively (for in the family there can be no escape!), to be made to say "Yes, I will" when all your instincts and feelings cry out "No, I don't want to do that!", to be, in effect, treated as a slave, than to fight against a sexual attack and be subdued by sheer physical force (Fraser 1981, 56) which at least permits the child to retain his self-esteem, his sense of dignity (Constantine 1981, 235-236). The real twist of the knife in these situations is that it is precisely those people in the child's intimate environment to whom he looks for care and protection that commit the crime against him or show no concern while he is being molested. Whenever such sad cases come to light society certainly should be allowed to radically intervene. Penal law, however, often harms more than it protects. Is it helping the child to send his father to prison, deprive his family of its income, subject his family to the contemptuous gossip and scorn of its neighbours? Fear of this happening often prevents the mother from taking action on behalf of her child. The police, then, should not automatically be called in; better the doctor trained in matters of child abuse, or the child protection agency, or the social worker. They should co-operate in finding an acceptable solution for both father and child, and use the law only as a last resort.

If children were better informed about sex, if they were more aware of what they had to accept and what they could reject, if the system of child-help telephone lines was everywhere available and children knew how to use them, we would see a real diminution in children's sexual misery and injustice. As things stand now, the child's trauma is often increased rather than mitigated by the intervention of the authorities.

Prof. Frenken told a symposium on incest at Utrecht in 1983 that the trauma results more from the child's sexual education than from the incestuous activity itself. At the same symposium it was pointed out that one cannot extrapolate from data on incest involving girls to incest involving boys. In retrospect, at any rate, girls tend to respond in an overwhelmingly negative manner, while boys have much more positive feelings. This is in agreement with Nelson's findings (1981, 168).

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

Sexual Activities and Remuneration

It would have been a simple matter to head this section "Prostitution", but that would involve an untenable simplification. Real life offers endless variations on this theme; situations can be enormously complicated. Let us begin with a few concrete examples which are far from imaginary.

216 *Case One.* Mario, a European tourist in a Third World country, meets a 15-year-old boy by the name of Curro. Mario takes Curro to his hotel and has sex with him, and afterwards he invites the boy to have dinner with him in a restaurant. The man is so pleased with Curro that he asks the boy to stay with him for the next few weeks. Gradually loves springs up between them. Mario buys new clothes for the boy, a wrist watch, shoes. He learns that Curro has a difficult life. He used to go to school, where he was a good and happy student, but when he was 13 his father was paralysed by a cerebral haemorrhage and as a result Curro had to quit school and go to work in the rice paddies in order to help support his family. Mario goes to Curro's village home and talks with his mother and the principal of his former school. He undertakes to pay for Curro to continue his education as well as send him monthly sums for food and clothing. Curro is extremely happy and works hard in school. Mario isn't rich; he has to make some economic sacrifices in order to save money for Curro. Every year he returns to spend some weeks with Curro. Their sexual relations are most passionate. Curro is a pious Roman Catholic; every night he says his prayers before joining his friend in bed, and after that they make love until they both are exhausted. Then Curro prays once again, thanking his God because their love-making had been so marvellous. (Perhaps he sees God and His intent more clearly than does the Pope, who also visited Curro's country and told the people that a husband looking with lustful desire at his own wife was sinning.) After his prayer of thanks, Curro lies down in Mario's arms and falls blissfully asleep. (Personal communication)

217 *Case Two.* The story Peyrefitte (1979) relates about Roy, son of a Los Angeles millionaire, is not altogether fictitious. In all countries there are boys from well-to-do families who, in order to have more pocket money, or buy expensive sport equipment or musical instruments, or who are simply searching for adventure, make a game of seeking out men to whom they can sell their sexual favours. Some are very fastidious in their choice of only the most attractive clients. Often they aren't in the least ashamed of this game and brag about their conquests to their peers, telling them how they slept with some well known artist or athlete, how they received an extraordinarily generous remuneration.

218 *Case Three.* Leo, whom we have already met in example 2 of Volume One, was, like his brothers, badly neglected by his strictly religious and wealthy parents. Not only did he receive little affection, he didn't even have proper clothing, having to make do unhappily with cast-off and hand-me-down coats and trousers. All the other boys at the neighbourhood school were better dressed than he.

One day when he was thirteen a man standing beside him at a shop window in downtown Amsterdam told Leo he would pay him twenty-five guilders if he would come along with him. Now, Leo had already heard about men like this from his

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

age-mates, and he was curious. Moreover, the sum of twenty-five guilders seemed enormous, for never in his life had he had so much money in his possession. The man took him home and Leo found he thoroughly enjoyed what then ensued. Thereafter he repeated the experience over and over again. One of his clients told me years later, "That Leo was a really horny boy! Did he ever enjoy doing it!" Leo was now always neatly dressed.

As soon as he finished school Leo left his parents and went to live with a friend. He supported himself entirely with the money he made by going with men. The sex he found pleasant, even if his own preference was for boys his own age. To meet potential clients he haunted certain bars but, because he was handsome and had a fine muscular body, he could afford to be choosy: he only went with men he liked. And sometimes his earnings were unexpectedly large: one night an American officer took him to a hotel room, had him strip and lie down on the bed naked. The officer never took off his own clothes, only knelt and sucked him off—and for this "service" Leo received \$200!

At about the age of seventeen, Leo found his profession increasingly unpleasant. In his free time now he not only sought out handsome boys to have sex with but occasionally a boyish-looking girl. And he discovered he liked working on autos; more and more of his income came from repairing cars. He continued, however, to dress well, and his home was always immaculate. Eventually he broke off all connections with his former homosexual life, became a company representative and now lives with a young woman. (Personal communication)

219 *Case Four.* Joey is 15. His parents are divorced and his father has disappeared. After almost continuous conflict with his mother, the Child Protection Authorities sent him to a "home". It seems to have been a good one: Joey was happy there, the boys had a great deal of freedom and it was located in a town where Joey had many friends.

Then the home was closed and Joey dispatched to another, this one far away in the countryside and where discipline was severe. Joey thought his treatment was cruel and unjust. He knew from the other boys that at the railway station you could always find men who liked to go with boys, so, at 14, he ran away and had sex with his first client.

By now, a year later, he estimates he has had fifty more. At first he was entirely passive but with time he learned to participate in all kinds of sexual practices. Since if he doesn't find a client he has to sleep on the street, he is forced to accept many clients and acts which he himself finds repulsive. Sometimes he steals from the men he sleeps with. He does not like this way of living, for his own preference is for girls; frequently he is unable to get an erection when it is a man who is fondling his penis. He finds the whole situation humiliating but sees no other way to earn money. (Personal communication.)

220 *Case Five.* In some countries conventional hospitality requires you to provide your guest with a boy. Daniélou went on an expedition to Afghanistan in 1932. When they came to a village the inhabitants, to accommodate the soldiers who were accompanying the expedition, "brought to the market place a bed of braided ropes, a blanket and a young boy. A soldier and the boy went upon the bed, the blanket covered them, there were the well-known movements, and after a while it was the turn of the next soldier." (1981, 92)

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

There are, especially in Third World countries, still boy brothels. Parents sell a little son to the owner and the boy is then systematically trained to satisfy the sexual appetites of men. Such schools for boy prostitution are often called "peg houses" from the supposed practice of making the boys sit for hours on benches fitted with wooden pegs which extend upwards into their anuses (romantic description by Tony Duvert, 1973, in his *Paysage de fantaisie*). Gradually, it is told, the boy has to sit on ever thicker and longer pegs until his opening, after such systematic stretching, is able to accommodate the penises of even the most "well-endowed" men (Back 1910, 749; Bullough 1976, 305; Borneman 1978, 739; Armand 1931, 322). The prostitute boy must accept all clients including the ugliest and most disgusting and accede to all their desires. If there is a crowd, as on holidays, he will be used by many men, one after the other, until he is so worn out he is no more use (romantic description by Pierre Guyotat, 1967, in his *Tombeau pour cinq cent mille soldats*). Most of the money goes to the brothel owner; the boy receives only a small fraction.

Five different situations, with an endless number of transitional cases between. We have made no mention of call-boys who receive visitors in their own homes or can be summoned by telephone; most are slightly older: youths or young men. But our five examples, if nothing else, show how impossible it is to reduce "prostitution" to a single categorical phenomenon. Each concerns a boy who, in exchange for remuneration, satisfies the sexual desires of a man or men. Often the clients are strangers, there are many of them, and the boy's own sexual preferences are irrelevant (Redhardt 1968,2).

Even more simplistic is the tendency to make no distinction between girl and boy prostitution despite the fact that they are actually quite different and have only the one common denominator of sex being exchanged for money. Except in the brothels, there are almost no pimps in the world of boy "hustling"; it is less commercial, less organised, with few pick-up bars, peep shows, strip-tease acts, etc. While violence inflicted on girls by customers and pimps is very common, it is rare in the case of boy prostitutes. Quite the contrary: there are many instances of boy hustlers attacking and robbing their clients, something girl prostitutes seldom do (Geiser 1979, 138). Most important, when a boy goes with men for money it is almost always a side-line, a passing phase, a way to earn a little something extra; it seldom dominates his existence. This lends it a distinctively different coloration.

We must therefore recognise that in prostitution (just as in incestuous relationships with parents or older brothers and, as we will see later in this chapter, in posing as a nude model for the making of erotic photographs) boys in general feel much more positive about their participation than do girls (Walters 1978, 303). Findings and conclusions applicable to the one sex should never be extrapolated to the other. "Studies show that many teenage female prostitutes have a poor self-image and do not enjoy their lives as prostitutes. (...) According to a recent study on adolescent male prostitution, some teenage

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

gay-identified male prostitutes claim to enjoy prostitution and have a positive self-image." (Subcommittee on Select Education, U.S. House of Representatives 1982, 10).

There are people who, innocent of any first hand experience with the different ways of living and thought patterns of foreign cultures, weep copiously over the "scandalous prostitution and exploitation of children" in Asia, projecting abroad their Western horror of sex. They should better concern themselves with the widespread prostitution of children in their own countries, or, better yet, ask themselves to what extent their own moralistic repugnance of sexuality and the laws it inspires have contributed to the Third World prostitution they so heartily despise and the abuses inherent in it. "Sex tourism", in the final analysis, is simply symptomatic of a kind of social pathology rampant in most of the rich countries. Western laws make it unacceptably dangerous for many a boy-lover to establish with a boy at home a relationship satisfactory for both. That is why, in order to experience any sexual satisfaction at all, he must travel half-way around the world to enjoy a brief encounter with a paid partner in a more tolerant social setting (O'Carroll 1980, 184).

The battle against "sex tourism" is also a bit hypocritical. Boy prostitution is traditional in parts of Malaysia, the Philippines, India, Indonesia and Indochina (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1979, 130), which means that it is there viewed by parents, boys and the people around them very differently than it is in the West. The African, South American or Asian boys who on occasion sleep with tourists are markedly more exuberant, happy and healthy than the hundreds of millions of poor children in these parts of the world who, without earning a single tear from the virtuous crusaders against "sex tourism", are slowly withering away or becoming crippled for life by back-breaking labour. Sex, sometimes at least, can be tender and enjoyable; work on Third World municipal rubbish dumps or in child sweat shop factories never is. But since no sex is involved in picking through garbage or working 16 hours a day in a garment factory, some people find it preferable...

We should fight against the exploitation of children not because (and only where) sex is involved, but because (and where) children, without respecting their freedom and personal feelings, are compelled out of need to do things which they find repellent. *That* is where the line must be drawn, the distinction made.

As soon as money enters the sexual equation, corruption is liable to be imminent. No one expressed this better than Michael Davidson: "It's the money that corrupts, not the sex: the money which, combining with sex in a kind of psycho-chemical way, produces on the growing mind a condition in which sex becomes inseparable from money. Sex by itself is quite innocent. Money by itself, unfused with any of the agents in combination with which it generates power (and sex is one), is merely a useful thing to have. But money acting

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

upon sex can destroy the capacity for happiness; it adulterates and sophisticates the emotions that make sex a principal vehicle of happiness. (...) There can be no harm, surely, in linking a gift with any sexual transaction—corruption begins when the idea of 'gift' turns into one of buying-and-selling and becomes a habit of mind." (1971, 93-94)

- 221 (Continued from No. 40.) Onno, whom we have already met, often received generous gifts and substantial sums of money from the men who slept with him. He claims, however, "I never lent out my body for the sake of money; I never would have given myself to someone I didn't like just for monetary gain. I never asked for money nor made it condition for sex. If men spontaneously, out of their happiness, made a gift to me afterwards, and so expressed their enthusiasm and satisfaction, it not only made me happy but also turned me sexually on."

This is quite acceptable. It isn't whether sexual activities are accompanied by gifts or not that determines if we are dealing with true prostitution but whether the material gain becomes more important than the pleasure. As far back as Greek antiquity we hear complaints that boys were demanding gifts for their sexual services. In one of Aristophanes' comedies, gifts actually sing a chorus: "Thanks to us, boy-lovers will persuade many a sweet lad to open his thighs." In another comedy, Hercules, just back from a descent into Hades, tells of having seen there a man who was being punished for having used a boy without paying the youngster's price. The tourist who fell in love with a statue of a young athlete was more honest. During the night he secretly made love to it, and next morning the guardians of the sanctuary not only found the statue stained with semen but at its feet the four drachmas which was the usual payment then for such services (Peyrefitte 1977, 199, 549, 548). This story was so popular that it occurs in many different versions (Buffière 1980, 484).

- 222 We see the same kind of thing happening in Arabian culture. "The friend of a boy-lover once asked him, 'I'm amazed at the number of beardless ones who come to you of their own free will, who do what you tell them to do and how fast they run up when you call. What is your secret?'
 " 'I'll let you see my secret with your very own eyes,' said the boy-lover. He touched his head with his hand, and from the folds of his turban he took a bag of silver coins and showed it to his friend. Then he detached from his belt a piece of cloth which hung from it and was knotted together at its four corners and was full of cakes and dried fruits. Then he went down still farther and brought out yet another object.
 " 'No!' cried the friend, seeing what he had. 'Stop, my brother, or I too will be tempted to let myself be seduced by you!' " (Tifachi 1970, 133-134)

What makes boys surrender their bodies in exchange for money?

In cases like the second and third examples described above, it is not unusual for the boy to demand money in order to hide from his peers (and at times even

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

from himself) the pleasure he experiences in these sexual contacts. Homosexual acts are regarded with contempt, thus a "real boy" would never want to perform them. He is excused, however, if he only does them for money (Wilson 1982, 48).

- 223 In an American West Coast city an outspoken 17-year-old girl bragged about her boy-friend to a social worker: "Sure, Jimmy sucks cock. I think it's a blast. Any time we need five or ten, we take a walk down by the park and before I know it he's over in the bushes with his cock up some old guy's ass or getting it himself. He made forty dollars one Friday while we were out... You think he's a goddamn gay? He sure fucks me good..." (Blake 1970, 71)

"A great many youths of today ironically do not in the least mind being considered hustlers or part time male prostitutes so long as no one considers them a 'faggot'. Many of these youths will go to bed with another man and indulge in the most eccentric sexual behaviour without a qualm, but would be very disturbed by the social consequences that might ensue if they had a close, intimate friendship that did not involve overt sexual acts." (Churchill 1968, 159) Such an attitude is obviously perverse, the result of morbid homophobia.

Boys like this do not feel any guilt, nor do they really consider themselves whores (Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission 1980, 256). The number of boys willing to engage in such practices is rather substantial. In Sorensen's extensive research among American adolescents he asked his male subjects how they would react to the following situation: "It's just possible that sometime, if I really needed the money very badly, I might have sex with a man who would pay me for it." Of the 13-15-year-olds, 13% said they agreed and 5% were undecided. Among those who had had heterosexual intercourse, 14% were willing; most of them had also already had homosexual experiences (Sorensen 1973, 289, 395). Rossman claims that one in every six boys would do it (1976, 84). Drew & Drake (elsewhere a somewhat dubious source) declared that in some junior high schools in the suburbs of New York more than half of the pupils occasionally prostitute themselves (1969, 156).

But money is not the only, and often not even the main reason. The real driving force, which even the boy himself may not realise, often has more tragic roots: he longs for an adult to take an interest in him and pay attention to him. Prostituting himself may be felt by the boy as a kind of protest against his parents. He wants to be the object of desire, of affection, and at home he is not (Bullinga 1982, 120; Matzneff 1974, 84-85). This is the case with the fictional Kevin in Wallace Hamilton's fine novel of the same name (1980). Many such hustlers come from broken homes and thus "unconsciously seek by their sexual surrender and prostitution to be cared for and loved as they never or only occasionally were during their childhood." The simple fact that customers want to have sex with them proves that they "are desirable" (Schickedanz

1979, 107-108). Elisabeth Müller-Luckman, a German psychologist, said about 10- to 13-year-old boys in Munich and Stuttgart, "The children find in hustling some human communication which at the same time somehow enlivens their otherwise very anonymous surroundings." (*Du & Ich*, Sept 1979; Hennig 1978, 75)

Others are just looking for adventure and excitement (Bullinga 1982, 96).

Strangely enough, in those countries which do a booming trade in "sex tourism", curiosity, play, enjoyment of tenderness, sexual pleasure and lust for money are inextricably interwoven in the minds of many of the younger hustlers (Duvert 1976; Franco 1980; Hennig 1978, 99-100; Hervé & Kerrest 1980). "Even on his first visit to the land of the blessed the traveller is struck by the extreme facility and admissibility of making love with quite small boys. (...) I was impressed especially by the natural nobility of these boys, their physical and moral charm. Poor they may be, but they often behave and move like young princes. They can be penniless, but never petty or stingy. Their honesty is spontaneous, I might even say pure." (Matzneff 1979, 130) And "a tourist" writes, "Every day I go about the city with dozens of 12- to 15-year-old children, and I always bring four or five of them up to my room. I have never detected in them any expression of surprise of displeasure. It is understood that we will have sex, and this is considered quite normal. The boys, laughing and dancing, are completely willing. In this culture boys are respected as independent beings who need neither special protection nor to be turned into fetishes. If a 13-year-old boy I know presents himself at the hotel reception desk ten times a day, I am called on the telephone and always, invariably, I am told, 'Someone wants to see you.' I'm not told, 'There's a boy', or 'There's a kid', as would certainly happen in France (and in such a nasty tone of voice!). 'A boy is a person here, and he is for anybody and like anybody. He is not a fetishised being held in tutelage.'" (*Recherches* 37 1979, 124-125)

It is noteworthy, too, that such a boy isn't embarrassed by his occupation and doesn't feel humiliated performing it. He may negotiate with a customer while his comrades are standing around, or a small group of friends may come with him to the hotel door knowing perfectly well that in a few minutes he will be in the naked, passionate embrace of a man. A Danish tourist was walking with a group of boys on Galle Face Green in Colombo, Sri Lanka, when one of them asked him, "You want a boy?" "No," the man said. "Why not?" "I prefer girls!" "If you go with girl tonight, you go to hospital tomorrow, but if you go with boy tonight, you come back tomorrow!" (Rovsing 1959, 184)

It is, alas, not to be denied that situations like this can easily be poisoned by thoughtless or unscrupulous sex tourists who believe they can do anything to anybody they want—and do it whenever they want. Or, wishing to be generous, offer their loved ones for one hour of pleasure far more money than

their fathers earn in a week of heavy work. For a brief time they spoil the boy with luxuries, tear him out of his environment, and at the end of their holiday let him sink back into his former destitution. A few such men make extravagant promises about the boy's future, raising the boy's hopes, promises which are forgotten the moment they step on board the plane for home. Others assume the boy must do everything they want simply because they are paying him. Some scoundrels ply their boys with alcohol and drugs in order to subdue and abuse them. Where this kind of infection becomes endemic, the boys lose their natural charm, become calculating, come to despise and hate foreigners, rob their customers the first chance they get. The good man who follows after can only suffer—and he would have liked only to create a nice relationship with a nice boy within which they could amuse themselves for a time together, please him and leave him with pleasant memories.

The sordid sort of sex tourism, of course, has been treated at great length in the press, but I would like now to turn to another kind of foreign traveller, a man who really wants to build up a relationship with a Third World boy, pays the lad's school expenses, provides enough money to feed and clothe him, and returns every year to see him again and love him.

Such cases our Western journalists and television reporters usually ignore. Neither do they observe that casual commercial sex contacts with boys are hardly limited to Third World countries but are most likely taking place close to their own homes as well.

224 In 1983 one Francis N. Hardy was sentenced in Atlanta, Georgia for sex with under-age white boys. A 31-year-old resident of the community told a reporter at the time that sex with Hardy was a local tradition among boys. "I've lived here most of my life and I did it, my brother did it and my dad did it. Everybody we knew did it. The men who pay young guys whatever amount for a little play are usually well-known by not only the boys involved but by their families—who are generally grateful for the extra financial help and the opportunity to get their kids out of their hair for a time." (*Gay News*, April 1, 1983, 6)

225 An Englishman, having heard extravagant tales about another large American city, wrote me after his visit: "I was here for four days and met nine separate and very beautiful creatures that 'did'. And this was not through anything I did! I drove into town and my eye was caught by a golden blond. Our eyes met. I winked, and I had an immediate passenger in my car. The next day, by luck, I found a family of white blonds. The oldest, twelve and a half, is an anal intercourse specialist, who only (!!!) goes out with English people who drive cars registered in Hollywood! I qualify to add to this strange coincidence, he has twin blond brothers of eleven. One is an oral intercourse specialist and the other uses his fingers and toes in an incredible tickling routine. I managed to get a few pictures after pleading and bribing and I hope to meet the parents next time I visit and become an officially approved friend. Apparently both parents know what is going on and once a week father makes the sons strip and then inspects their bottoms to ensure that there are no injuries or diseases, and that the lads

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

are not doing it too often!!! I find this hard to believe, yet each, independently, confirms it. Additionally they are uncircumcised, which is almost unheard of in America, and they always have clean socks and wildly attractive T-shirts, tight across their sturdy chests." (Personal communication)

Priscilla Cummings writes about Baltimore: "A lot of the boys have fathers who did it and grandfathers before them." (*Baltimore Magazine*, June 1982, 79)

"To many of the (American) twelve- to fifteen-year-old boys, a fling at streetcorner hooking is as natural as country-music. Their friends do it, their older brothers did it, and even their parents accept it. One mother bragged to a social worker that her boy brought more money into the family on weekends than they acquired from their welfare payments. She did not consider him to be a homosexual." (Linedecker 1981, 172) And right she was. Most hustlers have their girlfriends, or go to (female) prostitutes for sex (Redhardt 1968, 70, 83).

In many European and American cities there is a small but flourishing trade in "boys for sale". In New York, in fact, the boy hustlers seem to outnumber the under-age hookers by five to one (Geiser 1979, 135). On the other hand, one must not exaggerate the numbers, as is done in the sensationalist press with its stories about "sex rings" and international white slave networks. Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber suggested at a U.S. Congressional hearing (1977, 40) that there were 300,000, perhaps as many as 600,000, such boys in her country. The Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission, a body unlikely to be inspired by sympathy for boy-love, found, however, absolutely nothing to substantiate such a claim (1980, VII, 14, 204, 209, 224, 229, 253, 267, 282). This commission extracted the confession from Dr. Densen-Gerber that she "had no concrete evidence or personal knowledge" of the things she told Congress (1980, 225). The press, nevertheless, distorted her "facts" even more and, despite her admission that she didn't know what she was talking about, made no effort to correct the wrong impression she had left with the public. There is no organised crime syndicate earning millions of dollars by coercing young boys into prostitution. "This is a figment of someone's overactive imagination," the Illinois Commission stated (1980, 277). But if there is no million-dollar child prostitution and pornography industry, there definitely are hundreds of millions of dollars to be got by child protection organisations (and top salaries for the people who run them) which upset the public and the authorities by churning out distortions and biased reports.

Nearly everyone who has honestly studied the hustling scene has come to the conclusion that the majority of these boys have a heterosexual orientation. At their age, however, homosexual stimulation, too, will usually make them physically respond. Made to perform acts which they find repellent, older boys especially may react with outbursts of violence. On the other hand, the sexual

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

activity may so coincide with a boy's repressed desires, producing a shatteringly intense orgasm, that, indoctrinated as most are with our society's homophobia, he is not able consciously to accept the pleasure he experienced and so, likewise, erupts into insane fury. Something like this may well have been at work in the murder of Pasolini, the famed film director. Another example will be given below.

Sexual attraction to mature or older men is only felt by a small minority of boys. These, of course, make the best and most passionate partners.

Reformatories, borstals and the like are the most successful schools for boy prostitutes. There they learn how to get money for sex, how to find clients and how to behave with them (Schult 1979, 180; West 1977, 224; Redhardt 1968, 75, 76; Hennig 1978, 47, 74-75). Victims of parental and social neglect, they start at an early age masturbating, having intercourse with girls and making homosexual contacts. Schickedanz quotes a reformatory boy's account, saying it is "quite typical" of the conditions in such institutions:

226 I was eight when I came to the home. It was a reformatory. I was put in with older boys, in my group there were even boys of 16. And as a little boy you are dominated by them. For example, you had to jerk off the group chief. You know, it's the strongest that rules. Yes, and that went on for years, until they sent me to another home. And I, too, got older, and then I started doing the same thing to the younger boys. Just like they'd done to me. Some of the older boys, of course, had had experience, they'd been hustling themselves. They taught us a lot, secretly: how to treat clients, what clothes you had to wear—trousers as tight-fitting as possible, so your cock showed, etc. And then, too, we had some *teachers* who were gay. They always seduced the boys they were keen on. For example our sports instructor started doing it to me in the showers. I was always a little slow. I came too late to practice and I was the last to leave. I always stood a long time under the showers—with a hard-on. Suddenly one day the sport instructor opened the shower curtain and saw how I handled my prick. He couldn't control himself and sucked me. I felt really horny and shot off in his mouth. But afterwards I felt so disgusted I wanted to kill him. How can I explain it? Liking it at the time and later being disgusted. I could have thrown up, letting him do that to me. And this nauseating shame I projected onto him. When I looked at him, this silly forty-year-old man, this sport instructor, I could have at that moment murdered him. I found it so disgusting, so nauseating. Later when I went into the dressing room I found fifty marks with a note pinned to it saying, "I'm inviting you to go with me on your next day off." (Schickedanz 1979, 148-149)

Of the boys who run away from such reformatories, 80% are approached by men in the first ten hours (Rossman 1976, 149). We don't have to approve, but boys who are moved by necessity to sell their sexual favours are certainly better off than those who take refuge in drugs, alcohol, crime or suicide. West, the leading English criminologist, rightly observes, "Prostitution has always provided easy material for moralising; yet the trade does fulfil some very real human needs, and ought not to be condemned out of hand. The corrupting

influence upon the young hustler of an undisciplined life of tax avoidance and quick gains, inevitably based to some extent upon pretence, has to be set against the fact that a certain proportion of these unsettled adolescents do eventually manage to find their feet, some of them indeed with the help and advice of the older men to whom they sold their sexual services." (West 1977, 226-228; *Youth Liberation* 1981, 49; Hennig 1979, 31) A French social worker (Bertrand Boulin), gives examples: "I have personally received many letter from men and women, now well placed in society, respected and often married, who had prostituted themselves while children. On average they were neither more nor less unhappy than the children who lived in homes. But on their coming of age they could establish themselves with the money they had gained." (Boulin 1977, 145-146) By engaging in high-level boy prostitution with influential customers, these boys were enabled to see horizons, and to realise what life can offer to those with education. Having a goal in life, they went out for the better jobs that they now knew about, often helped in this by their men-friends of the past.

Ackerley's father always spoke very highly of the rich lawyer, a married man with four children, who had "maintained" him when he was sixteen. He said that he owed this man all his knowledge, his self-discipline in matters of education; he had, in fact, been the ideal after whom Ackerley's father had tried to pattern himself (Ackerley 1971, 27).

Most commentators on boy prostitution link it to criminality. The theory runs that after years of luxurious living and earning easy money for little work which requires no professional training, they start secretly stealing from their clients and later, when the ageing process robs them of their fresh young charms and thus their customers, turn to full-time theft. Schickedanz (1979, 40, 189, 202, 210) and Schmidt-Relenberg (1975) examined this theory and found it false. It is true that there are young delinquents who discover that prostitution is a less risky means of earning money and give up their criminal activities for a time (cf Redhardt 1968, 73), but who later resume them when they are too old to attract clients. But non-delinquent hustlers usually turn to other means of livelihood later and often become solid family men. If there is any criminogenic factor in boy prostitution it is the tendency of society to despise these youths and treat them with contempt.

- 227 Peter Schult, author of a fine autobiography *Besuche in Sackgassen*, knew quite a few prostitute boys and followed their careers. "It has always been my experience that the boy who forms a relationship with a man, be it sexual or platonic, rather than starting criminal activities, will tend to give them up. This shouldn't surprise us, for it is well recognised that theft is often a substitute for insufficient love. I believe that juvenile delinquency is very common now in Germany, so this country is a veritable Eldorado for the interested observer. To put it even more strongly, I know from my

own experience that it is just these young delinquents who are the most difficult to make contact with. Some years ago I came to know, quite by accident, a family in Neu-Perlach, a district of Munich where many down-and-out people live. There was a mother and three sons aged 13 to 27. The oldest two had already been in prison several times. The youngest, at 13, continued in this pattern and stole with zeal—everything from taking bicycles to taking part in organised expeditions through department stores, always with age-mate accomplices. He is now 16 and has already been sentenced several times. Stealing has become an essential part of his life. I tried to get through to him but found it impossible; likewise with his friends. I was successful in establishing relationships with some of the other boys who were only on the fringes of this group, and they succeeded in disassociating themselves from the gang. I had similar experiences in the district where I lived. Those who came to me stopped stealing; those who never returned to me are now in prison—and this in spite of the fact that all of these boys, when I first got to know them, were stealing. It is usually the quiet, sensitive boys who want and are looking for contacts with a man; they are more likely to listen when he warns them that they will soon go to prison if they don't behave. And they are well aware that the man who is telling them this is not a teacher or a priest or a parent or one of those people who are always talking about what you shouldn't do. That kind of man the boys don't seriously listen to any more; they remain obstinate and antagonistic to everything he says. The boys feel he is talking only out of his own selfish self-interest, while their adult friends are genuinely concerned with the boy's well-being. These are observations I made over almost 30 years. The hippies generation was much more approachable than the fighting rockers of today with their friends in the robber gangs. But it's not the real organisers that the public prosecutors see in court, for only about three or four out of a thousand thefts result in a trial. The prosecutors only see the hustlers, and it is from them that they construct their stereotypes. The prosecutors are blind to the fact that the hustlers come from quite another social setting and direct themselves towards males from quite opposite motives. I've known many hustlers and followed their careers. At first there is theft, burglary, then prison. In jail they pick up homosexual practices and these they use when they are free again. Almost every hustler I have known had first been in prison and only afterwards turned to men, and that was because he could earn more money that way and at less risk. When they aged out of their attractiveness to males they resumed stealing. These are the boys the prosecutor sees." (Letter from Peter Schult to the author, 20 September, 1981)

Boys for whom money is the main incentive may need it simply to put food in their mouths (as in John Henry MacKay's ("Sagitta's") novel *Der Puppenjunge* (The Hustler)), or they may spend it on luxuries they cannot obtain at home. Such luxuries can range from a piece of candy to a movie ticket, a bicycle, a motor-bike, a holiday trip, drugs, or payment for sex with a girl. In 1974 a Dane wrote, "The main problem among 13- and 14-year-olds in our country is prostitution. Boys of this age sell their bodies to get money for drugs." (*Revolt*, April 1974, 66) In France the number of boys engaged in this was estimated to be between 11,000 and 13,000 (Boulin 1977, 145, 214). In the USA it is believed that more boys than girls are doing it (Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission 1980, 277; Janus 1981, 158, 172-173).

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

228 The 13-year-old son of an Italian business executive had learned from his peers how to attract men. He would abandon himself to any sexual practice in return for money. He pretended to be disgusted by men, but needed pocket money to pay for whores. It all came out one day when his father discovered an unusually large amount of money in his pocket. The boy was furious at his father. "He forgets I'm a boy and not a girl, and so I'm not taking any risk at all!" The boy was big for his age and at school was known for his intelligence and hard work (Schachter 1969, 128-129).

In his speech against Timarchos, the Greek orator Aischines (343 BC) observed, "A handsome boy enjoying fine and expensive food, mingling with the most exacting whores and squandering his money gambling, doubtless pays with his body for the generosity of his benefactors." (Buffière 1980, 601) Among the Danish prostitutes of our time, 85% spend their earnings on girls (Jersild 1956, 69; cf. Redhardt 1968, 70: nearly all the boys were regularly visiting prostitutes). Some men, wise to this situation, have, from ancient times, short-cut the intermediary of money and, in exchange for the boy's surrender, provided him the opportunity to sleep with a girl (Tifachi 1970, 204). Summit & Kryso mention a case in which a father used his own daughters to provide him with boys (1981, 123).

Agents, like pimps, are much more rare in the world of boy prostitution than in that of girl prostitution (Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission 1980, 285). They may have been more common in periods when boys were meeker. Around 1700 a certain Maurel de Volonne in Paris "sold boys like horses and went to the pit of the Opéra to meet customers." (Daniel 1957, 35) But even today such people are sometimes encountered. Some hustlers, growing too old for their trade, recruit younger boys for their clients (Hennig 1978, 67, 70). In London there was once an old curiosity shop. Every night some boys were playing on the street in front of it. Clients entered, indicated the boys they wanted and the proprietor signalled the boy by taking a particular object out of the shop window. The boy came in through a back-door entrance off another street. Hervé and Kerrest (1980, 91-92, 94) observed pimps working with boys in the Moroccan city of Fez. Police crack-downs on boy prostitution were welcomed by the pimps because they drove prices up (Geiser 1979, 65).

The worst fate, of course, was suffered by very young children exploited by brothel owners who abandoned them without any protection to the unbridled lusts of their clients. But even in brothels there are distinctions. In 1909 Rolfe had a rather favourable impression of the Osmarin Club, first established in Venice and later in Padua. A Venetian youth told him about it:

229 He said that the club used to be open day and night; and ten boys were there always ready for use. The fee was 7 Fr. payment for the room and what you pleased to the boy, but you had to pay the latter in the presence of the steward and never more than 5 Fr. even though you stayed all day or all night, i.e. 5 Fr. and 7 Fr. for 12 hours.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

Beside the staff, any boy could bring a Signore. And many did, chiefly school-boys at some of the public or technical schools who liked to make a little pocket money. (...) He himself began at 13 or thereabouts this way. One of his cousins being left an orphan suddenly came to live in his house and sleep in his bed. The cousin was 14 and, the bed being narrow, there was a certain mixture which pleased both. And suddenly both spat together (You'd shrieked to see his great black eyes and his big white teeth and his rosy young lily-fragrant face simply burst out laughing). This being very diverting, they hugged and hugged, belly to belly and did it again. So for many nights. (...) In a little while his cousin (they were both occasional gondoliers as I had suspected) heard of the Osmarin. A patron took him there. Amadeo Amadei, rather bucked, also went and asked for a job. They said, 'Bring a Signore'. So he went and prayed to the Black Madonna of Spain at San Francesco della Vigna and she sent him a Count. Then he began. Many Counts and Princes and illustrious Signori had he served there, having much strength and ingenuity in finding out ways to give pleasure, all of which pleased him too, as well as filling his pocket. He found his patrons this way. His first, the Count, had spoken to him on the Giardinetto where he was by chance lounging one morning, being out of work, and his shirt being open as usual, because he was appassionate for the air, the Count had stroked his breast while saying he was a fine boy. To whom he said that he was as God made him and preferred to be naked. Upon which the Count took him to the Osmarin for the day. Thereafter, he always went with his breast bare, even in Piazza, and soon Signori walked after him..." (Rolfe 1974, 29-30)

Venice had not always been so open to the exercise of this profession. In 1462 several boys were castrated and branded for prostituting themselves. Nevertheless, six years later there are reports of the "widespread existence of boys who engaged in acts of sodomy for profit". After 1500, pimps "who induced boys to commit sodomy" could be condemned to death (Murray & Kent 1983, 187-188; Cleugh 1963, 139).

Observations of boy brothels have been made in all parts of the world and in all ages. Every Greek city in antiquity had its *ephebeion*, a house where ephebes, adolescent slave boys, were available for sex. Socrates' beloved disciple Phaido, to whom Plato addressed his philosophic ideas about immortality, had been an inmate of such a brothel. Socrates met him there, liked him and persuaded one of his rich followers to buy the boy's freedom (Bullough 1976, 113; Borneman 1978, 994, 987). Later we hear about such brothels in pre-Columbian Mexico (Sutor 1964, 346). Wars have been waged, expeditions undertaken for the sole purpose of capturing handsome young slaves for such institutions. In 1804 a British dealer sold from Ethiopia 32 young man, 66 handsome adolescents and 40 sweet, girlish-faced boys to the owner of a brothel in Havana. In capturing such slaves, those with large genitals were preferred. At night they were exposed naked in the patio for the clients to make their selection (Klostermann 1968, 20). Boy-brothels in Amsterdam are mentioned in the beginning of the 18th and the end of the 19th Centuries (Hekma 1983, 262), in Paris in 1850 (Sutor 1964, 160), and in New York in 1890 (Bullough

1976, 608). London was shocked in 1889 by the sensational discovery that persons from the highest social circles, and even a member of the Royal Family, were among the regular customers of a brothel in Cleveland Street where young telegraph messenger-boys stood at their disposal (Montgomery Hyde 1976; Simpson 1976). The British were less prudish in their colonies, and in Nigeria, for example, it was at their instigation that brothels with black boys were established there (Italiaander 1969, 104).

More recently, we have many reports for Arab countries, and even as late as 1981 from the south Egyptian town of Assiut. Burton mentions brothels in the Near East (1885, X-205). Boy brothels were part of Chinese culture (Sutor 1964, 65, 70-71; Daniélou 1981, 133-134).

In Japan they were to be found in all cities and were officially subject to police control. Poor parents sold their sons to the owners of such institutions which usually had about five boys between 10 and 20 years of age on the premises. When the boy prostitutes grew up they usually became actors in theatres (Krauss 1969, 91; Italiaander 1969, 86-88).

230 A well-known Dutch author, an authority on the Far East, told me in 1966 that he had obtained the address of one such brothel in Tokyo. It was shortly after World War Two. A taxi driver brought him to the quarter where the house was supposed to lie. Unable to find the right street, the driver, with his Dutch client, entered a tea-house and shouted, "This gentleman wants to visit the 'Cherry Blossom' boy-brothel. Is there anyone here who knows how to find it?" Nobody seemed astonished by this question, and one of the guests kindly offered to show him the way. So he arrived at the brothel. The owner of the house produced an album of photos from which to make his choice. Moreover, he offered to arrange a "live show", but this was too expensive for the visitor. The assignation, however, was most satisfactory, and after a number of equally pleasant experiences, shortly before his departure, he decided to see the show. He was placed facing a curtain, and when this was raised he saw in the next room two boys in splendid ceremonial dress. With graceful gestures, each saluted his partner, then each started to undress the other slowly. Finally naked, they had sex in all forms in all positions. It was all performed with a great deal of grace, almost like a ballet. The performance lasted an hour and a half, was full of aesthetic beauty and charm and was one of the most enthralling shows he had ever seen.

231 In Bangkok in 1971 a former American army officer opened a hotel for this purpose with thirty rooms and its own swimming pool. There were always 15 to 20 boys, aged eight to sixteen, on the premises, often splashing around naked in the pool. Apart from lodging, food and clothes, they earned about 10 to 20 American dollars a week, plus tips. They were regularly inspected by a physician. The establishment had many clients; all rooms were fully occupied by the American military men on Rest and Recreation leave and rich Thai citizens. Bangkok boys would do almost anything to be employed there. At first they were systematically trained in oral and anal intercourse (and were given marks according to their skill), in erotic conversation, kissing and massage. Those who were most popular were allowed to refuse clients who did not appeal to them.

On average, a boy had to satisfy 6 to 10 clients a day. 70% of the men asked to suck or be sucked by a boy, with foreplay of kissing and massage; 20% to 30% wanted anal intercourse. The American correspondent of a newsletter for boy-lovers reported, "One of my boy-friends has worked there for a month and was already after three days one of the most appreciated. What he loathed, however, strongly was that these Americans were only obsessed by sex and that there was no other approach to them whatever. A young medical officer had manipulated and sucked him for a whole night long, incessantly, so that he had slept only for two hours and even this sleep had been interrupted. Immediately after this heavy strain, the man took him to a movie theatre, and during the show had still wanted continuously to play with the chafed member of the boy. The youth had earned nearly 400 dollars in tips within a month's time, as well as clothes, a wrist watch, etc. The owner offered him still more advantages if he would stay, but he had had enough of it. Elsewhere he afterwards met another American who offered him real affection and the comradeship he was longing for and which he needed. Originally the man didn't even touch him, waiting patiently until the boy began himself to be greedy for sex, and finally abandoned himself to his friend with magnificent passion." (Personal communication)

232 North America isn't far behind. "In the brawling, robust days of turn-of-the-century New Orleans, boys were easily procured for men with a lust for children of their own sex. At least one bawdy-house was staffed with young boys in drag." (Linedecker 1981, 74). Information was received in 1978 about a brothel in a smaller town where no less than 63 boys of 12 years and older did their work. The clients paid 30 dollars or more; the boys got 5 to 25 dollars for each turn, plus free marijuana, beer and pornographic film screenings to put them in the mood (Rose 1978, 17).

233 Jean Cocteau visited a brothel called the Satyricon in Toulon. There was a low-ceilinged room where the inmates played cards. "When the boss gave the signal they stood and lined up against the wall. The boss fingered their biceps, palpated their thighs, brought their less visible and most intimate charms into view and passed them out like tickets. The clientele knew exactly what it was after, wasted few words and less time getting down to brass tacks." (1957, 54-55)

In various European countries the press contains advertisements from "escort services" from which people can order a young companion for a single night or even for weeks of travelling, of "topless bars" where half-naked or completely naked youths act as waiters and are also at the disposal of clients wanting to "relax" with one or two of them in a separate room. This publicity, of course, respects the laws on ages of consent, but often special accommodations will be made for trusted and discreet clients. Wafelbakker (1983, 102) published one application form for job as a call-boy. Questions had to do with height, hairiness, penis size and whether circumcised or not, willingness to be anally penetrated, photographed, give live shows, participate in sadomasochistic acts, etc.

A Dutch youth described how boys are recruited for such houses. "You get involved in the most innocent way. A boy quarrels with his parents, doesn't

know where to go and then meets downtown a nice old man who invites him to visit. It turns out that the man has a brothel. You don't have to do disgusting things, the nice old man reassures him. You don't have to let yourself be fucked; you just have to engage in sucking and jerking off and be nice to the gentlemen. So two years go by. The boy is now seventeen; there are already other boys of fourteen and fifteen. What's left of the boy? Nothing." (Bullinga 1982, 130)

In modern French literature Tony Duvert (*Paysage de fantaisie*, 1973) and Pierre Guyotat (*Tombeau pour cinq cent mille soldats*, 1967) described in detail the lives of enslaved, defenceless children who were mercilessly sacrificed to the lusts of their male and female customers. The boys are taught to behave as though they were totally unashamed of what they have to do; they are made to put on live shows with each other and even a large dog; they are tortured by sadists; they are ordered to beat one another until they bleed—all to amuse their spectators. It is not clear to what extent such things still happen in Third World countries.

Who are the customers of boy prostitutes? Prof. Osanka of Lewis University (Illinois) told a Congressional Committee that many of them "are white, middle class, well-established men. They go to church; they are often pillars of their community; they seem to be concerned about matters of their community; they vote regularly; they earn good income..." (Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 13). Cocteau reported the same thing about their Parisian counterparts (1982, 150). Recent research in Germany and Holland gives the same impression: the majority belongs in the 30-50 year age range; by far the most (70%) are married men coming from middle class homes; a not inconsiderable number of prostitute boys reported that they often had medical doctors, lawyers, important government officials, teachers and priests as clients. Many of them have children of their own (Schickedanz 1979, 90, 161; Bullinga 1982, 126; Pittman 1971, 26; Hennig 1978, 42, 252; Barrington 1981, 209-210). They are exactly the same kind of men who, preferring older partners, go to public conveniences in order to find quick, anonymous sexual satisfaction: conventional and conservative citizens, mostly husbands and fathers, socially advantaged, often faithful church-goers (Humphreys 1970; West 1977, 297). "They defend God, country and American womanhood during the day and prowl the dark streets of the Tenderloin looking for boys at night." (Linedecker 1981, 179). Schickedanz concludes from these facts "that this form of prostitution presents an extraordinarily important and necessary institution, and that it is undoubtedly due to its existence that at least the psycho-sexual equilibrium of a group of men, not inconsiderable in number, is kept in tact." (1979, 219)

It is rather unusual for a woman to pay a boy to have sexual intercourse with her (West 1977, 221). It appears from Juvenal (VI, 366-376) that in Ancient Rome young slaves were trained for this purpose. Some boys who had just

reached sexual maturity, and were thus at the peak of their sexual potency and salacity, preferably with large genitals, had their testicles removed or crushed so that their mistresses could enjoy them without risk of pregnancy (Hopfner 1938, 395; Spencer 1946, 411). The Romans were well aware that such castrates were capable of sustaining erection for long periods of time (Van der Werff ten Bosch 1983, 27; Burton 1886 XI-70; Ellis 1913, III-10). A male brothel in Paris around 1850 had one entrance for men and one for women (Sutor 1964, 160). A handsome 15-year-old bellboy in a Portuguese beach resort once told me how hard he had to work during the peak season: all day long slogging away in the hotel and every night having sex with the female tourists. Robida wrote a witty story (1958) about a young Sicilian wanting to buy a motor-bike because his girl-friend lived in another village and earning the money for it with an elderly English spinster. The owner of a Dutch brothel advertised in a newspaper that "young boys" were available in his establishment. (Actually they were 16 or older). He told me that he repeatedly had telephone calls from women and girls asking whether they could be accepted as clients too. They were, and the boys especially liked this part of their job.

Professional hustlers bent on satisfying several customers one after another often ask for more money if the client wants to excite them with his hand or mouth to orgasm. And this demand on the part of customer is rather common, since, as we have already seen, the main pleasure of many boy-lovers is to watch sexual delight coursing through the body of the boy (Wilson & Cox 1983, 44). The exigencies may be high. A London Dilly boy said, "The end of my cock sometimes gets quite sore because of the amount I use it and then I have to lay off for a few days, so then I usually just toss off the clients, maybe four or five times a day. If the punter insists I come about twice a day. A cock ring gives me a stiffer erection and my clients like the novelty. I have a six-and-a-half-inch cock when it's hard." (Barrington 1981, 38). One of Bullinga's subjects told him he used to have four ejaculations a day (1982, 131). Kinsey mentions a black hustler who averaged from his 13th to his 39th year more than three times a day "and at the latter age was still capable of 6 to 8 ejaculations when the situation demanded." "Some male prostitutes ejaculate five, six or more times per day with regularity over long periods of years." (Kinsey 1948, 216-217) Sexual excess, then, doesn't really undermine the health of these youths; if anything it is more likely to be the constant consumption of alcohol with their customers.

Extra payment is often exacted if the boy is anally penetrated. Mutual masturbation is the most frequent practice; next comes the boy being sucked by the client, since this allows heterophile hustlers to pretend they're not "queer" if brought to climax this way (Haeberle 1978, 241). The more macho types are mostly unwilling to take the man's penis in their mouths or anuses

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

(Schickedanz 1979, 177-178). As the hustler grows older, he usually engages in more and more practices.

At times hustlers have to deal with sadomasochistic clients who want to torture a naked boy, to tie him up, whip him; more often, however, it is the adult client who wants to be punished. Masochism is often a trait of domineering men, of executives and rulers (Borneman 1978, 352).

- 234 Borneman (1978, 827) mentions the case of a man who hired a number of boys to dress like butcher apprentices. They had to strip off his clothes and tie him up naked with ropes to a butchering block, whet their knives and cleavers and act like they were going to slaughter him.

The earnings of the more professional hustlers may be considerable.

- 235 A reporter for the *Chicago Tribune* (Committee of the Judiciary 1977, 432) interviewed Marty, 17, who had learned the trade at 14 from a friend of 13. "I make about \$ 500 a week, tax free. I could make more. I only do two or three tricks a night. I like my life. But I'll be too old soon for this business. Most chicken hawks like 'em real young."

The competition is often merciless. An Amsterdam hustler said, "Friendship, camaraderie—no. Fighting for clients—yes. Hard-boiled assessment: my cock is still bigger than his. You may fuck me; he won't let you. But I never allow them to fuck me. Never." (Bullinga 1982, 130)

To summarise: generalised judgements are impossible. One can maintain—rightly—that the combination of sex and money is always regrettable and it would be far better if people only had sex to please themselves and their partners. But this would hardly create a sexual utopia. Male sexual appetite is imperious; this means that the demand will always surpass the spontaneous supply of responsive partners motivated solely by their own lusts.

Sex for payment is the only kind available in many situations. Mariners, travellers, tourists, the elderly (who are only attractive to the very rare gerontophile boys), will always try to couple with the young bodies they desire and offer money in return. One half of the healthy men between the ages of 72 and 77 are still sexually active; a fifth still are in their eighties (West 1977, 165). Likewise the timid, unworldly male can gain in this way a sexual satisfaction that he would otherwise have to do without.

- 236 A 19-year-old Belgian student who was too shy to take the initiative himself, said, "I've got a friend who's a homophile—or, rather, he loves boys. One day I was with him and his boy whore arrived. He let me have sex with him and asked me to pay him 50 francs for his services. The boy was about 14. I lay down in bed with the boy, both of us naked, in the dark, because I'd be ashamed to have a homosexual contact in daylight. I kissed him, fondled his genitals. I had some difficulty penetrating him from

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

behind. I found it very satisfying and I'd like to have homosexual intercourse more frequently instead of masturbating." (Kruithof & Van Ussel 1963, 143)

Besides, there is another important factor which should always be kept in mind and which was nicely put into words by Erskine Lane: "The whole question of sex. So many variables. First, no way to predict when it will be needed and when it will be superfluous or even unwanted. And then, when it is needed and wanted, so many different ways of wanting. Sometimes, to be satisfying, it has to be coupled with warmth and affection, long hours of caresses or just silently being together, whole nights sleeping embraced. At other times it needs to be purely physical, uncomplicated by emotions, a matter of a few minutes and then *hasta luego* or *adiós*. Sometimes even gently commercial, because the commercial aspect emphasises the lovelessness of it, and loveless sex is sometimes sexier. But not always. Just sometimes. And we can never say when." (1978, 100). Another factor is the preference of quite a number of middle- or upper-class men for lower-class boys (Weeks 1980/81, 121-122).

So there will always be a demand. And where money can be earned, there will be a supply, too. In all countries, East and West, there have always been, throughout history, many willing boys (West 1977, 213). They are mentioned in the Bible (Joel 4:3), they were there in ancient Greece and Rome, they prospered in the middle ages (Armand 1931, 174-175), there are plenty of them in modern times. They are willing because they want to have money, or because it is an adventure, or because sex offers them the means to be taken seriously in the world of adults (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 220). Sometimes it is an official institution, as with the Ovambos, a Bantu people, where some boys are trained from childhood to serve the whole tribe (Borneman 1978, 969). We shouldn't close our eyes to the possible tragic sides to all of this, but it is by no means always tragic. Generalising is impossible. There are other kinds of child labour that are morally and physically far worse. In our culture, boy-prostitution is mostly a part-time occupation, and the child psychiatrist, Prof. Hart de Ruyter is of the opinion that this "in no way endangers the normal sexual evolution." (1976, 213) And, viewing boy prostitution as a kind of adventure, Leïla Sebbar, the French feminist writer, says, "It is scouting, exploration. It is something wild, transient. There is nothing indecent about it. What *is* indecent is the way people think about it." (1980, 285)

Homosexual and paedosexual prostitution are just as ineradicable (and socially just as useful) as the heterosexual variety without which, according to both St. Augustine and St. Thomas Aquinas, society would go to pieces (Deschner 1978, 400; Cleugh 1963, 81). The number of sex crimes in a community is inversely proportional to the amount of prostitution in it (Vickers 1980, 119). We can also learn from heterosexual prostitution what factors tend to limit it. The "sexual revolution" made girls, and decent girls, willing to use their hands,

their mouths and their vaginas to give their young friends the sexual pleasures they so eagerly desired, and thus the once so common visits of young men to brothels diminished sensationally. In all periods of history when sexual tolerance increased, prostitution declined (Taylor 1953, 156). On the other hand, the only real effect of police crack-downs on boy prostitution is to increase sexual delinquency and raise the prices which, after a short time, attracts even more boys to the profession (Geiser 1979, 127). If there was more acceptance of homosexuality and boy-love, less people would "be inclined to cruise the anonymous, dangerous streets." (*Baltimore Magazine*, June 1982, 111)

Supply could also be diminished. Obviously all legal means should be pursued to eradicate those "peg houses" and boy-brothels where children are exploited and violated and treated as slaves. Fortunately they don't, and probably cannot, exist in Europe and North America. But in the West small children are sometimes offered by their parents through carefully worded advertisements in specialist magazines to well-paying customers, and these boys and girls are nearly as powerless. Unfortunately these affairs are not as rare as they should be, but are such parents really worse than those who train their 11- or 12-year-old (or even younger) children to run marathon races or to set other sporting records and in the process ruin their health for life? These children are sacrificed—to the craving for glory of parents who thereby gain only respect from society! In all these cases the authorities should promptly intervene. We have seen that in the process of making older boys into hustlers, borstals and reform schools are the most important training grounds and recruiting centres. Anything that can be done to save boys from these institutions, and anything that can be done to keep runaways from wandering around, miserable, hungry, cold and homeless, will be an assault on boy-prostitution.

In this way the worst excesses associated with boy prostitution could be controlled. It is sheer social hypocrisy for those who provide an indispensable service to be forced to operate in an aura of illegality and criminality. If we want to combat excess, sex work should be regarded as a profession just as any other serving our physical needs. Sex workers would then be less vulnerable to exploitation and bad working conditions. If sex commerce is seen as a useful profession, "sex workers would be more able to organise and agitate for higher pay, better conditions, greater control and less stigma. (...) Imagine, for example, that the exchange of money for medical care, pharmacological advice, or psychological counselling were illegal. Medical practice would take place in a much less satisfactory fashion, if doctors, nurses, druggists and therapists could be hauled off to jail at the whim of the local 'health squad' (Rubin 1984, 288). The most significant thing about prostitution is that it is work, not that it is sex.

But even if it were possible to eradicate the most scandalous forms of child exploitation, we would still be faced with the fact that certain boys, of their

own free will, are willing to be sex workers for payment and so serve a social need by their services. To despise such boys for this is as hypocritical as to despise their female colleagues without whom society would also suffer. One hustler justly observed, "Why should I see myself as worse or morally inferior compared to other people? It's my opinion that everybody has his faults and there isn't a single person in the world who hasn't sold himself to get something. People who work in show business, movie or stage actors and professionals in sports are selling themselves just like we do, only on another level." (Schickedanz 1979, 210) And a young Parisian said, "Hustling is a vocation. You make your contribution by helping people, preserving their equilibrium. You are a safety-valve for society. All that energy men spend on us they won't use to beat up their wives and children. That's important, isn't it?" (De Brethmas 1979, 124) The boy prostitute ought to be respected, as he is in some "primitive" cultures.

The unjustified contempt of society doesn't just push hustlers toward crime—he who is badly treated will treat others badly, too—but tends to corrupt the customers as well. Many men simply assume they don't have to respect their promises to boy prostitutes: they needn't pay all or even any of the agreed remuneration; they can make the boy do things he thinks are disgusting or even make him suffer a great deal of pain during the act. A middle-aged customer told Bullinga, "To buy a boy is really to humiliate him. You pay and he has to perform. (...) Sometimes, after someone has robbed me, I go out on the street, full of anger, and I fuck a boy out of hatred, simply to humiliate him." (1982, 117-118) Other customers behave gruffly, displacing their own feelings of guilt onto the boy. Nicolas, who had hustled on the streets of Paris from the age of 12, complained, "They're all dull and boring; they're all like my father." (Matzneff 1977, 141)

No wonder, then, so many hustlers are unhappy and feel degraded by their job. Much, then, depends upon the client.

- 237 Jouhandeau, the French author, had slept with young Constant in a hotel where the boys were at the disposition of the guests. Afterwards the owner said to him, "I hope, sir, you were satisfied. In sex he is the very best, but allow me to tell you that while you were taking your pleasure with him, you were also performing a good deed. Yesterday Constant had to suffer a brute who hurt and demoralised him, but thanks to you he left here today happy. He said, 'It was like sleeping with a god!' You have overwhelmed him, but above all he was touched by the sensitive way you talked with him and treated him." Jouhandeau reflected, "How can you meet your obligations towards someone who gives himself to you body and soul? By trying to be unforgettable." (1981, 40-41)

It would be a mistake to generalise from worst cases and the most nasty customers and so assume that all these boys are miserable. Significantly, fathers

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

who had prostituted themselves during their boyhood are usually most tolerant of this activity in their sons.

- 238 Ronnie (14 years) is a Baltimore boy. "His mother knows he hustles and doesn't like it. But Ronnie's father, curiously, acquiesces—maybe because he, too, hustled as a boy." (*Baltimore Magazine*, June 1982, 110)

Harris (1973), studying the "Dilly boys" hanging around Piccadilly Circus, discovered they had willingly chosen this profession. A social worker in Los Angeles observed, "Now it might be that even if we had the intake centres where we could rehabilitate the boy, he would say to us, 'Go to hell, man, I like peddling my ass.'" (O'Carroll 1980, 183) The Illinois Legislative Investigating Commission, a body certainly not in favour of such activities, concluded after three years research, "Most children involved in prostitution are there because they want to be. They are, by and large, not being enticed by procurers or other unscrupulous operators. (...) It never will be possible to prevent a young runaway from prostituting him or herself if he or she wants to, nor will it be possible or even necessarily advisable to talk a 15-year-old out of a life of prostitution if that is what he or she wants." (1980, VIII, 233)

- 239 In a novel by Jacques Brenner, *Trois jeunes tambours* (1965), 16-year-old Jeannot throws himself without any hesitation into the embrace of journalist Patrice Verchon when the latter gives him a lift. Verchon does everything in his power to extract the boy from this world of prostitution in which he had moved, with his mother's knowledge and approval, for some two years. All Verchon's efforts are in vain. (Cf. Redhardt 1968, 81)

- 240 (Continued from 230) Rolfe wrote about the Venetian boys: "They were not only willing but glad to do whatever was required." Rolfe himself was poor and didn't have enough money to pay the usual fees. He told Piero so, and the boy, regretting this, proposed to come with him nevertheless, on condition that Rolfe would recommend him to his friends. "Then Piero and I went upstairs. I never saw anyone slip out of his clothes as he did, like a white flash. (...) He was scarlet all over, blushing with delight, his eyes glittered and his fingers twitched over my clothes with eagerness. As for his rod—lawks!" Rolfe then had intercourse with him. Piero "couldn't, simply couldn't wait his turn, and we clung together panting and gushing torrents—torrents." After this they slept, in a close embrace. "I was awakened by a gentle voice, 'Sior, Sior, with permission!' And his rod was rigid and ready. I took him on me. 'Slowly, and as hard as you like,' I said. Oh, what a time we had. He took me at my word splendidly and laboured with the sumptuous abandon of a true artist, straining his young body to his very utmost but holding himself in control, prolonging the pleasure for the pure joy of it. (...) 'Oh, che bel divertimento!' says Piero, squeezing me as we spouted—'Oh, what a beautiful diversion!'"

But even Piero didn't have quite the experience of Amadeo (example 229). Rolfe needed pages to describe how Amadeo exhibited his naked body to him and gave details

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

on all kinds of "incredible tricks for amusing his patrons". Piero was still in training. "You can't think what a beautiful creature he really is, young, strong as a horse, slim and lithe and supple as a serpent, magnificently virile, with soft downy skin and firm hot flesh, sweet as a baby's. I asked him about sucking. No, he had never done nor had it, but gladly would he from me. Did one drink? Yes. Oh, what a beautiful diversion. So you see what joys are in store." (Rolfe 1974, 15, 31, 51-53)

- 241 Erskine Lane spent a night in Guatemala with a small, very innocent-looking boy. When the man slipped his hand under his striped shirt, the boy became so nervous that Lane nearly didn't dare continue. But suddenly the boy suggested they take off all their clothes. "Naked in bed he rimmed me like no one else before or after—that seemed to be his special passion. Sucked me, fucked me, and then turned over to let himself be fucked. All with complete abandon. (...) During the heat of our entanglement he constantly murmured, 'Te quiero, mi amor, te quiero.' I love you, I love you. But most of all I remember his insistence that I believe him. 'Créeme, que sí te quiero. Dime que me crees. Dime.' Believe me, I love you. Tell me you believe me. Tell me. 'Yes, I believe you,' I told him, to put an end to his insistence. But then I had to reassure him. Again and again. It was almost dawn by then and he said he had to leave. 'When will you come back?' I asked him at the door. 'I only like to do it once with each person,' he said, as he shook my hand and kissed me goodbye." (Lane 1978, 35)

- 242 A 15-year-old American boy says, "I take money from these guys, and I like it. And most of the other kids I see that are in this, I can tell you they're really getting off on it, too. I have to admit there've been a couple of times when I'd give a guy a break myself when I thought he was good-looking. There are certain guys I can really get turned on to, you know what I mean? Most of the ones who come on me are fat, greasy old men in expensive suits, and I find them a drag, but business is business. I hardly ever turn anybody down, but some guys I just find awfully repulsive." Tony got several proposals to settle down and live with a client. "So far I've resisted because I really like the excitement of the cruise and the different faces, and I don't want to be tied down to one guy." (Janus 1981, 214-215)

- 243 Onno (Continued from 221) was sometimes invited to the home of his friend and there presented, naked, to some important guest. After a close inspection of his body he was dismissed, to be called back later in the evening. His friend would then tell him, "My guest liked what he saw. He's in the bedroom now. You go up there and let him take his pleasure with you in the way he likes best." To Onno the situation was already so exciting that even climbing the stairs he had a spontaneous full erection.

- 244 A 30-year-old German who had earned a living as a call-boy for several years in his youth, told me that the idea of going to bed with a stranger was so exciting to him that occasionally he had actually had an ejaculation ringing the doorbell at the home of the client he was to serve. (Personal communication)

Most people believe that sex is a simple, easy way for nice looking boys to earn money. This might be true for some hustlers, but for a boy who plies his profession with pleasure and dedication it can be quite exacting. Customers often

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

expect more than just sex, especially from boys who are a little bit older. Some hustlers are very intelligent and can be quite cultivated. "It's not only with their cocks and their bodies that they have to serve." (Bullinga 1982, 142)

Bisexual clients who have sex with call girls as well as boy prostitutes generally find that boys "will give them much more time, and a more friendly social contact, at all social levels." (Barrington 191, 211)

245 (Continued from 244) For years Onno had a steady relationship with a middle-aged friend, an important, wealthy business executive. They had met on the beach, and the man had taken him home and systematically and thoroughly trained him in all varieties of male/male sex, active and passive. Then he said, "You're not the kind of boy who can serve only one man." Other men were invited to have three-way sex with Onno and his friend under the guidance of the latter. Having thus perfected his sexual education, his friend, to whom he remained closely attached, put him at the disposal of others. Onno slept with guests and friends, served as a naked "slave-boy" at dinners, gave shows and nude dances for several groups and earned money as a model for photographers and painters. From the men who slept with him he often received, unrequested, large sums of money.

"At any hour day or night you should be ready for sex," his "master" had taught him, "fresh and clean, your supple body longing to be taken!" Looking back at this period of his life, Onno reported, "Every day, often several times a day, I had to do gymnastics, and to wash and shower my body. I trimmed my pubic hair carefully, shaping it in order to make my genitals still more attractive. I took great care of my hands and feet. My teeth had to be spotless. I had to watch my weight and eat with moderation. My friend served me food that was reputed to increase the production of sperm. I could smoke and drink only a little, although I enjoyed doing both. I played many sports, especially swimming. I was always willing to undress. But if you want to devote your whole existence to sexual service it's not enough just to have a perfect body. I took great pleasure in seeing older gentlemen desiring me, discovering precisely what would excite each individual, what parts of his body I should caress and how I could give my partner the most intense pleasure. When these men, many of whom were rich, powerful and socially prominent, were panting and shaking with delight under the onslaught of my hands and my tongue, imploring me, a mere boy, to liberate them and satisfy their desire which I had incited to a red-hot frenzy, then I was happy. When their seed was pouring over my belly, filling my mouth, injected deep inside my body, I interpreted this as veneration of my physical beauty and I was grateful to them for it. These were years of happiness and joy." (Personal communication)

The Depiction of Sexuality — Boys as Models and Observers

We have already noted many examples of the baleful influence of certain moralistic publications in the field of sexuality. In the next chapter we will go into this all much more thoroughly. Suffice it here to say that compared to this, erotic pictures—generally and incorrectly called "pornography"—are relatively innocent. The moralist tries to force his ideas upon others; erotic authors,

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

painters and photographers never dictate or coerce: they only depict what is there (Van Ussel 1968, 228; 1970, 90-91).

Artistic depiction may go far beyond reality, but most erotic pictures and movies are only a substitute for looking at a naked body or at sexual activities. The "live show" has a similar effect. When the Roman poet Martial enumerates the things which especially embellish his life, he mentions among them:

*A big boy whose skin will remain smooth for a long time hence
And a girl who allows him to make love to her. (II, 48)*

Such spectacles have always been enacted for the pleasure of people eager to watch. In imperial Rome there were secret societies where members could watch women having sex with each other and with a young boy (Borneman 1978, 626). In Chapter 2 we mentioned the way the Etruscans celebrated their festivals. "During their drinking-bouts with friends and relatives the Tyrrhenians brought pages, prostitutes and handsome boys to adorn the feast and later would fetch adolescents in all their youthful vigour and watch them amusing themselves with the prostitutes and the boys." (Brusendorff & Henningsen 1963, 14). Subsequent ages developed their own variations on the theme. In Nineteenth Century London there was a rage for child prostitution. In a well-known brothel three girls under 15 years of age were working. On Saturday night ten or more boys of 10 to 15 were invited to have intercourse with these girls in the presence of paying spectators (Borneman 1978, 704). In an act in one of the famous cabarets in Berlin in the 1920s a young man and a very attractive young girl sang a song in a car about looking for another couple to have sex with, and how one of the girls would clean the penis of the young man after he had had coitus with the other. When they stood up afterwards to take their bows, they had an additional surprise for the audience: both were naked below the belt, but the man turned out to be a woman fitted out with a moustache while the girl was a boy who proudly displayed a big erection (Foral 1981, 369). In Bombay (1983) a tourist was offered a show in which a 15-year-old boy had intercourse with a girl of 12 (Personal communication). Jean Cocteau described a public bath-house in Paris where, unknown to the bathers, a visitor, for payment, could watch. "Young members of the working class provided the show. (...) Standing in the tub (...) they'd soap themselves. The soaping would gradually turn into a caress. All of a sudden their eyes would wander out of this world, their heads would tilt back and their bodies would spit like furious animals. (...) The youngest distinguished themselves by climbing out of the tub and, off in a corner, wiping the tiles clean of the sap their careless stems had hurled blindly towards love." (Cocteau 1982, 151) Cocteau went there many times to enjoy the spectacle.

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

One German author amusingly observed that people who don't like to look at erotic pictures and movies should go either to a psychiatrist or an ophthalmic surgeon (Siegfried 1979, 29). As an "animal sociale", a social animal, man is himself emotionally swept up by what he observes in his fellow-beings. Television advertising agencies know perfectly well that the sight of people eating makes the viewer hungry, the depiction of drinking induces thirst. We laugh with the laughers and yawn with the yawners. The spectacle of beautiful bodies in the convolutions of sex arouses feelings in us of lust. It was said of King Louis XIII of France that he could only perform intercourse for the first time after exciting himself watching another couple in the act of coitus (Chardan 1970, 140). In the reported masturbation fantasies of heterophile males, looking at other people's sexual activities took third place—after sex with an unknown partner and rape (Masters & Johnson 1980, 186).

How one responds to such things depends upon how one really feels about sex. The man who has positive feelings about his own sexuality will enjoy the arousal erotic depictions produce. If "you believe people should be free to 'do their thing', then what could be more liberating and subversive than representations of people freely doing 'their thing'?" (O'Carroll 1980, 192; Barrington 1981, 7) Looking at erotic pictures will only make people more liberated and tolerant (Frenken 1976, 61). It is those, on the other hand, who respond with fear and disgust when confronted with this aspect of Creation, who we find campaigning for censorship and prohibition.

Throughout the first half of the 20th Century, a period of strong sex-negativism, it seemed self-evident that the depiction of sexual activity, even of the nude body, was enormously harmful and had to be prevented by all means at the disposal of society. Supposedly the circulation of obscene matter would, first, incite people to commit rape and other sexual crimes; and, second, encourage the growth of "perversions", especially homosexuality, paedophilia and sadism. Third, it was a particular danger for young people: on the one hand a brutal confrontation with sex would cause such ineradicable disgust in innocent, naïve youths that they would forever be impotent; on the other hand it would convert them into satyrs with raging, uncontrolled sexual impulses. Finally, fourth, it undermined moral sensibility and encouraged depravity.

Almost nobody contested these views. That doesn't mean there was no production and circulation of erotica. Quite the contrary. Where there is demand (heightened by interdiction), there is always supply. A black market flourished, with big profits accruing to those who supplied forbidden material. Artists of varying skills and talents created erotica for small groups of initiates. When slightly obscene texts were published, the authorities started criminal proceedings which often misfired from the point of view of the prosecutor, since the ultimate result was that the book became a great success for the publisher and

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

author. Books no one would have paid much attention to were printed and reprinted, thanks to the publicity generated by the authorities at the expense of the taxpayer. Incredible blunders made by the police and prosecutors, who proved themselves incapable of distinguishing between artistic or scientific works and vulgar, dubious products, created an increasing demand by the people to leave adult citizens free to decide for themselves what they wished to see and read. Since, as we will observe in the next chapter, all dictatorships are chaste, such demands are periodically suppressed by virtuous communism, by virtuous fascism, by virtuous national socialism, by virtuous Roman Catholicism—each considering itself divinely or historically elected to purify and protect from smut the proletarians, the nation, the race or the culture. When the power of such systems begins to crumble, the cry for freedom from censorship gains in strength.

In 1966 the Danish government appointed a commission to make a critical review of the existent laws on pornography. Shortly thereafter a similar commission started work in America. Denmark, being a small country, was content with a report of 69 pages; America, being a big one, needed 351 pages. But in their main outlines their findings were identical. Of the four kinds of alleged harm caused by pornography, not one could be substantiated by objective examination.

First of all, free circulation of erotic depictions does not result in a wave of sexual crime. Quite the opposite, in fact. In every country where the "sexual revolution" of the sixties led to more liberal attitudes, the number of sex crimes decreased, although the amount of other kinds of criminality increased dramatically. This cannot entirely be explained by a lessened willingness of people to lodge a complaint about such activities with the police. The Danish sociologist Berl Kutschinsky demonstrated this most convincingly. Violence against children, quite rightly considered the worst kind of sexual criminality, actually declined once erotic publications were allowed free circulation. In Denmark and Sweden they declined to one-quarter of their original number (Wilhelm, *Information*, February 6, 1980).

Gebhard (1965, 673) observed that most sexual offenders were less susceptible to sexual representations than was the average citizen. He explains this by pointing out that a certain amount of imagination, sensibility and capacity for projection are necessary to be able to be excited by erotic material. In our Western society, cultured people usually possess these qualities to a higher degree than the more primitive elements, young people more than older people. Most sexual criminals are neither very cultured nor very young; they are susceptible only to rather strong stimuli. Perhaps this is a factor in their criminality; it is more difficult to excite them by erotic fantasies and pictures; in such persons lacking the lightning-conductors of erotic fantasy, aggression may build up to explosive strength. A marked interest in erotic pictures, on the

contrary, correlates with a low degree of sexual criminality (Borneman 1978, 1110).

Second: the supposition that erotic depictions might convert customers into homophiles, paedophiles or sadists has never been even minimally corroborated. An enquiry among Danish psychiatrists and psychologists revealed the fact that none had ever seen such a case. No wonder: an individual's sexual orientation is not moulded in the adult, not even in the adolescent, but—in so far as it is not hereditary—in the little child, during his pre-school years. Children of this age, however, show a marked disinterest in erotic books and magazines!

When in 1964 a judge decided that *The Memoirs of Fanny Hill*, Cleland's famous novel, was obscene and depraving, the publisher said he didn't want to harm the people who had bought his book; he was therefore willing to take back all the 82,000 copies that were then in circulation. Exactly five were returned. Evidently the other purchasers didn't feel the book would hurt them very much. The conceit of censors is really most amusing. If pornography actually has such a deleterious influence upon those who come into contact with it, the character of these good ladies and gentlemen who are professionally obliged to consume this poison in order to protect their fellow citizens from it must themselves be irretrievably corrupted. Their altruism, evidently, never makes them fear for their own souls, only the souls of others, especially of inexperienced youth (Armand 1931, 430). What they are really doing, of course, is projecting the sexual stimulus they experience themselves upon looking at erotic material upon the young. It is an implicit reproach against their Creator, that he should have equipped youth with such a horrible thing as sensuality.

The crusade against pornography has made victims among the protagonists themselves. It can hardly be coincidence that among twelve leading personalities of the American anti-pornography movement, six were later sentenced for abuse and rape of children. Jack Gregorio, chairman of the Parents' Union Against Porno and organiser of a huge meeting where he declared that the authors of sex books and homophile magazines should be burned alive together with their products, was shortly thereafter found guilty of raping an eight-year-old girl and a 17-year-old boy (*Revolt*, August, 1981). "The Reverend Richard Ginder once was a leading crusader against obscenity. He was a former associate editor of the nationally circulated Catholic weekly *Our Sunday Visitor*, and, later, associate editor of *The Priest*, another magazine. Then the clergyman, who had campaigned so enthusiastically against 'the tide of filth' and 'glut of sex stimulus', was arrested in his Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania apartment. Detectives reported confiscating narcotics, pornographic magazines, and 2,000 colour photographs of teenage boys and girls—and Father Ginder—all naked and engaging in a variety of sex acts." (Linedecker 1981, 70-71) Likewise, policemen who sit for hours behind one-way mirrors to spy on visitors at public

conveniences, hoping to see something indecent happen, are simply sexual delinquents, peeping Toms, enjoying their hobby at the expense of the taxpayer (Churchill 1967, 228).

Third: The perils for youth. Again, an enquiry established that no child psychologist or pedagogue had ever seen any case where a young person had been corrupted by looking at erotic pictures or reading erotic literature. What we *do* know is that many moralistic books have had a fatal and permanent influence on young people by inculcating them with anxiety and guilt about sex, and these books inarguably *are* a peril for youth.

Fourth: the undermining of a moral sense. This may seem obvious, but it simply is not true. An enormous amount of research has been done upon the public influence of the media, because this is of utmost importance to advertising agencies. It has been determined that shocking a person is the worst way to go about changing his opinions. Confronted with a brutal attack upon something people have long held precious, they will tend to withdraw into themselves and close their minds to argument and persuasion. You cannot convert a sentimental protectress of animals by taking her to a Spanish bull-fight. No one has ever been cured of prudery by an encounter with an exhibitionist.

Of all forms of erotic representation, real hard-core pornography thus poses the least danger to morality. Persons confronted with it, without preparation, will be shocked and disgusted, and so confirmed in their moral convictions.

The shock effect, however, diminishes rapidly, for there is little variation in hard-core porn, only a series of human acts repeating themselves endlessly. The original reaction ceases not because the spectator's ethical feelings have been undermined but because he becomes immune.

Far more dangerous to traditional moral convictions are well thought out and well written arguments cautiously and accurately setting forth its errors, risks and internal contradictions; just as religious piety has little to fear from the raging scorn of the militant atheist, it is much more seriously threatened by divergent theological writings and religious sects.

Freud effectively brought to an end Victorian prudery; much of the energy of the sexual revolution of the sixties was unleashed by Kinsey: thick volumes filled with rational theory, statistics, graphs, they overwhelmed sex-negativism. The porno explosion was their result, not their cause.

To be logical, the legislator has the choice between only two alternatives: total prohibition or absolute freedom. Prohibition should extend to all texts, photos, pictorial representations which deviate from contemporary societal standards of morality; and that is precisely what the Catholic Church has tried to do with its Index. To be really effective such a prohibition should be operative and maintained not just nationally but also internationally. If the choice of freedom were made it would be up to every citizen to decide what he wanted

to see and read. Provisions, of course, should be made so that people who dislike pornography would not have to be unwillingly confronted with it.

And youth? Shouldn't young people at least be protected from dangerous publications? If so, logically we would first have to determine just what sorts of things are really dangerous to the young mind. We will discuss this further in the following chapter. Also we would have to balance the pros and cons of any measures we might take.

Considering all sex dangerous for young people is caused by an unnatural, negative evaluation of sexuality. The American psychiatrist Walters does not deny that there are some children who might be hurt by seeing movies of violence or sex, "But on the other hand, children are emotionally abused in sexual areas every day because of repressive, guilt-ridden, punitive ideas that are transmitted to them under the guise of sex education." (Walters 1975, 131).

To small children a picture of sexual activity is meaningless because they do not understand it: it is as innocuous as an abstract painting (Martinson 1981, 29-31). Looking at a picture of sexual intercourse, one little boy only said, "Nude boys are nice." An 11-year-old when shown a photo of boys engaged in sex play together was not shocked at all but asked, "Can I do that, too?" (CAPM 1980, 55-56) From puberty on, boys react to such images exactly as do adults: sometimes with indifference, sometimes with disgust, sometimes with sexual excitement. Disgust is more often produced in younger boys by really hard-core movies (Lenders 1970, 61). Boys of the middle group, poised between childhood and adolescence, usually react in a more balanced way. On the other hand it is exactly this group which may become frequently and strongly aroused by matters and circumstances utterly devoid of sexual meaning for adults. Boys have been known to get persistent erections, leading to masturbation and even orgasm, by sitting in a church, riding in a bus, on a horse, being chased by a policeman, watching a football game, listening to a military band, balancing on a beam, walking down a long flight of stairs, reading detective stories, even listening to the national anthem: in short by any situation which produces tension (Kinsey 1948, 164-165, 191). Even the most enthusiastic crusader against indecency would think it too far-fetched to ban for this reason churches, buses, horses, policemen, football, bands, beams, stairs, detective novels and national anthems! It would be far preferable to accept the fact that sexual arousal in boys is a very natural and harmless phenomenon.

In puberty and adolescence erotica can also have a good influence (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 111; Constantine 1981, 260; West 1977, 318). To discover that other people have exactly the same desires as you yourself can be enormously reassuring. Erotica are useful in sexual instruction and make fantasies accompanying masturbation more concrete and enjoyable (Gagnon & Simon 1973, 268). Thus in their book published by the University of California,

Goldstein and Kant advise gradually familiarising young people with erotic material. Boys are more susceptible to pictures; girls to written material (Gillan & Frith 1979, 463), although a Canadian father once told me his little daughters had been enormously excited by a movie of two boys having sex together, just as boys and men are often aroused by lesbian scenes.

Now we must consider a second point. What would be the effect of forbidding minors under a specified age to see erotic material? Certainly not the intended one of keeping such things out of their hands. Children do not live hermetically sealed off from the rest of the world. The photos which 14-year-old Jimmy could not buy for himself would be bought for him by his 18-year-old brother or friend. The interdiction would only strengthen his curiosity—and simultaneously give the possessor of such material high status among his peers. A rather high percentage of children between the ages of 11 and 13 have already seen x-rated movies (Janus 1981, 256).

The history of all legal measures against pornography has always been that they are counter-productive: they create a black market, and big profits. Pornography is just too popular. The Hite enquiry among American men showed that only 11% never looked at pornography and that 36% did so regularly. Of pornography purchasers, only one-fifth thought it was bad (Hite, Dutch edition, 1982, 881-882). The best way to fight pornography is to make it free, Schalken concluded in his doctoral thesis at the reformed protestant University of Amsterdam (1972).

Until recently we could have left things here. It is to the credit of the feminist movement that it called attention to another and forgotten aspect of porno production: the working conditions of the models and actors. Unfortunately feminist spokeswomen went on to make the wildest and most inaccurate claims: taking a photo of a nude woman was the equivalent of rape; all pornography was inspired by sadistic impulses and would incite the viewer to sadistic acts. Rumors were even circulated that women and children had actually been tortured to death during the production of porno movies, although official investigations showed that there was no shred of real evidence for these sensationalistic accusations (Linedecker 1981, 185-186). Nor was the feminist claim that male "phallocracy" dominated everything in this field ever substantiated. Will Wellen carried out research in The Netherlands (1981) about the kind of erotic material found in sex shops then: 5.1% dealt with children, mostly girls; 8.7% with violence and sadism against women.

Only a totally hostile attitude about sexuality could give birth to the strange notion that erotic pictures degrade the model by turning him or her into a lust object. People of both sexes (and not just the young!) try to do everything in their power to make themselves physically attractive, i.e. to excite the sexual response of the people they meet. If they are successful they feel flattered; it is a boost to their self-confidence. "Every sexually well-balanced human being,

male or female, can think of few things more desirable than to be so attractive as to become the object of another person's lust." (Borneman 1978, 378-379) When a female photographer mounted an exposition of her work and called it "Man as Sex Object" nobody objected (Walters 1978, 317). There is no love relationship without an object as well as a subject of lust. To be liked by girls, to see his body admired by other boys, always makes a boy happy. To find that his portrait or a nude photo of his body is considered so beautiful that someone wants to reproduce it in a magazine can only increase his self-esteem (Nichols 1976, 52). That other boys and men should use his picture to enhance their masturbation fantasies is not in itself the least degrading. Quite sensibly, a 15-year-old Italian boy, who proudly gave me a photo of himself depicting a well-muscled body and a big, healthy erection, asked me to show it to pretty Dutch girls and give them his address!

"There is nothing wrong with responding sexually to the sexual excitement of another, providing this response is spontaneous and is not perceived as a limitation." (De Bruyn 1980, 151). For there are people for whom sexual intercourse is an act of such intimacy that they feel strongly that it should not be observed by anyone else. Such feelings are quite understandable and in no case should a person be forced to act against them. However, it must be clearly recognised that other people may have quite a different view. Knowing that he has an attractive body, seeing sex positively, happy to pleasure his partner with it, a person can quite reasonably allow himself to be seen by others, or even photographed, while engaged in sexual activities. People with a certain amount of exhibitionism in their make-up, who enjoy exposing themselves (a quality which is certainly less reprehensible than many other 'isms') will even find their pleasure increased.

- 246 In his book about his love affair with a boy named Robert, the French author Jouhandeau describes a scene in which his friend Henri watches while he and Robert make love. "Through me as an intermediary Henri shares in the pleasure I give Robert and Robert gives me. When he hears us pant, or a cry escape our lips in the ecstasy and frenzy of our joy, he is more excited than any other onlooker would be. Like the guardian angel at the gates to Paradise, he protects the mystery without knowing it completely; he envies it, but without jealousy. It would be wrong to say that Henri has no experience of the voluptuous feelings Robert and I are experiencing. Perhaps our lust is even more precious to him than his own; he prefers it because it is more rare, more detached and he can cultivate and refine it according to his own wishes; in him it is never quenched, and can be continued endlessly. Robert and I offer him the spectacle he loves the most, and one might well ask which of us has chosen for himself the best part, although each part is inseparably linked to the other two. That he looks on while we're making love to each other is not unimportant, either to our hearts or to our senses. It excites them, in fact, and is a continuous invitation and obligation to double our passion and our brilliance." (1955, 84-85)

- 247 One of my young subjects knew an antique dealer who lived in a large house with many rooms in a Dutch provincial town. From time to time the man gave small intimate dances to which he invited young people on condition that they would undress completely. When my subject received such an invitation he was most eager to participate. It turned out there were eight girls and eight young men. They danced together naked while their host, in evening dress, looked on. Gradually the young people formed couples; later in the evening they retired to different bedrooms to have sex. The host went around from room to room with drinks and enjoyed the spectacle of his guests' intimacies. My subject said that the presence of his host agreeably enhanced his excitement. One night he persuaded his dancing partner to lie down in the hall where the others were dancing and have intercourse with him there and then with everyone watching. The spectators cheered the couple on. His orgasm, my subject told me, was extraordinarily intense (Personal communication).

- 248 (Continued from 245) Onno was taken by his friend to club gatherings at which he danced and posed in the nude. He enjoyed performing this way so much that he not only got an erection during his act but sometimes even had a spontaneous orgasm and ejaculated over some of the front-row spectators (Personal communication).

Many boys, especially during puberty or early adolescence, greatly enjoy showing off in front of a camera their developing bodies and newly won adult-sized genitals, and it takes little persuasion to have them pose as nude models for their friends or a professional photographer (Wilson 1982, 52). Girls are less likely to do this (Linedecker 1981, 28). Camera-owning boys not infrequently take photos of one another's erections (Martinson 1981, 91). "I can go on the streets of Chicago (...) and put a sign on me saying 'I'm a pornographer,' and I'll need a small regiment to protect me from those who want to be photographed. (...) It's very productive to the ego. Getting models is the easiest thing in the world. Some people are so sure of their lack of worth. They've been told they're a bunch of nogoodnicks, and they want anything to assure them that they are really worthwhile. That somebody thinks something of them, and will invest time and money to photograph them—this is such a build (sic) to their ego that they're ecstatic." (Linedecker 1981, 231-232 quoting a well-known producer of boy-sex movies)

- 249 In a Dutch provincial town, the owner of a photo studio which specialises in nude pictures for homophile magazines is always receiving offers from 14- to 18-year-old boys wanting to pose. Often they spontaneously get persistent erections and some are so excited that their penises become moist (Personal communication).
- 250 (Continued from 162) "A Belgian acquaintance asked me to make nude photos of his 15-year-old friend, since he himself did not have the necessary equipment. The boy, a grammar-school pupil, arrived at five o'clock, and while he was undressing I saw he already had a big hard-on. 'It's been that way all afternoon,' the boy declared. 'In class I was thinking all the time that pretty soon I'd be posing stark naked in front of two men, and this really turned me on.' " (Personal communication)

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

The great male nude photographers of the past, like the Baron von Gloeden (1856-1931) in Sicily (Barrington 1974; Leslie 1977; Peyrefitte 1949) and Hajo Ortil (1905-1983) in Bremen, were very popular with their young models. In a report to the Subcommittee on Select Education of the U. S. Congress (1982, 15) it is stated that children are "willing participants" because the photographers "offer friendship, interest, and a concerned attitude the child is unable to find elsewhere." (See also Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 423 & 430.) The Illinois report (1980, 308) mentions that in seeing the results of their posing, the photos or movies of their naked bodies, many boys experience excitement. One photographer told me that he used this effect to get boys to return for another photo session.

- 251 (Continued from 84) "One day when he was fourteen Max came with his older friend to visit me. I had just bought a movie camera and Max was enthusiastic over the suggestion that we try it out on him. He was looking at a toy I had given him and I started the camera. 'Take off your shirt,' his friend suggested. Max did so immediately, and then asked, with his hand already on the zip of his trousers, 'Go on?' 'If you want.' Max then quickly took off all his clothes and pointed to the first pubic hairs that were beginning to appear around the base of his penis. He rubbed his penis in order to make it grow. And so we finished filming. Max remained naked, playing in the room, until it was time to go down for dinner. Three months later the two of them visited me again. Naturally Max wanted to see 'his' movie. The viewing excited him tremendously. 'That's really turning me on, looking at me naked on the screen,' he exclaimed. 'Feel how stiff it's got?' And he took my hand and put it on the front of his trousers. 'Can't we do it again?' he asked. I got my camera, turned the lights on, and in a matter of seconds Max had stripped off all his clothes. Now he wanted to be filmed masturbating, and when it was over he pointed proudly to the drops of sperm on his belly." (Personal communication)

What clearly emerges from these examples is that there was no question of the boys being made to do degrading, humiliating, disagreeable, perhaps even disgusting work. Like many other boys, they responded positively to the desire of boy-lovers to make permanent visual records of them during this period of their sexual evolution when change is so swift (Matzneff 1977, 148; Rossman 1976, 38-39; Schult 1982, 103). Many boy-lovers enjoy letting their acquaintances share in their happiness by showing them photos of their beloved boys—or even the boys themselves—naked. All parties concerned enjoy this; it is a part of their sexual pleasure. And not infrequently are the boys themselves thinking about the future: "We should take photos now, for later on. It will be nice then to see how we are now, what we do, what I look like."

- 252 (Continued from 195) When Conny was 18 he insisted on showing his fiancée the photos Jan and he had made, with a delayed-action shutter, of their sexual activities when he was only thirteen. (Personal communication)

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

The gravest fault, the most serious inadequacy, of commercial photo erotica is that they seldom reveal the real joy of sex. What one usually sees are paid models performing rather complicated couplings under the bright glare of floodlights with weary or bored expressions on their faces (Sebbar 1980, 287). It impresses one as a sort of gymnastic exercise with the sexual organs, executed on command. Amateur photographers, whose products are often technically less polished, sometimes come up with more enjoyable results than the professionals.

- 253 In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation is a series of photographs made by a Dane. One of his acquaintances had a love relationship with a big, handsome fourteen-year-old boy, but neither had any place where they could safely meet in private. The photographer put his one-room apartment at their disposal, with the intention of leaving the house himself for an hour or two. But both the man and the boy asked him to stay, since they weren't the least embarrassed about what they intended to do. So he remained. After a few subsequent visits they insisted that he take pictures, and they had sex before the camera in every possible way and position. The photographer concentrated less on their genitals (which nevertheless did plainly show) than on the expressions on the partners' faces. One can see how the boy virtually radiates with love; his expressions change between tenderness, raw joy, pleasure and finally happiness. This series of photos is a wonderful documentation of the physical expression of a love which is mutual, of the aesthetics of sexual conjugation.

The sexual union of two fine bodies is in itself neither obscene nor unaesthetic. Obscenity lies only in the eye of the spectator (Borneman 1978, 932). Since sex is a lustful activity, looking at it may generate pleasant lustful feelings. Sexual excitement automatically induces a stronger tension in one's entire musculature (Masters & Johnson 1966, 173), thus heightening the beauty of the naked body. "At this moment, when the culminating act of life is about to be accomplished, the individual thus reaches his supreme state of radiant beauty." (Ellis 1914, V - 166) Most impressive, symptomatic of the strongest lust, are the involuntary spasms—at times almost violent—of the belly muscles as orgasm is approached. The undulating, supple movements of the lower body and the tension in the buttocks every time the penis is pushed against or inside the partner should inspire aesthetic admiration. Equally arresting are the changes in facial expression, laughing, pleasurably excited, seductive during fore-play, vacant or even distorted as if in pain at climax, peaceful, relaxed, liberated after the wave of lust has rolled by.

The fact that the full visual beauty of sexual intercourse is revealed only seldom in amateur pictures, and almost never in their commercial counterparts, leaves us with the impression that most models perform before the cameras as though it were a difficult or even disagreeable duty rather than a joy-filled demonstration of their talents. This is regrettable, but not tragic. Everything we have said about sexual service exchanged for payment applies here. It is

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

just that the risk of being exploited, forced to do disgusting or humiliating things, is even greater in this business than in prostitution. A boy earning quite a bit as a photo or film model might fear losing his job if he refuses to do something he doesn't want to do. And the demands of dealers, who always try to offer their clients something new and surprising, become more and more exacting. Boy models, who often come from broken families or are victims of neglect, can lose their sense of dignity (Illinois 1980, 9, 205) and be deeply traumatised (Subcommittee 1982, III; Geiser 1979, 115). Younger models especially can be mercilessly exploited and hurt. "Streetwise boys 14 to 18" (Subcommittee 1977, 15) might avoid this particular danger, but still run the risk, upon publication of their pictures, of being recognised and then rejected by the people around them.

In this connection, the enthusiastically propagated myth that "kiddie-porn" is a million- or even billion-dollar industry (Subcommittee 1977, 61) is a real threat to youth, since it might tempt a number of greedy people to have a try in it. The Committee of the Illinois Legislature, after careful research, arrived at the conclusion that the rumours were entirely unfounded and that "kiddie-porn" neither is nor was big business (1980, 60, 167, 169, 203, 205, 227, 278, 283). They form part of the "child pornography panic" of which the American feminist Gayle Rubin rightly said, "Moral panics rarely alleviate any real problem, because they are aimed at chimeras and signifiers." In the struggle against sex, a kind of demonology is resorted to. "It presents most sexual behavior in the worst possible light. Its descriptions of erotic conduct always use the worst available example as if it were representative. It presents the most disgusting pornography, the most exploited forms of prostitution..." (1984, 296, 300)

Some countries have tried to resolve the "problem" of pornography by simply forbidding the production and sale of pictures of naked children. The effect might well be an increase in criminality. Kutschinsky (1970) demonstrated convincingly that erotic pictures are a kind of safety-valve for sexual aggression against children; thus, with prohibition, the number of assaults upon and rapes of children will be relatively higher. At the same time the illicit trade will continue—penal laws are not very effective!—but now in secrecy, as a black market for the wealthy, and out of control. The relatively cheap books and magazines which once gave pleasure to customers will disappear. The legal prohibition of pornography frequently serves the interests of the producers, since prices tend to sky-rocket. Producers have even been known to agitate against legalisation of their products, just as during the 1930s, when America was discussing the repeal of prohibition of alcohol, the moonshiners and distributors of moonshine liquor gave money to the Salvation Army and prohibitionist congressmen in an attempt to keep alcohol illegal (Daniélou 1981, 78).

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

A better solution might be found with greater safeguards for the liberty of all concerned. Subject to prosecution should be the publication and sale of photographs and movies without mention of the producer, and every distributor and retail seller should be held responsible for the veracity of these data. The producer should likewise be obliged to register the names and addresses of his models and be able to produce their written consent to publication. This consent should be counter-signed in the case of minors under fifteen by their parents. The professional producer should keep a register of all his negatives with a code number, the date they were taken and the names of the models, all of this to be periodically inspected by the police. If the police have cause to suspect, from the photographs or these registers, that a child is being exploited by his own parents, they should report this to the youth protection authorities (Cf. Subcommittee 1977, 445, 448; Geiser 1979, 86; Constantine 1981, 260-261). These ideas, as proposed by Prof. Constantine, suppose, of course, a society honestly concerned about the fundamental sexual rights of children.

Sexual Violence and Cruelty

All responsible writers agree that in man/boy relations the use of violence is very exceptional (Baurmann 1983, 111, 157, 2212, 356, 422, 430; Rouweler-Wutz 1976, 11; Geiser 1979, 35; Wolters 1982, 98; Howells 1981, 81). While many ancient Greek pottery pictures show scenes of women being anally raped, there are nearly no similar depictions involving boys (Koch-Harnack 1983, 62). Homophiles, proportionally, kill fewer boys than heterophiles kill girls (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 380; Geiser 1979, 77). Gebhard, who set up a separate category for men employing violence in each group of the sexual offenders he studied, did not have to do so for the group of men who had had sex with boys since their number was negligible (1965, 272, 788). It seems likely that in these exception cases the perpetrator was a pseudopaedophile, that is, a man who was using the child merely as a substitute for the more-desired adult partner (Duvert 1980, 167; Baurmann 1983, 304). Very occasionally a boy is raped by a woman. Most sexual violence against boys is committed by their peers (Baurmann 1983, 240).

The fact that boys are much more accessible to sexual approach than girls, and generally respond more positively, is certainly of importance here (Baurmann 1983, 180, 183, 320-322, 356, 378, 387; Rush 1980, 246).

Kerscher (1978, 148-149) gives a long list of traumatic reactions formerly ascribed by a number of authors to any sexual contact a child experienced, but it is probably applicable only in the case of acts imposed upon the child against his will. The list includes troubled sleep, crying in the middle of the night, an overall feeling of anxiety, stuttering, shyness with strangers, lack of confidence, fits of apathy, moods of depression, vexatious feelings of guilt, psychosomatic

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

symptoms, psychoses and attempted suicide. Non-experts in general assess the possible harmful effects much more severely than do those with professional sexological training. Moreover, research has revealed that even child victims of sexual violence may make a complete recovery from this bad experience if people afterwards treat them properly (Baurmann 1983, 328, 331, 175).

Throughout all of human history, not just girls and women, but boys, too, have been raped to humiliate or to punish them. In ancient Rome, rape was a punishment a judge could impose, and there is one story of a boy fettered naked on a bed being raped by a female prostitute (Bloch 1912, 637).

- 254 An American boy of 16 "was picked up hitchhiking by two women. They held a knife on him and forced him to have oral sex and intercourse with them. After taking his wallet, they let him out alongside the road." When he complained to the police they told him, "You're lucky to get it." (Geiser 1979, 18)

Attalos, army commander in the service of King Philip of Macedon, wanted to wreak revenge upon young Pausanias, and had him anally raped by ten slaves, one after the other. When Philip refused to punish Attalos (for Philip could not dispense with the services of his general) Pausanias slew the king (Peyrefitte 1977, 694; Renault 1969). The humiliation and loss of self-respect following rape can sometimes have a tragic sequel. In 1980 a 12-year-old American committed suicide after having been violently assaulted by a priest (*Revue de Presse*, Paris, 21 Dec. 1980). A boy of 14, after being anally raped by his 16- and 18-year-old brothers, turned to prostitution shortly thereafter (Van Camp 1980, 86).

Some authors claim that the after-effects are very severe, others say they are negligible (Tsai *et al.* 1981, 201-202; Geisler 1959, 8). This divergence of expert opinion only highlights the fact that all depends on the way the child is taken care of afterwards. One child psychiatrist equated the traumatising effects of sexual assault upon a child with the effects of an up-bringing in which the child is told that sex is dirty and sinful or is punished for masturbating (Marinkelle 1976, 299; Geiser 1979, 142).

In wartime, the rape of boys by victorious soldiers is a common phenomenon. Pearl Buck's novel *Dragon Seed* (1945) centres around such an occurrence during the Chinese-Japanese war; the victim afterwards leads a guerrilla band in merciless attacks upon the army of occupation. Guyotat (1967, 471) describes a similar rape of a young boy in *Tombeau pour cinq cent mille soldats*. Sometimes the psychology of the relationship between criminal and victim is very complex, as Ross Berliner so beautifully showed in his novel, *The Manhood Ceremony* (1978). It is a horrifying story of a 13-year-old boy kidnapped by a psychopathic sex-murderer who nevertheless, after being raped, follows the man even though he has chances to escape.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

One complicating factor is that for some boys a bit of force is often not unwelcome; a few actually harbour masochistic desires to be raped.

- 255 The first case is well illustrated by an 11-year-old boy who described his contacts with an older man: "At first he used a little force, because I didn't know if I wanted to do it or not, but I'm glad he did, because I wouldn't have dared otherwise, although I was very curious." (Möller 1983, 71)

- 256 The second can be found in the masturbation fantasies of an American schoolboy. He imagines he has played basketball against an all-black team and won, which caused bad feelings among the losers. "I'm the last one to leave the showers, and on the way back I become lost in the maze of strange lockers. Then suddenly I turn a corner and I find myself in the middle of the black team, who are all drying off from the showers too. I quickly turn to leave but my exit is blocked. Their captain comes towards me and he tells me that I should be taught a lesson for beating them. First he tells me to dry off his whole body. So, completely nude, I do this. Then he stands up on the bench, spreads his legs and tells me to blow-dry his asshole, balls, and cock. I do this, too. When I start on his cock it starts to harden, and he orders me to go down on it. I willingly do this. Just about when it is about to come I feel a stiff prick going up my ass. This goes on until I've serviced and been fucked by all the team's cocks. With jism from a whole team dripping out of my ass and mouth, my arms and feet are tied. I am then made to get into a tall gym clothes-locker, then one by one the team members piss, then jack off on me, while calling me names. Then the door is shut and locked on me. Later my teammates come looking for me. They hear my calls for help, force the door open, and find me there, tied nude, abused, and covered with piss and come. The rest of the jocks agree that it was a vengeance against our team, which it was, but they'll never know how much I wanted it to happen." (Hite 1981, 797)

- 257 A 14-year-old told Reeves (1983, 1), "When the guys gang-bang a chick, I jerk off afterwards, and I make believe I'm the chick."

Such fantasies of being raped are particularly common in homophile males (Masters & Johnson 1980, 186-187, 198; Barrington 1981, 173). A subject of Barrington (1981, 53) wrote, "Sometimes I like to think of myself as being fuck-raped by a dozen naked men on a beach. I like my lovers to be athletic 'studs' 25 to 35 years of age, with lots of body hair and very big cocks. I like doing everything in sex that is possible and I do like to be hurt when I have sex."

With older boys, no man can succeed in effecting anal penetration if the victim puts up a real resistance. When an adolescent claims that his anus was penetrated during his sleep and that he only woke up when his violator ejaculated, this is quite impossible. He must either have been drugged or is lying to cover up the fact that he was more or less permissive (Hirschfeld 1920, III 109). The famous Arab poet Abu Nuwas tells in one of his poems how an attempt to rape a sleeping boy resulted in the boy beating him up (Wagner

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

1965, 106). Violent rape of an older boy is only possible with the assistance of several individuals, as in a so-called "gang-bang" (rape by a group). But a man operating alone may nevertheless impose his desires by criminally abusing his authority, as, for example, if one of the masters in a reformatory or boarding school threatens a boy with punishment or failing grades if he does not submit and rewards his compliance with privileges (Plummer 1981, 242). Photos still circulate in some English circles of orgies held on a training ship where the owner regularly abused his position and the bodies of the boys put in his care (d'Arch Smith 1970, 158).

258 In Hursty Richey's novel *Near Fatal Attraction* (1977, 358-360) there is a scene in which the Boy-Scout leader, Bertram, blackmails 15-year-old Tom into submission by threatening to reveal a serious crime the boy has committed. Tom is naked. Bertram is washing him. Tom implores:

"Please don't put your hand on me there! Not now, Mr. Bertram. Please, I don't feel like doing that, now."

"Just hold still. It won't take long. You'll feel better when it's over. Just hold still and relax. It'll all be over in a few moments."

"Please don't. It hurts me, now. Don't. Please don't. I got hurt inside the last time you done that. Please don't do it again. Not now, anyway."

"I'll take it real easy. If you'll just relax and hold still. It won't hurt. I promise. Just relax."

"Please don't. It'll hurt. After the last time (...) my underpants, they had blood on them."

"Hold still. It won't hurt. I'll do it easy. I've just got to. If you'll just hold still, I'll be easy. I promise."

"Don't. Please don't. Something got ripped inside of me the last time. I can feel it sometimes. If there's blood in my underpants or in the bed again, the Judge (his tutor) will make me go to the doctor. (...) Can't you do something else? I'll do anything to you—anything you want me to do. I'll suck it for you, like I done the last time. But don't do that. It hurts too much."

"I just got to. I can't help it. I'll be easy. Now, lay still. It'll be over a lot quicker."

"It'll hurt too much. If you don't let me alone, I'll tell the Judge."

"You won't tell anybody about this. If you do, I'll have to tell then about Luke's death..." (Bertram then enumerates all the evidence he has against Tom.) "Who do you think they will believe—you or me? When I tell them all that and Chad shows them those pictures, they'll just think you got hurt inside getting screwed by the other boys. They'll just believe you're a murderous little pervert trying to get somebody else in trouble for what you've done."

"I won't tell. But, please, stop doing that. It hurts too much. The last time something got tore inside of me and it hurts sometimes. Please don't. Yours is too big. It hurts me terrible. You can do anything! But not that!"

"I'm taking it real easy—real slow. Now, lay real still and it won't hurt. It'll all be over in a moment."

"Please don't, Mr. Bertram. Please stop! It hurts too much!"

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

"Lay still! Any time, any place, if I want you, you just better be ready! Any time, any place! Do you understand? I'll let you know when I want you. And if you ever tell or if you refuse me, I'll have to tell them the truth about you. You'll do it because you enjoy every minute of it! Don't tell me you don't. I've seen you with the boys. You didn't know I was watching. (...) I saw what you did—what they did to you—and you enjoyed it. You loved every minute of it! Don't try to tell me that's not true. I've seen you screwed up the ass too many times. Don't try to tell me different. Now, hold still! You'll hold still for me! Do you understand? I'll make you hold still."

"I understand. But take it easy. Please be easy. Stop! Stop! Not so far! It hurts! Please, it hurts!"

What was here obtained by blackmail, in other criminal cases is extorted at gun- or knife-point or by threatening torture.

259 "The victim in the Hodge case was a 12-year-old boy. Police reports indicate that the boy left his father's place of work and was walking through the back parking lot on September 17, 1978, when he noticed that a man was following him. The boy walked several blocks further on until he was approached by the man, who asked him to help him carry something from his car. When the boy hesitated, the man offered to pay him and produced a wallet, but the boy noticed that it contained no money. He then declined the offer and began to walk away when the man pulled a knife from his pocket and told the victim not to run away and that if he did he would 'get him'. He told the boy he knew who he was and where he lived and that he would get him one way or another. The man took the boy to a parking garage and forced him into a freight elevator. The man pushed the emergency stop button between floors, preventing the elevator from moving. Then the man told the boy to remove all of his clothes. When the boy began to cry the man pulled his knife out and told him to shut up or he would be stabbed. After the boy removed his clothing, the man stuffed a handkerchief in his mouth, removed his own clothing and performed an act of sodomy on the boy for ten minutes." After this the man threatened to kill him if he told anybody what had occurred. The boy, however, told his father and the father managed to find the man, who was arrested. (Illinois Legislative Commission 1980, 40)

260 Robin Maugham describes an 'approved school' in England. "In this particular school, this house master would make a kid come in, who had done something wrong, and say, 'Now look, it's either a whipping or you can let down your trousers.' And then he would *rape* them—and hurt them most terribly. Now, I was told this by one boy from this school, and from a completely different town in England from another boy who had been at the school, I heard exactly the same story." (1982, 144)

Senator Alan Cranston of California, investigating the use of Federal funds to finance child care facilities, "heard reports of children being strung up by the arms and legs in iron cages, held in solitary confinement in leg irons and handcuffs, tear-gassed and placed as punishment in dormitories with older inmates who sexually abuse them." (Linedecker 1981, 69)

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

That the "gang-bang" has a history of at least 25 centuries can be seen on an antique Greek amphora where gesticulating naked men with big erections queue up to satisfy themselves upon their victim, who is half-lying, half-kneeling on the floor (Koch-Harnack 1983, 217).

In the American prison system, it seems, such rapes of young inmates are as common as they are in male juvenile correctional institutions (Schultz 1973, 148).

261 One of my correspondents wrote, "The next time I got assaulted and misused was when I was seventeen years old in jail. I was in a tank with thirty others and I think all thirty of them got me."

262 In Los Angeles a teenager arrested for vagrancy, a completely "innocent" boy, was thrown into the county jail. "The very first night, many of us sleeping in cell-block s corridor due to overflowing cells, I feel the famous Stealthy Group. Dimly I perceive in the gloom two looming blacks, each roughly twice my weight and age, and heavily muscled, one with razor in hand. At once, razor is at my throat. I am turned over, stripped of underpants, sat on, informed that razor is now at my 'balls, baby'. My butt is raised, my knees spread, he is between them. Initial reaction to this point: incomprehension, disbelief, denial, immobility; in retrospect probably lucky for me. Thence what might be termed in court acquiescence, penetration of anus (the pure shock of it), incredible pain, two to three minutes of being fucked (precisely the appropriate word), then flashlight beam, guard. Attackers flee as he approaches. I remember more vividly than the rape, the *after*: shame, shame beside which the outrage and pain of the doing are nothing; guilt; longing for oblivion (...) need to pretend it never happened, could not have happened (and guards only too glad to go along) (...) What it did to the body was so very less important, torn flesh, bleeding and all, than what it did to the mind. (...) Nothing ever so damaged *me* as a *person*, nothing ever so violated the very integrity of my individuality, nor so truly *hurt* me as that rape." (Hite 1981, 768-769)

Such a crime is not primarily sexual; it is a crime of violence. It is "an act of violence which may use intercourse as a way of inflicting pain, its main aim being to humiliate and degrade the victim." (Roberts, quoted by Howells 1980, 23; Geiser 1979, 14-16, 19, 83)

263 In India, a correspondent told me, there are paedophiles who, seeing a good-looking prepubertal boy in the streets, accuse him of theft. The boy is arrested and, awaiting trial, put in jail. The accuser then bribes the guards to let him "interview" the boy, and takes advantage of the youngster's helpless position to rape him. Subsequently he might even hire the boy out to other prisoners. Thus before the boy comes to trial (and is inevitably acquitted for lack of evidence) he may have been abused by as many as 150 men. (Personal communication)

There can be no legal or moral justification for such disgusting crimes. A human act which in itself is only pleasant and good is perverted into a degrading

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

torture. It happens, as do other kinds of atrocities, but fortunately they are committed only rarely by paedophiles, who as a rule show little inclination to violence. Boy-lovers tend to be less aggressive, less dominant than the average male, some experts say (Fisher & Howell 1970, 623, 625; Wilson 1982, 27, 114). In one sample of 100 Dutch cases of sexual assault on children, 91 involved girls and only 9 boys (Wafelbakker 1983, 96). Of course we should not make the mistake of idealising boy-lovers and refuse to recognise that there really are scoundrels and mentally ill people among them, as does Sonenschein (1983). But the vast majority would agree wholeheartedly with Hieron, as quoted by Xenophon: "As for sexual acts with a beautiful boy, those are sweetest which he willingly performs." (Peyrefitte 1977, 519-520) Gundel Koch-Harnack (1983, 243) makes the curious observation that in ancient Greek vase art the gods are decidedly more aggressive in their sexual advances toward boys than are human males.

Unfortunately moralistic, mendacious propagandists try to make the public believe that criminal acts like the fictional Bertram's assault on his victim Tom characterise all man/boy relationships. There is absolutely no evidence of this, no grounds for spreading such vicious misinformation, but it is easy to organise a crusade around this theme, financially profitable for its leaders, and it will always have the moralists' blessing. In truth there is no more validity to such propaganda than to the claim that wife-raping is universally characteristic of marriage.

Rather than spreading horror stories about child molesters, stories which neither help nor protect youngsters but only add to their mental burden, these moralists and propagandists should stop for a moment and consider how their activities increase the suffering of genuinely molested and raped children by making it more difficult for them to talk about their plights. Lacking all sexual knowledge, or fed only highly distorted moralistic information, children so deprived have, first of all, no way of understanding what the criminal really wants and so are unable to take appropriate action against it, and, second, they are afraid to tell their parents, or others who are charged with protecting them, frankly and without guilt exactly what happened. Just as with incest, an S.O.S. telephone service for children is a necessity.

264 Strangely enough, reality occasionally produces the obverse of the fictional Mr. Bertram. The January 1972 issue of the German magazine *Pikbube* carried an article about a 15-year-old boy from Hashude who forced two adult men at knifepoint to let him sodomise them.

Thus far we have been discussing violence as means to a sexual end; we now turn to cases where inflicting physical or mental suffering stimulates or increases

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

lust (sadism). "Beating, choking and degrading a child may enhance sexual excitement." (Howells 1981, 83)

265 In depicting the horrors of a colonial war, Guyotat (1967, 95) tells of a soldier in the occupying army torturing to death a young schoolboy; as he beats his victim with a stick, the man has a spontaneous orgasm.

266 The best known example from European history is the French nobleman Gilles de Rais (1400-1440) who killed a great number of boys between the ages of seven and twenty, and a few girls as well. He or his assistants would slowly strangle or bleed to death his naked victims, and as they were in the throes of their last agonies he would rub his penis on their bellies and there ejaculate (Bataille 1965, 196, 272-273, 312).

In these cases the sexual element is readily apparent, but often it remains hidden, even to the actor himself. There is, for example, flagellism in education (Wörenkamp & Perkauf 1932) posing as pedagogy. The deep emotions which recently surfaced in England, for example, justifying corporal punishment in schools shows that far more than dispassionate pedagogical philosophy was involved (Bullough 1976, 479-480; Bronslau 1968, 114-115). "Like the genital mutilations of the tribal ceremonies, this form of punishment—buttock caning—has always had a sexual flavour and cannot be disassociated from the phenomenon of Status Sex." (Morris 1969, 190) The evil is passed on from generation to generation, since such disciplinary education fosters sadomasochism in the educated (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 533). Worsley (1967, 46, 101-102) had long experience of British schools, first as a boy and later as a teacher, and there was no doubt in his mind about the sexual aspect of caning.

It has been noted that in English schools ugly and skinny boys are much less frequently caned than the more attractive ones (Dühren 1912, I-359)

267 Kraemer (1976, 18-19) tells the story of John who at sixteen "was made a prefect at school. He now had responsibilities for others and according to the rules he was expected to cane some of the boys. The other prefects made no secret of the sexual excitement which caning gave them, but John was astonished and even outraged by their frivolous talk." After his first actual experience, however, he found himself violently aroused and had to masturbate. Dühren also tells of an especially cruel teacher who always ran off to a brothel after a caning session (1912, I-397). And a German correspondent of mine who was brought up in a boys' home said it was common knowledge among the inmates that the teachers always got erections while administering corporal punishment.

This is the underlying reason why the right to punish is always advocated with such intense emotion.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

268 In 1976 Jeffrey Campbell was expelled from a school in Glasgow because he refused to submit to a whipping as punishment. His crime was walking through the cemetery on the way home from school. All British authorities supported the decision of the school governors, so Jeffrey's mother appealed to the European Court at Strasbourg. On February 25, 1982 the court by a majority of six votes decided that Great Britain had been guilty of a violation of human rights. The English judge was the only one who voted against the decision. The National Union of Headmasters in Great Britain was appalled and advised its members not to change its practices and go on caning anyway (*NRC Handelsblad*, 26 Feb., 1982).

An English radio journalist asked me in an interview in 1977 if I did not think sex with children was disgusting and loathsome. I replied, "I do think that the form of sex with children which is most popular in England—the caning of boys and girls in school—is disgusting and loathsome. But the form which in England is strictly forbidden—tenderness and caressing—I fully approve of."

The case of Nicholas Udall, Headmaster of Eton from 1534 to 1541, is characteristic of a society which more easily forgives sexual offences when they are motivated by cruelty. Udall "gained a reputation for inflicting corporal punishment. In 1541, accused of committing 'an unnatural crime' with two students and a servant, he confessed his crime." While others in that century were commonly burned alive for similar offences, Udall was only kept for a brief time in prison and "eventually ended up as headmaster at another school, Westminster". (Bullough 1979, 142)

On the whole, however, children, and especially the smaller, more vulnerable boys and girls, fall victim much less frequently to sadistic child molesters—the great worry of the public!—than to violent treatment from their own parents. In The Netherlands, for example, between one and three children are killed every year by sex criminals, but during the same period 120 die from punishments inflicted by their own parents, 160 suffer permanently crippling brain damage, 1200 are seriously wounded and 12,000 less seriously hurt (Everts-Goddard 1972, 2). And these figures do not even include cases of intentional malnourishment, refusal to provide warm enough clothes, deliberate exposure to cold and rain, intentionally leaving small children at the edge of canals and highways, etc. (Clemens Schröner 1978, 100). This in a nation known to love its children. In West Germany in 1982 five children were victims of sex murder, 727 were killed in road accidents, 112 were murdered and 1500-2000 were seriously hurt by their parents (Baurmann 1983, 21, 276, 277, 479, 710). In the United Kingdom in eight cases of child murder, only one is related to sex (West 1981, 259). "It is a horrifying fact that physical abuse from parents has become the number one cause of child death in United States. Close to three million children have been abused every year for the past five years." (Janus 1981, 120). "Department of Health, Education and Welfare figures indicate that perhaps five children a day perish and 12 a day suffer permanent brain damage directly related to child abuse." "One million children at any given moment are in danger of their lives at the hands of their parents or custodians." (Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 27, 40). The family, in fact, emerges as the

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

most violent major social group in our society, after the army and the police (Beyaert 1982, 99). Nevertheless the press goes on making a great fuss about sexual crimes, simply because they *are* sexual and thus seem more horrifying and sensational.

Where fantasies about naked bodies convulsed by lust become taboo, the image of a semi-naked boy convulsed by pain under the lashes of a whip or the strokes of a cane may become an attractive sexual substitute—especially since flagellation can be morally exalted, pedagogically justified and supported by quotations from the Bible. The pleasant tickling in a bully's penis, or even its erection, is not something he is likely to spurn! And a special sting in the whole situation is that there is often some sexual reaction in the victim himself, since in puberty and adolescence masochistic feelings are hardly exceptional.

- 269 (Continued from 201) Vincent talked about his experiences in a German home for neglected youth. "Later we had male teachers rather than nuns. Neither one of them could do their job without beating you. Why? A lot of the boys had already committed crimes, stealing from cars, etc. Caning was the only way to make them submit. You could often hear them screaming when 'the yellow uncle' went into action. It didn't matter if you were as old as 17—it was all the same to them. And all of them did it. Officially the punishment for disobedience, laziness or insolence was getting locked up in a cell for one or two days. But we all hated this. So the teacher would say, 'You want to be locked up? There's still an empty cell.' But I didn't want that, so he'd say, 'Then we'll discuss it the Spanish way.' In his room he'd yell, 'Hurry up, bend over, student! Way over. Hands on your shoes!' Until your arse was right up in the air and your pants were stretched tight. And then he'd fetch his 'assistant', as they called it. And down it came. Some of them made you take their caning kneeling on a chair. Or over the back of the sofa—not just the little boys but the older ones up to 16. All these men had to have your trousers stretched tight. Stupid, for we all wore jeans and jeans are always tight over your arse. If some kid resisted another teacher was called in to hold him, and then his pants were pulled right down and he got it on his bare behind. So the boys preferred to stretch their trousers. By the time I was 16 I was used to it; I didn't mind anymore. But when I felt my trousers stretching and the man had taken his cane out of the cupboard I was already starting to feel horny. Natural, isn't it? And often when the cane cut into my buttocks I had an orgasm, and the man would see and tell me, 'It looks like you need some more beating.' When I was allowed to stand up again I could see he too had a hard-on in his pants. Every night this one man caned three boys, one after another. He always found some reason. Now I'm convinced it really turned him on, and he'd jerk off afterwards." (Personal communication)

Apart from this kind of active sadism disguised as educational discipline, a number of boy-lovers indulge in conscious sadistic fantasies.

- 270 G. K. van het Reve, who received the highest Dutch literary award, wrote—in English—*A Prison Song of Love* in which a naked boy in jail is severely whipped until at last, after a brutal lash on his genitals, he breaks down and betrays his friend. About

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

the English author Ralph Chubb (1892-1960) we are told, "Pain and death involving boys fascinates him. In *An Appendix* he describes watching a bout between two boy boxers and his excitement at the thought that he is to sleep, that night, with the bruised and battered loser. In *The Secret Country* (...) a gypsy-boy suggests that Chubb tie him to a tree and whip him. Chubb demurs but in retrospect regrets that he did not accept the invitation for he feels sure both partners would have enjoyed the experience. In *The Heavenly Cupid* he varies the theme of the early *Sacrifice of Youth* in a poem which treats of the beating to death of a young Spartan in a form of ritual sacrifice." (D'Arch Smith 1970, 228)

Men who entertain such inclinations sometimes wish to tie up their boy-friends and photograph them that way. One artist who produced a large quantity of such bondage drawings always depicted the boy with an erect, even ejaculating, penis. His sadism is evidently coupled with supposed masochistic tendencies in the boy. However, those I have personally come to know have in reality been extremely kind and tender in their relations with boys and willing to make all kinds of personal sacrifices to help their young friends. We might recall the famous Marquis de Sade, who was a violent opponent of the death penalty, still writing books in which girls, men and boys are tortured and killed by the most ghastly means. De Sade, who never actually killed anybody, was reviled as a monster of cruelty and thrown in prison by morally outraged people who, themselves, had murdered hundreds of victims. De Sade may not have had what we would call a friendly personality, but he was certainly kinder than his bloodthirsty judges! (Fontanié 1981, 583-589)

Without doubt there is a mysterious link between sexual pleasure and pain. Plato had already observed the similarity of the body's reactions: sexual delight "convulses the whole body, makes it contract at times spasmodically; colour changes are extreme; arms and legs move in all directions; the breath is panting; there is a general over-excitement; there are mad screams." (Foucault 1984, 142) Especially around the age of puberty, boys are apt to respond to conditions of tension, stress and suspense with sexual excitement, expressed in erection and even ejaculation. Long before Rousseau wrote in his *Confessions* the famous passage about his voluptuous feelings during physical punishment, the Greeks were well aware that a beating on the buttocks was sexually exciting to boys. Whipping naked boys was part of a ritual in honour of the goddess Artemis (Diana), and, since this sacrifice was made publicly in front of the temple, there were always many spectators. Artemis goddess had an epithet, "the straight standing" (Orthia), and there was a ribald joke that this referred to the up-standing penises of the whipped boys as well as the whipping priests (Licht 1926, III 110-111; Borneman 1978, 609).

- 271 The novelist Peyrefitte paints such a scene: "Fifteen adolescents, entirely naked, their arms hanging down, presented their buttocks to the priests who were whipping

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

them bloody. Obviously some of the boys were responding sexually, as was said of the ritual whippings in Sparta. Their sexual organs, some very large, popped like pikes under the blows. They pressed their lips tight to stifle any outcry, and only opened them when a beating was renewed to shout, 'Pelops!' Their bodies trembling all over, their hair swinging over their shoulders, the rhythmic melody of the flute-player, the impassive faces of the whipping priests, the blood trickling down the boys' legs, the swinging, rising or shrinking genitals—all this formed as strange a scene as Panaenus ever painted. 'The spectators,' said Kleotimos, 'are looking for the boys who cannot hold back their sperm.' As soon as he said this a shout of joy went up around them: 'Io! Io!' A handsome ephebe had faltered as he called the name of Pelops, as the wave of ecstasy had broken within him. The girls ran to the temple of Juno to make there a vow in favour of their marriages, eyes wide with the auspicious omen they had just witnessed." Kinesias, the boy who had ejaculated his seed on this occasion, afterwards tells Alexander that he was twelve the first time he had been whipped by a priest, who had simultaneously inserted an artificial phallus into his anal opening. Ever since he had loved this kind of treatment.

Peyrefitte describes such an episode in Ancient Sparta. New boys being whipped for the first time are allowed to embrace from behind a friend. The bodily contact lessens the pain and increases masochistic sexual excitement. The whipping goes on until blood runs down the legs of the victim—and the boy's seed runs down the legs of his friend (1977, 28-29, 642-643, 660)

272 In Stöwer's novel about Antinous, Emperor Hadrian describes in a letter how his young slave Thrasyllus, a fine-looking black boy, was punished: "They tied Thrasyllus's wrists together and hoisted them up to a roof-beam. Thrasyllus looked at me with his black eyes, fixed and unflinching. There was fear, helplessness, perhaps even devotion in them. (...) I gave the signal. At the first blow Thrasyllus screamed like an animal. All his muscles contracted, he writhed under his lifted arms. The second blow he suffered in silence. His eyes became moist, his mouth opened, and a strange excitement is now visible. Awaiting the next blow Thrasyllus's body curves, his breast arches forward, his hips are drawn back, and at the last blow his seed spurts from him. A protracted, plaintive sound accompanies this spectacle, which appals all of us. The strong body relaxes and hangs like those of the crucified along the road to Capua. I order him to be untied." (1967, 224)

273 Borneman (1978, 1151) tells of a doctor who, as a boy, asked his comrades to tie him up and then forcefully masturbate him, since when they did this he experienced such a marvellous orgasm. And one of Barrington's subjects, a black Jamaican, said (1981, 59): "I don't like being handled too gently. I prefer being tossed off by someone with a pretty rough grip. I like to be held down when I 'come' and I like my partner to keep on pulling me violently throughout my orgasm and for several minutes afterwards. I struggle to make him stop but I'm disappointed if he does."

274 Graffito from a Paris lavatory: "I am 15. Who will fuck me in my arse and break me in with a whip?" (Ernest 1979, 291)

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

Without going to such extremes, many boys enjoy a certain amount of roughness in sexual intercourse.

275 Jersild wrote about a 48-year-old man in Copenhagen who over the years had sex contacts with a great many 13- to 15-year-old boys, satisfying himself in their mouths or between their thighs. He also sometimes beat them repeatedly and sadistically, yet he never had any difficulty finding partners, who came spontaneously to his home, often bringing interested friends along with them (1964, 213-214).

276 (Continued from 248) Onno remembered with nostalgic pleasure how his friend, when they were play-wrestling in bed, used to squeeze his balls hard enough to make him yell in order to free himself. (Personal communication) In German there is even a special term ("dengeln") for pinching the testicles during intercourse to heighten the man's lust (Borneman 1978, 186).

On the other hand, the boy, conscious of the power he possesses as a sexual object, may use it in a sadistic way against his partner.

277 One of Stekel's patients had had a sexual relationship with a 40-year-old woman when he was still a boy of 16: "I ordered her to undress (entirely naked) and pose for me in all kinds of perverse positions. Then I fucked her until I saw she was just about to have an orgasm, when I withdrew and laughed at her and left her alone with her unsatisfied desire." (1925, 255)

278 (Continued from 276) Onno told a similar story about his relations with men, although he always, in the end, satisfied them. To take distinguished, important men and sexually excite them until they were mad with lust, convulsed with desire and writhing at his feet imploring him to let them attain their peak on his naked body, filled him with extraordinary joy. (Personal communication)

Sadomasochism is an acceptable variety of sex-play between willing partners who respect each other and fully agree to what transpires. In all other cases it is criminal.

Frustrated boy-love lies at the heart of much criminal sadism inflicted upon boys. Internalising the cultural taboo means, for some men, repressing entirely a strong desire to have sex with boys. Such a man will be irritated upon contact with any handsome boy who threatens to arouse in him forbidden feelings. Thus the redoubtable teacher whose severity with his pupils is in direct proportion to their decency and attractiveness. The handsomest boy is likely to become the disciplinary scapegoat of the whole class.

Since all men to a greater or lesser degree are drawn to children, and many of them are not insensible to the beauty of their own sex, the cultural repression of boy-love assures that cruel treatment of boys remains an omnipresent phenomenon (Rossman 1976, 228; Stekel 1925, 316). If the internal repression is complete, the connection between attraction and irritation is never made, and

the result, in the teaching profession, is one of those strict disciplinarians who boasts of his high moral purpose in thrashing his pupils. Somewhat more sympathetic is the teacher who acknowledges, at least to himself, his sexual attraction to boys, even if he vents on his young victims his inner feelings of frustration. He is a wretch, but at least he is a knowing wretch. He would still be a far better man if he could restrain himself!

279 One of Stekel's patients, a married physician, earned money as a student by giving private lessons to children.

"Did you cane your pupils?"

"I have to confess I often struggled with the temptation. (...) But I was firmly resolved never to do this, and I never did do it. I clenched my teeth and repressed my enormous sexual excitement."

"Who excited you the most—a boy or a girl?"

"(...) I think a boy. I imagined it would be the height of delight to have him naked and deeply humiliated... But I always fought against such fantasies and was ashamed of them." (Stekel 1925, 316)

It is possible that such a person might develop into a balanced boy-lover, not only conscious of his sexual desires but entirely accepting of them as well. Lost, then, will be his need to respond to boys with anything but tenderness and love. Most interesting, in this connection, is the artistic evolution of the French author Tony Duvert. His first novels, *Récidive* (1967), *Le voyageur* (1970) and *Paysage de fantaisie* (1973) are full of raped, tortured and murdered boys. When Duvert at last came to terms with his inner tendencies, this sadistic element disappeared and he was able to write that masterpiece of tender understanding, *Quand mourut Jonathan* (1978).

For the rest we can only say that sadism in men is in no way exceptional. Hunt found that 18% of men under 35 years of age indulged in fantasies of rape while masturbating, and 6.3% said they experienced sexual excitement when actually inflicting pain upon a partner. Among students, 18% said they would like to experiment with sadistic play (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 343). Since boy-lovers are just ordinary men, sharing common inclinations with their fellow-beings, none of this is alien to them. Of course there are among them people with sadistic inclinations. There is a market for films in which boys are castrated, burned, torn apart, broken upon the wrack or flayed. There is no end to what can be done with trick photography and modelling (Borneman 1978, 1186). People interested in adding fuel to the anti-porno hysteria went so far as to spread quite unsubstantiated rumours that children had been tortured and even killed during the production of such "snuff" films (Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 11).

Sadistic assault by peers or adults often focuses upon the victim's sexuality.

280

A Frenchman told me stories of his boarding school initiation which were almost identical to the following American example, which was reported as having taken place at the University of Texas in 1954. A competition was started among the new boys ("pledges"). "The loser had to sit on the floor with his hands under his ass and head held up while all other pledges, one at a time, stripped and, facing him, jerked off on him, being told to aim at his face. He couldn't wash or change out of his cum-soaked clothes all night. (...) Periodically a pledge was ordered by a seated brother to come over and jerk him off (the brothers were in shorts or jocks, the pledges naked). This meant that the poor bastard who had lost the (...) contest had to crawl over and sit in front of the brother and get a load in the face. Then the pledge who had just masturbated the brother was required to 'show respect' by also jerking off on the loser. Towards the end, pledges were begging not to be forced to beat their sore cocks anymore, and after as much as a half-hour of pounding away only came a pearl of cum." The next day the pledges "were herded into a room off the rec room and told to strip off. Then they told us to go into the rec room and line up facing the brothers. They sat on chairs and sofas in a sort of semi-circle all with their clothes on (...) We all had to stand there and work our cocks up and then go, one at a time, to where the pledgemaster was sitting. He had a tailor's tape and measured our cocks. He yelled out the lengths, circumferences (shafts and heads separately) and everybody jeered. After my cock was measured I had to get up on the table on knees and elbows, ass towards the brothers. The pledgemaster then placed the tape end against my ass (I should say *in* my asshole) and measured how far down my balls hung. Same for all the other pledges. Then we were lined up again and our balls were weighed by hand and visually compared and graded for size. Then some guy did a bit of figuring and announced the longest cock, fattest cock, biggest balls, biggest cock-head. (...) After that was over, they did Milk-the-Bull on us. We had to get up on the table again in the same position, one at a time. Then the pledgemaster and (...) two guys (...) took turns milking our cocks (jerking them off). They were timing us and said that the 'bull' who took the longest to 'cream' would have all the pledges' cum smeared over him from head to foot and have to sleep that way. We were told that, in order to aid our 'Helping Hands' to milk us so that we wouldn't be last, we could yell out 'suggestions' that might help us 'cream' faster. So I figured (...) this good-looking guy is standing by the side of the table reaching under me and jerking on my cock and I sure as hell don't want all these guys' cum smeared all over me, so why not tell him that I like the foreskin pulled all the way over the head on each stroke? So I did. But he said, 'What? I can't hear you.' So I really screamed it out. He started doing it right but then would stop, so I finally just kept screaming, 'Sir! Please pull the skin all the way over my cock!' I came into the pan fairly soon. (...) By the way, when we came we had to really scream, 'Coming, Sir!' and then bellow like a bull until we finished shooting. Some of the other guys yelled stuff like, 'Two fingers and your thumb... Faster... Slower... Hold it tighter,' etc. I was timed at 3 minutes 28 seconds. The loser took nearly 15 minutes and all three 'Helping Hands' had to take turns on him. In his desperation he kept yelling all kinds of different things for them to try. Mostly he kept yelling that his balls were being hurt by their fists, so one guy just held his balls up out of the way. They did smear all that cum from all 11 pledges all over the loser." The subject added that Milking-the-Bull was pretty common in Texas and that he had already had a version of it done to him in high school. He discussed some variations of this play (*Fag Rag* XII, 1982, 76-77) (Cf. Peyrefitte 1968, 411).

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

Where boys are forced to masturbate that way before onlookers, or be brutally and repeatedly masturbated, and submit to measurement and discussion of their genitals, all in an effort to humiliate them, they may experience a combination of lust and pain.

- 281 A teacher reported to Ellis (1915, II-79) that a 16-year-old boy, sent to London for his apprenticeship, said "that almost nightly, and especially when new fellows came, the youths in his dormitory (eleven in number) would waylay him, hold him down, and rub his parts to the tune of some comic song or dance-music. The boy who could choose the fastest time had the privilege of performing the operation, and most had to be the victim in turn unless new boys entered, when they would sometimes be subjected to this for a week. This boy, having been brought up strictly, was shocked, dazed, and alarmed."
- 282 (Continued from 269) Vincent saw the cause of such abuses in the sadism of the teachers. "Those who were caned worked off their emotions in sex—and in the most brutal way. Boys overcome with these feelings grabbed a smaller boy, tied him up and jerked him off, or did equally swinish things. They would smear his cock and arse with shoe-polish, and woe be to him if he ratted on them. But one time they were caught, and then all ten boys from that dormitory were beaten. Each was laid over a chair and caned on his bare bottom, and those whose turn hadn't yet come had to watch. (Personal communication)

Even crueler and more humiliating is the "gang-bang", anal rape by a group of men, an atrocity which, as we have already seen, is performed with monotonous regularity in some prison and reformatory systems. A common element in almost all reports is that the guards did not interfere or that they deliberately let the culprits go unpunished. Thus something which if committed outside the prison walls with tenderness and love is severely punished is blithely tolerated when committed in the most brutal and sadistic way within the institution! (Davis 1968)

- 283 From a letter from an American correspondent: "I was in the seventh grade and this very masculine boy (our football hero) always watched me no matter where I was. One day I asked him if he would like to kiss and fool around and he told me he was only interested in getting sucked because he was in to girls. Being that he was a very handsome person, the pride of our school, I offered to suck him, and he had the rest of the team in there (9th graders), hiding, and they beat me up and raped me and left me tied to the plumbing under a sink by my balls, until a janitor came to my rescue. They had stolen my clothes and ran them up the flag pole, and this is why the janitor checked the rest-rooms. The next time I got assaulted and misused was when I was seventeen years old in jail. I was in a tank with thirty others and I think all thirty of them got me." (Personal communication; L. C. 9-7-84)

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

How cruel such gang-bangs are is shown in the cynical terms of prison slang: "The 'wolf-pack' hunts a 'first-cop' (sexually inexperienced newcomer) to have a 'gang-splash' (group anal rape), the first, second and third rapists being 'welcome wagon, sloppy seconds and bloody thirds'." The victim is despised by everyone as a 'punk' or 'prison pussy' (West 1977, 152).

Forcing open the anal sphincter against the resistance of the victim is extremely painful. In ancient times people were punished by having a horse-radish pushed into their anus and then forced to ride on a donkey. Peyrefitte humorously describes how a 15-year-old school companion of the young Alexander the Great had this ordeal imposed on him for having seduced Aristotle's lover-boy (1977, 469-470, 480).

- 284 In one North African capital city, the police, when questioning a boy suspected of a crime, have been known to make him undress completely, since, stark naked, he is meeker. If he refuses to talk, a bottle-neck is introduced into his anus and he is forced to sit down on it. For a while he can hold himself up, but as his muscles tire he progressively impales himself on the bottle and his sphincter becomes more and more dilated. (Personal communication)

The male genitals, delicate and sensitive as they are, offer a tempting target to sadistic torturers. To them it is especially exciting to turn the very organ in which salacity resides into the centre of excruciating pain. The mildest form of this kind of torture is the medieval punishment of making the delinquent walk naked through the city led by a cord attached to his parts (Armand 1931, 205).

- 285 The same is still done by the Cewa of Central Africa as part of initiation rites. As soon as a boy has reached puberty his uncle informs the chief, who orders the initiation to proceed. The boy is taken to a secluded spot outside the village where he stays for about a week of harsh treatment. He is swung over a low fire, is dragged, face down, over the ground, is caned, thrown onto a nest of biting ants, rubbed with itching plants, made to eat faeces and drink urine, and is pulled around by a cord tied to his genitals (Ford & Beach 1968, 191).

The ancient Greeks whipped the genitals of disobedient slave-boys (Borneman 1978, 1198).

- 286 Isabella of Bavaria (1371-1435), who later became Queen of France, used 12-year-old nobly-born boys as her pages. At the slightest offence they were undressed and fettered, with arms and legs spread apart. Their penises were then beaten until they erected. A maid of honour was then ordered to suck the boy as a consolation (Foral 1981, 234-235).
- 287 In modern times other methods are used. An American told: "In camp, age 12 to 13, our group had a ceremony called a 'washbah' in which a group of boys grabbed one of their friends, pulled down his pants, and poured all kinds of shaving cream,

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

aftershave, deodorants, etc., on his genitals. The idea was to make them burn." (Hite 1981, 58)

- 288 On holiday in France, a Dutchman got to know the director of a British reformatory who invited him to pay a visit to his institution. The Dutchman did, several times, and told his experiences to a German, who assured me that the man was reliable. The story was partly documented by photos but, even after the authorities heard of what had been going on and the director was dismissed, the story was never published. "When the Dutchman came for the first time he saw on the Director's desk a 500 cc medicine bottle half-filled with a turbid liquid. He was told this was the sperm produced in the last week by 63 boys—12- to 18-year-old inmates of the school, all from problem families. The director would order a boy to come to his room, where he had to strip off his clothes—and if he didn't obey quickly enough his ears were boxed. Since in England corporal punishment was permitted in such institutions, the Director made frequent use of this liberty. There was even a special room in the attic for the whipping of naked boys, something the Director always did himself. In the dormitories, too, there were always whips at hand. There was a table on which the boy had to lie on his back naked and let his forearms and slightly spread legs be fixed with loosely-fitting straps to the table-top. Thus held, the victim was dealt with in various ways. Older boys, themselves naked, too, often served as assistants or took their turns as executor, or helped with various manipulations. There was an apparatus for administering electrical shocks. An electrode, one inch thick, was inserted into the anus of the boy. If someone took the second electrode in one hand and with the other seized the victim's penis, the current, which could be regulated at will, went through the penis to the anus. If contact was made with the mouth instead of the hand, the boys used to react violently. If seed was to be collected, as, for example, on the week of the Dutchman's first visit, a little tube with a plastic bottle at the end was inserted into the boy's urethra. Not infrequently a boy was "milked" several times in succession (as a punishment!), until he was dry. Other boys had to endure all sorts of manipulations for a very long time, with the Director, a guest and the well-instructed assistants taking turns or working together so that the tension in the victim became intolerable and, finally, he ejaculated his seed with violent force. Each inmate had a number, and this was inked large on his sport shirt. Guests were invited to go to the drill-hall to see the boys lined up in front of the female gym instructor—a lady who also liked to cane them!—and could make note of the numbers they preferred. The chosen boys were then told there was a physician from London waiting to examine them. The Dutchman had selected a 15-year-old of medium size and with black, curly hair. In white overalls, the usual dress for that special room, he examined the boy lying naked in front of him, first, for show, with a stethoscope, listening to his heart and lungs, soon, however, moving on to the more interesting parts of the boy's anatomy. The man was very friendly (this was quite exceptional, since usually not a word was spoken to the boys when they were subjected to these activities) and so the boy volunteered to come to him at night. Another guest was permitted to be present at the 'admission test' of a newly-arrived 16-year-old inmate. The 'result', i.e. the sperm drained from him, had to be taken by himself to the director for microscopic examination. When he met other boys as he was walking with his glass jar through the hall, they all laughed knowingly. If any reason at all was given for a boy to present himself at the special room, it could vary from medical inspection to punishment. If someone had come to the attention of the Director for his cheekiness

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

or aggression, he was subjected, by way of punishment, to 'intensive treatment', continued to the limits of his endurance and intended to quench his spirit. It was always done with severity and as though it was quite necessary. The whippings and canings, so easily imposed upon the inmates, were a horror. Often assistants had to put the naked sinner on the vaulting-horse and hold him down there. But other treatments were certainly not endured without sexual stimulation, otherwise they would not have resulted in the emission of sperm. A boy who knew what was in the making for him often betrayed his suspicion by the beginnings of an erection. Since these boys had no family or relations outside, the situation continued for quite a few years before it was discovered. Once the Director was assaulted in a dark passageway and soundly beaten up in revenge for his sadistic behaviour, but he must have had more friendly relations with at least some of his pupils, for he took one of them along on his holiday trips." (Personal communication)

- 289 During the Franco-Algerian war, a number of French soldiers, for their Sunday entertainment, tortured Algerian boys by administering electrical current to their genitals, always a favourite torture of some police forces (Alleg 1958).

Both of above cited masturbatory torture techniques have been reported elsewhere. The first—subjection of the penis to continued rubbing after ejaculation—has even been carried out with therapeutic intent, as we will see later. This can be most painful, since in many males the glans becomes hyper-sensitive after orgasm, and even the slightest touch to it is most disagreeable. The second—where masturbation is carried right to the brink of orgasm and then stopped—can be very exciting for some time but, as we have previously seen, eventually produces excruciatingly painful cramps in the testes and groin, cramps which can only be relieved by ejaculation (Masters & Johnson 1980, 153).

A special kind of sadism has even developed to punish people proved guilty of sexual misconduct. The culprit is subjected to sexual activities which would normally be pleasurable but which now are carried on with such frequency or at such length as to become a torture. In many cultures, for example, adulterous or unfaithful women and girls are punished by rape. Sometimes, to heighten the shame, it is carried out in public. In a ghotul in India a girl of 15 was used by five boys, one after another on order of the chief with the other girls looking on. In another tribe, girls who refuse to designate a boy as their steady companion are raped by a number of the bigger boys one after another until they give in (Elwin 1959, 157). With the Trobriand (Polynesia), a girl who dares to go to a neighbouring village and participate in a dance will be waylaid on her return by her rightfully betrothed "owner" and his friends and raped by him while the other boys hold her (Malinowski 1929, 186). Similar punishments were practised by the Mohave and the Mundurucu Indians, all the village men having to participate (Davies 1985, 101; Hulsman 1978, 50). In ancient Rome,

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

a girl of twelve "was thrown naked into a brothel as part of the routine punishment of 'outrage'." (Brownmiller 1975, 330)

In Rome rape was even used to execute adulterous women, just as, in our time, it is done by the Kanakas of New Caledonia. The victim is tied down with her thighs spread and adolescent boys are ordered to rape her until she dies, which reportedly happens after about 100 assaults (Sutor 1964, 336-337, 339).

The same can happen to boys and men. Anal rape may be used to humiliate them, as the Sybarites did in antiquity when they conquered the city of Carbinia. Boys and girls both were exposed naked in public "and everyone who wished could feast his lust on the beauty of the victims while all were looking on." (Athenaios XII, 5) Tippu Sahib of Mysore, resisting British rule in the second half of the 18th Century, submitted captured European soldiers to public gang rape (Greif 1982, 164). Here, too, it can be used to kill. Young French soldiers were executed this way by the Berber warriors of the Atlas mountains (20th Century) in spite of their country's alliance with the Pasha of Marrakech (Hughes, 1973), and the Brazilian scientist Candido Chagas Furacachopos died a few years ago after having been raped 76 times in a cellar of the fascist Dead Legion in Rio de Janeiro (Walter 1986, note 111).

Squeezing the testicles, hitting or kicking them, is often used by "dirty" players in sports as a way of disabling their opponents.

290 In Brittany, at Audierne, a boy who wishes, after he has finished school, to become a fisherman is employed digging up worms in the mud flats to be used as bait. His customary initiation by the older boys is to be stripped of his clothes, have his body rubbed with grit and, with handfuls of worms, his testicles are squeezed until he faints (Schérier 1978, 131).

There may be a great deal of covert, or even openly expressed sadistic pleasure in those who execute ritual mutilations of the penis during tribal manhood initiation rites. Fritz John Porter Poole (1982, 127-128) observed that most of the initiators who tortured the Papua New Guinea boys manifested "sadness about the pain inflicted" but "there are a few men who become more zealous than others in performing this act. (...) Some men like to cut and pierce and burn the novices." Some initiation practices aim only at making the penis bleed and causing excruciating pain. Among the Banaro of New Guinea "the natives insert into the urethra two or three stems of a barbed grass. These are then suddenly pulled out so that the walls of the urethra are lacerated." "In Tonga a reed is first wetted with saliva and passed into the urethra in order to produce irritation and discharge of blood. Should the discharge prove violent, a double thread is looped over the reed before it is passed into the urethra. When the reed is felt in the perineum, an incision is made right down to it and

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

one of the threads is drawn from the aperture, so that when the reed is withdrawn, one of the threads hangs from the meatus and the other end from the perineal aperture, thus forming a seton. An issue is thus ensured. The thread is occasionally drawn backwards and forwards, producing great pain and much discharge of blood." Circumcision is then "performed by tearing the prepuce with the fingers." (Ashley Montagu 1946, 427-430) In some regions of Papua New Guinea the boys' penises are covered with a moist gourd that hardens near the fire and tightens around the penis. Finally it is pulled off with difficulty, the aim being to stretch the organ (Poole 1982, 130).

In another tribe the penises are rubbed with nettles "to make them grow long and have hair" (Hays & Hays 1982, 215). In the Awa tribe several men lift the boy off his feet and hold him firmly. "The foreskin is held back with a split stick, and an incision is made on each side of the glans with a bamboo knife. He is then released to bleed into the stream. One or more men may approach him, jeer at him for struggling or crying out in pain, and poke at his wounded genitals with a long stick." Bleeding the penis is explained "as contributing specifically to the strengthening and development of male reproductive organs." At a later phase "the glans penis is not simply incised, but small wedges of flesh are removed from either side, producing deep half-inch-long gashes that occasionally penetrate the urethra. The lacerated glans then is struck sharply and repeatedly with the blade of the bamboo knife (...) and also is rubbed vigorously with salt and nettles. (...) Inflicting pain on the penis at this juncture is specifically thought to induce the production of semen, making it 'boil up' in the genitals." (Newman & Boyd 1982, 254, 257, 275-276) In the Arapesh "the boys' penes are lacerated with bamboo razors," and the penis and scrotum, of the younger boys rubbed with stinging nettles (Tuzin 1982, 338, 340).

Roger Moody, accused by the British police of "indecent assault" (and afterwards acquitted), observed in the diary of his case, "Is circumcision an indecent assault? If not, why not?" (1980, 39)

291 Some Roman emperors made no secret of the pleasure they took in observing or even participating in such scenes. Domitian had the genitals of his victims burned (Armand 1931, 151). Nero had boys and young men tied naked to poles; he then donned a bear-skin and assaulted them, roaring, lacerating their genitals with his hands and teeth (Suetonius: Nero, 29). We have already mentioned the Roman custom of castrating boys after they reached puberty in order to use them for sexual purposes. The Christian empress Theodora, wife of Justinian (527-565) liked to watch such operations and even experienced orgasm as she did (Churchill 1967, 205). Justinian himself ordered the execution of two bishops found guilty of having had sex with boys. Sharp reeds were inserted into their urethras and their penises cut off. Then they were dragged through the streets of Constantinople to their place of execution (Bullough 1980, 443). Castration was a common punishment in imperial Rome and during the middle ages for sexual offences. It was performed publicly for the amusement of the crowd, and the cruelest methods were used. While Alexander was campaigning in

Persia, eight page boys, linked in love relations, conceived a plan to murder the king, because he had had one of them publicly whipped by a slave for some small offence. When the plot came to light, Alexander turned the boys over to their comrades, well knowing that the executions would be cruel in the extreme. Since sexuality had played a role in the plot, the other boys first burned their victims' testicles, then cut off their penises, spread their buttocks and drove red-hot iron bars into their anuses (Peyrefitte 1981, 216). In medieval warfare, to terrorise the population, girls were raped and boys hung on trees by their testicles. Even as late as 1950 in America, the director of a reformatory in Kansas announced proudly that in that one year he had castrated 330 boys who now had become "stable and peaceful". (Banens 1981, 147)

- 292 Corll, the 33-year-old Houston mass murderer, had two 15-year-old helpers, Henley and Brooks, who were sent out to attract Corll's victims. These were typically handsome white boys between the ages of 13 and 16. Twenty-seven corpses were later exhumed. Corll tricked his victims into letting him handcuff them, stripped them of their clothing, gagged them, inserted glass rods into their urethras and broke the glass inside. He pulled out their pubic hair with pliers, penetrated their anuses with a 40-cm long dildo, ramming it rapidly and brutally in and out, and then sodomised them. Sometimes he cut off their genitals before eventually shooting them dead (Gurwell 1974; Olsen 1974).

Gacy, in Chicago, sexually abused and sometimes murdered slender-hipped, smallish youths, usually with light hair. They ranged in age from 14 to the early twenties. He employed a home-made torture rack. He was eventually caught and charged with the deaths of 33 victims (Linedecker 1981, 104, 188)

- 293 Jürgen Bartsch (Föster 1984) and Fritz Haarmann were famous sex-murderers in Germany. Between 1918 and 1924 Haarmann killed some 30 boys, usually unemployed runaways whom he met at the Hannover railway station and brought to his home. His sexual practice was to lie down on the boy chest to chest and, making the motions of intercourse, rub his penis on the boy's belly. The fate of the boy depended upon whether or not Haarmann reached orgasm fast enough: if he didn't, he ripped the boy's throat out with his teeth, and this excited him to ejaculation (Lessing 1925).

Such mass murderers always spring up after a major war (Plack 1967, 333). Fortunately they are very rare. Baurmann rightly concludes in his exhaustive study (1983, 430) that "For boys, the risk of violent sexual victimisation is very slight."

But there is not just physical abuse: there is mental assault, too, and we have every reason to suppose that this can be even more traumatising, its effects longer-lasting. When a boy's sexual experiences are discovered by those adults entrusted with his up-bringing, their reactions and possible ensuing examinations by the police may hurt deeply. For he is defenceless before them, helplessly exposed without any protection, and the pain is especially traumatic because it is the authorities who are pretending to help him who are inflicting the trauma. This syndrome is characteristic of a civilisation which considers sexual tenderness a greater evil than brutal violence (Deschner 1978, 295, 387, 435, 437)

and where parents will be quicker to forgive a third person's furious physical outburst against their child than a manifestation toward that child of love (Nationale Raad 1982, 28, 31).

If a boy, of his own free will, has cause to complain about the behaviour of someone who has approached him sexually in a disagreeable or impermissible way, or who has used violence against him, it is then, of course, the duty of the police and courts to help the boy, to support him in the freedom of his decisions, to punish the violator and, if possible, to frustrate any attempts to take away this freedom. Talking to the police can then be useful and beneficial.

An intelligent police officer can also intercede positively where parents react hysterically upon discovering their son has a sexual relationship with a friend. The boy then really does need help and protection from his parent's irrational horror, and if he is skilled, the officer can draw upon his professional experience and education to put the affair into perspective and soothe troubled tempers (Geisler 1959, 72).

But in our culture the judicial authorities do a great deal more. They interfere with the young person's freedom of choice, forbidding the relationship with the older partner. If a boy says he said "no" to the man, society will believe him (and the accused will be sentenced for assault); if a boy claims he said "yes" to the man, society will not take his statement seriously (and the accused will be sentenced for sexual abuse).

Such a legal situation enables—and in certain situations actually obliges—the police to examine the boy as a (potential) witness. Most boys and most parents are unaware of their right to refuse to be questioned. However, they can be obliged to appear in court and answer questions at the trial. Often the questioning by or in front of a judge is preferable to being examined by the police. This is something which all concerned must carefully consider.

Even writers who strongly disapprove of sexual activities with children are nearly unanimous in their opinion that questioning by the police and in court, physical examinations by police doctors, etc., are far more traumatising and inflict upon the boy far more lasting damage than whatever may have happened in the sexual field. The following list does not pretend to be complete; it cites just a few of the authors who have expressed this view:

In the English language: Anderson, Bender & Blau, Brunold, Burditt, Cohen, Farson, Finch, Gagnon & Simon, Gebhard, Geiser, Gibbens & Prince, Guttmacher, Henriquez, Joint Council for Teenagers, Kinsey, Landis, Linedecker, McCaghy, Mohr, Moody, NAMBLA, Nichols, Peters, Rush, Schofield, Schultz, B. Taylor, Turner, Walter, Weeks, West, Wilson & Cox, P. Wilson, The Wolfenden Committee.

In the French language: Aron & Kemfp, Boulin, Carpentier, Graven, Schérer.

In the German language: Albrecht, Baurmann, Behrend, Bennholdt-Thomsen, Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg, Borneman, Döring, Fisch, Frey, Geisler, Groffmann,

Hanack, Herren, Hirschfeld, Jacobi, Kaiser, Kentler, Kerscher, Killias, Körner, Lautmann, Leferenz, Lempp, Marbe, Mayer, Meinert, Messerer, Meyer, Mönkemöller, Müller-Hess, Müller-Lückmann, Nau, Schimmack, Schüler-Springorum, Siemens, Steinhilper, Stern, Störzer, Stutte, Vogel, Wyss.

In the Dutch language: Abspoel, Geradts, Hart de Ruyter, van der Kwast, de Leeuw-Aalbers, Möller, Pieterse, Rouweler-Wutz, Sandfort, Schwartz, Zeegers.

(Many of these are cited in the bibliography at the end of Volume 1; the remaining are quoted by these authors.)

In light of this overwhelming majority of opinion, the attempt by Armtzens (in a publication of the West German Ministry of Justice, as quoted by a female police officer, Mrs. Dierckx-van Lanen, 1974) to demonstrate "that a child is not normally harmed in the least by police examinations" is not very convincing. The error is in thinking that traumatising only results from clumsy questioning by the police, against which precautions can be taken.

Actually even the most skilled psychologist or the most tactful police functionary cannot avoid establishing a link in the child's mind between his sexuality and criminality; when the most intimate acts have to be described in words they lose their splendour and become tarnished. Even if no reproach is voiced, the whole situation instils a feeling of guilt in the child: he has participated in something immoral and criminal, he has liked it or did not protest strongly enough. If the sexual contact had been casual, superficial, an easily forgotten affair with a stranger, the questioning will give it an importance it never would have otherwise had (Hanack 1968, 93; Parker 1970, 214). In cases of long-lasting intimate relationships between boy and man, the child is urged by people having enormous authority over him (parents, police, the judge) to betray an admired and beloved friend and plunge this friend into the deepest misery (Nichols 1976, 28).

The very structure of the situation, even where an investigation is conducted in a psychologically and pedagogically impeccable manner, is in itself sufficient to traumatise the child seriously. How much greater the damage where the police officer promises the boy that he will see that the case is dealt with so that nobody will be hurt, and where the boy later learns he has been lied to because the policeman had no control whatever over the way in which the records would be used. Or where examinations took place in frightening environments such as police stations and the court. Or on line-up procedures in which the child is confronted with a molester (Examples can be found in Illinois Legislative 1980, 32-36, 61, 65, 70, 73, 108, 122, 169). Or in common lies used while examining children ("Your friend has already confessed everything."), threats ("We'll send you to a reformatory."), insults, name-calling ("queer, faggot, pervert, filth"), etc. Formerly many policemen were not satisfied until they had made

the child state that he was enormously relieved to have at last been able to unburden himself of this terrible secret and have the pernicious activity put to an end. Certainly not all policemen are masters of tact and sensitivity. Not a few men who, like the author of this book, have had to read many records of many examinations of children have perceived the voluptuous curiosity of the examining policeman demanding the most intimate sexual details which were of no importance for the trial. One Dutch police commissioner told me he had found that records of sexual offences, unlike those of other kinds of delinquency, were circulated among his officers and assiduously read by everyone. "Nowhere else," he sighed, "is there a greater manufacture of pornographic texts than in a police station." The "protected" children are sacrificed to the interests of the prosecution and often also to those of the parents, who want to prove to their neighbours that their well-brought-up child was involved in a sex scandal only against his own free will. There are still many people who firmly believe that a child has no sexuality unless it has had a poor upbringing! (Von Stockert 1956, 1-2).

Intensive questioning of a child, moreover, often elicits unreliable answers. Under the stress of his own troubles, the inevitable ruin of his friendship—perhaps even blaming his friend for this catastrophe—the young witness begins to colour his statement of facts. Add to this his excitement, the novelty of the situation wherein he is the centre of adult attention, and it is not surprising if he loses his balance, begins to fantasise, enlarge, beautify his role in the affair. We should not blame the over-stressed youngster for this, rather our society which has placed this stress upon him (Nichols 1976, 27; Stern 1926).

Another important consideration in this connection is that the accused often has more to fear from a child with whom he did nothing, whose sexual advances he did not follow up, than from the young friend with whom he had performed all kinds of sexual acts. The child who is, or at least feels, rejected may accuse out of jealousy, or may even imagine that the embraces he desired had really taken place.

Sigmund Freud writes in his autobiography about how he was initially surprised to find that nearly all his patients told of being approached sexually by an adult during their childhood years. He later was convinced that the majority of these stories, even where the patient firmly believed in their truth, were really the product of their imaginations (Hanry 1977, 61-62).

On the other hand, brave boys of good character often put up remarkable resistance against police coercion. Robert L. Geiser, an American psychiatrist who is not in the least in favour of allowing children to have sex with adults, observes, "It is very difficult to get those boys who have been the sexual partners of older men to testify against those men in court, especially if the boys have been well treated, given presents, taken on trips, and given love and affection. The boys themselves do not feel that they have been abused. For

some, it is the first time in their lives that someone has treated them decently.” (1979, 106) Lloyd Martin, the former Los Angeles police detective sergeant, who is said to have held a recalcitrant boy witness by his heels over a cliff, threatening to drop him if he did not make a statement, said at a Congressional hearing (1977, 64), “In fact, the child molester or chickenhawk is usually the victim’s best friend.” According to Burgess *et al.* (1984, 661), the percentage of youngsters acting this way is substantial if the relationship has lasted for over a year.

- 294 West (1981, 257) mentions a boarding school where inquiries were made after a public scandal. “It emerged that a high proportion of the boys at the school knew all about the sexual interests of their headmaster and one of his assistants and many of them had light-heartedly taken advantage of the opportunities presented. The one boy in the group who was really deeply involved in a pedophile relationship, to the extent of being taken on holiday by his lover and introduced as an adopted son, was the one who, perhaps wisely, steadfastly refused to admit to any physical sex acts and so avoided having to give evidence in connection with the ensuing prosecution.”

But the police do not easily give up. An American detective, Lieutenant William G. Thorne declared proudly, “The problem is getting underage boys to testify against their male lovers. The interrogation can be intense. We’ve got to crack the boy and it’s not an easy thing to do.” (Ingalls 1984, 3-5) One wonders how many parents really want their sons to be “cracked” by such professional child molesters.

- 295 (Continued from 252) Conny, a 13-year-old Dutch boy, was made to confess to a police officer what he and his adult lover Jan had done together after an 8-hour interrogation in a room behind bars. The policeman had finally declared that if Conny persisted in denying everything Jan would have to be released for lack of evidence. But he also told Conny that the boy’s father was waiting outside the police station and had sworn to kill Jan when he came out. So Jan would be dead and Conny’s father sent to prison for 15 years as a murderer, all because Conny persisted in telling lies. The boy broke down, told all, and afterwards was so disturbed that he seemed to need psychiatric care. His sanity was saved when he obtained permission from his parents to send a letter to Jan in prison begging his friend’s forgiveness for “betraying” him, and by the resumption of their friendship after Jan had served his eight months prison sentence. I talked with Conny seven years after these events, and their only lasting influence on him was a violent hatred of the police.

- 296 Paul, an English boy, wrote about his experience with the police. A few fragments: “The next day two or three officers came to our home at about 8:45 a.m. and took us all in the same car to Bofors police station. We all waited downstairs for 5 to 10 minutes or so and then, one by one starting with my oldest brother and going downwards in age, they took us into separate rooms and started questioning us. I was interviewed by successive officers one at a time but I was frequently visited by the fat man. (...) I

was left alone in the room from time to time. They asked if Roger had done anything to me ever. I said, ‘No.’ (...) Coming up to lunchtime they started to pressure me, saying, he has made a full confession, he is downstairs right now and you will be helping him if you tell us. It will be quicker and easier. I thought, if Roger had admitted it himself, what is the use of my saying anything different? They went back into the holidays saying, ‘Would you like to go through it in more detail now?’ I did not say anything and they left me for half an hour. (...) They brought in a load of photograph albums belonging to Roger and asked me to name the people in the photos. Most of them I could name. (...) By now it was early evening. The fat one, the one I hate most, started by saying I had left bits out and I was not telling the truth; he would not let me go home until I told them, ‘the other bit’. I did not know what he was on about. He insisted that I did. This lasted some time. I was getting frustrated and upset. He kept saying if I told him that one thing, he would let me back in the snooker room with my brothers. He said he and his colleague would go out of the room and leave me a pen and paper to write it down. They left the room. I wrote nothing much. They came in two or three times. Finally, they said they would try and boost my memory. They said, ‘You wouldn’t be like this if you weren’t hiding something.’ By then I was nearly crying. The long tall officer who looked like a lamp post had one more try to get me to say whatever I was supposed to say and then they let me back in the snooker room. Before I was crying, they kept asking me if Roger touched my dick or willie. I kept saying ‘No’, which was the truth, but it was getting me nowhere and they had told me Roger and Steve had told them about these things so in the end I just agreed. Once they asked me if he had ever put his willie up my bum. I said ‘No’. They said, ‘Could he have ever done it while he was sleeping with you in the caravan and such places?’ I said no, definitely not. After going back into the pool room, the tall officer came and drove us home. They said if I was lying about this, a doctor could do a medical on us and find out the truth. They said he was already on his way, but ‘We can put it off if you like and if you tell the truth.’ I said, ‘You can examine me if you like.’ A few days later the police came to our home one night. There were two or three of them. We went over it again. I said a few damaging things in front of my father but even they were not true. I thought if I took it all back they would think I was lying again and I would have to go over it all again.” (Moody 1980, 52-53)

Paul and his brothers wanted to tell the judge they had been forced by the police to make false statements. But they never had to appear in court. The accused was acquitted. Paul’s father observed, “The police did more harm in a day to my boys than Roger Moody could have done in three years.” (Moody 1980, 23)

This threatened medical examination (See also No. 164) is sometimes really carried out. It only makes sense if carried out immediately after a violent rape, to document possible bruises, fissures or traces of sperm at the anal opening. For the rest of the anal area, the sphincter muscle is much too elastic to be permanently deformed by the relatively brief introduction of a penis. The myth of the funnel-shaped anus in cases of frequent anal intercourse seems to go back over a hundred years to Tardieu (1873) and is entirely imaginary.

- 297 The English youth counsellor, Father Ingram, saw a boy of 11 who “was taken to the police station where he was told to lower his trousers. A doctor examined his penis,

retracting the foreskin. The boy was made to bend down while the doctor put a lubricated rubber sheath on his finger which he inserted into the boy's rectum. (...) As a psychiatrist involved in the case put it, 'If he hadn't been buggered by the man, he certainly had been by the doctor'." (O'Carroll 1980, 65)

To talk in such instances about "the respect due to minors" is sheer hypocrisy (Duvert 1980, 33). A police surgeon of twenty-five years' standing stated "that legal proceedings in most paedophilic cases do the children more harm than good, and he was honest and courageous enough to admit that the examinations of children he had been obliged to conduct over the years contributed much towards this harm." (O'Carroll 1980, 66)

The amount of time elapsing between the illegal sex activity and the trial tends to increase any resulting damage (Select Committee 1978, 121). Symptoms of psychological distress occasioned by judicial examination include, according to experts, displays of self-importance, inhibitions, timidity, shyness, bewilderment, anxiety, excitement, breakdown, attempted suicide. In one group of 33 children examined after police questioning by psychologists or psychiatrists in order to test the veracity of their statements, 31 exhibited such symptoms (Störzer 1978, 104). In another sample of sexually abused children, 56% of those who did not have to appear in court recovered quickly, in contrast to only 18% of those who were questioned by a judge (Gibbens & Prince 1963, 14). The psychiatrist Zeegers quoted his colleague Körner as saying, "We might well ask whether the real crime of child abuse is not committed in the courtroom." In 141 cases he examined, Körner found that in 10% the child had suffered physical or mental harm from the sexual activity—and in 29.2% harm had been inflicted by the the interrogation (Zeegers 1978, 168).

In the affair surrounding the prosecution of photographer Guy Straight, one of the boys "killed himself because he had to go to trial" (Illinois Legislative 1980, 167). But not all the authorities involved in such a case show much concern when this happens. In another case the police told the man they had arrested, "Your young friend has killed himself: it's probably the best thing he could have done." (O'Carroll 1980, 66)

Little wonder, then, that many men who really love their boys prefer to sacrifice themselves rather than see their young friends go through such an ordeal. A man might make a complete confession, or even admit to contacts of which he is falsely accused (Moody 1980, 47). We have already given examples of such heroic conduct. Police officers and judges are well aware of this pull on the man's heart and conscience and often use it to blackmail their prisoner.

More ethical and experienced authorities, however, are increasingly turning away from this way of proceeding where it is evident that the younger partner consented. At the same time they are moving inexorably against the perpetrator where violence or compulsion was used. The chief inspector of the Rotterdam

vice squad said at a congress on "Paedophilia and Society" (Amsterdam, 1977) that he had instructed his detectives never to interfere spontaneously in consensual affairs and only to act when parents lodged a complaint. If the parents did complain, he considered it the duty of the police to point out the risk of traumatising the child by the investigation and trial. It was then up to the parents whether or not they wished to expose their son to this risk (Kalma 1977). In *P.A.N. Magazine* (No. 9, July 1981) I told the story of two Amsterdam police officers who, on searching a home for illegal arms, accidentally discovered that the owner had an intimate relationship with a 13-year-old boy. Soon, however, they read a letter from this boy which clearly proved the boy loved the man and had entered into the sexual contact with his own free will, and they immediately stopped all further investigation. They explained that they had received some sound instruction about paedophilia at the police academy and had read a number of books on the subject.

If policemen doubt the advisability of prosecution, others share their feelings, too. Professor of Penology Hanack told a meeting of German lawyers, "After having studied these problems I can only agree with an opinion I once heard voiced by a high criminal judge, 'If my own children were involved in almost any of these activities, I would not lodge a complaint.' " (1968, 112)

Even people who consider themselves to have been victim of a very nasty crime tend to abstain from lodging a complaint if they have had prior experience of its consequences (Baurmann 1983, 16).

So much for the "child victim". Let us pass on, now, to the woes of the "offender". What I have learned about this, exchanging letters over the years with people in twenty different countries, can hardly be summarised in a few lines. I shall not speak here about the deep humiliations and wounds, the often irreparable injury, inflicted not just upon the truly brutal and violent child molesters but also upon men united in tender love to a loving boy—wounds inflicted by the police, the prosecutor, the judge, the prison guards and their fellow prisoners (Nichols 1976, 7). In many cases this results in total destruction of a man, confusing him and ultimately breaking him, or kindling in him a furious hatred against society and authority and so making him, now, truly dangerous. In order to appease its lust for revenge, a badly informed society cuts into its own flesh. As is typical for our civilisation, having sex with a child—which can be tender—is always more heavily punished than inflicting pain upon a child (McConley 1981, 96).

Penal Law

Slightly over a century ago, a new, previously unknown form of aggression began to rise in Western society: aggression against people who love children and want to express their feelings for them with bodily tenderness.

For men, especially, the situation had always been awkward, but for different reasons. In Ancient Greece, Rome, China and Japan, men loved boys and were highly respected for so doing, as they are even today in many societies which live close to nature. We have already written about them in Chapter Two. In other cultures, such as the Arabian and the Indian, boy-love might officially be frowned upon, but the activities themselves were considered a peccadillo. Wherever Christianity was in power, however, boy-lovers were killed, *but* (and this is an important point to emphasise) not because they had chosen a young partner. The boy was not considered a victim: he was punished along with the adult, for he, too, was guilty of the heinous crime of homosexuality. In 1504 the bailiff of Haarlem (Holland) demanded that a 10-year-old boy be burned alive (Fernandez 1984, 12). In 1731, 22 men and boys between the ages of 14 and 15 were strangled and burned in punishment of this crime in The Netherlands (Tielman 1982, 54). "The willingness of Christians to kill homosexuals in the name of morality was often cited as proof of the superiority of Christianity over the religions it had superseded." (Crompton 1983, 240)

Circumstances were better, if not always optimum, for men who loved girls. There was nothing wrong, *per se* in having sex with a girl, but the girl was the property of her father, and this property was damaged if she was no longer a virgin. Thus, the father could sue for compensation. Moreover, the honour of the family (if the family had any!) was at stake and fathers and brothers might take revenge on the man who had seduced a daughter or sister. Questions of rank and social standing were of utmost importance in medieval society and long thereafter. Therefore much depended on the position of the seducer. A man of lower rank than the girl—a servant or a teacher—was punished or fined; a man of equal or higher status was left in peace. But—again it must be stressed—whatever difficulties a man might face after having sex with a girl, the reason never lay in her tender years (Killias 1979, 40, 53, 55, 61).

Women who had sex with boys passed unnoticed, unless they were punished for adultery. No mention was ever made of women having sex with girls.

Children simply were not placed in a separate category. The genitals of children were openly fondled by parents, friends and nurses, since children quite evidently enjoyed this. Children, indeed, were seen as sexual beings, so it was natural that they be interested in sex. Erections in small boys were amusing sights (Dasberg 1975, 35-36; van Ussel 1969, 165). Puberty was, on average, reached later than today, but it was not considered a prerequisite for marriage. The Jewish Talmud considered girls of three fit for vaginal intercourse (Rush 1980, 41, 52-53). Helen, for whom the Trojan War was waged, had her first sex with Paris when she was eight or nine. Cleopatra "began her sexual career as a child of nine and was little older than that when she seduced the mighty Caesar." (Bronslau 1968, 116) Social maturity preceded physical maturity (van

Gennep 1969, 14). Boys and girls often married when they were eleven years old and had "carnal knowledge" of each other. No one took offence at Dante's love for nine-year-old Beatrice or at Petrarch's love for 12-year-old Laura (Rush 1980, 38). The city fathers of Ulm, in Germany, had to make regulations in 1527 to stem the flow of 12-14-year-old boys into the brothels (Kemmerich 1910, I, 146). In such brothels girls started their careers at the age of twelve (Cleugh 1963, 139). Erasmus, the great humanist, wrote a treatise on sexual pleasure in the form of a conversation between a young man and a prostitute, and dedicated it to the six-year-old son of a friend (van Ussel 1969, 46-54; van den Berg 1956, 36). In Sixteenth Century France the legal age for girls to marry was six (Rush 1980, 66). In my native town of Haarlem, the famous painter and scholar Carel van Mander (who died in 1606) taught his 12-year-old boy pupils to have sex in order to avoid headaches and to be better able to concentrate on their studies. And in England, at the same time, 13-year-old Elisabeth Ramsbotham made an official complaint that her 11-year-old husband John Bridge had not deflowered her (Dasberg 1975, 36, 38). Edgar Allen Poe married a girl of 13; John Ruskin fell in love with one of 9; Mahatma Gandhi married when he was 13 (Rush 1980, 91-92, 115).

The idea that sex, with a friend of the same age or with an older person, could in itself harm a child was absent from European culture—just as it is today, according to ethnologists, in many other cultures (Ford & Beach 1968, *passim*). Penal law was therefore silent on this matter. Children were on equal footing with adults, protected against rape, violence and abuse of authority, but never against sex as such.

Thus European culture formerly had a positive attitude toward heterosexual sex. In the 1780s a study by one Friedrich Christoph J. Fischer describing pre-marital sexual relations as a natural and healthy popular custom had wide circulation and many reprintings (Killias 1979, 107). In Denmark during those years clergymen who opposed such relationships were denounced by the peasantry as immoral corrupters of youth (Hertoft 1968, I, 20).

Until 1886 there was no section in the Dutch Penal Code which prohibited consensual sex with children, boys or girls. This changed during the Victorian Age (Smidt 1891, II, 317). Except for modern economic offences and dispositions concerning environmental protection and traffic regulations, "sexual assault on minors" is the most recent addition to penal law (Killias 1979, 2).

How did this come about? How was it prepared? Historians could give long, necessarily complicated explanations (Aron & Kempf 1978; Dasberg 1975; Schérer 1974; Taylor 1953; van Ussel 1968). Let us point out only two factors: a considerable increase in knowledge and technology necessitating a great deal more instruction; the rise to power of an industrious bourgeoisie bent on accumulating riches through diligence and thrift.

Greater knowledge and technology automatically increased the time needed for instruction and apprenticeship. A boy of 14 could no longer be a teacher, an army commander, a ship's captain or a cardinal in the Roman Church (Dasberg 1976, 32; van Ussel 1969, 133; van den Berg 1956, 33). In Ceylon, even as late as 1818, English troops were led by a 15-year-old boy (Nanayakkara 1977, 114). In the West this became impossible. A boy could not be a husband or a father because he was not able to earn enough to support a family. He had to learn. The age of majority and the mean age of marriage crept upward (Committee on the Age of Majority 1967). In modern industrial society, more and more years elapsed between reaching physical maturity and being able to marry—and during this time the sexuality of boys and girls was simply superfluous, of no use (Morris 1976, 135).

But in those days nearly every expression of sexuality was thought of as superfluous—and suspicious as well. Sex was disturbing: it kept people from working and studying. Then, too, it was dissipating. Even the sturdiest young couple, using no contraceptives, will copulate two hundred times, on average, for every birth; with every ejaculation hundreds of millions of spermatozoa are released (Hotchkiss 1944, 84). All of this for just one baby—what a dreadful squandering of energy! How antithetic to the economic principles of the virtuous bourgeoisie! What an evil, base, filthy, sub-human habit sex was! It is interesting to note that during a period when thrift was such an exalted virtue, ejaculation came to be described as “spending” (Walters 1978, 230).

The joys of sex should be restricted to useful, productive people in the full vigour of their lives. Such pleasures were not for the unproductive, the old or the young.

These rather prosaic concepts gave birth to a fairy tale. Society, as we have seen, had no use for a child's sexuality, so it simply decided that a child did not have any. And so emerged the myth of the asexual, pure, innocent child: pure because it had not yet become contaminated by something as dirty as sex (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 383), and innocent because it did not share in the guilt of adults who carried on this sinful activity.

The creation of this fairy tale was greatly aided by the curious phenomenon of infantile amnesia to which Freud ascribed such importance: childhood experiences are removed from consciousness by the process of repression, and the more completely they are repressed the more important they really were; in growing up we “forget” all the most important things that happened to us during our earliest years, especially the sexual things (Hanry 1977, 78). Looking back, our childhood seems to us “innocent”. The child, thus, is pure.

Woe, now, to the criminal who dares soil this pure being, to destroy his innocence! It was unthinkable that any child could ever have anything to do with sex, spontaneously, out of his or her own free will. If something did happen, the evil adult was at fault; the initiative could only have come from him (Hanry

1977, 14). And so, as the 19th Century progresses, we witness one penal code after another being extended by a totally new provision: an article prohibiting indecent behaviour with children (Killias 1979).

In The Netherlands the age of consent was fixed at 16 in 1886. There is, however, quite a variety in the West and the westernised world. In one country it is 12 (Penal Code of The Philippines, 1984 edition), in another 21 (Sexual Offences Act 1956, England, for homosexual activities), which shows how clumsy and arbitrary legislators have tried to deal with this unfamiliar subject.

Under the impact of laws making it criminal to show sexual tenderness and love to a child, and firmly believing the fairy tale about the child's asexuality, innocence and purity (as spread by pedagogues and moralists), public opinion has been incited to a frenzy of fierce hatred against paedophiles, and this has found its natural outlet in demands that these criminals be jailed for life, shot or castrated. “If it had been my own child that he'd touched, I'd have strangled him with my own hands!” a well known television personality exclaimed, and he was vigorously applauded. Lloyd H. Martin, formerly of the Los Angeles police, giving a university seminar on sexual delinquency, boasted that he had never read the Kinsey reports (Mitzel 1980, 131); he said he had decided that sex with a boy was a worse crime than homicide. “A homicide is terrible, but it's over with very shortly. The victim of sexual exploitation has to live the rest of his or her life with those memories.” (Subcommittee on Crime 1977, 62-63). Such offenders, then, should go to prison for life. In Germany *Praline* magazine took the initiative with a petition to the federal Ministry of Justice demanding that the courts be obliged to sentence every “child molester” to hard labour for the rest of his life (Killias 1979, 195; Hucko 1971, 48). That children were battered to death or severely injured by their own parents, killed or maimed for life by drunken drivers, never raised half so much fury. This already makes such demands suspicious, as Potrykus & Wöbcke (1974, 82) rightly observe.

Inspired by similar primitive feelings—academic degrees are no armour against the attacks of passion!—some psychiatrists did not hesitate to use “child abusers”, defencelessly entrusted to them by the authorities, as guinea pigs. The medieval torture of castration, now disguised as therapy, did not always produce the desired results, or it had socially dangerous side-effects (such as increased aggression); in most cases it simply crippled the victim mentally. Characteristic of the bad faith of the castrators was the tenacity of one Dutch female physician who had a record number of cases in which she had recommended this surgery: she steadfastly refused to study the consequences of what she had been doing. She would not give up “her” testicles, even after her colleagues, the judicial authorities and probation officers began to have severe reservations about the effectiveness of this “treatment”.

Every denial of the now traditional image of the innocent child met with savage opposition. No aspect of Freud's psychoanalytic theory enraged people so much as his contention that children were full of sexual feelings and desires; it struck at the heart of the great fairy tale. Many decades passed before the general public began to see "sex and sexuality as essential phenomena of childhood" and "children as fully natural beings for whom sexuality and sexual experiences are not necessarily any less significant than for adults," (Constantine & Martinson 1981, ix), "as a sexual being, in whom sexuality is a dynamic force in total personality development, a force determining much of his or her happiness and fulfilment as an adult," (Gundersen 1981, 59), and to recognise "that the capacity to relate to another person in an erotically intimate way and to experience sexual feelings and satisfactions (either homosexually or heterosexually) is present before puberty." (Martinson 1981, 27). It was not before 1926 and 1934 that a start was made with the systematic research on the effects of sexual relations with adults, which I mentioned earlier in this chapter. Unanimously the investigators denied finding any traumatisation by the sexual events themselves. If children suffer any damage, this is always secondary, caused by the reactions of upset parents (we will discuss this point later on) or by police examinations (as we have previously seen).

With all of this in mind, it would seem that the best solution to the problem would be to divide the sexual behaviour of adults toward children into three broad categories.

Category One: The child is subjected to violence, threats or abuse of authority. Taking advantage of a superiority in age, experience, or other circumstances should here be put on par with violence and threats (Killias 1979, 213). Against such aggression, children should be protected by the full force of the law.

Category Two: The child is put into a position which it more or less strongly dislikes, which "gives him the creeps", which he thinks odd, funny or queer. The child runs away, either shuddering with disgust or sniggering. Society, of course, should try to prevent such things from happening, but when they do happen parents or others taking care of the child should see to his needs, if any, just as if he had witnessed a nasty road accident or some other unpleasant spectacle. It is not in the interest of the child to turn it into a Greek tragedy, to reinforce the events in his mind, to make things which would otherwise be of only passing interest frightfully important and unforgettable by using him as a witness in a criminal process. Criminal proceedings, therefore, should be avoided.

Category Three. The child likes the adult and the sexual relationship. Here the blunt weapons of penal law should abstain. The decision, on principle, ought to lie with the child whose freedom of choice is to be respected. Civil law, however, should give parents the power to terminate the relationship if they are

convinced that the adult in question has a detrimental influence, morally or psychologically, on their son or daughter (see Fraser 1981, 53-54). In hearing the parties concerned, the judge, of course, should give most weight to the wishes and feelings of the child.

It is the law's duty to guarantee the sexual liberty of everyone. Sexual liberty does not mean that everybody has to sleep with everybody else, but that the authorities will not interfere with freely chosen personal relationships. Justice should intervene only in cases of violence, compulsion, subjugation of one human being by another, or where one person is treated as the property of another. In sexual liberty it is essential that, first, nothing happens without the consent of all partners; second, every partner is empowered to withdraw his or her consent at any moment (Duvert 1980, 111-112).

It is not a question of giving children more rights; rather it is a question of making less exceptions for them in the rights adults take for granted (Schérer 1978, 185-186). Penal law should never try to impose any religious or moral belief system on a people (European Committee on Crime Problems 1980, 10-11). It is the wrong instrument for such a task and, as the German penalist Hanack said, any attempt to impose morals by law actually impedes a sound moral evolution (Quoted by Baumann 1983, 288).

In his well-known essay *On Liberty* (1859), John Stuart Mill wrote, "The only purpose for which power can be rightfully exercised over any member of the community, against his will, is to prevent harm to others." He echoed the ideas of the French revolution and of such contemporary German philosophers as Feuerbach (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 301, 303, 315, 317, 319); Banens 1981, 47) (cf Wolfenden 1962, Section 14, 257). Age of consent laws were designed to prevent children from being harmed, and their enactment is quite understandable when one realises that at the time they were created everyone was convinced that a child would be hurt if he had any kind of sexual contacts. Nowadays we are better informed. We know that some contacts (involving violence, compulsion, abuse of authority, etc.) may be harmful to some children. We know that mutually consensual contacts are not just unharmed but may actually be beneficial, as we will see in detail in Chapter Five. A law which prohibits all sexual contact with children simply because some contacts may be harmful is an extremely bad law. The sexual evolution of a child is a very complicated process. Confrontation with adult male genitals, for instance, may make no impression whatever on a boy of five, may be shocking to the same boy at puberty, may be positively experienced by him during adolescence (Cf. Baumann 1983, 69, 73). The term "indecent with children" thus comprises such a variety of activities which are perceived and experienced so differently by different children—from harmless to highly traumatising, that it is absurd to use it in the law. The public will always understand it in its "worse case"

context, and children will be declared "victims" when they have never felt victimised at all (Baurmann 1983, 406, 408, 467-468, 470).

Thus the law should abandon such abstract, unrealistic, all-inclusive concepts and be made to conform to the various categories discussed above. This is the only reasonable course of action. However, as soon as sex rears its troublesome head, society usually does not behave in a reasonable way.

Let us take an absurd example. Suppose that a competent and serious researcher suddenly stood up and said that careful research had now proved that the risk of radiation sickness resulting from nuclear power generation was completely unfounded, that people could be exposed to very strong radiation for weeks on end without suffering the slightest harm, and that all the bad effects hitherto attributed to radiation were really caused by other agents which could easily be eliminated. Wouldn't everyone rejoice? Wouldn't everyone be happy?

This is nonsense, of course. But it is not nonsense that competent and serious researchers have established that the harmful effects of sexual confrontation, supposedly inflicted upon children by the sex itself, are quite imaginary and that traumatisation is only secondary, caused by the reactions of upset parents and policemen. When *this* was published, there was no rejoicing at all. It went almost totally unnoticed. People clung stubbornly to their old beliefs, even when they could no longer deny that the results of those beliefs—police examinations, courtroom procedures—were very harmful to their cherished children (European Committee on Crime Problems 1980, 133).

Why this unwillingness to accept the good tidings? Why do we want to remain anxious, in perpetual panic? Why do we cling to our indignation, our aggression, our desire to punish, castrate, kill the malefactor, even at the expense of the child's well-being?

The sharing of prejudices solidifies support—and amplifies emotional reactions when they are attacked (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 355-356, 358). But perhaps there are some reasons which are inherent in the subject itself.

It is generally recognised that no one hates homosexuality as strongly as the man who has himself a strong, but repressed or even unconscious, inclination towards it (Borneman 1978, 591, 1022; Eck 1969, 10, 165; Italiaander 1969, 140-141; Abraham 1969, 281; Herek 1984, 5, 10, 45; Banens 1981, 88; Wolfenden 1963, 30; Sartre 1952, 34; Rector 1981, 130). Let me quote a distinguished criminologist, Professor West of Cambridge University: "Placed in a situation that threatens to excite their own unwanted homosexual thoughts (people) overreact with panic or anger. Repressed homosexuality may sometimes be the explanation why men of intelligence and judgement, who would never express themselves so crudely on other topics, indulge in wildly inaccurate and absurdly emotional pronouncements about homosexuality. In advocating castration or the gas chamber for sexual corruption of youths, they betray a need to

compensate for their own inner guilt by vigorous denunciation of sin in others." (West 1977, 202).

As we have already seen in Chapter Two, there is a certain percentage of paedophile tendencies in every man and in every woman. "The paedophile impulse is present in some form or other in all adults." (Lambert 1976, 88, 127) "Arousal patterns previously defined as deviant" i.e. "response to immature persons" were found in laboratory tests in "normal" adult homosexuals (Yaffé 1981, 79) "Paedophilia, the love and sensuous experience of child and youth, is a normal and universal phenomenon." (Gordon 1976, 44)

We all fortunately love children, to a greater or lesser degree. In some people this love may be so strong that it forms the mainspring of their personalities, colouring their way of life, permeating everything; we call these people "paedophiles". In other individuals it is weaker, or less conscious. "During deep analysis paedophilic fantasies are often discovered—fantasies of which the patient had been largely or wholly unaware." (Kraemer 1976, 1) There is "a latent pedophilic desire that may be relatively dormant in most males universally" (Trimble 1968, 37). In the West today, its expressions are prohibited and therefore repressed, but the feeling is there nevertheless. Wilhelm Stekel, one of the fathers of psychoanalysis, wrote, "According to my experience, paedophilia constitutes a nearly normal component of the sexual impulse. Nearly everybody, at times, detects such thoughts in himself. But they will be rejected, disclaimed and condemned with all the emotionalism of moral indignation. Many people of high intellectual standing have admitted to me that sinful thoughts had surprised them while they were looking at children (...) We fail to appreciate the immense degree to which paedophilia is prevalent among women and men." (Stekel 1922, 311) Nearly 60 years later another sexologist, Professor Schorsch, said that the question really was why most adults did *not* seek children as sexual partners (1980, 132). Feelings of attraction in adults "for boys and girls in the years immediately following puberty are experienced by rather more adults than most of them are prepared to acknowledge." (Righton 1981, 25).

The advertising industry recognises this clearly. "Therefore these unconscious impulses are played upon unambiguously in visual publicity. Advertising images of the erotic child are not directed just toward that small minority of morbid paedophiles but are always aimed at all adults in whom similar desires are simply repressed." Professor Schorsch, citing the plethysmograph research of Freund, observes "that children, especially little girls, are an exciting sexual object for non-deviant males as well." (Reinacher 1980, 163). "Freund found that normal males show some sexual arousal to child stimuli. (...) Presumably, most males make non-sexual attributions of such arousal when it occurs, precluding the necessity to define themselves as deviant. (...) Children appear

to elicit strong emotional reactions in many people, reactions usually labelled as 'parental' or 'protective' or 'affectionate', but potentially definable as sexual love." (Howells 1981, 68) Schérier remarks, "An interest in the child which pretends to be free of all sexual desire is always suspect." (Quoted by Reinacher 1980, 149)

"The majority of adults, women and men, experience some degree of erotic attraction in the widest sense towards children." (Presland 1981, 78) Paedophile feelings are omnipresent, but our culture does not tolerate this. It has placed a great taboo on sex with children; such feelings have to be suppressed. The internal personal difficulties caused by this repression make people violent in their rejection of paedophilia, suspiciously emotional, strongly committed to their prejudices. Guilt over their own repressed feelings and the ensuing anxiety elicits aggression against those who do not hide such feelings and act in harmony with them (Wilson 1982, 123-124; Baurmann 1983, 50; de Groot 1981, 12). So paedophiles belong to the most despised of sexual castes, the lowest of the low (Plummer 1981, 130; Rubin 1984, 279). In prison "child molesters are traditionally scorned by other inmates, and they are often raped or beaten," says Linedecker, citing a case where one of them "was burned on the genitals with cigarettes for refusing to commit homosexual acts." (1981, 48) "All these hierarchies of sexual value—religious, psychiatric, and popular—function in the same ways as do ideological systems of racism, ethnocentrism and religious chauvinism. They rationalize the well-being of the sexually privileged and the adversity of the sexual rabble." (Rubin 1984, 280)

So the vicious circle is complete: repressed paedophilia maintains the laws against paedophilia. The harshness of society's fight against sex with boys can only be explained by emotions aroused by its own repressed lustful eagerness for boys.

Soon after people stopped burning men and boys alive at the stake or strangling them to death for the heinous crime of loving each other (Fernandez 1984, 1), they enacted new laws under the impulse of child protection. Aron & Kempf, in the chapter of their book (1978) called "Hunting Scenes", give the particulars of some criminal affairs of the last century which illustrate the enormous tenacity of the judicial authorities, the abrogation of the rights and interests of the children involved.

Morris Ploscowe was absolutely right when he declared, "Nowhere are the disparities between law in action and law on the books so great as in the control of sex crimes." (1951, 155; cf. Barrington 1981, 55) These laws—"remnants of a morbid attitude", as the psychiatrist Zeegers (1977, 202) calls them—have created a world of fear, making sound, steady relationships and free, joyful sexuality nearly impossible, fostering only casual, anonymous contacts. They are the matrix for a subculture, a black market for prostitution, accompanied by blackmail and violent criminality. For rich people there may be an escape

in visits to other countries; the wealthy are also better able to hide their sexual affairs at home (Lautmann 1980, 16). How little the law actually contributes to the reduction of sexual delinquency was shown in Denmark in 1944 when the German occupation forces arrested all Danish policemen. Without police control, criminality increased tenfold—except for sexual criminality which remained at the same level as before (McConville 1981, 94; cf. European Committee on Crime Problems 1980, 61, 66, 89, 97).

If one pleads for the abolition of these laws, showing that they are prejudicial to child and society, pointing out that it is barbarous to punish people only because they are doing things you think are "dirty" (Bullough 1976, 567-568), one will be told that public opinion would never allow it, society is not yet mature enough for that. One of our most distinguished Dutch ministers of justice once said, "At times legislators should have the courage to be wiser than the nation." If they had not shown this kind of courage, we would still be extorting confessions by torture; the abrogation of torture in criminal proceedings was most unpopular with the general public at the time; experts doubted whether we could still fight crime without the rack. The Dutch parliament voted in 1970, with only five negative votes from the extreme right-wing splinter parties, to abolish the law which made homosexual activities with 16-21-year-olds illegal. If this abolition had depended upon referendum, it would never have happened. In this case the Speijer Report had convinced the members of parliament that the continued existence of this section of the penal code was not in the interest of public welfare.

Mostly, however, such unsound sections of the penal codes remain in force. Politicians are not interested in this subject. You cannot gain votes this way, and you might easily lose them (Hogan 1980, 42). As long as this is so, judges should pioneer the way by reducing punishments (McConley 1981, 97; Graven 1975).

In the first chapter we have already seen that it is impossible to set a reasonable fixed age for sexual majority, when the child is to be allowed to dispose freely of his sexual capacities (Schuyer 1978; Vogel 1984, 78). "To hold forth the contention that an individual is capable of offering valid consent to a homosexual act at twenty-one but not before, and to argue that the same individual is capable of offering valid consent to a heterosexual act at fourteen, sixteen, or eighteen is somehow intellectually, emotionally, and morally dishonest—especially when it is recognised that the latter decision may be much more significant both personally and socially than the former decision. Moreover, there is something craven in the attitude of a society that is quite willing to risk the very lives of its youth in wars and military adventures, but that quite gratuitously becomes extremely protective and prudent about youth where sex may be involved." (Churchill 1968, 215)

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

It was only after the beginning of the Eighteenth Century that society started to divide itself into age groups (Van Ussel 1976). Under the disguise of youth protection, young people were expelled, set apart, and made subject to special rules and regulations. Experts like Borneman and van Ussel concluded, after intense research, that "Western youth is probably the most protected and the unhappiest of the whole world." (Borneman 1977). Legislation subjects youth to more and more tutelage, which is strikingly illustrated by the fact that the Roman Catholic Church in the Middle Ages decreed a boy fit for marriage at twelve (CAPM 1980, 10).

Sometimes the disguise becomes transparent, as when youth protection manifests itself in moralising doggedness—at the expense of the young themselves. Cases have come to public notice where a boy-lover had more or less adopted a boy neglected by his parents, and where their relationship was sacrificed to "the revenge of the pedagogy business", as one journalist called it (Horn 1986, 27, 34; Schérer 1979, 94).

298 Some years ago the Dutch press and radio were full of a sad affair which unfolded in Eindhoven concerning a shy, timid 12-year-old boy. At an opportune moment he had formed a relationship with an engineer, and this had changed his life. He began to make friends among his peers, became cheerful, started getting good marks at school. The boy's father, who lived on a rather low economic and social level, was delighted with this turn of events and openly supported the relationship between his son and the engineer, who was able to give the boy a great deal of material and personal help. Then an older brother of the boy got into trouble with the police and a female social worker was assigned to the family. In the course of her investigation the relationship between the engineer and the younger brother came to light, and she thought it her moral duty to intervene. Threatened with having his child taken away from him, the father was forced to enter the boy in a boarding school where rigid discipline would teach the youngster "decency and morals". The social worker also persuaded the company where the engineer worked to discharge him. Three people, then, were plunged into misery, but morality was victorious—and all this in the name of a religion whose founder told his followers that people were more important than rules. Fortunately in this case a number of wise teachers mounted a protest in the pedagogic press, and in the end the boy was not sent to the boarding school but entrusted to an adoptive family where he was allowed to resume relations with his engineer friend (Van Buuren 1977).

The wide variation in age of consent laws demonstrates, as we have seen, the uncertainty of legislators and the arbitrary nature of the laws they enact. It has ranged in recent years between 12 years of age in some Swiss cantons before the Federal Code came into being, and in The Philippines, and 21 in England for homosexual contacts. Surveys have actually been made of the various national age of consent laws, but we have deliberately not included this information here: quite apart from the inaccuracy of most such compilations, it is liable to lead to a kind of quack law interpretation which is just as dangerous,

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

and is just as reprehensible, as quack medicine. The lay person is tempted to believe he knows the legal situation by reading the texts of the laws themselves. The lawyer knows otherwise: that some articles of the penal code can only be interpreted in their context, that knowledge of their historical origins is essential, as is an appreciation of the legislator's intentions, of the social environment wherein the law is applied, of the latest court cases, of the attitude of the prosecuting authorities. All of this is necessary to know how the law is actually applied in any given land. And that can only be done by a lawyer who lives in the country and who is precisely informed about this particular aspect of jurisprudence, its latest revisions and practices.

Here is an example of how easy it is to misjudge the situation by a glance at what would seem to be the official statute. According to the penal code of Cuba, homosexual acts are only punishable if violent or performed with a minor. That is the legal theory. Actually *all* homosexual contacts are severely punished, and this is accomplished by considering homosexual activity one form of "antisocial behaviour". It is thus punishable under Section 77-F of the penal code wherein it is stated that "an option for homosexuality is an option against the revolution". (Van den Boogaard-Schellekens 1980, 3-5).

It is much the same in France, where the age of consent is 15 but where men are often prosecuted for contacts with 16- or even 17-year-olds under the corruption of morals act, or even abduction if the teenager is visiting a man without his parents' consent.

In most Western lands, children are protected more strongly from sexual contacts than from violence and physical abuse. The one-sidedness of this "protection" is blatantly conspicuous: it is used to insulate him from all actual sexual experience but not to shield him from sexual neglect and traumatising sexual miseducation. While it guards a minor's right to reject a sexual approach, it denies him the liberty to accept one (Baurmann 1983, 53-54).

Such laws do not protect youth; they threaten it (Sandfort 1981, 99; Wilson 1982, 134; Baurmann 1983, 72, 82; Zeegers in a speech to the National Council for Social Welfare 1982, 29, 31). This even applies to incest situations, where there are much greater opportunities for constraint and compulsion. Alvin A. Rosenfeld, an American child psychologist, notes that "it is common clinical opinion that most court procedures used in incest cases in this country may be more harmful than the molestation itself." (1979, 409) Thus parents really concerned with their children's welfare should fight against these laws. This was done by a group of citizens in France (Hocquenghem 1979, 70), and in The Netherlands the national trade union representing Dutch elementary school teachers and its Protestant counterpart (NIKS No. 7, 1979, 3-4) signed a petition to the government to repeal all age of consent laws. A commission dealing with procedure in rape cases chaired by Dr. de Beaufort, Prosecutor General of the

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

Amsterdam Court of Appeals, stipulated that the interests of the victim should take precedence over the interests of the prosecution. Certainly the same ought to apply here.

Sexual offence laws create a marvellous hunting ground for blackmailers (Killias 1979, 188-189; West 1977, 281). They rob parents who have a positive outlook about sexuality of their opportunity to bring up children in accordance with their enlightened views (Kameneff 1979, 87), since they may be accused of complicity if they allow other adults to be on intimate terms with their sons or daughters (Killias 1979, 207). As a result, children who would prefer to be open with their parents are better advised to keep the intimacy of their friendships a secret (Joint Council 1981, 90-91).

There is every reason for criminologists to wonder whether these sections of the law, because of their side-effects, do not cause more human harm than good (Lamping-Goos 1982, 107-198; 114-115; Pieterse 1982, I-41; Rubin 1984, 293). Decriminalisation might stop a lot of criminality in other areas (Schickedanz 1979, 186). It would have its influence upon public opinion, and thus all would benefit (Corstjens 1980, 282). It is easier to change a law than to change public morality (Killias 1979, 31-32), but law reform gradually permeates society's outlook. We have seen this in the field of labour legislation and social security. If the right of free decision in the area of sex were enshrined in the law it would ultimately have the same social effect as had the constitutional guarantee of human rights: Nowadays an offence against the right of free expression of one's opinion, against the freedom to worship as one wishes, against the privacy of letters, is not only considered illegal but immoral as well.

Earlier in this chapter we have seen how enormously frequent are sexual activities between men and boys. In just our small population alone in The Netherlands, we are probably dealing with millions of acts, of which only a few hundred come to the attention of courts for sentencing. World-wide, the "victims" are nearly always most unwilling to denounce their "molester" (Illinois Legislative 1980, 215), especially if he is someone they are familiar with, which happens in about 80% of the cases (Kerscher 1974, 561). According to Rossman, in the United States about one act in a thousand will lead to arrest by the police. (Geiser 1979, 82). The author's and des Sables' independent calculations for The Netherlands and France suggests that one act in three thousand comes officially to light (Des Sables 1976/77; Brongersma, *Intermediaire*, 2 May 1975). The citizen struck down by the fury of these laws, and possibly ruined for life, is thus the victim of the utmost arbitrariness; it would seem that Justice is impaired by allowing this situation to continue.

Legislation against "child molestation" was based on the premise of the innocent child being seduced by an evil adult.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

In the meantime, however, the gradual crumbling of the myth of the "pure", asexual child has helped us become aware that children *are* erotically attractive creatures, and not infrequently act like determined little seducers (Albrecht 1964; Bender & Blau 1937; Kerscher 1978; Lafon *et al.* 1961; Landis 1956; Lempp 1968; Rossman 1976; Sandfort 1982). Virkkunen, certainly not a proponent of paedophilia, said that in over 64% of the cases he investigated the child himself had helped precipitate, or at least contributed to, the seduction, as, for instance, by making repeated visits to the adult partner (1981, 128). (Cf. Powell & Chalkley 1981, 71, 73). We have already dealt with this matter in Chapter Three.

Under the pressure of police questioning, the child often minimises his own part in initiating the sexual activities, and the questioning officer is inclined not to challenge it. The figures, then, are clearly distorted to the disadvantage of the adult. Nevertheless Gebhard (1965, 821), whose subjects were prisoners sentenced for sexual offences and thus a sample likely to include some of the worse cases (all of which distorts the statistics even more), came up with the figures shown in Table 1.

Table 1

	Boys of 0 - 11 years	Boys of 12 - 15 years
Encouraging	52.3%	70.3%
Passive	6.8%	11.0%
Mixed	0.0%	2.2%
Resistant	40.9%	16.5%

"Resistant", moreover, does not mean that the child really did not want the contact and resisted it mentally. It just means he physically and/or verbally resisted. Niemann (1974, 139) estimated that in 32.8% of the records he studied the rejection was due to the upbringing the child had received or to misunderstanding the situation. The "victim" often complains only because the people around him expect him to complain (Baurmann 1983, 158). Hermann Gerbener finished his doctoral thesis on *The Criminality of Sexual Assault on Children* (1966, 113) with the words, "One of the most shocking discoveries of this research was the attitude of the children, which was not only encouraging but downright provocative." Van der Kwast, discussing sexual offences with children, rightly observed, "Deeper investigation makes the distinction between offender and victim almost indistinguishable, and in certain cases this blurring

is so extreme that the labels become almost interchangeable." (1968, 123). "The seducer is at once also the seduced." (Matzneff 1977, 147).

Eglinton observed that boys often turn the conversation to sex, and use this to excite a man.

- 299 In *The International Journal of Greek Love*, discontinued, alas, after only two issues, a man working in a private boarding school for boys wrote, "Boys... I was there but a month when a 12-year-old sought solace from me, coming to me after 'lights out'. He asked that I explain the nature of the 'sickness' of a teacher of his in a school from which he was withdrawn in Switzerland, a boys' school which closed following disclosure of the sexual involvement of a teacher with several of his students, a 'sick' teacher. Perhaps Rick, the boy, was truly puzzled; more likely he was intrigued and interested in learning more. But after three of these night sessions and the first signs of mutual emotional intoxication, I referred Rick to the school pediatrician, and kept my distance.

"Boys... It's almost bedtime, and Phil appears in ripped pajamas which do little to hide his budding masculinity: 'Why do you always look down there, sir?' A subtle grin, and the subject is switched to 'a letter I just got from my girl. You wanta see it?' I read the letter absently, kid Phil, run my knuckles down his backbone playfully. 'Do that again, sir. That feels good...' " (Director of Admissions 1966, 38-39)

Father Ingram tells of a boy who, beginning at the age of eight with his older brother, and being very pretty, subsequently seduced two of his social workers, one of his club leaders, three of the staff in a children's home, and one clergyman (1981, 184).

Other boys might start romping or rough-housing with a man, get an erection and let it be felt. Or a boy might "forget" to zip up his fly after having gone to the bathroom and so draw the man's attention to the seat of sexual desire. If the man remarks on this "oversight" the boy might say something like, "Oh, you want me to show it to you?" Boys have been known to pretend concern about the shape or development of their genitals just in order to show them to an adult friend.

Some youngsters carefully lay the ground through a series of well-plotted conversations.

- 300 Banis (1966, 39-48) tells the story of Marvin, a 41-year-old bachelor in a small American rural community. Ted, "a nice enough looking kid" of 15 worked in the drugstore. He came from a poor family, living "in a house that would have been inadequate for a family half that size." He shared a bed with two older brothers of 16 and 18. One day Marvin phoned an order in to the drugstore and a short time later it was delivered by Ted. The boy commented on some ship models in the home—this was a hobby of Marvin's—and appeared quite fascinated by them. The next time Marvin was in the drugstore, Ted mentioned the models and said he would like to see them again some time. Marvin said he was welcome to stop by. A few days later Ted showed up after work, asked about the models and sat for an hour or so looking at some of Marvin's books on the subject. Ted paid Marvin half a dozen further visits,

and when Marvin gave the boy a simple boat kit of his own the boy worked on it there with him. Other times they talked about Ted's school work. It wasn't until the sixth or seventh visit that sex cropped up in their conversation. Ted asked if Marvin had a girlfriend. Marvin avoided answering directly, but soon the boy asked Ted if he had any brothers. Marvin said he had two. Then Ted asked if his brothers had ever done things with him. The man questioned Ted about this and the boy finally admitted that his two older brothers had used him at different times for sexual purposes. To Marvin's surprise, Ted didn't seem to mind these sexual experiences with his brothers. Nothing happened then, but Ted was back the next evening and he hadn't been in the house for more than a few minutes when he asked Marvin if he wanted to "fool around" some. This was the beginning of a sexual relationship which continued over a period of three years without any major problems and only terminated when Ted joined the U.S. Army and fell in love with a girl. The "fooling around" was mutual masturbation. On subsequent occasions, fellatio took place, although Ted always remained a passive partner in these acts. In anal intercourse, however, Ted was a mutual participant, both actively and passively, having become used to the passive role in his sex with his brothers.

- 301 A somewhat similar story was told by a certain Coon (quoted in Eglinton 1964, 457). A 14-year-old newspaper boy "began displaying considerable interest in a man's personal affairs when he called to collect money for the papers he had delivered. He then began delivering the paper personally, instead of leaving it outside the door as formerly. The next step was a series of sly allusions to all the girl friends that the man, a bachelor, must have. This was followed by allusions to his own sexual adventures and attempts to get a girl. (...) Finally the boy one day, when the subject of conversation had turned to sex, displayed through his clothing an erection, calling the attention of the man to it. Sexual relations followed."

It is not unusual for a boy actively to seek out such opportunities. The Dutch novelist Jef Last quotes an observation of his friend André Gide, "Oh, how I wished as a child somebody would seduce me, and what a fine influence such a person could have had over me!" Last adds, "I understood this wish, for it was one I myself had experienced with such intensity that when I was in grammar school I used to go every night to a deserted place at the end of the Mathenesserlaan (Rotterdam)—for no other reason than that my mother had warned me that bad men were supposed to hang around there. However, I never met a single one of them." (1966, 20)

Jersild (1964, 216) cites the case of a boy-lover who didn't dare turn on his lights at night because when he did he immediately had boys knocking on his door asking for sex.

Actual cases of assault by boys exist.

- 302 Schofield cites the case of a man describing what he had once done as a boy of 15: he knew what he wanted but was not sure how to get it. One day he was alone at home with his uncle. He started to talk about sex and invited his uncle to do something with him. His uncle refused, whereupon the boy said he would scream as loud as he

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

could if his uncle didn't comply. His uncle finally gave in, and over the next six months they had sex on several occasions. This time the threatened blackmail was hardly as nasty as it might at first appear, since the boy was sure his uncle really wanted to have sex with him, and the man only hesitated because his nephew was so young.

Johannes Werres, the German translator of my first book from which I took the above example, quotes an observation of a 32-year-old sports instructor who taught at two secondary schools. "I'm continuously confronted with unambiguous approaches by boys, particularly by the 14- to 16-year-olds. On school excursions and camping trips I often find myself in the most difficult situations. I couldn't blame any gay man for yielding to such intense temptation. I know that even heterophile men in my profession are victimised by the boys' impulses." (1963, 241)

- 303 One youth group leader had never thought of himself as a boy-lover until he started getting erections every time he found himself in the close company of a certain boy. This caused him to resign from the group in order to sever his connection with the boy. A few years later, however, after much hesitation, he became a Scout leader. For a while all went well, but soon he found himself thrown together more and more with one particularly enthusiastic scout who also was a good organiser. Friendship blossomed; they started talking about all kinds of things, and, since the boy was intelligent and curious, he inevitably got around to the subject of sex. For the scout leader this was the warning signal, and he told the boy not to pursue the subject any further. But the boy persisted; every time they were alone together he turned the conversation once again to sex. After a month, the man made a sexual proposition to the boy. The boy said he wanted to think it over. A week later the boy once again started talking about sex, and then said he wanted to try. After this initial time they had sex twice more. The boy liked it and never raised any objections, but after the third encounter the man decided not to go on. (Schofield 1965, 63)

In some countries the authorities, if they are better informed about man/boy attraction and friendships, are reluctant to prosecute where it appears the youngster is not being harmed or if he had taken the initiative toward intimacies (Geiser 1979, 164). The West German penal code (Sect. 175 (2)) allows the court to abstain from sentencing where the attitude of the "victim" substantially lessens the guilt of the accused.

Attempts to "Cure"

Where society permits assault upon a person's sexuality, doctors may become remarkably inventive, especially when they are setting out to eradicate sexual tendencies different from their own. The courts provide them with a constant supply of human guinea pigs on whom they are permitted to experiment.

Circumstances Which Cause Concern

Labelling deviants 'barbarians' makes it easy for judges and doctors to treat them barbarically (Gross 1983, 382). And in so doing, those in power feel their righteousness confirmed (Haeberle 1978, 310, 313).

Imprisonment is no solution. It makes it impossible for a short time for the deviant to commit illegal acts, but "some rapists come out of prison more violent than they went in" (Geiser 1979, 36). We have already taken up the topic of castration. Since it has "little or no effect upon a grown man's sexual capacities" (Haeberle 1978, 23) it is hardly the safeguard the public expects. Moreover, it may have very dangerous side effects (Van Rooij 1938, 45-49; Yaffé 1981, 89; Wolf 1934, 238-257; McConley 1981, 100-101).

When castration was thought too extreme a form of therapy, proposals were made to leave the criminal with all his sexual impulses but to make it impossible for him to perform. A female politician in the American state of Maine proposed a law whereby a man guilty of sexual offences involving children would have the nerves inside of his penis which control erection surgically removed (O'Carroll 1980, 237). This high-minded lady did not have the slightest idea of what usually takes place sexually between a man and a child. Neither did Democratic Congressman Frank Shurden who called in Oklahoma "for the surgical removal of the external male genitalia from child molesters." (Linedecker 1981, 251)

We can only consider blatant criminals those doctors who—often on the flimsiest of pretexts—performed on deviates brain surgery, with its totally unpredictable and, for the victim, frequently disastrous results. It is well known that this kind of intervention (severing the connections between different parts of the brain, localised cauterisation) kills much of a person's personality, condemns him ever after to a sort of sub-human level of existence, destroys memory and, in one case in twelve, results in death. Nevertheless there were no limits to the enthusiasm some brain surgeons displayed for these operations (Sigusch 1977). One man who "suffered" from a sexual interest in safety pins was "cured" of this fetish by the surgical removal of a part of his left temporal lobe! (West 1977, 257) After such surgery the patient is often completely and permanently debilitated and quite unfit for work.

Recoiling, eventually, from such bloody remedies (Schmidt 1984, 135-136), the virtuous healers next looked for pharmaceutical solutions and came up with what, rather inaccurately, has been called "chemical castration". There are drugs which deaden the sexual impulse; since their effect is temporary, they do not castrate a man, at least if they are not taken for longer than six months or so. In cases where the man has an irresistible drive to commit some act which infringes upon the sexual liberty of another, society and even he himself could only welcome some harmless method of repressing, or at least lessening his troubling compulsion. However, such a method has not yet been discovered.

Anti-androgen drugs, for example, in 15-20% of cases, cause a swelling of the male breasts until they resemble those of women, disfiguring his body and requiring amputation by surgery. These drugs also cause constant weariness, loss of vitality and headaches. Not uncommonly the victim becomes physically obese and mentally depressive (Goudsmit 1980, 346-356). Just as with brain surgery, such drugs "are themselves a violent response to violence" (Geiser 1979, 36) if used on rapists. Where the sexual contacts of the patient have not been violent or harmful, it is, of course, totally unethical to subject him to such brutal and risky therapy. In other instances the risks must be balanced: is long-term imprisonment worse for the offender than the possible results of such drugging? One thing should not be forgotten: what does the man do when he finds he is impotent when his young friend urges him to have sex?

Finally some doctors, just as they did with homosexuals, try to "cure" paedophiles by aversion therapy (Crawford 1981, 191-193), which is nothing more than an up-to-date version of the old medieval disgust cure (Bloch 1919, 834). The practice in all these various brainwashing techniques is to show the patient nude photos of the kind of model he finds most attractive in order to excite him sexually, and then immediately punish him for his sexual response by administering electric shocks, injecting him with drugs which make him nauseated for hours, squirting some horrible smelling substance into his nose or assaulting his ear-drums with disagreeable noises. Sometimes, too, the victim is given injections which paralyse him, deprive him of speech and breath, giving him the sensation of suffocating (O'Carroll 1980, 91; West 1977, 261, Linedecker 1981, 247). The doctors thus try to make the man respond adversely to stimuli which he had formerly found arousing; in other words, train human beings as Pavlov trained his dogs. The latest technique is to have the man masturbate for hours, even after ejaculation, indulging in all his favourite fantasies of beautiful children. Supposedly, then, he eventually becomes super-saturated with these images, and alienated from them (Crawford 1981, 202; West 1977, 263; 1980, 144).

The "successes" of such psychological cures, of course, are few, and for these few the effects are only temporary (Crawford 1981, 193; Fraser 1976, 233; Hart de Ruyter 1976, 304; West 1977, 220, 244-246, 261-263, 270; Wilson & Cox 1983, 50). One of Wilson & Cox's subjects provided them "with a classic remark in commenting that he has come to realise that paedophiles need a good travel-agent rather than a psychiatrist." (1983, 66) The only man permanently cured of his paedophile feelings this author knows about was the patient of a certain Dr. Agnes Martin who, under aversion therapy, was drugged into continuous vomiting; this brought on a cardiac arrest and the man died (West 1977, 258).

Here one could well quote Ibsen: "The worst sin of all—the sin which can never be forgiven, for which there is no mercy, no pardon—is destroying the

feelings of love in a human soul." The Arab poet Abu Nuwas said almost exactly the same thing (Wagner 1965, 105). A program to deprive a human being of the object of his erotic preference, to transform it into something hateful and disgusting to him, is pure sadism, and it can only be hatched and harboured in a perverted brain.

Everything published about these "cures" suffers from the fact that no distinction ever seems to be drawn between pseudo-paedophiles and real boy-lovers (a subject we discussed at some length in Chapter Two). Obviously pseudo-paedophile patients, who really prefer adult sexual partners but were caught having sex with a child substitute, are going to be more amenable to treatment and less inclined to recidivism (West 1980, 138). Psychological training in assertiveness might make such people more successful in maintaining adult relations and thus eliminate their need to seek out children (Crawford 1981, 194). But making the boy-lover more assertive will probably only make him more aggressive in conquering boys!

The real boy-lover almost invariably realises that he will have this sexual predilection for the rest of his life. He feels it is central to his psyche and no form of therapy is likely to "convert" him (Wilson & Cox 1983, 128). And he is right (Hanry 1977, 120-121). In general, too, he resists treatments more successfully and has fewer guilt feelings about his predilection than does the man who likes little girls (Mohr & Turner 1967, 363).

Does this mean that there is no psychotherapy suitable for boy-lovers? Not at all. Of course, there must be no question of "curing" someone of paedophilia, as though erotic preference for a boy or a girl were an illness. Besides, as we have seen, successful "cures" are conspicuous by their absence (Crawford 1981, 210; Freund 1981, 164). But many a man attracted to children is mentally destabilised by the society he lives in telling him his feelings are perverse, immoral and criminal. He is liable, in the end, to start believing this himself, and the inner confusions this causes *can* make him ill.

All of this is bad not just for the victim but for society as a whole. It destroys a valuable citizen, and may possibly turn him into a real threat to children. Spasmodically repressed sexual desire can suddenly and violently erupt: a child is raped, perhaps even later killed out of fear of discovery (Borneman 1978, 1358; Ilken 1982, 33). Afterwards, of course, everyone condemns the criminal; only a few wonder what the real cause of the tragedy might have been.

Treatment of a paedophile suffering from the effects of society's condemnation will be directed toward curing the patient of his internalised self-hate and helping him to accept his own nature (Wolfenden 1963, Sections 193-194). "Georges' weakness was not that he loved young boys as he accused himself, but that he was ashamed of loving them," observed Marie Claire Blais in one of her novels (1974, 80). Acceptance of his own nature enables a man to consider

more calmly how he is going to make his way in a society that condemns and punishes all expressions of his kind of love. In the long run, of course, it is only society which can deliver the paedophile from this misery, by making its laws more fair and re-educating the public. Until this happens the fate of boy-lovers will always be hard. Yet even in this unhappy circumstance, the man who accepts himself for what he is will behave in a more socially responsible manner than the man who rejects, tries to repress and hates his sexuality. The mother of Dolf, the little friend of 57-year-old Alexander, put it rather well: "Since Alexander doesn't have to fight any more *against* himself, he has gained space and time to fight *with* himself. Because people who fight against themselves simply cannot fight with themselves. As long as a paedophile is in a state where he has to fight against his feelings, he has no chance of winning the struggle to improve himself." (Pieterse 1982, II-87) And so membership in a paedophile organisation should be seen by judges, probation officers and psychotherapists as a factor in favour of an accused, while the assurances of a prisoner that he looks upon his paedophile tendencies as immoral should raise strong doubts of personal stability. This may seem like a paradox, but it is quite realistic. A good counsel for the defence appearing before a liberal and well-informed court should make this quite clear.

To accept yourself, with all your predilections, means 1) to be capable of realising your real self (Goethe's "Become what you are!"), 2) to know yourself—and know others as *they* really are, 3) to realise yourself in a synthesis of desires and possibilities, 4) to be able to choose freely how you wish to shape yourself in a meaningful way, 5) a lessening of inner tensions (Sanders 1977, 138; Sengers 1969).

Lonely people are more likely to react pathologically than those who are members of a group in which they find support (Plummer 1981, 232). Paedophile action groups, therefore, promote mental health. Van Spreeuwel, a physician working with gay groups at Amsterdam University, affirmed that members of a sexual minority who accept their nature completely are even stronger in the daily struggle of life, are less influenced by external conditions, more independent and self-reliant than the average heterophile (1975, 42).

Collision with Social Norms — Secrecy and Discovery

Opponents of boy-love who are willing to accede that sexual activity in itself will not harm a boy, see the danger in its forcing a youngster to collide with the social norms (De Levita, quoted by Sandfort 1979, 112; Rouweler-Wutz 1976, 13). The boy is brought into conflict with his surroundings. Fraser states simply, "Whatever we may think of it, children have to conform to society's major norms as they are—otherwise they will become ill, depressed or delinquent." (1981, 47)

- 304 Jean-Claude Macé made this the subject of his novel *Le mignon* (1978). Julien is a boy enamoured of girls and women. His financially ambitious family pushes him into the arms of a rich colonel who abuses him and whom Julien views with disgust. Later he earns pocket money by prostituting himself—this hardly affects him and certainly does not harm him in the least. But when this is discovered and the other inmates of the Home where he has been sent start calling him "a fairy skunk" he commits suicide.

There is no denying this conflict with social standards. Many boy-lovers with a strong sense of moral imperative see this as a reason to refrain from consummating their desires.

- 305 One is deeply moved reading this passage written by the English author T. H. White: "I have fallen in love with Zed. (...) It would be unthinkable to make Zed unhappy with the weight of this impractical, unsuitable love. It would be against his human dignity. Besides, I love him for being happy and innocent, so it would be destroying what I loved. He could not stand the weight of the world against such feelings—not that they are bad in themselves. It is the public opinion which makes them so. (...) I do not believe that some sort of sexual relations with Zed would do him harm—he would probably think and call them t'rific. I do not believe that pervers are made so by seduction. I do not think that sex is evil, except when it is cruel or degrading, as in rape, sodomy, etc., or that I am evil or that he could be. But the practical facts of life are an impenetrable barrier—the laws of God, the laws of Man. His age, his parents, his self-esteem, his self-reliance, the process of development in a social system hostile to the heart, the brightness of his being which has made this what a home should be for three whole weeks of utter holiday, the fact that the old exist for the benefit of the young, not vice versa, the factual impossibilities set up by law and custom, the unthinkable of turning him into a lonely or sad or eclipsed or furtive person—every possible detail of what is expedient, not what is moral, offers the fox to my bosom, and I must let it gnaw." (Quoted by O'Carroll 1980, 17)

One is touched by the sublimity of this selfless denial, but may wonder at the same time whether it might not be Zed who is sacrificed on the altar of society. The decision would be simple if it were just a matter of sweets or cigarettes or alcohol, if sex was just another physical pleasure. But it isn't; it involves friendship and a sort of love which can never be caught later in its present form. It is something which could have made Zed's boyhood more beautiful and happier, and even better prepared him to prove his love later with his lifetime partner. In the next chapter we will discuss all the arguments in favour of this view.

A boy-lover, then, must be very conscious of his responsibility and, in considering sexual intimacy, balance its pros and cons. Should he risk exposing his young friend to police examinations, parental panic, the disapproval and insults of his peers at school, gnawing, if false, feelings of guilt? Surely not for a casual affair, and not just to satisfy his own lust. But where he perceives a strong mental and physical need in the youth, if the boy, deprived of affection,

needs protection, care, tenderness and seems to be striving for some intimate, irreplaceable contact, it would be unthinkable, and cruel to the boy, to refuse him the satisfaction of such important needs. Physical rejection could be deeply and permanently traumatising. This, too, we will take up in Chapter Five.

The danger is greater where the parents are sex-negative, where they do not know their son's friend (which is likely to elicit distrust and make them even more upset if things come to light, thus facilitating the lodging of a complaint (van Dijk 1978, 67)), where the people involved tend to gossip, where the boy is naive and does not know how to cope with the usual tricks police use in the course of their examinations ("We already know all about it, because your friend has told us everything. So if you lie to us, we'll put you in a reformatory.")

Conflict with social norms affects every paedophile relationship in as much as it makes secrecy vitally necessary. Even if the child's parents consent, so that the affair can be openly discussed at home, there are other relatives to be considered, as well as the boy's peers. Quite spontaneously, children keep these matters hidden from their parents (Borneman 1978, 1013, 1015; Geisler 1959, 62-63; Pieterse 1982, I-18); they already know how their parents react to a mention of sex; often they do not even know the appropriate words and expressions to discuss it (Landis 1956, 101; Sandfort 1979, 137, 232).

The fact that some psychologists like Burgess & Holmstrom (1975, quoted by Sandfort 1980, 192) view this obligatory concealment as traumatising, while others like Bernard (1975, 25) interpret it rather positively, is perhaps more revealing of these psychologists than of children. Outspoken, garrulous children who delight in telling people about all the nice things that are happening to them may well find such secrecy difficult. Reserved, taciturn children may find it easy. A secret can even be nursed as something beautiful and the fact that "only he and I know about this" may even increase a boy's self-esteem. On the other hand, knowledge that it is forbidden, that most people are horrified by it, may be a fertile breeding ground for guilt. Moreover, keeping the secret may necessitate repeated lying, and this is certainly burdensome and demoralising (Reinacher 1980, 165; Möller 1983, 92). Sometimes the man even plays upon these guilt feelings in the child: "If you betray me I'll be sent to prison," or he frightens the child: "If you betray me I'll beat you up." In any case it is a traumatising experience for the child (Geisler 1959, 16).

Matzneff (1979, 105) puts it in a poem:

*The scourge of man/boy love is having to wait.
Your French teacher, idiot, keeps you after school.
He doesn't comprehend how we're counting the minutes...
You've told your mother you're going with some friends
to play in the Luxembourg.
Now we have two hours of delight before us:*

*let's not waste a minute!
So here you are at last, my morning boy,
cheeks red from running,
Throwing off your book-bag with a shrug,
Leaping boisterously into my arms.
Your fresh tongue plays about inside my mouth
like a silver fish in the enchanter's trap.
You're twelve. Your hair is blond, your face is ravishing.
I love you.
I love also our risks, which threaten me because of you:
The transgression alone exalts me.
The lies you tell your parents have the same charm
as our exquisite embraces.
We laugh at the world of adults.
Sun theology of forbidden fruit,
I find the secrecy of our meetings adorable.*

But to come back down to earth from the poet's dream, the same writer, in a less enchanted mood, says, "Still, we must pay a price for these hours of delight,"—the price being obligatory secrecy (1974, 67). Duvert (1980, 89) shrewdly observes, "As for the adults brave enough to seek contacts with boys, they belong to a very special category where the best are mixed with the worst. It is our ice-cold morality and brutal laws which have selected them. Everything which is prohibited and must be done in secrecy is difficult. Imperviousness to danger is not necessarily the best recommendation for a lover—but without it, alas, there can be no contact." The American feminist Pat Califia (1980) says basically the same thing, that laws and "decency in this field further a bad selection. Nice, sensitive men will sooner be deterred than brutal, coarse types."

Of course the greatest chance of a collision with the authorities is where the boy is not willing and the man, by means of threats and violence, forces him into sexual conjugation or to participate in acts which frighten or disgust him. When this happens some form of punishment is certainly justified. But where mutual affection is involved and the man is sensitive in the way he proceeds, boys, especially older boys, tend to maintain their silence and discovery is consequently rather difficult. One of Rossman's subjects said, "If I set out to seduce a boy, I'd use the same method boys use on each other. I'd simply start telling dirty jokes, and I'd encourage the boys to tell dirty jokes, until I could tell, by the tone of their voice, their emotional reaction, their laughter, their lack of embarrassment, which boy was experienced and available. Within a half hour of watching and listening, I'd know which boy to go after. How would I then seduce him? I'd nod and signal for him to follow me as I left. The pederasts

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

who get arrested are those who make overtures to boys who don't take such initiatives themselves. This country so neglects its young, gives them so few exciting adventures, and so sexually frustrates them, that many an inexperienced boy will follow right after you if you but nod." (Rossman 1976, 160-161).

Gerbener, in Duisburg, and Niemann, in Hamburg, studied a large number of trial records to see how such man/boy affairs came to be discovered. Gerbener's sample was 515, Niemann's 354—all boys and girls under the age of 13. Näbel (quoted by Geisler 1959, 63) studied 787 records, although the ages of the children are not indicated. The data are summarised in Table 2.

Table 2

	Gerbener	Niemann	Näbel
Means of Discovery			
Child telling its parents		32.2%	
Child telling police		11.0%	
Child telling other children		8.5%	
Child telling other adults		6.8%	
Child telling somebody	45.0%	58.5%	40.0%
Police becoming suspicious	8.0%	16.4%	
Observation by witness	35.0%	12.4%	37.0%
Implication by other child	4.0%	12.4%	
Adult blackmailed to make confession		0.3%	

In the 8,035 cases studied by Baumann (1983, 540), where the boys were between the ages of 0 and 14 and the girls between 0 and 20, the police themselves made the discovery in 7.5% of the cases, the minor told the police in 12.0%, the parents in 54.6%, a neighbour in 10.4%, the youth protection authorities in 2.4%, the school in 4.6%, and various other persons in 8.5%. In 106 Dutch cases (boys and girls between 3 and 11 years of age), the complaint was lodged in one case by the child, 85 cases by the parents, 6 by neighbours, 5 by some official agency, 4 by other children, and 4 by other members of the family (Wolters 1982, 74).

Rossman (1976, 158) investigated 17 American cases concerning boys between the ages of 12 and 15. One boy reported the incident to the police, in this case in anger to get even with a man who, out of real affection for the boy, forced him to return to his parents after running away from home. One man confessed when parents tried to blackmail him. One boy told his friends

Collision With Social Norms

of the fun he was having, whereupon one of these friends informed his parents. One boy was turned in by a jealous older brother, one by an aunt who found a letter from the man in her nephew's desk, two by neighbours reporting a boy being seen in the home of a single man late at night. Ten cases were discovered by the police; of these ten, six were discovered when looking for runaway boys, two when investigating thefts, one on finding a pornographic film showing a man and boy, one when stopping a car for speeding.

In the German cases it was mostly a matter of younger children complaining about something unpleasant which happened to them, while the Rossman cases seem to concern bigger boys involved in entirely consensual relations. People may try to depict the latter as "victims", but the boys hardly thought of themselves that way (Janus 1981, 331).

In West Germany the police found that in only two-thirds of reports they received of sexual activities involving minors could they come up with someone to prosecute. The number of individuals sentenced is far less—only about one out of five of those detected. Often the "culprits" are children themselves, or so young as to put their responsibility for the activities in question. Often in minor infractions the prosecutor refrains from prosecuting. Moreover, there are acquittals (Kerscher 1978, 151).

Parental detection is often brought about by too much generosity. Many a boy-lover simply cannot resist showering gifts upon his young friend, loading him down and spoiling him with sporting goods, a bicycle, clothes, radio, etc. Where the parents know about the friendship the risk is less great, but when they cannot identify the source of such instant child-wealth they are likely to start asking questions and become suspicious.

Keeping the sexual contact hidden from parents may lead to having sexual rendezvous in unsuitable places where third parties might observe them. A 1970 American circular to boy-lovers gave the following advice: "Always take them one at a time, groups scenes are to be avoided at all costs. What I mean by that is I look for a boy whose friends do not know me. A lonely boy without many friends is always best, but even if he has a lot of friends he is not likely to talk about me to them if they do not know me. Neighborhood scenes are taboo. This is especially true in regard to group scenes. Remember, when boys discuss things, they are apt to do so loudly and without any regard for who might be overhearing. Always pick the fatherless. Men are more likely to be suspicious and, if their suspicions are confirmed, are more likely to take action. Also fatherless boys are more likely to crave the attentions of adult males. (...) No brothers, especially older ones. This is based on my belief that there is no way I can prevent a boy from discussing everything with his brother. The mere fact that they spend so much time together... If you have been spending money on only one brother, it could produce jealousy. And when sibling rivalry

develops (as it inevitably does) the brother may 'spill the beans' to mother to get his brother in trouble, without giving a thought to what he may be doing to me!"

How wonderful would be a society which understood something about the positive possibilities of such relationships, where parents regarded their son's friend as their own, a collaborator in the boy's upbringing, where there was no risk of brutal intervention by the police, where a boy could proudly boast of his lover to his friends, where morality was focused more upon character formation through love than upon what people's genitals were up to! Such societies have existed in the Mediterranean world; they exist today elsewhere. This is not, then, a totally unrealistic dream.

When a child psychiatrist states that mutually consensual sex between men and boys is not intrinsically harmful but that it places the youngsters in painful conflict with the norms of the people around them, we have a right to ask him, it seems, what he himself has done to change the attitudes of these people. Moreover, he should be asked if it is right that adapting people to society should be the aim of his profession, one to which feelings, human desire and happiness should always be sacrificed. According to some sources, sex denial in the Chinese People's Republic has gone to such lengths that the authorities only permit their subjects to have intercourse on certain days. Does our psychiatrist feel himself called upon to adapt his patients to such laws? The anti-psychiatry movement has rightly seen that one should question the fundamental health of a society which demands this kind of adaptation. Writers and artists have been more ethical in these matters than have psychiatrists. "Some of our more thoughtful writers and dramatists, both at home and abroad, have been busily probing the mentality of a culture that within a single generation produced Nazism, Fascism and Communism and which, while preaching a doctrine of peace, love and brotherhood, has for centuries spawned class distinction, race hatred, religious bigotry, persecution of minorities, intolerance, and perpetual war. It is not likely that these writers nor anyone who understands their work will feel a deep moral compulsion to identify with this culture." "Immorality does not consist in being different; it consists in not allowing others to be so." "Both emotional and moral maturity consists in being able to absorb the paradox that all people are different but equal." (Churchill 1968, 257-258, 313).

Society's battle against boy-lovers is as justified as a battle against the left-handed or red-heads, or against members of such other minorities as Jews, Gypsies or blacks. The criminologist Hauptmann (1975, 66) calls it the witch hunt of the 20th Century.

The effect of any kind of sexual experience the child may have is not determined by the norms of his society but by his own position with regard to the experiences. Therefore this position—and it is immaterial whether one

approves of it or not—should always be the point of departure for any pedagogy by the people around him. Again, it is immaterial whether these people think the acts are ugly or horrid: only how the child views them, and to what extent the child willingly participated, is relevant. Where the child feels insulted, threatened, frightened, given a creepy feeling, it should be made clear to him that the adults who surround him (and this includes the authorities) are all on his side and he is entitled to protection and defence.

But when a child feels himself free to engage in a casual encounter or to express sexually a loving friendship, his delight should be respected just as completely as his delight in stepping out of a car into a beautiful mountain wilderness. "If the child experienced the encounter as positive, do not undermine this association," advises Prof. Constantine (1981, 6), and Fraser gives the same counsel: don't interfere! (1981, 57). It is wrong to impose upon the child social criteria for which it is not yet ripe. We should not draw him violently from his own natural evolution. The smaller child certainly does not think about what happens to his body in terms of good or bad: he thinks in terms of pleasant and unpleasant. (Borneman 1978, 678-679). It may, of course, be necessary to make him aware of certain risks or forbid him to associate with some unsuitable person, just as we might make him aware of the dangers of climbing the rocks in that enchanted wilderness. It is not, then, that we deny that mountains are tempting and that sex is delightful, but that the ascent would be too much for a beginner, and that the proposed sexual partner has some undesirable personality traits.

If we want to eliminate potential harm, we should offer consolation and safety to the frightened, protection to the threatened, justice and satisfaction to the injured child. If, on the contrary, we want to inflict injury and magnify it, we should tell the child that he had done something evil, indoctrinate him with guilt, tell him over and over again that Father and Mother are terribly upset, angry and unhappy about what had happened, that he is now soiled, degraded, dishonoured, ruined for life and twisted into a dirty homosexual. It is not unusual for children to believe such nonsense and behave accordingly (Ingram 1981, 186; Constantine 1981, 227, 237-238, 241). "The worst thing the parents can do, besides being hysterical, is to urge the child to forget the experience and refuse to talk about it" with him. "This silence convinces most children that they have done something terribly bad, which has hurt and disappointed their parents." (Geiser 1979, 30; Haeberle 1978, 356, 79; Wolters 1982, 64, 75, 79; Zeegers 1970, 43). It is important to stress that possible traumatising by sexual events can generally be repaired very well, but that this is much less likely to happen with traumatising (guilt complexes, phobias) induced by the parents and the people around the child (Griffin 1971, 266). No child has spontaneous guilt feelings about sex—feelings which originate entirely within himself, as

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

he assumes it is something natural (Bender & Blau 1937, 514). And if the child does have guilt feelings, he should be helped to overcome them (Powell & Chalkley 1981, 76).

A striking example is confrontation with an exhibitionist. "There are some relatively harmless adult males who cannot relate to adult males or females, have doubts about their own sexuality, and who expose themselves to others, sometimes to children. (...) Children are not traumatised by a 'flasher' and frequently accept the behaviour with better grace than do their parents. Any trauma, as in most sexual abuse, comes from adult interpretation and handling of the event. When parents get upset and a police dragnet is instituted, the commotion often causes much more concern to the child than the event itself." (Walters 1975, 130)

306 "One incident that called for wholesale psychotherapy concerned four girls and three boys, all in the first and second grade, who were walking home from school. As they passed a garage in an alley, a man opened his coat and exposed his penis to the children. They continued home at a leisurely rate. One girl told her mother, who called the police. Several police cars entered the area searching for the now-departed 'flasher'. Fathers rushed home from work and grabbed weapons, searching the neighborhood. Ministers and neighbours hurried to several of the homes. When asked about their responses to the man who exposed himself, the children said they giggled. None were traumatised, and they apparently accepted the event with good grace until the parents overreacted. The adults rather than the children could have profited from therapeutic intervention." (Walters 1975, 167)

If parents really want to strengthen and protect their children in this area, the very first step would be to give them frank and explicit sexual information, holding nothing back. Real sex education will protect young people far better than the police. Sex should be a topic open to discussion, easily recognised as a completely human, beautiful aspect of life, although, like all aspects of life, it has a darker side, *i.e.* some people, goaded by passion, may not respect the wishes of the other person with whom they are interacting. Just as a thief does not respect your property, so another kind of criminal may not respect your body. But your body is yours! Nobody is entitled to touch it, caress it, kiss you, if you do not want that to happen. Your genitals are particularly related to this area of sex, and you and only you may decide who can touch you there. Here you have to obey nobody: no father, no mother, no teacher, no other child, may enter this sexual area with you without your consent.

If the parents see to it that their son is given some practical experience in sex, either with his age-mates or with a careful older friend, the boy will be even better armed against unwanted assault. He will quickly spot the sexual signals in an approach which, since it is not gruesome and mysterious to him, will be less likely to bring him into panic. Insufficient or distorted sex education

Collision With Social Norms

is actually dangerous in such situations; wrong response of the parents when they catch their son in sex play or discover he has a sexual relationship is the chief cause of lasting damage. Often this is even more traumatising than police examinations.

Many parents feel they have failed in bringing up their child if they discover him in sex play. They cling to their conviction (or contention) that their son must have been forcefully taught these things by some evil man. They do not realise how seriously traumatising to their children their attitudes are, or they place their social reputation above the mental health of their offspring (Schult 1973, 155). Thus they create guilt feelings in the child, for even if the child did not initiate the sexual activities, in most cases he or she actively participated in them (Pieterse 1982, II 17, 20) and is now told how wrong or sinful this was.

307 Martina at the age of 13 was approached by a man whose obtrusiveness she thought slightly curious. She related this to a girl friend and eventually her father heard about it. Nine years later, as a adult, she reported the consequences: "It was like a police examination, perfectly horrid. It was only when I told about it at home that it suddenly dawned on me that this might have something to do with sex, that it was dirty, that I had evidently been the victim of a crime. The questioning made me feel guilty, since I wasn't sure whether I had behaved correctly." The father lodged a complaint with the police. The police examination seemed to Martina a simple repetition of the conversation with her father (Baurmann 1979, 90-91).

308 An intelligent 15-year-old boy was caught masturbating by his father. The father was very upset and asked his son to tell him if anyone else had done that to him. The boy hesitatingly reported that a tenant had once casually touched his genitals when he was looking over some pictures and books in his room. The father brought in the tenant and the boy was made to repeat the story. At this point the boy believed that an apology from the man would pacify his father and bring the matter to an end. But the man denied touching the boy and the father lodged a complaint with the police. To the boy this seemed crazy, unjust and regrettable. He was not at all resentful and had no wish for revenge against the tenant. Quite the opposite: he was grateful to the man and felt indebted to him for innumerable acts of kindness throughout his rather joyless childhood. The contacts seemed to him perfectly innocent, but he was disappointed and offended by the tenant's denial which made the man, in the boy's eyes, a liar. The tenant claimed it was a plot to get rid of him, the father having prevailed upon his son to give false testimony." (Geisler 1959, 35-36)

"Perhaps as many as half of these children will later admit that they experienced some degree of pleasure in the sexual contact. They suffer increased guilt for having enjoyed the contact and are even more confused about why it should have been pleasurable if it was wrong." (Geisler 1979, 57) "Sensitive and very conscientious children even suffer from selfreproach contemplating the consequences of a trial for the family of the accused" whose misbehaviour they had to report (Geisler 1959, 53).

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

The well-known British criminologist, Professor West (1980, 142) observes, "The deleterious consequences of some consensual yet criminal activities, including incest, the enlistment of willing youths in homosexual behaviour and the erotic fondling of children, is apt to be exaggerated. The young participants in these encounters are worse affected by ensuing upsets in their families, by police interrogations, by court proceedings, by the risk of public exposure and by the threat of removal from home. One device which might avoid some of these evils, where young persons are concerned, would be for police to refrain from prosecution and social workers to refrain from reporting incidents," West adds, "provided the suspected offender desists from his misconduct." In many of these cases there is, however, no *misconduct* at all: the conduct has only clashed with some very arbitrary rules!

Young people nowadays are not very impressed by these rules; they are often more than willing to attack them, defy them, especially if they deal with sex. Table 3 shows the percentages of boys agreeing with various statements about his sexual beliefs and practices (from Sorensen, 1973). Percentages of doubtful responses are in brackets.

Table 3

	Boys 13-15	Boys 16-19
"So far as sex is concerned, I do what I want to do, regardless of what society thinks." (Table 183)	61% (3%)	76% (1%)
"So far as sex is concerned, what other young people do doesn't have any influence on what I myself do." (Table 47)	66% (0%)	77% (5%)
"My sexual behavior would not be acceptable to society." (Table 270)	44% (7%)	49% (5%)
"I think my parents' ideas about sex are wrong, but they have a right to their own opinions." (Table 10)	61% (1%)	67% (6%)
"I think it's right that people should make their own moral code, deciding for themselves what's moral and what's wrong." (Table 28)	77% (1%)	89% (1%)

Collision With Social Norms

This tendency to independent judgement is even more evident when one reads that the statement, "On one or more occasions I've done sexual things mostly because the people I was hanging out with at the time expected me to" (Table 70) was found true by only 39% of the 13-15-year-olds and 16% of the 16-19-year-olds.

Mrs. Antilla, a professor who was at one time Finnish Minister of Justice, observed that children over the age of 12 often had very different attitudes about sexual behaviour from their parents, and concluded, "in future legislation, attention must apparently be paid to this conflict between the generations, and that the wish of the young person himself or herself should be given more weight." (quoted by Gibbens *et al* 1980, 89).

The Age Groups

Aristotle taught that "the justice of a master or a father is a different thing from that of a citizen, for a son or a slave is property, and there can be no injustice of one's own property." (quoted by Avery-Clark *et al* 1981, 24). Since this doctrine was convenient, it has been maintained ever since. Even today parents who exploit, assault or abuse their children are comparatively well treated by the courts and public opinion.

As long as people worked and lived together as a whole, irrespective of age, the community afforded a kind of protection. Children became engaged as early as seven, at which age they were sufficiently informed about the meaning of marriage, and boys were considered fit to be husbands at fourteen (Deschner 1978, 261-262). Only later, during a period of tempestuous progress in science and technology, when the economic adequacy of a family required years of instruction and education of future husbands, did society begin to split itself into age groups, a kind of decomposition. Thus developed our world of working adults, powerful, dominant, imposing its laws, judging; a separate world of the elderly, useless, having no other purpose than to wait calmly for death; and a third world of childhood and youth, a separate universe of schools and youth groups where the young are trained for their future tasks. The demands are for ever longer and more rigorous instruction. The young person remains forever, it seems, a pupil, under tutelage. In our period of history, where work is considered a virtue, earning money the aim of life, the non-working, expense-incurring child can only be considered an inferior being. It is important to realise that this unhealthy situation is relatively recent, peculiar only to the last two centuries (NAMBLA 1981, 99; Baumann 1983, 77; Plummer 1981, 115-116; Haeberle 1978, 141, 143, 159-160), and is not a natural condition.

The frontiers between these worlds became ever stronger, more sharply defined and difficult to cross. One way the non-old adult group has displayed

its dominance has been by monopolising the right to sexual intercourse: coitus is not fitting for old people; they should be superior to base lust; how could one possibly justify sexual pleasure for the infertile pensioners? Youth was even less entitled to sex: lust enervates young people and interferes with their education. As long as a person is incapable of supporting a wife and children with his own earnings he must not marry, and only marriage can excuse sexual intercourse.

This grand conception of the social universe was aided by the pleasant idea that old people could no longer, and young people did not yet, experience sexual urges. Thus it was important to keep young people firmly separated from the world of adults with all of its temptations. For it was only from the adult world that evil, indecent thoughts could contaminate the young—pernicious, as youth was intrinsically pure and innocent. Thus a special literature for young people came into being, along with a proscribed category of “publications perilous for youth”.

Nobody was allowed to cross the frontiers. Children belonged to a different, inferior caste—untouchables for nearly everyone but their parents. Outside the family, only determined, well-tested adults, entrusted with special tasks, were allowed to involve themselves with children: a teacher, or a doctor. If somebody else befriended a boy he immediately came under suspicion.

This unnatural social structure acquired in the course of time still other peculiarities. At first totally subjected to adult power, with no importance of his own, the child gradually was granted rights. And so came into being an immense youth protection network which grew and grew and became so extensive as to actually obstruct children in their free development and choice of relationships, thus, paradoxically, depriving them of even more human rights (Möller 1983, 20). Youth protection became a heavy youth burden, suffocating the defenceless protected. It worked more to unburden the adult conscience than to make children more happy and free (Sebban 1980, 129).

With the acquisition of rights came that of property. Youth began to dispose of more and more money, and the world of adults was quick to see that this could be commercially exploited. It catered to, and publicised, trends in the young people's world: in fashion, hair styles, speech, music, literature, dance, film, theatre, travel, etc. But genuine youth movements which attempted to burst the bounds which separated them from the powerful world of non-old adults had only limited success.

The vast majority of youth fell into the trap so cleverly designed by the grown-ups. Youth cultivates its own life-style, its own language, its own fashion, its own protests, its own manners, its own culture, convinced that by so doing it can keep adults out of its own territory. Actually all it is doing is fortifying the wall adults have erected against them to keep them out of society as long as possible. Reich proposed that the recent tolerance of masturbation as a

specific form of sexual behaviour peculiar to the young was related to all of this (Schärer 1974, 67, 76-77).

And this state of things greatly aggravates the problems of boy-lovers. A man who befriends a boy, is constantly with him, and for whom no good reason can be found for such curious behaviour (he is not, say, the boy's father, teacher, coach or Scout leader) immediately comes under suspicion. Even when there is no evidence whatever of sexual involvement, he is likely to be treated badly simply for breaking the socialising taboo. Two people belonging to different age groups simply liking one another is disgusting: “apartheid” is good morality.

The child's situation is even worse. He needs understanding and affection, and if he cannot get them from his parents he now finds the path to adults outside his family blocked. In other cultures (and our own culture until the 18th Century), where children really live together with adults and are not relegated to a separate caste, they are able to turn to many grown-ups for help. This makes it virtually impossible for child abuse to flourish to the degree it does in our culture. The younger child is much less infantilised and much more highly respected. It is interesting, in this connection, to read the ethnologist Pierre Emny's description of African society: “The relationships between the African child and adult belong largely to the type which we classify as ‘symmetrical’. The little one is treated as though he already has complete individuality, capable of showing his own will and having the right to assert it; in other words, he is entitled to the same rights as every other member of the community. The child is not seen as essentially different from the adult and inferior to him, and people are therefore inclined to deal with him on a person-to-person basis, with respect based upon consciousness of equality.” (Quoted by Schärer 1979, 192)

Depth and Superficiality of Love

The negative aspects of boy-love which we have thus far examined have all been due to false suppositions, or the consequences of societal taboos, or some bad character traits of the adult in question. They are, then, either imaginary, non-existent or avoidable; they are not intrinsic.

Every form of love has its dark side. The poets of boy-love repeat the common themes of all love poets: unrequited love, jealousy, infidelity; one partner is only interested in sex, the other wants much more; disease, impotence; in other words, everything that may trouble homophiles, and everything—save unwanted pregnancies!—that may trouble heterophiles, can cast a shadow on boy-lovers and the boys they love.

Perhaps here the love of one partner, the man, is more frequently deeper and of a different nature than that of the other partner, the boy. We may recall from Chapter Three what Stöwer has his Epictetus write on this matter. He adds, "You are asking me whether true love is possible when there is a generation's difference between the lovers. I think it is possible even here, but such a love will be quite different from what each partner would normally expect. The love you seek will demand from you a great deal of understanding, and from him a degree of self-denial that in most cases is not feasible because for him there are too many opportunities for love without it."

This was written about a world in which the sexual desires of youth were not tabooed and where a handsome, healthy boy like Antinous had many opportunities for sexual encounters. This is, of course, less true in our own time, and a boy entertaining a relationship with a loving man will be thrown more completely on this one resource, and for a longer period.

But still it is a fact that the love of a boy is often more capricious and superficial than that of a man. This is normal for his age. Little boys are whimsical and volatile; no steady relationship can be built up with them. Thus loving them is a painful, unstable situation full of tension, says Matzneff (1977, 70-71) after a great deal of experience. "Boy-love is a school for loneliness," sighs Saint-Ours (1973, 202). And James M. Barrie, equally experienced and a fervent boy-lover all his life, the author of *Peter Pan*, ends his story *Tommy and Grizel* (the beautiful young lady Grizel loves little Tom and he tries to love her) on the bitter reflection: "She thought it was very sweet of him to try so hard; sweeter of him than if he really had loved her, though not of course quite so sweet to her. He was a boy only. She knew that, despite all he had gone through, he was still a boy. And boys cannot love. Oh, is it not cruel to ask a boy to love?" (quoted by Fraser 1976, 71-72)

Regarding Lewis Carroll, the creator of *Alice in Wonderland* and lover of young girls, Morris Fraser observes, "One can see that colouring all of the author's work is the deep depression and despair of a man whose love was bound to be unrequited. Here is the paedophile's constant lament—that the immature child cannot possibly comprehend, or return, such complex and bewildering adult emotions." (1976, 193)

There are exceptions, as we have already seen.

309 One of de Montherlant's little friends said to him, "If somebody would tell something bad about you, I wouldn't believe him." (de Montherlant & Peyrefitte 1983, 37) Pieterse (1982, II 60) recorded the statement of a 33-year-old man loving boys 7 to 14: "The relationship between Tony and me was so close that if he was in pain I felt it, and if I was in pain he felt it. Now we can laugh about this, because that emotional bond is past. If something had happened to him during our relationship I would have been prepared to commit suicide. I knew this; Tony knew this: if you die, I'll die with you."

But mostly the feelings of the adult partner are not required on the same level. "The elder is at fault for expecting a youngster to experience what he himself feels for him as this is almost invariably beyond the boy's emotive capacity. There are some lads who—out of hero-worship, image-identification and the like—do exhibit these feelings to a certain extent, but it should be satisfactory enough that the youngster expresses affection or a gratitude-based regard," Boy-love poetry will be "appreciated chiefly by other boy-lovers and not by the lad himself." (Nichols 1976, 61)

Gebhard (1965, 316), commenting on prisoners he investigated who were sentenced for having relations with 12-15-year-old boys, observed, "In many instances a real and deep relationship existed. One not infrequent tragedy is that the love was not mutual: the adult was deeply involved emotionally and dreaded the inevitable dissolution of the affair, while the teenager with the unthinking callousness of youth merely regarded him as a 'nice guy', but not as any vital part of his life."

One may deplore this situation. As one is unable to change it, the only solution is to accept, wisely, that loving is more important, and enriching, than being loved. Matzneff (1974, 56, 59) counsels, "Never ask a child whether he loves you; it is enough that he allows you to love him." One must find satisfaction in the unselfishness of a relationship where no reward is asked for or expected. For nobody does this come easily...

Albert Ellis "states that boys are 'lousy lovers'; and here he is both right and wrong. To clarify, it is necessary to distinguish 'loving' from 'making love'. The former embraces the capacity to feel profound and total concern for another human being; it involves full commitment and responsibility. 'Making love' in contrast requires only the desire for pleasure, in the pursuance of which there occasionally may be a facile *pretence* at 'loving'. The man who has experienced relationships with youngsters knows blissfully well that some boys can be most satisfactory at 'making love', especially if they have overcome inhibitions as to deep-kissing and the like. A lad can enjoy it not only for the pleasure but also because it is *fun* and fulfils a desire for experimentation in forbidden fields', for adventure and a need for security. The act of 'making love' is often associated by the boy with the warmth and comfort that comes from being cuddled—an intense delight in itself. Nevertheless, younger lads are generally too immature and self-centered to express any appreciative degree of out-going love of which most adults are capable. The 15- or 16-year-old boy comes much closer to achieving this happy state; in fact, not infrequently these teeners, if they are in the mood, can teach *adults* an ecstatic thing or two!" (Quoted by Nichols 1976, 24)

The Brevity of Bloom

*Boys' beauty is as brief alas!
As that of frostwork on the glass,
That's hardly seen before the ray
That shows it makes it melt away
But though it's brief, what beauty can compare
with this — so strangely, delicately fair.*
— E. E. Bradford (1925, 30)

The ancient Greeks, as we have seen, loved “ta paidika”, the boyishness, which is eternal and common to all periods of history. “We always love just one being, but in various incarnations,” says Matzneff (1981, 282), and this is echoed by Schult (1982, 101).

310 “I was just under twenty when I lost my little twelve-year-old darling and I was quite desperate and on the verge of suicide. He remained the prototype of all the children I have loved since, but they have all proved to be replaceable to an unbelievable degree. I feel deeply about each one of them but they count less as separate people and all seem to have the same essential lovability in common.” (A boy-lover, quoted by Kraemer 1976, 4-5)

An individual boy, certainly, is not eternal. On the contrary, it is his nature to change, to grow. He may come to incarnate “ta paidika”, but only for a rather brief period. “Boys will be boys, but a different boy almost every day. And you cannot predict the day when they will still look like boys, but have become men.” (Menen 1975, 132)

And one day the little friend will not even look like a boy. He ceases to be erotically exciting, his attraction is vanishing. The accompanying sorry is indissolubly part of this special kind of love (Plummer 1981, 233-234). “He who loves only youth and its gracefulness is doomed to a less frequent, and shorter lasting, love.” (Peyrefitte 1956, 178)

“A boy is a living force, illuminating you and then passing you by. If you love boys you are foredoomed to love the volatile, for tomorrow they will not be the same boys you loved today. Time force-marches them onward; they are at an age where change is the quickest. You are doomed to loneliness, to an everlasting hunt for a fugitive angel who is only an angel for one fleeting moment.” (de Brethmas 1977, 65)

“Ineffable happiness can be the reward on both sides of a generous love between man and boy; but by its own nature it is doomed to be ephemeral—although often succeeded by a lasting friendship, the magic of love must pass with the magic of boyhood. I repeat, although, after a mainly happy lifetime, I don’t for a moment wish that I’d been born sexually different from

what I was, I would always try to dissuade, were it possible to alter an individual nature, a youth from obeying an inclination towards boys (...) because his only chances of emotional serenity are almost certain to be wrecked by it.” (Davidson 1971, 196-197) “That fierce and mystic delusion which is the sexual lunacy cannot span more than three or four years at most: suddenly, overnight like a flower, it is dead; the unique and magic boy has become an ordinary young man and one can look at the curve of his cheek without feeling a pang and an ineffable joy.” (Davidson 1962, 111-112)

To Gerrit Komrij (*NRC Handelsblad*, 21 March, 1984) “young boys and old books are the crown jewels of creation.” As to the first, however much we may lament it, “the satin of their loins becomes crackle, the message of death lodges itself in their commander’s stare, their blood pulverises and there is evermore emptiness within the fence of their arms.”

Is it best, then, in light of this unhappy truth, that one abstain entirely from relations with boys? Pseudo-Lucian has an orator make this recommendation; he suggests that young men not look for the soft and short-lived pleasure obtained with pleasing boys, and not give in to an infatuation which will be gone as soon as the beloved gets hairy (quoted by Buffière 1980, 524). The great poet Theokritos also had his doubts:

*Better it is
not to know the pain that boy-love always causes!
This one approaches you boldly, supple as the quick deer,
but tomorrow he’ll set his sails to go elsewhere;
the young won’t stay young forever, as flowers of eternal spring.
Later the lover will feel his marrow devoured
by the pain of remembrance. Often in the night a dream will deceive him
and this gnawing grief can’t be cured by the passage of time.*
(30: 16-23)

But his heart answers:

*He who hopes for victory
over cunning Eros is indeed a man who hopes
to number the stars shining in the sky.
Therefore, willing or unwilling, I must submit
and carry the yoke, heavy as it may be. For thus, my beloved,
is the will of the god who duped the senses of master Zeus
and of the Cyprian goddess herself. Who am I? A fleeting leaf,
a slight zephyr will suffice and the south wind carries me quickly away.*
(30: 35-32)

How brief, alas, is the bloom! In the Brongersma Foundation there are series of photos showing the naked beauty of one and the same boy over a period of several years. I once saw a sensitive artist in tears when he leafed through one of these sets documenting the evolution of a charming, brilliant boy of 11 into a rather coarse, square-shouldered 19-year-old. How cruelly nature destroys such loveliness!

It is not without sense. The child, the boy in puberty, needs the helping, protecting love of the adult; nature gives him the power to attract, to reward the care he gets with the beauty of his person. This all must pass away if the loved-one is to become independent. To such imperative the lover's desire for "eternity, the deep, deep eternity" of lust must give way. To the younger partner, whose very existence is directed upon development and change, the end of such a love relationship comes as something natural, to be expected. "Where did novelists ever find continuity in children's affections? For someone living entirely in the present, time has no significance... How could a person, faced with the task of constructing himself, find the force necessary to sympathise with someone else?" (Martel, unpublished manuscript)

In this respect the boy is frequently the wiser of the two partners, more conscious of the transient nature of their relationship. The man may be caught up in dreams of "the eternal boy", of Endymion, of Peter Pan, and simply cannot realise that the boy's red lips will soon be framed by a beard, the smooth body will become coarse and hairy. The man just loves; and it is the essence of love to tell the beloved, "Our love is eternal". (Marcel, quoted by Matzneff 1977, 65)

Perhaps Sandfort (1980, 196) is right in saying that adults tend to see marriage, union for life, as the sole valid model for every love relationship, and thus are all too inclined to call boy-love, with its in-built transitory nature, tragic. This modelling becomes a bit hypocritical when it turns a blind eye to the fact that heterosexual relations, too, are subject to a high degree of instability and change. "Love makes time pass by, and time makes love pass by," goes an Italian proverb. In The Netherlands, the number of divorces is one-quarter of the number of marriages (Tiggeler 1979, 66), and half of the married people are unhappy with their marital situations (NISSO 1983). In the United States, divorces number a third of the marriages (Haeberle 1978, 177). It was the same at the beginning of the Middle Ages. And in the preceding age people even contracted one-year marriages (Taylor 1953, 33-34). The Church was successful, at least during some periods, in making marriages a union for life, but let us not ask at what cost of adultery, prostitution and concubinage. Today, as the average age of marriage is once again lowering, divorce increases even more rapidly. Among those in France who swear eternal union before they are 25, 70% obtain divorces (de Brethmas 1979, 26), and 80% of American divorcees remarry (Beverly Hotchner 1979, 348).

The transient nature of boy-love only assumes its tragic cast in the eyes of the older partner left behind while the younger is severing himself from him and discovering new means of satisfying his need for love and sex. A real love affair never has a happy ending (Borneman 1978, 14).

311 And so it was with Ludwig van Beethoven, who loved his nephew Karl. After a long struggle, Beethoven contrived to be the tutor of this boy, who lived with him and whom he spoiled. But when Karl was 16 and 17 he showed increasing interest in girls. Beethoven was desperate, was plunged into loneliness and for some time was unable to compose any music. Even Franz Grillparzer, his gay friend, was unsuccessful in freeing him of his depression (Lohausen 1977, 54).

On average, out of every ten adolescent boys who have sex with a man, nine will gradually or suddenly switch to girls. The man may be perfectly well aware that the sexual fantasies of his young friend are of females, and yet, when the day arrives, it may come as a strong and unexpected blow.

312 Greek mythology depicts this process admirably and poetically in the legend of Hylas. Hercules, travelling with his wife and son, kills King Thiodames as a result of a quarrel. The king's handsome son Hylas, however, he takes with him as he continues on his journey, and they fall in love with each other. Like a father, Hercules teaches Hylas everything a boy should know in order to become a man, and later takes the boy along on the Argonauts' voyage. One night they are camped on a beach and the blond youth wanders off in search of drinking water. He comes upon a spring surrounded by dense, luxurious verdure, and in it three nymphs are dancing. When the beautiful boy leans over to fill his copper water-jug, the nymphs, burning with passion for him, grasp his hand and draw him into the spring. He plunges down into its dark depths, like a shooting star into the sea, and he weeps, while the nymphs try to console him. His absence worries Hercules, who finally sets out to find him in the woods. Three times he calls Hylas with his giant voice. Only weakly, as from a great distance and from the water's depths, is Hylas' answer heard. Hercules plunges deeper and deeper into the forest. The Argonauts depart on their expedition, leaving the hero to his desperate search, wandering wherever his feet carry him, driven to madness, soul torn by a cruel god (Buffière 1980, 378-380).

Sometimes the boy will suddenly refuse to continue with the sex—we have already seen examples of this in Chapter Three. In other instances the sex gradually becomes less frequent and more superficial; not unusually it is the man who is the first to stop it completely. But to suppose, as does Günther Amendt (quoted in *Ein Herz für Sittenstrolche*, 56), "that relationships of this kind are always broken off by the adult", because the boy has grown out of his erotic attractiveness, is wrong; this is arm-chair invention without any basis in common reality. Quite the contrary, we have observed that it is often the boy who puts an end to the relations, for very valid and easily discoverable reasons.

It is understandable that many a loving man will feel acute disappointment and anger at this point, however unwise that may be. Even the most costly gifts, the greatest devotion, the years of caring, the deepest passion, never entitle one to the permanent possession of a boy's body or the continuation of sexual relations once he feels he has grown beyond them.

It is quite a different matter, however, when unrealistic fears ("If I keep on doing this I'll end up gay.") or behavioural misconceptions ("Only small boys do these things.") prevent the boy from continuing with the sex he really, in his heart, looks forward to. In such cases it is correct, in the boy's interest as well as one's own, to discuss these matters freely and openly. Who could blame Martial (IV, 7) for asking his young friend,

*Hyllus, why do you deny me today
what you allowed me yesterday?
Why are you suddenly so hard,
you who always had such a gentle heart?
You point out that your beard is already sprouting,
you're no longer a kid, down there you have hair.
It must surely have been a long night
that changed you into such an ancient!
No nonsense, please. Yesterday, Hyllus, you were still a boy;
How, then, could you be a man today?*

Mostly, however, the man does have to accept that his innermost desires will not be consummated. But is not the best proof of love granting to the other person the right to chose his own personal life? This means renouncing the satisfaction of one's own lust in order not to impede the beloved's individual evolution.

- 313 "Hervé began to show an interest in girls at fifteen. Since he was a very attractive and handsome boy, the girls were even more interested in him than he was in them. (...) I made it easy for him to meet them. He would bring the girl to my home to have a drink and play records. And I suffered a lot: if he had come with a guy I'd have thrown him out; in that case I'd have been very angry. But with girls, even though it hurt, I let him do what he liked. Gradually he detached himself from me, but I didn't manage to detach myself from him. For quite a few months I really suffered, then the wounds began to heal. I still see a lot of him. He is married and has children."

"How does he react today to your former relationship?"

"For him it remains an experience, something to recall with pleasure, a very beautiful memory. He told me, 'Without you, I'd never have known about this; without you I'd never have understood this problem of paedophilia.' (...) He knows my way of living didn't change and he isn't shocked by this. He discussed it with his wife. We had a conversation about it. His wife knows that I had sexual relations with him when he was young. (...) It opened his mind. He learned to be tolerant and how to love. He

knows we were able to love each other, and that this is important, even when you're only twelve. (...) He is aware now that love does not depend on age; it opened his mind to the meaning of love, after what he experienced and felt for me. I believe he also understood quite well what I felt for him." (Hennig 1979, 144-145)

Sometimes a boy, clearly recognising the sexual needs of his older friend, looks for a successor and introduces him to a younger boy at school or an adored younger brother (Nichols 1976, 30).

With smaller boys the situation is often different. If, as he goes into puberty, the sprouting of pubic hair kills the man's sexual desires, the romance is over when the boy still needs a great deal of guidance. To reject the boy cold-bloodedly just because he is "over the hill" is cruel. A Swedish boy-lover reports, "I met several boys to whom this had happened. They had lost nearly all of their trust in the existence of a true community between two people of the same sex. I see this as an enormous wrong that was done to them." (Kurre 1974, 27-28)

In any case, the boy should be made aware long in advance that his erotic attractiveness as far as his older friend is concerned will one day begin to diminish. I have personally known boy-lovers drawn exclusively to pre-pubertal youngsters who brought their boy-friends at about age thirteen to other adults for whom attraction began at just this transitional age.

Faced with this crisis, the different characters of boy-lovers reveal themselves. We see the man for whom things suddenly come to an end: the boy is too big, he has lost his beauty; forgotten are the hours of passion, the ardent words of love. He shuts the door in the boy's face: don't bother to come again! Or we see the man who consciously tapers off the frequency of his embraces, making the boy aware of what is happening and showing at the same time that his friendship and concern are undiminished.

- 314 Frank Rose, the social worker we have already quoted (No. 211) writes, "I'm the one who has to deal with this young man when he's freaking out at three and four o'clock in the morning because his foster parent, who had been having sex with him, said he didn't want him around because he wasn't attracted to him any more. He was into 14-year-olds. This kid wanted to commit suicide at 16 because he thought nobody would find him attractive any more." (1978, 19)

- 315 In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation is a copy of a series of letters written by a profoundly sensitive, intelligent 15-year-old grammar school pupil, Ewald. This boy, at 12, became acquainted with a man, and they had passionate sex together. He fell truly in love with this adult and put the greatest trust in him. Suddenly, after three marvellous years, the man dropped him and devoted himself to a younger boy. Ewald was deeply hurt and disappointed, and at this same time he noticed that the excited discussion of his age-mates about girls wasn't interesting to him in the least. Someone had once told him that boys inevitably became queer if they engaged in homosexual

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

acts. So here he was; the scoundrel had perverted him and abandoned him to his fate! Ewald wrote a furious, desperate letter to the editors of a well-known gay monthly: "You are all selfish swine, you make young people miserable..." He was near to suicide. The editors wisely forwarded this cry in the wilderness to a leader in the paedophile movement, and this man, with delicacy and understanding, began a correspondence with the boy. After a long time he managed to convince the boy that "seduction to homophilia" is impossible: if Ewald felt more attracted to boys than to girls, this was something intrinsic to his nature; it didn't make him inferior to a heterophile, and there was no need to be miserable any more if he could calmly accept this aspect of humanity. The ending of the correspondence reads like a dime novel: Ewald was convinced by the letters he received and now revels in the love of a fellow student slightly younger than himself. Both boys are very happy with their relationship.

Ewald's older friend acted abominably; responding only to his own desires, he cold-bloodedly drove a young being who loved and trusted him, who had abandoned himself in his embraces, to the brink of death. Such despicable behaviour would distress a boy in any society, but in ours, with its misconceptions about homosexuality, unable, because of our stupid taboos, to discuss these matters with the people about him, he almost became a blood sacrifice to this selfishness.

Such cruelties are committed. Boy-lovers as a group are no better than other people; among them are evil and merciless egoists as well as kind and considerate men. But it is quite unrealistic to suppose that all boy/man relationships end as did Ewald's. Typically, Janus, who says boy-lovers at the end of the affair characteristically get rid of their young friends against the boy's wishes (1981, 207-208), has not a single word of criticism when it is parents and police who disrupt the intimate friendships against the boy's will (Möller 1983, 78).

It is this extreme difficulty of carrying on a long-lasting friendship in our culture, coupled with the inevitable transience of the boy's erotic appeal, that discourages many adults from establishing love relationships and drives them to seek sex in casual meetings or with venial youngsters. On the other hand, Kraemer's (1976, 4) assertion that the feelings which motivate the adult lover of young boys are always impersonal is clearly contradicted by Sandfort's research and by many other records referred to in this book.

Rouweler-Wutz (1976, 58) discovered in her research among 60 members of a paedophile group that 47% had had, over the past two years, both long-lasting and one-time-only contacts, 12% had had contacts only within lasting relationships, 10% only casual contacts, and 31% no contacts at all. Among Pieterse's subjects, 7.4% had had only casual contacts, and 8.8% no contacts at all (1982, I 27).

Boy-love is homosexual, and it is generally thought that gay people are more inclined to change partners than to form steady relationships. This is an error.

Collision With Social Norms

Sanders found that heterophile and homophile youth (12 to 24 years) had the same desire for living with one partner: more than three-quarters of both groups preferred this (1977, 97). Pieterse (1982, I 28) found that 49.3% of her paedophile subjects preferred having only one partner. Thus if homophiles really were more promiscuous, it was due to social pressure.

Table 4 depicts the percentages of young people, both heterophiles and homophiles, who, during the past 18 months, had had sex with how many different partners.

Table 4

Young homophiles	Young heterophiles	Different partners
7%	22%	One only
15%	41%	Two or three
37%	30%	Four to ten
22%	4%	Ten to twenty
19%	4%	More than twenty

(Sanders 1977, 110)

Hanry's investigation among 758 grammar school pupils and high school students (16 to 18 years) came to a different conclusion, but he put the questions to the whole group of subjects and not just to those who recognised themselves as homophiles. Many heterophiles of that age will have recently experimented a few times with homosexuality. Of his subjects, 18% refused to answer, 30% had had homosexual experiences, and of those 72% had had only one partner and 28% several partners. As for heterosexual experience, 13% did not answer, 87% had had such experiences, and of these 36% had had only one partner, 36% two or three partners, 22% four to ten, and 6% more than ten (1977, 164).

We should never forget the male's general tendency to promiscuity and the possible positive aspects of promiscuity for mental health (Constantine 1981, 229). Masters & Johnson found that a man, exhausted by repeated intercourse with one woman, nearly always immediately regained his potency when provided with a second partner (Borneman 1978, 648). Under favourable circumstances, even rather young boys who are highly potent can be quite promiscuous: of the 15- to 16-year-old boys among Hass' subjects, 28% had performed intercourse with more than 10 girls (Hass 1979, 68). "It is not unusual for a young man to have single and repeated sexual contacts with between 250 to 500 different male and female individuals before marriage." (Barrington 1981, 125)

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

316 Karel, a particularly handsome and charming Dutch boy of fifteen, radiant with health, confided to me that he had had regular intercourse with girls since he was twelve. His father ran a dairy products shop and Karel often ran errands for him, which gave him the opportunity for many adventures. "When I need a girl, I'll find one right away," he boasted. But he also liked to have sex with two adult men.

Among Hertoft's subjects was a 19-year-old who had also had intercourse since he was twelve, and a 21-year-old who had had it since the age of 14; both had already performed with about 200 women (1968, I 326-327). An 18-year-old Danish boy had started at 15 to look for men on the streets and in the parks and had already had 50 different partners. He never asked for money in exchange for sex. A 17-year-old who also started at 15 had had 40 partners. A third boy of 14 had had 50 partners in the course of one year (Jersild 1964, 86). It is interesting to note that in primitive tribes where sex with men is part of a boy's initiation, he may couple with several men in one night. Promiscuity is perceived by the tribal members as a unifying element (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 89-90).

In general, as we have seen, promiscuity is more common among homophiles than heterophiles, even though most homophiles, too, would prefer to establish steady relationships (Barrington 1981, 167). The difference between ideal and real is maximised where society is intolerant of men living together. Under such circumstances, promiscuity can reach epic proportions, as can be seen in Table 5 which shows the number of partners American homophiles have had during the course of their lives. Moreover, 70% of the white and 38% of the black males had only had one single sexual contact with over half of their partners. The average age of these white males was nearly 36, of the black males, slightly over 27, (Bell & Weinberg 1978, 308-309).

This, of course, concerns homosexuality between adults, but boy-lovers, too, can have contact with a remarkable number of partners. Nedoma reported that on average they were intimate with a greater number of children than were girl-lovers, 50% of boy-lovers having had more than three partners, compared with only 5-13% of the girl-lovers (Howells 1981, 85).

In the group of 50 paedophiles studied by Bernard (1979, 71), he reported that three had never touched a child, 15 had had contacts with between one and ten (or "some") children, 14 with between 10 and 50 children, 19 with over 50 (or "many"). (As this totals 51, there must be a small error in these figures.)

Wegner mentions a clergyman accused of "involving nearly all the 10- to 14-year-old village boys in sexual activities," as well as other similar cases "where nearly the whole school population between 12 and 15 years of age were involved by one single man in mutual masturbation and other homosexual acts. It was revealed that the boys themselves also regularly got together to perform such activities among themselves." In one village the man who had taken the initiative was arrested; another adult then approached the boys and

Collision With Social Norms

Table 5

White males (N = 574)	Black males (N = 111)	Number of partners
0%	0%	1 - 2
1%	2%	3 - 4
2%	4%	5 - 9
3%	5%	10 - 14
3%	6%	15 - 24
8%	6%	25 - 49
9%	18%	50 - 99
15%	15%	100 - 249
17%	11%	250 - 499
15%	14%	500 - 999
28%	19%	1000 and more

(Bell & Weinberg)

found it quite easy to persuade them to engage in the same activities with him. The more he went off into the woods to masturbate with them, the more boys joined the group." (1953, 24-25) Obviously these occurrences could only be made possible by the extreme willingness of boys in this age group to participate in sex play.

Jersild (1964, 211) cites the case of a 20-year-old postman who, over a period of three years, had sex with 300 to 400 boys. Duvert (1980, 106) guesses he has been intimate with over one thousand boys.

One might suppose that the record was held by the Australian court recorder, Clarence Osborne, about whom the sociologist Dr. Paul Wilson wrote an excellent book, *The Man They Called a Monster* (1981). In his treatment of the Osborne scandal, Wilson brought out facts which the news media had carefully suppressed.

317 For twenty years, Osborne had on average three new boys each week. At the same time he maintained long-lasting friendships with his former conquests. In total, there were about 2,500 boys; none ever complained to their parents or the police. Professionally, Osborne was a competent and respected stenographer, one of the best court recorders in Australia. He was not, however, satisfied merely by having sex with these boys; he made countless biometric measurements of their genitals and discussed with them their sexual lives and problems. After his death, more than eight kilometres of tape were discovered in his home recording his conversations with these boys, together with thousands of photos and a mass of statistics. All of this material proved that the boys related to him not only physically but emotionally. Osborne never used force,

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

Collision With Social Norms

never offered money for sexual willingness. A conversation accidentally overheard put the police on his trail and soon afterwards he committed suicide, at the age of 61. Dr. Wilson succeeded in contacting 12 of Osborne's former boy-friends, many of whom came from good, prominent families. All of them talked about Osborne with respect and affection. One said, "When I heard that he had killed himself, and heard all those horrible things the papers said about him, I cried and cried and cried. He was, I guess, the nearest thing I had to a father, and sometimes I thought a mother." (Wilson 1981, 46)

Just as a single sexual encounter can be an experience of extreme intensity, so promiscuity is not necessarily incompatible with tenderness and affection. The love poems of Heinz Birken (*Jungen an meinen Wegen*), addressed to many different boys, prove this point, as do some of the stories by Pierre Herbart (1953). Roving describes the pleasure of experiencing how each boy is different as a sexual partner (1959, 96-99). Other authors stress the negative aspects of promiscuity (*Rooie-Vlinderschrift* 3, 21).

Some adults give the impression that for them hunting boys is more important than having boys (Nichols 1976, 22). One might well question whether this is really boy-love or an obsession which the act of loving boys could not reduce. Did Don Juan and Casanova really love women? Did they fly from one bosom to another simply because of their gigantic potencies and their enormous heterosexual appetites? Or did they do so because no woman could possibly satisfy them? Did they unconsciously desire another sort of partner? In Casanova's recollections there are some passages where he reveals a keen interest in male genitals; this gives us cause for reflection (Borneman 1978, 158). And the suppression in his autobiography of his sexual adventure with the lover-boy of d'Elboeuf (the man who discovered Herculeum) heightens our suspicions (*Bilder Lexicon* 1928, I 322).

318 One of Senger's patients declared, "All these relations I had with girls... I was insatiable... one, two, three, sometimes four in succession. I felt the delight, but afterwards I was never really at peace. When I was through ejaculating I always stayed hard: only the time between 'comes' grew longer. I thought I was hyper-sexual. But now, when I've finished doing it with a male friend I find myself satisfied and really at peace." In other words, after frantic heterosexual couplings, he finally discovered his true homophile nature (1969, 415).

By the same token, a man with a similar craving for boys might well be a repressed heterophile in search of women.

Sexual pleasure in a casual meeting or as the culmination of a successful hunt may be intense (Reeves 1981, 32), but for most people the greatest happiness and the most intense feelings of lust come from uniting themselves with someone they love. This would seem to be confirmed by Masters & Johnson's findings that a change of partner increases the male's potency, but

that the *quality* of feeling in sex is higher with a steady partner (1980, 132, 143, 186). For sex is best when it gives expression to a deep union of two people; in the Gonado investigation, a third of the males agreed with this proposition (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 229). For young people this is even more true. Table 6 shows the results of an inquiry by Sanders (1977, 113) among 18- to 26-year-old males.

Table 6

Homophile males	Heterophile males	Agreed with the statement
48%	38%	Sex in a steady intimate relation is MUCH better and more satisfying and nice than sex with some one you don't know.
15%	10%	...is SOMEWHAT more satisfying and nice.
24%	41%	...is EQUALLY satisfying and nice.
2%	8%	...is SOMEWHAT LESS satisfying and nice
6%	3%	...is MUCH LESS satisfying and nice.
4%	7%	...is just as unsatisfying and unpleasant.

(Sanders 1977, 113)

Carpentier's study of 69 paedophiles (1985) revealed that 12% of them had single contacts, 9% met the same child several times; with 16% their relations had continued for several months, and with 11% several years. A combination of the two systems will only exceptionally be successful; it calls for a very special kind of personality.

319 (Continued from 257) We have already cited the case of Onno who, after intensive sexual training, was presented by his friend Nick to other men. This was not done for money; Nick was rich, an important corporate executive. Both of them simply found doing this exciting. As soon as Nick thought that Onno could meet the highest standards of sexual performance, he sent him off to work for three weeks as a servant at a country

house in southern France, miles from nowhere. The owner always had about a dozen paying guests, all of them middle-aged or even elderly—and thus exactly suited Onno's preferences. For three whole weeks Onno never had one stitch of clothes on his body; and he was placed day and night at the disposition of the entire group. Only in the last week did he have a colleague, a French adolescent boy, who performed the same duties. Onno had sex with everyone: with the owner, with the guests, even with the Moroccan chef, and a movie was made of a live-show he put on with the other boy. Every morning the owner inspected the two naked boys to see whether they hadn't been over-used. When he returned at the end of the three weeks, Onno had to tell his friend Nick every detail of his experiences. This excited Nick so much that he pounced on Onno and took him with an impetuosity bordering on rape. Now in his seventies, with those halcyon days far behind him, devoting his life to the study of philosophy, Onno still remembers this holiday as the nicest and happiest he ever had. It evidently responded to some need of his sexual appetite. Finally Nick, in his old age, married and Onno withdrew from his life after fifteen years of the closest friendship. Onno was now thirty himself, and he became acquainted with a man who had regular parties at his home for about a dozen gentlemen and some ten young men. The gentlemen remained fully dressed but the young men were naked right from the beginning of the party. The gentlemen danced with them, fondled them, touched their genitals (usually permanently erect) but were forbidden to bring the youngsters to climax. Appointments, however, could be made for the following night. Onno participated enthusiastically in these sessions, slept with the host, with several of the gentlemen, and with a number of the other actors—among them the young man mentioned in Example 44. He established a close relationship with the man who organised these meetings and still honours his memory, admiring his keen insight into the mentality of his guests and his boys for whom he really cared. Several of the men who slept with Onno tried to get him exclusively for themselves, making the most tempting offers if he would give up Nick. Those who knew Onno better realised from the start that this would be quite impossible. One could even say that through his promiscuity Onno only loved his friend, and that Onno's promiscuity only inflamed Nick's passion for him the more (Personal communication).

This case may be atypical, but it shows once again how every possible facet of human eroticism is, at one time or another, expressed, and how extremely difficult it is to pass judgements. In this case Nick was faithful to Onno while Onno, with Nick's encouragement, had frequent sex with many other men. The reverse situation is perhaps more common. Just as in many heterosexual relationships, the man may demand of his boy strict monogamy, jealously supervising his every movement, but allowing himself the liberty of sleeping with other boys: an unappetising double standard. The novel *Finisterre* by F. Peters and the story *L'escalier* in a book by Herbart (1970) both use this theme as the foundation of personal tragedies.

The child psychiatrist Elsa Nordlund, researching man/boy relationships during the years 1944 to 1949, found that in two-thirds of the cases she studied the bond continued for a long period of time, despite all manner of social

pressure to break it up (Léonetti 1978, 189). Two main factors may be suggested to explain this.

First, where the ties of love are strong, as we have already seen, the attainment by the boy of the upper limit of his erotic appeal for the man does not necessarily put an end to their physical intimacies. Sex is still desired by man and boy, satisfying lust and giving pleasure to both.

Second, as the erotic element gradually diminishes, their friendship normally goes on, often for life (Reeves 1983, 19). The older man remains the younger person's familiar and trusted confidant, his adviser, (Möller 1983, 77). The youth can discuss with him, openly and without shame, any problems which might arise in his heterosexual relationships. Kraemer (1976, 25) remarked on these lasting friendships and called it a strange phenomenon, but surely it can only seem strange to a person who has little real understanding of boy-love. The ancient Greeks, on the contrary, saw life-long friendship as the natural aftermath of an intense sexual relationship (Foucault 1984, 212-222, 247). In her beautiful novel *The Last of the Wine* (1956), Mary Renault, with her immense knowledge of Greek Antiquity, portrayed a friendship extending into married life and surviving until the death of one of the partners.

320 (Continued from 180) Thomas: "When a boy is fourteen or fifteen he has his contemporaries, he starts going after girls his own age. He's not exactly indifferent to me now, but he comes to me out of habit, because I'm the guy he can tell his little adventures to, whom he can trust, in whose home he feels at ease and where he can smoke a cigarette. But there is much less love than before. It's a habit; with me he can feel free." (Hennig 1979, 158)

When the boy grows up, marries, has children, the older partner usually becomes a welcome guest in his home. Often he is asked to be the godfather to their first-born child (Nichols 1976, 30; Wilson & Cox 1983, 68).

321 (Continued from 251) When Max introduced his parents to his fiancée, his mother told the girl, "Now you're going to have two dads, because Max loves David like another father; he'll never give David up." (Personal communication)

According to Léon des Sables (1977, 41), about two-thirds of long-lasting man/boy relationships ultimately evolve into permanent non-erotic friendships. Among Pieterse's subjects, 21.5% claimed they always kept up a friendly contact later, 33.8% said they usually did, and 18.9% said that happened occasionally (1982, I 27).

322 The feelings of the younger partner may be rather ambivalent. A 17-year-old Austrian said that he had been a very beautiful child. The parish priest fell in love with him when he was 10 and made him his altar boy. The priest kissed him, caressed his bare

legs, finally went on to sucking him off to orgasm—a practice which, once established, happened two or three times a week. He, in turn, masturbated the man. When the boy went into puberty at 12, his physical pleasure in these contacts sharply increased, but then the priest was promoted out of his local parish and the relationship came to an end. Later when the boy talked about this man it was with intense anger. He admitted that his sexual pleasure had been great, but he was filled with rage that the person doing these pleasant things to him had been a priest preaching chastity. When pressed further about his present feelings, he said, ‘‘It’s weird—I still feel some kind of love for him. Maybe my love turned into anger when I was 15 or 16. But really I’d like to make love with him again if I had the chance. I’d relive those beautiful days of my boyhood. He was never unkind to me; he really loved me. I was his favourite, his only boy. I’ve gone to bed with girls a lot, but then I always remember that priest, and I lose my hard-on. I’ve never tried it with boys because I’m scared of being sent to prison.’’ (Brongersma Foundation Archives, S.E. 124-125)

Sex continuing after the boy had reached the upper age-limit of his erotic attraction for the man was well recognised in antiquity. Two poems by Strato (XII 10 & 248) bring this to life:

*Your lips are already clouded a bit by down,
But even so, my beloved, I cannot say farewell.
Despite the beard and all those hairs, this beauty is mine.*

*That the beloved’s flowering fades, how could one clearly see it,
Lying at his side or never far away?
What pleased us yesterday, how could it not please today?
And if it pleases today, how could it offend tomorrow?*

- 323 ‘‘Every autumn for many years I used to visit a friend living in a North African city. One of his Arab house boys, Bechir, became very dear to me. He was 12 when I first got to know him. I always brought him from home some small gift. He liked to accompany me on little trips. One morning early—he was fourteen then—he knocked at my bedroom door and stole in, stripped off his clothes and crept naked into my bed. For him, sex was a natural consequence of our friendship. Every year thereafter on my visit we had regular sex. From his 14th to his 16th year Bechir was most erotically attractive to me. His body was healthy, sturdy, delightfully smooth. Our contacts went on until he was 19, when he left my friend’s home to seek work in Saudi Arabia. Two years later I was once again visiting my friend’s home when there was a knock on the door and there stood Bechir! He was on leave from his work; he had heard by chance that I was in town, too. For a half hour I talked with the young man about his job in Arabia, his travels, his family, without giving any thought to present sexual possibilities. We were standing next to one another at the window and suddenly to my surprise he put his hand underneath my shirt and started caressing my back. He gave me a questioning look and pushed me toward the bed. ‘It was always so nice here,’ he said, and began to undress. His legs were covered with hair, which I found ugly, but his breast and stomach were finely shaped and completely smooth. As is the

practice of many well-groomed Arabs, he had shaved off all hair from around his penis and scrotum which he showed me once again with pride. He stretched out on his back on the bed, his penis already swelling, and said to me, simply, ‘Come!’ Then I cast off my clothes and lay naked upon his naked body. We embraced tightly. I closed my eyes, and suddenly it was no longer a young man whose body I rode. My only thought was, ‘Here you have your Bechir once again. He is naked, hot and excited, as he always is.’ In my mind’s eye I saw the nice laughing boy he once had been, and it was that body I sprinkled with my seed at the climax of my lust. (Personal communication)

Even when all physical attraction has faded away and the appearance of the former boy-friend, now endowed with beard and body hair, is so sexually repellent that erotic contact is no longer possible, the friendship very often continues.

*Return my love, as my love is true,
So on that distant day when your chin grows dark with hair
We may still be coupled, like Achilles and his friend.
— (Theokritos XXIX, 33)*

- 324 Bernard cites a case which is of particular interest because the younger partner never really liked the sexual aspect of the relationship. From his 12th to his 18th year he had sporadic sex with a man 20 years his senior. Now, as a middle-age man, he said, ‘‘I regarded these contacts as somehow abnormal; I was mainly moved by pity for the man. I still have a very friendly relationship with him.’’ (1979, 43)
- 325 ‘‘What did I do to earn the gratitude of so many boys? They were younger than I, at times very much younger, and they offered me a moment—often a very short moment—of lust. I am their debtor, but for some reason I’ve never understood they seem unable to forget me. I’d like to believe they still feel a trace of sweetness there, where I caressed them. Yes, something of this penetrating sweetness which love bestows on male power.’’ (Saint-Ours 1973, 98)
- 326 (Continued from 295) When Conny was 12 and 13 he had an enormous amount of sex with 30-year-old Jan. They also went on many trips together, searching for adventure; they studied plants, animals, rocks and minerals together. Then Jan was arrested and Conny was deeply disturbed by the brutal questioning of the police. At the end of Jan’s prison term Conny was allowed to see Jan again, if only infrequently, and he rapidly recovered his emotional equilibrium. When the boy was 15 he turned his attentions to a new girl friend and put an end to their homosexual activities, but he would bring his girl to Jan’s home, where Jan let them use a bedroom for their intimacies. Once—Conny was 16 at the time—he asked Jan to take photos of the two of them making love. The result is a glorious record of radiant youthful joy: Conny’s beautiful naked body with its big swollen member, his pleasant, proudly smiling face, one arm tenderly encircling the shoulders of the naked, slightly embarrassed girl—the picture of blooming, happy youth. During the next few years Conny and his girl remained faithful to one another. Their only serious problem was that the boy’s strong sexual appetite needed more

IV. NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF MAN/BOY RELATIONS

frequent satisfaction than the girl would allow. They brought their problem to Jan and asked him to be their arbiter (Personal communication).

One of Léonetti's subjects suggested that a boy who has sex with a man may turn to girls at an earlier age than his peers because the satisfaction he has been having has made his sexual impulses more demanding. This may well be true, for what he does with his friend will tend to develop his potency and his skills, and this helps him when he moves on to girls. But actual experience with coitus may well be delayed, as we have already seen, and this, in our society, is hardly to be deplored.

Intimacy with a loving man, however, does not just benefit the boy's sexual capacities—in itself an important advantage—but nurtures something far more important. It can free him from all manner of psychological inhibitions and frustrations which our unnatural and depraved sexual morality tends to burden him with. This will be the subject of our next chapter.

Chapter 5.

Sexual Repression and Sexual Liberation

The Effects of Sexual Repression

It was about 1962 that society rather suddenly became aware of the widespread evil of child battery. Attention was first focused upon beating: broken bones, flesh wounds, physical torture. Only gradually did people begin to realise that, in addition to these active forms of child abuse, there were passive ones as well: neglect, intentional or culpable undernourishment and other examples of not providing adequate care. Later still, people began to perceive that there could be psychological abuse, too: intentional abuse, as, for example, when unrealistic demands on the child's learning capacity are imposed, with punishment following if the child fails to meet expectations; unintentional abuse, as when the child receives little or no love, only coldness, from those who care for him.

Concern about the more subtle, culpable forms of abuse only came after the sensational crimes of physical abuse had been widely publicised.

The same process is repeating itself with sexual abuse. Rape, violent assault, abuse of authority for sexual ends, conscienceless seduction, pimping, real sexual exploitation—all these phenomena have long been known in society, and have always been illegal in the West, at least for free-born children. Only slowly, in some liberal places, is society beginning to recognise that there is passive child abuse in the sexual area as well, consisting of deliberately withholding sexual information, of not recognising the need for sexual experimentation in children so they can learn about sexual tenderness. That this kind of child abuse is excused and actually recommended by many authorities on the highest moral grounds does not make it any less a crime: murder is murder, and it does not alter the case at all if the murderer was told his crime was ordered by God. Even if the perpetrator of a crime is exculpated, what he did remains a crime.

Thus, on a personal basis, at least, we must forgive parents and teachers who have abused their children, and continue to do so, by sexual neglect. Considering the kind of upbringing they themselves received, nothing else, really, could be expected of them. But this abuse still remains a crime. We are quite justified in calling it a form of parental neglect, just as criminal, and often with more far-reaching consequences, than a failure to provide adequate clothing or education. "Baurmann concluded that the wrongs daily inflicted upon the sexuality of our children by lack of affection, prohibition of body pleasure, and inculcation of taboos, far exceed the harm done by so-called 'child molesters'." (Schult 1980, 22)

The all-pervasiveness of this crime challenges the boy-lover to be youth's instructor, guide, initiator and educator. Nature seems to have shaped him for this task and inspires him with the desire to carry it out. Being human, imperfect, and above all badly educated in these matters, he will often fail. But it is here that he should seek his proper vocation.

The preceding chapters have shown us the importance of sex for human males; many say that they do not just want, but actually need it (Hite 1981, 335). "There was a great deal of anxiety on the part of most men about how often they had intercourse, and, in fact, most men felt that they were not having it often enough." (Hite 1981, 335, 615) In earlier times, writers stressed the physical distress of men deprived of regular satisfaction: continued erection, spasmodic contractions of the interior sex glands, pains in the testicles (Borneman 1978, 328, 1509). Modern experts are more inclined to stress the psychological consequences of abstinence. "What the libido wants, it must have. If its road is blocked, then health will suffer. Every unsatisfied sexual wish causes health problems." (Borneman 1978, 1073)

If this is true of adult males, it is even more true of boys during and just after puberty. The Greeks, with their characteristic human insight, personified Pathos, god of desire, as an adolescent (Walters 1978, 53). Striving for pleasure is never more frenetic than at this age (Abraham 1969, 28). "The youth, deeply infected with the sex-passion, suddenly finds himself in the presence of Titanic forces—the Titanic but sub-conscious forces of his own nature." (Carpenter 1911, 9)

At first glance it seems almost incomprehensible why abstinence should be imposed at just that age when it is most difficult to bear. A 15-year-old boy said, "I think that being a virgin is some foolish ritual that 'proper' people follow. Since it's known that people sexually mature long before they get married, how can society expect people to wait?" (Hass 1979, 137) Why should sexual morality be different for boys, especially after their bodies have matured, than for adults? In sex a boy is certainly the man's equal: nature drives him even more frequently and tempestuously toward sexual contacts than it does the adult male. When adults deny boys the same degree of sexual freedom they allow themselves, youth can only consider society a system where adults have made of sex a status symbol for themselves which they defend under the pretence of protecting morality (Killias 1979, 206). Here the well-known battle of the generation gap is not caused by the young but by their elders (Hanry 1977, 92, 138).

This double standard of morality can only be defended by industrial age illogic: we must venerate productivity, thus the productive in society may have privileges the non-productive can be denied. People in the non-productive

periods of human life—youth and old age—are inferior. The joys of sex are only for workers: youth is not yet fit, and the old are no longer fit, for such pleasures. The old satyr is just as horrid and dissolute as the youngster in rut; sex is banned alike from old people's homes and schools. Invalids, for the same reason, also cannot have sex. Every other conception "threatens what is probably one of the most central link-pins of hierarchical society." (Constantine & Martinson 1981, 6)

What a materialistically grounded morality this is, one which makes the young and vital its victims! (Plack 1967, 158, 244). For decades sexologists debated whether youth was capable of controlling its sexual impulses so as to remain completely abstinent. Fortunately this rather theoretical question has been replaced by a much more critical one: what are the consequences of such repression? (Plack 1967, 255).

We will discuss them under four topics: 1) nervous troubles, 2) increased aggression, 3) guilt feelings, 4) sexual obsession.

1. Nervous Troubles

A doctrine which dares consider itself a system of morality but which actually violates nature is, in reality, a system of unnatural immorality, a mystification (Hesnard, quoted by Kruithof & van Ussel 1963, 101). Sexual desire has its biological justifications: it creates a need for vital stimulation, to touch and be touched in such a way as to inspire trust and courage, a means of draining off nervous energy (De Klerk 1974, 136). "The nearly insane idea of most legislators that they must prohibit body-contact between child and adult... demonstrates a total lack of understanding of the growth of an organically necessary relationship between the generations of mammals." (Borneman 1978, 726) To deny a boy this is to castrate him. Novels like James Joyce's *Portrait of an Artist as a Young Man* (1914 - 1915) and Marcel Guersants' *Jean-Paul* (1953) show the extent of psychic and physical mutilation it can cause. But this castration is quite in accordance with a moral system which restricts sex only to those who can use it to procreate, which is something the immature child is physically and the mature child socially incapable of doing. A bourgeois, materialistic system of ethics concludes from this that the young should therefore be deprived of pleasure and the expression of love through sex as well: the deepest experiences, in other words, that nature has contrived to give us (Hanry 1977, 86).

We must make a careful distinction between freely accepted, self-imposed abstinence—apparently possible for a number of people—and abstinence imposed by others, or by a system, or by the authorities. It is the latter which makes people ill (Borneman 1978, 31). "Experience has shown that the majority

of people in our society are constitutionally unfit for the burden of abstinence." (Freud, quoted by Baurmann 1983, 77) "All those who want their conduct to be more noble than their constitutions will permit will become victims of neurosis; they would have been healthier if it had been possible for them to behave worse." "Everything which damages sexual life, represses sexual activity, distorts its aim, has to be seen as a pathogenic factor of psycho-neurosis." "Only a minority will be able to successfully sublimate, to divert sexual impulses from the sexual aim to higher cultural aims. And even this minority will succeed in doing so only for certain periods of time, least of all during the phase of ardent youthful vitality." "Obviously we may surmise that, under the pressure of a cultural sexual morality, the health and vitality of the individual can be subject to such injuries, and the injuries suffered by the individual from the imposed sacrifices can accumulate to such an extent, that the final cultural aim is imperilled, too. Culture may traumatise and hurt the individual. In so far as we are able to assess this damage, its cause must be sought in the repression of the sexual life of the civilised nations dominated by this 'cultural' sexual morality."

"The restriction of sexual activity in a nation is accompanied by a general increase in fear of living and presentiments of death." (Freud 1920, 128, 124, 130, 120, 123, 139) With people whose sexuality is particularly repressed, as in the case of homosexuals, the symptoms are especially conspicuous (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 371). The same holds for children (Plummer 1981, 121)

A German investigation "confirmed in a horribly convincing way how sexual repression causes serious conflicts in many people, sometimes in extreme cases driving them to suicide. One out of every 12 inhabitants of the Federal Republic suffers from sexual neurosis." (Heid 1977, 144) The adolescent who is just becoming conscious of his sexuality is manoeuvred, as it were, into neurosis by the way society despises and rejects him for it (Horn 1980, 36).

A repressive upbringing, characterised by fear of sex, often burdens children with sexual behaviour problems (Kerscher 1979, 121). "There are plenty of good and scientific records to show how adult disapproval and punishment of pre-adolescent and early adolescent masturbation in males has caused life-long psychological and sexual harm to many individuals." (Barrington 1981) In England the McCords compared "sexually undisturbed youths of similar class and ethnic background" to boys indulging in disapproved activities like public masturbation, voyeurism, fetishism or effeminate deportment or being afraid of sex in any form. All the "sexually maladjusted boys came from parental homes characterised by sexual anxiety and prudishness, maternal authoritarianism, quarrels between parents and parental punitiveness." (West 1977, 93) The Norwegian psychiatrist Thore Langfeldt declares, "Children referred to me because of deviant sexual behaviour, such as exhibitionism, telephone sex

(telephoning girls, saying sexual words and masturbating. Such boys are normally very shy about normal sex.) and sexual aggression or sexual 'acting out', have never experienced sexual interactions with other boys." (1981, 112) Prudishness incubates sex, and at the same time sickens it.

"Not only does the non-erotic side of love fail to grow, but sexual satisfaction itself falls victim to this impoverishment of the soul." (Alcock 1976, 105) Some capacities are lost forever. You cannot recover them afterwards. For it is impossible to suppress an emotion year after year without in the end killing it. "The man who suppresses in himself 'illicit' desires ultimately suppresses the impulse. (...) That impulse, in the beginning multi-faceted, always with its outbursts spontaneous, cannot be rigidly channelled into permitted expressions without paralysing the spontaneity." (Plack 1967, 156) Sexual abstinence lessens the capacity for full sexual pleasure. Plato knew this 2,400 years ago. "Sexual dysfunction is nearly always attributable to the failure of parents to take a positive attitude to their child's capacity for sexual pleasure." (O'Carroll 1980, 96 quoting Yates) If repression goes too far, "the sexual impulse may appear permanently damaged after it is freed." (Freud 1920, 133) "Thus a boy who is punished by his parents for masturbating or having a 'wet dream' may later find himself unable to have an orgasm during coitus." (Haeberle 1978, 263) When we learn that in more than half of all marriages one of the partners is sexually unsatisfied, that 20% of the males and 52% of the females are incapable of experiencing orgasm, that 9% of the women feel repulsion about sex (Eggenkamp 1978, 1), we must see this as one of the results of a culture which has a horror of sex. Borneman thinks that occidental youth is made the unhappiest in the world by this repression dressed up as protection (1977).

In the years immediately after the Second World War the Dutch Episcopate assigned a sociological institute to investigate the practice of sacramental marriage (*Katholieke Actie* 1960). The results were never published because they proved to be too alarming. Over and over again one hears the outcry of women: "Marriage would be just fine if it wasn't for all this dirty sex! Sex is horrid and debasing and it's hard to believe that it is part of God's established order." Mrs. Lemaire-Mertens studied many European and American papers and showed in a publication of the Catholic Research Centre for Mental Health (1980, 26) that in some social circles nearly half of the women were frigid—and the number rises to 75% in those characterised by a rigid Catholic upbringing. Frenken (1976) wrote his doctoral thesis on the detrimental effect of a "Christian upbringing" upon marital and sexual happiness. This investigation clearly shows how individuals growing up in a sex-negative environment suffer its consequences from then on in their sexual lives and impaired marital relationships. The idea that a woman normally enjoys sex less than a man—or even not at all—originated in occidental Christianity, and nowhere else in the

world is this belief shared (Ellis 1913, III-194, 197). "In fact, as sex therapists have shown, people become sexually inadequate mainly because of a rigid upbringing, traumatic sexual experiences, ignorance, narrow religious beliefs, and bad advice from ill-informed clergymen, marriage counsellors, doctors, psychotherapists, and other professionals. All of these different causes, in turn, can be traced to the sexually oppressive character of our civilisation." (Haeberle 1978, 252)

Since skin contact has such a deep meaning for the child, a culture that teaches him to avoid touching or being touched by others (Breusers 1982, 20) can only impoverish him. Professor of Child Psychiatry Hart de Ruyter cautions against "a rigorous suppression and rejection of the childish impulses", since these not only cause "an inhibition of the evolution of personality, sometimes irreparable, but also are at the root of anxiety, guilt feelings and hypocrisy, and often lead to many sexual developmental troubles in later years." (1976, 76)

This is why an upbringing aimed at forging strong characters actually has the opposite result. Freud, protagonist of "sublimation", declared frankly, "On the whole I didn't get the impression that sexual abstinence helps to create energetic, independent, active personalities or original thinkers, courageous liberators and reformers. Much more frequently we see good weaklings, afterwards submerging in the multitude following reluctantly the impulses given by strong individuals." (1920, 133; cf Borneman 1978, 1293-1294)

Under the pressure of such superior powers, 'chastity' is not a token of force, but of weakness. "The so-called chaste individual is actually only submitting to the pressure of society, prohibiting him from living according to his body's nature. Overpowered by this pressure, he imagines a 'victory by himself' over 'the lowly instinct', the 'evil' or the 'animal side' of his being. What is thought to be the 'higher side' of man, his supposed 'better self' is only his weak will accepting traditional values and giving in to the desire of the preachers of chastity to dominate him. The man who has so adapted himself might, in his self-torture, be proud of his renunciations, believing this all is harmonious with his 'better self', his highly personal ideal of humanity. His psychiatrist may even agree with him—but the purveyors of 'morality' know exactly how such 'ideal selves' originate (Plack 1967, 64).

When a child is subjected to harsh restrictions on his bodily experiences, especially his sexuality, he will be inhibited not just in his sexual life but generally, too. Helplessly confronted with superior exterior forces, he loses his capacity to express himself (De Bruijn 1972, 8). "Oppression of sexuality leads to oppression of the entire personality." The moralistic inhibition of the child's natural sexuality, ultimately causing serious genital frustrations, makes him anxious, shy, deferential toward authority, obedient, good and easy to educate in the bourgeois sense." (Reich, quoted by Mende & Dobrovich 1971, 43) The

enforced artificial oppression also infantilises, with all the evil consequences of that process (Hanry 1977, 92).

Freeing sexual attitudes doesn't only increase energy in this area, but, in unburdening the individual, in other respects as well. The history of civilisation has shown in case after case how a lessening social repression of sexuality releases a flood of creative energy. Poetry and drama, painting and architecture and music bloom (Taylor 1953, 157).

"We can trust that the man who energetically pursues his sexual object will exhibit a similar indomitable energy in the pursuit of other aims. On the other hand, he who, for whatever reasons, renounces the satisfaction of his strong sexual impulses, will elsewhere in his life tend to give in to things, be resigned rather than energetic." (Freud 1920, 134) "All sorts of individualistic, energetic, enterprising, curious, fruitful, and creative people are called maladjusted by conformist dullards who are afraid of any sign of spontaneity. In fact, very often the so-called well-adjusted person who passively accepts oppressive living conditions is the one with the problem." (Haeberle 1978, 250)

It is hardly coincidental that a rigid sense of morality often coincides with deviant behaviour. American public life especially has offered many examples of enthusiastic "law and order" protagonists (and we may start with Nixon's Vice-President Spiro Agnew), predictably people of rigid sexual morality, later being unmasked as corrupt (Califia 1980, 21-22). "Judianne Densen-Gerber was accused in 1979 of having misappropriated many thousands of federal dollars from Odyssey House operations to her own use. (...) Congressman John Murphy, co-sponsor of the anti-kiddie porn bill (...) allegedly took bribes from an FBI undercover agent." (Mitzel 1980, 18). "People whose morality is almost exclusively reduced to sexual frustration are in other fields devoid of principle and dangerous." (Daniélou 1981, 22) Investigations of men caught masturbating with each other in public toilets have revealed that most of them were married, and members of some rather puritan church: they were reduced to this kind of anonymous sex for want of any other (Humphreys 1970, 115, 137). Sometimes the unmasking of such a person causes public scandal. Bob Baumann, head of the American Conservative Union, "regularly denounced homosexuals and those who threatened 'The Family' until he was arrested for performing fellatio on a 16-year-old hustler in Washington, D.C. (Tsang 1981, 95-996) The *Gay Journal* in November 1977 reported the tragedy of a Swiss priest who had written books on moral theology and was feared for his savage attempts to censor films being caught having sexual relations with one of his pupils. First society respected and honoured the man for his continuous attacks on its mental health, then it plunged him into disgrace for the physical pleasure he probably gave to one of its schoolboys!

For forcing on people rigid sexual morality is an attack on their mental health. For proof we need only look to the difference between Western society and cultures with more positive sexual attitudes. Kerscher summarizes Malinowski's conclusions reached in *The Sexual Life of the Savages* (1929): "For the children of the Trobrianders there is no sexual repression and no sexual mystery. Their sexual life develops naturally, freely and without restraint through all periods of life, with complete satisfaction. The children are active in ways appropriate to their age. In spite of this, or perhaps because of it, Trobriander society in this third decade of our century knows no sexual perversions, no functional mental illness, no psychoneurosis, no sex murders. (...) Sadism, destructiveness and theft are equally absent in Trobriander culture. (...) The example of the Trobriander is just one of the best known, but there are ranks of other cultures in which deviant behaviour like criminality is all but absent. And these are always cultures with a positive attitude towards sex." (Kerscher 1979, 116) Polynesian cultures show that there is an alternative, "a world without neurosis, where four- to five-year-old children are introduced by youths into the practice of sexual life, where all kinds of sexual intercourse are performed publicly by adults so that sex education is not a theoretical affair but is accomplished by concrete instruction, practical presentation." (Borneman 1978, 657-658) "Neurosis could be avoided if we let the child's sexual life freely run its own course, as is done by many primitive peoples." (Freud, quoted by Borneman 1978, 920) Our culture is more industrious, more determined to master nature and the world around us. We are superior to the primitives in technology. We pay for it in psychic instability and mental and sexual troubles (Borneman 1978, 1342).

If we want happiness instead, we should set sex free, provided it is not compulsive, or destructive, or limited to narrow, rigid or exclusive behaviour patterns, or is distressing to the individual. Only these "forms of sexual behaviour give cause for concern." (Haeberle 1978, 271)

2. Aggression

Hans Eysenck studied sexual attitudes of a group of 186 male subjects, and he summarised his findings as follows: They consciously try to avoid sexual thoughts; they think only rarely about sex; they don't think about sex every day; sex is not all that important to them; they do not get sexually excited very easily; they can take sex or leave it; thinking about illicit relationships does not excite them; they regard the purpose of sex as reproduction rather than pleasure; they draw sharp lines between what is right and what is wrong in sexual conduct; they prefer intercourse carried out under bed-clothes and in the dark; they would not take the opportunity of watching a couple making love; they feel disgust at seeing animals having sexual intercourse; there are some sexual acts they would never perform with anyone; they object to the use of four-letter

words in mixed company; they oppose the free publication of pornographic writing; they would protect their children from all contact with sex; they do not regard sex play among young children as harmless; they think sexual permissiveness undermines society; they do not think that a woman should occasionally be sexually aggressive; they think it right that the man should be dominant; they regard virginity as a girl's most valuable possession.

The reader can be forgiven if he suspects that Eysenck's 186 subjects had been drawn at a meeting of Church elders; in fact it was taken from a group of highly criminal psychopaths: 54% had been convicted of murder or attempted murder, 16% of sexual offences, another 16% of robbery and a final 11% of arson (O'Carroll 1980, 103-104).

Actually, this is not illogical. Bart Delin, studying rapists, found "a rigid religious instruction" and "inadequate sexual education" a common denominator (Fox 1980, 194). Hardened offenders are not licentious people oblivious of social norms. Quite the contrary: they are usually rigid moralists with an exaggerated and unrealistic sense of right and wrong, justice and injustice (Churchill 1968, 144). It is precisely this rigidity which prevents them from living in harmony with their principles. They break down under the burden of their morality and then—explosively—commit their violent attacks.

Many offenders, especially sexual offenders, are strikingly chaste (Zeegers 1977, 160). Most began to masturbate late or managed to suppress masturbation altogether. As boys they were less inclined to engage in sex play than their comrades. When Geiser (1979, 120) matched rapists with non-sex-offenders, it appeared that they first saw depictions of heterosexual intercourse at an average age of 18.2 years, while for the control group this happened at 15. Their first experience of sexual intercourse occurred substantially later than with the average boy, and thereafter they had intercourse much less frequently. Since sex offenders tend to have only a limited capacity for fantasy and are thus less satisfied by erotic stories and pictures than the average male, they lack an important safety valve (Goldstein *e.a.* 1974, 43).

In the structure of the brain, the centres serving sex and aggression are in close proximity; in puberty the sudden flood of testosterone strongly activates both of these drives (Marshall & Barbaree 1984, 66, 69). Sex, then, can act as a lightning rod for socially dangerous tensions (Borneman 1978, 1069). Until the beginning of the 19th Century, British public schools strongly opposed sports. But when society's formerly positive attitude toward sex began to change, the schools found it necessary to relax their opposition to sports, in fact to encourage them and make them compulsory; the aim was to physically exhaust the boys so they would be too tired to masturbate (Taylor 1953, 218). Physical competition, the fighting spirit (i.e., aggression) was used in the struggle against sex (Horn 1980, 14). The interplay is self-evident. And since aggression is only

considered criminal where society disapproves of it, we find a remarkable degree of tolerance and oversight when aggression and violence erupt in athletes, ball-players and their supporters (Plack 1967, 285, 304, 321, 324). Since abstinence fuels aggression, it is not surprising that the Holy Virgin Mary is chosen as patron saint for sportsmen and warriors (Bullough 1976, 404).

Susanna Foral points to the link between sexual repression and anxiety (1981, 38). It has long been known that anxiety provokes aggression: an animal brought to bay attacks. A frustrated man is a dangerous man (Borneman 1978, 1359). The Eastern wisdom of the Tantra recognised this connection (Naslednikov 1981, 131).

Frustration provokes aggression the more strongly as it is perceived to be unjustified (Bontekoe 1983, 275). We have already seen that young people, now that there are so many means of avoiding undesired pregnancy, are starting to question why there should be so many prohibitions against allowing them to use their bodies in obtaining the natural pleasure and relief they need.

Most remarkable is a study of 800 Canadian school children from grades seven through 12. "It was found that children from more religious homes—both Protestant and Roman Catholic—were more loving and more internationally-minded than children with no religious training up to grades seven, eight and nine." Then, at the approach of puberty, a strange thing happened: school children with religious training "hardened" and became more warlike than the children from non-church-going families. Moreover, the gap between the two groups widened each year thereafter (Alcock 1976, 107-108). Another Canadian study in 1962 dealt with militaristic and authoritarian political convictions. These were strong in all the Christian denominations, and the more fundamentalist the denomination the more intense these attitudes were. The only exception was the Quaker sect, which is characterised by a rather positive view of sex (Alcock 1976, 146). Bertrand Russell, the philosopher, observed, "By keeping sex love in a prison, conventional morality has done much to imprison all other forms of friendly feeling, and to make men less generous, less kindly, more self-assertive and more cruel." "Christianity, by linking sex with guilt and sin, has done more to distort the warmth and kindness of our nature than any other institution." (Quoted by Alcock 1976, 92, 129)

Kerscher, who taught social pedagogy at the Evangelical High School in Hamburg, wrote that it is Christian morality, with its obsessional centre in the genitals, "its claim to universal validity, its compulsory nature and its inability to humanise mankind" which is responsible for so much cruelty throughout history in the so-called Christian nations (1977, 33). Whiting & Child (1953) compared American middle-class education with that of 75 other cultures. The American children were taught to keep themselves clean and to control their sexuality; the children from other cultures were especially taught not to behave

aggressively (Winkel 1972, 56). Repressive morality simplifies the task of educators: it is far easier to insist on discipline and sex repression than to guide young people toward a natural expression of sex which includes respect for one's partner (Hanry 1977, 132). But evil doesn't lurk in sex itself, rather in coldness and indifference to the feelings of other people (Plack 1967, 266).

"Since our official morality makes no allowance for the sexual needs" of unmarried people, "it creates in our minds a great deal of resentment, hostility, and, indeed, violence." (Haeberle 1978, 442) Repression gives birth to cruelty. It was repressed homosexuality expressing itself when SS commanders in the German concentration camps openly masturbated as they observed prisoners being whipped (Eigeltinger 1983, 82). The more a society orders its members to suppress their impulses, the crueler it becomes (Borneman 1978, 1475). The psychological connection is evident as soon as we realise that sadism and masochism are inextricably linked. The self-denial of sexual pleasure is a form of masochism; it is only logical that this will lead to sadism (Daniélou 1981, 22).

It is the essence of aggression that the weak are always the first to be victimised: animals and children, for example (Morris 1976, 64-65). Almost always parents who are in the habit of physically abusing their children have very unsatisfactory sex lives (Alcock 1976, 120).

Christianity has always shown more tolerance for passionate outbursts of violence and for intemperance in eating and drinking than for passionate intemperance in sex (van Ussel 1968, 39). And those psalms which, dripping with blood, incite the believer to vengeance and genocide, have always been preferred in Christian public worship to the lovely sensuality of the Old Testament Song of Songs. Thus a German prelate in Munich, Anton Maier, declared in 1965 that the spirit of love was less violated by the bloody battles then raging in Vietnam with murderous intensity than by allowing German schoolboys to go naked together in the showers (Plack 1967, 80). And thus an article in the Dutch evangelical newspaper *Trouw* (6 Oct., 1977) supported the showing of violent movies on television (images of people hating and injuring each other) because otherwise, it claimed, erotic movies (depicting people loving each other and trying to have pleasure together) might be screened instead.

Man is a surprisingly paradoxical being. We have seen that sometimes severe punishment only exacerbates criminality, while lighter sentences tend to check it. The same holds for sexual morality: the most enthusiastic spokesmen for chastity simultaneously uphold standards which lead to hard-heartedness, aggression and crime. "Aldous Huxley pointed out the connection between oppression in the family and authoritarian theology and ideology, saying that Hebrews and Christians were especially enthusiastic beaters of children, while Buddhists and Hindus brought up their children without violence, and it was

no accident that the Quakers were as opposed to child-beating as to slavery.” (Kerscher 1978, 56) We might add that the Quakers are also the only Christian sect with a positive view of sex!

Isn't it ridiculous to impose on people, in the name of love and the sanctity of marriage, standards making them aggressive, and which diminish their capacity for marital happiness? (Hanry 1977, 140)

With young people, who have such strong needs for sexual satisfaction, the consequences of repression are especially conspicuous.

327 (Continued from 321) An amusing demonstration is furnished by an event in Max's story. At 17, just beginning to have intercourse with girls, he had to be circumcised: his foreskin was too tight and could not be retracted over his very large glans. The boy's sexual needs were strong, and he was very potent. He was used to obtaining an emission, one way or another, once or twice a day. Now surgical intervention suddenly made him abstinent. His older friend watched, not without some amusement, while, within the space of a few days, the boy's mood changed from friendly, kind and contented to irritable, nasty and aggressive. Talking about it later, Max said, "It was awful. After a week I couldn't stand it any longer; the frustration was unbearable. I jerked off, and made a bloody mess, for the wound hadn't yet healed, but what a relief to be able to shoot out all that sperm!" (Personal communication)

It is a great deal less amusing when frustrated youth turns loose its pent-up rage and goes on a rampage of vandalism and destruction. In The Netherlands alone, with a population of 14 million, such damage costs society \$ 400 million every year. And this havoc isn't made just by young people from deprived homes; the youths come from all social levels (Hendriks 1983, 17). The connection between hooliganism and sex oppression is nicely demonstrated by Baurmann (1983, 261). The correlation is even more evident when erotophobic attitudes at home and denial of sexual expression in adolescence are at the root of sexual violence, as was well documented in the report of the American Presidential Commission on Obscenity and Pornography (1970). The most grisly sex crimes are frequently committed by boys everyone perceived to be exceptionally decent and pure (because abstinent) (Fisch 1971, 13, with examples on pages 63 and 81). Jürgen Bartsch who, at age 15, raped, tortured and killed a younger boy and three years later similarly murdered an additional three boys, was brought up to view sex with horror and was generally regarded as a very well-behaved youth (Föster 1984). Borneman (1978, 1421-1422) reports on a number of cases where children raped and killed other children, or participated in gang rapes.

328 "I'm almost fifteen. I was born in Minneapolis, and I live in a suburb. We're a middle-class family. I'm white. I've never had intercourse except one night this girl got high on spray paint. I came over there after she had gotten high. About ten boys

jumped her, including me. I felt her cunt and tits. She probably liked it 'cause she didn't fight it hardly at all." (Hite 1981, 760)

329 When still a school-girl, one of Masters & Johnson's female subjects went on a blind date. The boy took her to a summer house where four of his companions joined them. They told her to undress and take part in some group sex. She begged them, in tears, to be allowed to go home, but they made her stay. In the end she gave in and while she and her date had intercourse the other boys were watching. After this was repeated several times all the boys had her suck their penises. She felt intensely humiliated by this, and by what she heard the boys saying about her while she had to satisfy one or another of them. Yet the experience was sexually exciting to her, too, and the next day she had to masturbate several times with the events of the previous evening playing through her mind. What troubled her deeply and permanently, however, was the realisation that she had been such a ready victim (1980, 330-334).

It is a sad fact that children, once turned loose on each other, can be even more callous and cruel than the most hard-hearted adult (Schärer 1978, 15).

Sex repression is imposed by authoritarian personalities, and it replicates itself in its victims (Adorno, quoted by Banens 1981, 1). Conversations with members of the John Birch Society, an American right-wing political organisation with the slogan "The Bible on the table and the flag on the wall", convinced Humphreys (1970, 146) that these might be "signs of secret deviance more than of right thinking." Secret deviants, disguising themselves behind the mask of orthodox faith and political conservatism.

People have always believed that chastity, whether periodic or permanent, endows the chaste with special powers. It is supposed to cast spells, making a deity increase the fisherman's catch and the peasant's harvest, assure victory over one's enemies, open the gates of paradise after death. The more practical rulers on this earth have always known how to use abstinence to further their aims. The Romans pierced the foreskins of their gladiators and inserted rings therein to prevent sex and make the men more fierce (Praeputii Incisio 1931, 75). The Spartans demanded abstinence of their soldiers, just as did the Melanesian warriors and South American head-hunters before an attack on their enemies, as did Ho-Chi-Minh with his Viet Cong soldiers, as still the North American admirals do with their select marines. In the middle ages, St. Thomas Aquinas advised governments that chastity made men fitter for waging war (Deschner 1978, 430).

A cross-cultural investigation by the American psychologist J. M. Prescott, the findings of which were published in *The Bulletin of Atomic Scientists* (1975), confirmed this relationship between sex-inhibition and violence. The correlation was too consistent to be coincidental. Peoples with a sex-repressive morality are relatively more aggressive, insensitive, more inclined to physical abuse of children and subordinates, to killing and torturing enemies and to other criminal

behaviour, while peoples with moral beliefs which permit sexual freedom, on the other hand, are generally more friendly and kind-hearted, show more affection to their children and are less inclined to criminality.

Fromm came to similar conclusions in his analysis of 30 cultures, assessing what he considered three clearly distinguished systems. One of these is the social system which promotes life: here ideals, manners and institutions are mainly directed towards the conservation and growth of life in all its forms. Envy, violence and cruelty find only exceptional expression in the population; there are no harsh punishments, hardly any delinquency, and war, as an institution, is either entirely absent or plays only a minor role. The children are treated kindly; there is no hard corporal chastisement. Women are commonly men's equals; in any case, they are not exploited or humiliated. The attitude towards sexuality is universally tolerant and positive. There is little jealousy, meanness, greed and exploitation. There is hardly any competition or individualism, rather a great deal of social co-operation. Private property is limited to utensils. In general, people are trusting and imbued with pious confidence, not just toward other people but toward nature, too. They are in general good-humoured; depression is relatively rare.

In contrast to these communities with their positive attitudes towards life, the two other systems examined by Fromm ("non-destructive aggressive societies" and "destructive societies") are strongly characterised by aggression and criminality, both linked to a compulsory sexual moral imperative which is restrictive and repressive (Kerscher 1979, 116-117).

The ancient Greeks were extremely tolerant in sexual matters: there was no persecution of sexual "deviants" and their culture was non-sadistic (Haeberle 1978, 318). As examples of modern peoples with a life-positive outlook, we can cite the Trobriander and the Indian Muria described by the English missionary Verrier Elwin. Here the children are healthy, hale and hearty, cheerful and helpful; they have sexual contacts nearly every night from infancy on. Delinquency among these free-living young people is very low; afterwards, however, when they become adults, married and subjected to rigidly imposed monogamous relations, delinquency increases (Elwin 1959, 428).

The history of the Eskimo people is most instructive in this regard. They were once extremely gentle, kind and charitable to their fellow beings—and sexually very licentious. Their language did not even have a word for insult. Physical violence was unknown, and they never used to beat their children. With their conversion to Christianity, they became sexually disciplined, but also more hard-hearted, less inclined to charity and more criminal. (Plack 1967, 304, 321, 324).

In the years immediately following the Russian revolution, Vera Schmidt, a psychoanalyst, "founded a special children's home in Moscow. In this home

the children were left free to satisfy their natural curiosity or to masturbate whenever they felt like it. As a result, they grew up without any sexual guilt feelings and developed friendly and responsible attitudes towards each other." (Haeberle 1978, 385)

3. Guilt Feelings

This, then, is the aim of restriction: to foster feelings of guilt.

In our culture, restrictions on sex are imposed by a morality which is supposed to be based on Christian principles, but this morality has no real basis in the Gospels. Such ideas can be found in late Plato, but they really entered Christendom by way of Gnosticism, a kind of theosophy which was widespread in the ancient world and which corrupted Christianity from within by means of its doctrine that the flesh was evil and sexuality an invention of Satan (Borneman 1978, 529). More important was the observation of St. Augustine, converted to Christianity after a youth of sexual excess, that even the newborn child was a sexual being, from which he concluded that sex was *the* original sin (Borneman 1978, 331). The road was now paved for the teachings of Pope Innocent III (1198-1216): "Everyone knows that marital intercourse cannot be performed without carnal titillation, without the sting of lewdness, without libidinous defilement." The most important theologian of the Middle Ages, St. Thomas Aquinas, said that every caress exchanged by married people for the sole purpose of enjoying sexual lust was a mortal sin, meriting eternal damnation. Leaders of the Reformation fought the Catholic Church, but, however much Luther separated himself from most Catholic doctrine and procedures, he agreed completely on this point: "Marital obligations cannot be fulfilled without sin," he said. Noldin, a leading Catholic moralist at the beginning of our century, observed, in his major treatise, that sexual intercourse was "a thing essentially sordid, with annoying consequences." (Deschner 1978, 269-270, 367, 497) An authoritative manual for confessors written by a French bishop stated that it was mortal sin to mention the genitals of either sex, or to talk about intercourse and the different ways it could be performed (Armand 1931, 183).

Despite these teachings, no culture has ever restricted sex solely to procreation. Sex for reproduction only is limited to the lower animals; man has evolved considerably beyond that stage (Borneman 1978, 1290). Even where Christianity has been generally accepted, human beings haven't let themselves be pushed back to the level of beasts in their sexual lives. Officially, society adhered to what it was told were Christian ethics, but on a practical level it never believed that it could really live by them (Freud 1920, 131). And many good Christians had their doubts. Even in a conservative nation like Switzerland, only 10% of

the young men conscripted into the military thought that sex served only a procreative purpose and that extramarital intercourse should be illegal. An investigation among German schoolboys had similar results (Killias 1979, 175).

The influence of such restrictive concepts, however, should not be minimised. It is instructive to compare responses of Danish male students with similar students in the American Midwest and the American Intermountain region where, respectively liberated, moderately conservative and strictly conservative attitudes prevail. The question was asked whether pre-marital intercourse was acceptable and whether the subject had ever performed it (Table 7).

Table 7

	Acceptable	Performed
Denmark	96%	62%
U.S. Midwest	46%	51%
U.S. Intermountain	22%	42%

(Bultena 1971, 46)

What strikes us here is that the practice varies far less than the theory. In other words, the Americans behave much the same as the Danes, but have a guilty conscience about it. So restrictive morality doesn't really banish sex, it simply makes it unhealthy. When the more morally rigid American students are compared with their freer Danish counterparts, it appears that sexual activity becomes progressively more personal and partner-directed as sexual standards and conduct are liberated (Straver 1969, 180).

The inescapable link between sin and sexual pleasure permeates Christian thinking. St. Augustine philosophised about the sinful greed of babies (*Confessions* I, 7). *Malleus Maleficarum*, the Bible of witch-hunting written by two Dominican friars in 1487, assesses that "the devil's power resides in the secret parts of the male." (Banens 1981, 32) Even the Boy-Scout Manual refers to sexual desire in its young readers as "a boy's wrong side" (Maasen 1983, 154). In his book on sex education (1932) the Roman Catholic psychologist Dr. Berger identified a boy's "thoughts about sex" with "evil thoughts", without giving even the slightest explanation. What to the followers of Islam is one of the most beautiful and delicious gifts of God (Burton 1963, 71) seems to many of those who call themselves Christians a dirty mistake of the Creator, something essentially immoral (Bullough 1979, 26). It takes a very uncorrupted child to think otherwise, like 15-year-old Jane, who had sex with a female teacher she loved and considered the experience something sent by God, "a sign of His

grace" (Kraemer 1976, 34). To nearly all other Christians, this would be more like a poison brewed in Satan's kitchen, provoking shock and deep anxiety.

The famous saying of Galenus, "Every animal is sad after coitus" (to which some wit added, "except for the cock and the schoolboy who didn't have to pay") only holds true where orgasm is accompanied by feelings of guilt. A depressed, guilty male will lose his erection soon after ejaculation, and he will not soon get it back, but the happy male, washed with feelings of satisfaction and contentment, may not lose it at all, or his penis will re-erect quickly and urge him to repeat the experience (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 185-186). One of Barrington's subjects, with international and interracial experience, wrote, "By far the best lovers were the blacks and the Asians. They all treated sex as a happy, not very serious subject, if you know what I mean? Sex to them was a time for laughter and affection and a sharing of happiness, building up to perspiring passion and deeply satisfying orgasms. Then, after, it was relaxation, comradeship and no guilt feelings. A natural episode to be repeated whenever possible. Nothing to be ashamed of." (Barrington 1981, 148) Questioned about the most disagreeable aspect of sex, 6.1% of American males replied, "guilt feelings". This was especially true of the unmarried (12.5%) and younger (9.4%) males. Such feelings tended to fade gradually away as the males grew older (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, Table 25). It is the health and happiness of youth that is most blighted by our absurd moralistic sexual indoctrination.

It is not at all unusual for someone faced with the intense conflict between his body's natural impulses and such indoctrination to seek escape through death. Klaus Thomas, a German physician, psychologist and theologian, a man who for many years tried to help people who no longer wanted to live, became convinced that lack of sex education, or the wrong kind of sex education, is one of the main causes of suicide (Albrecht-Desirat & Pacharzina 1977, 172).

The situation becomes even more desperate for youngsters experiencing what they have been told are "evil lusts" and which, in addition, are directed towards members of their own sex, and thus doubly immoral. Usually such a boy will become conscious of his same-sex feelings around the age of 13, and he will connect them with the concept of "homosexuality" a couple of years later (Sanders 1977, 81-83). Paradoxically, it is more difficult for him to participate in the usual sex games with his peers than for his heterosexual agemates: to him, these are more than games and have a far deeper emotional meaning (Bieber 1962, 8).

330 "I am a devout Roman Catholic and I have had dreadful problems with my mind because I am gay. Even now, I still feel very guilty and suffer from nightmare periods of depression." (Barrington 1981, 78)

- 331 "I attempted suicide when I was eleven. I thought this homosexual desire of mine was horrid: it wasn't permitted by the church. I would go to hell because of it. I had a friend I fell in love with. I knew that our play was evil. I was always struggling with thoughts about Sodom and Gomorra." (Sanders 1977, 85)

We encounter strange distortions in this moralistic doctrine. The Jesuit Father McNeill observes that the Roman Catholic penitent, confessing occasional homosexual promiscuity, will obtain absolution of sins "and be allowed to receive communion in good conscience. If, however, he had entered into a genuine permanent love relationship, he would be judged in 'a state of sin', and unless he expressed a willingness to break off that relationship he would be denied absolution." (1976, 181) The homophile or boy-lover who wants to receive the sacraments, should therefore limit himself to prostitutes and anonymous sex, and abandon love relationships! Sexophobia creates the most absurd paradoxes, as McNeill here observes with superb irony.

How much better off mankind would be if we recognised just one moral imperative: respect for our fellow beings! Every individual is unique, with his own particular abilities and possibilities; he should be approached with the utmost reverence and respect. Only when he hurts someone else and violates that person's rights should law and morality attempt to intervene. For there is too great a diversity in mankind to permit the imposition of other general, morally binding rules. There are only customs, habits which facilitate the community's every day life, and they have no further intrinsic moral validity for the individual (Daniélou 1981, 336): they are purely human inventions.

This is doubly true with sex. There is not one form of sexual relations, from marital intercourse to anal penetration, which has not been condemned somewhere as immoral. There is no sexual practice, from prostitution to mother-son incest, which has not somewhere been approved as highly moral (Challot 1972, 136). There is no sexual act, from heterosexual intercourse to masturbation, which has not been described somewhere as unhealthy, and none, from penis-sucking and semen-swallowing to contacts with animals, which has not been praised somewhere as contributing to good health (cf. Baumann 1983, 88; Churchill 1967, 16; Szasz 1982, 131) "It is man himself who creates his sexual morality and therefore he also has the right to change it when it begins to threaten his well-being." (Haeberle 1978, 316)

Moral standards are conditioned by specific social needs and situations, and therefore they are never absolute. Our social and racial prejudices, our eating and sexual customs, are not made more beautiful by pretending they have a divine origin. The limitation of sex to procreation alone, denying all its other aspects, can be explained by the military necessities of an Old Testament pastoral people determined to conquer and occupy foreign territories. But to attribute such a limitation to an almighty god and to make biological materialism

an absolute and eternal standard for all peoples everywhere is to degrade this god and make him contradict the very human nature which he himself is supposed to have created.

Even within Christian institutions there is not always consensus about sexual morals. In Denmark during the 17th Century, pre-marital intercourse was an approved Christian tradition (even as it is today in the orthodox Calvinistic village of Staphorst in Holland). If pregnancy did not occur, the girl provided herself with another lover; if it did, the couple married. Eventually the clergy started to speak out against this practice, but the people of the congregations could not believe the ministers were to be taken seriously, and they accused them of corrupting patriarchal morality (Hertoft 1968, I-20).

There is a tendency for modern Christians to view morals not as absolute law but as an ideal, recognising that conditions may make it impossible for certain persons to live up to this ideal, and that failure to do so is no cause for reproach. There must, then, be a different set of ideals for such people (Wagner 1979, note 172). Johannes Gründel, a well known German Catholic theologian, stated that no hard and fast standards for sexual conduct are to be found in the teachings of Christ. (*Kurier* 23.3.85)

Under such principles, a Christian way of life, including, as in other cultures, homosexuality, would be possible. We must not forget that the entire concept of homosexuality, of a homophile minority, is the product of Judaeo-Christendom. "There are no 'homosexuals' outside of Judaeo-Christendom; there are none simply because outside of Judaeo-Christendom homosexuality seldom if ever becomes fetishized into a way of life." (Churchill 1967, 187; cf. West 1977, 150)

The responsibility for changing public attitudes lies largely with the media. A 1974 American poll revealed that a substantial majority (70%) of citizens thought sex acts between members of the same gender were "always wrong", even when the people involved loved one another (West 1977, 300). A Dutch inquiry at about the same time (1968) reported, on the other hand, that 58% of males and 55% of females were in favour of permitting homophiles to enjoy their own way of life. When the same questions were asked in 1981, the percentage of males holding this view had increased from 58% to 85.5%, and that of females from 55% to 87.7% (*Nieuwe Revu*, 24 June, 1981). This change was certainly due in large part to the sympathetic assistance of the media (press, radio and television) in the struggle of organised gays against discrimination.

The boy experiencing lustful sensations in his own body, enjoying them and desiring their satisfaction, is confronted with a dilemma. Either the authority

who tells him these nice feelings are ugly and evil is a dirty liar, or he himself, desiring and delighting in them, must be dirty and corrupt (Rossman 1976, 85).

- 332 A 15-year-old boy said, "I feel awful, like it's a sin that I feel this way as if I'm doing something wrong. But I know it couldn't be wrong because it feels so good when you're doing it." (Hass 1979, 99)

Fortunate is the boy who finds the solution for this problem in the embrace of a loving man who teaches him to take a positive view of his sexual feelings and desires (Rossman 1976, 146). He may even develop a sense of sound relativism concerning society's standards (Corstjens 1980, 276).

But those fortunate few are only a tiny minority. Most adolescents, aware that their burgeoning sexual and aggressive impulses conflict with adult society, take refuge in the company of their peers. The power of the peer group tends to neutralise the individual's sense of inadequacy and so makes it possible for him to give in to his desires without troubling him over much. The sense of responsibility, the need for personal decision-making, anxiety, guilt—all are swept away (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 194-195). Thus all too often honest, kindly, sensitive boys of good character are involved in brutal gang-rapes or become members of gangs which, relying on superior numbers, beat up individual gays in the dark.

To instil guilt feelings in youngsters about using their sexual organs is to pervert them. The sexual organs are, among other things, designed to unite one with a fellow human being, a union of such depth and completeness that at the moment of ecstasy your partner becomes your universe (*cf.* Naslednikov 1981, 118). Chastity, abstinence, is the denial of this union, is separation (Borneman 1978, 698). "But the half of sexual love, perhaps the most important and ennobling half, lies in what we give and not in what we take. To reduce this question to the low level of abstinence, is not only to centre it in a merely negative denial but to make it a solely self-regarding question. Instead of asking—How can I bring joy and strength to another? we only ask: How can I preserve my empty virtue?" (Ellis 1913, VI-201) Borneman (1978, 589) echoes this: "The ethical value of sexuality resides in the happiness we can give to each other in intercourse. It is immoral not to give yourself to some one, for God has given people sexual organs so that they may make one another happy. Every asceticism is a kind of vanity in which the welfare of one's own soul is set above the happiness of others. This is true not only of heterosexual love but of homosexual love as well. In both, the only thing of importance is the degree of satisfaction we can give to another human being, in order that he may find in his nonsexual life the strength to excel."

Elsewhere the same author observes that parents who try to make their child believe that sex is evil when he knows that the feelings in his own body are natural and good may well forfeit his esteem. He will conclude that his parents are either mentally deficient or are telling him lies or were abnormal in their own childhood (1978, 707). If, on the other hand, he faithfully internalises his parents' view, it will impair his ability for the rest of his life to associate his sexuality (now known to be dirty and evil) with such noble feelings as love (Safilios-Rothschild 1977, 8-9).

One consequence of such an upbringing is the development of the madonna/whore complex which we have already mentioned: the woman with whom the sufferer indulges his lust he regards as a despicable whore; the beloved, venerated woman, in contrast, is exalted far above sexual feelings (Bieber 1962, 9; Borneman 1978, 647, 893, 967, 1135, 1532).

- 333 Iovetz-Tereschenko (1936, 256) quotes the diary of a 17-year-old Russian boy who had received a strict religious upbringing. "I do not understand why sexual relations are connected with love. I think that sexual desire may be called healthy only when it is not bound together with love. Sensuality is one thing and love is another. If I love a woman it need not follow from this that I experience filthy feelings towards her. Love, I believe, ends when conjugal relations begin. If I love her, that love does not prevent me from feeling sexual desire towards some other woman. In my opinion sexual intercourse creates a certain estrangement in love. Sensual pleasure leads to satiety, and this, in its turn, to a certain aversion. And one can't hope to have real love after the aversion has appeared."

And so love, noble and exalted, is incompatible with salacity, which is filthy and vile. You spend your lecherous fury on a whore, a girl you despise; the beloved woman remains an untouchable madonna. Such a man will consider intercourse a humiliation of the woman he "uses"—a view shared by many (de Klerk 1974, 140-142)—but he will be impotent with his beloved, or, triumphing over his inhibitions, he turns his wedding-night into a brutal rape, something many women complain about later.

- 334 One of Stekel's patients was a 24-year-old marine officer in perfect health who had consulted him because whenever he tried to have intercourse with his fiancée, ejaculation burst upon him before he could insert his penis. With a whore, however, he managed to have intercourse and ejaculate five times within one hour (1925, 474; for other examples see Ellis 1913, III-321, 129-330).

This complex finds what is perhaps its most extreme expression in medieval Christian chivalry, which distinguished three sorts of females. First was the woman with whom a man had sex to satisfy his salacity. She was an object of lust and, if necessary, one could subdue her by violence. Second was the woman

one married. One didn't need to love her and had sex with her only to produce offspring. Third was the woman one adored, with whom one carried on a spiritual relationship and whom one never touched.

Wherever sex is held in contempt, woman is held in contempt as well. The pagan Germans fixed the blood-fine for killing a woman twice as high as for killing a man; the Christians reduced it to half that price (Lemaire-Mertens 1980, 25-26).

He who associates sexual joy with guilt corrupts and poisons the youth he comes into contact with. Young people rightly admire adults who do not regret their past (Borneman 1978, 50). The great novelist Stefan Zweig dreamt of a new youth "that had long rid itself of all the inhibitions, intimidations and tensions with which our evolution has been burdened: young people completely ignoring the detours and secrecies by which we had to do things prohibited to us, which they now rightly claim as their due. Happily they enjoy their youth with the spirit, the freshness, the facility and the freedom from care proper to their age. But it seems to me to be the supreme happiness within this happiness that they don't have to tell lies to others and are allowed to be honest to themselves, honest to their natural feelings and desires." (*Die Welt von Gestern*, quoted by van Emde Boas 1976, 93)

4. Obsession

"By rejecting sex so vehemently, Western culture has probably tended to make us more conscious of sexuality than those cultures that have accepted it with little question." (Bullough 1976, 685). Repression only emphasises the forbidden desire (Möller 1983, 38; Bullough 1976, 321). A negative attitude towards sex instils strong anxiety in thinking and feeling, since the forbidden desire always threatens to intrude (Heid 1977, 145). Someone who is continually struggling to expel lust will, of course, be more obsessed by it than somebody enjoying a normal sex life (Borneman 1978, 57).

And so sex repression always finds its strongest advocates and strictest enforcers among those who are tormented by their own inner struggle against the attractiveness of the activities they condemn. It is interesting to speculate that if there a 100% heterophile person really existed he would probably have perfect tolerance of homophilia, simply because he would have no urge to struggle against a tendency which was quite foreign to his nature. Conversely, the most dangerous enemy of homophiles is the semi-homophile struggling against one important part of his sexual nature (Geiser 1979, 77; Horn 1980, 29; West 1977, 2, 203; Wolfenden 1963, Sect. 24). Kinsey (1948, 384) found in the U.S. (and this was confirmed by Barrington (1981, 35) for the United

Kingdom) that the group "which most often speaks out against homosexual activities is also the group within which there is the highest amount of homosexual and bisexual behaviour between men." Their inner tension and anxiety turns such people authoritarian, makes them hard, rigid combatants for 'law and order', ruled by rules, dogmatic, orthodox (Bullough 1979, 80). The same mechanism applies to the enemies of boy-love as well: with them moderate discussion, conducted with reasoned arguments, is impossible; rather it degenerates into emotional outbursts of fury, distortions and lies. When this happens one is justified in suspecting the man (or woman) is repressing strong paedophile impulses.

"It is probably true to say that no one is quite so obsessed by sex as a fanatical puritan." (Morris 1976, 98; see also Eck 1969, 165) Frenken observed in his doctoral dissertation that in The Netherlands no group was more obsessed with sex than the ultra conservative Roman Catholic "Confrontation Movement" and the equally orthodox (fundamentalist) "Evangelical Broadcasting System" (1976, 71). Borneman (1978, 497) observed with gentle irony that monkeys, unaffected by moral strictures, have sex less frequently than humans with all their highly conceptualised morality.

The same pattern runs through Western history. The Middle Ages, when Christianity was universal and supreme, have been cited by Cleugh, a scholar of the period, as "the most sexually licentious period, among all classes, of European history." (1963, 94) Puritanism dominated the Victorian age. Women, then, were not pregnant: they were "in an interesting condition". Piano legs were decked out in crinoline because the association with the female might inspire lascivious thoughts (Taylor 1953, 210, 212). No well brought up person would say "trousers". Freud's speculation that "sublimation" (i.e. sexual frustration) was a pre-condition for culture was quite typically Victorian (Van Emde Boas 1976, 81). The truth is that sex repression in the late 19th Century was accompanied by a burst of pornography such as had never been witnessed in the West, of perverse and cruel excesses. Gentlemen came to some London brothels to be flogged; in others women were tortured and boys raped; there were places where customers could rape and deflower little girls (later some of these children's hymens were sewn up so that a new customer could subject them to the same torture once again) (Dühren 1912, I 427-447). Never had there been such extreme sexual prudery; never, since the activities of some of the degenerate Roman emperors, had its expression been so pathological and brutal.

Sexual intolerance is always symptomatic of inner weakness, and its most striking result is that it stimulates, if not creates, precisely what it attempts to prevent. Freud noted that "all individuals in sexual distress are inclined to let sexuality dominate them." (Blüher 1966, 29) A strong need suppressed quickly becomes an obsession, as everyone knows when he tries to suppress a cough

or a sneeze in polite company (Ellis 1913, I 222-223). When food is short during wartime people always think about eating, and gaze at the pretty pictures in cookery books with the same kind of salacity they might feel, during normal times, gazing at nude photos. During Ramadan, Moslems are strictly forbidden to eat during daylight hours; at night they catch up from their privation and the final result is that the total consumption of food goes up (Plack 1967, 198).

Likewise, the effect of the severe sexual restriction of traditional morality is not that individuals have less sex: they actually have more sex, but it is more morbid and less enjoyable. Someone spasmodically repressing his voluptuous thoughts and impulses will be all the more conscious of them; they will turn ugly and visit him more frequently, turning, ultimately, into obsessions (van Ussel 1976). Luther himself was keenly aware of this (Deschner 1978, 81).

335 A 23-year-old British young man told Barrington, "I do believe in God, heaven and hell and I fear His wrath on Judgement Day. I discovered how to masturbate at about 12 and did it every day, or night, till the present time. I know I do it too much and think it a sin in the eyes of God, but I can't help it and hope He will understand. After all, He made me the way I am, didn't he? I know I should resist the Devil's temptation to my own flesh pleasure. But just to write to you about it makes me get hard and want to do it now. I am mostly very unhappy." (1981, 57)

336 "My experiences as a schoolboy only reinforced my vocation. The first school I went to (and from which, thank God, I was expelled after a month) had such a strong cock taboo that it became difficult to think about anything else. Walking in a line, you had to keep your distance from the boy in front to avoid physical contact, for even an accidental touch could only be impure. You were forbidden to put your hands in your pockets, for you would only do that to touch yourself. (...) In the showers you could use only every other stall—those between were empty for the good of our souls. (...) There was such a big fuss about your cock that you spent the whole day thinking about it. They were always telling you not to do it, so of course they were always talking about nothing else. That school in Montauban was one of the finest hothouses for pederasty the Christian Church, in its charity, ever put at the disposal of its future hypocrites." (de Brethmas 1979, 132-133)

It is nature's law that spasmodic repression of a vital impulse increases rather than diminishes the prohibited activity. American homophile males, for example, begin their sexual activity at an earlier age than do heterophiles, and are more sexually active throughout their entire lives (Bieber 1962, 53, 189, 314). This might well be due to the relatively greater repression their society places them under. The percentage of homosexual graffiti in public conveniences in the U.S.A., where homosexuality is tabooed, is considerably greater than in the Philippines, where people are less concerned with it (West 1977, 133). In former times, bitter campaigns against "the secret vice" and "special friendships" in boarding schools made both increase dramatically (Ellis 1913, I - 242). In

non-Judeo-Christian cultures, homosexuality is seldom referred to as a way of life (West 1977, 136). Where society is permissive, exclusively homosexual males appear to be rather exceptional (Langfeldt 1975, 130).

The standard objection to sexual liberty, that without moral restraints excess would succeed excess, originates typically in the mind of the un-free, repressed individual dreaming of "having a fling". "Actually, the supposed lack of restraint of youth was never a danger. We should better concern ourselves with youth learning hypocritical virtue, developing guilt complexes, infecting sensitive souls with a consciousness of sin, the flight from pleasures that could enrich life, with this whole complex so damaging to health: based upon anxiety, self-mortification and the cowardice of renunciation." (Dalmas, quoted by Kruithof & van Ussel 1963, 57)

Children brought up in freedom react quite differently. Berger (1981, 248-250) described communities where children were given a great deal of freedom in this respect and, at around the age of five or six, began to have intercourse. "The sexual interests of these children irregularly ebbed and flowed, ranging from periods of great activity to relative disinterest. With both adults and other children they were off-handedly candid about their sexual experiences; although sex was fun, it was not of central importance to them."

What is true for all other forms of human conduct holds for sexual behaviour too: after years of oppression, freedom can lead to outburst. Pupils from highly repressive boarding schools become the most licentious university students—and this can apply to entire generations. Bertrand Russell once said, "The generation which first ceases to believe in conventional morality is bound to indulge in sex and freedom to a degree far beyond what is to be expected from those whose views on sex are unaffected by superstitious teaching." (quoted by Alcock 1976, 94)

By reducing sex to an obsession, repressive morality increases the quantity of sexual activity while reducing its quality. Every indulgence is interpreted as a moral defeat and burdens the unhappy, guilty victim with feelings of inferiority. A healthy boy who is taught not to repress his sex but to accept it as nature's finest gift, responds with tranquillity to his spontaneous sexual thoughts and impulses. If he sees something exciting he will view it with lust and without shame; if he is troubled by a persistent erection he will relieve it in masturbation or sexual play with a responsive boyfriend or girlfriend. The more active and energetic he is the more frequently will he have such experiences (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 346). Buoyed up by this vital pleasure, he will return to his play or work, until, in the natural course of things, his sexual desire quickens once again. Such a boy is not only healthier; he is morally superior. While one of his contemporaries submits to the standards of

society, becoming chaste and neurotic, and another pretends to chastity but secretly submits to his lust, only to despise himself afterwards for his "sinning", this boy stands proud of his nature and his humanity. He will also be more loving, for only a man who accepts himself for what he is can really love another (Plack 1967, 186).

"The sexually unsatisfied person represents a greater danger for human society than the poor, the hungry or the oppressed." "All other faculties depend upon sexual satisfaction: the faculty to work, to remain healthy, to bring up children and to improve society." (Borneman 1978, 230). This may sound like an exaggeration, but it is true that relief of sexual tension increases productivity (Borneman 1978, 105). Hass quotes a 17-year-old boy, commenting on the effect of masturbating, "I can concentrate better on other things, like my studies." (1979, 100) There is little doubt that it improves one's health. "Health professionals today agree that no detrimental physical effects occur as a result of masturbation. I have already mentioned the wide range of potential positive factors (enhancing self-worth, feelings of competence, substitute gratification, the expression of 'unacceptable' desires via fantasy, and reduction of sexual tension. (...) Self-stimulation and self-exploration affords an opportunity to learn about our body and what turns it on." (Hass 1979, 101). Even very frequent intercourse is healthy as long as it leads to socially important, valuable and beneficial activities (Borneman 1978, 1239).

"Today's young people, having obtained for themselves more sexual liberty, is at the same time more concerned with responsibility than were their parents in their youth. The older generation was taught to abstain from sex. But the attempt to make ascetics out of people unsuited for it all too often turns them into brutal hedonists with a low level of self respect." (Hanry 1977, 126, 149) In the years before the First World War, when traditional morality was still strong, a "fallen" woman was despised while the sons of the bourgeois gentry picked up their sexual experience with servant girls or in brothels. With the decline of rigid sex morality, intercourse commenced at an earlier age, but at the same time the number of partners declined, as sex became more infused with tenderness and love (Brückner 1971, 66)

"Nothing but freedom will prevent undue obsession with sex, but even freedom will not have this effect unless it has become habitual and has been associated with a wise education as regards sexual matters." (Russell, quoted by Alcock 1976, 105)

The History of Repression

The evil consequences of our traditional negative attitudes toward sexuality are becoming ever more evident and undeniable. They have begun to alarm

historians and investigators of spiritual life who are conscious of their responsibilities. At one time it was stated with utter self-assurance that the Roman Empire declined and fell as a result of moral corruption. Today we find ourselves wondering whether our culture isn't about to be destroyed by its morality. One of the greatest contemporary commentators on occidental history, Arnold Toynbee, sees in sexual abstinence and "self-control" insidious symptoms of cultural dissolution (Plack 1967, 268).

It is interesting to compare Toynbee's view with a story from the Indian book of wisdom, *Shiva Purana*. A deceitful prophet tries to ruin the king of the Asuras, and does so by preaching a puritan, moralistic religion. He advocates male abstinence and derides ritual veneration of the phallus. The citizens, under his influence, reject these rites, and the result is an explosion of evil behaviour. This gives the gods the excuse they need to destroy the city (Daniélou 1979, 281).

One can see in Greek Antiquity the benefits of positive acceptance of sexuality. Then the essential bisexuality of the human being was fully recognised, and not just the heterosexual but also the homosexual impulses received their institutionalised form. Orgies were a part of religious ritual. The Greeks were not embarrassed by nudity and the beauty of the human body was valued, including the sexual organs. The darker aspects of sexuality, such as sadism and masochism, were so comparatively infrequent that one scholar of Greek manners and customs could find no trace of them whatever. There was "little evidence of alcoholism among the Greeks. Brutality, cruelty and debauchery seemed to play little part in their character. Juvenile delinquency and adult criminality were rare." (Churchill 1967, 135) They enjoyed remarkable psychological health (Taylor 1953, 237).

We cannot say the same of the succeeding rulers of occidental culture, the Romans. Their essential stoicism enabled them to conquer and dominate the known world. While Greek culture, hedonistic as it was, had a positive view of lust, the Romans introduced elements of prudery, rigidity and authoritarianism. Stoicism demands asceticism. In the first century before Christ, "the stoic teacher Musonius Rufus went so far as to teach that marital intercourse was permissible only if the purpose was procreative. Intercourse for pleasure within the confines of marriage was reprehensible. Since homosexual activities were for pleasure alone, not for reproduction, they too were condemned and classed as unnatural." (Bullough 1976, 167)

"It is not surprising that when the Romans had the world and its resources in their grasp, their stoical approach to life became almost unbearably burdensome. In the face of the temptations produced by enormous power and wealth, and in the absence of any deep knowledge of the real pleasures in life, they surrendered almost every component of morality and ethics. Brutality, cruelty,

avarice, greed, cowardice, egoism, licentiousness, perversity, idleness, and vanity became outstanding features not only of their leaders but of the common people themselves. This is the danger that success brings to all Puritans and the increasing luxury of our own civilisation in the absence of an enlightened attitude toward pleasure begins more and more to resemble certain features of the ancient Roman scene. Having never thought much about pleasure, and being rather inept in handling ideas, the Romans imagined that in pursuing a life of voluptuous luxury, unencumbered by either thought or taste, they had realised the Greek ideal of Hedone. They borrowed this concept and made it a rationalisation for debauchery. But all of this, of course, was only the other side of the coin. For an unflinching moralism they had substituted immorality, thinking that in this manner they could escape from the inner restrictions that moralism imposed. But it is clear that, in their frantic excess of vulgarity, the Romans never learned the meaning of pleasure. One may wonder if pleasure was what they truly sought. To the end, they remained intellectual and spiritual parvenus; having failed in their experiment with hedonism because they never understood the meaning of it, they turned readily to a philosophy of self-abnegation." (Churchill 1967, 146-147) "The growth of stoicism, neo-Platonism, and, eventually, Christianity seemed to indicate the Romans became ever more rigid in what they regarded as permissible conduct. Historians will have to look elsewhere than alleged weakness caused by homosexuality or sexual excess for the fall of Rome." (Bullough 1976, 151-152) "Mortification of the flesh and an unhealthy mysticism ending in asceticism were substituted for unbridled lust in a world which had been too much with them and in which they never learned to find substantial joy. They were ready for the philosophy of the Dark Ages." (Churchill 1967, 147) Rome fell a century "after it had embraced Christianity and its ascetic sexual doctrines. The conquering heathen barbarians, on the other hand, were sexually much less inhibited." (Haeberle 1978, 440-441)

Christian moral philosophy diverged sharply and fundamentally from its origins in Greek thought—not in its ideals but in its approach. The Greek ideal was aesthetic: the soul was beautified by "self-mastery that cured the disease of physical craving" (Bullough 1976, 165), balanced behaviour, mental health. Morality was an appeal to follow this way of life. The Christians substituted, for this appeal to ennoble humanity, laws and rigid prescriptions, every transgression of which should be punished in this world or hereafter (Foucault 1984, 106-107, 111).

This regression was influenced by Old Testament teachings. The holy scripture cites 36 crimes which warranted capital punishment, and half of these were in the area of sexuality. Nudity was shameful, the sex organs obscene. Sex was regarded "not merely as somehow inherently evil, but also as somehow

inherently dangerous." (Churchill 1967, 18-19). It is most striking that these concepts are not to be found at all in the Gospels. Jesus of Nazareth lived in a world where prostitution, extramarital relations, homosexuality and boy-love flourished. About the first of these phenomena he said very little, about the latter, nothing at all. Jesus healed the young slave of the pagan Centurion who was so dear to his master (Luc 7:1-10; Matthew 8:5-10), being evidently well aware of the erotic relationship between the Centurion and his boy servant (Mader 1987, 35). But St. Paul infused Christianity with Old Testament sexophobia, and his work was strengthened by St. Augustine, who reacted against the extremist views of some of his predecessors. St. Ambrose had said that chastity was more important than following the doctrines of Christian faith; he felt that human extinction was preferable to propagation through sin. "Married persons should blush over the state in which they live." (Cleugh 1963, 264-265) But St. Augustine saw clearly that to make the act of procreation itself sinful was to attack the ordinations of nature's Creator. So he declared that while intercourse itself was harmless, the feelings of lust which accompanied it were sinful (Bullough 1976, 193). This is what modern psychology calls a "double bind"—orders so contradictory as to render anyone who tries to obey them neurotic and unbalanced. But this teaching endured. Pope Gregory of Great (1020-1085) affirmed that married people sinned if they sought lust in sexual intercourse (Engelhardt 1980, 13). It was only with the Reformation, and especially with Calvin, that people came to believe that "God would not treat this pleasure as sinful when it was sought or accepted as incidental to procreation." (Bullough 1976, 435) The echoes of the old Augustinian doctrine can still be heard now and then, and a venerated Christian author like Simone Weil (1919-1943) could write, "There is a mechanism in our body that, when it starts to function, makes us perceive some good in the things of this earth. We must let it rust until it is corroded." (quoted by Eck 1969, 382)

The Church's doctrine was not always as unwavering as it appears. In the year 900 persecution of (and belief in) witches was punishable by excommunication (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 264, 291, 292), but later in the Middle Ages hunting and exterminating witches had the Pope's blessing, only again to be considered an error in modern times. Once getting interest on loans was a frightful sin, while today it is practised by the Church itself. And there were times when Christianity regarded sex, even boy-love, in a rather permissive light.

Walafrid Strabo (809-849), Abbot of Reichenau, wrote a poem "to his friend in absence", and it seems that the Germans, especially the Franks, idealised, ennobled and placed a high value on the love between man and boy (Bullough 1976, 370). This permeated chivalric tradition. Since the knights, with their pages, were "tossed into long-term companionships with each other, unable to establish any stable relationships with females, it is quite possible that they

turned to each other for friendship, encouragement, and even sexual relief." (Bullough 1976, 400-401) In the humanist literature of the 12th and 13th centuries there was an unusual degree of erotic candour (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 235)

During the Renaissance, revival of ideals from Antiquity did not stop short of boy-love. Marsilio Ficino (1443-1449) "wrote that those best suited for soul love loved males rather than females and adolescents rather than children." (Bullough 1976, 415) Artists like Michelangelo, Leonardo da Vinci, il Sodoma (Giovanni Antonio Bassi) loved boys and adolescents more or less openly. As always during periods of cultural florescence—Greek Antiquity, Augustinian Rome, Shakespeare's England, the France of Louis XIII—people permitted themselves a great deal of sexual freedom, simply because of their unusual vitality (Banens 1981, 34; van Emde Boas 1970, 82-83; Daniel 1957, 43).

It wasn't until the 14th Century that the Church began to incite the secular authorities to act against homosexuality. There were many victims of this prosecution, especially among the clergy, the monks and the nobility (Goodrich, quoted by Parker 1980/1981, 200). The terrible Black Death plague which swept through Europe, killing one third of the people and devastating the economy of all countries, evoked a wave of "moral rearmament" after a period of vital energy and joy. The strengthening of morality's grip was accompanied, as usual, by an increase of perversity and neurosis, such as flagellation and similar symptoms of frustrated sexuality (Kerscher 1979, 115; Taylor 1953, 27). The Church claimed that repressive measures "were required because of the immorality of the times; it seems more probable that, in reality, the immorality of the times was the result of the pressures applied." (Taylor 1953, 55-56)

Later, the influence of the Church over Western society waned, but the traditional hostility towards sex remained. Society had been well indoctrinated by the ruling religion over the course of one and a half thousand years, and by now sex-loathing had become a habit. Mankind is inclined to consider its habits "natural" and self-evidently right (Pascal, quoted by Gide 1925, 38, 40), and this is how tribal customs are elevated into "natural law" which becomes the supreme moral standard (Kerscher 1978, 3). Thus people are likely to call "un-natural" what is really only "un-habitual".

Clerical support for the concept of sex-as-sin was later taken over by scientists. "Writers of most popular sex manuals, whether physicians, clergy, or teachers, mounted a crusade against sex, hitting with sledgehammer force the dangers of unnatural sex, which came to be interpreted as any kind of sex activity not leading to procreation." (Bullough 1976, 546). Tissot, with his book on the deadly perils of masturbation, "gave a new scientific basis for the Western hostility to sex at the very time when the earlier foundations of this

hostility were being undermined." These ideas of sexual repression "appeared first in the medical literature at the beginning of the eighteenth century but gradually became elaborated and more formalised, until by the end of the century they began percolating into the general consciousness. Eventually, they were seized upon by the conservative moralists and became the dominant theme of the nineteenth century, providing the intellectual basis for what we regard as Victorian morality, which tended to drive sex underground." (Bullough 1976, 498, 461). Orthodox medical opinion in the U.S.A., for example, "held sexual pleasure to be pathological, especially so in the female. Sexual intercourse within the socially sanctioned confines of the marital relationship was a necessary evil for the purpose of procreation. A wife's acquiescence in the disgusting exercise of coitus was lauded as an example of woman's noble spirit of sacrificial forbearance in order to fulfil her biological duty." (Oliver 1982, 403)

Puritanism and bourgeois mentality, those "greatest sex-murderers of Europe" (van Emde Boas 1976, 85), had triumphed. Little wonder, then, that the Victorian Age was a thoroughly sick and cruel period. And no wonder that Freud, appearing upon this scene, found millions upon millions suffering from various kinds of sexual neuroses, to the immense profit of his followers and the pharmaceutical industry. Even today, "half of all marriages in the United States are troubled by sexual failures, difficulties or incompatibilities." (O'Carroll 1980, 96). The more repressive a society is, the more it must resort to safety-valves such as Carnival, pornography and prostitution in order to unload dammed-up impulses (Kentler 1970, 56). "Since sex may lead to trouble, boys substitute violence, drugs, stealing, gambling." (Rossman 1976, 92)

The totalitarian revolutions of our century brought no improvement in this respect. Lenin regretted contemporary "hypertrophy of sex", which he attributed to capitalistic decadence (van Ussel 1970, 30). "Our D.D.R. is a pure nation," East German Party Leader Erich Honnecker proudly exclaimed. The influential communist pedagogue A. S. Makarenko thinks sexual information unnecessary. If children ask questions about sex he recommends their parents and teachers not answer them, for any reply at all might provoke unhealthy fantasies. Inhibitions should be learned early, and all of a child's upbringing should be based upon chastity.

"The ability to control your feelings, your imagination and your emerging desires, is the most important of all abilities, and its social value has not yet been sufficiently appreciated." Makarenko's thought is in perfect agreement with the Victorian. Recently the Soviet medical journal *Zdaroie* instructed parents not to caress their children, nor to kiss them, as this "stimulates the erogenic zones and favours a precocious development of sensuality." (*L'Espoir* 1983, No. 12, 36) In Hitler's Third Reich, homosexuality was thought to threaten

the energy and purity of the Arian race and thus it warranted merciless extermination. The Vatican still condemns every kind of sexual activity outside of married procreation. Ayatollah Khomeini executed men for homosexuality. All these political and spiritual authorities are strongly opposed to any depiction, in image or text, of sexual matters. In the Vatican Museum, classical Greek and Roman nude sculptures have been disfigured with fig leaves stuck on over the genitals.

After World War I, the League of Nations "began to meddle in the sexual customs of previously permissive societies," Haeberle writes and, quoting Guyon, "The countries outside Europe and America, almost without exception, have framed their Penal Codes more or less exactly after European criteria, in order to show the world that their civilisation was not inferior to the Western civilisation taken as an unquestionable model of progress. (...) The Doctrine of Sin, which Missionaries tried for so many years to introduce in those countries, without any great success, was suddenly imposed on them by a trick which has gratified to the full the host of anti-sexually minded people." (Haeberle 1983, 164-165)

The Substrata of Sexual Repression

Why, then, this determined fight for sexual repression which has occupied so many different authorities over so many centuries? They must gain real advantages from it, since the disadvantages (neurosis, aggression, misery and sexual obsession) are so blatantly obvious.

All dictatorships are chaste: in this respect they are alike, and it doesn't matter whether they are Marxist or Fascist, Islamic or Christian. "Sex, one of the essentials for human happiness, is characteristically persecuted by every patriarchal, political or religious tyranny." (Daniélou 1979, 23) All those who exercise absolute power, be it secular or spiritual, all tyrannies listed by the Indian legislator Manu—the tyrannies of priests, warriors, merchants and of the working classes—all try to limit the sexual freedom of their subjects and impose prohibitions and taboos upon their sexual activities.

Sexual intercourse, if performed between legally married people in the authorised position (man on top, woman under) is permitted, for otherwise nation and church would die out. Warrior nations and militant churches even encourage procreative intercourse, for they constantly need a fresh supply of soldiers and believers. Napoleon's cynical statement that one night in Paris would make up for all the losses in a battle is typical. On the other hand, there are nations that become concerned about excess of population and recommend anticonception, sterilisation, or even, like China, permit marital intercourse only on certain days prescribed by the authorities and punish transgressors. So the

capacity of humans to procreate is stimulated or circumscribed according to what our rulers feel best suits their interests. They always look with disfavour upon the expression of love, pleasure or primeval impulses through the medium of sex.

And, looked at from the standpoint of their own selfish interests, they are right; as history has proven. The human sexual need has one peculiar characteristic. All other essential physical needs, such as breathing, eating, drinking, defecating, sleeping, may be postponed for various periods of time but not indefinitely: everybody knows this. But sex is different. One can discuss in perfect seriousness, and even impose, total, permanent suppression of sex without destroying the individual or extinguishing the impulse (Killias 1979, 17). Any proposal, then, for people to live in abstinence and renounce sexual pleasure is not *a priori* nonsense.

Actually most boys and men simply feel incapable of carrying on, living happily and in good health, without some form of sexual release. People in power know this very well and do not expect their edicts and taboos to be strictly observed and the outlets stopped, nor is this what they really want. The rules, the taboos have already had their intended effect: while not preventing sexual activities they burden them with guilt. Lust is made immoral, a sin.

The psychological consequences are far-reaching. Diderot had already remarked on this (Kentler 1970, 77-78). It doesn't really matter whether the sinning is secret or in the open, whether it takes place in actuality or only in thought: the sinner is permanently conscious of his failure, and this renders him humble and submissive. Continually ashamed of his desires, his fantasies, his lusts, his weaknesses, he feels inferior. To God and the secular representatives of God he is guilty. How can he atone for his crimes now that he has sinned against their commands? He can only humble himself before their authority and show total obedience in other areas. "It is not the successful adaptation of the individual that guarantees flawless submission, but his stinging remorse, resulting from his unavoidable shortcomings." (Plack 19967, 88; see also Borneman 1978, 169, 1306; Gindorf 1978, 11-12; Hanry 1977, 85; Horn 1980, 33; Kerscher 1973, 178; Killias 1979, 29; Schelsky 1955) This submission of their subjects made the rulers of Christian Europe strong; it allowed them to conquer the world. A religion preaching charity, human equality and fraternity was thus transformed into the instrument of cultural and material subjugation and conquest (Daniélou 1979, 282).

"The concept of sexual activity as sin gave the Church officials a means of entering into the sexual practices of their parishioners" (Bullough 1967, 355) and dominating their private lives.

Of course not every man who is empowered with authority and who advocates sexual self-denial is guilefully aware of this mechanism. He may simply have

been brought up with these ideas and is just propagating what he has been taught to believe. As Jean-Paul Sartre once said, "It is the good people who create evil." (Hanry 1977, 212) And so honest, noble-minded men, with the best of intentions, are turned into cunning tyrants once given power over their fellow humans. Victims themselves, they victimise others. So it is not they, but rather the basic immorality of traditional morality which should be fought.

When ecclesiastical power waned, secular rulers took advantage of the same system. To them, economic factors were all-important. Industrial growth was now driving people to the cities, destroying the family life of the working classes. Governments did little to improve the conditions of the poor, but, inspired by the politics of population, they cracked down mercilessly against "immorality", and this fitted nicely with the general social hostility towards sex and the greatly expanded authority of the Bible brought about by the Reformation. All extramarital sex was made unlawful, God's commands being given as justification. This trend "beautifully demonstrates how a society with a shortage of consumer goods and consequently hostile to consumption will oppress the sexuality of its members—and especially of its most deprived members—with singular brutality. The bourgeoisie and people of high station made great effort "to render marriage more difficult and thus procreation legally, or at least practically, impossible—all in an attempt to prevent an expansion of the population." In Switzerland one response was an increase in the number of sexual acts with animals. Of course it also entailed a prohibition of early marriage and sex with children, an invention, as we saw in the preceding chapter, of the 19th Century (Killias 1979, 67-70, 98, 100).

So it was the demands of social economy that finally brought hostility toward sex to its full florescence. Its last great tidal wave, a genuine pathological epidemic, as the psychiatrist Zeegers called it (1977, 194), was brought about by bourgeois capitalism. Its effects are still with us. In a period when thrift was a capital virtue, people grew worried about the waste of "vital body fluids" (Gagnon & Simon 1973, 221). A thrifty merchant saves his goods, money, sentiment and semen (Hanry 1977, 148). Production is the purpose of life, thus the pleasures of sex should be limited to the productive and denied non-productive youth, old age, the sick, the invalid or the prisoner (Baurmann 1983, 79). How twisted and chilly our culture has become can be seen in how much easier it is for most people to caress an animal than to caress a child (Bendig 1980, 159).

In the countries which gave birth to it, capitalism finally managed to eliminate the scarcity of consumer goods, and this meant the highest economic purpose of life shifted from production to consumption. Thrift ceased to be a virtue; it was no longer necessary, possibly even detrimental. And thus sexual morality changed and the Western world had its "sexual revolution" with its demands

for greater freedom and tolerance. The new economy was directed towards immediate, large-scale satisfaction of new, artificially inflated needs (Killias 1979, 21). This included sex, and now *performance* became all-important, the sexual athlete our social idol. Tender love-making was defective if there was no insertion of the penis, no ejaculation. Both partners had to have orgasms every time, preferably simultaneously and not too soon; if this didn't happen something must have gone wrong. Movies and television spread this new gospel.

It is hard to claim that there was much moral gain here. A man whose sexuality is oppressed and persecuted by society is not free. A man psychologically pushed by society into sexual activity because if he doesn't carry on he won't count is also not free (Kentler 1970, 185). Sexual liberation can never be realised by conforming to society's dictates: it will always be in opposition to them (Borneman 1978, 771). A boy precociously taking on the man's role and having intercourse with a female only in submission to the will of the people around him is certainly trapped in an unhappy situation and may well be on his way to becoming a hard-hearted pleasure-seeker, full of unconscious inhibitions. Raymond Kiefer (*Sexual Behaviour*, Vol. 1, No. 5, 1971, 20) called those educators who try to tell young people they *must* have intercourse willy-nilly, right and left, "psychological child molesters".

The sexual revolution, moreover, is not universally and whole-heartedly accepted. "Sexuality represents the ultimate individualism—everyone's personal sexuality, their fantasies, and their erotic potential are far more idiosyncratic than are, say, their consumer choices, voting patterns, patterns of religious or social identification—and this is why sexuality is a constant fear of those who would seek to continue administered controls." (NAMBLA 1981, 95). Dr. Howard, President of Rockford College, told the U. S. Congress, "Even those who are not guided by religious and ethical considerations must recognise on pragmatic grounds that the sexual 'revolution' is individually, socially and economically disadvantageous. (...) Our economy suffers from the collapse of norms of conduct in the private life of citizens. The productivity of any individual, be he executive or day laborer, is affected by his psychological state. The person who is subject to frequent emotional stress cannot focus his attention as effectively on his work as can the person who has a fairly high level of stability in his home life." (Hearings 1977, 399) On the other hand, those in power may also see some advantage in permitting the masses sexual distraction, to make them forget the burden of the yokes they are made to carry (Borneman 1978, 1307). This is the theory of repressive tolerance. But no sexual practice, no matter how unconventional (exchange of partners, promiscuity, group sex) will lead to real freedom as long as it is inspired by the obsession of performance (Baurmann 1983, 78-79).

So the fight for real sexual freedom must be fought on two fronts: on the one, against the communist, fascist, Christian and Islamic fear of the independent personality; on the other, against the well-publicised message of the media urging us to have sex in all its forms and as much as possible, whether you want it or not. On the first front the attack must be directed against the official repressive morality and the legislation which supports it, citing its dangers to mental health and human happiness. In this struggle, the best interests of the child are essential (Kupffer 1978, 110).

"The more people learn in their early childhood to conduct themselves as sexual beings, to develop their sensitivity and respect other people as sexual partners, the more our contemporary society of restricted communication, poor human contacts and potential loneliness will fade away. (...) Making a positive attitude towards sex a principle of education and upbringing will encourage man's capacity for criticism. Fromm sees the development of critical ego-functions as a condition for thinking, feeling and acting to be free of fear. But those with a negative attitude towards sex are filled with fear in their thinking and feeling, since prohibited things always threaten to intervene. And so the capacity for criticism is impaired, and this capacity is a basic condition for democracy." (Heid 1977, 145)

Elimination of the superfluous aspects of sex-repressive laws will only help society to be more democratic and the individual more emancipated (Baurmann 1978, 78). In any given community, the sexual conditions in it make a good standard by which to judge its oppression of humans in general (Kentler 1970, 80-81).

"We can hope that the struggle for sexual liberation will succeed. It is part of the general struggle for the extension of individual rights and thus represents an exciting and constructive movement towards a society that is more open, more just, and more free." (Haeberle 1978, 485). It may be an encouraging sign that a recent Dutch opinion poll showed that only 23% of young people in The Netherlands share the ideas of their parents about sexuality (*NRC Handelsblad* 3 Aug, 1984). "A democratic morality should judge sexual acts by the way partners treat one another, the level of mutual consideration, the presence or absence of coercion, and the quantity and quality of the pleasures they provide. Whether sex acts are gay or straight, coupled or in groups, naked or in underwear, commercial or free, with or without video, should not be ethical concerns." (Rubin 1984, 282)

René Guyon proposed that we amend the Declaration of Human Rights with the following section: "Everyone has the right to sexual freedom and the free disposal of his or her body to that end; and no person shall be molested, prosecuted, or condemned by the law for having voluntarily engaged in sexual

acts or activities of any kind whatever, provided they are devoid of violence, of constraint, and of fraud." (quoted by Haeberle 1983, 169)

The close connection between freedom in general and sexual freedom has raised a question of priority. Reich thought that sexual freedom should come first, that it would more or less automatically effect a general liberation of society. Others, like Borneman (1978, 1294), claimed that sexual liberation could only be obtained through political liberation (Taylor 1953, 89). Some go so far as to ascribe "all our sexual problems to the evils of our political and economic system. Capitalism, so runs the argument, creates sexual oppression as a drought creates dust; abolish capitalism and you free the sexually oppressed! Unfortunately, this naive assumption is disproved by the continued or even increased sexual intolerance in so-called communist countries, from Albania and Cuba to the Soviet Union and the People's Republic of China." (Haeberle 1978, 438)

The theory that "Society comes first, sex must take a back seat" is the most ingenious attack yet invented against the sexual revolution. The energy of the sexual liberationists is thus diverted from its true aim: it is harnessed to the carriage of some political party or action group. Most important of all, it divides the liberationists and makes it easy to incite them against each other. It has weakened, even destroyed, whole liberation movements by creating inner dissension. We must never forget, however, that sexual freedom and a positive sexual upbringing are not just fighting aims, they are also fighting means and form the matrix for further liberation in other sections of society. A person who has learned to think independently and to follow his own sexual convictions will probably do the same in other areas. He may see sexual reform, creating stronger personalities, as a starting point, without falling into the error of considering it the only instrument at his disposal and sufficient on its own. This would be to exaggerate the moment of sexuality in society's balance of values (Kerscher 1979, 122).

Sexual Freedom

Growing up, as we have, in a culture stamped by the Judeo-Christian religion, it is easy to assume that traditional morality is evidently right, to forget that other systems, far less oppressive and frustrating, are human possibilities as well.

G. Rattray Taylor (1953, 87-88) distinguishes two types of cultures which he calls the patrist and the matrist.

Patrist / Matrist

Restrictive attitude to sex / Permissive attitude to sex

Limitation of freedom for women / Freedom for women

Women seen as inferior, sinful / *Women accorded high status*
 Chastity more valued than welfare / *Welfare more valued than chastity*
 Politically authoritarian / *Politically democratic*
 Conservative: against innovation / *Progressive: revolutionary*
 Distrust of research, inquiry / *No distrust of research*
 Inhibition, fear of spontaneity / *Spontaneity, exhibition*
 Deep fear of homosexuality / *Deep fear of incest*
 Sex differences maximised (dress) / *Sex differences minimised*
 Asceticism, fear of pleasure / *Hedonism, pleasure welcomed*
 Father religion / *Mother religion*

Just as with individuals, one would never meet a culture which fell entirely into one of these patterns. Real societies are always mixed, and we can only talk about the predominance of one characteristic or another. Nevertheless Taylor's survey clearly shows how hostility towards sex is closely connected to a number of other societal attributes and thus why it is so difficult to combat.

Currier (1981, 12-13) gives an even subtler division of cultures according to their attitudes towards sex:

1. *Sexually repressive cultures*, disposed toward the denial of sexuality (examples: the Irish, the Cheyenne Indians).
2. *Sexually restrictive cultures*, disposed toward the limitation of sexuality (the dominant type).
3. *Sexually permissive cultures*, disposed toward the tolerance of sexuality as normal, natural and inevitable (common in the equatorial latitudes of Africa, Asia and the Americas).
4. *Sexually supportive cultures*, disposed toward cultivating sexuality and encouraging it in the young (examples: the Muria in India, the Trobriander in Melanesia).

Western culture may dominate the world, but its traditional views on sexuality are exceptional in the human race. Ethnologists and sociologists at Yale University, collecting sexual data from 118 nations, found that only two Africa black cultures had similar standards. In the remaining 115 there was more sexual liberty (Johansson 1983, 4-7). There are cultures where the sexual impulse is not "sublimated", to use the Freudian term, but where its healthy satisfaction is at the base of its creative activities (Borneman 1978, 805). "The ancient Polynesian cultures offer perhaps the best proof that a realistic, positive, and humane approach to sex can work and be socially productive." (Haeberle 1978, 331)

A positive attitude towards sex is not limited to the so-called "primitive" cultures. The ethics of Islam, for instance, "say 'yes' to sexuality and its satisfaction". Its prophet Mohammed, the impeccable, had a very active sex life

and an ardent temperament. Intercourse is considered good. The pleasure of orgasm should remind us of the bliss of Paradise. As this pleasure is transient, it should arouse in us the desire to enjoy it permanently hereafter among the blessed (Bousquet 1953, 39, 41, 43, 102, 143). "Praise be given to God, who has placed man's greatest pleasure in the natural parts of woman, and has destined the natural parts of man to afford the greatest enjoyment to woman." This is the opening phrase of Shaykh Nefzawi's *Perfumed Garden*. "Islam in general looks upon chastity not as an ideal, but as an unfortunate accident." (Burton 1963, 71, 52)

"Hinduism... might be classed as even more sex positive than Islam." The *Kamasutra*, a handbook for refined sexual activity, is venerated as a revelation of the gods. Considerable attention is given to pleasure as a purpose of sex. The female organ is the chief ruler of the universe. "It is likened to the second mouth of the creator, and it continuously sends out a silent command to man to come and sip." Sex also has mystical or magical purposes, so sexual intercourse itself becomes a higher form of worship. Sex is "a way of revealing to man the hidden truth of the universe." Through sex it is possible to obtain redemption. The sex act is a rite to obtain spiritual enlightenment. "The tantric cults hold that spiritual union with the god can best be obtained through sexual union in the flesh. During intercourse man is able to contemplate reality face to face, and the supreme bliss that proceeds from ritual sexuality is the height of religious experience." In the antinomian cults, masturbation became a religious ceremony associated with the god Krishna." (Bullough 1976, 245-246, 251-252, 257-258, 264)

There is a Buddhist tantra, too. The famous mantra *om mani padme hum* symbolises the male penis in the female vulva. "Sexual intercourse is not just satisfaction of an instinct but the repetition of the primal copulation of the divine couple, the eternal principle of all things, and a means of ascending the spatial-temporal plane of life." (Bullough 1976, 271, 272)

The ancient Chinese distinguished two cosmic forces, *yang*, the male, and *yin*, the female. "Only when the yin and yang aura are sound and sane, living in peaceful interaction, can man's body and mind be in proper order and life can go on. Sex is one of the major ways to regulate the body." (Bullough 1976, 283) Sexual intercourse is the key to long life.

How different this is to the Christian attitude which, according to Bullough, may have had its roots in the teachings of the Persian Zoroaster (600 B.C.) who almost certainly influenced the Jews: "A restricted sexual life came to be regarded as necessary for salvation and the good life." (Bullough 1976, 68-69) But we should keep in mind that even in Christian Europe there were centuries of cultural bloom, in which the sexuality of youth was accepted without difficulty and appreciated as a source of health and joy. It was only around 200

years ago that the bourgeois era converted society back to sex negativism out of what it considered economic necessity, favoured by science and exploited by the clergy. A "nice" boy was expected not to feel these impulses and, if he did, to control them—"control" of course being a euphemism for suppression and negation.

The "nice" boy is only thwarted by this form of mental castration. "For man is made in such a way that he fundamentally reveals himself in the sex act. No confession, no autobiography, no admission of guilt during trial and no free association upon the analyst's couch can ever unveil us to another so completely as does the sexual act to our partner." But we don't give without receiving. "We learn about ourselves in getting to know others." (Borneman 1978, 781, 878, 1077) One of Hass's subjects, a 17-year-old boy, stated it brilliantly: "Sex is part of getting to know someone. You can only get to know someone to a certain degree without sex." (1979, 19) Sexual experience thus helps a boy get on in life (Möller 1983, 12). Children brought up in American communes where parents talk openly about sex and where no bodily touching is taboo, are in their play exactly like other children of their age. But at the same time "the majority of the children demonstrated a high degree of maturity, self-confidence, and self-reliance. (...) The children related to sex as something interesting and enjoyable, but not of central importance. (...) There seemed little stigma against children who did not wish to engage in sex." (C. M. Johnston & R. W. Deisher, "Contemporary communal child rearing", *Pediatrics*, Vol. 52, No. 3, 1973, quoted by O'Carroll 1980, 42-43)

Adolescents often feel more mature after having intercourse. "I felt older and more worldly," said a 17-year-old—"I had taken a step on my way to manhood" (an 18-year-old)—"It was like I was growing up" (a 16-year-old) (Hass 1979, 74). Sexual experience enriches humanity with a dimension, appeals to self-chosen responsibility and compels the boy to reflect upon questions of fidelity and infidelity, connection or separation of sex and love, his own and his partner's tolerance of frustrations (Dasberg 1975, 90). Maslow found perseverance and self-assurance correlated positively with the degree of sexual activity (Giese & Schmidt 1968, 346), Schofield that boys with experience of intercourse made better headway in society (Kentler 1970, 190). While sexually inactive youngsters "are anchored securely to their parents' values", the sexually active have more independent views (Janus 1981, 45).

Olivier Decrés who taught school for many years in Morocco, compares the boys there, working and being exploited for ridiculously low wages, with their closely protected European age-mates. "The European doesn't understand that these boys, living and acting as adults, have better opportunities to escape the social restraints, and especially the sexual restraints, to which European children are helplessly subjected, locked up as they are inside the blind walls of family

and school. The protection in Europe leads to servitude, paradoxically, while exploitation gives the Moroccan boys power!" (1982, 133)

Boys are told to behave like men, to control their emotions and to be self-assured and dominant in all kinds of situations. Sexuality is the only area where men are allowed to be tender, passionate and uncontrolled. To prohibit boys from entering this field is to make it impossible for them to be fully human.

"Every child is given at birth the capacity to enjoy his body. Sexuality is something granted to everyone, and to teach a child to abstain from this evident intimacy is perhaps the first form of sexual violence to which it is subjected." (van Dijk 1982, 33)

Geiser, a noted American child psychologist, concludes in his book *Hidden Victims. The Sexual Abuse of Children*: "Boy-love is a fact of life, and instead of treating those involved as criminals, the question of when a teenager has a right to determine his own sexual life needs to be faced. Existing laws are contradictory and archaic. Denying children any bonds of affection may be more damaging to their psychological development than involvement in a boy-love situation." (1979, 101) This optimism is shared by Professor Zeegers (1977, 205)

A man who loves boys, erotically among other ways, is adapted by the very nature of his inclinations to offer his young friend exactly the use and habit of freedom the youngster needs to protect himself from repressive morality and its evil consequences which we discussed in the preceding pages. The boy-lover's gifts are unique and correspond so exactly to these needs that it is little wonder there have always been societies that viewed intimate sexual relations between men and boys as an indispensable condition for adequate upbringing and education.

Such a man provides the boy with the strongest possible corporal delight at an age in which the things of the body have an uncommon importance. And in doing so, the adult unveils himself free of shame in his own passionate excitement and lust.

A boy experiencing this, not because the man is determined to "seduce" him to satisfy his own lust (such unsavoury situations we discussed in Chapter Four) but because his pleasure is amplified many times over by his perception of the boy's pleasure—such a boy can abandon himself without fear or shame to this pleasure. The experience protects him against perversion, against risky excesses in sado-masochism, for his aggression is attenuated and he has no need for self-punishment. It is a guard against neurosis, which would damage his health, and hypocrisy, which distorts one's ethical outlook. For him, sex will be something to enjoy freely, as frequently as time permits and his body asks for it (which can be quite often!), but never a dominating obsession. For the rest

of his life he will have an increased capacity to experience pleasure and give it to his partner.

Such a boy may explore his own sexuality without anguish and shame, discover the heterophile and homophile components of it, experience his bisexuality, develop and practice his sexual capacities, all with the healthy and perfectly natural joy of lust. It will enrich his life so as to make him more energetic, independent, responsible, critical, and at the same time less aggressive and more kindly and charitable. He will enlarge his theoretical knowledge of sexuality and learn to stand up for his feelings and desires.

If the man with whom he experiences this has a pedagogical relationship with him, the boy will have at least one teacher to whom he doesn't have to pretend disinterest in sex, who doesn't preach a morality which conflicts with his deepest convictions and feelings, a man who doesn't demand that he tell all about his intimate affairs while hiding his own. Such a man has a golden opportunity to show a boy in practice how one uses sex responsibly and with respect for others—not suppressing it but controlling it, i.e. abstaining from it when you wish and glorying in it intentionally when the situation is right.

And so the boy will learn how to associate sex with love and love with sex, and how it is natural to express love with his body. Candour opens the road to unveiling other feelings, too: failures, real or imagined, feared inadequacies (van der Zijl 1976, 399). The youngster whose tendencies are mainly homophile or paedophile especially needs, in an aggressively heterophile environment, the stand-by support of such an adult, whose example shows him how to deal with the world as it is and gives him the assurance of knowing he is not alone (Speijer Report 1969, 7-8-3).

In the rest of this chapter we will discuss some aspects of sexual education and its benefits for boy and man.

Sexual Information

Dr. Frits Wafelbakker, state inspector of public health, said at a meeting of the Netherlands Association for Sexology in 1982 that the following rights of children ought to be recognised:

1. The right to receive information.
2. The right to enjoy their feelings and to develop them by means of:
 - a: masturbation,
 - b. sexual play with age peers, for which opportunity should be provided,
 - c. sex with older partners.
3. The right to decide for themselves whether to say "yes" or "no" when approached sexually by others.

But even the right to receive sexual information is in bitter dispute, by Christians as well as communists. The effect of such information on children, according to both, would be to provoke "bad fantasies", awake slumbering feelings and lead them to precocious sexual activity.

Heslinga (1976, 470), on the other hand, assessed, "Information given before proper consciousness is reached gives the child beforehand a certain degree of assurance. We can categorically deny that information excites lust before such an impulse has yet been experienced." Freud (1920, 113-114) had already voiced a similar opinion.

Research bears this out. In Denmark, where during the 1940s sexual information already formed part of the school curriculum, the average age of first intercourse for boys was considerably higher than in the United States, where such instruction is much less common: see Table 8. An investigation in The Netherlands elicited a similar pattern: the boys who got sexual information generally started with sexual intercourse later in their lives than those deprived of such information (Noordhoff 1969, 255).

Table 8

	USA	
	Kinsey 1948, p 550	Cumulative
13 years or less	13.8%	13.8%
14 years	14.0%	27.8%
15 years	11.0%	38.8%
16 years	12.8%	51.6%

	Denmark	
	Hertoft 1968, Vol. 2, p 32	Cumulative
13 years or less	02.0%	02.0%
14 years	04.5%	06.5%
15 years	09.0%	15.5%
16 years	16.5%	32.0%

Where sexual information is given, but negatively coloured, this leads to equally paradoxical consequences. Sorensen (1973, 409) divided those young subjects who had had sexual experience into two groups: the "monogamists", confining themselves to one single girl, and the "adventurers", gyrating from one girl to another. Those brought up to consider sex as dirty and immoral were one and a half times as numerous among the adventurers (67%) as among the monogamists (42%).

In sex, parents sin less frequently by what they say than by what they don't say. "If sex is conspicuously absent from any conversation, we 'learn' that it is not a topic to be discussed." (Hass 1979, 162; see also Jans 1973, 26) The frightened rejection, the awkward silence, the evident embarrassment as soon as the painful subject is touched upon, are experienced intuitively by the child as a real tyranny. "A sense of horrified disapproval communicates itself without words." (West 1977, 97) If the parents "feel uncomfortable or even guilty about their own sexuality, they are bound to convey these negative feelings to everybody around them and, as a result, the child may become confused and apprehensive." (Haeberle 1978, 153) Among Bieber's 206 subjects, 157 were told nothing by their mother, 155 nothing by their father; only 4 got much information from their parents (1962, 335). Among the male subjects of the Hite report (N = 7239) (1982, 855), 20% were told by their parents, 11% got books with information, another 11% were only advised "to be cautious", and with 57% the subject was passed by in silence. "Such parents undoubtedly don't realise that in doing this they are terrorising the child far more than they ever could by beating him up and degrading sex in his mind. (...) For by a 'mystical participation', to use Carl Jung's terminology, they absorb the adults' feelings" (Plack 1967, 85, 93). And so the health and well being of children are regularly sacrificed to the inhibitions and anxieties of their parents (Hanry 1977, 31). West (1977, 112) has even suggested that an over-reaction of a parent when confronted with some inconvenient manifestation of childhood sexuality might cause an evolution toward homosexuality. A Dutch investigation (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 107) showed that sons of parents with a strong rejection of sex had more difficulties in establishing human contacts: they were clumsier, less assured in their behaviour and shy about their appearance. As respected a pedagogue as Borneman even goes so far as to say that it is less urgent to protect children from pornography as from their parents' sexophobia. For the latter makes it impossible for them to see sexuality as an expression of love; it will always remain a brutal, animal lust.

This is the psychology which leads to boys forming gangs that rape girls (Hanry 1977, 134).

337 "In one case it was 14, in another case 19 youths who made up gangs committing sexual assaults on young girls (and never any other crimes)." A 12-year-old girl raved

"about a boy who was then 14 years old. She had only seen him from a distance, but he seemed like the fulfilment of all her desires and fantasies. They met for the first time on a rainy day and went for a walk in the woods, where they had intercourse with each other. When they finished, the boy whistled and four of his friends appeared. He ordered them to have intercourse with her, too, and they did, one after the other, while they held her down. Over the next few years, this group of boys performed many similar acts with increasing brutality. The girl, whose nick-name was 'blinky' from a facial tic, was abused time after time by this gang, which ultimately grew to a group of 14." (...) "The two gangs were unaware of each other's existence, but their mode of operation was very similar: they lay in wait for girls and chose those who seemed best suited to their purpose. Then the chosen one was abducted to some secluded spot in the countryside. The leader was always the first to perform intercourse on their victim, while some of the others held her down. After the leader was finished each took her, one after another, in a definite order of rank. Some of these orgies finished with all the boys standing around the nearly unconscious girl and urinating on her, thus once again demonstrating their male superiority." The 16-year-old chief of the second gang was found to have two quite different mental images of womanhood (the madonna and the whore), each quite isolated from the other. (...) "When he was fourteen, wandering around and working on various farms, he fell violently in love with one idealised girl. He kept his love secret. Such acts as his gang committed he could not begin to imagine performing with his beloved; even in his fantasies about her he could only imagine the very beginnings of physical tenderness. Girls of another kind, however, immediately excited him sexually, and with them he allowed himself unrestrained satisfaction in the above-described manner, placing the guilt more upon the victim than himself." (Geisler 1959, 94-95, 65)

In his novel *This Day's Death*, John Rechy (1971) gives a dramatic description of such a gang rape performed by schoolboys upon a female classmate—an extreme example of the results of the madonna/whore complex.

"Indoctrinated feelings of shame, repentance and guilt at the realising of sexual impulses lay the basis for a need to be punished, and this fixates the sado-masochistic personality structure." (Kerscher 1978, 178, after Reich, Fromm & Adorno).

The problem is this: how do sexually uneducated, or badly educated, parents, despite the scars they bear from all the trauma they have endured, proceed to give their children a better upbringing? This probably will be very difficult without the assistance of the media, of school, of youth groups, and here there has always been more than a degree of reticence. Until now the information, if any, is mainly limited to reproductive descriptions: the anatomy and function of the organs concerned, perhaps something about contraception and sexually transmitted diseases. In the end, of course, there will be stern warnings: "You children aren't up to this yet... For the present you must do nothing... This whole area is dangerous, it is playing with fire..."

Now, procreation is an interesting subject, worthy of study just like the circulation of blood and digestion, but it is far removed from the child's world.

The child does not consider himself a being existing for procreation, and neither mentally nor physically is he such a being.

Using the tale of procreation in this manner is bad sexual education. It puts the communication of knowledge to the purpose of oppression. Sexual education should not strive to oppress but rather to induce a constructive self-control of sex, so that one can dispose of one's own sexuality with reason and feeling. It should begin, therefore, with something already familiar to the child, about which the child already has experience. If it is true, as we proposed in Chapter Three, that boys come to love through sex and girls come to sex through love, this means that their sexual upbringing and education must run along different lines. With boys, the starting point should be the pleasure of skin contact, in which the sexual organs have a special importance and reaction. This leads to a discussion of masturbation, where the accompanying fantasies prove the sexual appetite to be directed toward someone else, a desired partner. At first this fantasied partner is not infrequently another male, later usually a female. The possible result of intercourse with a female, if both are older, is conception and pregnancy. These should be avoided, so contraception is imperative. Thus the story of the birds and the bees comes at the end, not the beginning.

Only after this knowledge has been imparted can sexual education proper begin: respect for one's partner, the need for self-control before and during intercourse, an awareness that for most people intercourse affords a much higher satisfaction if it is inspired by love and a consciousness of participation in one's partner's happiness. Sexual contact is a means of communication, a way of getting on with a fellow being. Thus the lust one experiences in it—something strictly limited to oneself—can never be the most important factor; it has to give way, if necessary, to considerations of responsibility and respect for one's partner. It should be stressed, however, that there is nothing dishonourable about lust; it is, rather, a great gift of creation, something we must glorify and foster. Real sexual pedagogy should depict lust as a thing of beauty, something to long for; it should fight against any attempt to exalt pain and frustration, even when it is depicted under the seductive guise of "noble sacrifice".

"Sexual education today has to go well beyond the narrow subject of reproduction to include a discussion of sexual feelings and fantasies, pleasures, beliefs, superstitions, and dysfunctions. It must further discuss sexual attitudes in different societies and historical periods, erotic art, sex legislation and, indeed, 'sexual politics'." (Haeberle 1978, 478) This enumeration makes it apparent that very many adults have not yet completed their own sexual education! It should, moreover, correct often harmful misinformation found "in medical and psychiatric textbooks, encyclopaedias, marital guides, police training manuals, catechisms, pastoral letters, and devotional literature. As a matter of fact, even today dangerous sexual misconceptions continue to be spread in certain religious

pamphlets which are sold by the millions at church doors all over the country. Some of these booklets may well have a crippling effect on an unsophisticated young mind. Furthermore, they also often foster prejudice and sexual intolerance. By comparison, most 'pornography' seems relatively harmless." (Haeberle 1978, 481)

It is curious how little our increased knowledge about sex has changed our thinking about sexual activity; it has influenced the pedagogic advice we give our young even less (Breusers 1982, 51).

"Sexual happiness is searched for throughout every individual's lifetime, and influences everyone's ideas of total happiness as a fulfilled human being: sexual frustration is the cause of more human unhappiness than any other single ailment, disability, disease or social circumstance; yet in these last two decades of interplanetary adventure, technological inventiveness, and sub-atomic research, one of the most neglected of all subjects is the sexual education of young people." (Barrington 1981, 13)

But knowledge alone will never be enough. The instruction must be given with personal warmth. It should "also emphasise the emotional aspect of sex and talk about the pleasure that can be part of sexual activity. Indeed, the capacity for such pleasure should be carefully nourished." (Haeberle 1978, 480)

It is disgraceful if children are sacrificed to the sexual passions of adults—a traumatising experience which society is quite justified in trying to prevent. But it is no less scandalous if the budding feelings and desires of children are sacrificed to sexophobia, to the sexual anxieties, frustrations and misinformation of their teachers and those who bring them up. It is an open question whether they really aren't hurt much more badly by the latter. But society refuses to punish those responsible for such abuse; instead it often honours them for their activities, considering them virtuous and beneficial. The total number of children victimised by true molesters is infinitesimal compared to those sexually crippled by their own parents and guardians.

How many boys could profit from a really honest, open and intimate talk with their own fathers! "A great many men, today, would be better and happier individuals had their fathers been friends who had confided their sexual 'sins' and given their growing pre-adolescent and adolescent sons the benefits of their own sexual experiences." (Barrington 1981, 186) Parents who, moved by their own sexophobia, fail to give their children the necessary information, make them vulnerable to possibly unpleasant sexual advances by adults. It is interesting to see how a wider sexual knowledge alters how children react to such encounters. The better informed children are less inclined to be passive: the number of those who resist or reject advances increases, as does the number of those who accept the invitation and participate in the act. "Country youth on the whole is more willing to accept advances, rejects them less often, than

city youth. Farm children learn about sex earlier, by observing it in animals, and so have much more relaxed attitudes about these things than their city peers." (Wegner, 56-57) But what is most important here is that the consequences for a child of sexual relations with an adult depend largely upon that child's being well informed. If he has sound sexual knowledge and participates freely, "there is a strong probability that the child will not be harmed, and may even benefit." (Constantine 1981, 259)

And so it is most deplorable that sex information—if any at all is given by parents—is for the most part restricted to physical functions and biological facts, and no mention is made of its most important aspect: the accompanying feelings. Rounding off the lesson with a horrifying picture of the risks of pregnancy and venereal disease, the parents try to reassure the child by telling him, "You can always come to us if you have questions; you can ask us anything." But the child intuitively perceives the underlying dishonesty: the adult "considers his own sexuality a strictly private affair, yet wants to know all about the child's sexuality. And so sex education becomes in effect sexual control. The adult says 'we will have a completely open talk, we will keep no secrets about sexuality.' What he means is 'the child must tell all; the child must keep back no secrets about his sexuality, but he, the instructor, only has to reveal his own sexuality to the extent he judges it to be pedagogically useful.'" (Kupffer 1978, 114)

In reality, most children are not at ease, frank, free and natural in the presence of their parents (Schérer 1979, 218-219). As soon as the subject of sex is touched upon, they observe the timidity of their fathers and mothers, their parents' evident uneasiness. The son is told he is still too young to engage in sexual activities (Sorensen 1973, 77), but in his body he feels the urge to enjoy the very things his parents are trying to deny him, or dissuade him from. How can one explain to a boy who has just come into puberty that sex is natural, healthy, normal and good—but he cannot have it (Currier, quoted in *Youth Liberation* 1981, 52), because, for him, it is asocial, dangerous, abnormal and bad? His parents tell him to think for himself, be active, inventive, resourceful—but he must do it on *their* terms, adhering to *their* opinions (Morris 1976, 193). And so the well-known generation gap widens between parents and child (Borneman 1978, 110).

Among Sorensen's adolescent subjects, only 16% discussed sex with any frequency with their parents; some said they could discuss it quite well in general terms. But 72% thought even this impossible, and none of their parents told them anything about their own sexual experiences (1973, 73-74). Hass (1979, 166) "asked teenagers: Do you feel you can be open with your parents about sex?" 66% of the boys replied No. To his question (1979, 175), "What

kinds of things about your own sex life do you tell your parents, responses of boys were:

I tell them only what they would approve of.—20%

I tell them almost everything.—9%

I tell them nothing about my sex life.—26%

I only talk in a general way about sex, not specifically about me.—45%

No wonder so many boys try to get their information elsewhere! In most cases, parents would be wise not to inject themselves into their offsprings' sexual lives and simply offer their children the opportunity to broach the subject themselves when they feel so inclined (de Regt 1982, 66).

But there is no question about the real need for more instruction. In 1982 the Amsterdam children's SOS telephone service received some 10,000 calls of which 38% were about sex (de Ruiter 1984, 2). In some French schools boys collect money so that one of them, chosen by lot, can visit a prostitute. "The lucky chosen one has to pay for the night by giving a detailed account to his comrades." (Maffesoli 1983, 15). In the NISSO investigation, 51% of the boys wanted more detailed information about the particular sexual functions. More than 50% confessed that they were strongly preoccupied with sex, and in 9% this preoccupation verged on the obsessive (de Boer 1978, 102, 105, 107). Not less than 47.7% of 15- to 17-year-old males complained that they did not know a single person with whom they could really discuss sexual problems. And they did have problems! No less than 39.1% had discovered in themselves strange sexual desires and wondered how to deal with them (NISSO 1973, 36). "How to conduct one's evolving sexual life is perhaps above all other matters the most important to a boy aged 14 to 16, and certainly to a young man 16 to 21." (Barrington 1981, 83)

This situation is really critical. Bad or inadequate sex education is still at the root of many attempts on one's life (Kerscher 1978, 172), and the suicide rate is higher among Christians with traditional, sex-negative views than among non-believers. (Borneman 1978, 275). In 1977, West Germany registered about 14,000 suicide attempts by school children and adolescent students (Caspar Prospekt 1981). In light of these figures, it is pure hypocrisy for Mr. Tyrmand, preaching against sex instruction in American schools before the United States Congress, to cite "the rewards that come from one's solitary groping for explanations, from one's own handling of the pre-puberty anxieties." (Hearings 1977, 403)

In the 16th Century, it was possible for the great humanist Erasmus of Rotterdam "to write popular texts for children dealing with such topics as sexual intercourse before, in, and outside of marriage, pregnancy, birth, prostitution, aphrodisiacs, castration and venereal disease." (Haeberle 1978, 2) Since that time our culture has fallen far below the wisdom of the Australian

aboriginal (whose society is generally considered to be among the most primitive) for whom "sexual behaviour is not a topic veiled in deliberate obscurity or virtually ignored by the community. Except in the presence of certain tabooed relatives, the physical relations between men and women are spoken of freely, without embarrassment and with obvious pleasure, even in front of children. From an early age, native children are familiar with copulation. Sex is considered a normal, natural, and most important factor in human life. There is no attempt to keep anything about it secret from young persons." (Bettelheim 1962, 64). Sutor (1964, 42) was shocked by the things Chinese fathers said in the presence of their children, so that "young Chinese of from 7 to 8 years of age may be heard talking with consummate knowledge of things most obscene." Bousquet (1953, 107) made precisely the same observation about Moslem children. Adults "don't hesitate to have the most open, even the most obscene, conversations in the presence of immature children of both sexes." A remarkably systematic sex education is common in India where boys of six begin to study in school the *Kamasutra* manual of love (Daniélou 1981, 333). They learn how to categorise men and women according to the size of the male member and the width of the vaginal opening, to consider the different positions of intercourse; they learn how to beguile girls, prepare them for sexual pleasure and engender in both partners the most violent lust (Schmidt 1922).

Where adults fail to provide the wanted information, boys, of course, will seek it from, and discuss it with, their age-mates (de Regt 1982, 54). Even in Sweden, where sex education is part of the school curriculum, Zetterberg (1969, 44) found that 66% of the older generation of males and 58% of the younger had learned about intercourse from their peers. Hertoft (1968, II-22) found that 77.5% of Danish army recruits received their first information from friends, and that over four-fifths of them thought this inadequate. Other investigators put the percentage of boys gaining their knowledge in this fashion at 78%, 85%, 89%, 90% and even 91% (Gagnon 1965, 223; Gebhard 1965, 477). An investigation among French schoolboys and adolescents showed that 71% got their information from other minors, including 47% from girls, 12% from an older brother, the remaining 12% from a sister (Hanry 1977, 205). The chief themes in these instructive conversations were pregnancy (according to Ramsay, 69% of the boys know about this by age 10), intercourse (57% know by age 10) and masturbation (43% know by age 10). Menstruation and venereal disease were less often discussed (Gagnon 1965, 224). Complaints about the inadequacy of information were less about the mechanism of procreation (8% of the French boys wanted to know more about the male organs, 23% about the female organs) than the sensations of lust during intercourse (70% wanted to know more about these in girls, 55% in boys); 86% said that a boy needs very precise information on how best to gain pleasure from his genitals (Hanry 1977, 207-208).

There might be some justification for anger or disgust over the "dirty knowledge" a child might obtain "from the gutter" were it not for the fact that the information given by parents is often much more harmful. While "primitive" people carefully prepare the boy for his adult male sexual task, Western civilisation is content simply to engender anxiety about sex in the boy. The days of Tissot and his lurid descriptions of the fatal consequences of masturbation are not so long past (Bullough 1980, 496, 498). In 1969 a German atlas of sexology gave only one picture of the male member—in a table depicting the effects of incurable venereal disease (Kerscher 1978, 156). The Vatican Congregation for Doctrine in 1976 published a declaration according to which the aim of sexual education was to protect youth "against the many dangers" (Wagner 1978, 168).

A real sexual education, on the other hand, must teach youth "to assert its own sexual needs in a responsible way. A sexual education aiming primarily at suppressing the sexual needs of young people deprives itself of all possible pedagogical influence, because the youngsters subject to it can only gather sexual experience by evading the influence and control of their educators." (Killias 1979, 208-209)

In comparison with what many parents tell their children, the information boys get from their peers is usually less infected with anxiety and fear (Gagnon 1967, 41). It is often primitive, thus well adapted to their own imaginations (Hoffmeyer 1971, I-218).

Kerscher, a sexual pedagogue, gives a good summary (1977, 177): "Children and adolescents should learn that human sexuality, apart from the purpose of procreation in heterosexual intercourse, mainly serves lustful and social functions, arising in various erogenous zones which are more extensive than the usual genital areas, and that it is composed of a multitude of auto-, hetero- and homosexual elements as well as partial impulses of many shapes conditioned by our culture. The lust and social functions of sexuality stress its communicative character. The natural striving for lustful sexual experiences motivates the individual to establish relations with his social environment. A positive sexual education should aim at giving a sound support to this deploying tendency. Therefore even very small children should be involved in communicating as widely as possible, and this should include sexual communication. In so doing the formation of the child's character will not be submerged in the usual tension field of taboos and regulations, which is a matrix for nurturing ambivalent authoritarians. Indoctrinated feelings of shame, sorrow and guilt at realising sexual impulses are the basis of the need to be punished and fixate the sado-masochistic structure of personality."

A sexual education whose only aim is to prepare one for marriage is incomplete and repressive. Quite aside from neglecting, even betraying,

homophile youngsters (a not unsubstantial percentage of youth), it totally fails to deal with young people's reality: the sexual hunger of school-going and working youth. To pass this over in silence means either that we are suppressing this hunger or permitting it to run wild. We have already seen the consequences of suppression; the effects of dissoluteness are no less detrimental (Kentler 1979, 47-48). A boy has to learn that he need not be ashamed of his desire for satisfaction of lust, but at the same time he must realise that the greatest happiness is not obtained by having a maximum number of quick orgasms in a minimum of time. Moreover, one has to learn to respect one's partner, a fellow human being, and treat that partner with consideration, that one can never exploit another's feelings or expose him or her to avoidable disappointments (Kentler 1979, 97, 143). This certainly implies no free rein to impulse. But before a person is able to control his sexual feelings he must first recognise and understand them (Gide 1925, 9).

Daniélou (1981, 334) hits the mark when he writes, "All boys pass through a phase of homosexuality during which they need passionate comradeships and the friendship and advice of an older man, as well as other experiences which go well beyond masturbation but stop short of conception. In Western society a boy cannot discuss his sexual feelings with his family; the family pretends to ignore and condemn his sexuality. The bond he once had with his parents, his brothers, is thus dangerously broken. Only an older friend can guide and advise him, teach him the art of love, shape him into a happy human being, not disgruntled and bitter but flourishing and prepared for life."

A man who is conscious of his responsibility toward the boy, loving him and sexually active with him, is here in an ideal position, because he can not only tell but show. In such a relationship, sexual acts may be relatively unimportant, or decidedly important, or the most important element of all, but they will not be everything. Much more, discussions, common interests, excursions, social togetherness, working and playing together, is added to it. We will have more to say about this later.

338 "I know all about his cares and I understand them. He knows mine, completely." This is what 14-year-old Gerhard said on a radio programme about his 35-year-old friend (*Ikon Netherland*, 21 June 1979)

The boy experiences the way his friend cares about him, is concerned about his relationship with his parents, conflicts with teachers, difficulties with peers, school grades, sporting triumphs, his growth, health, everything which is important to him. The friend is proud of him. Within this general complex of existence their hours of intimacy find their place, times when the man tries to excite the most intense physical pleasure in the naked boy, abandoning himself freely and openly to his passion.

"The aim of sex education should be to indicate the immense possibilities for human fulfilment that sexuality offers." (Rubin, quoted by Nichols 1976, 71). It must convince the boy that it is possible to respect and love someone and at the same time enjoy with that person the most delicious pleasures of sex, that sex and passion, far from degrading the loved one, are the most sincere and elevated homage.

Making use of his wider sexual experience, the man teaches the boy how to utilise to their full his sexual capacities, how to improve his "sexual technique" in order to provide the finest pleasures for himself and his partner.

"Corrupting youth?" Gide exclaimed in surprise when he was accused of doing just that. "As if initiation in lust is in itself corruption! Usually it is quite the opposite. Those who accuse me forget, or rather they don't know, what accompanies those caresses, in what atmosphere of trust, loyalty and noble competition such friendships are born and evolve." (Last 1966, 34)

Just as there are superpotent "sexual athletes" whose sexual appetites and erections return quickly after orgasm, and also sexually less intense individuals needing a longer breathing spell, so there are unusually talented boys who quickly discover the best way to masturbate and the many different tricks to make sex more enjoyable with a partner, and others who lack such talent, are clumsy, need guidance, instruction and practice.

339 An extreme case of this is related by Slob and Piso-Minderman in a Dutch professional journal of medicine. A boy "began masturbating at the age of 15, once or twice a week, without ever being able to obtain orgasm and ejaculation. At 16 he consulted the family doctor about this; the doctor sent him to a specialist for internal diseases. As nothing abnormal could be found, the boy was sent on to a urologist. Examination under anaesthetic (and ten days in hospital!) also found nothing wrong. One year later, with the boy still failing to obtain orgasm, the examination was repeated. This time the urologist sent the young man to an internist, and over the next year and a half the internist and urologist performed a number of medical experiments upon him. Finally, when the patient was 19, a physiologist and a female psychologist were consulted. They discovered that he had almost no knowledge of the biological and physiological aspects of sexuality, and still less of what is experienced in sex. His upbringing had burdened all his sex feelings with strong guilt. After a 45-minute conversation he was sent home with some booklets of sexual instruction and told to return in three weeks. On that occasion he entered the room with a broad grin. 'It went perfectly,' he said. 'I've already done it three times this week—the day before yesterday, yesterday and today again in the shower.' He was asked what he was doing now that he had not done before. 'Oh, nothing special,' he reported, 'but before I didn't dare go on when I started to get all tense and I just stopped rubbing.' " (1982, 1484-1487)

Alayne Yates, a child psychiatrist, advises people to adopt an encouraging attitude toward children about sex. Not only must we accept their developing eroticism and be openly proud of their experiments, but we should also tell a child that he has nice sex organs (West 1981, 253-254). Many boys are worried about whether everything "down

there" is shaped properly and "works right". Books and pictures are little help. Sexual intimacy with an older, experienced friend can bring the necessary assurance and set his fears at rest. Sometimes in uncircumcised boys the foreskin causes trouble with adhesion to the glans, or its opening is too narrow for retraction (phimosis). Adhesion is a normal phenomenon in schoolboys, but separation "takes place gradually and spontaneously as a normal biological process in the course of school life and is concluded at about the age of 17". Phimosis, on the other hand, is a rare condition "and it has a tendency to regress spontaneously; operation is rarely indicated", concluded Oster after 9545 observations of the state of the prepuce in boys aged 6 to 17 years (1968, 202).

- 340 (Continued from 327) One of such rare cases was Max. In spite of frequent masturbation and many attempts at stretching over a period of 10 years, it was nearly impossible for him to retract the skin over his rather big glans. When, at 17, he wanted to perform intercourse with girls, his friend broached the subject with Max's parents and had the boy circumcised. (Personal communication)

The boy-lover can also put to rest any remaining anxieties the boy might have over masturbation. Of course, it is useful to explain to him that the practice is both universal and harmless, but how much more convincing it is if the adult simply says, "I do it, and I like it!"—and better still when he demonstrates how he masturbates himself. The case of the young man who did not know how to masturbate (No. 339) is extraordinary because his ignorance lasted until he was 19, but it is not unusual for a pre-pubertal boy to be frightened at the approach of orgasm and stop rubbing. An older partner can help the boy to overcome this fear, to improve his technique and obtain relief from sexual tension (Langfeldt 1979, 114-115).

To be a good instructor, the boy-lover has to have a sound knowledge of human sexuality, especially the great variability in shape and function of the sexual organs themselves. A boy's questions about the genitals are often original and unpredictable, and the man must know where he can find the right answers. He ought to have books at hand which deal with these matters in a way young people can understand (Nichols 1976, 73). Sometimes the boy's verbalised question hides an unspoken one, and the loving man should try to discover what his young friend really wants to know.

Most boys sharing sexual intimacies with a man are passing through a phase and will later turn mainly or exclusively to girls. Unless it is clear that the boy is mostly drawn to his own sex, the man should prepare him for this. Here the married man, or the man who himself practices heterosexual intercourse, is at an advantage (Eglinton 1964, 36, 84-85, 88-89, 91). The homophile man must teach himself about female sexuality, from the literature if from nowhere else. Later we will discuss some of the activities man and boy can do together which will sharpen the boy's pleasure in both homosexual and heterosexual love.

The boy must learn how to protect a girl from becoming pregnant. It is his responsibility, once he reaches the age when his body is producing viable sperm, to prevent conception. If the girl has taken no precautions against pregnancy, or if she might be a carrier of a sexually transmitted disease, he should wear a condom. The man should demonstrate how this is put on. Perhaps they should have sex together, in one form or another, with the boy so equipped.

Most important of all—and this cannot be overstressed—is that the man's sexual contacts with the boy must proceed with love and tenderness, qualities which cannot simply be claimed but must be shown.

- 341 Robert, a 15-year-old Dutch boy present at a football match, struck up a conversation with a 40-year-old spectator. He liked the man and agreed to go to the man's home after the game was over. He intuitively felt that there was something special about the man's attention to him, and he was worldly enough to realise this had to do with sex.

Now it happened that for the past two years Robert had been having sexual contacts with girls, but his idea of sex was to get a girl on her back, lay down on her, put his cock inside, shove it back and forth until he came—and that was all! Maybe, he thought, this man wanted to do the same thing to him—use his body to get off on. Well, he was curious; there was nothing wrong with doing it one time, just to see what it would be like.

They did have sex that afternoon, but what happened when they united their naked bodies came as quite a revelation to Robert. The tenderness, the attention the man paid to his feelings and well-being, the reverence he showed as he fondled the boy's genitals, the refined manner in which he worked the boy's feelings up toward climax—all of this was like the discovery of a new world. Six months later Robert spoke about this on a radio programme about paedophilia. He said, "My feelings are completely heterosexual, and after one or two years of this friendship I'll have grown too old for it and I will certainly start doing this again with girls. But I'll approach them in a very different way than I did before. Then I was just after my own pleasure; I got it roughly and brutally. My friend has taught me how much finer sex can be when you do it with love and consideration."

The essential theme of sex education is stressed here. But sex education is doomed if it is dispensed by people burdened with sexual taboos which make lust indecent, bestial, beneath human dignity. A man can only ennoble a boy's sexual life if he is glad the boy *has* a sexual life.

How to Talk About Sex

But although deeds are important, so is speech. In sex therapy, in popular magazines, one can witness time and again the misery of people who cannot explain to their partners what they really want in bed. The sexual pathology of our culture makes it impossible for many people to talk with their partners about their sexual tastes with the openness they would about their tastes in food. A

man who has no hesitation saying he likes eggs boiled better than fried might be far too shy to tell his lover to hold his penis more firmly and rub it faster.

It is very difficult to discuss any subject without knowing the vocabulary. In sex, most people don't know the words, so they remain silent. Males seem to have learned better than females how to talk about their sexual organs—perhaps because their genitals are more prominent and their functioning more visible. Nevertheless, in the Gonado research male subjects were asked whether, when engaged in intercourse, they told their female partners what they could do to please them most. Only 37.1% answered positively without any reservation: they talked about it before, during and after sexual intimacy. Another 15.8% were only able to do so if the relationship was a lasting one and the two had become very intimate. And so together not more than 53%. All the others kept silent: they did what the woman liked (25.3%), or what they liked best themselves (19.6), while 3% said they were too inhibited to discuss sex at all (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 157-158). Masters & Johnson (1980, 221, 224, 227) explained the higher level of personal interaction they observed during homosexual intercourse by the fact that there was much more verbal communication between the partners.

We are talking about experienced adult males. With boys the situation is much worse. In the NISSO investigation, only 6.2% of the 15- to 17-year-olds (and 21% of the 18- to 21-year-olds) said they discussed their feelings with their girl-friends during petting and intercourse; 25.1% (and 35.9%) did this under exceptional circumstances (1973, 29).

Turning around Goethe's famous dictum in *Faust*, we could say that, where notions fail, the right word does *not* present itself. Sensations for which one has no name tend to make people uncertain, give birth to anxiety. "In the years of maturation, the obscurity of the meaning of sex, and the impossibility of giving a name to sexual emotions, interfere with the evolution of knowledge and the understanding of sexual experiences, the anxiety-free acceptance and enjoyment of sexual feelings, the sexual approach to partners and the communication with them about it." It is just because this communication is defective that "no sexual capacities can be developed; the partners don't know how to arouse pleasure in themselves and in others." (Frenken 1976, 23, 78)

Not knowing how to put their experiences into words makes children more vulnerable to sexual criminality. After being truly molested, threatened or raped, they are frequently unable to tell their parents exactly what happened, simply because they don't know the relevant words (Fisch 1971, 156; Geiser 1979, 49; Hearings 1977, 412; Howell 1981, 87; Wegner 1953, 66).

We need words! Our forebears who shaped our languages were sexually less inhibited. In the age of Erasmus, a woman could still address an adolescent not just with "my boy" but with "my cock" without being indecent (van Ussel

1968, 54), and the great humanist himself used the common terms in a paper on sexual pleasure dedicated to his six-year-old godchild (van Emde Boas 1976, 83). In those days people possessed, and used, clear, unambiguous words to describe the sexual organs and their functions. In addition, language displayed a playful pleasure in sexual metaphor and simile. Language problems only arose later, during a period hostile to sex, when sex became dirty and bestial; then the plain expressions were eclipsed and have ever since been called "vulgar".

People took refuge in Latin, the language of the learned. It now became more "decent" to speak about the "penis", the "vagina", "copulation" and "coitus". This, of course, has nothing whatever to do with decency. No one would expect a well brought up child to say "oculus" instead of "eye" (Kentler 1970, 197). During the prudish Victorian Age the "better people" manufactured an endless supply of new "decent" expressions (Langfeldt 1981, 108).

Latin sexual euphemism is just another symptom of sexophobia and an attempt to indoctrinate children against sex. It separates personal emotions and experiences from a subject which is seemingly devoid of value (Baurmann 1983, 47). If teachers vigilantly insist that children always say "penis" or "member", never "cock" or "prick", always "vulva", never "cunt", it suggests to the children that there is a very unchildish difference between proper and dirty sexuality, and this is definitely harmful. The language taught at school, moreover, may be far removed from the language quite a number of parents use at home, and this would increase the children's feelings of linguistic insecurity." (Albrecht-Désirat 1978, 65). The anger of his parents and teachers when he uses a "dirty" word shows the child that sex itself is dirty (Gundersen 1981, 49).

Latin, moreover, is in our day an elitist language, and its use in sexuality tends to limit discussion to educated adults, barring children and "the people". Unfortunately this miserable practice is now so universal in our culture that no scientist or publisher of serious treatises on the subject can permit himself to use the better, simpler words which everyone would understand (Borneman 1978, 491; Nichols 1976, 88; O'Carroll 1980, 11). "The ancient and simple words, which in England a great poet like Chaucer could still use rightly and naturally (...) are unquestionably the best, and, in their origin, the most dignified and expressive words." (Ellis 1913, VI-51). Clemens of Alexandria, a Doctor of the Church (150-216), wisely noted that "We should not be ashamed to name what God has not been ashamed to create." (Burton 1963, 51). Gradually a more liberal practice is creeping into our daily papers, radio and television, and in court many judges are aware of the advantages of addressing the accused and witnesses in their own language. But in schools teachers generally ignore "that it is the language of the gutter that the pupils understand. (...) Educators don't seem to appreciate that this language is much more subtle than the

euphemistic one, especially in sex, just because its intention is erotic. Writers realise this and use it in their literature, so demonstrating an understanding teachers lack." (Mende & Dobrovich 1971, 40)

There are exceptions. One Rotterdam elementary school teacher asked his 11- and 12-year-old pupils in a sex education class whether they preferred the "scientific" or the "vulgar" terms. 70% of them voted for the expressions they used when talking to each other (Personal communication). Even more convincing were the findings of an investigation among 52 Copenhagen school boys (Kristensen 1971, 580):

"Do you think it normal for a teacher giving sexual instruction to use the Danish words?" 41 answered Yes; 1 No, and 10 had no preference.

"Do you think it normal for a teacher to use Latin words?" 2 answered Yes, 39 No, and 11 had no preference.

"Do you normally use Danish words yourself?" 48 answered Yes, none answered No and 4 did not know.

"Do you normally use Latin words yourself?" 3 answered Yes, 44 No, and 5 did not know.

Adults should take to heart the words of Montaigne (III, 5): "What has the genital act done to man, an act so natural, necessary and just, that they dare not speak of it openly, and exclude serious and regular expressions? We bravely say KILL, UNROBE, BETRAY, and THAT only between the teeth. Does that mean that the less we say in words the more there is in our thoughts?" (quoted by Sutor 1964, 186)

If we let the child use his own language he will, of course, ask his questions and discuss his problems much more easily.

The boy-lover is best advised to follow the course of the Rotterdam teacher: let his young friend make the decision about the terminology they will use. Thus he can navigate between the Scylla of shocking the boy unused to the vulgar and the Charibdis of sounding pedantic to the boy unfamiliar with the scientific. What is most important is to make the boy relaxed talking about his genitals, his erections, his ejaculations and sperm, if any, his orgasms, his lustful sensations and desires and fantasies, free of shame and inhibition. Later in life he will profit greatly from this in his intimacy with a girl, or a boy, and it is also of considerable pedagogical value. But the boy-lover can only do this effectively if he has solved his own sexual problems. Only then can he communicate his sexual knowledge without causing damage. "Few people are capable of discussing the facts of intimacy without embarrassment. Embarrassment leads to a flight into foreign terminology which, in turn, creates an atmosphere of oppression, more frustrating than biased sexual education." (Ostermeyer 1978, 125)

Monique Möller was impressed with the openness of sexual discussion between men and boys who had formed relationships with one another (1983, 59). In my own observation of long-lasting man-boy couples, I have noted how far, thanks to good guidance, the boys had progressed in the frank discussion of sex. When I questioned them they didn't hesitate to give me, talking quite seriously, all the particulars about what they longed for, and what specifically they did together. These matters they found very interesting, but to be talked about with inner composure. The adult who has been brought up in sexual repression can only envy such a youth for his freedom.

"What is sexuality? Boys in grade school know more about it than their teachers—they just don't know the foreign words." (Nenning, quoted by Hohmann 1980, 32-33)

Freedom from Shame

Shamelessness is inconsiderate provocation with the intent to shock. Quite different, and greatly to be desired, is the serenity and self-assurance that comes with freedom from shame. In his *Laws*, Plato, with his aversion to physical pleasure (later copied by the Christians), approves of man's shame about his sexual life; man conceals it "in order that its inevitable reduction will then diminish the power of sexual desire over us." (Dover 1978, 167) In more recent years Western culture added shame about nakedness—something quite new, since it was unknown in the Classical world and during the Middle Ages. Ultimately shame was even extended to sexual conversations.

It is no accident that most sex education books suggest that children and adolescents *not* discuss sex with their age-mates. Education to shame, common in most Western lands, here finds its ultimate crowning glory: learning that they must feel shame in talking to others, the growing boy is not only cut off from sexual activity, but also from sexual communication, on the most basic verbal level, with his peers. Boys growing up must remain sexually isolated to keep them subject to adult authority and prevent them from taking their sexual evolution into their own hands in the society of their age-mates." (Kentler 1970, 93-94, 138)

During the Middle Ages, and even for some centuries thereafter, nakedness "was a condition in no way associated with embarrassment or even shame. People, in general, not only slept naked in the common living room/bedroom area, where servants slept next to the family as well, but went naked in the bath-houses and similar establishments, men, women and children alike." (Kunert 1978, 38) Until the 19th Century, people went to bed clad only in a bonnet. Women commonly walked on the street on their way to the bath-house with the upper part of their bodies bare; men often went there completely naked

(Dasberg 1975, 35). "In the Twelfth Century the Abbot of Harvengh in Flanders complained that in the summer people went about the streets of the town, on their ordinary business, in a state of entire nakedness, without even a loincloth," (Cleugh 1963, 302) and in the same region peasants worked naked in the fields. "By 1315 processions of naked men, but not women, had grown quite common in Paris." (Cleugh 1963, 52) Naked foot races for both sexes formed part of the festival in Lucca (Italy) in 1325 (Cleugh 1963, 42). When a sovereign made his solemn entry into a city, it was not unusual that he be welcomed at the gate by a show of naked girls and adolescent boys. Paris and Vienna did this time and again during the 15th Century, Antwerp as late as 1520 with the entrance of Charles V (Borneman 1978, 1131; Cleugh 1963 42-43; Bullough 1976, 406). At the same time, during Carnival in the French city of Sens, processions carried through the streets "naked men who did not cover their genitals, making obscene gestures with their bodies", causing much hilarity (Foral 1981, 113). There was no conflict then between Christianity and nudity. Even in 1589 there were pious processions of over one thousand naked men, women and boys in Paris (Armand 1931, 259-260). In ecclesiastical mystery plays Adam and Eve always appeared naked on the stage; this tradition persisted in rural England as late as 1750 (Cleugh 1963, 49). In passion plays Jesus was crucified naked, just as in Roman times. There were even stories of a young man playing Christ spotting among the spectators his girl-friend and getting such a conspicuous erection that she had to withdraw (Fuchs 1909, I-480, Erg. 187-188).

It took, then, a long time before Christendom acquired the same aversion to nudity as Islam. In 1555 the Pope ordered Michelangelo's famous Sistine Chapel paintings destroyed because figures in them were naked. Only a storm of protest saved this immortal art, but one of Michelangelo's pupils had to paint breeches on the heavenly hosts (Bullough 1976, 442). Soon after, the Church started a crusade against all bathing (Borneman 1978, 637); it was better to be dirty than damned. As the Church's influence waned, nudity reappeared: in 1793 boys and girls between 7 and 15 years of age were playing naked in the parks of Paris (Armand 1931, 346).

Islamic aversion to nudity appears not in the Koran but in the Doctors (Bousquet 1953, 71; Smith 1981, 80), but despite their advice, boys and men traditionally went naked together in the hammams, as Abu Nuwas celebrated (Wagner 1965, 180):

*In the bath you can see what else is covered by pants.
Yes, take a look—and don't turn away!*

Christian teachers are traditionally against nude bathing: in some Roman Catholic boarding schools the children had to wear shirts even when they were

alone in the bathroom to prevent them from making unchaste glances at their own bodies. Of course it was a scandal if school children were allowed to see *each other* unclothed. We mentioned already the prelate from Munich who wrote in 1965 that "the spirit of love" was violated much less by the murderous battles in Vietnam than by the action of German schoolteachers making their pupils shower naked in each other's presence. It is well to recall that Hitler, too, was opposed to nude bathing (Langfeldt 1981, 107).

Once again we see the paradox: what people want to avoid they unwittingly foster. "The determination to conceal and deny the genitals usually implies preoccupation, even obsession with them." (Walters 1979, 85) In a repressive culture, children are much more curious about one another's covered parts (Langfeldt 1981, 107).

The tragedy is that those who are so bashful about nudity have probably never learned to love their own bodies, thus themselves. Loving oneself is not only a precondition for loving one's neighbour, and a yardstick for it, but also for acceptance of sexuality. Most people who abhor their bodies are filled with aggression against sex (van der Steen 1980, 443; Plack 1967, 232).

In ancient Sparta, in accordance with customs attributed to Lykourgos, naked boys and girls participated in processions on festive occasions, and in the presence of adolescent spectators. Thus "nudity became an innocent habit and led to young people competing with one another in acquiring a good physical build." (Plutarch: Lycurgus cap. 14)

Ignaz Kerscher, David Kubitzek and Christa Schütz, social pedagogues, advised (1978, 178-180): "Children and adolescents should be allowed to move about dressed or undressed without being taught untenable ideas about an inborn sense of shame. The aim should be for them to accept their own bodies, their own corporal beings, in their own way, and to enjoy them. We should strive for a familiarity with the human body, its functions and its reactions. An unconcerned contemplation of the body and its sensitivity with respect to lust, including stimulation of the genitals to obtain a conscious capacity for orgasm, will make sexual experiences possible." These authors also advocate watching the body's excretory functions with an attitude devoid of pathological, irrational reactions of disgust and compulsive cleanliness.

"The usual education to shame not only forces sexuality underground, it also erects a communication barrier between adults and children. An education with a positive attitude toward sexuality, on the other hand, makes communication regarding sexual events and experiences possible. Since the child need not be frightened or ashamed, his sexual evolution remains pedagogically accessible and, to assimilate these experiences, he can make use of adult assistance whenever he wishes." (Kentler 1970, 138)

An enquiry in 1970 among 599 Bremen school children largely confirmed this thesis. Half of both the boys and the girls wanted to cultivate nudism; 57% were in favour of boys and girls showering together. Reasons they gave included, "Because then boys get to know about girls' sex organs, and vice versa;" "because in doing that you get rid of inhibitions toward the opposite sex"; "because you learn to move around relaxed with the opposite sex"; "because afterwards you feel less shame and more understanding"; "because then you can discuss such things better, too"; "because during puberty it could give you more confidence when you see how the bodies of the others of your sex are changing." (Plehn 1970, 326-327)

The practice of nudism is its best propaganda. In 1968, before the establishment of nudist beaches, only 17% of the Dutch population thought it acceptable. Thirteen years later, after the introduction of such beaches, the percentage had risen to 59% (Tielman 1982, 227).

In a boy's up-bringing, nudity has two great advantages: it tends to lessen the sort of sexual curiosity that might become obsessional; and it will help quiet his sexual inhibitions (Winkel 1972, 35). He will thus be more sexually liberated and, since parents with positive feelings about nudity tend to discuss sex more openly and positively, too, he will not be tormented so much by anxiety and guilt (Marinkelle 1976, 50). If a boy is traumatised by seeing a naked body, this only shows that he has had some negative experiences, and he should be helped to get over them; if this isn't done, it may sooner or later seriously hamper his sexual evolution (Gagnon 1965, 228).

The covering of genitals has many important ramifications. "In societies where there is unlimited nudity, no one is keenly interested in looking at the freely available anatomy. On the other hand, in a society such as ours in which certain body parts are proscribed, sexual curiosity is aroused about just those parts." (Walters 1978, 11, quoting Stoller). A boy growing up in a Papuan tribe where women wear grass skirts was told during the course of puberty rites about legendary women, somewhat like the Amazons, who went about naked. "When I first heard the big man tell me this story, I was only an initiate, and my penis it grew very, very hard." (Herdt 1981, 353) There are cultures where genital exposure is considered so essential that even on ceremonial occasions when clothing is obligatory, artificial sex organs are attached to the dress (Scott 1970, 225).

The custom of nudity should in no way be identified with barbarism. In India, for example, it is synonymous with liberty, virtue, truth and sanctity, and naked holy men commonly walk the streets. The ancient Greeks imputed magic and holy power to nakedness: to be better united with nature, the farmer should be naked when he sowed his fields, and reaped them at harvest time (Daniélou 1979, 69-70). "In life as in art, nudity is the sign of Greek civilisation." The

Greeks were "proud of the fact that they exercised and competed naked. (...) "Temple sculpture often pairs a struggle between Lapiths and centaurs with a battle of Greeks and Amazons. In each case, the heroically naked Greeks triumph over un-natural, un-Greek barbarians." Curiously enough "the Greeks may have been totally unembarrassed by the naked male body, but they could be very prudish and evasive about the female." (Walters 1978, 40-43) Nudity was a symbol of superiority.

The Greeks perfectly illustrate the twin advantages of nudity. There was on the one hand no obsessive curiosity about the male genitalia, openly to be seen on many occasions, and on the other hand no sexual inhibition. "Actually the Greek lust for nudity was a completely sexual lust, in the heterosexuals and homosexuals of both genders." (Borneman 1978, 995) During their festivals, acrobats performed their tricks naked. At a symposium described by Xenophon where Socrates was present a naked boy danced, and the philosopher observed how every part of the boy's body participated in his movements, and so he appeared even more beautiful than he was at rest. Vase paintings show such dancing boys with erections, proving the strong erotic element of the activity (Foral 1981, 48, 50). Things deteriorated with the Romans, "a coarser-grained people than the Greeks and in our narrow modern sense more 'moral'. (...) Nudity to them was merely a licentious indulgence, to be treated with contempt even when it was enjoyed." The crowd claimed as its right that actors should play naked on the stage, but the Romans, however eager they were to see them thus, "felt nothing but disdain for the performers." (Ellis 1913, VI - 96)

The Romans were wrong, the Greek right. Many a boy-lover has seen the striking change that can come over a boy when he strips off his clothes. Take, for example, a coarse, impertinent, foul-mouth street boy: the moment he casts aside his last piece of clothing he is another being: calm, dignified. He has suddenly become tender and affectionate. But once his clothes are back on, all this is gone, his feeling of vulnerability has disappeared.

And so it is wise to bring up a boy to be shame-free of nakedness—or, better said, to educate him back into it. Among 226 Dutch 15- to 17-year-old boys, 35% thought it "normal" to be seen naked after swimming, etc.; another 35%, however, did not like this, and 30% were uncertain. Among the 18- to 21-year-olds timidity was less: 49% thought it normal, 30% disagreeable (de Boer 1978, E - 2 - 7).

Nudity poses more of a problem for boys than for girls, since their genitals are more conspicuous and have their own mute, but even more conspicuous way of expressing themselves: the erection (Langfeldt 1981, 108). At nudist beaches and on nude days at swimming pools, boys during the pubertal years of rapid genital growth, when their penises are suddenly much more petulant tend to be under-represented (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 192, 203), afraid as they are

of embarrassing and uncontrollable erections. Being a slow developer may also be a factor here:

- 342 David grew up in a nudist family. When he was 12, he "became disenchanted and disinterested with nudism. (...) He went through a time when it was embarrassing for him to be nude in front of others. The most dominant factor he says in that reluctance was physical changes he was going through at the time. He matured late and was small in stature. It was more the lack of physical maturation than actually being nude: he was ashamed of his size and his total absence of pubic hair since the other boys his age were much further developed than he." (Smith 1981, 51)

Smith cites another example (1981, 32) and wisely recommends that a child not be forced to go about naked. "Most kids will want to do what their parents do anyway, but force them into it and there will be a problem." (1981, 30). David's problem for the moment is a difficult one to solve, but if his concern is only over getting an erection, then it should be explained to him that this is only a very natural occurrence over which he should feel no shame. And, especially in pre-puberty, it need not always have an erotic significance. But even if it does, and this is more and more the case in and after puberty (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 218), it only "expresses in an unmistakable way an enormous and at the same time helpless tenderness", the "desire for unification. The erection shows one's preparedness to integrate oneself into the other." (Linschoten 1953, 104, 116) This desire to show tenderness, to receive tenderness, is a positive, beautiful thing, and certainly one shouldn't be ashamed of it.

But in the NISSO investigation, only one boy in three said he felt no need to conceal his erections when they occurred. "Another third felt they had to hide them." (de Boer 1978, 54)

Peyrefitte made a profound study of Alexander and his times preparatory to writing his massive trilogy of historical novels about the great Macedonian conqueror. In one of them (1977, 371) he depicts Aristotle musing that it was a symptom of moral decadence when the naked boys dancing at the festival of Diana used shields to cover their genitals. In former time, he said, they didn't do that at all; then they felt no shame because they were innocent. Rousseau had a somewhat similar view: "Feelings of shame arise at the same time as the knowledge of evil. (...) He who blushes is already guilty. True innocence knows no shame." (Quoted by Aron & Kempf 1978, 236)

When this lack of shame is lost, however, it can sometimes be regained.

- 343 In the "Ecole en Bateau" its pedagogical value was demonstrated. "This time it was Pierre-Michel who took the initiative. One morning we found him running around the decks with a paper fig leaf attached to his penis, for a joke. The younger boys and the adults were openly amused and immediately got rid of their own clothes. But the

bigger boys hesitated. It was curious to see the make-up of two groups: the naked and the dressed. And it was a pity, because this could so easily lead to divisiveness, as other characteristics began to separate the two groups. It was the dressed who smoked, who had their ears up against their transistor sets, who clung to the habits of the milieu from which they came—those who tended to insulate themselves from the new world in which they were invited to develop themselves. They distrusted the adults who accompanied them, talked conspiratorially behind their backs. They only worked when the adults were present; as soon as the grown-ups went away they loafed around and tried to dominate the younger boys—a common pattern in grammar schools. They were deeply ingrained in this and quite unable to free themselves of it." But sometimes some boy does, and then the link with nudity becomes apparent. Michel was a clumsy, pimpled boy, at first very aggressive to the others. Gradually, however, he began to distance himself from his background. "It was in Sardinia that he undressed for the first time. This was promising, even if it wasn't immediately followed by any radical changes. (...) By the time we reached Southern Tunisia, after some months aboard ship, his pimples were gone and he was considerably less clumsy. Then the sun came to his aid. Michel now undressed regularly, and even ventured to go about with an erection—that is, simply, with an organ of sex. He discovered he had one and was no longer ashamed of it." (Kameneff 1979, 41, 100)

"Children and adolescents should accept sexuality as an important field of individual and social experience and expression. They should recognise the responsibility demanded by the social character of sexuality, accept their own responsibility and act accordingly." (Kerscher, Kubitzek & Schütz 1978, 181) But we will never succeed in bringing up a youngster to respect sexuality and the sexual organs if they are concealed as something dirty, shameful, indecent and forbidden.

The Cult of the Phallus

It is interesting to compare our attitude toward the male member today with that of many other cultures where it is venerated as symbol of procreation and fertility. As we have seen, with boys and young men naked at sport and play, the Greeks looked openly at their genitals. In their language there were special words for a spontaneous erection, a very strong erection (such as with the strength of "three rams!"), for an erection brought on by rubbing, for the baring of the glans when the foreskin is withdrawn, for a large penis, for a beautiful penis, and many more (Borneman 1978, 507-508). Their certainty that the male member would attract the attention of everyone around led to its use, or at least of its image, in warding off "the evil eye". The Romans took over this superstition (Borneman 1978, 37). Children wore bronze phalluses on necklaces around their necks to protect them from evil spirits. A baker's shop in Pompeii had a phallus as signboard. There is also in Pompeii a painting in the entrance of a home of a naked man with an enormous phallus, presumably to ward off

evil. Elsewhere the phallus served as a signpost pointing to the bath-house. The male member was not shameful, as Christian writers soon would make it, but an object to inspire feelings of respect, awe and even pious adoration (Bullough 1976, 100).

Gigantic stone phalluses rising out of gigantic stone testicles decorated the altar of Dionysos on the island of Delos (van der Heyden 1958, 67). The phallus played its part in religious ritual. Dionysos (Bacchus) was the creator of all things, the father of other gods. "In many cases it would appear that instead of a figure of a male with a huge phallus, a living man substituted himself for the god. Such men were stark naked and were usually markedly lascivious. They were highly honoured by the people." (Scott 1970, 155) The Roman emperor Commodus nominated a "donkey-man" (so called for his large genitals) to be the Priest of Hercules (Borneman 1978, 618).

344 Peyrefitte, having studied the period, describes in one of his novels a festival in which boys carry sticks with enormous phalluses attached. They sing, "May the god give, so mine can grow like this!" A beautiful naked adolescent stands on a cart, his penis proudly erect. On both sides of him small boys are tickling his penis with twigs in order to keep it excited. Later, all boys undress and dance on inflated wine-skins. The spectators laugh when the boys fall down, assuming obscene positions. Finally, donkeys and stallions are tickled to erection and female asses and mares in heat are brought in. The audience watches their mating, becoming highly aroused (1977, 340-341).

For, in addition to its ability to inspire awe, the male member was also seen as capable of provoking hilarity. In the Greek comedies the actors were often equipped with large leather phalluses with red heads—"to amuse the young ones," as Peyrefitte has Aristophanes observe (1977, 371).

The Greeks venerated a special god of the erected phallus, Priapus, whose sanctuary was in Lampsakos. In one of Peyrefitte's novels, Priapus is praised by his cult members as "the straight one", "he with the nice balls", "producer of life", "vagina-filler", "the spurting one" (1981, 376). Peyrefitte paints a nice picture of a cult ritual taking place in a Macedonian cave. Four naked adolescents, functioning as priests, excite each other, in pairs, with hand and mouth, until they all are erect. With the faithful looking on, two of the priests come up behind the other two, insert their penises, grasp and rub the penises of the boys in front of them, until all four, shouting triumphantly "Io, Io, Priapus! Priapus!" they emit their sperm (1977, 562-563).

Nearly all peoples had their phallic cult. With the Egyptians it was the god Mende, or Min, whose member was always shown erect. The Germans had their Frey, or Freyr: "He was usually portrayed with an exaggerated phallus and associated with stallions." (Bullough 1976, 350, Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 66; Morris 1976, 88). We can still observe the veneration of the "lingam" in Hindu

and Buddhist temples: a stone phallus, often united with the "yoni", the female principle. During ceremonies, the priest pours milk over the glans. In Bangkok, in one of the Buddhist temples, I saw a very large phallus which worshippers venerated by sticking onto it pieces of gold leaf.

Siva is the Indian god of the erection. Peyrefitte (1981, 269) tells the story of a monk who knocked at Siva's door while he was making love to his wife. The god opened the door, and when the monk saw the god's condition he exclaimed, "May it always stand so straight in your worshippers!"

Even Christendom had its saints and heroes of the erected penis. St. Photinus was appealed to, among others, by sterile women. It was only gradually that he disappeared from the church calendar (Dulaure 1924, 167-176). In Scotland in 1282 a vicar was reprimanded for leading a dance "round an idol provided with a huge phallus, which had been set up in the churchyard." (Cleugh 1963, 109). In the Renaissance many painters accentuated the genitals in their depictions of Christ, as evidence of his humanity, and the Dutch artist Maerten van Heemskerk even painted, around 1530, a Christ with a very visible erection (Rykens 1984, 16).

Armour in the age of chivalry, and clothing in the 17th Century, accentuated the male genitals. The cod piece, a large recess in front of the trousers, often of a different material in vividly contrasting colours, mimicked a constant and spectacular erection (Bullough 1976, 439; Smith 1981, 75; Walters 1979, 165). Dress of the tribal men of Papua New Guinea today includes conspicuous tubes into which their penises are inserted, supported at the angle of erection.

Paralleling this cult of erection is the veneration of male potency as a prodigious gift of nature. The Greek sculptors turned out numberless plates and vases depicting satyrs with long, imposing phalluses (Walters 1979, 57). Plato saw the male genitals as independent beings, eager for mating and trying to subdue everything to their ferocious desire (Koch-Harnack 1983, 187). Although Christian saints may be free from such temptations, or terrified of them, in the Muslim world Mohammed's extraordinary capacities in the sexual field is considered proof of his closeness to Allah. A man who, like the Caliph Harun-al-Raschid, dies during intercourse, is a hero of love. The wet dream, to the Christians a "pollution", among the Arabs is "not held shameful but commendable" (Bullough 1976, 207, 220). A man may actually be celebrated for his enormous potency as "abu zeggzeg" (father of thrusts). Hindus venerate the sexual athlete as "Pounder" (Simons 1977, 88-89).

Shame

After this excursion to other cultures, where I have tried to show that the prudishness of ours is the exception rather than the rule, we can conclude that

openness toward sexuality is a rather general social trait wherever irrational taboos do not darken its existence. There is, however, another rather general social trait, and that is to conceal sexual activities from others, to cover the genitals. This, too, is rooted in human nature. We must understand this seeming paradox in order to judge it.

Man is a great imitator; many of his acts are infectious. If he laughs, others laugh; if he weeps he makes us cry. When we see a man yawn, we start to yawn, too; if he drinks, we grow thirsty—and the spectacle of sexual intercourse excites our sexual appetite.

But we can experience being so stimulated in different ways. If we feel hostile toward sex, for the moment, or even generally, the excitement will be disagreeable, in extreme cases even loathsome. During times of rampant sexophobia, experts have tried to explain sexual shame by saying it is caused by fear of provoking disgust (Ellis 1913, I - 48-49). But where sex is positively regarded, the stimulation is felt to be agreeable, something to seek and enjoy.

Having discovered the capacity of his body for pleasure, man wants to repeat the experience. There is no such thing as an abstract sexual impulse which compels him to some sexual act. It is man himself who produces, within himself, the excitement, the tension, which he resolves through orgasm. When we are inclined to sex we excite ourselves (Everaerd 1980, 253). Observing the sexual activity of other persons, in image or in reality, helps him do this.

And so the sight of a beautiful naked body is agreeable precisely because it is sexually exciting. Our concept of ideal beauty is largely determined by what stimulates us sexually. Erotic texts, pictures, movies, strip-teases and live sex shows are enjoyable for this very reason.

Whatever is clearly associated with sex is stimulating. Even boys who are exclusively attracted to girls may find themselves aroused when they see one of their comrades bearing an erect penis—and this might very well be one of the causative factors in group masturbation. Often boys start this common activity by comparing penises to see whose is the largest (Langfeldt 1981, 110).

This pleasant titillation is not without its problems and risks. Where another person is used to create sexual arousal, it is a sort of appropriation, a conquest, leading to envy.

345 A 15-year-old boy told me he was insanely jealous of his best friend when he saw him emerging with a girl from the bushes of the city park and realised, from what he read in their faces, that they had just "done it."

Jealousy and sexual excitement, experienced at the same time in such a situation, can easily lead to aggression.

346 In his novel *Duke*, Hal Ellson tells the story of a 15-year-old New York boy. He is the undisputed leader of his gang. He decides to set up a brothel for young people in a deserted building. Willing girls are soon found, and with them they arrange everything: every room has a mattress on the floor, and a candle, and a bar with drinks, etc. There is an opening party. Duke sets the tone, and the example, by going off with the nicest girl, actually a young woman of 22, whom he had been coveting for months already. Sweating in excitement, melting at the touch of her soft skin, he enters her, is working hard to obtain his climax, when a young man breaks into the room, pulls Duke off the girl and takes his place. The man is strong as an ox, and Duke is powerless to do anything about it. He has to leave, deeply humiliated. A little later, when the girl comes out, he insults her, and asks her whom she likes best. "He is 20, you are just a kid," she says (Ellson, 186-187).

It is not just the rival, the sexual aggressor, we must be wary of during the act. Masters & Johnson, of whose investigation we will have more to say later, observed hundreds of males engaged in sex, and the researchers confirmed the well-known fact that the tempestuous excitement at the approach of orgasm deeply impairs sensory acuity: touch, even pain, are barely perceived (1966, 135; Ellis 1914, V - 167; Frenken 1980, 92-93; Hirschfeld 1928, II - 241; Kinsey 1952, 613-617, 637; Reich 1942, 83; van der Velde 1926, 246-247). Many men and boys are deaf to shouting, shut their eyes spasmodically or acquire a wide-eyed, vacuous stare. Whatever the senses perceive doesn't penetrate into consciousness, which is entirely preoccupied with the sensations radiating from the penis. At that moment he might as well be unconscious. When the male, prostrate upon his partner, is playing "the beast with two backs", his back is to the enemy world. He is vulnerable, defenceless to attack.

It stands to reason, therefore, that man has always preferred to couple in a place where he might not be observed (Ellis 1913, I - 40). Fathers taught this to their sons; it became a custom; good manners turned into good morals; eventually it was perceived as immoral to behave otherwise. In this connection it is salutary to compare this with another special form of modesty observable among some primitive peoples: where food is scarce, it is indecent to eat in public (Ellis 1913, I - 48).

In civilised man, the sense of modesty can be based upon a very high conception of love and intimacy. Not so in those hostile to sex, in whom modesty is only shame over something they think dirty and bestial. But to many people with quite positive views on sex, love-making seems such a sublime and sacred act that it calls for concealment from the eyes of others, so as to keep it for the two partners themselves alone, in deepest intimacy. One has to respect this outlook, but one cannot respect any attempt to impose it upon others as the one and only true morality. For there are people, equally convinced that sex is sublime and sacred, who are happy to share the joys of their nudity and their ecstasy with a wider circle. It is the nature of joy that it

will make one person silent and calm, another cheerful and exuberant. Everyone must be allowed to enjoy it in his own way!

Shame and modesty are in no way spontaneous. It is reasonable to conceal defecation: its product is useless, stinking and defiling. But, just as we dine in company, drink in company, enjoy music and dance in company, pursue sports in company, why shouldn't we have our sexual pleasure in company too? (Borneman 1978, 658). Plato as an old man, now averse to lust, could find no other argument for concealing sex than the tradition and unwritten laws proscribing that "such things must be done only in secrecy." (Nomoi 841, A - B) The small child knows no shame; he only acquires modesty through instruction. His original impulses are quite the contrary (Borneman 1978, 1241). He enjoys showing his nudity and especially his genitals (Freud 1920, 64). There are some primitive peoples who are completely lacking in shame about nudity; in fact they despise neighbouring tribes who cover their genitals (Buytendijk 1973, 18). In certain regions of Africa, girls are taught when meeting a boy to raise their skirts in order to politely show their vulvas, to which the boy replies by showing his penis sheath (an article of clothing resembling a white condom) (Romé 1982, 39).

According to Foral (1981, 26), the Greeks had no word for "shameless". Salacity was a sign of virility, and when a marriage song describes the bridegroom as "randy", this is undoubtedly intended as praise (Borneman 1978, 70).

347 The black adolescent from Abidjan, already mentioned in 35 and 61, experienced shame as something new in his life. "When Muslim religion came to me I was already a big boy of sixteen. Until that time I knew no shame. But afterwards I felt shame and knew that you had to hide when you do it. You must not be seen." (A.D. 1979, 117)

Islam, nevertheless, accepts the sexual phenomena much more easily than does Christendom. If, for example, a young man has a spontaneous ejaculation at the sight of a beautiful woman, this is not considered shameful but commendable: his body has made a sacrifice in honour of beauty (Bullough 1976, 220).

The research of the well-known doctor couple Masters & Johnson, moreover, demonstrated that shame is not at all an inborn, ineradicable instinct. At first, when they started to study the body's responses to sexual stimulation, they drew their subjects from among male and female prostitutes, firmly convinced that they would have great difficulty finding anyone else who was willing. But as news of their research spread, it appeared possible to get subjects in all age groups and from all walks of life, people who often volunteered their co-operation for years on end: all together 382 females and 312 males 18 to 90 years of age. Masters & Johnson were able to observe in their laboratory about

10,000 male and female orgasms, the climaxes being elicited by intercourse, masturbation or artificial phallus, while a team of scientists looked on and recorded physical reactions. The subjects were first asked to give detailed information about their sexual histories and habits to a group of male and female investigators. After this their genitals were examined for anatomical particulars. Finally they were asked to perform sexually in a laboratory environment, at first without onlookers, then in the presence of the team, until they had become quite used to this. It appeared that inhibitions were quickly blotted out. After a short training period, the subjects functioned perfectly, undisturbed by the measuring and observation.

Where sex is thought of as a completely natural activity, a beautiful, delightful use of the human body, there seems to be little reason to hide its performance. Borneman (1978, 1098-1099) attributes the desire to do sex in secret to bad conscience: a person either wants to hide his activities because they are forbidden, or he himself considers them to be bad, dirty and immoral. At all times and in all cultures there were people who protested against such a concept.

Peyrefitte depicts the Cynics of ancient Greece recommending public intercourse, and shows boys "cruising" the parks of Athens looking for whores and, when they find them, not bothering to conceal themselves when they take their pleasure (1977, 179). The men often invited *hetairas* to their symposia, and in the aftermath often copulated with women and boys, women with women, all in the same room (Borneman 1978, 1119, 1394). Masters had sex in the presence of their slaves, and this, of course, could be very exciting to young servants. A Greek vase depicts a man having intercourse with a young woman, while his slave-boy, sitting nearby in a corner, is rubbing himself with fervour and uttering shouts to spur his master on (Brendel 1970, 24).

Likewise with the Etruscans, who dominated Italy before the Romans rose to power. At a feast, guests were served by naked boys. As soon as the last cup was poured, the boys lay down at the sides of the men, who openly satisfied on them their sexual lust, until nobody in the company was able to go on any more. Then stalwart young males were summoned, who now, in front of the men, gave a show, using the boys (Foral 1981, 40).

It seems that the Romans, like the Greeks, felt little shame over having sex in the presence of their slaves. There are several Pompeian wall paintings of the naked master of the house coupling with a young woman while fully-dressed slave-boys either serve them refreshments or simply watch (Cleugh 1963, 204). In his *Anecdotes*, Procopius tells how this custom had fatal consequences for Antonia, wife of General Belisarius (494-565): she fell in love with a boy Belisarius had adopted, had sex several times with him in the presence of a pair of young slaves, who later testified against her (Procopius I, 112).

The Romans often linked sex with violence and cruelty. We saw in Chapter Four that women and boys were sometimes punished by rape, which was performed as a public spectacle. When the town of Tarentum conquered Carina in Apulia, all the boys and girls were exposed naked in one of the temples, "and anyone who wished," says Athenaios, "leaping like wolves upon a herd into this wretched group, could feast his lust upon the beauty of the victims there gathered, with all the others looking on." (Licht 1925, I - 33) During the Empire, such events were part of the entertainment in the Coliseum. A multitude of whores executed lascivious naked dances, and then, at a blast of a trumpet, naked young men rushed into the arena and threw themselves upon them (Forsal 1981, 58-59).

Originally Roman law required, for validation of marriage, that first intercourse be performed before witnesses (Borneman 1978, 223). The same practice survived in Tahiti until the 18th Century. Cook, in 1769, witnessed a boy announcing his marriage by taking his 11- or 12-year-old bride in coitus in the market place during its busiest hour. The public closed in on them and watched, the women advising the girl on how to perform correctly (Stoll 1908, 693; Sutor 1964, 418).

A similar custom is still observed by the Nyasongo in Kenya. Boys marry at 15, or even before, and their wives are of the same age. Both have had previous sexual encounters. Both like and desire sex, but they have their roles to play: the groom as a macho rapist, the bride as an unwilling virgin. It is important to their status that the performance take place in public. "On returning from the marriage ceremony, the bride usually refuses to go to her new husband's hut, and has to be forcibly placed on the bed by her husband. While all members of his clan watch from either inside the hut or through the door, he then proceeds to rape her, not once, but as many times as he can. Six complete acts of coitus are considered a minimum for the groom to achieve any sort of respect from his clansmen, while twelve is the maximum number of times one groom was reported to have performed this function. One must remember that during this ceremony, women and children are witness to a scene similar to an athletic contest where the groom is actually cheered on. (...) The children, particularly the boys, develop something akin to hero worship for the new groom and try to emulate his record." (Bronslau & Neil 1968, 104).

The novelist Peyrefitte depicts the Indians, during Alexander's campaigns there, having sex in the open air and making no effort to hide themselves (1981, 233). In our times this has been reported for places in Taiwan and the Island of Yap, not far from the Philippines (Henriquez, 307). Until recently there were tattoo celebrations in the Marquesas Islands of the Pacific where girls exhibited their genitals and every woman tried to copulate, publicly, with as many men as she could (Borneman 1978, 1120). Even where such spectacles don't take

place, sexual shame may be conspicuous by its absence. Shortly before World War Two, Rovsing saw a 16-year-old Balinese girl and a 14- or 15-year-old boy at a temple festival sitting slightly apart from the others and fondling one another. Suddenly the boy pulled up his sarong, showing the girl his erect penis. She bent down and sucked on it until he had his orgasm. Then the couple became aware that the white man was watching them. They smiled at him, quite unembarrassed. Rovsing adds that there was no "alienated youth" problem with the Balinese, no loneliness, no shyness, no neurosis, no "puberty crisis" (1959, 142-144).

Elsewhere, sexual athletics may be a sport. In India men have been known to demonstrate their capacity by lifting great weights by means of cables attached to their penises (Daniélou 1983, 207). In Japan "sexual bouts of an acrobatic character between wrestlers and prostitutes took place before a mixed crowd." (Bowie 1970, 184)

The cultural history of Europe, too, is replete with examples of shame-free copulation. At some of the banquets of Charlemagne (742-814), guests and courtiers coupled with invited prostitutes while everyone else looked on (Forsal 1981, 98). In the Middle Ages there were heretic sects advocating nudity and public sex (Armand 1931, 194). Even in the Church there were such practices: in some cities a popular festival was celebrated on the 6th of January in the cathedral. Worshippers, frequently naked, danced in the choir loft, and in 1444 a ruling of the Chapter of Sens in France requested "those who wish to copulate go outside the church before doing so." (Taylor 1953, 268). A very curious legal institution which persisted into the 17th Century was the public "congress". If a wife sued her husband for impotence, he was invited to prove the contrary by having intercourse in the presence of witnesses. Vincenzo Gonzaga, Duke of Mantua, succeeded in doing so in 1607 in front of a group of noblemen and members of the clergy (Borneman 1978, 1120). But it must be recorded that most of the husbands failed miserably in producing so much as an erection under such trying circumstances (Abraham 1969, 64), and the marriage was annulled (X, Praeputii Incisio 1931, 181-186).

The Duke of Anjou (afterwards King Henry III of France, 1551-1589) recreated the roman circus spectacles. He brought all the most famous Parisian whores to St. Cloud, set them running naked about the park, and then let two Swiss Guards, also naked, out to hunt them—as, of course, he and his courtiers looked on (von Römer 1903, 572).

In 19th Century London a certain Mrs. Hayes invited guests to her "Venus Feasts" celebrated by twelve beautiful nymphs and twelve athletic adolescent boys. Today's "live shows" in Amsterdam and Copenhagen are nothing new!

348 During the First World War the German army had its own brothels. More than once the youngest cornet present was ordered to perform in front of his senior officers and so prove his ability (Foral 1981, 360).

349 Sex without shame goes on everywhere, despite the best efforts of society. Josiah Flynt studied the tramps of many countries in the early part of the century. One night he was in a lower-class pub in a Scottish harbour town. "A blind man came in led by an extremely pretty but effeminate-looking youth of about 17. (...) A remark was made by one man that he believed the youth was a lassie. The boy said, 'I will show you I am a laddie,' and pulled up his kilt, exposing his genitals and then his posterior. Boisterous laughter greeted this indecent exposure and suggestion. (...) The blind man then played his fiddle and the boy danced with frequent recurrences of the same indecencies. He was seized, kissed, and caressed by quite a number of men, some of whom endeavoured to masturbate him, which he resisted, but performed it for them. After the closing time came, I and about ten or twelve men all occupied the same room; the old man continued to play, and the youth, stark naked, continued to dance and suggested we others should do so, and an erotic scene took place. (...)'" (Ellis 1913, II 367)

The sexual exhibition has many functions, one of them, of course, being solicitation.

350 A schoolboy, having fallen in love with one of his teachers, volunteered to help her saw wood. It was a hot day; he took off his shirt—and let his fly stand open. When he saw her looking there he got an immediate erection. Suddenly "his shameless stiff cock" shot out of his trousers. To his regret, the woman ran away (Friday 1981, 170).

Another conscious or unconscious motive for young people to call attention to their genitals is protest against adult suppression of their sexual impulses, giving them a feeling of youth solidarity. This might be another important reason for the universal popularity of group masturbation. Doing something clearly contrary to adult beliefs, which is forbidden and delightful, creates and reinforces comradeship, while at the same time it sets the boy's mind at rest: if all his peers do it, then it cannot be unhealthy or very wrong. Abandoning yourself in orgasm in the presence of others is a potent expression of confidence (Naslednikov 1981, 213). And so a sense of brotherhood is established which, as an adult, one may look back on with considerable nostalgia. Nancy Friday concludes that there is nothing similar in female sex; this is a privilege of the male. And few males will completely forget this uncomplicated pleasure they had with their peers (Friday 1981, 34, 224, 293).

Such experiences may encourage adolescents to continue to be open. Some of my own subjects, serious young men of generally high principles and closely bonded to the girls they loved, told me how pleasant it was to undress and make love in the company of a bosom friend and his girl. There was no question

of partner exchange, but the pleasure, the lust, of each couple was heightened by watching the other enjoying the ecstasy of intercourse. It was, they felt, an expression of the most intimate friendship.

351 A homophile told Nancy Friday (1981, 285), "In the period between my tenth and twentieth year I fucked many girls. Then I became more interested in boy-friends. We took for instance two girls with us to the drive-in and I fucked the girl on the back seat and he the girl on the front seat. But I was most interested in what he did and I tried to get a glimpse of it."

Other adolescents go jointly to prostitutes. In Brigitte Reng's research among young prostitutes, 32% said they were regularly involved in orgies with several persons, some having twenty such sessions each month (Reng 1968, 40).

The orgy is the ultimate denial of shame. In the presence of others, in groups, one has intercourse or carries out other sexual acts, putting oneself on display, so to speak, and at the same time observing the activities of others. It is this ambience of camaraderie and trust (indispensable to the orgy) that makes it such an intense experience for the participants. When we realise how artificial sexual shame really is, how linked to unnatural conceptions of sex, the orgy can be seen to be an enviable expression of freedom. Through it, an individual can accustom himself to abandonment, overwhelmed with lust, naked and defenceless, in the sight of others.

Not infrequently, such observation heightens the lust of the observed (Abraham 1969, 141).

352 "In puberty I liked to run naked through the house when I was alone. I was physically in advance to the other children in school. They used to tease me about the dimensions of my cock when I was in the lavatory with others. This went to my head and so I became an exhibitionist. This lasted five or six years. At college I got acne, making it practically impossible to date girls of my age. I therefore dated younger girls. Often we had to take a younger brother or sister with us. And often the younger brother looked on while his sister and I fucked on the back seat. This made me most randy." (Friday 1981, 161)

353 A boy prostitute told Hennig (1978, 335) about a client who liked to have anal intercourse with him on the bonnet of his car in the Bois de Boulogne, so as to be seen by everybody.

"To some (...) the exercise of sexual intercourse in the sunlight and the open air seems so important that they are inclined to elevate it to the rank of a religious exercise." A correspondent of Havelock Ellis pleaded for a springtime ritual ceremony with the coition of lovers. "The intercourse of the sexes (...) is ineffably beautiful. (...) When the world is one Paradise, the consummation of the lovers, the youngest and the most beautiful, will take place in certain

sacred valleys in sight of thousands assembled to witness it. (...) In these sacred valleys the subtle perfume of the pansies will mingle with the divine fragrance of healthy naked young women and men in the spring coupling." (Ellis 1913, VI - 559)

These examples show us how relative feelings of shame really are. With most boys, shyness is not based upon reverence for the loftiness of sexuality—a notion both noble and praiseworthy—but upon an indoctrinated misconception that nudity and sex are indecent, obscene, dirty and disgusting. The madonna/whore complex may induce boys to be quite tender and affectionate with a bosom friend, abhorring the idea of having sex with him, while joining less intimate comrades in mutual masturbation (von Stockert 1956, 46). With such a boy, his older friend can do him a great favour by intimately helping him to abandon his shame. Borneman insists upon the social advantages of such freedom. An adolescent who regards his sexual experiences as sinful will make other people unhappy. If, on the other hand, he views them as invigorating, purifying and divine, his purity, strength and faith will purify his fellows, and give them strength, hope, assurance and courage (1978, 21).

Many boy-lovers, perhaps unintentionally, free their boys of physical shame by encouraging them to run about their homes naked, by taking photos of them in all sorts of nude poses. Such pictures, often with the boy's permission and in his presence, are frequently shown to other boy-lovers, whose enthusiastic appreciation of his image makes it easy for the boy to go naked in front of the visitors, too. Especially as he enters the pubertal threshold, a boy may show real joy in such "exhibitionism".

The smooth, naked body of itself invites affectionate caressing. Children love this; older boys often have to re-learn the pleasure of touching and being touched. A positive attitude towards such contact is essential for good sexual functioning. One should, then, foster and nourish this pleasure from childhood on.

- 354 (Continued from 319) Onno always went naked in the homes of Nick and his friends, moving about without one stitch of clothing in the midst of well-dressed gentlemen. One day, when he was asked to serve at a dinner party for eight, he felt an erection coming on, and his first reaction was one of great embarrassment, having no way to hide his condition. Suddenly the guests were staring at him in tense silence. But then one of them said, "My, that's beautiful! We really like seeing you with it up!", to which the whole company agreed. This encouraged Onno, and soon his spontaneous, or deliberately elicited erections increased the pleasure he took in parading his fine body in front of appreciative spectators. *His* condition was the natural one; theirs, in clothes, the unnatural. Nick encouraged this attitude in him, gradually liberating him of the last traces of shame and sexual taboo. Onno removed his pubic hair in order to make his genitals more conspicuous. As an old man looking back on this period of his life, Onno repeatedly expressed his everlasting gratitude to the man who freed him of shame: "All men who saw me envied me my freedom. I have never lost this feeling

of happiness; it can still warm my heart. And, for the youth I was at that time, it made sex an uninhibited joy, with no guilt or shame! Perfect freedom!

- 355 Onno's appearance at the dinner party recalls a scene in Peyrefitte's Alexander trilogy. The Macedonians' finest booty at their great victory over Darius was the Persian king's favourite boy Bagoas. The novelist Mary Renault describes Bagoas as a eunuch (1972). Peyrefitte advances the somewhat less credible theory that Bagoas had only been deprived of fertility by cutting his funicles. In the Peyrefitte novel, Alexander keeps Bagoas to himself for a long time, then, at the end of his Indian campaign, he wishes to show him off to his soldiers. Bagoas has given dancing instructions to a selected group of "favourite boys" accompanying the army. Now he appears in public with them, all naked. "The soldiers had never seen him thus. Some were astonished that he had such a long member and such round testicles, nearly like those of Bacchus. They hadn't realised he was only mutilated inside. To their even greater surprise, he amused himself by getting an erection during his dance in front of the king. Being a eunuch meant only that he could give no seed. At this spectacle, the soldiers, equally admiring his buttocks which, since infancy, had been made more prominent by expert massage, couldn't restrain themselves from crying out, "How lucky Alexander is!" The king laughed, but pointed at the other boys with a gesture which meant that their lovers, too, had no reason to complain." (1981, 380)

Greek antiquity shows us that veneration of male beauty flourishes where naked boys and young men are frequently to be observed. In Megara, there were boys' beauty contests (Koch-Harnack 1983, 37). Charles Darwin, landing in Tahiti in 1835, discovered to his disappointment (he was heterophile!) that the naked women seemed less beautiful to him than the naked men. The women, he concluded, needed to adorn themselves with clothing and jewellery; men looked best in their natural state (Gide 1925, 97). Goethe also said that from a purely aesthetic point of view, man is far better, more highly perfected and beautiful than woman (Bloch 1909, 607). Here he echoes one of the characters in the Arabian Tales of a Thousand and One Nights: "Nor indeed is the superiority of the lad over the lass hidden to any of mankind. (...) So if any one enlarge in praise of a slave-girl and wish to enhance her value by the mention of her beauties, he likeneth her to a youth. (...) An youths, then, were not better and fairer than girls, why should these be likened to them?" (Burton 1885, V 156-157) Havelock Ellis, too (1914, IV 163-163) shared Goethe's opinion that the male form was the more aesthetically beautiful. He quotes Remy de Gourmont who "considers that the invisibility of the sexual organs is the decisive fact in rendering women more beautiful than men. (...) In the human male sex is the predominantly striking and visible fact (...) an obstacle for the eye, whether regarded as a rugosity on the surface or as breaking the middle of a line. (...) When we consider the male and the female at the moment of desire when they present the most intense and natural expression of life (...)

the man, as it were, all at once receding toward the primitive state of animality, seems to throw off all beauty and become reduced to the simple and naked condition of a genital organism."

Many would disagree, appealing to the beauty of this "primitive state of animality". To Wulffen (1922, 535-54), the genitals definitely heightened male beauty: "From a purely ornamental point of view, the male organ—member and double-pocketed bag placed precisely on the boundary where the unity of trunk passes on to the duality of leg-columns—forms a most beautiful intermezzo of shape, a small, fine tripple intercalary adornment. Because it is precisely here, the body does not appear to be split in two from this point downwards. The bifurcation is concealed so that the lines flow harmoniously from the abdomen to the leg columns. Trunk and thighs, which are heavy and massive, have a kind of spiritual centre in this sharply individualised, moving member. It is like a finger, a little third hand rhythmically related to the real hands right and left. The different shades of skin and hair have their own aesthetic importance. The member becomes even more spiritualised when, in stiffening, the glans penetrates the opening of the foreskin. The power of male defiance is most effectively and aesthetically symbolised by the swollen member and its blood-inflated tip."

As a human male, and therefore a specimen of the most sexually arousable of all animals (Cleugh 1963, 296), a boy should learn to be proud of the aesthetic beauty of this part of his body—the only organ which never lies, as Cocteau (1982, 143) says—and to look upon it as his flower. In Chapter Three we have already put forward this view which, according to Eric Gill (quoted by Elwin 1959, 232), is the only decent, healthy way to think about the genital apparatus. It was pure prudery that made the noble French family de Beauvit ("fine cock") adopt the new name de Beauharnais (Casanova, II - 116).

Many of the great Florentine painters and sculptors "found the female nudity far less erotically arousing than the male." (Walters 1978, 95, 99) The external genitalia of the male may be one important reason. It was only in the 19th Century, with growing fear of sex, that "the male goes out of focus, the female nude becomes the central symbol of art." (Walters 1978, 228, 230).

Aesthetically it is a great loss to our culture that the nude beauty of the boy in bloom is covered up and hidden. The Nuba tribe in southern Sudan was, until corrupted by our European sense of shame, much more sensible: healthy young people of both sexes habitually went about naked; clothes were only for the sick and the old (Riefenstahl 1973 & 1976).

We can see that nudity is not necessarily a symptom of poverty or lack of civilisation: it is more a question of culture, of philosophy. Boys and men of the African Dinka tribe, where the penis attains great length, are usually naked. Wearing clothes is considered effeminate; they despise neighbouring peoples where the men dress. The bared penis is a deliberate demonstration of

superiority. While they talk, they play with it, make it dangle, to draw other people's attention to it (Sutor 1964, 314). In a Copenhagen swimming pool I once saw a 14-year-old boy passing most of his time in the shower room where he could run about naked and show off his unusually large penis—just as the Dinkas do.

In Chapter Three we saw how important penis size is to the pubertal boy. The boy-lover should be cognizant of this when he seeks to release his young partner from feelings of shame about nudity. "While the penis may not be seen by all boys or men as a bludgeon or weapon, it certainly is seen by most boys and men as a concrete manifestation of vibrancy and strength of one's masculinity. Hence males become concerned about the size of their penis and these concerns are a constant preoccupation from childhood to middle age. Inevitably, masculinity involves genital worries and obsessions about sex and (...) the resolution of these obsessions in boys or in men, either through sexual activity or sexual reassurance, is a way of reducing anxiety about their masculinity." (Wilson 1982, 54)

Some boy-lovers, visiting each other accompanied by their young friends, ask the boys to have sex with each other so they can enjoy watching them. This, of course, is only morally acceptable if both boys freely consent and do it with pleasure.

356 We have already mentioned Ulrich Stöwer's Antinous novel. In it Emperor Hadrian describes in a letter an evening of orgy passed in Taormina in the company of his beloved Antinous, a herculean gladiator named Marcus and his beautiful 16-year-old friend Kalos, and Thrasyll, a black slave-boy.

"Thrasyll fell on his knees, naked as he was, and, spreading his legs, leaned back. I devoured him with my eyes, all this smoothness, and so eager. (...) The cymbal was crashing and all I saw before me was that all-important part of Marcus' body. Thrasyll touched my head, trying to pull it forwards. This was too much! I fended him off with a blow of my fist. (...) Marcus defended me and threw himself upon Thrasyll. A splendid wrestling ensued; I never saw the like of it in a gladiator's school. Black against white, barbaric savagery against trained power, breast upon breast, thigh upon thigh, genitals upon genitals. They fell on the floor. Marcus's net tore. Hate coupled with desire. But a thousand times more multiform, more ferocious, harder and more rutting than between man and woman. There was panting from exertion and raising lust. Antinous stared wide-eyed at the spectacle. His face glowed. The rut of parthian stallions was driving them; they embraced, rubbing their bodies on each other, separated again, but returned to meet each other where their bodies were so deeply shadowed. Now Marcus and Thrasyll stood up. (...) They kissed each other. But they offered me the front of their bodies. They approached me enticingly. They took my hands and led them to the finest and noblest of the muscles of their bodies, the most sensitive and the most cruel, but, feeling the vibration of their flesh, I recoiled as if from a blow. I withdrew my hands. (...) Furious and disappointed, Thrasyll pulled the gladiator down again, in order to

satisfy himself at last. (...) Suddenly I saw the fair body of Antinous. He was naked. I didn't see his arms and hands, only his back, bending and jerking. Kalos had brought his head to his lap. They didn't notice me. They were most intensely occupied with each other. My innocent, tender, sensitive little darling was making of his member a wet-nurse for Kalos. The boy was clumsy. He squirmed under the hands of Antinous, who guided his head, turning him at the same time onto his back, since he wanted to examine with his hands the perfect body of the Campanian. He moved too and fro over the still-smooth thighs, fumbled a bit, arrived at the genitals, shrank back, continued his fore-play, returned to his member and brought it back to life. The wonderful spectacle of two boys making love deterred me for a moment, but finally my feeling of being betrayed gained the upper hand. And thus I was so cruel (and perhaps also so ungodly) as to separate the two adolescents in the midst of offering each other a lust I could never raise in either of them. I flung my arms around Antinous and tore him away from Kalos. Kalos jumped to his feet with a cry, ran away, but was held back by Thrasyll, who was still quite frantic with lust. (...) Thrasyll was still lying upon Kalos, his buttocks still jerking with the after-effects of his satisfied lust. Thrasyll is the only male to my knowledge who still experiences lust after his orgasm, like a woman." (Stöwer 1967, 197-199)

- 357 In Peyrefitte's novels, Alexander the Great also delighted in "the wonderful spectacle of boys loving one another." Toward the end of his life, during a time of increasing debauchery, he closed every banquet with a general masturbation of the slave-boys who, naked, had been serving meat and drink. "He had a fixed tariff for their reward, depending on the time it took them to come. The first to ejaculate got a gold coin, those who followed steadily smaller ones, the last only three obols—the three obols of the Athenians. If a boy couldn't pass the test, even if ministered to by mouth, artificial phallus or by whipping his buttocks, he was dismissed from Alexander's personal service and sent to work in the fields or stables." (Peyrefitte 1981, 496)

Nudism is a fine opportunity to help boys accept their bodies frankly, openly. They are encouraged and supported by the participation of other boys. Being together with naked boys, "fooling around", perhaps even sexually, in the company of adults who not only approve but obviously enjoy watching them, is liberating, helps free them from sexual shame. Wherever possible, the boy's first ejaculation, his first intercourse, should be announced in his circle of friends and celebrated—just as did the American Indians of old and the Indian Muria when a girl reached maturity (Hallbeck 1980, 50; Romé 1982, 87; Elwin 1959, 336). It will help boys to attain "that splendid shamelessness which is the finest thing in perfect love." (Ellis 1913, VI - 548 quoting Pyke)

Among the subjects of my investigations there were four (now all married and with children), who told me that as young men they had been freed of their physical shame in this way by their older friends. All said they were immensely grateful. It made things much easier when, later, they started to have relations with their girlfriends, their betrothed, their wives.

Unconsciously, their adult friends had provided the same kind of therapy Masters and Johnson had found to be the most effective in marital sex problems: letting them rid themselves of shame through open, child-like sex-play (O'Carroll 1980, 98). Boys who are not prudish and are comfortable being naked tend at once, during sex play with girls, to focus their attention more on the girls' genitals than the breasts (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 48-49).

Sexual Abstinence and Self-Control

It is coming to be more and more widely recognised that sex information is an essential element of education. Omitting it is simple neglect. It is pretty well understood, too, that imparting this information should start early and be successively adapted as the child matures. But broach the subject of actual sexual exercise and practice and there will be, at best, general hesitation. Even penal law seems grounded on the conviction that the awakening of the sexual instinct, and certainly the commencement of sexual activity, in girls and boys is intrinsically harmful and fatal to their further development. This, of course, is quite mistaken. "What is really fatal is enforced abstinence during the years of strongest sexual ardour, or these rather mechanical sensual contacts which lack tenderness, which lack love..." (Matzneff 1977, 130)

Pedagogues shake their heads and admonish us: "It is good for a child to learn to deny himself something once in a while." (Kentler 1970, 141) As a generalisation this may be true, but it is quite wrong to apply it here. First of all, it is deceitful. What is meant is not that youth should deny itself sex *once in a while*, but that it should deny itself sex *all the time*. In Plato's *Laws* (ca. 347 BC) the Athenian spokesman points out that athletes, in order to win, ought to deny themselves this pleasure praised by the multitude as the highest bliss. Should we not expect our young people, he asks, to control their passions for the sake of victory over pleasure? Such reasoning not only reflects the ageing Plato's hostility to lust; it also creaks under an inner inconsistency: the athlete abstains only on important occasions, while youth is advised to be permanently celibate.

But there is another, even more fatal, inconsistency. To speak of sex as a kind of mechanism which can be switched on and off at will (Plack 1967, 158) is to dehumanise man, reduce him to an apparatus. It is as if sex were a kind of hobby or a piece of candy which agreeably tickles the other senses. Thus devalued, it becomes rather unimportant. But if it really is so unimportant, why make such an ado about it? Why this great mobilisation against it by educationists, moralists and jurists?

"One cannot deny that controlling desire is valuable in character formation, but we must point out that there are risks here for the harmonious growth of a

young personality. It is often forgotten that the demand that he permanently abstain from the satisfaction of a desire for love, without any compensatory return whatsoever, cannot be compared with learning to deny oneself some object or activity which is tempting. Experience shows that the demand for control all too often produces inner protest which soon may lead to mental ailment." (Sengers 1968, 70)

The desire for tenderness, being caressed, the joy of contact with another body is at root a desire for love. Sex is not just the satisfaction of a need; it has a higher importance as a means of collecting social experiences, discovering limits and opportunities, and perfecting socialisation (Hohmann 1980, 58). It is related to a youngster's growing into deeper relationships with another person, freeing himself from his loneliness. To advise an adolescent that he ought to abstain from this natural expression of love and such a wonderful means of socialization, in the same way that one might advise him not to smoke, is quite wrong, and is deeply resented by most young people. It amounts to pushing them in the direction of mental illness or creating in them a feeling of alienation which, especially among the more intelligent, can easily become an almost automatic response to everything.

Chastity, understood as total celibacy, is not a virtue. Like most non-Christian peoples, the Greeks had no word for it (Szasz 1982, 97). Sexual asceticism is an expression of a dangerous character defect: the individual suffers either from guilt feelings over real or imaginary sins committed in his youth (like incest), or he is repressing a potential explosion of socially scorned impulses (like fetishism, sadism, blood lust) (Stekel 1920 & 1923). "All asceticism is a criticism of God's creation; we were given our sexual organs so we could use them. If we refuse to use them we pretend we are superior to Him." (Borneman 1978, 107) According to Abu Nuwas, on doomsday "the girl who kept on refusing and the lover who restrained himself too long" will not be forgiven by Allah (Wagner 1965, 121).

A better definition of chastity would be: behaving properly in matters of sex. A man being chaste with his boy would mean that the answer to whether or not he and a boy had sex had been decided on the basis of his estimate of the boy's well-being (Nichols 1976, 40). In a number of cases the answer might be no; this denial, however, will be easier to bear if it is not motivated by a senseless and frustrating taboo, rather by a positive value (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 371). The acceptable arguments for abstaining are then integrated in sexual life itself (van Ussel 1970, 78).

There is, first of all, the respect due to one's partner. If sex would disastrously confuse or bewilder the boy, burden him with intense guilt feelings or bring him into intolerable conflict with people close to him, the man should abstain.

358 Let us recall the cases described in examples 155 and 156. The man in 156 said he had very violent physical responses during orgasm: he gasped for breath, moaned loudly, cried out; his whole body jerked. It happened he was involved with a very young, quite immature boy, and in order not to frighten his young friend by letting him see him in the throes of orgasm, he always denied himself a climax in their love-making, even though he wanted very much to attain one (Personal communication).

359 Restraint may come about through deliberate faithfulness to the beloved partner. Max (continued from 340) liked to go about nude among the boy-lover acquaintances of his friend Dick. He let these men kiss and fondle him, touch his penis, but stoutly resisted any attempt to feel his back quarters. "That belongs to Dick," he firmly declared (Personal communication).

360 Yves, a 14-year-old French boy, begged Louis, a friend of the family whom he liked very much, to give him 100 francs to repair his bicycle. Louis handed over the money, but later, when Yves backed away from a caress, Louis said, "If a boy asks a man for money and gets it, the man may expect something from him in return." "If that is so I'll never ask you for help again, because I promised Régis I'd be faithful to him. I want to give myself to only one man." One night a little later Yves and Louis had drunk a little too much and were lying, dressed, upon a bed, embracing and cuddling, but Yves continued to avoid real sex. "It was difficult, but we stuck it out," he afterwards said proudly (Personal communication).

A second reason for restraint, touched upon in the last example, is wishing to reserve sex for expressing love. If one refuses to be content with less, one must renounce victories too easily obtained. Boys sometimes don't like sex which elicits only lust. They have discovered, to quote from an unpublished novel by Martel, that there is a second, and often higher, delight in turning down a pleasure that is too cheap. Evidently there can be more to sexuality than pure sex.

A third reason can be found in the very nature of sexual pleasure itself. It used to be taught that if an individual started to enjoy sex too young he would gradually need stronger and stronger stimuli in order to reach climax, and in the end his capacity for orgasm would disappear altogether. This is, of course, a lie, invented by the moralists. Man is not a machine. If one drinks a great deal of wine at twenty, one may actually be a connoisseur at fifty (van Ussel 1970, 37). Kinsey's research shows that individuals who mature early and become sexually active at a young age tend to have more than average sexual activity throughout their lives and also in old age (148, 325-326). It is, however, equally true that frequent satisfaction reduces the lust experienced in every individual act. A German teacher, thus, advised his pupils to masturbate less frequently if they wished to increase their pleasure when they did (Personal communication).

- 361 One 15-year-old Italian boy said he would often give up masturbating in order to have wet dreams which he enjoyed even more (Personal communication).

On the other hand, it is quite wrong for a man to use as argument for his abstinence, "I love this boy too much to do anything dirty with him." That may sound exalted, like Thoreau's "I might have loved him had I loved him less" (quoted in NAMBLA Bulletin, May 1985, 16), but it is really nothing more than a transference of the madonna/whore complex into the context of man-boy relationships (O'Carroll 1980, 94).

In fact, love and moral considerations sometimes demand a positive answer to the question of whether to have sex or not, and this is completely overlooked by public opinion and penal law. A boy may be deeply hurt and frustrated if the adult refuses to respond to his sexual needs (de Brethmas 1980, 27). It is a tragedy when a pupil comes along "who shows by his pleading looks the sentiment which animates him, and the profound impression which he is longing, as it were, to receive from his teacher" and "the latter belies himself, denies his own instinct and the boy's great need, and treats him distantly and with coldness." (Carpenter 1912, 97)

- 362 In his autobiography *Flannelled Fool*, T. C. Worsley tells of his refusal to initiate sex with his 13-year-old pupil David, who was much in love with him, even when it was clear that the boy had gone out of his way to create the perfect opportunity. Society would have commended Worsley for his moral courage, but he himself "recognised it as an act of moral cowardice. It was a defeat for knowledge, and knowledge, not innocence, is what the young want and need." (Worsley 1967, 178-181). Righton (1981, 39) would agree.

- 363 "My fiancée had a brother some years younger than herself. I met him frequently. He grew strongly attached to me. (...) You will understand my dismay, how disturbed I was, when I realised one night, during an intimate talk, that this boy didn't just desire my friendship but also my love. (...) Alexis was no longer a child; he was a very beautiful and self-confident boy, and what he gradually confessed threw me into complete confusion. (...) I was greatly frightened. I spoke to him severely, harshly even, and, much worse, with exaggerated contempt for what I called effeminacy but which was really nothing more than the natural expression of his tenderness. (...) I was so brutal that it had a tragic outcome for the poor boy—yes, he was still only a boy. For three days he tried to pacify my rage, or what he saw as such, by redoubling his kindness. I, however, only increased my coldness to him, and so... You didn't know that Alexis B. committed suicide?" (Gide 1925, 27)

- 364 Kameneff gives a striking example. Régis was a shy, reticent boy, unsure of his growing body. One night he entered the cabin where Kameneff was already in bed. To Kameneff's surprise, Régis was naked. The boy pointed to a fervent erection and said, "He has come to wish you good-night." Confused, disconcerted, Kameneff didn't recognise this as the perfect moment to help and instead sent the boy off with a joke.

The boy was deeply humiliated and never again showed signs of coming out of his shell (1979, 31).

Kameneff did what law demands of a youth leader, but his rejection at one stroke destroyed a golden pedagogical opportunity.

- 365 "Paul Goodman relates his experience when a boy came to his bed one night. Goodman sent the boy away. This disappointed boy informed the school authorities of Goodman's involvement with other boys, and he was fired from his teaching job. Goodman commented, 'Had I taken him to bed for a few minutes of affectionate sex, he might have been a better and more compassionate boy.' " (Geiser 1979, 84)

De Brethmas wisely observes, "If you want to do boys some good, you should love and not frustrate them. I'd even go so far as to say that you *must* give them physical love if they desire it, even if you yourself don't want it so much at the time, if you simply have to force yourself to do it. If you overwhelm them, comply with their most secret desires, especially in areas where they feel a lot of shame because of their bourgeois upbringing, you will be the perfect intermediary; from you they will take instruction and advice they would never take from an employer, or a teacher, or especially from their parents." (1980, 41-42)

Within a close, intimate relationship, a boy frequently "does want such pleasuring which should be accorded as his human right," writes Nichols (1976, 73). The English poet John Moray Stuart-Young would have agreed:

*I do his soul a wrong
In curbing all the currents of my blood.
We love—and love claims for its earthly food
The rapid clasp of bodies, fervent, strong
And unforgettable... The day is long,
But night shall come, and Eros be our God!"*
— (d'Arch Smith 1970, 215)

Palmieri, an Italian who had love relations with 25 boys over a span of 55 years, wrote, "A boy gets awfully tired of being loved if this love has not its natural issue in sex-experience. This much I do know. No matter how much you may do for a boy to show him how much you love him, if *he* does not have an orgasm while there is a close physical bond established between you either by mutual masturbation, fellatio, or anal intercourse, you can never keep his close friendship." (quoted by Nichols 1976, 73)

A sexual upbringing worthy of the name should aim at control of sexual capacities, but a true control, not the brutal repression most moralists advocate. True control means making use of sexual capacities according to the dictates of reason and sentiment, activating or not activating them in perfect freedom.

366 Some Indian gurus are known for a degree of iron control over their sexual functioning quite unobtainable for most people of our culture. This example is taken from a religious novel translated from the Tamil language.

Near the village where the boy Narayana lived there was a guru dwelling in a cave. The guru was still young, and every day Narayana and other children brought him food. Narayana was strongly attracted to him. As is customary, the guru was always naked, and Narayana admired the man's hairless body, skin shining as though polished; to Narayana the guru was the very image of beauty. As Narayana approached puberty, sex entered his feelings about the guru.

Narayana had already seen a little. One of his older comrades was nicknamed Yerudhu (The Bull) because of his large penis which he liked to show off erect. "He invited one of the boys to touch it, and then you heard gasps of surprise about how big and how hard it was. We could only admire him. This was a totally new sight, and The Bull was the only one among us who could offer it. Then he put his arm around the waist of one of the smaller boys, removed his loin-cloth and made his member slide to and fro between the thighs of the smaller boy, who laughed and giggled and told us it tickled; it felt like a hot serpent. We all laughed. Yerudhu toiled on, standing either behind our comrade or face to face with him. We watched the great member appear and disappear between the legs of his constantly laughing partner. Suddenly The Bull bent over, his body jerked spasmodically, and we cried with joy, seeing milk-white drops spurt out onto the grass. A symbol—I didn't realise it at the time—of the Holy Bull fertilising the earth. 'Do it with me, too!' another boy shouted, excited by this demonstration and already throwing off his loin-cloth. But The Bull smiled nervously and put his clothes back on again and then lay down beside us, worn out but promising he would do it again the following day."

At puberty, Narayana started experiencing the same impulses in himself. By now he was the guru's Chela, or assistant, since his predecessor had left. He lived with the guru in his cave, also naked. One of his tasks was to massage the guru, and one night he dreamed of uniting their bodies together. "When I woke up I discovered to my regret that I had wetted my sleeping mat with my seed. In itself, this was only natural, for I was young and healthy."

One morning, after just such a dream which didn't, however, cause an ejaculation, he found himself longing for the hour when he would massage his teacher. Thus preoccupied, "I saw once again the wonderful complex of breast and belly and what lay beneath. Now, quite spontaneously, my member began to swell and stretch and rise into total rigidity. Even attempting to conceal my condition was impossible, quite apart from the fact that there was nothing, really, in all of this which could shock a man, or even a saint. The guru sat up. I had turned my back to him, to hide from his eyes this swaying object standing up and troubling me.

"Chela," the guru said, "perhaps you have another master? Take care that he doesn't become more powerful than you and carries you off."

"What do you mean, dear master?"

"This," he said, and caught my member in his hand. 'This,' he repeated, pressing it slightly.

"Suddenly I was overwhelmed by feeling; my whole body seemed to contract into my penis. I could no longer hear. I only was aware of his hand, the growing pressure on my stiff erection. Then I was invaded by a strange power, convulsed, and with vigorous jets my seed spurted from me accompanied by a delight a hundred times stronger than any I had known in my dreams."

Narayana walked to the river to purify himself. Then he returned to his master, remorseful and mortified. "The guru said, 'Nature is at work in every one of us, but she should not dominate us like a mistress. (...) What happened had to happen. You still have much to learn. What moved you so much should not be accompanied by turmoil, if one has to perform it. As long as it is otherwise you are an animal, you are a slave. To attain wisdom you must learn to control the senses. And to do this you must pass through all phases of lust, study lust carefully in order to surpass it, to eliminate it.' (...) My master finally promised to teach me how a man learns to conquer desire, so that one finally commands his member with his will, exactly as his will commands his arms and his legs. 'It would be stupid, Chela,' he said, 'if a man had to walk because his leg wants to, wouldn't it? Why, then, should your penis erect itself and spill your seed if you don't want it to?'"

The guru then demonstrated his power. After the daily massage, he told Narayana to watch his member carefully. "I was greatly surprised to see the guru's penis soon begin to swell and stiffen, until it attained a considerable length, even if it wasn't as great as The Bull's. This put me into indescribable confusion. I grew tense; my member swelled as well. (...) I was quite bewildered, looking at the penis, trembling, swinging, stretching, without any contact, without being touched, getting limp, erecting again as if drawn by some fierce desire. And there sat the guru, his face immobile, eyes shut as if he were asleep. His breath was light, Suddenly, without my thinking, my hand clutched the tempting object. I recoiled. Fear of sacrilege passed quickly through my mind. But it was too late; my fingers were already feverishly wrapping themselves around his pulsing penis."

A kind of madness overwhelmed Narayana. He started crazily rubbing "this penis which to me was beautiful as a liana, hard as a smooth serpent, shaking like a branch in the wind. With rage I worked to elicit from it the fluid which had caused it to swell." But in vain! After a while his arms were paralysed with his continued effort. He started again, but had to stop, now totally exhausted. Then the guru opened his eyes and said, "Now, mark well this first lesson. I tolerated you to have a fling at a part of my body which belongs to me and me alone. I know that, once again, you were unable to hold back your own seed while you tried with all your might to spill mine. But I willed it not to well up in order to demonstrate what I have already taught you."

"The following day the guru thought it was time for another demonstration of his control over sexuality. He sat down and stared at his member, which soon began to swell, to erect, to swing. At a signal from the guru I held out the mouth of a copper jar. Almost immediately he spurted a jet of seed into it. I could hear the soft sound of it striking the bottom. But no spasm shook the guru; his breathing seemed unchanged; the muscles of his belly hardly contracted at all—only when he suddenly and vigorously ejaculated were they drawn in.

"The way to achieve this control, the guru taught, was refinement. 'At your age a boy is the slave of his desires. You have to tire out this desire and then direct it to

other aims than those few seconds of casual pleasure. (...) The joys you have experienced until now are only rudimentary. You need a more refined, more complete delight in order to learn to despise this one, and then you must strive for another, still more unattainable delight which surpasses the last more perfect one.' A boy like The Bull would never learn this. 'It would be better for him to do penance as a sacred temple prostitute. Then he will be humiliated, he will be used like an animal, they will anoint his member with butter and force him to insert it in a Yoni of wood or stone. In this way his sexual excesses will at least be pleasing to the gods.' " (Nair 1968, 31-47)

This passage beautifully illustrates the profound difference between the Indian sexual asceticism and that of the Christian West. Narayana's guru is convinced that a man's denial of sexual pleasure will only be agreeable to the gods if he gives up something he knows and values highly, and in this he is in accord with ancient Greek philosophy (Foucault 1984, 77). It is the wisdom of Hinduism to permit the taking of a vow of chastity only to those who have already acquired sexual experience and thoroughly enjoyed its lust (Daniélou 1981, 22). The guru is not frightened of doing something evil, it is not out of cramped, external compulsion that he denies himself this joy. He knows sex is beautiful, but there are better things, and a wise man must try to reach higher and higher, until, knowing the most perfect joy, he will be indifferent to sex. This indifference he symbolises in his nudity: his sex organs are no more and no less important than the other parts of his body which no man tries to conceal.

At the end of his story, Narayana acknowledges that he has been unable to attain the perfection of a guru, and he thus again assumes his loincloth. In our culture, renouncing the joys of sex is twisted and unnatural; it is done in the belief that one is forsaking something wicked. The professional repressor of sex is "unkind, unclear, and moreover takes on the role of the spy, making the word 'morality' sound as if it mainly applied to sexuality." (Blüher 1966, 162)

In the guru's spiritual universe, on the other hand, no abstinence is expected from people who have not yet attained a higher wisdom. Everyone should try to climb as high as the gods may allow him. Those who simply enjoy life and its pleasures, who have little ambition, are often better men than those who strive for superiority (Daniélou 1983, 233-234). And if someone is predisposed by his nature to stay at the lowest rung of the ladder, he can even make his impulses serve the sublime in the sexual excesses of a temple prostitute. And so everything is in balance, everything is in harmony.

Nowhere, however, does the guru tell where this more perfect bliss which rises above the pleasures of sex might be found. Perhaps there is a hint in Jouhandeau's words: "You begin to love somebody for the pleasure he gave you and which made you forget all previous pleasures; afterwards you love him so much that the love you give him makes you forget your shared pleasure.

Finally you will love him so completely that the love of the love he taught you uplifts you above yourself and him." (1955, 526)

Sexual Distress of Youth

After centuries when the sexual needs of youth were not perceived as being especially problematic, Western society, over the past two centuries, has made it so, by extending the period of instruction and professional training which, in turn, precluded the possibility of an early marriage. With incredible cynicism, it put the burden of this evolution completely on the shoulders of youth, condemning and punishing boys and girls if they broke under this load and didn't observe the inflicted abstinence.

"How can anybody convince us that we should be abstinent, when we run around almost all the time with a hard-on?" cries one of Alexander's companions on hearing that Hippocrates, the physician, has advised people not to have sex during the summertime heat. Their teacher, Aristotle, doesn't, fortunately, agree with this advice. "The activity to which Venus and Amor urge us is necessary for good health. It restores the force of a numb athlete. It gives the voice its sonority, heals backaches, sharpens eyesight, prevents madness, drives melancholy away. Mankind simply cannot abstain from it. Hippocrates says the intestines age more rapidly if you eat only once a day; from this it must follow that the testicles will shrivel more quickly if you don't make them work." (Peyrefitte 1977, 473-474)

For people living close to nature this is self-evident. "Excited sexual organs don't listen to reason," is a proverb among the Indian Muria. Thus they reject birth control by means of withdrawal before ejaculation (coitus interruptus): "The moment you spurt your seed is the happiest of your life: how, then, could you retreat?" (Elwin 1959, 229, 295) In Europe during the Middle Ages, despite Christian doctrine, it was generally accepted that abstinence was unhealthy, especially for the young (Taylor 1953, 28). "The flesh of virgins shouldn't be kept in storage," goes an old German proverb, and a 15th Century jingle tells in no uncertain words just when a boy should start "to serve the women in bed":

*When he is the owner of a bed
And his thing stands stiff
He should buy a table and some food
And sheath his cock in the girl.
(Fuchs 1909, I Erg, 55)*

It was only many years later that adults, in the midst of the great social and economic evolution of the past 200 years, let themselves be persuaded by the

moral preachers that well brought-up youngsters "don't feel the least desire for sexual activity" before they have finished their professional training (Kentler 1970, 53). This was a rather cleverly compounded thought, for if a boy *did* experience such an urge it only proved that his parents didn't raise him properly. Terrified of their neighbours' contempt for them as bad mothers and fathers, the poor parents would now do everything in their power to inhibit the workings of this biological function in their son—or at least try to train him to keep such workings hypocritically secret. "God gave you your sexuality in order for you not to use it—for the time being," they said in effect. "God gave you your brains, but let us do all the thinking for you on this matter—until further notice." If the boy was still not convinced, he was clearly of a bad sort.

How greatly the potential development of "nice", obedient boys was retarded by forcing them to renounce their natural impulses was, and still is, never mentioned (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 202). Emotional and erotic/sexually coloured fantasies, thoughts and activities (like masturbation)—alone or with a partner—such as accompany natural maturation, can hardly be suppressed at this age (nor even in the infant) without dire consequences. (van der Zijl 1976, 521)

"Our species exhibits the most powerful sex drive and the most indefatigable sexual capacity of any animal species on earth." (Currier 1981, 18) And at puberty this drive attains its peak. This is not to say that it was previously asleep; there is, in truth, no "latency period".

367 Samuel S. Janus and Barbara E. Bess had kindergarten and elementary school pupils make drawings and write little stories about the opposite sex. They quote as a typical example for the 9- to 10-year-old boys: "I would like to take my girl out someday when I grow up tall. I would get marry, and sure I will have twin babies. I will stick my dick in her pussy. I will suck her lips." And another: "I like girls to give them babies. I like girls to kiss them. I like girls to get them in my bed. I like girls to stick them. I like girls' legs. I like girls' sexy shapes. I like girls that let the boys stick it in them. I like girls to have private parties, and then I'll do my thing and put on my door Do Not Disturb." (Janus & Bess 1981, 80)

There is no reason for restraint upon the joys of sex save respect and consideration for the partner. Nothing should be forced upon the unwilling, upon any individual who either wants to do nothing at all or who refuses to participate in some particular act. Everything must be done to avoid transmittal of disease (gonorrhoea, syphilis, herpes, AIDS) and undesired pregnancy. Aside from this sense of responsibility and its logical consequences, nothing should be allowed to frustrate the desire for the most natural and intense delight that sex gives to the body and the mind. Respect, responsibility make love possible (Borneman 1978, 559, 595). This should be the guiding principle of a sound sexual up-bringing.

Good upbringing allows the child "to experience himself as a sexual being, or rather as an auto- and socio-sexual being." If father and mother or the people closest to the child show their affection physically, fondling and kissing each other, embracing and not hiding their lust; if they speak frankly about sexual arousal and satisfaction, the child experiences "socio-sexuality in vivo". But in addition to these examples he needs his own experiences. "Children, like other human beings, need experience; they—like other human beings—should be the subjects of their experiences; just as with adults, children learn from concrete objects, problems and direct experiences." (Gürtler 1978, 105). "If we are going to pay respect to children's feelings and emotions, we cannot consider sexual interaction involving children as criminal." (Langfeldt 1981, 43). "It is increasingly recognised that the child and his or her sexuality need to be taken seriously at all age levels, similar to adult sexuality. From the perspective of children's rights, the child should be considered to have full rights to pleasurable experiences from its own body." (Langfeldt 1981, 72; see also Farson 1974)

Most distortions, journeys down the wrong road in the field of sexuality, could have been avoided if, as children and adolescents, these people had enjoyed more freedom to start collecting rich and varied practical sexual experiences (Morris 1976, 140)

The boy-lover for whom his young friend's sexual evolution is unendingly fascinating, who wants to be the boy's paternal friend and wants to increase the boy's capacity for sexual pleasure, may well be trying to prevent the re-enactment of "his own, often ignominious and miserable childhood, just as the average father hopes to realise his own potential at last in his son." He fights "the partial loneliness of the child to which he once fell victim himself. His perception of the wrongness of public opinion is also a confession that he experienced this all in a wrong world, in an absurd, disfigured world full of anti-sexual repression." (Hohmann 1980, 34-35). He shouldn't, however, limit this battle to one particular friendship, otherwise the boy might well ask, "What's the use of being sexually liberated if nobody else is?" (Valentine 1979, 84) Society as a whole must be included in his battle. But first and foremost the boy-lover will concentrate his endeavours on his young friend.

Visual Aids

What the boy-lover cannot show with his own body he will often explain and teach with books and images. Many boy-lovers have a stock of erotic stories, pictures, movies, video-tapes, adapted to the tastes of their visitors, thus largely heterosexual. Most boys like these very much, since such erotica stimulate their fantasies and expand their knowledge. They satisfy an urgently felt need.

Unfortunately, as we have already seen, the majority of these products is of poor quality, unrealistic, and they only depict activities, not the emotions and sensations which accompany them.

Studies have been made which show that pictures (photos, slides) are more strongly arousing than stories, and movies even more so than pictures (Crawford 1980, 151; Freund 1981, 157-158). Watching others do it makes one less shy oneself; it can even liberate a boy from groundless shame over his own desires. The proof that the acts which he secretly longs to perform are quite usual and natural for others can take an enormous load off his mind. It can also make him more physically free with his friend.

368 "A French acquaintance visited me for several days with his 15-year-old lover Bernard. The boy had heard of my collection of sex films and asked to have a look at them. 'What would you prefer, hetero- or homo-movies?' I asked. 'Hetero, of course! I'm not the least bit interested in queer films.' And so every night before going to bed we had a film. But on the fourth night I said, 'Sorry, no more movies. You've seen all my hetero films—I don't have any more.' 'Well,' the boy said, 'if there's nothing else, we could see a gay film.' So I chose one of two German boys, 15-year-olds like Bernard, strong, healthy, athletic, masculine boys, both with nice-looking faces. They were really in love with one another and expressed this in the film in every possible way. Bernard seemed completely fascinated with the show. The next morning his friend told me, 'Last night Bernard was really mad with passion. He just went crazy with desire; he was much more wound up than after any of the hetero movies. He was always too inhibited to suck my cock; real boys, he thought, just didn't do that. After watching how these two German boys sucked each other, he did it to me, too, with complete assurance—and pleasure. He confessed that he had always wanted to do this but he'd restrained himself because he was afraid it was unmanly.' (Personal communication)

369 Geraldo, a 15-year-old Sicilian boy, saw a movie of a man having intercourse with a woman at the house of an adult man he knew. He and his companions openly and unashamedly masturbated during the showing. The next day Geraldo returned with his 12-year-old brother Tanino, whom he dearly loved. He said to the man, "Tanino *must* see that film. I have found out that he has been jerking himself off, but he hasn't the slightest idea what all this means. He needs that movie to show him." Geraldo ordered Tanino to masturbate as the film was shown, setting an example himself. At first Tanino was too shy, but when he saw, on the screen, the man inserting his penis into the woman's vagina his excitement overwhelmed him and he immediately started imitating his older brother. (Personal communication)

In Turkey and in the Arab world, there is a widely performed puppet play in which the hero, with an enormous phallus, has sexual adventures with women in the bath-houses, with whores, and also with a policeman, a teacher and a general. The performances are enjoyed by young and old immensely (Sieval 1983, 4).

Sexual instruction using images is common with more primitive peoples, too. In the Awa tribe (New Guinea) men explain to boys how to have intercourse using "a wild fruit fashioned to represent a vulva and a piece of edible pitpit representing the penis." (Newman & Boyd 1982, 276) In the youth houses of the Indian Muria, where boys and girls spent the night, there are sculptures of a boy with an enormous penis embracing a girl. The boys claim that such statues are very useful in showing girls what they want to do with them (Elwin 1959, 144).

Prof. Hart de Ruyter of Groningen University, a children's psychiatrist, thinks that "pornographic" literature may help socialise the tensions of pubertal youngsters. These often outlawed publications are at times helpful. "The only really objectionable things are those texts and comics in which aggression is mixed with sex. (...) If society would accept a well-balanced amount of pornography, excitement about the longed-for forbidden fruit would diminish and we could help the teenager solve one of his pressing problems without exaggerated feelings of guilt." (1976, 210). A Scandinavian author, F. Festin, also advocates stimulating the erotic needs of children (quoted by Winkel 1972, 60).

The American youth psychiatrist Aaron Hass writes, "Pornography fills the void created by the lack of education provided by parents and teachers. It is a source of information for most teenagers who have no one to explicitly talk to about sex." "As long as we continue to fail in our responsibility to present sexual material in an accurate, sensitive way, teenagers will have to look to pornography for their education." (Hass 1979, 153, 161)

The desire to see how other people do it before you have a go at it yourself is quite reasonable. Nobody would give an inexperienced boy a camera without first showing him how to use it (Vinterberg 1983, 46), and girls are certainly more complicated and sensitive beings than cameras. One of Oskamp's subjects said, "I learned a great deal from movies, for example where there is good licking and sucking. Positions and that kind of thing. Certain sorts of porno could very well be used to instruct people about sexual practices." (Oskamp 1980, 88)

370 This is how some of Hass's subjects thought about erotic literature:

17-year-old boy: I was curious and the basic health education they give you in school is bullshit. I wanted to learn the real facts.

17-year-old boy: Magazines and books are great. They give you experience without doing anything.

17-year-old boy: I used to just look at the pictures. Now I like to read the articles to see what other people are doing sexually—so I know if I'm right. I wish I had read some of that stuff before I started having sex, because I would have been more comfortable. Also the articles about what girls enjoy from girls help me.

16-year-old boy: I enjoyed them because they gave me something to go by on where things are, how they're done, and how it feels.

About pictures and films, often used during masturbation, the boys said:

15-year-old boy: I did it because of the mystery and also because I fantasize while looking at them. I also masturbate while looking at pictures or reading magazines.

15-year-old boy: I like to look at great-looking naked bodies. It turns me on.

15-year-old boy: Most of all I like the pictures of the women. I often look at those pictures when I'm masturbating.

16-year-old boy: It gives me ideas for my fantasies.

17-year-old boy: I liked the way it aroused me and made me feel. I liked the images it formed in my mind when I masturbated. I also liked the fact that they educated me about the different ways of performing sex and ways of pleasing your partner.

15-year-old boy: We have cable-TV so I snuck down at 1:30 and watched movies which were borderline R/X. I liked them because they make great fantasies. They also act as a sort of instruction manual. I don't like them if they just throw in "fuck scenes" because I find them repulsive and I also find SM and kinky sex movies to be nauseating. (Hass 1979, 155, 157, 159)

That some boys are shocked and repulsed is usually due to their upbringing. Most are extremely curious. One is struck by how very little research there is on the effects of exposure to such material. It would cause a great commotion, a loud outcry of disgust, if scientists were to confront a large experimental population of minors with hard-core pornography in order to study their reactions. That no such outcry is heard when similar experiments are made on children with pictures and movies of hard-core violence is just another demonstration of how much less alarming our society finds physical cruelty than physical tenderness.

In any case, parents should have no illusions about their ability to prevent their sons from seeing erotic pictures. In Hass's investigation, 99% of the boys said they had looked at sex books and magazines, 58% had seen a sex movie (Hass 1979, 154). There is no reason to regret this. As Alec Graig said, "Erotic realism reflects a basically healthy and therapeutic attitude to life, and its effects on the average person are generally beneficial." (Quoted in Burton 1963, 39). The only problem Hass discerns is that the boy has no experienced person with whom he can discuss these matters. (1979, 161)

But the boy loved by a boy-lover *does* have such a person at hand. If he can find in the home of his adult friend a good collection of texts and pictures showing the various sexual activities, and if he can openly discuss them and the feelings they elicit with the man, then he has a great pedagogical head-start on his contemporaries (Eggenkamp 1978, 8). Exaggerations, distortions, unrealistic aspects of the depictions can now be discussed and put in proportion, something that is impossible if the boy can only enjoy such material in secret.

Haerberle (1978, 481) contrasts the so-called "obscene" magazines which "sometimes contain valuable sexual information in simple language" to the

much more harmful misinformation often found "in medical and psychiatric textbooks, encyclopedias, marital guides, police training manuals, catechisms, pastoral letters, and devotional literature." "Some of these booklets may well have a crippling effect on an unsophisticated young mind. (...) By comparison, most 'pornography' seems relatively harmless."

Of course, looking at erotic pictures or reading erotic texts will excite a boy's sexual appetite. But is it not morally better to excite his sexual thirst than to excite his thirst for money, as so much well-intentioned education tends to do? Hunger, thirst and sexual lust permit, in their satisfaction, at least temporary satiety, but there are no anatomical or psychological limits to monetary greed. It continues undiminished even when it has lost all usefulness for the individual (Karpman 1964, 375).

Since so much erotica gives an unrealistic picture of sex, one might propose that viewing real sexual behaviour would help young people.

In former times this was no problem at all. Until about 200 years ago, all over Europe (save in castles and, from the end of the 17th-Century, in the homes of the affluent bourgeoisie), families—father, mother, children, servants, guests—slept innocent of pyjamas in one room. Children were as familiar of sexual life as with birth and death. There was no need for sex education books (Dasberg 1975, 35). "In this system of living with the entire household, sexual communication, be it in the exchange of tenderness, kisses, etc., or in intercourse, was performed very much in the presence of others. But this implies that children, too, if only by their presence, participated in the sexual behaviour of their elders. Adults didn't think it indecent to express their sexual feelings, to conduct themselves sexually, in the presence of children. Likewise, it was not considered indecent for children to express their sexuality in age-appropriate ways." (Kunert 1978, 38-39)

It is absolutely incredible how "expert" literature totally ignores these facts, how it does so in order to paint a horror picture of the terrible consequences for the child's mind and soul if it is exposed to such a sight. Even an open-minded psychiatrist like Stekel urged "all parents to protect their children from impressions that could poison their fantasies." (1925, 734)

It is obvious, however, that an inexperienced child suddenly confronted with two convulsing bodies, panting and moaning, locked in the intensity of coitus, might be terrified and interpret this as an act of violence.

- 371 "A three-year-old boy, witnessing the intercourse of his mother with her lover, threatened the man: 'I will tell daddy that you are beating mom when he is not at home!'" (Stekel, 1925, 734)

What should be done, of course, is not to try to "save" children from the sight of intercourse but to tell them, truthfully and in terms they can understand, what it really is. "Infants may exhibit jealousy when their parents kiss and cuddle in their presence, while remaining apparently indifferent to the spectacle of actual intercourse." (West 1977, 41)

In our society what all too often happens is that a considerable number of children, especially those growing up in poverty, secretly and without any preparation, observe the act and, with no knowledge to fortify them, frightened and shocked, get a completely wrong idea of what is really going on.

Among Hertoft's subjects, young Danish soldiers, no less than 23% had observed others in intercourse. Of those who came from poor families, 24.5% of them had had this experience; of those from the middle class, 23.8%, and from richer families, 18.5%. (Hertoft 1968, II - 69). In the United States Yankowski found a higher percentage: 38% of his male subjects had at one time or another in their lives seen their parents having intercourse (1965, 168).

372 Hertoft gives some quotes which show the understandable variety in the reactions of younger and older boys:

"I was ten years old. They were my parents. I was very frightened. I was in bed, heard it, went back and looked through the keyhole."

"I was eight or nine. They were my parents. I don't know what I thought. I may have been a bit frightened; I'm sure I thought they were beating each other."

"I was eight or nine. They were my father and mother. I was not frightened. I thought it was good, instructive."

"I was fourteen. It was a farm-hand on a farm where I was visiting. He did it with me in the same room. I felt slightly embarrassed."

"I was fourteen. I was working in a hotel and saw it happening in a room, but I didn't understand it."

"At the time I was thirteen or fourteen, in a wood near Aalborg. I just stood still and watched."

"Some friends of mine at a party. I was fourteen. I thought it was quite natural."

"During a party. I was fourteen or fifteen. Friends. It makes you feel weak and excited all at the same time."

"I was sixteen. A friend of mine and his girl at a festival. You sneak away without making a noise when you see they are lying there having a good time." (Hertoft 1968, I 241-242)

373 Rainer at the age of 10 was hidden by his 13-year-old sister behind the curtains so he could see how she behaved with an adult sub-tenant. "Then she opened his fly and pulled out his thing. It was so gigantic and red—I'd never seen one before. I got so excited I had to look away. And when I looked back again, my sister jumped off his lap and threw off her clothes—and Mr. J. did the same thing. Then he fell down on my sister, and I saw his enormous thing again. It was so long and thick I couldn't believe my sister would be able to insert it into herself. But she did, and it went all the way in." (Stieber 1971, 37-38)

The problem has certainly been depicted with far too much tragedy in the "expert" literature. Prof. James E. Simmons of the University of Indianapolis says it is highly probable that many of his psychiatric patients have, as children, watched their parents having intercourse. "I cannot think of a single case in which the witnessing of the primal scene had made a significant contribution to the psychopathology." (*Sexual Behavior*, August 1971, 13). What *can* traumatise, of course, are scenes of brutality, such as a drunken father raping his 15-year-old daughter in the presence of her brothers aged 15, 11 and 10 (cited in Illinois Legislative 1980, 91-92). But the sight of loving and joyous sex will be positively accepted by children if they are properly prepared for it (Borneman 1978, 1455).

374 A correspondent of the *Anthropophyteia* (I, 206-207) wrote that, spending the night with farmers in Croatia, he often witnessed the husband satisfying his wife, both quite naked. He was rather embarrassed by the sight but observed that the children greatly enjoyed it.

375 A man of about thirty was having an affair with a divorcée, Ilse, mother of nine-year-old Myriam. "Thursday night Ilse and I were lying on the bed, both naked, in love-play, and Myriam looked on, radiant. I had just shown Ilse a newspaper article advising people not to have sex if there were also children in their beds. In my opinion it would be far better to advise parents not to fight in the presence of children. Ilse agreed completely. We were caressing each other; we went further and further, and this finally led to a most delicious fucking. Little Myriam was thrilled. "Is it nice, mommy?" she wanted to know, when Ilse started to moan. She enjoyed it with us with all her little body. When I put my hand out to her she gripped it firmly, as if she wanted to help me, assist us. She wanted to participate and actively contribute to our sexual pleasure. Her touch, the way she gripped me, excited me so much that I immediately had the most wonderful orgasm. That child sympathised and participated in our joy." (Personal communication)

376 An 11-year-old boy became a foster son of a young couple, and a few weeks later he was quite intimate with his new father. Out walking together one day, the father asked the boy whether he had had any sexual education. The boy hadn't, and the father gave him the most important information. But in so doing he didn't talk about some abstract man and woman; he told how he did it with his wife and what a wonderful pleasure it was for both of them. Finally he asked the boy, "Would you like to see it happen?" The boy nodded eagerly. Back home, they asked the mother and she agreed. That night the three showered together, which allowed the boy to familiarise himself with their bodies. They let him touch their genitals, inspect them closely. They then went to the bedroom where the young couple united themselves in intercourse with the boy looking on. Many years later the boy, now a young man, said, "That introduction to sexuality was beautiful and unforgettable. I'll be grateful all the rest of my life to my foster parents for this." (Personal communication)

V. SEXUAL REPRESSION AND SEXUAL LIBERATION

377 A fourteen-year-old Austrian schoolboy told a teacher, who was discussing sex with him, "Over vacation I was staying with my parents in a hotel. One day I went into the wrong room by mistake, and there on the bed were a man and a woman fucking. They laughed at my surprise and invited me to stay and watch. I did, since I was very curious. I found it really lewd!" (Dossier S.E. 54, Brongersma Foundation)

378 Mrs. Rouweler-Wutz (1976, v) told about a family she knew. The children, then 11 and 14, had been familiar from infancy on with naked bodies, erections and sex play. They were very affectionate children, but not, interestingly enough, at all "sexualised".

379 The Dutch philosopher Fons Elders brought up his three sons this way. They passed through puberty without the usual problems, were allowed to sleep with a boy-friend or a girl-friend when they wanted it. They were used to nudity and witnessed their parents' intercourse. But nothing was forced on them; they were not urged to participate in anything. Adults themselves now, the three sons have no difficulty discussing their sexual lives quite openly. One of their wives says her husband is much better at making love than any other boy she has met. Talking about sex, he claims, isn't enough; you must have experience, and this always comes as a shock: the first time you have an ejaculation while masturbating, your first intercourse, when it hurts. And the sons agree that they will bring up their children in the same way, making no problems about sex. (Viva, 16 Aug 1985)

"In the United Kingdom and all the rest of the 'civilised' world, a child very seldom witnesses sexual acts between adults, heterosexual or homosexual: so the male (or female) child does not learn by example, as do children in many 'primitive' societies: perhaps if modern children did learn as some so-called primitive children do about sex by example, there might be far less of a personal and social 'hang-up' about the subject in the so-called civilised societies today?" (Barrington 1981, 76)

With the Awa tribe in New Guinea, at the wedding ceremony, "the older women may begin the proceedings by pulling their own husbands down on top of themselves to show the young women exactly what is intended." (Newman & Boyd 1982, 281). With the Muria in India, it was the common sleeping-house where the boy learned everything. One of them said, "Sometimes big girls are crazy about young boys, and then they try to teach them. But life in the sleeping-house teaches us everything. How could the young boys control themselves? Who doesn't want to eat when he sees someone else eating a tasty morsel in his presence?" In fact, in the house there were boys and girls who performed intercourse for everyone to see. If a boy wished, every night he could watch his friends having sex. Also there was a tradition that the boys should watch a newly-wed couple through the chinks in the walls of the bridal room. (Elwin 1959, 261, 274)

Homosexual relations among groups of boys are habitual among the negroes of the Cameroon. When one of the older boys takes, or steals, a wife, he brings

Sexual Abstinence and Self-Control

his whole group to her, exciting the younger boys with the sight of his having intercourse with the girl, and so encouraging them to satisfy themselves with her, too (Italiaander 1969, 112). It is likewise common in Polynesia for young men to show boys how to satisfy a girl (Borneman 1978, 1252). The Tahitians, who were considered the happiest, gentlest, friendliest and most generous people on earth before they declined through contact with the West, had a religious order of celebrants, the Arioi, who had been trained to give public sexual performances and travelled from island to island (Haeberle 1978, 282, 330). In the Japanese Yoshiwara, such performances were organised for the benefit of young trainees (Bowie 1970, 184).

380 William Howard wrote a nice story in which the Roman Emperor Tiberius arranged an educational performance for his young adoptive son Caligula. In a glade in the forest Caligula sees standing in the brilliant sunshine a 16-year-old satyr with an enormous phallus enjoying the favours of two nymphs. And in another part of the woods he sees acrobats from Crete, four boys and two girls, brothers and sisters, performing a most varied sexual ballet showing all conceivable positions (Foral 1981, 73-74).

This may be fiction, but it is a historical fact that in Paris the Duke of Orleans, regent of France, put on naked balls to instruct the crown prince, the future Louis XV. They began in 1720, when Louis was 10 years old, and continued for three years. People did everything they could to get invitations to these affairs, even though they would have to dance in the nude and perform intercourse in front of the young prince who, in turn, was surrounded by girls of his own age doing everything they could to imitate what the adults were up to (Borneman 1978, 39; Foral 1981, 195). Louis married when he was 15.

Exercise and Practice

We can now ask whether verbal instruction, instruction by photos, films, demonstrations, is really enough to prepare a human being, especially a boy, for his role in sexual relationships. Borneman (1978, 491-492) notes that children tend to communicate their sexual knowledge to their friends not with words but with their bodies, and adds, "There is nothing wrong with this: it is the only way to acquire sexual experience." The ancient Greeks thought that the boy's senses had to be educated just as systematically as his mind and his muscles. His sexual capacities could only be developed by practising intercourse (Borneman 1978, 345).

Personal experiences enrich. Talking and reading about sex is very different from actually doing it (Steens 1980, 273); doing, after all, is the common way children learn. In the beginning, for the boy, "himself" is the same as his body. "This body is the starting point for all his experiences and activities." (de Bruyn 1972, 4) "Touching is, more than words, the natural way a child learns something." (Schärer & Hocquenghem 1976, 60) Skin-to-skin contact is of

paramount importance (van der Zijl 1976, 157). In embracing sexually with another body, a boy learns what he could nowhere else learn, certainly not as clearly and convincingly.

"In the higher mammals, the inborn physiologic controls of sexual behavior are not sufficient to guarantee 'successful' mating, but have to be augmented by learning." (Haeberle 1978, 128). Since the controlled experiments of the zoologists Harry and Margaret Harlow at the University of Wisconsin (See "Social Deprivation in Monkeys", *Sci. Amer.* 207 1962, 136-146) it is now generally recognised that monkeys and apes need sexual training in their childhood; without it they evolve into sexual invalids. If the young male monkey is not embraced, caressed, carried and fondled by its mother, it grows to be a bad-humoured bachelor and doesn't mate at all. Without frequent body-contact with others (mutual grooming, for example) the young monkey will be abnormal, emotionally troubled and asocial (Alcock 1976, 116-117). If he cannot have varied sex-play with other young monkeys, he won't be able to perform intercourse when he reaches adulthood (Borneman 1978, 514; Gagnon 1965, 216; Kruijt 1976, 35, 37; West 1977, 118).

Rhesus monkeys, for example, copulate with the female standing with her hands and feet planted firmly on the ground while the male mounts her from behind, putting his hands upon her haunches and clasping her calves with his feet. The animals learn this behaviour in the first year of their lives, by imitation, and if they are given no opportunity to do this they are quite unable to perform it later (van der Werff ten Bosch 1980, 348). In one experiment, a male and a female chimpanzee, each raised in isolation, were brought together as adults. Both masturbated regularly, but they never touched each other (Morris 1976, 81, 83).

Of course, human life is different from that of the apes. What the sexually neglected young monkey lacks, the sexually neglected young human may make up, at least partially, by masturbation and its accompanying fantasies. But many authors (we only have to cite Alcock, Borneman, Buffière, Ford & Beach, Langfeldt, Morris and West) see in these observations about the higher primates evidence of just how much the young human being, too, must have practical experience if he is to be able not just to copulate with a woman but to elevate this union into a refined and ennobling activity. The man who, as a boy, had richly varied, practical sexual experiences will be able to perform sexual intercourse in a more human, less bestial, way—but still animated by an "animal" passion. For intercourse should be far more than the telescoping of genitals. If parents take pains, year after year, to teach their son good table manners, why should they suppose he will spontaneously acquire the good bed manners expected among civilised people? (Califia 1980, 21; Sanders 1977, 51) There is much more to it than the body motions. "In general, within our culture,

the achievement of satisfactory sexual activity with another person is dependent on the development of some sort of relationship (however minimal) with the potential partner. Different relationships will require different etiquettes, ranging from the relatively simple demands of responding appropriately to a solicitation by a prostitute to the complex requirement of formal courtship. Successful sexual encounters depend on knowledge of, and a capacity to follow, such codes of etiquette or systems of rules. Serious deficits in the area of 'heterosocial skills' would prevent access to an adult sexual partner, even though the pattern of sexual preference was normal and the capacity for sexual functioning intact." (Howells 1981, 71) We may remember what was said about pseudo-paedophiles in Chapter Two: people who didn't acquire such heterosocial skills and therefore take a child as substitute while really preferring an adult sexual partner.

But first of all the physical skill should be acquired. Sexual instruction and education will always remain incomplete unless there is provision for experiment and practice. Like all other primates, the human child must discover these things with all of his five senses (Borneman 1978, 109). Boys need practical experience even more than girls, as is true of all mammals (de Boer 1978, 35; Ford & Beach 1968, 209-210, 259-260). Since the male partner is expected to show more initiative and more skills in sex, his is the more difficult task. Primate males are trained for years, the females hardly at all. There must be more than erection and arousal to perform the act correctly. An adult chimpanzee, deprived of sexual play in childhood, will attempt copulation but fail to insert his penis, and even if he can accomplish insertion it will take him a lot of practice and much experimentation before he can copulate in a way acceptable to the female and that will lead to fertilisation (Ford & Beach 1968, 208-209).

Boys are beaten more often, and cuddled less, than girls, and so they are seldom taught that their bodies are erogenous and are frightened of tender feelings (de Bruyn 1980, 152, 154). When sexually inexperienced boys attempt intercourse they usually go about it in a clumsy, coarse, even brutal way, bent only on satisfying themselves (See example 98). It is the same with some animals: the act is more like rape (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 31). Criminologists have found that men who rape women and children had on average less sex-play in their youth than is normal (Geiser 1979, 89).

There is "little doubt that males as well as females find it much easier to train their own sexual capacities and to adjust to each other while they are still young." (Haeberle 1978, 175) Ford and Beach also note that in those societies where sex play is liberally permitted in childhood and adolescence the prospects for lustful and mutually satisfactory sexual relations in marriage are better (1968, 211). "Sex, like almost every other human learning activity, is (...) best begun at an individual's earliest physically possible age." (Barrington 1981, 185)

"Boys in puberty have difficulties when *suddenly* they have to play their new role, without having had the opportunity for ample learning experiences." People then call this "typical problems of puberty", but, in truth, they are artificially engendered by denying the youth sexual exercise. Like all social behaviour, sexual behaviour must be learned very early (Baumann 1983, 72-73, 79). Money advocates taking a lesson from other primates and from anthropology, that is to "reinstate the natural legitimacy of coital rehearsal in the play of young children (Jones 1982, 92). Morris says there would be less "extreme fetishists (...) had the developing adolescent become gradually more experienced in sexual matters at an earlier age and had his initial sexual exploration been richer and less constricted." (1976, 140)

There can be no doubt that regular activity of the sexual organs contributes to health. "We know that disuse causes atrophy. Every other muscle and gland in the body tends to atrophy if not used. Why should the genital organs form any exception?" (Allen 1949, 163). Their regular use strengthens them (Abraham 1969, 60). Elwin points to the children as he found them in the Muria tribe who had sex every night in their dormitories. "They show no symptoms of being deprived nor of excess, These boys and girls have shining eyes and happy faces, and don't look like victims of bestial desire." (1959, 430)

Every bodily capacity can be increased by training, and sexual potency is no exception (Borneman 1978, 1112-1113). The boy who starts early using his penis will gain by this for the whole rest of his life: he will be able to use it better and more often. He will be lucky if he has the good fortune to find an experienced adult who gives him room for sexual experiment, encourages him to profit from this and with whom he can discuss his experiences openly and free of shame (Sanders 1977, 26).

Most boys, however, find their parents implacably opposed to such an idea, victims themselves of our cultural aversion to lust. The strength of this aversion is demonstrated by the fact that therapists are frequently consulted by parents upset that their son is "precociously" sexually active but never by mothers and fathers worried about a lack of sexual interest in their son. And yet the latter is a much more troubling and worrisome symptom (Hanry 1977, 129-131). Much male impotence can be attributed to negative parental attitudes toward sex (Biener 1983, 124).

Two objections are commonly raised. First of all, early, varied sexual experience might make males tired young of sex and lust. But the contrary is really the case: "It makes the person susceptible to more and more forms of stimulation, to be more easily excitable and more strongly motivated sexually." (Frenken 1976, 29-31). "Ethnological evidence suggests that the capacity for enjoyable heterosexual intercourse is enhanced in societies permissive toward childhood sexuality (Ford & Beach). This accords well (...) with the findings

of Kinsey et al." (Gadpaille 1981, 98). "Late starters generally enjoy less sex and cease at earlier ages." (Barrington 1981, 101)

A second objection is that the sexual appetite is stimulated at an age when the child is "not yet intelligent enough to deal with it in a positive way." (Wegner 1953, 60) We have already seen how mistaken such an objection is in Chapters Three and Four.

In the Dutch NISSO study, only one-quarter of the parents interviewed were unopposed to their adolescent children having intercourse, and those for the most part stipulated that it should only be performed with a single partner within the context of an intimate relationship. Even then, only 18% would allow it to be done in their own homes. Fifty percent disapproved of their children masturbating (de Regt 1982, 57).

Yet masturbation, as the Greeks clearly saw (Bullough 1976, 99), is a natural substitute for intercourse and the most common introduction to sexual life. In many "primitive" tribes (as with the Hopi and Siriono Indians) parents see it as their duty to encourage their sons to make a habit of rubbing their penises, and will even help them (Ford & Beach 1968, 202). What fathers won't do in our societies, an older loving friend, with pleasure, will.

381 There is an amusing anecdote about the famous Prince de Condé (1621-1686) who commanded the armies of Louis XIV and loved boys. He met a charming 15-year-old schoolboy at an inn and took him to his room and questioned him about his relations with his friends. He then asked, "But surely you rub your pike?" inserting his hand into the trousers of the blushing boy. "But how is it, then," he continued, "that you don't have it stiff?" "I beg your pardon, monsieur, but my respect for you prevents me." "Oh, but I have a stiff one, myself!" (Lever 1985, 138)

It is certainly an important task, for fathers as well as boy-lovers, to set boys' minds at rest wherever there might be fears of the possible bad effects of this activity. The famous Swedish author Strindberg told in his journal how he trembled with mortal fear, since he was sure he would be either dead or insane before he reached 25 because he couldn't stop masturbating (Abraham 1969, 95). During those years of the 19th Century a certain Dr. Graham taught "that the loss of an ounce of semen was equivalent to the loss of several ounces of blood" and a female expert held "that the sexual orgasm was more debilitating to the system than a day's work." (Bullough 1976, 544, 549) The scoundrels who poisoned youth with these invented horror stories have fortunately lost most of their fatal influence nowadays, but we still find traces of their lies. Langfeldt, a Norwegian youth psychiatrist, therefore recommended that adult and boy masturbate in each other's presence in order to cleanse the activity of shame. At first, many boys perform it clumsily and brutally; the adult can teach him how to improve his technique. As in all other areas of human endeavour,

there are boys with talent and those without. An American father told Hite (1981, 600), "Masturbation is a great joy to me. I have told my boys to enjoy it and revel in it."

If the adult actually demonstrates, on himself, it will be the most convincing argument he could ever advance. Penal laws criminalising such activity are hardly in the interest of mental health. Langfeldt reports from Norway, "Very few adolescents could be characterised as having a confident attitude concerning masturbation, that is, one free from shame and guilt feelings. Adolescent boys in the author's studies who had experienced ongoing masturbatory relationships with adult men had more confident attitudes toward masturbation." (1981, 69-70)

The chief worry for many boys is in the accompanying fantasies. A boy's entire sexuality is expressed in his masturbation. Even if he is convinced that all boys do it and that it is a healthy relief of bodily tensions, he may worry over his fantasies. He is lucky if he finds an adult man in whom he can confide and with whom he can discuss his fears freely. Together they may explore his hidden desires.

Masturbation is nearly never, even in puberty, a purely physical, mechanical act. Lustful images, fantasies commonly accompany it. Among Hass's subjects, 89% of the 15-16-year-old boys and 93% of the 17-18-year-olds said they had them (1979, 92). What they tell about them is very much in the official line of what is traditionally supposed to be a young male's eroticism.

382 *15-year-old boys (inexperienced)*: "Some scenario where a beautiful girl I've never seen enters my bedroom and slowly undresses me and kisses me and my penis and eventually I do the same to her and then we have intercourse." Another: "I think about girls laying down in front of me and letting me do anything I want with them." Another: "They usually involve a beautiful girl who I am with, undressing each other, fondling and kissing each other, masturbating each other, having sixty-nine, and then having sex." Another: "I think about kissing a girl's vagina and breasts. I also fantasise about a girl doing oral sex to me." Another: "I think about me and my girl-friend in bed. I'm sucking on her tits and we're having intercourse. Then she sucks my dick and I'm licking her pussy." Another: "Usually a naked girl I know from somewhere comes up to me. We kiss, I caress her breasts while she masturbates me. Then I thrust my penis into her, and she moans my name while her hips swish madly."

15-year-old boys (experienced): "Usually about having intercourse or other sexual contacts with a girl. Like kissing her body and caressing her vagina with my tongue. Also having her touch and kiss my penis." Another: "That a great-looking girl will be forward and actually lead you to the bedroom. Then she will undress you and give you head. Then you will make love to her." Another: "I think of putting my dick inside her and going into all these positions. Then she gives me head." Another: "Taking off a girl's clothes, and fondling her breasts and vagina. Having her give me head, and then intercourse in a pool."

16-year-old boys: "Making love with a girl I am in love with at the time." Another: "That the girl I love I am fucking or she is giving me a blow job." Another: "They usually consist of sixty-nine, or a girl sucking me off, or me licking her vagina, touching her breasts, kissing her mouth. Sometimes I think about two girls having sixty-nine with each other or putting their fingers in each other's vagina."

17-year-old boy: "When I used to masturbate I would picture myself on top of a gorgeous woman. We would be kissing and I would rub my penis up and down her vagina. Then I would have sex with her until orgasm occurred."

18-year-old boy: "About my girl-friend and the things we've done sexually. Like her giving me head, me eating her, and the various ways we've had intercourse."

Only a few reported fantasies more out of the "acceptable" line. Two 17-year-olds fantasised about "fucking a girl in the ass." "Some older adolescents reported fantasies involving sexual contact with more than one person at the same time." And only one 16-year-old was quoted: "Most of the time I fantasise about having sex with men. Sometimes they're guys at school, sometimes guys I've had sex with." (Hass 1979, 93-94, 96, 116-117, 119-120)

But since the individual's whole sexuality is expressed in his masturbation, it is evident that at a time of life when sexual preferences are less pronounced and fixed—are, in fact, rather polymorphous—homosexuality, sadism and masochism will most likely play an important, if seldom admitted, role. Heterophile boys sometimes have homosexual fantasies, just as homophile boys have heterosexual ones (Bieber 1962, 209), and both dream of incest (Langfeldt 1981, 41). Such fantasies can be very upsetting to a boy, make him fear for his "normality", terrify him that he might be "one of those". The man who is successful in making a boy speak of such fantasies and desires does him a great service; explaining that every boy has such dreams sometimes, he can put the youngster's mind at rest.

At puberty the skin acquires a new sensitivity which increases the boy's longings for caresses and fondling by someone he likes (Jans 1973, 28). Every body has certain areas where it is especially excitable and where caressing is particularly welcome. These "erogenous zones" are common to all men, but there is much individual variation. It is important for a boy to explore his own body, to find out how best to elicit lustful sensations in himself so he can tell his partners how to please him most during sex. Prof. Verveen (1977, 17) considers masturbation an essential way this investigation is carried out. "In the final analysis, people have to find out for themselves which parts of their own (or their partner's) bodies most readily respond to caress." (Haeberle 1978, 33; see also Hass 1979, 101) Erogenous zone number one, of course, is the penis. Only recently was it discovered that there is wide variation in exactly where the most sensitive places on the penis lie (Verveen 1980, 327). And over 100 years ago it was recognised that with many pubertal boys, pressure on the belly produces a violent erection, and, bent over a pole, the side of a bathtub

or a table, they are taken by a kind of automatic impulse to thrust the penis forward—the natural motions of coitus (*Zeitschrift für Ethnologie* 1871, 201).

Beginning about 1920, science has concerned itself with the “sexual response curve” or “orgasm curve”. This is a graphic representation of lustful feelings during sexual activity as reflected in the heartbeat. At first it was thought that there would be a specific difference between the sexes: in women a slowly rising curve, then a series of peaks, each normally higher than the last, followed by a slowly descending curve, in men mounting more rapidly to the peak (followed, infrequently, by other and even lower peaks), finally quickly descending (Dickinson 1949; Masters & Johnson 1966). Recent research questions this model and emphasises individual variation (Haeberle 1978, 34; Verveen 1980, 322-326). It is important for a boy to familiarise himself with his own characteristic sexual response pattern and that of his partner, keeping in mind the problems that might arise from their differences.

Even when a boy does know how to masturbate, instruction and practice can make it better so his climax can achieve a fine intensity (Verveen 1977, 15). For example, orgasm usually lasts for only a few seconds, but with the right kind of stimulation it can be prolonged to 20 seconds or even a minute (Verveen 1977, 20). Tantra exercises prove that the male may learn to control his reflexes by willpower and so reach a series of orgasmic peaks, one right after the other. Tantra distinguishes three kinds of orgasm: a) blind pleasure, without consciousness or emotion; b) joyful and quick ejaculation in or upon the body of the partner one was able to win; c) subtle, meditative orgasm without ejaculation, an extasis going beyond the frontiers of the body and experienced most of all in the brain, which is our most essential sexual organ (Naslednikov 1981, 114-115).

Haeberle finds it deplorable that so few adults encourage or even condone the sexual experiences of the young—at just that time of life when sexual pleasure should be carefully nourished (1978, 480).

In Chapter Three we discussed the technique of prolonging and increasing sexual pleasure during masturbation by repeatedly interrupting the stimulation on the brink of orgasm. While 68% of males do it this way, 26% only slow down the motion, while 6% use mental control—thinking about less exciting things (Hite 1982, 868). The only advice that Hass (1979, 101) would give to the boys “is to prolong their self-stimulation before orgasm so that they can start conditioning their sexual response system to last longer when having sexual relations with a partner.” Many men are used to doing this (Hite 1982, 572).

383 “When masturbating for pleasure I delay orgasm as long as possible so as to enjoy the feelings of arousal. I build up to ‘almost’, then stop or change the action until I’m no longer ‘almost’, then build up some more. This makes things much more exciting.

I get a good inner feeling without being through, and the eventual orgasm itself is much more intense than if I’d come right away.” (Hite 1982, 422)

“I think masturbating has given me a good sense of my body and how to control the pleasure, so that if I feel myself coming too close to an unwanted orgasm, I know how to relax and let the tension go down.” (Hite 1982, 417)

There is a special grip with which an approaching orgasm can be prevented or delayed: a strong pinching of the glans. A partner can do it with the tip of his thumb underneath the glans (where the foreskin is attached to it) and his forefinger and middle finger stretched laying left and right on the upper side. A boy should be able to instruct his girl- or boy-friends about this. Some men even use salves like Nupercainal (a hemorrhoid treatment) or Delay to make the head of the penis insensitive and prolong erection, with various results (Hite 1982, 418).

Such help in the control of ejaculation will be most useful to the boy later when he begins sexual relations with the opposite sex. Most girls and women, in order to reach real satisfaction, need a much longer performance than many males are able to give. If the male ejaculates after only one minute of thrusting with his penis, only 25% of women will have reached orgasm too: it takes 11 minutes to satisfy 50% of them, and 16 minutes to satisfy the rest (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 174-175). Of the men, 70% say they ejaculate too quickly (Hite 1982, 860), 85% do everything in their power during intercourse to delay it, but the maximum some men can reach is five minutes (Pietropinto & Simenauer *ibid.*).

Deliberate, purposeful practice in the prolonging of masturbation should therefore start early in youth (Hanry 1977, 101), and well-performed masturbation is a big step on the way to sexual love with a partner. Langfeldt discovered that males who started practising this in boyhood said later, as adults, that they had very good control of their orgasms (1981, 68). Men of the Yoga cult, after special training, may even be able to continue ejaculation-free intercourse for hours on end (Borneman 1978, 171).

384 “Happening on one occasion to check the stimulation about two-thirds way to orgasm, I experienced a miniature orgasm like the childish one, but with no declension of the tumescence, and I was able to repeat this maneuver several times before the full orgasm. This I later practised in coitus prolongatus—giving the partner time to come up. I had already got into the way of poisoning the feeling on its climax. The ejaculator reflex, being habituated to this, seems to set in with its throbs when the maneuver is simulated, though no semen has yet been poured into the bulbous portion for the ejaculators to act upon.” (Ellis 1913, III - 339)

In the Hite investigation, only 60% of the males said they practised this technique (Hite 1982, 867). But there is also another reason, quite apart from becoming a better lover, why it should be taught to boys. It doesn’t just prolong the pleasure; it also, for a majority, increases the final spasm. “I found that the longer the period of arousal,

the more intense and satisfying my orgasm." (Hite 1982, 510) 88% of the experienced males were of the same opinion (Hite 1982, 868).

- 385 A well-practised boy in an encouraging setting can attain impressive feats. 15-year-old Larry, a handsome, sexually well-endowed, vivid Londoner of good character who liked to have sex with men and boys, pleasurably earned a little pocket money by modelling nude for photographers. One day he arrived at the home of his adult friend Chuck, saying, "I brought along one of my school friends and we want to have sex. Could we use your bedroom?" Both undressed and jumped into bed. Chuck kept the door to his living room ajar and now and then had a look. For three hours the two were continually in action, like the man in Hite's report (1982, 475) "fucking, playing, laughing, screaming, groaning, flailing, gasping". Then, exhausted, they came to Chuck for some food and drink. Larry said proudly, "We both haven't got a drop of spunk left between us!" (Personal communication)

The inability of many boys to sustain the sexual union for very long, coupled with their clumsiness, deprives many girls of their pleasure. Of the 15- to 18-year-old American girls questioned by Hass, 27% never experienced orgasm with their boy-friends, and only 6% always did (1979, 109). Male excitement is often enhanced and elevated by psychological factors. A boy will be "stimulated by mere sights and sounds, or by erotic fantasies and anticipations" while girls are much less susceptible to these factors and consequently need more purely physical stimulation (Haeberle 1978, 55, 57).

The Dutch Roman Catholic bishops ordered a sociological report on family and marriage, and in 1960 they received it. Its contents were so shocking that it was never publicised. Time after time the reader is confronted by the desperate cries of married women saying that marriage and family are beautiful institutions, but why do they have to be disfigured by this horrible business of sex? How was it possible that an all good creator had invented such a sordid, painful and disgusting method of procreation? (Weterman *et al.* 1960)

Heterosexual intercourse is a delicate, rather complicated activity. An inexperienced boy, responding solely to his own lust, usually goes about it brutally, and if the girl, too, is inexperienced, the difficult, painful act of breaking the hymen on first intercourse may be nothing short of physical torture.

- 386 Omar: "I'm white, Christian, Republican, fifteen years old. (...) A friend of mine got laid last Saturday. He didn't enjoy it a whole lot, because (quote) 'She's fat and even her tits are ugly. When I put it in her she bled like the pig she is all over the floor.' " (Friday 1981, 519)

"Breuer and Freud pointed out that the bridal night is practically often a rape." (Ellis 1913, VI - 526). Hass (1979, 127) proposed to his subjects the following: "I think it is important for a boy to have sexual experience with a few different people before he settles down with one person." Of the 15- to 16-year-old girls, 59% agreed (boys 65%), of the 17- to 18-year-old girls, 64% agreed (boys 59%). Only 15% and, respectively, 17% of the girls thought a boy should be virgin when he got married. The figures for boys were 8% and 9%.

In the NISSO research a girl said, "An experienced boy does it in such a way that you, too, have some pleasure. You can't trust the inexperienced: they only think about their own satisfaction, and afterwards they boast about it to everybody." (de Boer 1978, 49) In a Swiss investigation, 66% of the girls preferred an experienced partner, and 71% of the girls and 76% of the boys advocated pre-marital intercourse (Biener 1983, 73, 111)

No argument can be seriously advanced for making sex a separate category from every other human capacity, one that doesn't have to be learned, as walking upright and swimming are learned (Plummer 1981, 240-241). "It takes time to learn to properly fuck a woman," one of Hite's subjects wrote, and this may explain why a majority of 73% of middle aged men thinks that the pleasure of sex increases with the years (Hite 1982, 434; 1982, 884). Animal studies have stressed the importance of learning intercourse.

Psychologists have discovered that the period of youth passes in phases, and it is impossible to make up in a later phase what was neglected in the preceding one.

In the phase of puberty, sexual consciousness is being directed outward. It is therefore a mistake to restrict a boy to solitary masturbation; this may have been enough in an earlier phase, but now he needs more. For the adolescent, sex is simply a right. Beginning somewhere between 13 and 16 years, he is biologically ready, and is, in fact, optimally equipped to mate (Ollendorff, quoted by Jones 1982).

Psychologist Ronald D. Lee is certainly not the only one to propose "that educators recognise the desirability and naturalness of sexual feelings at any age and that we create environments which facilitate free expression of love through sexuality with any consenting person of either sex." (quoted by Jones 1982, 92; see also Hogan 1980, 55; and Winkel 1972, 34). The sexual approach is, from a very early age, such an integral part of human relations that it should never be met with unconditional refusal. Children are even more in need of support and instruction in this respect (Voestermans 1983, 149). "It should be made clear to parents that a good confidential relationship cannot be maintained with their children if they deny them the satisfaction of such an urgent and insistent need as the sexual. We may invoke the parents' own experiences of youthful distress to make them understand that these problems of youth, related to the command of abstinence, should not be dragged along from generation to generation. Once the parents have accepted that their children are indeed as much in need of some sort of sexual satisfaction as they are themselves, it could be pointed out to them how heartless and irresponsible it is to deny them having their first love experiences at home and to chase them outside to dark porches, benches in the park or back seats of cars." (Kentler 1970, 179)

Sexual intercourse is not a simple activity; but a life-long connection with a single partner is even less simple. A boy can only learn by trial and error (Hanry 1977, 145). To send a young man into marriage before he is experienced is like asking him to perform a piano concerto in a public performance without ever having practised it. No wonder so many marriages miscarry and cause such a flood of misery! Is it not finally time to recognise our duty and solve this problem in a way more compatible with human nature? "The problem is to find ways in which youngsters can learn during an experimental phase which precedes the final bond how to explore their sensual and relational possibilities, and do this without hurting their partner emotionally or socially (unwanted pregnancy, abuse, exploitation or transmitting diseases). People responsible for the upbringing of children can help here by accepting from birth on the manifestations of lust in sexual functions and by respecting the sexually-erotically coloured relationships of childhood and adolescence (van Emde Boas 1977, 17-18).

Some of the so-called primitive peoples set a good example. Of the Australian aborigines it has been said, "at an early age they learn of the sexual act by direct observation, and they imitate adult sexual activities among themselves, publicly when they are very young and somewhat more privately when they become older and more self-conscious." (Bettelheim 1962, 64) We have mentioned several times already the Muria of India. They see sex as the central drive-spring of human life; their morality is not interdictive but constructive. The little girls and the little boys, acquainted with the sexual activities of their older companions in the dormitories, play among themselves and so enlarge the girls' genital openings until the penis can be inserted without pain. The little boys are eager to do this. "You may be small, but when your member is like a piece of wood, you try to get it inside her." The big boys wait until a girl starts to menstruate before having intercourse with her. The young boy is trained in sex like the young buffalo is trained to draw the plough. "To instruct a young boy, a big girl allows him to caress her breasts and to hold her in his arms. Then she opens and spreads her legs and lets the young boy lay himself down upon her breasts. She shows him how to undress her and inserts his little penis with her hand. The first time the boy doesn't know how to do it and the liquid comes too quickly. But then next day she tells him, 'Yesterday you only embraced me and nothing was done like it should be done. I felt no pleasure.' And the boy answers, 'Today I'm really ready for it: I know what to do.' " If there are any doubts, the smaller boys consult the older boys on how best to satisfy a girl (Elwin 1959, 259-260). The Muria are known for their tolerance, their lack of jealousy, their friendliness and their openness. Their marriages, strictly monogamous, are remarkable for their stability; divorce is much rarer among them than among similar tribes. "The Muria marriage owes its serenity

and its stability largely to the fact that husband and wife, when they celebrate it, are both prepared," because in the dormitory the boys and girls "are practised in the art and virtues of sexual intercourse." (Elwin 1959, 20-21, 32, 36, 365) The best results are obtained in the dormitories where promiscuity is obligatory and no boy is allowed to sleep more than three nights in succession with the same girl. Those dormitories where a boy has to remain with the same girl prove to prepare him less well for later monogamy (Elwin 1959, 21, 55; Alcock 1976, 122-124; Currier 1981, 9, 16).

It seems that all known tribes that have special dormitories for children and adolescents tend to allow sexual promiscuity before marriage. In the Marquesas Islands "complete sexual liberty, a total absence of shame" go hand in hand with happiness and absence of criminality. The same is told of other islands in Polynesia. On Samoa the big boys teach the small girls and the big girls teach the small boys how to practice intercourse. Elwin cites the Igorot in the Philippines, a number of black tribes in Africa, several tribes in India. Among them sex is started early in life and restraint is only observed after marriage (Elwin 1959, 63-91). In some cases there is even professional sex instruction. Humphreys reported in 1926 that boys in the New Hebrides were accustomed to sleeping together in a special house of their own, and from time to time they were visited by a young woman whose mission was to teach them sex. No adolescent was permitted to marry unless he had thus been initiated (Elwin 1959, 68). In another tribe boys are circumcised at the age of 12- to 14 years, and it is the task of their fathers to see that, as soon as the wound is healed, his son is brought to a woman for training and practice (Holdredge and Young 1927, 669).

In the hedonistic conception, sex is play and therefore it doesn't matter who plays, what their ages are, or whether they are married. Sex is fun and subject to the morality of fun. What objection, then, could possibly be raised against older people teaching younger people about games and sport? (Gagnon and Simon 1973, 305)

This is the animating spirit of the most famous novel of later Greek antiquity, *Daphnis and Chloe* by Longus (end of the second century A.D.). Fifteen-year-old shepherd Daphnis is enamoured of 13-year-old shepherdess Chloe. They bathe together in a spring, see each other naked, embrace and kiss. They experience in their bodies the desire to do more but don't know how or what to do, which makes them unhappy. However, without them being aware of it, a friendly nymph has observed them as they played. She approaches Daphnis when he is alone and gives him a practical lesson in love-making, which delights him. The boy wants to fly right away to Chloe and do the same thing with her. He is dumbfounded when the nymph explains that his beloved will cry with pain the first time and bleed. She encourages him, however, to follow the call

of nature, and soon Chloe, too, learns to enjoy completely the union of their bodies.

Most men will admit that they have physically stronger orgasms while masturbating than in intercourse (Hite 1981, 335). Intercourse demands more skill, and inexperienced boys often have trouble even inserting their penises.

- 387 A New Zealand boy said, "Kids used to ask me, 'Have you had a root?' and I'd say 'Yeah'. The woman in the shop used to ask me too, but she used to talk in Maori. Anyway, I had my first root at fourteen. I was taking a girl home from the movies. I had a bloody horn. There were stories about her—that there wasn't too much trouble with her. So I dragged her into the gospel hall. We flummoxed around—I knew where the old fella had to go, but actually putting the bastard into the hole was very very difficult. The girl herself was not a virgin—but I was. After a hell of a struggle, the old fella got in and we grunted away and that was it." (Tuohy and Murphy 1976, 189)

"It is unpleasant for the girl if you first have to grope for it for half an hour," an 18-year-old Dutch youth said (Straver 1977, 264).

- 388 Some subjects of Aaron Hass:

A 16-year-old boy: Even though I had read about it, I still felt very awkward.

A 17-year-old boy: I knew where to put it, but I didn't know how to go about it.

A 15-year-old boy: My partner was a virgin so I wasn't worried too much. I knew where the hole was and I felt around until I could find it. Everything else just came naturally.

(Hass 1979, 81)

Boys who follow their impulses this way may enjoy their first intercourse immensely.

- 389 "I remember thinking to myself, 'Wow, this is unbelievable, what is happening to me!' It was the most intense feeling I ever had, and it made me really proud of myself. I even took the filled rubber over to my friend's house to show him I had actually screwed a girl." (Hite 1981, 363)

But for quite a number of badly prepared boys it is a big disappointment. In the NISSO research, 12.3% of the 15- to 17-year-old boys claimed they were dissatisfied with their sexual experiences with girls (1973, 29). Among Schofield's subjects, only 48% of the boys had liked the first time, 14% were disappointed, 10% felt ashamed, 7% positively disliked it, 5% felt afraid (1965, 65). Repeated attempts improve this situation, but don't remove the difficulties completely. Of Schofield's male subjects, 72% enjoyed intercourse very much, 23% did so sometimes, and 5% not really; 54% always reached orgasm, 34% usually, 4% hardly ever and 8% never (1965, 90-91). It is striking, and most interesting, that the majority of even the most disappointed males soon

afterwards had intercourse again, proving the strength of nature's blind and imperious call (Straver and Geeraerts 1980, 96). Disappointment is common to all ages.

- 390 "Before having intercourse, I believed that orgasm inside a woman's vagina was supposed to be the best feeling in the world. It was so built up that I was disappointed when I finally did experience it." (Hite 1982, 352)

- 391 "My first sex experience was also the first time I was very aware of orgasm. I was nine and my partner thirteen. She dared me first to kiss her, and she manipulated me until I was performing intercourse. All I can recall is that when I came, I felt like a part of me had just left and went into her, and I neither understood it or wanted it. I was very much afraid someone (my mother) would discover its absence and hate me. I was extremely confused and very frightened." (Hite 1981, 757)

- 392 "My first intercourse at fourteen left me very confused because I wasn't sure if I enjoyed it so much after hearing so much about it. I was wondering if it was overrated." (Hite 1981, 364)

- 393 Yvonne Kroonenberg interviewed Guido, a big boy of 16, for the youth column of the Dutch newspaper *N.R.C. Handelsblad* (8 Jan 1983). She asked, "What about fucking?" "I don't do it very often." "Do you think it's as fine as people tell you it is?" "It disappointed me. You always hear it's so great, so delightful, but the first time I found it a great disappointment."

- 394 An 18-year-old baker's apprentice told about his first experience. "That was two years ago, on holiday in England, with a French girl. She was one year older than I. We'd known each other about a week. She was quite nice. She liked me, too; I was sure of that. Then one day we were walking along the beach. There was a wooden cabin and we went inside. It just happened. But it wasn't such a wonderful experience after all. Things didn't go really very well, you know. I was nervous. You are always nervous the first time. The first time is never very good, because you don't know exactly what to do. I think she had already done it some, because she asked me, 'I think this is your first time?' I found that a little annoying." (Straver 1977, 264-265)

- 395 "The first time I made love with a woman was when I was twenty-two. (...) When I entered her I remember thinking 'Is that all there is?' I didn't feel much different than masturbating. I came in a minute or two and was rather disconcerted that this wasn't the terrific, star-filled experience I thought it was to be (from information from my male friends)." (Hite 1982, 363)

How vaultingly high are the expectations of the inexperienced boy!

- 396 Some subjects of Hass:

A 15-year-old boy: I really don't know what to expect. I have heard it's like no other sensation and is more pleasurable than anything. I hope, of course, this is true. I think

that it will probably be a sensation similar to a wet dream, yet much more intense and pleasurable.

An 18-year-old boy: It will probably be very warm and wet inside her vagina. It will probably feel like masturbating but even more stimulating and climactic.

A 16-year-old boy: I thought it would be something incredibly nice.

A 15-year-old boy: I think it will be a combination of an emotional and physical high, the greatest feeling possible.

A 17-year-old boy: I'd had orgasms before, but I'd heard that a vagina was very hot and tight. I thought it would be great...

Others were more modest in their expectations:

A 17-year-old boy: I really do not have the slightest idea, but I wish I knew.

A 15-year-old boy: Probably the first time it will not be too exciting or fun because I will be too nervous to enjoy it.

A 16-year-old boy: I think I'll be nervous and come quickly.

Some of the experienced boys agreed with this.

A 17-year-old boy: I wasn't sure how it would feel when I put my penis in. The first time I was so excited I was shaking. I was disappointed because it was over so quickly. I thought I was going to have a heart attack I was so nervous.

A 16-year-old boy: I realized that it wasn't such a big deal. Just another way of getting pleasure.

A 17-year-old boy: Disappointed. I hadn't known what to do and I felt like I'd make a fool of myself.

(Hass 1979, 70-72, 77-79)

In a Danish investigation, only 60% of the boys said they had felt happy and proud after their first intercourse; 37% had anxieties about pregnancy or venereal disease; 10% regretted the act; 5% felt ashamed and guilty. Nevertheless, 98% felt the urge to repeat it (Hertoft 1968, I - 148). Sanders (1977, 73) examined Dutch boys most of whom were involved in a steady love relationship with their first partners—a favourable selection, thus. He got the following replies to his questions about their first experience with intercourse:

Did you feel completely satisfied and good afterwards?

"Yes, certainly!"—34%; "Rather"—20%; "I don't know"—4%; "Rather not"—32%; "Not at all"—10%.

Did you feel quite sure of yourself or rather unsure?

"Very sure of myself"—20%; "Rather sure"—28%; "I don't know"—12%; "Rather not sure"—34%; "Very unsure"—6%.

Did you think afterwards, 'I won't do it again for some time to come'?

"Not at all"—70%; "Not really"—21%; "I don't know"—1%; "Deep down I did"—5%; "I definitely did"—2%.

397 Hass gives a number of the happier replies, but it is striking how important the social aspects are.

A 16-year-old boy: I felt relieved. I felt good about getting it over with. No one could say you're a virgin and inexperienced anymore.

A 15-year-old boy: (Regarding his virginity) I wanted to lose it fast because supposedly all my friends had already lost theirs.

A 15-year-old boy: I was always hoping I would lose my virginity at an early age.

A 16-year-old boy: I felt it should be done already. It was something you were supposed to do.

A 15-year-old boy: Excited. I remember thinking, "I've finally done it!"

A 17-year-old boy: I felt good about it. I felt I was normal now. I knew I could do it now.

A 17-year-old boy: Very proud and confident. I didn't feel like such a little kid anymore.

Only a few of the boys stressed the inner emotional importance:

A 16-year-old boy: After I did it for the first time, I loved it. It really was one of the most important experiences of my life. It made me at ease with a lot of girls...

An 18-year-old boy: I felt very gratified and happy. I felt that my curiosity was fulfilled and my determination was to go out and experience more girls.

A 15-year-old boy: It was like a dream come true. I had felt there was nothing more to life than what I had just done. And I wanted to do it again.

(Hass 1979, 75-77)

Much happiness, thus. But we must not forget the minority, a not small minority, of the unhappy boys. Over the past decade the average age at which boys have their first coitus has steadily lowered, and thus the number of inadequately prepared, untrained boys taking this step has increased. In a study of French grammar school pupils, 20% thought that this lowering of the age of first intercourse was regrettable (*Revue de Presse* 15 May 1982). Hass's subjects were happier about it: 83% of the 15- to 16-year-old boys agreed with the statement "I believe it is okay for a boy my age to have sexual intercourse with a girl," and 43% already had (18% by the time they were 13) (1979, 64, 66-67).

There is a quite understandable craving for experience. Summing up the results of her investigation among virgins, Nancy Friday writes (1981, 513-514): "The young men in this chapter broadcast their tension, their agony and fury at being frozen by assumptions that they know 'everything' while they still have no experience at all." "Questions about the first step, worries about the First Time, unresolved, unmediated emotions of love, lust and anger come spewing out all at once. How cruelly these young men describe girls who put out, even as they dream of the nice girls who never will. They write down measurements of the penis they've never used. This is the age of the pill, they've read all the books, they can spell cunnilingus, they die for sex, all around them the whole world is Doing It, but they call a girl who does 'a pig'."

In a Parisian public convenience a boy wrote on the wall, "I am 14. I have a hard-on and I jerk it off every day. I would like to learn how to fuck a girl. Now I have to embrace my bolster and to jerk off." The need is no less for gay

boys. Another graffito runs: "Young man, 16 years, with big cock wants young man of 18-20 years to teach him how to make love." (Ernest 1979, 18, 104)

Our society is schizophrenic. "Everyone wants a spouse who is sexually proficient, but no one wants a child who is learning *how* to be sexually proficient." (Currier 1981, 15) To make it still more complicated, the boy is torn between the call of his body to do it, the commands of adults not to do it, and the heavy pressure of his peers to be sexually active and assert his 'manliness'. A 17-year-old girl said, "Guys have so much pressure on them from peers to 'get what you can' and often they feel that they are in love only to find out they are not. Also, guys seem to need sexual intercourse much more than girls, so it makes it impossible for them to be virgins when they marry." A 17-year-old boy: "There is a definite pressure to get laid before you get out of high school. Fucking for the first time relieved that pressure and allowed me to have a better relationship with girls." Another: "The reason sex is important to me is because it brings with it companionship. Another reason is the peer pressure. Peer pressures play a major role in many of my actions." An 18-year-old: "I like having sex, It's something you share with someone and it often remains as a pleasant memory. Also, among my friends, you're supposed to do it. Often we're bragging—I think it's the man's role." (Hass 1979, 13, 75, 86, 136)

"Boys, to prove they have become 'men', feel pressured to begin intercourse as early as possible." (Hite 1981, 362) This pressure can be very unpleasant and have a bad effect on the boy.

398 One of Hite's subjects wrote: "I felt (and still do, to a lesser extent) incredible pressure on me to prove my manhood by screwing women. (...) I had to do it; if I didn't there was something wrong with me. Also, it was supposedly so great, look what I was missing. (...) If I couldn't find a woman to fuck, it was my fault. I was a failure." (Hite 1981, 353)

And another boy, also telling about his high school years: "Boys *had* to 'get laid'. I was turned off by all this, but the pressure was enormous. The lying was insane. You couldn't stay accepted in your clique (...) without participating in this disgusting charade. (...) I felt driven to 'do it'. We all did..." (Hite 1981, 354)

This kind of pressure can lead to quite disgusting incidents.

399 "By the time I was seventeen, I was under a lot of peer pressure to 'do it' and get it over with. Three of us (it took three of us to muster enough courage) took out one of those girls known to be willing even with the likes of us. We drove out and parked. We drank (very manly to drink). We all knew what we were there for. We broke out the rubbers (that was very manly, to carry rubbers), and one of us went in the back seat with the girl. (...) I went last. I would certainly have chickened out if the others hadn't been there. (...) Amazingly, my penis was stiff as a rod. The seventeen-year-old male mind may be a stinking swamp, but the seventeen-year-old male body is a marvel.

The girl was stretched out on her back with her skirt up around her hips. She had continued drinking (wisely) and was completely indifferent. None of it, the depressing sordidness, the total lack of caring in all of us, her indifference, my quaking, the palpable hostility under it all, none of it turned me off. And my penis was ready. God, it was awful, all of it. I climbed between her legs, pushed them up and out, and penetrated. She had to help. I then engaged in a parody of violent masculine battering thrusting, at which I lasted maybe ninety seconds, then came. She pushed me off. I was briefly out of it. (...) I threw out the rubber. (...) I vomited out the window. We drove back." (Hite 1981, 364-365)

Not every boy's body "is a marvel" under such circumstances. Many say that their relations with the opposite sex suffered from this pressure, and difficulties in getting an erection are sometimes one result. 39% of Hite's subjects had 'infrequent' potency problems, 17% sometimes, 13% frequently, regularly or always (1981, 398). One man said this happened to him when he was a teenager because he felt "I must perform". "It is only a problem if we are blindly insistent on penis-vagina intercourse as essential." It wasn't until this man grew up that he learned that neither for the man nor for the woman was erection necessary for arousal and orgasm. "A rigidly erect penis has no other use but penetration and thrusting." But there are other ways of enjoying sex (Hite 1981, 408-409).

It is stupid to allow a boy to be crushed between the pressure to remain a virgin (from his parents, the clergy) and the pressure to get rid of his virginity (from his peers). One 17-year-old boy very sensibly said, "It's up to the boy if he wants to stay a virgin. He should do whatever he feels comfortable with." And another, "I only believe a person should do what he or she truly wants. If someone wants to remain a virgin, fine—as long as it's not because of public opinion or sexual moral no-nos." (Hass 1979, 128)

A boy should be told that heterosexual and homosexual intercourse is a rather complicated activity, and that instruction and practice are needed to perform it in a way that gives joy to oneself and one's partner. Competent instruction and opportunity to exercise it should be offered him, but it should be left completely up to him to decide when he should put what he has learned to practice.

The idea of a practical introduction was widely accepted in our Western culture until the present century. During those years of very early (consummated) marriages, it was hardly unusual for the first coitus to take place in the presence of adults, who made helpful comments and gave advice. An enthusiastic entourage of courtiers, for example, accompanied Mary Stuart and her husband William, who was later to be stadtholder of Holland (both around 15 years of age) to their bedroom as a kind of finale to the wedding ceremonies, and there, as the onlookers cheered them on and offered suggestions, they made love for the first time (Dasberg 1975, 25).

Until well into the last century, it was customary for well-to-do fathers to hire high-class prostitutes to initiate their sons (Fuchs 1909, II - 224-225; Bronslau 1968, 118). Other fathers brought their boys to a brothel when they began to show sexual curiosity. "In the South of the United States, before the Civil War, in a society largely composed of self-styled cavaliers, it was thought that when young boys showed an interest in sex they should have that interest gratified. (...) The practice was called 'going to the barn' and was a special event not only for the curious young male children, but for the grown men of a community. These latter celebrated the event with whiskey. Simply, an old and trusted slave was ordered to bring a willing young Negro girl to the barn and a sexual partner of her choice with her. There, the couple stripped in front of the assembled white men and boys and engaged in whatever sexual acts they cared to. After they had given their lesson, the young boys who had previously been curious about the situation were allowed to take their turns on the young girl." (Bronslau 1968, 117-118)

In 1846 the Oneida community in America began letting an older woman initiate boys soon after they had reached puberty. She trained them in the practice of prolonged intercourse in which the penis remains stiff in the vagina for periods of up to an hour without the emission of sperm (Ellis 1913, VI - 553).

400 In 1979 the McHenry County, Illinois police exposed a "sex education school" in which over the preceding five years boys ranging in age between seven and sixteen had been trained in sex. There was a card file for the progress of each "pupil". Some examples:

"Age at beginning of course: 11. ET: 3 months. Frequency of lessons: daily, 1½ hours. Successful completion and pairing with female of 12. Extremely hot, horny, and eager to learn. Prolific sex life since completion, bisexual."

"Age at start of course: 14. Age at end of course: 15. ET: 1½ years. Frequency of lessons: weekly, 12 hours. Successful completion and pairing with female of 15. Hot, horny, eager to the extreme. Regularly had sex with his brother and sister, as well as many friends."

(Illinois Legislative 1980, 158)

Boys with an intimate relationship with an older friend often beg him to set things up so they can have such a fervidly desired experience with girls. So Pelops, who had been the favourite boy of the sea god Poseidon, later asked the god to assist him in his courtship of Hippodameia (Koch-Harnack 1983, 233). Many boy-lovers refuse such a request, partly because they feel a boy isn't ready to possess a girl as long as he can't conquer one himself, partly because they don't know how to go about procuring a suitable paramour, partly because they are jealous and want to keep the boy for as long as possible for themselves alone. Some, however, comply.

401 (Continued from 326) So did Jan, Conny's friend. Conny, a white, blond boy, was 13 years old at the time, healthy, strong, having just reached sexual maturity and proud possessor of a penis that looked gigantic in proportion to his boyish, smooth and hairless body. Many years before, when he himself was still a boy, Jan had met a nine-year-old girl while camping in Germany and had enjoyed sex play with her. Since then they had exchanged letters and met occasionally. Jan told her about Conny's urgent wish and she immediately agreed to initiate him. So on Conny's school vacation, Jan took him on a bicycle trip to Hamburg. The girl was very pleased to see this handsome, charming boy and actually fell in love with him. Conny, too, became very fond of Margot. Jan took her aside and told her, "Conny likes you a lot, so be very considerate of him. Don't hurt his feelings. He is extremely sexy; don't disappoint him." "I'd never do that!" she said with a roguish smile. A few nights later, when they were all quite relaxed with one another, Margot came to the bedroom of the two friends, crawled into bed and lay naked between man and boy. They both caressed and fondled her, until all three were highly aroused. For the first time in his life, Conny examined the genitals of a woman. Then Jan urged him to "do it". Suddenly the boy, in other circumstances quite a dare-devil, found his courage failing him, and he whispered to Jan, "You do it first." Jan then had intercourse with Margot, exciting himself by looking at the aroused boy beside him. Now it was Conny's turn, and it amused Jan to see how clumsy the boy's first attempts were; Conny couldn't even find the girl's entrance, and Jan had to take hold of the boy's penis and guide it in. Jan hadn't really enjoyed his intercourse with Margot, but the sight of his beloved boy exerting himself to the utmost and almost shouting with delight, now excited him immensely. As soon as Margot had left the room he threw himself upon Conny and penetrated him from behind. This again excited the boy so much that right afterwards he had to satisfy himself in the same fashion upon Jan.

Seven years later the author met Conny, now a handsome, energetic young man, doing well in his profession and about to marry. He talked about this adventure: "Oh, it was wonderful!", he said enthusiastically, "a most delicious initiation. I'm very proud I had it as young as thirteen." He had been engaged for the last four years, and the couple had regular intercourse with each other. Jan gave them the opportunity and the place. From Conny's 16th year on there had always been in Jan's home a little bedroom where the boy could be alone with his girl, and a bed in which they could celebrate their love.

This generous provision of a bed by his friend made Conny's adolescence much happier than that of the majority of his peers. According to de Boer's study (1978, 139, G - 2-7/8) only 46% of the boys could regularly find a place for their sexual pleasures and 36% complained of being unable to find one often enough.

Jan's response of intense excitement watching his beloved boy in heterosexual coitus is hardly rare among boy-lovers. Martial tells in his poems of slave-boy owners carefully keeping their favourites from having intimate contacts with girls, but admits he himself loves to see "a big boy whose skin is still wholly smooth, lying with a loving girl." (II - 48) A more extreme situation is depicted

by the Arab poet Abu Nuwas making a love-trio with his beloved boy Mufaddal and the slave-girl Durra:

*How nice it is when Mufaddal
Stretches himself upon my charming mistress Durra,
And I, a second rider, am sitting on Mufaddal
And sleep with them,
Threading two pearls at the same time.*
(Wagner 1965, 174)

In Antiquity, as with the Phoenicians and partly also with the Romans, the defloration of the bride was seen as an unclean, disagreeable, sometimes even risky task. The same is told about the Philippine and New Guinea tribes in former times, where special functionaries were even paid to perform it. But in Classical Antiquity this task was entrusted to slaves instead, and Peyrefitte describes how some newly-married husbands at a mass marriage took their favourite slave-boys with them to deflower their brides in their presence (Peyrefitte 1981, 433; See also Spinner 1931, 143-144; Ploss-Bartels 1902, I 487).

Since systematic, timely initiation of boys by experienced older girls or women is not part of our culture, we may ask what might be done by older boys and men to fill this need. Nature, as so often, has left a way. "The sexuality of young boys is not yet burdened with taboos; they have not yet repressed anything; nothing is internalised; they simply do what gives them pleasure. Their sexual impulse hasn't yet fixed upon one sex only; it enjoys variants. Their lust still retains something of its originality." (Schult 1982, 33)

402 1979 was launched with great fanfare as "The Year of the Child" by the President of West Germany in the Beethoven Hall at Bonn. During the proceedings, the assembled dignitaries were petrified when a 14-year-old boy flung the following in their faces: "I am a sexual being and I want to be able to enjoy my sexuality completely—with adults, with fourteen-year-olds, with sixteen-year-olds, with eighteen-year-olds, with boys and girls, with men and women. No matter what sex and what age. I need love above all else—and it's just this love that I don't get, because other things are considered more important, things like school and learning and studying and earning money. Why can't I give expression to my feelings?" (Hauer 1983, 9)

This courageous boy undoubtedly spoke for millions of his peers—and the adults, in their self-satisfied wisdom, ignored his words.

Yet, sexual behaviour is part of human behaviour, and a boy has to be educated in sexual behaviour. Such education is favoured and intensified by five factors: 1) sensual lust; 2) reduction of tension, 3) the experience of an

affectionate relationship, 4) social esteem and personal pride about one's quality as a partner in love, 5) the conviction that one is acting in accordance with certain norms (Marinkelle 1976, 291).

The first two factors are present in every successful sexual act with a male or female partner. The last factor may support the inexperienced boy having intercourse with a girl when he knows he is acting according to the expectations of his peers, as we have already seen. But the complete effect of factors 3, 4 and 5 can only operate in a boy's relationship with a loving adult. Such a person can not only show him how to make sex an expression of tenderness but can teach him the truth about the usefulness and justification of their relationship.

Few parents can bring themselves to praise their son's sexual potency and his love-making skills. The mother of Philippe d'Orléans (1674-1723), regent of France, proudly told her friends that her son, at age 13, had been initiated by "an excellent woman". (Foral 1981, 191-192) Not many parents today follow this example; they haven't the faintest idea how good their son is at sex. But a boy-lover may easily discuss his young friend's potency and skills with his intimates, and often in the presence of the boy himself, who will thereby be strengthened in his self-esteem.

"Sex, like almost every other human learning activity, is—it seems from a totally objective, non-moralising point of view—best begun at an individual's earliest physically-possible age. And sex, like any other art or craft, has its own well-established techniques that need to be learned—if not expertly taught!" (Barrington 1981, 185) Professor Heid thinks it imperative to affirm and encourage human sexuality from the first day of life. "The capacity of sexual excitement and sexual behaviour have to be learned. The best way of learning can only be 'learning by doing'. But this can only happen if we adopt a positive attitude toward sex." (1977, 144) Giese said in 1968 that a sexually experienced adult man, approaching a boy tenderly and in an appropriate way, may sometimes favour his harmonious sexual evolution" (Hanack 1968, 94).

But all this rich potential for sexual feeling, behaviour and experience will wither away if the boy cannot be brought to recognise those impulses in himself and develop them (Beets 1964, 137-138). When a boy is not interested in certain sexual practices, when he shows no desire to gain wider knowledge, the cause can be mental rigidity, but it might also be that he has simply not had a chance to explore (de Boer 1978, II - 87). No one can better help him overcome this limitation, to develop the healthy appetite and curiosity of his age, than an experienced older friend.

Little wonder, then, that in humans, just as in other animals, homosexuality plays an important part in sexual training and practice. Hinde and Spencer-Booth ("The behaviour of socially living rhesus monkeys in the first two and a half years". *Animal Behaviour* 15, 169-196: 1967) saw young monkeys in their

experimental sex play assume both male and female roles, only slightly more frequently exhibiting the 'appropriate' behaviour for their gender (Langfeldt 1981, 103). The heterosexual and homosexual positions flow into one another. It is the same with other animals, such as chickens (Kruijt 1976, 27). Among dogs, bulls, rats, porcupines, guinea pigs, goats, horses, donkeys, elephants, hyenas, bats, mice, lions, rabbits, cats, racoons, baboons, apes and porpoises, "homosexual contacts between males are more conspicuous and occur more frequently than between females. The animals caress each other, inspect the partner's genitals, mount each other, one adopting the female position; some insert their penis in the partner's anus; others lick the partner's penis. Male monkeys masturbate each other. All these activities are occasionally continued until orgasm ensues. The higher the development of the species, the more characteristic and frequent this homosexual play. Prevalent in all this is a relationship between an older and a younger partner, the senior protecting the junior in his social position, bringing him food, cuddling and caressing him, while the younger one adopts the female role during sexplay. Bent forward, the younger monkey may reach backward to guide the penis of the older one into his anus, and sometimes he masturbates while his partner is copulating with him." (Churchill 1967, 60-62, 65, 67)

We might expect the same in the human species, and that is indeed the case with many so-called primitive peoples (Daniélou 1979, 157). "It is interesting that homosexual rather than heterosexual relations are so often chosen as a means of initiating the pubertal youth into manhood; but this undoubtedly results from the idea that homosexual union confers magical benefits." (Churchill 1967, 82) This kind of sex is believed to help the boys grow big and strong and enlarge their penises (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 72, 86, 90; Herdt 1981, 233-235). "When the boy has proved his prowess as a homosexual lover and has 'absorbed' some of the strength of the older male, he is then thought ready for heterosexual relationships, although these may not necessarily terminate his homosexual activities." (Churchill 1967, 82) In Chapter Three we mentioned people like the Batak and various Papuan tribes where a period of exclusive homosexuality precedes marriage (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 71-72; Herdt 1981, 318-320; Marinkelle 1976, 47; Schieffelin 1982, 162-163; West 1977, 135). They consider heterosexual intercourse dangerous for boys (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 47; Werner 1979, 358; Herdt 1981, 150). There is social logic to this system: as long as he is not integrated into the group of men by initiation, the boy is not a man; he is therefore a woman, and women may only have sex with men (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 52, 68).

When we think about this arrangement, leaving out the magic, we can see definite advantages to these relationships and benefits to young and old alike.

A woman, of course, may be an excellent initiator. We have seen several examples where initiation has even acquired the status of an institution. Even in our Western world many a boy has been affectionately and expertly 'deflowered' by an older girl or a woman, and this can be a very fine experience for him, indeed. Occasionally a wise judge refuses to punish a woman brought to trial for having sex with an under-age boy, ruling that the act was "educational" (Mitzel 1980, 24). But the number of women attracted to young boys is rather limited, and the clumsy behaviour of a boy on his first attempts usually takes away any pleasure most women might have had. Male adults have a keener perception of the aesthetic beauty of boyhood and its characteristic way of thinking and feeling. From their own experiences they have gained the ability to enter a boy's mind and understand him (Gide 1925, 136-137; Nichols 1976, 89).

Langfeldt, a youth psychiatrist, stresses that homosexual interactions increase sexual skill as well as provide a source of sex information. "Some boys practised start-stop procedures during mutual masturbation and reported later that they easily could control their orgasm during coitus with girls". (1981, 112). "As lovers, homosexual and bisexual males are, in the main, more considerate and more 'technique-conscious', more sexually imaginative and innovative than most totally heterosexual males." (Barrington 1981, 187) It is usually easy for a boy to obtain an orgasm, but, as we have seen, perfecting it is an acquired skill. The best orgasms are had by abandoning oneself to the "current of biological energy" or "the vegetative life of the body", and the more complete this abandonment is, the deeper and more delightful the orgasmic experience. This has to be taught to the boy, but obviously he can only practise such an abandonment when he feels safe and protected. With a girl or a woman, he may worry about his clumsiness, how to do what is expected of him. With an older male friend, the right kind of situation can be created where he is care-free and shame-free and can give in totally to the tide of nature. Therefore, "homosexual experiences seem to 'round off' and socially and psychologically 'enrich' young heterosexual males, who become more tolerant and sophisticated (in every way)." (Barrington 1981, 156) In heterosexual love-making, obtaining orgasm during coitus is usually considered the most important goal: the curious heterosexual terminology of "foreplay" and "afterlove" for everything else is a case in point. Everything else is either play or anti-climactic, i.e. not very serious; the orgasm is all that really matters. With an experienced man a boy may learn to give more attention to such intimacies as fondling, cuddling, pressing naked body on naked body. In learning the techniques of love-making, a boy's body is his best school.

In ancient Greece, boys were early taught the art of kissing; in the spring there were even public competitions, as well as beauty contests for boys and

adolescents (Koch-Harnack 1983, 37). In Rome, wealthy fathers, as soon as their sons entered puberty, often bought them a slave boy upon whom they could train themselves in their future marital duties (Lever 1985, 28). In present-day Melanesia there is a widespread belief in the harmfulness of heterosexual coitus for youths until they have fully-grown beards. Friends and brothers assume alternately active and passive roles in homosexual interaction with them. In some tribes of western Australia, before a pledged young wife is considered old enough to marry, her brothers are used as surrogates (Murray 1984, 48, 65). With the Big Namba of the New Hebrides, it is the grandfather who, beginning some years before the boy's circumcision, has frequent intercourse with the boy; the purpose of this is to speed up the youngster's growth; later the grandmother gives the boy practical lessons on how to behave with a woman (Drilhon 1955, 162, 167-168). Among all these people, homosexuality is considered the proper preparation for marriage.

As a schoolboy, reading the beautiful Greek story of Daphnis and Chloe recounted above, Rhyxand confessed that his first thought was how much easier all that is for a gay boy with a male friend (1978, 206). But doesn't this also apply to boys with heterosexual preferences: first to get used to shame-free genital activities with an intimate friend before passing on to more complicated activities with girls? Didier Gerval set this idea at the heart of his novel *L'âge des gestes* (1957). Two school friends, both in love with girls, try out on each other's bodies the caresses they would like to bestow on the bodies of their beloved girls. Some women can sympathise.

403 "The mother-in-law-to-be of a good-looking young man received an anonymous letter accusing him of having a close relationship with an obviously gay man." She knew, of course, that there wasn't a single 18-year-old who hadn't experimented with sex. And she said, "I'd much prefer—and here I speak for my daughter, also—to receive a husband from the arms of a male friend than from those of a whore." (Blüher 1966, 35-36)

404 About 1950 the musicologist Daniélou got to know a large family living in a poor quarter on the outskirts of Rome. Every family member knew he loved boys. The youngest daughter had many boy admirers, but her older sister guarded her closely; before a boy was accepted into their home, Daniélou was asked to try him out for a night. The next morning he had to report on the boy's potency, penis size, etc. It is striking that all concerned thought this arrangement was quite natural (Daniélou 1981, 177).

It is primitive wisdom—now, after centuries, "discovered" by some Western "experts"—that psychosexual health is advanced by allowing boys to gain homosexual experience. Homosexuality is much more problematic to young people when it is suppressed than when it is tried out (Hanry 1977, 188-189). The boys brought to Langfeldt as a psychiatrist to be treated for deviant sexual

behaviour (such as exhibitionism, making obscene telephone calls to girls while masturbating, sexual aggression, etc.) were invariably those who had never had any sex play with their comrades (1981, 112). Davidson (1962, 172) points out that in southern Italy, where "almost any youth is ready for a homosexual frolic or even friendships, one rarely hears of the sexual murder of children, of brutal attacks on women by adolescent boys, of young girls being raped, of the explosive lusts of the psychotic or the psychopath. (...) And almost to a man these 'corrupt' boys grow into excellent husbands and devoted fathers of seven or eight children." Their sexuality is quite healthy.

Homosexuality for boys is not just a safety valve; it is vital for self-knowledge. In Chapter Two we saw that every man has a certain percentage of homosexual tendencies. It is best that everyone probe the extent of this percentage and direct his life accordingly. The most natural way to do this is, when still a boy, to have practical experience with age peers or with an adult male friend.

By presenting heterosexuality as normal and homosexuality as perverse, our society blocks the road to this essential self-knowledge.

405 How difficult this knowledge may be gained, even with substantial opportunity, for a variety of experiences, is illustrated by a case described by Ellis (1913, III, 301-303). The subject was a 40-year-old surgeon. When he was about 10 years of age, a boy told him you could have great fun with girls. They took his two sisters into an old barn, and there they all undressed. The girls did all they could to help the boys have their "connection", but it didn't work, and he experienced no pleasure in it. Back at boarding school he attracted the attention of one of the bigger boys. "He came into my bed and began to play with my member, saying that it was the usual thing to do and would give me pleasure. I did not feel any pleasure, but I liked the attention, and rather enjoyed playing with his member, which was of large size, and surrounded by thick pubic hair. After I had played with him for some time I was surprised at his having an emission of sticky matter. Afterward he rubbed me again, saying that if I let him do it long enough he would produce the same substance from me. This he failed to do, however, though he rubbed me long and frequently, on that and many other occasions." Disappointed, the subject retired two or three times a day to the closet in order to practise, but to no purpose, although he began to have pleasurable emotions in the act. "When I went home for the holidays I took a great interest in one of my father's maids, whose legs I felt as she ran upstairs one day. (...) She took to kissing and fondling me, (...) saying that I was a forward boy. (...) She called me into her room one day. (...) She next unbuttoned my trousers and fondled and kissed my member, and directed my hand to her privates. I became very much excited and trembled violently, but was able to do for her what she wanted in the way of masturbation until she became wet. After this we had many meetings in which we embraced and she let me introduce my member until she had satisfied herself, though I was too young to have an emission. On return to school I practised mutual masturbation with several of my schoolfellows, and finally, at the age of 14 years, had my first real emission. I was greatly pleased thereat, and (...) began to feel myself quite a man. I loved lying in the

arms of another boy, pressing against his body, and fondling his person and being fondled by him in return. We always finished up with mutual masturbation." But after leaving school the subject did not want any more relations with his own sex, as he "became a slave to the charms of the other sex." "The sight of a woman's limbs or bust (...) was sufficient to give a lustful feeling and a violent erection, accompanied by palpitation of the heart and throbbing in the head. I had frequent coitus at the age of 17, as well as masturbating regularly. I liked to perform masturbation on a girl, even more than I liked having connection with her; and this was especially so in the case of girls who had never had masturbation practised on them before; I loved to see the look of surprised pleasure appear on their faces as they felt the delightful and novel sensation. (...) At the age of 25 I married (...) a beautiful girl with (...) an amorous disposition. While engaged, we used to pass hours wrapped in each other's arms, practising mutual masturbation, (...) with the invariable result that I had an emission and she went off into sighs and shivers. After marriage we practised all sorts of fancy coitus, coitus revervatus, etc., and rarely passed twenty-four hours without two conjunctions." During her pregnancy, "I went to stay at the house of an old schoolfellow, who had been one of my lovers of days gone by. (...) I agreed to share my friend's bedroom. The sight of his naked body as he undressed gave rise to lustful feelings in me; and when he had turned out the light I stole across to his bed and got in beside him. He made no objection, and we passed the night in mutual masturbation and embraces, coitus inter femora, etc. I was surprised to find how much I preferred this state of affairs to coitus with my wife. (...) We passed a fortnight together in the above fashion, and though I afterward went back and did my duty by my wife, I never took the same pleasure in her again." His wife died five years later. He "devoted myself heart and soul to my old school-friend, with whom I continued tender relations until his death by accident last year. Since then I have lost all interest in life."

Strong bisexual tendencies and a magnificent potency enabled this man to function with both sexes, but made it difficult for him to recognise his real preferences. Usually this is much easier. Experimenting first with his own sex (more accessible for the beginner), later with girls, a boy explores his body's capacities and his sexual desires. Ultimately his erection will act as a kind of thermometer, telling him truths his conscious mind may have tried to suppress; his body "betrays" him.

- 406 Thom Reeves (1983, appendix) tells the case of Howie. The boy was eleven "when he discovered that men at the local movie house would suck him off and give him two dollar." By age 13 he found "a full-fledged man-boy scene along the main street" of a large east-coast U.S. city. He alternated between the scene and "a heterosexual gang scene in a school playground." "The gang sometimes threw bottles at suspected fags. Its dialogue was mainly racist, homophobic, sexist and extremely violent and profane. Howie joined group sex where the boys joked coarsely about cunts and where a couple of girls were fucked without feeling by the boys, one at a time, the others eagerly watching." "Meanwhile, Howie was picked up once or twice a week for sex with men, but it was not until age 15 that he allowed a relationship to develop. Howie later

recalled that he knew at once that something was 'different'. 'I had this sudden nausea when I felt my prick get hard just from looking at this guy. It was a dread that I was queer, but a force that was pulling me at the same time.' "

- 407 Lars Görling gives a marvellous illustration of a somewhat similar situation in his novel 491. The setting is a home for delinquent boys in Stockholm. The principal figures are Nils, a 16-year-old inmate convinced he is firmly heterosexual, and an inspector for the youth protection authority, a rather ugly character with little respect for the boys entrusted to him. The inmates hate him on his occasional visits, but they sense he is sexually interested in them, and, acting on a proposal by Nils, they lure him into a trap with the intent of blackmailing him. Bait is to be handsome 15-year-old Pyret, an experienced hustler. Arrangements are made for Pyret to remain alone one evening with the inspector, and the next day Pyret reports that everything went according to plan. Nils goes to the inspector's office with the blackmail threat, but the inspector isn't at all impressed. He begins talking in a father way to Nils, starts stroking his neck, tells him he is handsome, puts his hand inside Nils' shirt. The boy doesn't want this to happen, but he is too much under the man's spell to resist. "My body," Nils says, "was completely powerless and didn't obey me. When he unbuttoned my fly, I got a hard-on in spite of myself. 'This is beautiful, Nisseman,' he said—'There's nothing dirty about it. It is pure and beautiful.' But his voice was neither pure nor beautiful, it was thick and muddy. And he went down on his knees in front of me and started sucking my cock, groaning and sobbing. His head butted against my belly. I sat and listened to the sounds from the street and from the trains passing in back of the house. I looked across the roofs on the other side of the street, at the chimneys and rock doves. A church bell struck, and I counted the strokes. Eleven. I didn't want to be aware of my body's treachery. The clouds stood still in the sky. Then he pulled down my pants altogether, and I had to bend over his desk. It didn't hurt that much. When it was over, he said, 'If you want to wash yourself, you can do it in there.' He pointed at the door of his private washroom. When I was ready to go he said, 'If anything happens, you're always welcome to come and see me again.' He sat down again at the desk and seemed quite unmoved. He didn't even look up from his papers. (...) I had a hard time getting rid of it. I had to experience it over and over again, hear what he said, and all the sounds, and feel him working away inside my body: these things intruded every night, after I had switched the lamp off. I wasn't able to think about girls. The loathing didn't help; it rather worked the other way around." And some weeks later Nils notes again, after a day of walking through Stockholm with his comrade Tiny, "I used parts of everything I had seen to masturbate to. The little chick up in the attic, the one Tiny had rammed in the stomach in front of NK, Mara's whore, and Steva. (...) That way, I made myself one to sleep with, and pretended we were doing it up in the attic. But the Supervisor got in there, anyway. Instead of her head, it was his, grinding against my stomach." (Görling 1962, 149-150, English edition 153-154, 1967)

And so it took an ugly adventure with the loathsome Supervisor to open the eyes of this adolescent boy to his own homosexual component.

- 408 A nicer story was told to me by a youth leader. A 15-year-old boy, Kurt, bared his breast to him about his discovery that his father was a "queer", which made Kurt despise and hate his father, with, of course, disastrous effects on their relationship. The youth leader said little but arranged for Kurt to spend a few days with him. The first night, while the boy was using the bathroom, the man lay down in Kurt's bed. Kurt came in and said, "What's going on?" "Room enough for two," the man said, "relax." After a moment's hesitation, Kurt climbed in and immediately the man took hold of the boy's penis, which became stiff at once. A few moments later it was Kurt who whispered, "Wouldn't it be nicer if we took off our pyjamas?" The second night the youth leader retired to his own bedroom, but Kurt soon walked into the room and asked, "Why don't we do it like yesterday?" For the next two weeks they had intercourse every night. This "pedagogical seduction" showed the boy how good sex and physical tenderness between people of the same sex can be. It let him understand his father, with whom he was now able to re-establish his formerly good relations. (Personal communication)

Homosexual experience gives the boy greater insight into his own sexuality and that of others. A boy deprived of this self-knowledge and who nevertheless has a strong homosexual component may develop rather devious behaviour practices.

- 409 One of Gauthier's subjects claimed he was totally heterophile, yet he was only potent with women he knew had intercourse with many men. For him the peak experience was penetrating a woman who had just lain with another man so that her vagina was still slippery from his ejaculation. "Then I push my cock with one shove inside her." (1976, 88)
- 410 In China it was even common practice for elderly men to visit a prostitute accompanied by a young servant who would copulate with the woman in his master's presence and then be sent away. Alone with the woman at last, the old man would approach her and joyously suck up the liquids running out of her vagina (Suton 1964, 51).
- Peer pressure can sometimes compel a boy to lead a double life, but in that case he might well be fully conscious of it.
- 411 "I met Phillip when he was fifteen. He saw me cruising, stuck out his thumb to hitchhike, and we drove to a nearby park. He brandished a knife as soon as I turned off the ignition. 'See this knife? I hang out with a tough gang. I'm supposed to use this on queers. We beat up fags. But I'm not gonna use it. When the guys gangbang a chick, I jerk off afterwards, and I make believe I'm the chick. If that ain't queer, nothin' is. So how am I gonna stab you unless I stab me too?' " (Reeves 1983, appendix)

Even today, many parents are still afraid that homosexual experience would "pervert" their son and turn him into a homophile. As we saw in Chapter Four, this fear has been proved groundless. Bieber, even, came to quite the opposite

conclusion: in view of the fact that boys' sex play is one-and-a-half times more frequently performed with other boys than with girls, he concluded, "The failure to fulfil the need for a chum in preadolescence while the lust dynamism undergoes biologic maturation may, in some cases, result in a homosexual orientation." For the same reason he thinks, "that a constructive, supportive, warmly related father precludes the possibility of a homosexual son." Bieber mentions "a group of preadolescents in which two members who had failed to become somewhat homosexually involved with other members of the group were the only ones to become homosexual as adults." (Bieber 1962, 8, 16, 311). The facts would seem to suggest, paradoxically as so often with human beings, that the less homosexual play in youth the greater the chance of a boy's being homophile. But this does not mean that the boy *becomes* homophile through lack of homosexual sex play, rather that the boy *is* already homophile, and the homosexual play has an importance and meaning for him it doesn't for his chums. It is quite understandable that he hesitates before taking this important step!

- 412 An interesting example of the relationship between youthful homosexuality and adult heterosexuality is provided by the Keraki tribe in New Guinea. Among them a male who has not—before marriage—indulged in homosexual intercourse and has had intercourse only with girls is considered abnormal. "In this tribe the puberty initiation has two degrees. Initiated into the first degree, the boy is obliged to submit himself to anal intercourse; as soon as he proceeds to the group of adolescents in the second degree, he has to perform anal intercourse on the younger ones. It all starts with the ceremony of the bull-roarer. Every boy participates when he is about thirteen, an age at which he is considered to be intelligent enough to keep all these things secret from his mother. After the ritual, in which he gets to see the bull-roarer for the first time, the boy is subjected to sexual contact for the very first time, and this by a fully initiated (that is: married) man. After this he is entrusted to an appointed member of the second initiation degree, a bachelor, who has his first intercourse with him during the next night. (...) From now on, he has, for a full year, to serve as passive partner in anal intercourse to all the male members of that half of the tribe to which he doesn't belong himself. Moreover he is, if required, at the disposal of visiting travellers. At the end of this year he adopts the penis-sheath. Afterwards he is tortured by the pouring of quick lime into his mouth. (...) Having passed the lime-eating ceremony, the initiate is no longer a fresher, but a young man who now, at the next initiation ritual, has to perform active anal intercourse upon a younger member of the opposite half of the tribe. This he continues to do for a year, thus bringing to a close the cyclus of his own initiation. Ensuing marriage assures him the full status of adult man." The married, adult male is completely free to have sexual intercourse with boys. He will even be praised for doing so, as anal intercourse is considered to favour the growth and strength of maturing boys and is therefore to be regularly practised. But married men tend to shift this task to the adolescent bachelors. Anal intercourse is seen as the appropriate way for adolescent youths to obtain their sexual satisfaction. Older men clearly

demonstrate a lack of interest in this kind of sex, even though they had previously practised it exclusively for so very many years (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 98-100).

Everything we know points to the conclusion that parents should not only tolerate the sexual experiments of their children but actively encourage them, be they homosexual or heterosexual. "A few social scientists, based on convictions growing out of their research, are encouraging parents not only to be permissive but to support and actively cooperate in the erotic experiences of the child." (Martinson 1981, 32) But how many parents, given their own upbringing, are able and prepared to do this properly? Three out of every four boys are very secretive about their sexual experiences and don't want to discuss them with their parents (especially not with their fathers); they may, however, do this openly with a friend of their own sex (Sanders 1977, 70).

Sex with a partner, for a male, can have different, even contradictory, meanings: 1) physical satisfaction, relief of tension, feeling good; 2) an athletic performance; 3) support of male self-esteem; 4) possessing, dominating the partner; 5) groping for protection, security, safety, to be close to somebody; 6) expression of love (Frenken 1976, 28). In the case of boys, factors 1 through 4 will be present with age peers, at least at first; factor 5 will tend to emerge more in contacts with adults. In the maturing boy the act is always primarily a matter of good health and physical exercise. Insisting that all at once the deep emotion of love should accompany it is nothing more than demanding perfection of a beginner. As Ned Rorem aptly said, "Love can add elegance to sex, but sheer sex is unenhanced in the abstract and alone is therapeutic." (1982, 143)

Even when he is very young, the child should be helped to find his own personal way of establishing human relations in the field of eroticism and sexuality, *i.e.* to discover, free of shame and guilt, where and how his body may experience pleasant sensations (van der Zijl 1976, 167). Later, when he is more mature, a boy may feel he has to choose between sex as an expression of love and sex just as a source of pleasure. But is this choice real?

Let us begin with Blüher's thesis: "In so far as it is an expression of love, sexuality is ethically unassailable, whatever may be its direction or its force. In so far as it is not an expression of love, but rather of casual lust, it is ethically indifferent, just as is any other excitation of lust; in this case it can be placed only in the category of health, economics, etc. and must be treated impartially, as in the choice of food.." (1966, 163)

Once again, nature points the way. The maturing boy, searching for his identity, is still unsure of himself, timid, avoids intimacy. In growing through adolescence, he becomes more self-confident and wants to be intimate, but until he reaches this stage his sexual wishes will be primarily for pleasure; only later will he try to use sex to cement a relationship (Sanders 1977, 17). And so we

can expect little more from a boy at first than attempts at intercourse and impulsive discharges of sexual tension. This is precisely what has been observed in the so-called primitive peoples: nearly always a period of promiscuity precedes marriage (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 75, 537, 741). In Western society we can see something of the same pattern among the 'working classes'. "The loose, at first short-lived sexual relationships we find in certain sections of proletarian youth, seem to me the natural, healthy models for sexual experience, well adapted to youth. In their manifestation and essence they resemble the sexual life of pubertal youth among the primitive peoples. They certainly do not lack a high degree of tenderness, but this doesn't as yet lead to long-term relationships. There is not the salacity for ever-repeated sexual excitement we find in the neurotic patterns of polygamy among adult bourgeois profligates and Don Juans, but a bubbling over of matured sexuality, a lustful seizure of every fit sexual object inciting to the act." (Reich, quoted by Kentler 1970, 181-182)

This is a serious obligation for our educators: "It is important to teach growing up youth to see that durability is not the only standard by which to judge the value of a relationship. A contact can be meaningful and valuable no matter how long it lasts, by its sensuality, its tenderness, its respect for the other and by mutual understanding." (Kentler 1970, 181)

In a love relationship the sexual activity in the beginning is usually less spontaneous and carefree. The boy is afraid to bring discredit upon himself by clumsy performance, failure to achieve erection, or ejaculating too soon. Among Hass' subjects, no less than 77% of the boys worried about being able to give a good sexual performance. A 15-year-old said, "I'm obsessed with being a good partner. I think it is extremely important to completely satisfy my partner's desires." A 17-year-old said, "Maybe if I didn't worry so damn much about how good a partner I was, then I'd be more natural and enjoy it more." Another: "I wonder about how long my penis is in comparison to others, even though I've been told a million times that it doesn't matter." (Hass 1979, 146, 148)

With someone one feels less close to, performance is easier. Satisfactory intercourse gives the boy a feeling of self-confidence, and soon he will easily and naturally be able to function as a male with his member.

413 In Manière's novel, *Les nuits parfumées du petit Paul*, 19-year-old Thomas reflects on the unsatisfactory aspects of sexual intercourse with his fiancée. "Just because he had put it off too long, he was unprepared for it when it finally happened; he had forfeited its most essential element. Everything has its appointed hour, as the body well knows; the more you postpone it, the less attainable it becomes. He should have done it when he was fifteen. Then the desire was naked, clear, defined: then it wasn't troubled with tenderness or any other ulterior motives; then it concentrated itself, in its innocence, upon that simple, primitive image which occurred so often, in vain, to him: the thighs of a nameless, willing woman, widely spread. He should have satisfied this

V. SEXUAL REPRESSION AND SEXUAL LIBERATION

desire at that time in his life, just as often as it announced itself with spontaneous, sudden erections, as troublesome then as they were in vain." (Manière 1977, 249-250)

And so it should be no cause for concern that the earliest pair-bondings are usually unstable and ephemeral "The answer is that during the years of puberty and immediate post-puberty, the capacity to form a serious pair-bond takes some time to mature." (Morris 1976, 134). The poet Thomson Gunn (1982, 415-416) depicts the feelings of a beginner:

*Yet when I've had you once or twice
I may not want you any more:
A single night is plenty for
Every magnanimous device.
What should that matter? Why pretend
Love must accompany erection?
This is a momentary affection,
A curiosity bound to end...*

And so it must be considered fortunate that at puberty sex for many boys becomes nearly imperative, something they cannot do without (Gadpaille 1981, 101). Sex without love, then, can pave the way for sex with love, if we recognise that humans fundamentally always need love (van Ussel 1970, 79). Once again it is important to keep in mind the example of the India Muria where it can clearly be seen that promiscuous boys afterwards make the most faithful husbands. The Muria aren't the only ones; the same happens with other peoples (Elwin 1959, 101, 161, 366, 367, 394, 431).

414 In the Muria *ghotuls*, the dormitories where all the village boys and girls sleep together between an age of six or seven years until they marry some eleven or twelve years later, there is total, even controlled, promiscuity. All the boys have sex with all the girls. Parents send their children to the *ghotul* just as soon as they are able to look after themselves. Since they themselves have passed their childhood and adolescent years in *ghotuls*, they are quite familiar with what goes on there sexually, and approve. As we have seen, the smaller children play among themselves, thereby gradually enlarging the girls' vaginas and painlessly removing the hymen. The bigger children start copulating once menstruation has set in. Under the guidance of the *ghotul's* "chief"—elected by the boys and girls not because he is the oldest but because he has the most suitable character—the whole group acts as a kind of Boy Scout brigade, helping the adults in all the various village tasks. It is in the *ghotuls* that the younger children are brought up and educated by the older members—in politeness, being quiet, and in work. They are taught the important dances and proper ways of playing. Laziness and unruly behaviour are punished. Sexual instruction is practical. Everywhere there are images of boys with big, erect penises embracing girls, drawings of the female breast, the vaginal opening, the stiff male member—all showing the intense preoccupa-

Sexual Abstinence and Self-Control

tion of the young with this theme. In theatrical performances, male actors are often provided with enormous artificial phalluses. There is a song chanted in which a boy is described as having a penis as long as a cucumber and testicles the size of pumpkins. In light-hearted conversation a girl asks a boy what he has brought her. He replies, "A root and two onions," to which she responds, "And I have two nice mangoes and a basket for your root." He says, "Yes, but what do I do with the onions?" and she answers, "They can stay outside," and he pleads, "At least put the root in your basket." Every question and response gives rise to gales of laughter. There is a long story in verse in which it was said of a boy that "while he was filling his belly, the string around his hips broke. He was naked, so he stood up and fled. His penis was one and a half hands long, his pubic hair an ell." So no shame is connected with sexuality. Every night a boy sees his sister, and a girl her brother, being sexually active. At marriage ceremonies the young guests grope for each other's genitals and try to take hold of them, and if a boy dares dance naked, even in the presence of parents with whom it is taboo, this only generates laughter. Sex is an important source of amusement. As a boy said, "Cock and cunt are companions in horniness." Such performances are best in the *ghotuls*: the dance of the genitals, ecstatically being cradled in the arms of the beloved. Sex is interesting, good, healthy, beautiful, the crown and light of love. Without sex, love would be meaningless; it couldn't exist. "With a consenting and loving partner it can never be a sin." But excesses should be avoided, and good manners observed. One boy said, "We never try to take a girl the first time we sleep with her. We start to play with her, and it is only when she is ready and excited that we enter her." In stark contrast to the Western view of male rights and female duties, the Muria see sexual pleasure as a right of the girl, and it is the boy's duty to procure it. In most of the *ghotuls*, the girls insist on daily satisfaction. The boys agree: "When a girl wants to have a boy, she seizes his cock and plays with it until he comes to her." The boys, of course, seldom object. At a ritual celebration, Elwin heard them pray to their god: "Give us daily sex with our girl, a deep sleep in the *ghotul*, and keep the girls from getting pregnant." Elwin concluded that he saw no signs of depravity or excess. The boys and girls with their bright eyes and happy faces, didn't give him the impression of being victims of bestial desire. They were leading full lives and it seemed to do them good (Elwin 1959, 112, 131, 135, 144, 153-154, 181-182, 185, 233, 256-257, 259, 263-265, 293-294, 329, 330-331, 426, 430). Ultimately, they marry, and, with this boyhood behind them, they make good husbands. Among the Muria, with their tradition of promiscuous youth, divorce is much less frequent than among kindred tribes without promiscuity.

Kerscher concluded that "absolute sexual freedom during puberty and adolescence may increase the prospects of marital fidelity later." (1978, 20) The relationship, really, is rather obvious. When a young male has fully satisfied his curiosity, his varied desires, it will be relatively easier for him to limit himself in adult life to one partner only. This should be true in all cultures.

415 Hass (1979, 125, 130) quotes several American girls who would agree: A 17-year-old girl: Guys should go out with lots of girls so that when they get married they won't really feel they want to be out with other women.

A 15-year-old girl: I think boys are more prone than girls to go and screw around after they're married, but I think that if they have had sex a lot of times with different women they will be less apt to fool around after they're married.

"The proposition advanced by pessimistic critics of our culture that premarital intercourse is undermining crucially important bulwarks of our society is completely without substantiation. Marriage and raising a family continue to attract young people of both sexes just as strongly as ever. Liberalised sexual behaviour patterns have a stabilising rather than a destructive influence on our existing institutions." (Kerscher 1978, 150).

Loveless sex is in this context not a unique form of human behaviour; it is a pleasure like any other pleasure which finds its justification in itself—like enjoying a symphony, a painting, a dance, fine food without much nutritional value (Kruithof & van Ussel 1963, 102). All such pleasures increase one's joy of life.

No one should feel defiled if another person unites his body with him with this only in mind. A man and a boy may put their bodies at each other's disposal simply to satisfy their sexual needs, and do so with mutual respect and complete recognition of each other's individuality and rights. Even if they have only known one another for a very short time, the man is obligated to respect the boy, consider his desires and wishes in order to make the sexual union an homage to young beauty. If the boy feels that such respect is present, even a casual intimacy can be rewarding and uplifting (Nichols 1976, 48-49, 51).

416 (Continued from 354) Onno had sex with many adult men, and, even at the beginning, "I always felt it as the highest honour, a moment of intense happiness, when they poured their seed, this noble fluid, onto or into my body." (Personal communication)

We must keep in mind, however, that not every boy can see it this way. Especially with older adolescents, myths about an unbreakable bond between romantic love and sex may have been so strongly internalised that the two are not easily separated. It may help them (and certainly widen their knowledge and tolerance) to learn that the contemporary Western pattern of marriage and family is far from universal, that our image of "the close Christian family" was in no way that of Jesus or the early Christians—nor, for that matter, even of later Christians until recently—and that Freud considered the happy nuclear household a breeding ground of neurosis and sexual perversion (Haeberle 1978, 401, 403-404, 419, 430). Not that such information would destroy their romantic ideals of love and its accessories, nor, if one really respects them, should one try. A 15-year-old subject of Hass (1979, 19) said, "If you have sex with someone you're not in love with, all the fun is taken away. Maybe it's okay for oral sex or kissing, but for intercourse I'm sure I'd want to be in love." No

rational argument would change such a boy's feelings, and this should always be kept in mind. On the other hand, there is no justification for looking down on people who want sex purely for pleasure and the reduction of physical tensions. That is human, too. While in Barrington's research (1981, 227) 92% of the total sample agreed that love made a significant difference to the pleasure and quality of orgasm, over half of these men, of all ages, said that love was "a luxury, icing on the cake" and not essential to satisfactory orgasms. It wasn't more than 15% of the men who said they remembered, searched for, wanted or valued above all else relationships in which love played a major role.

Yet in man/boy relationships, despite all the social difficulties they entail, the one-night-stand seems to be relatively rare. Twice as many contacts of this kind lead to a repetition, and the initiative for second and subsequent relations is usually taken by the boy (Elsa-Brita Nordlund, quoted by Möller 1983, 59-60). We must emphasise, moreover, that love and promiscuity are not always mutually exclusive. The Muria in their ghotuls combine love with much sexual freedom (Elwin 1959, 76). We could even go so far as to say that anything which destroys freedom cannot be called love (Naslednikov 1981, 70).

417 (Continued from 416) The story of Onno gives a striking example of this. His adult friend Nick educated him in shame-free nudity. For six months Nick devoted himself exclusively to Onno, systematically teaching him all the homosexual practices, until Onno was expert in passive as well as active performance. A deep love grew up between the two of them, recognised by their large circle of intimates, and it lasted for fifteen years. Then, to have support and care during the evening of his life, Nick married and Onno discreetly withdrew. Now an old man himself, Onno still waxes lyrical when he speaks of Nick. He is full of admiration and gratitude for such expert guidance. After those six months of training, having perfected Onno mentally and physically into a finely tuned instrument of sexual delight, Nick told him, "Knowing you, I am sure that one man alone will never be enough. I will now place you on the altar of lust." Under his supervision and control, Onno started sleeping with other males, earned his living by posing nude (sometimes in erotic scenes) for painters and photographers. He gave naked dancing performances, played the part of a naked slave at dinner parties, for three weeks worked as a naked valet at a gay pension, took part in all kinds of group sex. Fifty years later he described this as the happiest period of his life. "It was sheer joy," he said. Many men had intercourse with him, but when some tried to have Onno exclusively for themselves, Nick's intimates laughed: "Separate Onno from Nick? Impossible." (Personal communication)

418 We have already mentioned Alain Daniélou, musicologist and authority on the Hindu religion. He was united with his friend Michael for 38 years, until the latter's death. "You should never deny someone you love the joys of love experiences, of adventures, of those relations he needs to be happy and keep his mental balance. Such freedom can make for temporary difficulties, but it never disrupts a profound unity, real faithfulness." (Daniélou 1981, 177)

In quite a few Australian, Melanesian and Papuan cults, ritual promiscuity has an existential, decisive function as a way to obtain social unity and solidarity (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 40).

- 419 A striking example of its effectiveness was furnished by a German boys' club of 12 to 18-year-olds. In order to be a full member, each newcomer had to have sex with every boy in the group. When the group came under heavy attack from outside, all these boys pulled together and put up such a united front that every attempt to disrupt the club and its activities failed. (Personal communication)

Ethics for Boy-Lovers

A number of codes of ethical conduct in man/boy affairs have been drafted by boy-lovers, especially in America and West Germany. Some make heavy demands upon the adults engaged in such relationships.

One document quoted by Rossman (1976, 192-193) says that the boy-lover, before seeking intimate contact, should know and understand the boy's interests and feelings. "Friendship with a boy should never develop into sexual intimacy without the boy fully understanding and consenting to any sex play, including the social and legal implications of the relationship." This contention is called into question by the findings of Sandfort (1981) who examined several very good relationships in which sex had begun right away at the first meeting and a profound friendship developed later. Considering that, with boys, the road to love is often prepared by sex (see Chapter Three), to overlook this possibility verges on false romanticism.

The ideal man in the code Rossman quoted does not "cruise" to pick up strange boys, because that would encourage them to prostitute themselves. He would never suggest that his young friend go to another boy-lover for sex, even when the boy expresses an interest in doing so. Isn't this all a bit too simplistic? Under certain circumstances the boy who "sells himself" can benefit from meeting a customer who treats him with solicitude and tenderness and fully understands his situation. And a boy's desire for sexual experimentation with different partners isn't always wrong; it should, in principle, be respected.

The Rossman code insists upon the boy-lover protecting his own reputation "so that his young friends will not be hurt or suffer as a result of association with him." He "must always be truthful and honest, and never lie to his young friend." He must not indiscriminately pass on pictures of his young friends to others without permission from the boy, nor provide the boy with alcohol or drugs, "and certainly will never use drugs to weaken a boy's sexual inhibitions or to get him into the mood for sexual intimacy." We can also unequivocally approve of this code where it states that a boy-lover has the responsibility for encouraging a boy to develop his heterosexual tendencies, unless, of course, the

boy clearly has a homosexual orientation. Moreover, the boy-lover must encourage the boy's efforts at school, discourage any tendencies toward criminal behaviour, protect him "from any harm, including exposure or embarrassment from arrest." Helping him to develop a successful career, disciplining him "by a code of behaviour which will be compatible with reasonable standards of his family and society" is also part of the bridge-over function of the educator. On occasion he must be severe.

Similar codes have been drafted by Nichols (1976) and Himmelein.

A generous, affectionate boy-lover is often strongly tempted to spoil his young friend with gifts and sweetmeats in order to please him. He might be all too prone to permissiveness when the boy becomes aggressive or destructive (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 283). The very real dangers that might result from these relationships lie not in the sex but in possible character distortion and the cultivation of commercialism in the boy, in arousing parents' jealousy, or attracting the disapproving attention of the people both partners have to live among.

Benefits to the Boy

If, during sexual intimacy, a boy senses that the man is expressing real, profound affection for him as an individual, not just arousal over his naked body, then the man can have real influence over that boy. Knowing that one lies at the centre of another person's thinking, that your misfortunes are perceived as his own, your successes as his victories, may work miracles in forming, or perhaps reforming, the boy's character and behaviour. With many boys in man/boy relationships this is the first time such a thing has happened in their lives, that they have been accepted as people in their own right.

For any boy it is a marvellous, inspiring experience to have the full loving attention of an adult. Gabriel Matzneff points out that in the story of the 12-year-old Jesus stealing away from his worried parents because he wanted to talk with the wise men in the temple, he was not received there as a foolish child: he was listened to with attention and understanding (1977, 133).

Righton (1981, 37) said 11- to 16-year-old boys told him "they had benefited and grown emotionally through their friendship." Sex shouldn't be all that matters in such a relationship, but it is certainly not negligible. For a child needs to be caressed if it will grow into an adult who can enjoy sexuality (Borneman 1978, 1156). Especially during adolescence, the spirit is nowhere else so strongly influenced as through the body (Patzner 1982, 10, 15). "Intimacy of constant companionship, of physical and personal knowledge is also a power of help and aid which cannot be put into words." (Jackson quoted by d'Arch Smith 1970, 87; cf. Baurmann 1983, 155)

From the moment a boy experiences a man's real love, and the boy can in some measure reciprocate, that man's way of living becomes an example to him. Whether or not this works for the boy's best interests, helps him or harms him, depends on the man's character, but there can be little doubt about its efficacy. Sexual intimacy coupled with love makes the boy more socially mature. Kentler, the German pedagogue, "took part in an experiment in Berlin, tolerated by the socialist alderman Mrs. Reichelt, to entrust run-away boys to boy-lovers. Everyone involved considered it a success, but it had to be stopped because of fears of a very stormy public reaction if news of it leaked out." (Schult 1982, 10) Geiser, an American psychologist, believed this procedure could be especially effective with neglected boys growing up without paternal love (1979, 84). The Danish police chief Jersild made the same recommendation (Moody 1981, 152). And the Amsterdam judge Cnoop Koopmans stated in a speech given in May 1982 that he had several times put slightly delinquent boys under the care of an honest boy-lover, and in some cases the results had been spectacular: shop-lifting had stopped, the boys' grades in school had risen, they had taken an interest in sports and reading (*Nationale Raad* 1982, 57). The loving man has the capacity to discover the good traits in a child—and also the difficult, troublesome, unadaptive ones (Lamping Goos 1982, 115).

On the other hand, promiscuous boys who have sex with lots of older people claiming to be wiser than they, people who occupy socially, economically or politically important positions, may become increasingly sceptical of the religious, political and moral principles of these men when they see how hypocritical they are in their sex lives (Barrington 1981, 32).

Sanders (1977, 46) summarised the effects on the child's personality of different "factors of up-bringing": warm or cold, permissive or restrictive (Table 9). Loved by an adult man, the boy is placed in a "warm" and "permissive" environment.

A warm climate in which to learn, especially in childhood, promotes secure, positive feelings about one's own being, and this, in turn, will make it easier to trust other people.

According to Gide (1925, 126), Plato said a lover is a friend in whom you perceive something godlike, and thus you easily accept his teachings. Teachers without some special bond with their pupils are all too often bad teachers (Stokvis 1947, 35; Montherlant quoted by Baudry 1982, 150; Sadger 1921, 190). Teachers of children who have distinguished themselves with their pedagogical talents often turn out to be paedophiles (Linedecker 1981, 103). A Belgian correspondent sent me a poem dedicated by a boy to a priest, his confessor and spiritual mentor, who had also initiated him sexually: "You make me naked; you are mild with me. Your gentle words lash my obdurate

Table 9

Permissive	Restrictive
<i>Warm:</i>	
Active; directed upon others	Dependent
Creative	Not creative
Aggression adapted to circumstances	Minimal aggressiveness
Minimal subjection to rules	Maximum subjection to rules
Understanding of views and expectations of others	Obedient
Independent	Submissive, conforming to utmost
<i>Cold:</i>	
Criminal	Neurotic problems
Always in opposition	Quarrelsome
Utmost aggression against other people	Utmost aggression against self
	Timid with peers
	Difficulty understanding views and expectations of adults

(Sanders 1977, 46)

heart; it bleeds and its obstinacy is torn asunder. My distorted face, always so reserved, begins to tremble, yes, even laugh. And I believe it's not too late. You are a brother, scourging me with your gentleness."

The ancient Greeks thought education was only possible when carried out with love, and this love should be spiritual as well as physical (Koch-Harnack 1983, 35). Boy-love had to satisfy a need "for personal relationships of an intensity not commonly found (...) in the relations between parents and children." (Dover 1978, 201) Because this love ought to be spiritual, the Athenians taught their sons not to abandon themselves too easily or too quickly to the desires of a man, and they encouraged the men to be more concerned with the character (the "soul") than the bodies of their young friends. On the other hand, they saw sexual intimacy not simply as permissible for the educator; it was actually part of his duty. Borneman (1978, 345-346) believed that the

nakedness of the boys in the gymnasia was intentionally calculated to excite the libido of their teachers. This is echoed by the American writer Nichols (1976, 55). He suggests that "the vivid beauty of the very young is intended to evoke protective feelings, and the unique sexual allure of lads from about eight through sixteen exists in part to draw a man's attention to and develop a particular interest in them." Warren Johansson perceives this as "an exclusive human transformation of the sexual drive with a generation-binding function: to create an erotic bond between teacher and pupil that underlies and strengthens the intellectual rapport between them. The sexual moment in *paiderasteia* overcomes the social distance between the generations, and the resentment which the older partner would otherwise feel for the adolescent beauty and vitality of the younger." (quoted by Nichols 1976, 94).

The physical basis of the teaching relationship between an older man and a boy was depicted in many paintings from the time of the great flowering of Greek civilisation (Walters 1978, 47). And we may recall Nietzsche's judgement of this pedagogical system: "Probably there has been no period in history in which young people were treated with more care, more affection, with more concern for their best interests, than in the sixth and fifth centuries." (quoted by Borneman 1978, 1011-1012)

420 The career of Abu Nuwas is a good example of teacher-pupil relationships in Arabic culture. He owed his development into one of the great poets of his day to his teacher Waliba. "When Waliba invited Abu Nuwas to become his pupil, he was, certainly at first, more prompted by purely erotic motives than by a desire to foster the growth of a poetic talent." For at that time Abu Nuwas was a beardless boy with a nice face and clear skin. His body was tender and slim, his behaviour engaging. He had a big head with thick hair. "Waliba took to him. He explained to the boy that he possessed a gift for poetry which he should not neglect, and he invited him to be his companion." "But Waliba not only loved and admired the handsome adolescent, he also took pains to train him until he made him the man he became." "When Abu Nuwas was still very young, his teacher Waliba b. al-Hubab introduced him into the company of gay people. He was the favourite of his master, but served also the lust of others." (Wagner 1965, 25-26, 100)

The same principles persist to the present day in Hindu pedagogy: "A sexual relationship will permit such plenitude in the association of teacher with pupil as makes the budding of the body lead to ennobling the soul and to the most elevated moral virtues." (Daniélou 1983, VI)

"If a love relationship is based upon trust and tenderness, it is for the adolescent boy the strongest stimulus for the awakening of his body and soul," says Matzneff (1977, 131), and elsewhere he adds, "I'm no pedagogue, but I know that the young beings with whom I had more lasting relationships were afterwards happier and freer, more 'realised', as the Indians say. To love a boy

is only meaningful if that love helps him to expand, to accomplish, to realise himself completely, to burst the bars of the family cage, to reject with ease the false obligations with which society tries to burden him. Our love should not be vampire-like, egoistical, subjugating, dominating, jealously controlling, stifling—the love of the wolf for the lamb. Quite the contrary: our love should be a fertilising love, liberating, vivifying, as is said of the Holy Spirit in the Byzantine liturgy." "What a pity it is that the boy-lover is usually compelled to limit himself to secret, casual meetings which don't permit him the leisure to offer the boy all the good he would like to present him with! To the adolescent boy, nothing could happen that is more fruitful, seminal, beneficial, than to meet an older person who loves him, takes his hand and guides him to discover the beauty of creation, to acquire understanding of other people and the things they do, and to gain self-knowledge. If I were a father, I wouldn't hesitate for a moment (...) to entrust my thirteen-year-old son to such an 'evil' stranger." (1974, 109)

Love gives the man a deeper understanding of the boy's psyche, and in fighting this love with such tenacity, society destroys countless unsuspected pedagogical opportunities. "Aren't we here presented with a capacity (potentially in any case) of communicating with a non-adult, immature 'universe', inaccessible to the 'normal' people of today? If this is true, what could we, the so-called 'normal people', eventually learn from the paedophile offender? Without any doubt 'pedagogical eros' was discussed in a manner very different from the way we discuss or discussed it, particularly in the earliest period of our own culture and still at present in other cultures. There are, anyhow, cultural systems of tending boys which understand how to use paedophilia to their own profit." (Giese, quoted by Krist 1976, 32; cf. Lambert 1976, 96)

For "philia" involves an element of responsibility as well as warm, loving affection, and this all against "a general background of erotic and sexual feeling coupled with respect and esteem." But as Lambert points out in a most interesting passage, just as love is connected with hatred, so in the paedophilic drive there are also (unconsciously) present "sexual possessiveness, envy, resentment, competitiveness, even discouragement and hatred of the young." That the positive elements will contribute to "provide the soundest psychological environment within which the young can develop in an individual and creative way" is easy to understand: the sexual element makes "the adult creative and imaginative in understanding and satisfying the inner needs of the young"; the warm affection establishes a favourable, relaxing, psychological climate; the responsibility turns the adult into a steady, reliable and available presence; the esteem element helps the adult respect the younger person's growing individuality. But the negative elements can be turned to beneficial ends, too, provided the adult is mature enough to make himself conscious of

their presence within him. His sexual possessiveness ("my" boy) may give the child a very comforting sense of belonging; envy "can be turned into a source of emulation and stimulation" and encourage him to maintain "freshness and flexibility of mind" which increases understanding; competitiveness may provide the young person with something "hard to fight against, thereby stretching his resources"; hatred, finally "can curb the tendency of some adults to swamp the young with care and concern." (Lambert 1976, 90-93)

These reflections, however, demonstrate very well how difficult boy-love is in its ideal form, how it really demands exceptional spiritual gifts, and how right Schérer is in concluding that it never will be practised by everyone in society and will always be limited to the exceptional few (1978, 184).

Perhaps discouraged by this insight, some boy-lovers have begun to dispute the whole concept of pedagogical eros. Adults, they say, should not think of children as "incomplete human beings which have in some way to be guided, shaped, formed, in other words to be educated". We should "recognise the child unconditionally as a full-fledged human, whose tendencies, desires and needs are in every situation to be respected." (Reinach 1980, 161; Schérer 1978, 23-24, 27)

Such a discussion can easily lead to stalemate if we continue to use similar words for different ideas. The crucial word here is "education". If education is thought of as drilling the child mentally (religion, morality, politics, instruction, choice of profession) and bodily (manners, sports, dress, haircut, etc.) in order to make him similar to the educator or his ideal, we are right to reject it unconditionally. In such a concept, education is "a procedure for adults to justify their own oppression, and to overcome through illusion their own misery this oppression creates by diverting it upon the adolescent." (Kentler 1979, 20)

But "education" can mean something quite different.

The child is born in such a state that it cannot survive without the assistance of older persons. He is destined to live in a society not entirely of our choice or creation but to which we belong however much we may criticise it. Whether the child likes to or not, he will evolve, physically and socially. What education really means is accompanying that child during this process, thus protecting him from certain accidents that might be fatal, to help him pick himself up again after other, less serious, accidents, finally to build a bridge over which this young person can find his own way into society as a unique, incorruptible specimen of humanity.

This bridge function of education can be destroyed in two ways, pedagogically and politically. The first is the pedagogical drill to conformity, which wrecks the uniqueness of the child in order to make him a perfect cog in society's machinery, devoid of personality. The other is the political inculcation of

exclusively negative views of society; in other words, a political drill to nonconformity. A boy with a strong personality might then become a rebel, a revolutionary; if he is weak he will become suicidal. The pedagogical drill may make a boy, under certain circumstances, relatively happy but certainly not human; the political drill might make a boy human, but certainly not happy.

We could, of course, simply forego the bridge function and leave the child to his own initiatives. But to the child this amounts to neglect: something which he needs is withheld. An excessively permissive upbringing tends to shape "authoritarian" characters: lacking direction and support, the child is willing to abandon himself in submission to any authority (Hagendoorn & Janssen 1983, 67; Kohnstamm 1983, 85-87). There are beyond doubt successful cases of anti-authoritarian education, but they have all taken place under the direction of some outstanding personality whose authority was so natural—and so complete—as to be spontaneously respected and accepted by the young people without it having to be imposed in the usual ways. A boy-lover may be able to acquire such anti-authoritarian authority over his young friend more easily than others less closely connected to him.

Treating as equal those who aren't is theatre; it is hypocrisy. In human worth, child and adult should certainly be considered equal and be respected as equals. It is well for a child to be courteous towards adults, and he is as much entitled to be treated courteously by the adult. But on the road into society, the child and the adult haven't covered the same distance, and it is unfair to the child to pretend that this isn't so. We should never, of course, forget that progress into the great social bosom doesn't entail only profit, for there are distinct losses along the way, too, and in some respects (such as in spontaneity, frankness, fresh vitality) the childish state is clearly the superior.

Léo Kamenéff describes very nicely this kind of ideal they strive for in his *Ecole en Bateau*: "Our relationships are between one person and another person, not between adult and child, nor between child and adult, nor between superior and inferior, nor between boy and boy, or girl and girl, boy and girl, etc. This doesn't mean we're all equals. It means I consider you to be a person and not an adult or a child or a boy or a girl or a superior or an inferior. I'm not going to help you because you are a girl and I am a boy and electricity is a boy's concern, but because I see you just can't do it by yourself. I will kiss you because I believe you like it, and then it doesn't matter that both of us are boys. I'll tell you how to do something even if you are an adult: I see you don't know how to do it, and I do... I'll do what you tell me to do not because I'm a child and you're grown up, but because I see you are right. And so on." (*Le Petit Voyageur*, Oct/Nov 1981, 28).

The fundamental equality of the child is best seen in sex play. Its aim is the joy and lust of naked bodies. With respect to readiness for this play, choice of

methods, feelings about what is nice and what is not nice to do, the boy is just as capable of judgement as the man, and his feelings are every bit as important. If, during sex, one of the partners abstains from doing something he likes, or does something he *doesn't* like very much, it can only be justified if he enjoys the joy of his partner and freely makes this sacrifice, never because he is in an inferior position and has to obey. Both have to consent equally to everything they do.

It is true that the man, with his greater experience, may be able to show the boy new techniques, ways to increase his sexual pleasure; his greater knowledge may help boys solve problems, enrich his mind. But we cannot say this makes him "an object of education". It is more an education in partnership. One of love's secrets is to have the influence of a teacher without intending to be a teacher (Kentler 1979, 19). The man often wants to give his young friend at an appropriate stage in his life the things he knows he himself missed at that age (van der Zijl 1976, 355-356).

In a steady, lasting relationship between man and boy, there will always be far more than sex, and what the two friends do together will reflect this education in partnership. The "Group of Paedosexuals in the Hamburg Homosexual Action" said, "We, the elders, should give up this glorious halo of the omniscient, the experienced. It may make you feel grand to be uncritically extolled as the Great Example, it may increase your feeling of self-importance, but at the same time it creates just that hierarchical distance we should be trying to reduce." The statement goes on, "Therefore we should strive to have self-confident, critical children, not 'children' in the traditional sense, but emancipated 'little men', no longer subjugated to pedagogical intent, but people we help by word and deed, just as we help other adults, but only if they want us to, and they help us too." (1980, 4)

It is quite possible to see some good sense here, but the wording is questionable. Nature—not we—forces children to not remain children forever, little people to grow big. Denying a child his childhood by treating him like an adult is as cruel as ignoring the degree of emancipation which he has already attained. Emancipation is not something which happens all by itself: the young human must conquer it by taking a critical view upon himself. But teachers who indoctrinate a child with a critical view of society based upon their own are simply imitating old-fashioned, traditional pedagogy in which a child has to conform his views to those of his parents. And if you refrain from helping a child by word and deed until he asks you to do so, you simply make life more difficult for the lonely and shy children compared to the more impudent, lazy ones. In some cases this kind of abstention might even amount to neglect.

Just as with a boy and girl in love with one another, sex takes up only a small fraction of the time man and boy spend in each other's company (Hass

1979, 28; Righton 1981, 34). They go to the movies together, the theatre, a museum, an exhibition, the zoo, the county fair or carnival; they go camping together, swimming, fishing, sailing. At home they fool around, play chess, listen to music, look at television, make things out of wood, take photos, read books, draw pictures, collect stamps. And, of course, the boy has his homework. These are all things which develop the boy, help him find solutions to the problems of his age and personal situation.

- 421 (Continued from 401) An entry from the diary of Conny's friend: "Today a year has passed since our first meeting. Together we became friends; together we sold compost; together we went swimming and diving; together we made little trips; together we rode our bikes through the area; together we hitch-hiked all over The Netherlands; together we rowed on the river; together we went shop-lifting; together we shared all kinds of adventures; together we acted silly; together we shared many joys; together we went thorough moments of distress; together we cried; together we made love; together we laughed; together we visited museums; together we dug for fossils, together we went to the movies; together we ate and drank; together we laid our plans; together we executed them. And I could just go on and on..." (Manuscript in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

It reminds one of Walt Whitman:

*We two boys together clinging,
One the other never leaving,
Up and down the roads going, North and South excursions making,
Power enjoying, elbows stretching, fingers clutching.
Arm'd and fearless, eating, drinking, sleeping, loving.
No law less than ourselves owing, sailing, soldiering, thieving,
threatening.
Misers, menials, priests alarming, air breathing, water drinking,
on the turf or the sea-beach dancing,
Cities wrenching, ease scorning, statutes mocking, feebleness chasing,
Fulfilling our foray.*

— (Quoted by Bullough 1976, 622)

Rouweler-Wutz's research led her to the conclusion that the child-lover's intent was more often affectionate than sexual, more concerned with the younger partner's well-being than with his own. Friendship mattered more than sex. The crux of such a relationship is "the forming of the child's character, accompanying the child on the road to adulthood, the improvement of the child's social, financial and physical condition. This is done through the common enjoyment of beauty, kindness and love, in giving love and lust to one another, by entering into the child's spirit, by really understanding the child. In so doing, each partner

enriches the other, in knowledge and wisdom, culture and recreation. A bond is forged by means of affection." (1976, 60)

For the people in her sample (N = 60), 86% thought friendship with a boy was more important than having sex with him; only 11% thought sex more important than friendship. Friendship without sex was acceptable for 73%, while 19% thought it wasn't. If a boy refused sexual intimacy, only 5% said they would break off the relationship, while 81% said they certainly wouldn't and 14% were undecided (1976, 95). Later in this chapter we will see that from the boy's point of view, too, sex is not the most important element in a man/boy friendship.

What emerges from this research has little in common with popular opinion, which sees sex not just as the most important element of such relationships but often as the only one. Society, in condemning and punishing, actually thwarts the non-sexual aspects of man/boy love; by doing so it exaggerates sex even in the boy-lover's mind, where it can take on an obsessional colouring it never would in a more liberated setting (Rouweler-Wutz 1976, 4).

On the other hand, it would be making a great psychological error to consider sex apart from the other things a man and a boy do with one another, or—worse still—think it is antithetical to them. Sex plays its part in the forming of a character. The boy in ancient Greece felt his self-respect raised if many men courted him, if his lover offered him a precious gift, if his sexual favour was the prize awarded to the winning artist at a competition. (Koch-Harnack 1983, 27, 37, 145). Parents observed that their sons became more cheerful and confident and their behaviour improved when they let them have a loving relationship with a suitable man. Earlier in this chapter we saw the positive effects of sexual intercourse. In the classic movie *Never on Sunday*, a young sailor is prey to destructive self-doubts; a "prostitute gives herself to him in such a way that he acquires confidence and self-respect. He goes away a deeper, fuller person than he came in. What is seen is an act of charity which proclaims the glory of God. The man is now equipped as he was not before." (Burton, quoting Williams, 1963, 54). But a boy has a better chance of experiencing such an act of charity with a loving man than with a female prostitute.

Sexual intimacy makes a boy more mature, and in this sense it does work to kill the child in him: it emancipates him; it is the ultimate rebellion against all oppressive authority. That is how Guyotat's young Serge (No. 96) felt when he united his body in passion with Emilienne under the open sky (1967, 322-325). The Jungian psychologist Kraemer is convinced that in a real love situation "a deep and lasting psychic awakening can encompass bodily and religious transformations of feeling that clearly go in the direction of individuation." (1976, 10). Bell and Weinberg's male homophile subjects mentioned as effects of their first love affair (mostly with an adult partner): "greater maturity,

self-insight, becoming a better or more complete person, higher aspirations, broader horizons, more self-confidence, more self-accepting." (1978, 315)

Kentler tells about a camp-site experience. In the old-fashioned sort of camp there was a constant struggle to keep young people from having sex, and there was all kinds of trouble. Then, in an experiment in Berlin, a decision was made to do away with preventative measures and allow sexuality to run its own free course. "The participants showed more imagination every day, new initiatives to shape their holidays to their own tastes; there were no fights, no disciplinary problems, no foul language; the consumption of alcoholic beverages actually declined. At one point it became obvious that the kitchen staff wasn't doing its job properly, but the problems arising therefrom were independently solved by the campers. All of this showed how creative and socially minded young people may become if you don't throttle their rights to a sexual life." (1970, 201)

Affectionate sex helps strengthen a boy's character; at the same time it teaches him how to use sex in partnership. Wilfried Gürtler, a German psychotherapist, writes, "A normal development of the sexual function is not the result of 'sexual education' but rather the reaction to sexual exploration of the child's own body and that of his partner or partners. Adults can, in the course of this process, help the child in making it clear to him that the emotions accompanying his sensations are good and desirable. A child who has had the opportunity to explore his senses and his erogenic zones, to develop a positive consciousness of his body and to have physical contacts with himself and other persons in a relaxed and lustful way—such a child will be at the onset of puberty endowed with a widely coloured gamut of feelings, a person who, sexually activated by his maturation, will, moreover, be able to have meaningful sexual experiences."

While society continues to consider the man/boy relationship a most problematic phenomenon, for the boy, looking for love, it is no problem at all—it is, in fact, the solution to his problem (O'Carroll 1980, 181). The discovery of this solution may be existentially disturbing. This is not to say it is traumatic, for it is fundamentally something positive. It is as important and fertilising to lead a boy to discover lust and even love as to discover a book, a symphony or the beauty of nature (Matzneff 1977, 150).

Now, it may happen that a boy, having struggled long alone with his problem, is so overwhelmed by its sudden solution that he forgets all else. Thus his school grades may decline for a while, until he achieves his new balance. Then they will probably rise higher than before, for he no longer has his energy sapped by his lonely wrestling; his interests can now expand (Sengers 1968, 80-81).

In heterophile boys, the fruits of erotic education by a man can be seen when they start to have relations with girls and women, become engaged and marry.

- 422 One of Bernard's subjects began a close friendship with a man when he was a boy of eight. "The bond and friendship became closer and closer, and then I felt this great warm radiation of love from him, something I'd never known before. (...) But this friendship was (and still is today) something I couldn't imagine having with anybody else. A little bit later—I may have been about ten—we started to have sex, too—something I liked very much. This continued right up to about my 18th year, and then I began dating girls. When I got engaged I told my fiancée quite frankly what had gone on during my boyhood. I was quite confident in doing this, and I managed to communicate my confidence to her. She was most appreciative. (...) Conclusion: It was an especially fine preparation for my later marital life. This way you get a really healthy outlook on the world." (1979, 40)
- 423 Jacques de Brethmas: "Twice in my life I have shared my home for over a year with a boy. Both boys had one thing in common: they had taken to the streets, the first because his parents were divorced, the second because he couldn't stand things at home. Now they have two things in common: each has a good job and is married. One has two children. Both their wives know about our past relationship. They are grateful to me for having brought up my beloved boys to be their husbands. I am the best friend of both families." (1979, 24)
- 424 A man had an intimate relationship with a boy for many years; later the boy married and went to live in another country. One day when the man was at an embassy reception, a woman went up to him and introduced herself as the wife of his former boy-friend. She said, "I know all about your connection with my husband and I'm most grateful to you. As soon as our son is 13 or 14 I'd like to send him to you to educate him the way you did his father!" (Personal communication)
- 425 One of my own subjects, Stephen, told me at age 15 "I got my first information about sex from school friends when I was 9 or 10. At 11 my brother Edwin and I—he's two years older than me—joined a nudist group for young people. I think nudism is a good thing. When we went camping over the holidays, and also at the leader's home, we were often naked. I think it's nice—and natural, more natural than running around all the time with your clothes on. I like to look at myself nude in the mirror. When I was 12 I discovered how to jerk off, and a little while later, one night in bed, I got an emission. Now I do it whenever I feel the urge—on average about twice a day. Mostly I just do it, without imagining anything, but sometimes I fantasise about a male friend. In the daytime I often get a spontaneous hard-on. Even with jerking off twice a day, ever since I was 13 I've sometimes got wet dreams, but not really very often. I don't remember what my wet dreams have been about. My friends have let me see sex pictures, and later movies, too, with nice boys and girls. They make me real horny. In our nudist group I became a very close friend with an 11-year-old boy, Nick, and we used to jerk each other off. This also happened with our leader, Kenneth. We kept this all secret from my brother because we were afraid he might tell our parents. We tried out all kinds of things: Nick and Kenneth sucked me off, and I sucked them off, too. One night when I was staying over with Kenneth he fucked me. Even though he had a really huge cock it hardly hurt at all. And that very first time I liked it, and I still think it's really nice when somebody does that to me. Further developments came when I was thirteen. Just before my fourteenth birthday I had

intercourse for the first time with a girl my own age. I've kept on doing it since then, but not regularly. I always use a condom when I fuck—I'm naked everywhere else, of course. It was only later, when I was fourteen, that I looked at her sexual organs closely, fingered and licked them, while she jerked me off and sucked my cock. Kenneth took me on trips to foreign countries where we visited other boy-lovers. And that's how I had sex with a French, a German and a Dutch boy—with Kenneth and our host looking on. With Nick and the German boy we often had group sex. Last year I saw Nick fucking a 13-year-old girl—a wonderful sight! If I was absolutely free to choose any partner I wanted now, I'd choose a girl of about 16 or a boy slightly younger—it's hard to decide which would be nicest, but probably the boy. Actually, everything I've done in sex has been absolutely delicious. Sucking and slipping your cock into somebody else are the finest things in the whole world. Looking back, I don't regret any of these experiences. Only maybe the first time I fucked a girl it excited me tremendously, but nevertheless it was dangerous and stupid. Sexual intercourse makes you feel healthy. You can learn that way everything about sex so much better, and I think this helps you later on, when you're a husband and a father. That's why boys should have a lot more freedom to enjoy sex than they mostly do now. Everything should be explained to them when they're still real young, just as soon as possible; then at around 11 or 12—even sooner if he wants—a boy should start to have intercourse with others. If I had a son of that age and I found out he'd had sex with a girl I'd have a long talk with him to set him straight on all of this. I'd certainly not be shocked. It's a completely natural thing to do—I did it myself! I'd be a little surprised if he had sex with an adult woman. If he'd had sex with another boy I'd think it was completely normal. You don't have to talk about it. And also with a man I'd think it was okay, if the man really and honestly liked him. The first real essential meaning of sex to me is it's an expression of love. In the second place, it's fun."

That gives a good picture of how this 15-year-old boy thought. Over the next five years he had lots of sex of all kinds, posed as a model for sex magazines and performed, with his friend Nick as partner, in sex movies. He was an outstandingly kind, helpful, trustworthy and cheerful boy. Slowly his masturbation fantasies centred more and more on girls.

Finally he got engaged. In his vocational training he performed so well and energetically that by the time he was 20 he already held down a responsible and well-paid position, which allowed him to marry. Before taking that step, however, he told his future wife the complete story of his former sex life. She told Kenneth, "I think you trained Stephen wonderfully—you made him the perfect lover!" (Personal communication)

Stephen's story is far from unique (Hearings 1977, 115; Moody 1981, 150; Reeves 1983, 29; Wilson & Cox 1983, 68, 116). Oppression of his sexual desires makes a boy hard, robs him of tenderness. The loving model and the flourishing of shared pleasure with an affectionate man teaches him to combine gentleness with passion. He will be grateful for it (Nørretrander 1983, 9; Hite 1981, 73).

Straver (quoted in Sandfort 1979, 139) sees three possible effects of a sexual relationship with an adult upon a younger partner:

- a) Through its tenderness it builds a bridge to the adult world, and/or an adult world larger than the limited family environment.
- b) It is a source of those tender contacts needed by all; this is especially important where parents have neglected to provide this tenderness.
- c) It may contribute to the sexual learning process.

It would be quite wrong, then, to say that most of the benefits of such a relationship go to the adult.

Nevertheless there are writers who perceive it only in this way. When paedophiles champion children's rights and the emancipation of youth, these writers accuse them of hypocrisy (Janus 1981, 205, 337; Plummer 1981, 131; Rush 1980, 260; X 1981, 131). In doing so they portray the paedophile not only as a hypocrite but as a fool. For it ought to be obvious that liberated, emancipated, sexually well-instructed children are much better equipped to deal with sexual proposals and reject those they don't like. Every boy-lover has had the experience of establishing very good friendships with boys who make it quite clear that they don't want to have sex with him. It is the obedient, ignorant, oppressed boy who runs the greatest risk of becoming involved in sex he really doesn't want. It is the essence of muddle-headedness to equate liberalisation of youth sexuality with child sex abuse (Blans 1984, 201).

It is not to be denied that boy-lovers who fight for children's rights hope to rid our culture of unjust laws and parental prejudice which threaten their love affairs. But it is real hypocrisy to censure them for this, reject their arguments, while giving respectful credence "to the interests of social groups who believe in the maintenance of strictly age-graded privileges," particularly in the field of sexual behaviour (Berger 1981, 252).

When the man, seeking sex with boys, takes the initiative, he does so out of his greater sexual knowledge and experience. The boy usually doesn't know what he wants at first; only in retrospect will he be aware of the degree to which he profited from the friendship. We have already mentioned the benefits: greater inner freedom, better and more complete understanding of himself, less anxiety, less aggression, better sexual information, fewer "adolescent problems", less sexual obsession, a more positive attitude towards nakedness, opportunity to discuss openly the most intimate matters, real instruction and practice in sexual activities combined with tenderness and respect for the partner, non-oppressive self-control, a better balanced personality. There is an opportunity here for a boy neglected by his parents to find a substitute father. One part of the wall between age groups is broken down. Here is a man who loves and cares—and abandons himself in intimacy completely and with an absence of shame. Here is a man with whom the boy can associate as an equal, whom he can follow without compulsion, let himself be guided of his own free will.

From the boy's point of view, the man is, or at least can be, his father, his big brother, his great friend who guides him, understands him, helps him and protects him. Often the man is the only real source of tender care the boy has. Likewise, the man can be a source of money and other material things the boy needs for play, amusement, recreation, adventure, etc. For a few vitally important years, the man may be the most important single person in the boy's life—but it is also possible that in the boy's mind the man really isn't very important, however concerned the man might be with the boy's well-being.

Sometimes we find boys who have deliberately set out to establish a relationship with a man; others accept intimacy out of necessity. Both can lead to the boy loving the man. Redhardt (1968, 83) cites cases of former boy prostitutes, now going with girls, who nevertheless sometimes visit some of their former clients whom they had come to like, using the excuse of "not having a girl-friend for the moment," or "nothing else to do", allowing masturbation and thus proving the continuance of a certain bond.

In boys consciously intent on establishing a relationship and driven by personal motives (such as the search for friendship or sex), affection is usually spontaneous, passionate and cordial. In those who associate with men out of necessity, love might sometimes grow out of gratitude, a love which expresses itself by a willingness to satisfy the man's desires. Most boys find their position lies somewhere between these two extremes. The average boy, in a close relationship with a man, will sooner or later be ready to accept its sexual possibilities. Sometimes it is the boy who takes the initiative to certain sexual practices, or encourages the man to try them, even if he is torn by inner conflict arising from society's prejudices, doubting whether what they are doing together is right or appropriate with a man he would like to look up to. Thus there may be certain things he will hesitate to do or accept, such as deep kissing, fellatio or anal penetration (Nichols 1976, 23). Homophobia instilled by parents or peers cruelly clashes with the pleasure experienced.

- 426 One of my Belgian informants is convinced that it is easier to persuade boys to engage in sex if they are not alone. One day he had a visit from two 12-year-olds. It was the first time either one had come to his home and they didn't know one another. But soon a kind of complicity grew up between them. The man got them to undress, and then sex took place quite naturally. When the boys were dressing later, the man, who was in another room, overheard them talking to one another: "I thought right from the start this guy was queer." "Yeah, a real pig. What are we going to do: never come back?" "No! I'll come back. After all, it was fun, wasn't it?" "Yeah? Well, allright, I'll do it too—if we come together." (Personal communication)

An experienced lover knows that a boy on the threshold of puberty is often "quite docile in nature and usually readily accepts a passive role in regard to the *whole* relationship, not solely its sexual aspects. (A boy occasionally can

be charmingly *active* in a seductive sense, but generally only long enough to 'ensnare' the man into a pleasurable/profitable association with him.) Indeed, it is often these very factors which make the relationship so intensely satisfying to the man, for here his urge to caress and protect, to guide and educate in a parental as well as erotic sense, has the most suitable of all subjects." (Nichols 1976, 25)

It is only later that the boy will come to a full understanding of what the relationship has brought him. Boys' feelings contemporaneous with the relationship have been analysed by Sandfort: the boy's bond with his adult friend is exciting, exhilarating, satisfying, liberating and gives him a feeling of being safe and protected. There are very few negative associations, and the only negative feelings reported were caused by the ignorant, disapproving stance of society (Sandfort 1982, 61-72)

It is striking that none of the boys examined by Sandfort considered sex the most important aspect of their relationship. It was nearly always positively valued, but it never predominated. This tends to be true even when the sex drive of boys is very strong.

427 At least two of my subjects, Max and Conny, were extraordinarily potent and horny. When Max (see No. 359) got to know his big friend at age eleven, he was at first quite passive in sex. He enjoyed it when the man did it, but he himself never initiated anything. All of this changed when he went into puberty. Now it was Max who kept urging the man to have intercourse with him—and so often it sometimes got too much for the man.

Conny (see No. 421) was always very active sexually, and, since Jan's potency was equally strong, it wasn't unusual that they had anal intercourse or enjoyed mutual masturbation three or four times when they spent a day together.

Later, when Max had been married, and Conny had a girl-friend, for several years, each complained to his trusted friend that these women wanted much less sex than they themselves did. They felt they had been spoiled in this respect during their boyhoods by having a steady partner always willing to meet their sexual needs.

Nevertheless, each vehemently denied that sex had been the most important part of their friendships.

Skin contact offers the little child warmth, comforts him when he is in pain and gives him a basic feeling of safety. It is a means of relating sexually that doesn't demand any refined skill or equality in partnership (Marinkelle 1976, 57). This is why the boy usually feels so safe and protected when he is in the embrace of his friend, naked body pressed to naked body.

428 The mother of 14-year-old Gerard knew he had an intimate relationship with Karel, a social worker. Sometimes she teased her son, calling him "a little queer", and Gerard, who felt quite heterosexual and longed to have sex with girls, didn't like this at all. Nevertheless, she let Gerard stay weekends with Karel and come back home to sleep

Sunday night. What especially impressed her was the condition of Gerard's bed when she went to make it up. Monday mornings, after his weekend of sex with Karel, the boy had obviously slept soundly and quietly, and this was true of the following night as well. But for the rest of the days of the week his bed clothes were wound about and thoroughly messed up by his tossing and turning during the night. (Personal communication)

Many boys who are deeply religious seem able to harmonise their spirituality with these elevated experiences of friendship. We have already seen this in the case of Curro (No. 216).

429 Parker Rossman (1976, 113-115) relates a similar story. An American officer leaving for Vietnam intended to be faithful to his wife. A half-Chinese sergeant introduced him to girls, but he turned them down. The man then brought him a 13-year-old boy, Chonny, saying, "He's a sweet boy and wants to love you. Why don't you relax and enjoy him?" So he did. "I'd been gone from my wife a long time and I was ready for something. I figured that this kind of jacking-off with a boy was more loyal to my wife than chasing after girls as all my friends were doing. From then on, I slept with Chonny a couple of nights a week. (...) At first he was very docile, eager to please me. As he grew older—I think he was a late developer—he became more aggressive himself. I grew so fond of him I wouldn't do anything to hurt him for the world. (...) He had marvelous hands (...) for making me feel good. I'd never been much for massage, and so forth, but I swear he was so good he could give me an orgasm just by massaging me. Chonny was also very religious, and he said the body is holy—by which he meant something different from what I had been taught at Sunday school in Texas. He said that when we enjoyed each other sexually we were worshipping. Sometimes he would sing religious songs to me as we made love, and he would pray each time he came—which for him was several times a night. (...) I grew up thinking of myself as a pretty good kid, so I knew it was sinful when I played with myself—with Chonny, however, it was just the opposite, a gift of the gods or something like that. The sin—in Chonny's eyes—was to fail to please me."

If the intimacy of the relationship is not seen as something completely private and exclusionary, the boy might very well show his positive valuation of the sex by bringing along a friend or younger brother the next time to join in the fun. Often when it gets out among a group of boys that a certain man is "doing it with kids"—and he is generous with food and drink and at his home there are many interesting things to do—they come of their own accord and offer themselves (McCaghy 1971, 23).

The age of the man seems to make little difference. In the boy's eye, anyone over twenty-five is old: that is to say, he belongs to another universe. Real gerontophilia (sexual preference for aged people; the ideal partner being an old man) is quite exceptional. (The child psychologist Elizabeth van der Zijl, incidentally, considers such a preference a variation rather than a deviation of the sexual impulse (1976, 357).)

430 One 70-year-old man reported: "I was in a hotel in the Far East and I went into the elevator. The doors shut—and then suddenly opened again and in came a boy of about 15 or 16. He looked at me, and it was like he'd received an electric shock. He greeted me with a particularly friendly smile and just stood there staring at me. He was handsome and strongly built. We got out at the same floor. He knocked at the door of my neighbour, and I saw him taking note of which room was mine, once again giving me a most friendly smile. The following evening there was a knock on my door, and I opened it to this same boy, looking, I must say, most radiant. "It is I, Romeo. May I come in? I'd like to talk to you." He immediately pulled off his shirt and sat down on the bench at my side, the upper part of his body naked. I admired his beautiful muscles, and he told me proudly he belonged to some sports team that was the champion of the capital city high school teams. I couldn't stop myself from caressing the smooth, fine skin of his breast. However, that only went on for a very short time, because, quite to my surprise, he threw himself upon me and started to embrace and kiss me with extreme passion. Then he stopped all of a sudden. "May I take a shower?" he asked. He ran to the bathroom and returned five minutes later, quite naked now, showing off his body proudly: a Greek god, splendidly harmonious, a bronze statue. I had already stripped back the bed-clothes, and with no hesitation he lay down, pulling me down at his side. He was ready for sex. His penis was small but hard as iron. He helped me undress and then rolled on top of me, so we were belly to belly. He started to hump downwards upon me, becoming wilder and wilder, as if in a rage. I'd never seen such frantic passion in a boy. He grew quite out of breath, panting to satisfy his lust. When his climax finally came, his seed poured over me like a flood. Slowly he relaxed, and whispered to me, "Did you come, too?" "No, not yet." He rolled off happily onto his back and pulled me, now, on top of him. By now I was thoroughly aroused, and it wasn't long before my seed, too, was mingling with his. Our bodies were dripping with the fluids of our passion when we walked together to the shower. It was quite amazing for me to have such an experience at my age." (Personal communication)

In general, however, it is not the man's body—perhaps with the exception of his genitals—that excites the boy. He is not looking for beauty, but something else, and, all things being equal, one body is as good as another. We might recall the words of the 19-year-old French youth previously quoted: "If forty different people had been presented to me when I was ten, I would have slept with every one of them, no matter who." (Dieckmann & Pescatore 1980, 76)

It is not unusual—another point we have already mentioned—that things "click" right from the start, so that sex takes place almost immediately. Both man and boy are in the mood and ready to make love. But if meeting follows meeting, other elements soon begin to enter their relationship.

And so a Belgian boy-lover declared, "My relationship with a boy often begins with salacity, but if our contact goes on longer, something changes. Then being with him becomes more important than the sex. His way of walking, his voice and everything personal about him becomes more interesting than his cock. The attraction is sexual, but the longer and nicer the contact, the less necessary sex seems to become. The erotic gets the upper hand over the sexual.

I believe the children experience the relationship in the same way. Frans had sex with me right away the very first night. After that it was kind of "old hat" for him. The first sex is a kind of welcoming ceremony." (Roos Vlinderschrift 3, 21)

This touches upon the fundamental meaning of sex in friendship. In itself it is not the most important element, but it makes possible a kind of communication which couldn't occur by any other means. The sexual relationship removes inhibitions originating from outside. The emotional and physical joy stimulates thinking and liberates speech.

A fifteen-year-old American youth made a very profound observation about having intercourse with his girl-friend, and this can be equally applicable to a man/boy relationship: "It's like getting inside a girl's head. It isn't that you just know a girl better after you've had sex with her. It's that you open up with each other, and you trust each other, and you find yourself saying things that maybe you never even thought out for yourself before. I get to know a girl a lot better after we've balled, better than I used to think I had a right to know anybody." (Sorensen 1973, 51)

Recognition of this truth, of course, increases with experience. The statement "The only reason young people have sex these days is physical enjoyment" was agreed to by 43% of the 13-15-year-old boys, but only by 29% of the 16-19-year-olds. The statement "Having sex together is a good way for two people to become acquainted", on the other hand, got the approval of 42% of the younger and 57% of the older boys (Sorensen 1973, 51, 424).

Psychic intimacy grows with the intensity of physical contact. This was shown in the NISSO research summarised in Table 10. Group A consisted of 103 boys who only exchanged caresses of varying degrees of intimacy with their (female) partners; Group B consisted of 140 boys who had experienced complete sexual intercourse (coitus).

Sengers, a psychiatrist, wrote in the Roman Catholic *Tijdschrift voor Theologie* (1967, 144) about "unstable youth looking for support. In a bond with an older individual of the same sex—and this applies also where a sexual relationship develops—they more easily outgrow their problems. They live in a love relationship which affords them whatever they need (and which can be found) in this phase of their existence. In our time the conviction has gradually grown that sexual contacts in puberty and adolescence help the personality to develop, and not one good reason has been advanced to make an exception for homosexual relations.

431 In this context one can understand the statement of a 34-year-old teacher, reflecting on his youth, (quoted by O'Carroll 1980, 83-84). As a boy he became sexually mature at age twelve-and-a-half. "It was like the world was beginning to make sense, to take on purpose and meaning. (...) I regard my meeting with Mr. S., then aged twenty-six,

Table 10

Boys discuss with their girl-friends:	Group A	Group B
Intimate topics important for themselves:		
Frequently	10%	18%
Fairly frequently	11%	21%
Sometimes	25%	28%
Never	54%	33%
Intimate topics important for partner:		
Frequently	5%	14%
Fairly frequently	12%	26%
Sometimes	24%	27%
Never	59%	33%

(de Boer 1978, G-2-11)

as a critical turning point in my love life. Until then, sex was fun, felt good and left me only moderately guilty. Once I approached Mr. S. (Yes, I approached *him*) with my thirteen-year-old impatience for intimacy, he told no one, responded positively to my shaky advances (didn't even laugh at me!) and simply embraced me. (...) Here was a masculine adult man (happily married even), who was interested in doing with me what I was already finding exciting with my boy-friends. And through this relationship a new dimension was added to my experience which had not occurred to me before—tenderness, affection and love. (...) This affection was, in its way, just as satisfying as the ecstatic orgasms that punctuated our days and nights together. I regard this man, this relationship as a turning point because I was never the same after knowing him for two years—I was more in tune with myself after that...”

One of the most serious problems which threatens the happiness of male youth is the madonna/whore complex, as we have previously seen. One way of attacking it is by allowing the young boy to have a relationship which combines sex with tenderness. In a contact with an adult friend the boy learns not only how to use his body as an instrument and source of lust, but to associate this, quite naturally, with the expressions of love and affection.

Leonetti (1978, 233-234) discussed this with a professor of neurology, Pierre Martin, who said, quite simply, that a boy-lover wasn't capable of conveying this to a boy because he was infantile himself. The boy-lover, this learned gentleman maintained, “has his little secret joys with children, and this is as childish as stealing cigarettes, masturbating secretly somewhere or sneaking a taste of jam. He remains on this mental level.” And the professor had his proof:

“The proof is that the boy-lover, if confronted with a social problem, hides behind the skirts of his grandmother.” It would profit such a man of science, if, before attacking his fellow human beings, he not only consulted his psychoanalytic theories but cast a glance at real life!

432 (Continued from 427) Max at the age of 17 certainly knew better, from his close relationship with a boy-lover since age eleven. He said, “This man taught me the meaning of love.” (Personal communication)

A widely experienced French boy-lover (Max *et al.* 1980, 77) even referred to “the marriage-like character of the paedophile relationship” as a preparation for the boy's later heterosexual life.

If we admit that the child needs to be touched and cuddled in order to grow into a loving and lovable adult (van Naerssen 1983, 9), and that having a sexual relationship is the best way to become conscious of one's own sexual identity (cf. the examples in Rush 1980, 248-249; Barrington 1981, 30), we have to conclude that the benefits of such a relationship can be important and there are therefore few *moral* grounds for the adult to adopt a reserved, wait-and-see attitude, whatever might be the legal reasons for doing so. Social reality may make it advisable to remain passive until the boy starts to seduce the adult, but respect for the boy's identity should never be used as a reason for refusing to take the initiative. The beginner often needs a bit of a push to urge him over the threshold of fear, and the man can perform a real service in giving this gentle push. Initiation can be a useful link in the chain of the learning process (Straver, quoted by Sandfort 1979, 92). Afterwards the boy will recognise this, as with the woman who wrote, “People wanted me to believe I had been making love to a scoundrel, a criminal. This troubled me and made me unhappy for four years. Now I see that something very beautiful had happened to me, for I was introduced into the world of eroticism very cautiously and tenderly and without fear.” (Scheller 1980, 90)

Of course, any attempt to force the issue is wrong. Those English and American judges who refused to pass sentence upon women for “seducing” 15-year-old boys because they considered such activity “natural and pedagogically healthy” were quite right.

433 But very wrong was the tailor's wife who, having accidentally observed that a 14-year-old apprentice in her husband's shop had an uncommonly large penis, enticed the boy to her home where, after getting him drunk on alcoholic egg-nogs, she and two other women overpowered him and pulled down his trousers. Despite his resistance, he got a strong erection, which the woman introduced into herself by sitting on him. With her friends still holding him down, she rode the boy until he ejaculated. The youngster was thoroughly disgusted. (Stieber 1971, 74-75)

Right from the beginning, the child should be free to experiment, to gain sexual experience, and adults, on a middle-ground between a policy of total permissiveness and authoritarian intervention, should stimulate and support this. Parents should teach their son the right words for sexual activities and the pleasant sensations which accompany them. If they do this the boy will be encouraged to experiment. If he is used to talking and acting without shame, he will much more easily master the problems of puberty. But he should never be pushed to pass the limits of what he himself feels is pleasant and enjoyable (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 108-109).

Peyrefitte (1977, 424-425) makes Aristotle, while teaching the young Alexander and his companions, quote the words of Euripides: "Love is the best school for wisdom and virtue. Of all the gods, none for mortals is so pleasant to meet as Eros. With a pleasure free of sorrow, he guides us toward hope. I recommend youth to love, never to fly from Eros, and to profit well from him when he comes."

The Adult Friend and the Boy's Parents

The way such a relationship may make a boy more mature and independent can alarm many parents. Sylvere Lotringer observed, "The pedophile appears all the more threatening to parents in that he liberates in the child a potential for love and pleasure necessarily stifled by the confusion within the family of adult roles and parental status. The child's desires for adults is met by the stranger—child seducer, abductor and alleged molester. Since the child's guilt strongly contributes to maintaining his parents' authority over his life, a desire freed from guilt and repression is immediately felt as a threat to the family order. I suspect a good deal of the parents' sheer panic over the issue of pedophilia lies there." (Lotringer 1980, 4)

Whatever the age of the boy, it is never easy for a father and mother to see their son fix his passionate love, his rapt attention on somebody outside the family (Cohen-Matthijsen 1982, 43). This is only human. And the younger the child, the more difficult it will be. In Chapter Three we saw how a positive response here can improve the boy's relationship with his parents, while panic, enmity and a defensive reaction may destroy it forever. Wise parents never lose their son to a friend; he comes back to them enriched and more mature. It is only a normal element of emancipation when a certain spiritual estrangement arises between the generations; it will later heal over completely.

Corstjens, a psychologist, wrote, "I don't wish to cast any doubt upon the honest intent of parents who are only concerned about the welfare of their child. The problem, however, is to distinguish between what will favour the child's development and what will impair it. I am convinced that those parents who are

able to see their child as an individual who even at a very early age has his own particular personality, parents who value this individuality, who want to encourage its full development and maturation by walking with the child on its long road to adulthood, stimulating, loving, protecting, but not repressing and prohibiting—such parents, facing the fact of their child engaged in a paedophile relationship, will not feel this as an attack on the ideals they adhered to while raising him. Such parents will show understanding when the child meets with another adult and will not be wounded by the child receiving and returning affection with someone who might be outside their own circle of friends. Respect for the individuality of the child will help them accept this bond with an outsider, and react positively to their knowledge that this affection expresses itself in physical contact as well." (Corstjens 1975, 104-105. See also Berger 1981, 248)

The security engendered by parental consent is absolutely invaluable for the boy's happiness and to realise all the potential for good in an intimate friendship.

434 Fourteen-year-old Keith was devoted to his mother. He also had a big friend, Gary, and was very happy because his parents let him visit Gary regularly and go on holiday trips with him. Quite spontaneously, sexual relations began between them. About a year later Keith's mother became ill. Keith was very concerned. During his visits to the hospital he saw his mother growing steadily weaker, but he had difficulty accepting what seemed like the inevitable outcome; he kept hoping against hope that one day she would be all right again. Finally the father told Keith, in Gary's presence, that the doctors had given up hope, that the boy's mother was dying. To Gary he said, "I could break this terrible news to my son only knowing you're there to support him. Will you sleep with him tonight?"

The next morning Gary went to the hospital for his farewell visit with Keith's mother. He told her what had happened. Her face was radiant. "Soon Keith won't have a mother any more," she said. "But now at least he'll have two fathers instead. I was quite afraid that his father would be jealous of you, because Keith loves you so very much. Now I feel calm and happy." (Personal communication)

Conversely, a boy-lover who is aware of his responsibilities and wants to help his young friend will see it as his duty to be concerned with the boy's relations with his social environment, especially with the family he lives in. It is important that the boy-lover, if at all possible, make contact with the parents (Montherlant & Peyrefitte 1983, 298). Leonetti (1978, 225) tells of a French boy who hated his father; the man he loved, however, brought him to a better understanding of the man's reasons for behaving as he did, and finally father and son were reunited in understanding. This is a rather similar story to that of Kurt and his youth leader friend (see number 408).

We must keep in mind that even in ancient Greece, with its high regard for boy-love, fathers didn't always find it easy to accept their sons having intercourse with a man. It was thought unseemly for a boy to yield to quickly.

Aristophanes mockingly describes the dream of a boy-lover about an ideal city where the father of a handsome boy reproaches him: "How now, my dear fellow? You met with my son when he had just come out of the gymnasium, freshly bathed, and you didn't even kiss him? Didn't call him to your side? Didn't press his body against yours? You didn't even fondle his balls—you, an old friend of the family?" (Buffière 1980, 180)

Even then, of course, just as today, there were parents who turned a blind eye to what was going on, so they wouldn't be obliged to say 'no'. The Greek historian Xenophon is also the author of a *Symposium* setting down conversations taking place during the course of a magnificent dinner given by the 33-year-old Kallias for Socrates and other guests, including a 14-year-old boy, Autolikos, and his father who however remains very much in the background. The guests praise the boy's beauty; allusions are made to his love for Kallias, a man well known for his salacity and many adventures with boys. At the end (cap. IX), a kind of live-show takes place: a girl and an athletic appearing boy celebrate the marriage of Dionysos and Ariadne. Autolikos' father considers this spectacle is unfit for his son's eyes and the two of them retire. Kallias and his remaining guests are very aroused and, when the show is over, rush away to satisfy their lusts. Kallias joins his young friend (cap. X) and the father, evidently, retires for a moment to leave them alone. Xenophon explains the father's leniency by saying that in his own youth he, too, had once been in love with a man (Cf. Peyrefitte 1977, 454-455; Vol. 1 of this book, 244-245).

What were the considerations that would make a Greek father approve of his son's love affair? There was never any objection to an older boy taking the active role; this was considered natural and normal. The same father who might admonish his 14-year-old son not to talk to strangers on his way home from the gymnasium would be amused to hear how his 20-year-old son had "bent" the 14-year-old neighbour boy (Dover 1978, 88-89). But there were circumstances which permitted indulgence even in the case of younger boys. "Anyone would rather be good-looking than ugly; the attentions of an erastes (boy-lover), assuring a boy that he is not ugly, are welcome to him for that reason alone (the young Alcibiades felt 'dishonoured' when Socrates did not try to seduce him), and the boy's glory is reflected on the father. A generous erastes earns gratitude, and generosity has many forms, from a gift that can be crudely assessed in monetary terms to an unobtrusive sacrifice of one's time, convenience or advantage. A patient erastes can earn his reward by working upon a boy's sense of justice (we tend to think that patience deserves reward); an unhappy and desperate erastes earns compassion; an erastes who has demonstrated military, athletic or artistic prowess earns a boy's admiration and is taken by him as a model; and a lovable erastes earns love. One can see in all such cases how, if the boy is at all inclined to yield, his father's opposition may

weaken too, especially if the erastes belongs to a powerful and influential family or is in truth an excellent model for the boy to imitate." "Neither an Athenian boy nor his father is in the least likely to have regarded the existence of the desire in the erastes as a defect, and criticism could only take the form, '...but he *only* wanted...' " (Dover 1978, 89-90)

Today the situation is different. The following progression of events is hardly rare: parents permit their son to visit a nice man of their acquaintance without giving it much reflection. Gradually, however, they can no longer hide from themselves the suspicion that there is something more than casual friendship going on between the two; it is more like love and the closest sort of intimacy. At the same time, however, they note how happy and satisfied their son seems to be, how his behaviour has improved, how he is better and kinder to his brothers and sisters, how less aggressively he acts, how his grades at school are going up. And so they prefer not to intervene (West 1980, 53). A Dutch mother said she didn't have to know exactly what the man and her son did with one another: "I don't ask. I don't want to know." (Sandfort 1981, 81) André Gide makes the mother in *Les faux-monnayeurs* say to the lover of her son that she would only reproach him if he didn't love the boy. Moreover, it is better graciously to permit what you cannot prevent. She doesn't want to see the boy debauched, but on the other hand she is well aware that chastity in boys is not the best preparation for being a good husband. "I believe you can be good for him." And when the man protests that she credits him with too much virtue, she adds, wisely, "It is the boy who will make you a better man." (1925, 306-307)

- 435 Eglinton (1964, 158-178) describes no less than nine cases of non-intervention by knowing parents. Not without its humorous aspects is the case of Claude, a Harvard student, who at a festival of folk music met 12-year-old Jimmy. Claude showed a friendly interest in his puppets and soon the boy started wrestling with him. "After a while Jimmy's wrestling became a bit more in earnest, but its intention was not to hurt Claude: instead, despite all Claude could do, Jimmy in a few minutes nearly tore off Claude's trousers. Claude said into the boy's ear, 'Cool it, kid—you know you've almost pulled my pants off?' Jimmy answered, 'That's what I was trying to do. (...) Let's go into the bedroom, then nobody'll care if we pull our clothes off.' Claude demurred; Jimmy insisted." Eventually they did go into the bedroom. "The wrestling resumed and ended with each disrobing the other. Jimmy, already puberal, was actively sexually excited. Claude had become so during the wrestling. Jimmy admired the size of Claude's organ and pointed with pride to how his own had grown in the last few months, etc, using the comparison as an opportunity for fondling both. 'Didn't you ever fool around this way, Claude?' Claude had to admit it, though insisting that he was not queer and in fact was then engaged to be married. Jimmy confided in Claude that he had already 'gone all the way' with a girl cousin. But Claude was unable to find any good reason not to cooperate with Jimmy in the sex play the boy wanted so much. (...) In the months to come, Claude struck up a friendship with Jimmy's mother,"

a widow. "As he saw more of her, inevitably he also saw more of Jimmy, who now and again wanted further sexual contact. (...) Eventually Jimmy began to spend nights at Claude's apartment and their sex play developed many variations of technique. (...) Both Claude and Jimmy long believed that the sexual element in their friendship remained unknown to their common acquaintances, though of course everybody knew that the boy had become very close to Claude. What, then, was Claude's surprise some months later to learn from a confidant that Jimmy's mother had been joking about it with some of her friends, wondering just how Claude and Jimmy were Doing It, but taking for granted that they were—and accepting the fact as 'something the boy would have to go through sooner or later, and far better that it happens with someone who really cares about him'." In spite of this, Claude never found the courage to discuss the situation with her openly during the two years his relationship with Jimmy lasted.

- 436 (Continued from 320) Thomas said, "So I was practically alone in the house and Hervé actually lived with me. It was very pleasant. From time to time his mother called to find out about her son. She quickly caught on to what was happening, and consented. She even defended us with her women friends."

"She also knew about the sex? That isn't obvious."

"Yes, I believe many of her female friends knew about that, too, because they asked her, 'What is your son doing with this young man? He's four years his senior! That's not normal. They are always together; they spend their nights together.' The mother preferred to confront the anger of these people, and she never made a move to separate us. As she saw it, she was very unhappy with her husband; her son was very happy with me, and this didn't disturb her."

"It lasted for years?"

"From when I was sixteen to twenty, and he was twelve to sixteen." (Hennig 1979, 141)

Open discussion and recognition are rather exceptional. We have already seen one case in example 132.

- 437 Leonetti writes about a 34-year-old teacher who had lost his job after being sentenced for sexual contacts with children. But a mother entrusted her little son to him every time when she had to go out. "She had no objection whatever if something sexual might happen with the child, as long as he willingly participated and liked it."

"Did she tell you so?"

"Yes. In her own words, 'If it enriches a child, even if only by giving him a new experience, I would be delighted if something happened.'"

In general mothers seem to accept such relations better than fathers (Pieterse 1982, I - 13). It is not unusual for women to see homosexual intercourse between males in a totally different light from heterosexual activity. There are wives who are quite tolerant of their husbands having sex with a boy but would become extremely jealous if he took up with a girl. Likewise, there are mothers who don't object when their sons have sexual relations with a man but who would be upset if he was having heterosexual intercourse.

- 438 Bieber (1962, 56) tells of such a case. A rather dominating mother, during the war years, often took servicemen into her home to spend the night. If there was only one guest, he would be lodged in her son's bedroom. The boy started his homosexual practices when he was twelve, and so "had a number of homosexual partners supplied by his mother. On one occasion she discovered her son in bed with a guest, but she raised no objection and made no comment." But she warned him repeatedly about women. Whenever the boy showed an interest in a girl, "the mother immediately found fault. She encouraged his relationship with a boy"—the same boy with whom he had had his first homosexual affair.

After the publication of my German book on boy-love (1970), people wrote to me of a number of cases where parents accepted an erotic relationship with their son. "If they have a real understanding of such relationships, some parents may actually be happy that during these critical years their son has found an older friend and know he is now in good hands." (Schlegel 1966, 209) A similar judgement was made by one of my French acquaintances, an intelligent boy-lover with years of practical experience. He wrote me, "Wise parents generally like it when their son has a steady relationship with an adult man, providing this relationship is good for him. They enter into the game and make it easy for both to meet, as long as scandal is avoided. It is only when something goes wrong and police appear on the scene that their attitude changes, and then really because they don't want to endanger their own position and be accused of complicity." In a case study of Wilson & Cox (1983, 78) a boy-lover observed, "If the parents know that you are having this relationship, they say, well, they know it's not a good thing, but we will do more harm to him if we break it up." In her research among 148 paedophiles, Pieterse (1982, II - 28) found that 13.5% had been confronted only by parents hostile to any relationship. 12.8% had encountered parents who accepted the relationship and were aware of its sexual aspect. 29.7% had experience with parents who consented to the relationship but didn't know about the sex, and 35.1% had dealt both with parents who knew and tolerated the sex and those who did not know about it.

Rossmann, after interviewing more than a thousand boy-lovers, observed that nearly all of them, sooner or later, had come across consenting parents who knew about the sex play with their sons, permitted it or tolerated it (1976, 169). A very limited Dutch research poll turned up the fact that 4% of parents interviewed said they would be willing to entrust their child to a paedophile baby-sitter (Nijhof 1978, 41-43). Bernard (1979, 80) and Rouweler-Wutz (1976, 33) cited similar cases. The latter found in one study of 45 sets of parents, 26 instances where they knew their child had relations with an adult, and in 16 of these cases the parents talked about the situation with the adult involved. In 12 instances the child told the parents. Parental reactions were: 4 accepted the

relations completely; 6 tolerated; 4 were indifferent; 3 were hostile, 9 tried to intervene (1976, 59).

In Chapter Three we discussed Sandfort's study of 25 boys currently involved in paedophile relationships. Three sets of parents were totally ignorant of the relationship; 13 were not explicitly aware of the sexual aspect (although it was almost certain that two sets of parents knew there was sex involved, and in 4 more cases it was probable they knew this, while in 2 cases they definitely were aware that the man loved their son). In a majority of the cases the parents accepted the relationship, (calling it, according to their sons, "good", "quite normal", "excellent"); some tolerated it; in one case they were indifferent. Two fathers were hostile. In seven, possibly eight cases the parents were well aware of the sexual aspect, and six accepted it fully while one only tolerated it. In one case the mother consented completely while the step-father, who himself had sex with the boy, was hostile. In the remaining case the mother suspected the truth, calling it "dirty," while the boy steadfastly denied any sex was taking place, saying, "I won't let us be separated. I'll decide myself what I want to do." (Sandfort 1981, 81-82)

- 439 When Kenneth first got to know 11-year-old Edwin, the boy still had little body hair but was nevertheless sexually precocious, being the proud possessor of a full-grown penis which was able to ejaculate a large quantity of sperm. A year later, when Edwin was twelve-and-a-half, Kenneth wrote, "On Sunday Mum and Dad and brother Nick returned home, leaving Edwin with me until last Sunday. He was very excited about the whole thing and loved every minute of his stay. He told me that his mother (who is a pious church-goer) had told him that she knew he and I were in love with each other but she didn't mind at all! What an incredible family! I must say that I am hopelessly in love with the boy and it is lovely to think, how many years we can still have together before he becomes a man."

A month later: "We had a wonderful Easter weekend in New York with Dave and boyfriend Fred (17). Edwin's schoolfriend Larry (13) (with whom Edwin had been having sex for the last three years) joined us and made passionate love with him both 8-hour journeys! They stripped naked in the car and Edwin sucked L. off at least 4 times drinking every drop. He really loves doing it. I never even suggested the idea! Pretty amazing for a 12-year-old. (...) I've never seen him looking more beautiful than he was at Easter. Unfortunately the other two boys gave him some juicy love-bites on the neck. (...) When we got back the family disbelieved his story that they came from wrestling with L. Mum gave a 'knowing' smile and Dad said he must be a girl or 'one of them'! Last time I stayed with the family E's brother was moved out of their bedroom to make way for me. So Edwin and I were alone together.—Ideal."

Three months later: "E was with me for 4 solid weeks. Marvellous!" His friend Roger (11) joined them. "We toured nudist camps. (...) Edwin celebrated his 13th birthday at the end of the trip. (...) Each evening a group of teenagers would play billiards, table tennis etc. in the clubroom—all naked of course. (...) The last two weekends I have met up with Edwin's family and we have all camped together in my caravan (...) Me and Edwin slept (...) in one big sleeping bag. Each night we were able

to make love without difficulty and absolutely no comment about the sleeping arrangements from Mum and Dad! They are both so open about sex that they often comment on the size of his cock and when he was embarrassed to get out of bed with a hard-on they told him not to worry, saying he should be proud to show off such a big one. So he did!"

Again a month later, "Last weekend was remarkable. E's family stayed with me at my caravan. As usual we were naked most of the time and Edwin slept in my sleeping bag. Before going to bed, however, Mother and Father were congratulating him on the size of his penis and encouraged him to get a hard-on. So he did and so did I! They then got us to measure and see whose was the largest. Same size! Great amusement for all. Incidentally they have given me permission to take him anywhere abroad."

Five months later: "When he and his family stayed a the New Year, he thought he would have to sleep on the floor or sofa. Not a bit of it. His mother suggested he sleep in my bed as it is so big. She said she was sure I wouldn't mind as he had shared my sleeping bag in the caravan! So on the strength of all that I slept in Edwin's bed when I was at their house the weekend before last. No comments were made by any of the family!" (Letters in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

- 440 The Dutch magazine *Nieuwe Revu* (1980) printed a letter to the editor: "I'm the mother of two sons. One of them began such a relationship when he was eleven. Now he is fourteen and it is still going on. He has blossomed out since then. He used to be quiet and shy; now he is more open and self-confident. He used to think he was ugly; now, thanks to the assurance of his older friend Jan, he feels he is attractive. Lately their attachment has become a little less close, because he has taken up with a girl-friend, too. As you can see, one shouldn't judge in advance such a relationship as always being bad and dirty."

In my column in *P.A.N. Magazine* (No. 9, July 1981) I wrote of a case in which not only the parents but even the vice squad of a Dutch city were not opposed to the sexual relations of an adult man and a 13-year-old boy, because it was obviously having such a good effect on the younger partner. This, of course, created the ideal circumstances for a steady relationship.

If fathers are favourable, it is often because they themselves have had such a bond in their boyhood.

- 441 An American truck-driver maintained his friendship with Lee, whom he had loved as a boy, long after their sex had stopped and Lee was married. Lee fathered a son, Roy, and the truck diver was invited to celebrate the birth, for he was very close to both proud parents. "There is no doubt in my mind," he wrote, "that Lee would have killed anyone who caused harm to his child. Roy was not only a beautiful child between the ages of 3 to 12, he was a loving child as well. I don't believe a father and his son could be any closer to another than Lee and Roy, for Lee loved his child deeply. (...) One time when Lee, his son, and I were fishing at a small lake near his home, Lee quite openly asked me if I would be willing to teach his son the facts of life (man/boy wise) when he got old enough. At this time Roy was only 5 years old, and hardly within my interest range at that time. I told Lee that I'd love to, but this only if Roy

was willing. (...) The years slipped by, and before I hardly knew it, Roy was 12 years old and showing every indication to his dad, in subtle ways which Lee easily understood, that he was suffering the hots something awful bad. (...) He knew about sex with boys and men, but had not become involved so, because he, like his dad, was hung much too large for boys his age, and unsure of man/boy sex. Lee wrote to me in Philadelphia, and said in so many words: Roy's ready! (...) I had not seen Roy since he was 8 years old, and was in for a hell of a surprise when I did see him again. Even though we had not seen each other for about 4 years, Roy hugged the hell out of me the moment I walked through the doorway of their place. I admit I was having serious problems keeping eye contact with Roy for the first few minutes there, and not staring at that huge bulge in his pants, but when Lee chuckled and said in a whisper so only I could hear, 'Big, isn't he?' I relaxed and took a good look. As I said earlier, Lee was very protective of his son, and he was no less so at this time when Roy was 12. (...) Roy managed to worm himself onto my knee with his arm around my shoulder. (...) I could not help myself from getting an erection in my Levi's, and there was no doubt whatsoever that Roy was well aware of this. We talked for close to an hour before Lee said that they had to go to the shopping center. (...) Roy remained with me as company, and as soon as we were alone he invited me to see his bedroom where he had all the model airplanes he had either built or was building. (...) Roy had long known of the way I was with other males. (...) I could not help but notice that his thick roundness between his legs had grown as he showed me plane after plane he had built, and it was quite obvious he too was getting a hard-on in his pants. Without a word, and in complete shamelessness, I reached over and firmly gripped the thick roundness of his large impression in his pants and squeezed gently several times. Roy said nothing and the only movement he made was to arch his pelvic forwards a little, exposing what I was holding onto even more so. Without any spoken words, I undone the front of his pants to which he offered not the slightest resistance, and drew pants and shorts downwards until his cock sprang out. By now, Roy was fully hard. My own knees were shaking so badly that I was having trouble standing there looking at what he had. Roy—for a 12-year-old—was hung in both size and length more than I was! I won't bother going into details here and now, but I did go down on the boy until he came, and he wanted the same from me. As it came out, both Lee and his wife were agreeable to me taking Roy with me to California in the truck, and spending a two-week working vacation together. (...) Roy was every bit as passionate as his father had been, if not more so. Although he had been a virgin in mutual sex before I had touched him in his bedroom, he showed not the slightest reluctance to try anything I suggested. In the two weeks we were together, we must have had sex at least three times a day in basic average. Roy expressed no pain as I had anal sex with him, and I had no problems whatsoever in being fulfilled by his cock in me. (...) About the only comment Lee made when we returned was to say, 'Did you two have a good time?' Both Roy and I nodded our heads in answer, and Lee seemed satisfied with that."

This relationship continued for several years. "In the last letter I received from Lee not so long ago, he told me that Roy was going to get married soon." (Letter M.S. 26.05.85 in archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

In other cultures this kind of positive attitude on the part of a father is hardly exceptional.

- 442 De Brethmas (1980, 54, 59, 64-65) met in the lavatories at the Gare du Nord in Paris an Arab boy, Camel who showed him his cock and asked, with a smile, " 'Shall we do it?' You rarely meet a boy of 15 who does what he wants as freely as that, who has swept away every last taboo, who's quite unafraid, knows his body is pure from head to toe, and behaves accordingly." De Brethmas took him home and they had sex together.

"The next morning he is ringing my door-bell. 'Tonight we're dining with my family,' he says. 'What do you mean—at your home?' 'You are my friend. You have to be introduced into my family, my home, my parents.' 'Aren't you scared they'll guess what we've been doing?' 'Why? It's normal, isn't it, when you're friends?' 'You've told them?' 'Of course. Why not?' "

The author was received with utmost graciousness by the family. In the course of the evening the father asked, " 'You love Camel? He loves you very much. He likes to be introduced into my family, my home, my parents.' 'Aren't you scared they'll guess what we've been doing?' 'Why? It's normal, isn't it, when you're friends?' 'You've told them?' 'Of course. Why not?' "

As de Brethmas was leaving, the mother said, " 'Well, Camel, take a walk before going to bed. Walk your friend home. There is no hurry. You can return tomorrow if you want.' "

Parents may very well see financial advantage in such arrangements, but this does not necessarily mean that they are exploiting their children or don't love them. Often the fathers have had similar experiences during their own young years and remember how nice they were. In Nigeria, for instance, when it was still a British colony, many British officials had up to half a dozen willing black boys (15- to 16-year-olds) in their households; they slept with them, treated them well, fed and clothed them, sent them to school. Parents often came to offer their sons. It was appreciated if a white man liked black boys, and tribal chiefs, to honour a white official as guest, often offered him the choice of a girl or boy as bed-companion (Italiaander 1969, 104, 107).

Another parental motive for a permissive stance can be that sex with a male friend will keep an adolescent boy from seducing or violating girls. Roversing (1959, 110) came across this argument in Bali, Indonesia, and I myself heard from a Moroccan that he thought his son was too young to marry at 15, so it was better, for a few years still, to "go with gentlemen".

And then there is the old belief that a boy will learn better if he loves his teacher, that the teacher may actually transfer his knowledge to the boy through intercourse. Pacificus Maximus, a Renaissance poet, tells of a father bringing his son to a schoolmaster with the instruction, "May the gods permit that you fall in love with him and fuck him, for then surely he'll grow into a learned man!" (Quoted by Forberg 1882, I - 166)

- 443 Rossman tells a rather funny story of a French teacher in a North African village. Until his appointment there he had never had any sex with boys, but his pupils insisted on taking him to the local hammam, and there they gradually started involving him in

their sexual romps. Soon one student after another was spending the night with him in his home. "They were sweet, sexy, naively innocent, and delightful. I'll remember those nights as among the happiest in my life. (...) In my third year in North Africa the chief of the village summoned me to his house. I went trembling, sure that I was to be punished for my sex play with the boys. He received me kindly, and over a cup of mint tea asked me why I had never taken his son to bed? It was true that I had rebuffed all overtures from the son of the headman of the village, fearing trouble. 'Of all the boys in your school,' the chief scolded me, 'my son loves you the most. It is important for you to encourage that love or he will lose interest in his schoolwork, and I am ambitious for him to be the first boy from this village to go to the University. I promise you that if you love him as he wishes, he will be your loyal friend for life.' It was true..." After the man returned to France, the boy wrote him every year. Many years later the chief's son came to France, bringing his young wife along to introduce to his former teacher (a most unusual act for an Arab!). He invited him to come back and visit their village. "He says all my former pupils will welcome me warmly, and also their wives and sons." (Rossman 1976, 117-118)

Retrospective Judgements

Finally we may ask how men now think about their boyhood experiences. Kinsey placed a high value upon such recollections (Wilson 1982, 139). Buunk *et al.* are more sceptical, especially where certain events are seen by the individual as the cause of present troubles (1984, 184). They give as an example later evaluation of sex contacts within the family; there can be little doubt that the sudden up-welling of concern over incest has made a number of people unhappy about such sex experiences as they may have had at home when they were young and persuaded them that those events were deeply traumatic. The open discussion of the formerly hidden theme of incest undeniably did a lot of good, but it has probably also caused much psychic harm as well.

Perhaps a distinction might be made between happy and unhappy memories, the latter being much more subject to reshaping by social attitudes about the kind of thing that happened than the former. It is certainly impressive if a boy's experiences with an adult man, despite constant condemnation as evil and harmful by everyone about him, remain forever in his mind positive, beneficial, good and beautiful.

But Joachim S. Hohmann, in his critical afterword to the German edition of Dr. Bernard's book, and later in an essay (1980, 36), disparages this approach. "All in all, autobiographical data concerning a sexual contact are worthless when investigating the subject's psychological makeup and social stability. We should know everything about the subject's history before we dare speak about the beneficial, harmful or neutral effects of a sexual relationship in childhood."

I don't agree. It is true, of course, that you cannot judge the meaning of a sexual event in a vacuum; it is highly dependent upon circumstances. If the same adult makes sexual approaches to two different boys, in precisely the

same way and under exactly the same circumstances, it may be a horrible, disgusting experience for Albert, who was brought up to view sex as dirty and evil, while it is delightful and a turn-on for Barry, who was raised to view sex as fun and pleasurable. No evaluation, therefore, is possible for the act itself divorced from actors and circumstance. But this doesn't mean that Albert and Barry don't have valid opinions about how the experience may have influenced their lives. It is true, here as elsewhere, that people can be mistaken in their judgements, and even this will largely depend upon the particular perspective of the observer-recorder. The author of this book, for example, feels that raising a child to sexual freedom is good and beneficial, while the Vatican has ruled that it be declared harmful and evil.

In order not to be sucked down into the quicksands of relativism, however, we must appeal to one guiding principle: people exist to make each other happy. Every human being, in the course of his life, has encounters which in retrospect he feels have increased or diminished his happiness. He will, then, be grateful to some people and have reproaches against others. Gratefulness is rarely unjustified; reproach often is. If a young man feels gratitude to a man for the fine days he gave him while still a boy, or for other things he offered him along his path in life, this hardly proves that each and every man/boy relationship is pleasant and valuable, but it does suggest we shouldn't disparage all such relationships. That is to say, it proves conventional public opinion wrong; it proves, moreover, that laws making such relationships punishable under all conceivable circumstances are unjust, and that parents discovering their son involved in such a sexually expressed friendship should not intervene without further thought and investigation, for it is possible that they are confronted with a good relationship which shouldn't be destroyed by a sort of knee-jerk reaction.

If we carry Hohmann's principle of distrusting retrospective evaluations to its logical conclusion, it wouldn't apply just to sexual encounters but to every other sort of experience as well. We would then be in a state of impotent uncertainty about everything we did which affected our fellow human beings.

In his contacts with adults, a boy is often subjected to things he dislikes, and this is true of sexual things as well. He might be raped, or abused, or importuned in a way he finds offensive or disgusting, either because of the people involved or the acts themselves. But for far too long have moralists, psychiatrists and psychologists pretended that youth abhors *all* contacts with adult sexuality. Many pages of this book have proven that this is just not so. It may be well now to add some autobiographical assessments.

First of all, it should be observed that many a boy who has been indoctrinated with our culture's taboos has to go through a period of inner struggle before he surrenders himself. A Belgian wrote me in a letter that whenever he saw that a boy was hesitant or uncomfortable or unwilling, he tried to talk with him

about it. He then would explain that their intimacy had nothing to do with homosexuality or indecency or sin; it was only an expression of their friendship. He, as a grown-up, would take full responsibility. "At this point I always saw something start to shine in the eyes of my young partner, as if a wall was coming down. I was always surprised at the impetuosity of these boys. One started to tremble, stretched out his hand to me and asked, 'Is that true? Can I touch you?' Another boy embraced me violently, saying, with a profound sigh, 'At last!'"

Thorstad (1981) published a booklet entitled *Boys Speak Out on Man/Boy Love* with section headings which speak for themselves: "Sex is really beautiful with my friend" (Dennis, 13 years old); "I love him, and I know that he loves me" (Darrel, 16 years old); "He was very special and kind" (Barry, 17 years old); "For the first time in my life I felt wanted" (Gabriel, 16 years old); "He makes me glad I'm gay" (Ed, 14 years old); "The best thing that ever happened to me" (Greg, 16 years old); "If it wasn't for Mark I'd probably be dead today" (Carl, 14 years old); "He listens to me, unlike most people" (Robert, 16 years old); "Such a relationship is very beneficial" (Dan, 19 years old), etc.

Sandfort (1982) analysed 25 boys between the ages of 10 and 16 who were involved in steady relationships. The study showed, as we have already mentioned, that all these boys thought positively about these experiences—without exception. It could hardly be otherwise, since in all the relationships the boys were actively involved in maintaining them: if a boy has a negative experience he simply leaves and doesn't come back again.

- 444 One man said "that he had been visited regularly over a period of eight years by a neighbourhood boy for purposes of mutual masturbation and the enjoyment of his collection of pornography. (...) He stopped coming when he reached 14 years of age. Some three years later he turned up again, wanting a repeat performance and offering to bring his fifteen-year-old girl-friend to join in the fun." (West 1981, 254- 255)

Lotringer (Lotringer & Moffett 1980, 8-15) interviewed a fifteen-year-old, Mark, who was mainly after simple pleasure, and he was equally positive:

- 445 The first time I ever began to express sexual feelings toward anyone was within a man/boy relationship. Man love is also something which has helped thousands of boys discover their own sexuality and get in touch with what they really feel. A lot of people think of 'man/boy love' as just man/boy sex—a man's lust for a boy. They don't believe that between them there can be love, or the possibility of it. They are wrong."

Sex is only one aspect of it?

Yes, although in some circumstances sex is the only aspect. (...) Actually, it's often not the man who goes out to seduce the boy, but the other way around. In my first experience, I did the seducing.

Have you ever been abused?

Perhaps once, although I really can't say that I was coerced into it. I was coming home from school and I met this guy. He had this incredibly large cock and I said, "Don't fuck me because I've only been fucked once before." I didn't want to be fucked, but he did it anyhow. But I don't know how you'd call it since it wasn't me being dragged on to his house. I invited him over to mine...

How long have you been involved in these encounters?

Since I was 13. (...) One day I was doing the laundry and there was an ad on the bulletin board for a gay dance and it said, "For further information call Frank." So I memorized his number and called him up. I asked him if he was gay. He said Yes. I said, "Do you want to have sex?"

Had you had sex before?

Before that I had sexual explorations with friends my own age. But I didn't consider that I lost my virginity then. When I had sex with that man was really first having sex. (...) Boys I know have a lot of sexual hangups. They are embarrassed to talk about it. They wouldn't approach a man directly. I don't know why I did it myself. Maybe I was just desperate.

You can be desperate for sex at 13?

Oh, yes. (...) When I moved from living with my mother to my father, he was much more open. He used to let me look at his pornography magazines. I began to feel that it wasn't a bad thing to talk about sex and to learn how people did things. (...) Then I was just attracted to men. That's what started it: physical attraction. I didn't want them because they had more experience, although when it came down to it, that helped a lot. (...)

Men you went out with, had they had previous experience with boys?

With young people, yes, but not as young as I was, I guess.

Did you find these men helpful and loving?

The man who owned a restaurant, he was very kind and loving. But also he asked a lot. He was very jealous. He didn't want me to have sex with anyone else, which I found difficult.

You were fourteen then?

Almost. The other people (an interior designer, a biologist, a carpenter, a student in economics), when they first met me they thought I was older, so that when we had sex they treated me as if I were eighteen. (...)

When you ran away from home, you were lucky enough to find a job. Lots of boys in that situation go into hustling.

I've hustled, and I've known people that have. But I never saw it as a relationship with men, just as a way to get money—as a job.

You never thought of hustling as a permanent profession?

No.

If you had to, would you do it again?

More than likely.

- 446 During a Dutch radio broadcast on paedophilia in 1973, a fourteen-year-old boy called in and said, for all to hear, "I have been having intercourse with a man since I was eight, and I wouldn't have missed this experience for all the world."

- 447 Another Dutch boy, aged 12, spontaneously wrote a letter to his 40-year-old friend. A facsimile was printed on the program of a meeting of an emancipation group in Venlo: "I'm in my room. Now I'll tell you how much I love you and what I think about our relationship. You know how much my mother favours our friendship, and of course my father, too. I enjoyed last Friday night when we went out to that restaurant. I thought it was really nice, and afterwards, in bed, everything went so well, and during the night later. Or don't you think so? Yesterday my mother said you were a real good-looking guy. I really laughed about that. Yesterday we had such a good talk about sexual tension and other things in our life. When I was lying beside you in bed I thought to myself if all the men in the world could lie together with one another so nicely there wouldn't be any war."

The over-all positive impression boys have is also shown by the many promiscuous men who have sex with great numbers of boys without ever being denounced by their partners to the authorities or otherwise being the object of boys' complaints. The official English Wolfenden Report (1963, section 95) wonders at boy "victims" showing so little resentment. I have already mentioned in this book the German youth leader who was proud of having had sex with as many as 800 boys from the best social circles (sons of people with academic degrees, high government officials or prosperous businessmen). Not one of them ever complained about it to his parents or to the police; many returned, time after time, to their friend's home. The same could be said of the Australian Clarence Osborne (Wilson 1982), who in the course of some twenty years had manual, oral and anal sex with 2500 boys from all social classes.

- 448 One of them was John. At fifteen he had already had intercourse with girls and thought of himself as completely heterosexual. He got into a conversation in a supermarket with Osborne, who took him for a ride in his car. The man turned the conversation to sex, and this gave the boy an erection. Osborne observed this and started fondling John's penis through his trousers. John himself pulled down his pants, and he was so excited that when he came his sperm shot all over the inside of the car. He had never had any sex with a man before this episode, nor afterwards. "As you know, I am married now, with two kids, but at times I still think back to when he did those things to me and get excited by the thought of it." (Wilson 1982, 39)

- 449 "In my lifetime I have had sexual intercourse with well over a hundred boys. Since I'm now seventy years old, most of my former sexual partners have long since grown up; many of them are family fathers with good social positions. Not a single one of them, when we are together now, has ever hinted at distaste or embarrassment. We share the secret of the hours we experienced with each other, naked orgasmic joys, and we can still remember how fine they really were. I get engagement cards, wedding announcements, notifications of births, sometimes after years of silence. Others regularly send me their good wishes at Christmas or my birthday. Not one of them has ever reproached me for what we shared." (Personal communication)

Peyrefitte (Montherlant & Peyrefitte 1983, 10) has the same tale to tell of the attitude of his former boy-friends.

- 450 Bernard (1979, 39) tells of a 68-year-old man who had his first sex with an adult man as a boy of seven. "Later I had still more contacts with men. I was never sexually interested in my peers." When he was fourteen he met a man who worked as waiter in a restaurant; they had sex together, and he found it wonderfully satisfying. "The next day I went back to him of my own accord. (...) Today, nearly 68, with a good life behind me, I see the contacts I then had as most positive for my development. I wouldn't want to have missed them and I certainly don't envy people who never had the same opportunities."

- 451 Norbert, a handsome 15-year-old, liked to pose for nude pictures. A professional photographer made several photo series, and the boy kept coming back and begging to be photographed again. Often, during these subsequent photo sessions, they had sex together. Norbert didn't enjoy this very much, but he suffered it because he liked the man. Finally Norbert outgrew his physical attractiveness to the photographer and the sex stopped. He didn't come to visit him any more. But two years later Norbert suddenly turned up with a girl and proposed three-way sex. The photographer agreed, and was surprised that when he was in bed with the boy and the girl, all of Norbert's passion was directed towards him. (Personal communication)

- 452 The great German writer Stefan Zweig had the following to say about a man he had known as a boy: "Before him I had my mother and father, and after him my wife and children, but there is no one to whom I owe such a great debt, and no one I have loved more, than this man." (Quoted by Mariotti 1952, 136)

- 453 (Continued from 282) Nineteen-year-old Vincent still has a very positive memory of the teacher who, when he was sixteen, loved him rather than beat him. It is striking how this rather simple young man, brought up in a strict Roman Catholic environment, describes his initiation into anal intercourse. His teacher Timmy (as described in No. 180) had him kneel naked on the bed. "To me, all this was tremendously exciting. I wanted to give myself out of love for him. Since I was only 16 and had no experience at all, he was very careful. He whispered, 'My dear, dear boy, now you will belong to me completely; this will make you a very good boy and a real man.' I didn't understand at the time what he meant. But the whole thing seemed as solemn as being in church." (Letter in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

It is most significant how many erotic relationships between man and boy are later transformed into non-erotic, permanent friendships linking two adults. This is probably the best proof there ever could be of the younger partner's real feelings, as boy and man, since they could never persist if he had been disgusted by the sexual activities, or if he had later regrets and now viewed them as dirty and immoral. In Pieterse's research (1982, II - 14), 21.6% of her 114 subjects said they always maintained friendly contacts with their former

boy-friends, 33.8% mostly did, 18.9% sometimes, and only 2.7% mostly not. Of course, external factors may make lasting relations difficult or impossible.

454 An American naturalist writes, "When I was a young graduate student doing a field thesis in northern Canada I got to know the 12-year-old son of a heavy equipment operator. I was busy with red tape paperwork, when suddenly this young face with blond hair and dazzling blue eyes was staring at me with what I can only describe as extreme emotional intensity. There was curiosity, excitement, but also something else, like hero-worship, in those eyes. It was instantaneous.

"On my next trip to the lumber town I asked after Tommy, for that was his name, and hired him on the spot as my field companion—as company (for I was alone most of the time), specimen-carrier, and safeguard in case I got hurt out in the wilderness.

"Right from the start our relationship was erotically tinted, although in those days I was all but a virgin. Things came to a head one stormy night a couple of months later. We were walking on a footpath through the woods back to our base. There was nobody else there that night. We had no flashlights. I was guiding my steps along the trail by looking up at the pattern of trees against the lightning-filled sky which was dumping large quantities of rain on us, but Tommy kept crashing off into the woods, so I took his hand and had him follow behind me. And we communicated somehow through that hand-clasp—it was as though he had become a little boy, a frightened little boy who wanted to be led, hugged, held.

"When we got to the shanty we started a fire, stripped off our soaking clothes and strung them up on wires to dry. We were now only in our undershorts. Tommy, teasing me, lay down at full length on his back on the one wooden bench in the shanty, which we had pulled up in front of the stove. I told him to make room for me. He refused. I lay down on top of him. We both hardened up. Somehow or other, after I'd got up to feed the fire, I ended up on the bottom next time, with Tommy lying on top of me, now. Still nothing happened, except that both of us were very much aware of the other's arousal.

"We went to bed. Our cots were right together, touching. In the morning, still on my cot, I ordered Tommy out of bed. He refused. I attacked, playfully, of course, somehow ending up inside his bedroll, once again on top of the boy. And again both of us hardened up. He said, 'Let's just stay like this for a while.' Now there was no holding back. I pushed our undershorts down, and in that position we rubbed off to a very quick mutual climax.

"My relations with Tommy persisted for many years, all through the period of my field work. He wouldn't kiss; we did perform many kinds of oral sex. He gave abundant hints that he wanted me to fuck him anally, but this was not to my taste, and I refused. Mostly we made love in the simplest ways possible—by holding our two erections together in the grip of one hand with opposite hip thrusts providing the necessary motions, or, more commonly, me lying on top of him. Often I would wake up in the middle of the night and move over onto his cot, into his sleeping bag and we would make love in that kind of deep, almost dream state which is probably the most profound kind of contact one human being can ever have with another. We seldom talked about our sex—I was too guilty about it then.

"Tommy begged me on many occasions to take him back home with me (his home life was terrible), adopt him or, when he got older, find him a job where he could live

with me, or at least nearby. Alas, I was young then and not really very independent. When Tommy was about 17 his family moved to another part of Canada and I lost track of him.

"Many years later I returned to that lumber town and old acquaintances there gave me Tommy's phone number and, to make a long story short, he and his 8-year-old daughter got into his Volkswagen bug and drove some 1500 miles across the continent to my home. It was an almost tearful reunion. Tommy and I sat around my kitchen table talking over glasses of beer. I asked him what he now made of our "crazy" intimate relations when he was a boy. Tommy was, of course, no longer sexually attractive to me. 'Well,' he said, 'it would be nothing for me now, but then...' He couldn't quite find the right words for it, so he began to generalise. 'Those times with you, being at camp, seeing how you and the other people you knew lived, that was the best thing in my whole life. That's what I used to live for.' (From the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

455 "I've also been madly in love with three boys. My love has been fully and sexually returned by (...) the three boys, each of which was 15. But they 'grew out' of their attachment to me. I'm still good friends with one of them. He's just got married and I went to his wedding. I hope we shall be platonic friends for the rest of our lives!" (Barrington 1981, 80)

456 "I'm really turned on by adolescent boys, especially ones with very big cocks—for their age, I mean. I have the tenderest of friendships with two boys now. Both are 18, but I was smitten by them and first had them when they were 14. I've let them grow up into heterosexuals, and they look on me as a special friend and a sexual experience and adventure which they wouldn't repeat with any other man." (Barrington 1981, 143)

457 "I've been homosexual since 15 and I prefer boys 12 to 15. I've seduced 10 boys and the relationships have all lasted about 4 years. I'm still friends with some and am the god-father of two of their children. The sex-friendship never carried on after they were old enough to go with girls." (Barrington 1981, 145)

458 "In my lifetime I've been in love with 2 men and 3 teenagers. That love was returned fully and in every possible way, for years too, by one man and one lad who grew up to become my protégé, pride, subliminal son. He's now married, a father and still my very best friend." This man had sexual experiences with 3 boys under 16, 9 teenagers over 16, all heterosexually inclined. All have continued to be friends. (Barrington 1981, 213)

459 "The short-term nature of the boy-man relationship (which is bounded, after all, by the growth process in the boy) is not transience in the negative sense. My link to Jim Dubro, to Donny and to a dozen others lasts our lifetimes." (Reeves 1981, 32)

460 "Today I still know some 23-year-olds who continue to come and visit me, and I like them, but there are no sexual relations any more." (Schult 1982, 101)

- 461 In this context, let us recall the conversation set down in Example 313 between Thomas, now a man of 30, and Hervé, now 26, married and a father. They had lived together and loved one another for four years, when Hervé was 12-16 (see also Example 436). Both men recalled their shared past with pleasure: those years remained for each a beautiful memory. Hervé recognised the things he had learned from Thomas, and it didn't bother him that Thomas continued to have intimate relations with boys. Hervé had told his wife about his former sexual life with Thomas, having done this quite casually, just as he had spoken about other important happenings in his youth. Hervé and Thomas had even discussed their former love life together in her presence. Both Hervé and his wife considered Thomas a good friend. (Hennig 1979, 145)

And from the former boy's viewpoint:

- 462 "When he satisfied me for the first time I didn't think it was wrong at all. It had given me a good feeling. I never thought I was ruining myself. The man is still one of my dearest friends." (Möller 1983, 104)
- 463 "Carl was relatively late reaching puberty since he was beyond the middle of his 14th year before this occurred. Around the beginning of his 15th year he went on a hunting trip with his father, his oldest brother, and a 32-year-old engineer who worked in his father's office. The engineer was married with two young children. While in a secluded duck blind the engineer and Carl began discussing sex, which led to mutual masturbation. From this time until Carl reached his 22nd birthday there were many sexual occurrences between the two, with mutual fellatio becoming preferred. After the engineer and his family were transferred to another city when Carl was 18, Carl made several visits to the engineer's family. Carl is now 33 years of age with two sons of his own. (...) He is a graduate of a university, a young professional, and a staunch supporter of his church. (...) He was married at age 27. Carl and his family still have contact with the engineer and his family and visit one another as often as possible." (Tindall 1978, 377-378)
- 464 Father Ingram, a Dominican friar, mentions a clergyman who twice was invited by men he had loved when they were boys to perform their wedding ceremonies, and also a youth leader who became god-father to the children of three of his former lovers (1981, 183).
- 465 In England, during a discussion about the love of children, a man looked back upon the relationship he had had as a boy of ten. "Allan was a young school teacher of 24 who came to my primary school. At first I would walk home with him to talk and laugh. Then it came to staying for tea, and this relaxation in formal ties led to expressed affection. His hand stroking my leg, or ruffling my hair or stroking the back of my neck, or even my bottom. Or my caressing his face, loving the feel of the stubble, and my own kids like to do that without any of the other connotations. Plucking up courage one day to kiss him just because I liked being with him. And we talked—about everything. Parents, adults, ideas, sex, heroes, TV, music we both liked, school, the future for me, his love of the Greeks which he gave to me, along with many interests which were his and which he delighted to share with me. There were other qualities

experienced, not taught—mainly a gentle tolerance. It came to sexual contact through horse play. No doubt it cost him agony. Wrestling in his living room floor after tea on a wet winter evening, he ended up on top of me and between my outstretched legs ensuring by his movements that I was aroused and that I could feel his excitement. He had shown great restraint but now he suggested that it would be better if we removed our clothes, which seemed quite natural to me, even though I wasn't sure what was to come. I know I wanted to see him nude and for him to see me so. The shock of seeing his substantial erection was not so great as to deter me. Rather I was prompted by fascination and frank pleasure as he embraced me to prepare me for sexual contact. It is hard to define, but perhaps a sensible parental attitude to nudity and sexual arousal made it less than alarming. The notion of inability to give consent, validly, seem ludicrous. Allan and I wanted what was happening. I don't know what (is) meant by too early penetration, but after masturbating me, Allan could not contain himself by my reciprocal action, and thus I had my first anal intercourse. Many men are reckoned to be insensitive lovers by women, intent solely on their own gratification. Allan was highly sexed and reasonably endowed, yet he made me feel that my pleasure was his main desire, that it was love not cunning seduction. I felt for him as great a love as I have felt for anyone. Who is to say that it was not valid or that I could not consent to it just because I was 10? To be caressed, brought to satisfaction, and opened to such passion and love was entirely acceptable to me, and I co-operated to make the very best of it. Allan experienced predictable guilt and remorse after his climax. 'Are you angry, Jo, that I really wanted you like this all the time?' And I remember telling him, as best I could, that I wanted it too, that his sex with me as a boy wasn't wrong, that it was a natural part of our love. This relationship endured until I was 14, with frequent anal and oral sex, but it was one part of a richness we shared. It was encapsulated by the holiday we spent in Scotland in a cottage he rented for six weeks. Painting my picture. A gift of a bike. Seeing dawn over the sea. Arguing like fury over his lapse into authority (and reconciliation and apology). My first ejaculation, and my first time of being the active partner. Attending a folk concert. Practical jokes. Our relationship was interrupted by his promotion to a deputy head—he was a marvellous teacher, loved by all the kids—and his move away. (...) We saw one another during holidays and at weekends. Over the years, we have kept contact as our relationship was more than just the sensual gratification of one man. (...) I am pleased that he now has a 15-year-old boy lover, Simon. But I will always be there if needed. People do dreadful things to their kids—I don't mean rape or physical abuse. Kids are filled with all kinds of perversion: hate this person, cheat your neighbour, lie, trample on the rights of others, bow to the state, believe harmful religious fairy stories, feel guilt about love, make a god of material possession. I had no consent, nor has any child, to refuse such filth. This is the abuse of innocence, not where Allan stuck his penis or whether I was 'corrupted'." (C.A.P.M. 1980, 30-32)

- 466 "The sexual contacts were a pleasant experience. Now as an adult married man with four children, I see this earlier period as one which was quite proper to my life and which I wouldn't want to have missed." (Möller 1983, 104)
- 467 "I had relations with three paedophiles. For me that was absolutely vital. My parents didn't care for me—they were only interested in their own relationship. In these contacts

I at last had someone paying attention to me. These people were tremendously important in my life. If I hadn't had them I'd have gone to the dogs." (Möller 1983, 104)

468 An American youth told me he had met a friend of his parents when he was ten, a man on very intimate terms with his family. They had sex together. The man simply persuaded the boy to do it, without any compulsion. The man was always careful not to hurt the boy's feelings. He answered his questions about sex, both homosexual and heterosexual, giving complete and truthful information. But this man wasn't just a sexual partner; he was a wonderful friend as well, treating the boy as a son. Several times the boy went as his companion on ski trips, speleological expeditions and other adventures, and he felt it was less for sex that the man took him than because he really loved him. The boy liked their sexual intimacies, partly because it enabled him to offer the man who was doing so much for him a pleasure he so obviously enjoyed, but also because it pleased him personally. This relationship opened the boy's eyes to the fact that there was more than just sex with women and gave him a better understanding of sexual variety than most people have. He is now 19 and thinks a relationship of this kind with a good man is highly beneficial, for boys as well as for girls. His own inclinations are heterosexual, but he would not be afraid to try it out with a boy if the opportunity presented itself. He still visits his former lover from time to time: he likes to be with him and appreciates his company. (Letter of C. B., archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

469 Most interesting in this context is the case of a French author and photographer. Lambert grew up as the son of a prosperous farmer. Near their farm was a labourer's dwelling. Lambert became a friend of the labourer's son Raymond, six years his junior. They started exploratory sex and, after Lambert matured, had anal intercourse, the act which Lambert learned to enjoy the most. This went on for many years, and then they lost track of one another. Lambert went away to the university in Paris and later settled in a provincial town. Raymond sent him an engagement card, then a wedding announcement and ultimately became a farm-hand living only about 80 kilometres from Lambert's home. Thirteen years passed. Preoccupied by his work and a new set of young friends, Lambert nearly forgot about his old relationship with Raymond. One night, quite unexpectedly, there was a knock on Lambert's door, and there stood Raymond, a man of nearly forty now, begging a confidential chat. "You can't have forgotten, Lambert, how nice it was when we were young," Raymond began. "I was twelve, you were eighteen. My oldest son, Fabrice, is now twelve, too, and I think he's exactly the kind of boy you would like. I want him to have it as good as I did when I was his age. Please come soon and visit us and get to know him. If you like him and he likes you, you might invite him over here for a weekend, or take him with you on a holiday trip—and make him as happy as you did me." Lambert accepted, and he soon was having a very pleasant relationship with Fabrice; frequent sex cemented their friendship, and to Lambert's delight Fabrice quickly showed a passion for anal intercourse. Three years, delightful to both, passed by, full of loving and imaginative sex. For example, one night Lambert returned home from work to find the 15-year-old Fabrice stark naked. After a passionate welcome kiss, the boy threw himself on the floor and cried, "Hurry up, undress! I'm so horny it's driving me crazy! Let's do it doggy-style!" As soon as Lambert had penetrated him, Fabrice started crawling

diagonally across the room, crying out in passion. When he reached the wall, Fabrice sank down under the body of Lambert, wallowing in spontaneous orgasm. But the end of their relationship was already near; Fabrice was becoming interested in girls. Lambert graduated to a younger brother of Fabrice. Ten years later Lambert was invited to Fabrice's wedding, and at the dinner he was given the seat of honour next to the bride. In a private moment he asked Fabrice, "Are you happy?" "Incredibly!" "And the sex with your bride is all right?" "Excellent. Just as good as it was with you in the old days." (Personal communication)

470 "I learned a lot from our relationship. I come from a very Christian background. All sex is prohibited, so you never learn how to deal with it, and that's fatal in marriage later on. Now I have really fine sexual relations with my wife. Gradually I taught her everything I'd earlier learned from my friend. Without this experience, we'd never have got this far." (Möller 1983, 104)

It is little wonder, then, that discerning people who haven't been lucky enough to have had such a relationship, later come to regret it.

471 Pieterse (1982, II - 110) quotes an adult woman: "Looking back, I wish I'd had a paedophile relationship. (...) Seeing now how adults associate with children, in sex, too, I think I could have profited enormously if this had happened to me. I think the attention you get is a tremendous boost to your self-confidence, and you learn to share that confidence with others. If I'd had such a relationship I'd be a lot farther ahead than I am now, I think."

472 "One of my regrets has been my never having made it with an older man while still a repressed pubescent firecracker of explosive sexual desire. I get green with envy reading your marvelous accounts of fathers, hung uncles and next-door neighbors seducing, or better still, getting seduced by some resourcefully prescient manboy." (McDonald 1984, 22)

It is interesting to see this reflection on sexual experience echoed in the practices of a primitive Papuan tribe. The Kaluli, like most of the mountain peoples, believe that boys can only attain full maturity if they are instilled with the seed of older men. From 10 or 11 years of age on he is regularly subjected to homosexual intercourse which is publicly performed in the temporary hunting lodge of the men (*the bau a*) after dark. A few of the bachelors come to this house specifically to act as inseminators, announcing this publicly, and fathers sometimes consign their sons to a particular one. Other lads chose their own inseminators from among the older bachelors and form specific liaisons for a while. Pederastic intercourse is a marked feature of the *bau a* and men chuckle over it in reminiscence. "It was clear from the animated and emphatic way informants reminisced about the *bau a* they had attended more than twenty years previously that it had been a high point in their lives. The nostalgic excitement and zest in the telling expressed the extent to which, for the youths

and young men especially and for their elders vicariously, the experience had been dramatic and enjoyable." (Schieffelin 1982, 162-163, 165-166, 175, 177)

Taking all this into account, it is enigmatic why the general public knows so little about what really is happening in this area. It would seem that, even in our democratic society, there are powers which successfully resist the divulging of such facts, and this causes much distress among young people and their parents. And so a vicious circle is created: the parents' belief that these relationships are always evil prevents their sons from telling them about their good experiences.

The Benefits for the Man

People often ask what attraction an unformed, immature lad could have for a grown-up man—a not very astute way of posing the question, since no man alive could explain precisely why he is attracted to a woman, a girl, a man or a boy.

"For some older people, closeness to adolescents enlivens, stimulates and to some degree renews." (Lambert 1976, 115) "The wish to remain young and innocent is an aspect of paedophilia. It is as if the individual is renewed by contact with a young prototype of the self as yet untainted by 'the dirty devices of the world', as the poet Traherne has it." (Williams 1976, 145) And this wish is fundamental to human fulfilment, for "if a man loses the child inside him he loses the roots of those aesthetic and symbolic sensibilities upon which are founded all the most essentially human activities and achievements: that is the creation of art, literature and music, religious experience, the sensing of the unknown, the mysterious and the general search for the good and the beautiful. In other words only while child and youth persist as functional aspects inside him can a person be said to do more than just exist." (Gordon 1976, 38)

A boy-lover will feel excited by the mere presence of boys. Sometimes just being together with them is enough, and no need is felt for physical contact.

473 "Are you afraid the temptation might be too great once you come in contact with these lovelies down at the Boy's Club? This is possible. But it is not likely. It is more likely, according to my experience, to have less of a physical need when you're around boys a lot than you did when you were just fantasizing." (G. Jones, quoted by Illinois Legislative 1980, 58)

474 A teacher in England is quoted by Havelock Ellis (1913, II - 166). The man had wet dreams about embracing naked boys, but they occurred only during the holidays. Over the school year, when he was surrounded by boys (but without having any physical contacts with them) he experienced no such sexual dreaming.

But when sexual contact is not avoided, the adult may experience it as both invigorating and rejuvenating. "Erotic play makes you feel young with young people, and this in turn allows you to experience the sexual impulse as you did when you yourself were young, for it is the most primitive aspects of sex which heighten lust the most. This is why older people look for contentment with the young, at the same time as the young seek guidance from the old." (Rovsing 1959, 49)

What happens when two bodies unite in lust is one of the deepest and most fascinating mysteries of human existence. Anybody who has consciously experienced this for the first time knows that afterwards nothing is as it was before. Something has been added, even if it is impossible to define what it might be, but for the boy, upon or in whose body a man has spent his seed in ultimate ecstasy, be he moved by ardent love or simple seeking of pleasure, the act takes on a significance which he will be aware of for the rest of his life.

Unfathomable mystery of sexual union! For the boy, too, if he has a degree of sensibility, his partner, the man, will never be the same again.

475 One night in Surabaya, Rovsing met a Madurese boy, 19 but looking 15. Rovsing told him he had no money, but the boy still wanted to go with him. Rovsing teased the boy, "I don't think you've got much in your pants." The boy looked around to see if anyone was near, opened his trousers and exhibited a big erection, an unmistakable sign that he really wanted it and proof of the honesty of his proffered companionship. They sought a secluded spot and had passionate sex with jubilant joy, the untamed original powers of nature possessing their bodies. "I am glad to have experienced this and helped that boy feel a lust stronger than anybody could have aroused in him before, and I loved his admiration and gratitude, unstated in so many words but to be read in the expression of his face and the mute, unconscious mime of his body, something which never lies. Just as I will never forget this lad, so he will always remember his experience with me. To give and receive pleasure in union is the highest aim of the art of life, an art which you can only learn by experience, for the unconscious in man is pupil and teacher at the same time. Every experience with a new friend should be vitalised by the same tension felt by actors on the opening night of a play: will it be a success or failure? In a holy moment like this, soul meets soul from another part of the world, and they experience together the great miracle of life: enthrallment in the joy you give to someone else!" (Rovsing 1959, 160-161, 184)

476 The Abbé de Pradts, a priest who loves boys, is one of the central figures in Montherlant's play *La ville dont le prince est un enfant* and in his novel *Les garçons*. When the Abbé is on his death-bed, he hears the boys playing football in the school courtyard, and sometimes a ball bounces against the wall near his window. He reflects back on his life. "From its start until its close, there had been boys, one after another. Like the corks keeping a fishnet floating on the surface of the sea, they had kept him at the surface of life. There had been some who had never been better loved than by him, or loved as much. He had helped them, morally and materially; he had guided them; he had inspired them with self-confidence, sustained them with his will, those

who were so inclined to drift; he had brought more happiness to their youth. Nobody in all their experience had talked to them, respected them as he had, nor would anybody ever do it again. Not one of them had betrayed him; not one of them had seriously cheated or deceived him; mostly they had respected him, even the ones he knew were little rascals. Sometimes they also loved him a little, as much as boys are able to love. And he had experienced this kindness when they would have been able to grievously hurt him. Wasn't it sufficient to believe in the innocence of mankind? 'It was not in my character to love people. And yet I've been able to do it, thanks to them.' " (de Montherlant 1969, 371-372)

Duvert quotes a biologist who conceives of the adult as only the shape a child is doomed by nature to adopt in order to procreate. We might say that the caterpillar is doomed to adopt the shape of the butterfly, were it not that the butterfly appears to us more beautiful and perfect than the caterpillar, while in man the child is the more perfect. "For it is intelligent, has the sense of freedom, discovers things, is social, likes community, joy, goodness, courage, spontaneity, generosity, tenderness, malice, is rich in affection, solidarity, loyalty, beauty, etc." "Every individual under thirteen or fourteen years of age therefore is the model of what we should love afterwards." (Duvert 1976, 213) And in how many ways are children the educators of their parents and their adult friends! (Hanry 1977, 226)

In many religions the child god is venerated. The Indians adore Murugan or Kumara, the boy-god, god of beauty and war, who never marries and is worshipped by homophiles. Kumara has his companions, the ganas. These mock the rules of morality and social order and symbolise the joy of life, the courage and the fantasy of youth. They follow the dictates of nature and hate the devastating cities with their mendacious morals. They represent everything which is loathed and feared by the bourgeoisie, and thus society accuses them of incest, molestation of boys, theft, the making of false charges, inebriety.

But the god of love is Kama, whom the Greeks called Eros, the Romans Amor. The Indians tell us that the god Brahma, when he created the earth, began with Sandhya, dawn, a girl of bewitching beauty. "As I saw her," says Brahma, "I got a spontaneous erection and I saw that all my sons too had stiff-standing members. So, from my thoughts, originated a wonderful being, Kama. Kama's face had the colour of gold, his breast was strong and solid, his nose well shaped; his thighs, his knees, his legs were rounded and muscled, his black hair curly, his eyebrows thick and mobile. His hips were slender, teeth perfect. His amorous looks seduced every living creature. He winked in every direction. His breath was a perfumed breeze. His whole person radiated the feeling of love. When they saw him my sons were speechless; they became excited and restless, their minds in a turmoil. Overwhelmed by love's impulse, they lost their thinking faculty." (Daniélou 1979, 34, 122, 124-125, 127-128, 131, 148, 161, 202)

There is deep significance in the fact that the Greeks and Romans saw love's impulse incarnated in the shape of a beautiful boy having just attained sexual maturity. His regular companion, Dionysos, was originally depicted the same way, but later became represented by a little child, the precursor of the Christ child. Like Christ, Dionysos was born in a cave, like him, he must die by violence, sacrificing himself as the saviour of mankind.

During excavation work among the foundations of St. Peter's Basilica in Rome, investigators encountered many tombs, some pagan, some Christian, for at one time this had been a cemetery which the Emperor Constantine had filled over with sand. There is a magnificent sarcophagus which must have been finished around 315 AD, just before the area was covered with sand. On the front is a wonderful figure of a naked young man, Dionysos, who poses with his arm protectively around the equally naked boy god Eros. Eros looks up toward him, full of confidence, with his right hand tenderly caressing Dionysos' belly. A little satyr is sitting next to them, excited, lasciviously observing the two friends and proffering them his cornucopia.

A few years ago I stood in front of this splendid sculpture deep below the mightiest basilica of Christendom. It seemed to me that the big ostentatious church had only served to keep intact this wonderful image of boy-love. At one point in the past Christian rulers had buried it; for centuries the Church had persecuted and excommunicated those who allowed themselves this love. And yet those two pagan lovers, the man and the boy, had stood all these centuries, in their tender embrace, right below the main altar of the basilica. High above them the Popes celebrated their masses amidst a crowd of cardinals and bishops and fulminated against "immorality". But, underneath, erect and unbent despite all this weight stands the God of Love, unimpaired, in radiant nakedness, just waiting to be rediscovered, as beautiful and as shining as on the day he was created.

Chapter 6.

Sexuality and Eroticism

“For some people it is just as difficult to have sex as it is for others to do without it. I have seen this too often to be able to believe any more that virtue has the same meaning for every man. And it’s my opinion that we will find real virtue more often in those who do have sex. The others stand outside of life.”

—Marcel Jouhandeau (1955, 340)

“Of all the sexual abnormalities, chastity is perhaps the strangest.”

—Remy de Gourmont (quoted by Fontanié 1980, 42)

Importance of Sexuality and Eroticism

For a large majority of males, sexual satisfaction is an important element in their lives (Baurmann 1983, 48). In Bell & Weinberg’s research (1978, 331-332), only 1% of the 575 white males they studied said they thought sex unimportant, 12% not very important, 47% fairly important, and 40% very important; a full 68% complained they didn’t have sex as frequently as they would have liked. Questioned about the importance of orgasm, only 3% of Barrington’s 300 subjects, all older men, said that orgasm was not important to them, 97% called it important, and, of them 60% very important; 48% went so far as to call it “vital”. When asked how long they could remain “okay” without an orgasm, 50% replied one week, 20% 2 weeks, 10% 3 weeks; “none could ‘work properly’, ‘be happy’, ‘keep my mind off sex’ for any period without orgasm after 24 days.” Barrington stresses the disadvantages to society of its members being sexually unhappy: “To the vast majority of men, aged 18 to 50, orgasm — no matter how often repeated — remains the single pre-eminent, most unpredictable, tantalisingly elusive, of all physical and mental pleasures: the source of his greatest passions, his greatest regrets, his deepest frustrations, his most violent angers, and in old age his most relived memories.” (Barrington 1981, 24, 226, 228) A 40-year-old family father, interviewed by Craig Smith (1981, 37), said he would spend twenty to twenty-five percent of his time “thinking in a sexual way.”

Had it been boys, especially boys in puberty and adolescence, who were questioned rather than adult men, the percentages would undoubtedly have been higher still. “The peak of sexual capacity occurs in the fast-growing years prior to adolescence — which accounts in part for so much of the so-called seduction of innocent youth by older boys and men,” while “the peak of actual

performance occurs in the middle of late teens.” (Barrington 1981, 75) For a young man of 20 interviewed by Craig Smith (1981, 52), “sexual pursuits accounted for twenty-five to fifty percent of his energy. As a teenager... masturbation was his greatest sexual outlet and without it ‘I would have died’.” Several teachers at secondary schools have told me how they often commiserate with the sexual distress and needs of their pupils — and how they regret that they cannot discuss with the boys this strong preoccupation of theirs openly and honestly. Sandfort (1984, 48) quotes a staff member at a home for neglected children: “These boys of 14 and 15 are always running around with a hard-on, so to speak. They’re preoccupied with sex all day long.” Osborne, the Australian who had sex with 2,500 boys, said: “Any lad has only cock on his mind and if you remember that you’ll be able to get their pants down.” (Wilson 1981, 29)

On the surface, the 15- and 16-year-old boys Hass investigated would seem to have been different. They said they thought “doing well in school, having friendships with girls, having friendships with boys, and sports” were more important than having sex. But this question was the first one put to them during their interviews, and at that point they may have still been a bit inhibited. A later question, “How important in your life is sex?” elicited a more positive answer, especially from those having a steady relationship: only 8% of *them* thought sex “not very important”. Finally, 87% of the 15- and 16-year-olds admitted that they “often think about or fantasize about sex”. (Hass 1979, 11, 20 112) Which brings us right back to Osborne!

But it is well to remember that boy-love is much, much more than simply sex, and that boys like those interviewed by Sandfort (1981, 1987) — that is, boys involved in steady, intimate love or friendship relations with a man — are unanimous in their opinion that sex is not the most important element of their relationships.

“Boy-lovers and boys are as opposed to force or coercion as anyone else. Perhaps more so. To reduce their relationships to a question of consent is to trivialize them. They are often more profound and involve deeper emotions than those associated with mere sex acts. They are mutually rewarding learning experiences for both the man and the boy. They also often inspire acts of sacrifice and generosity as noble as any others humans are capable of. Consent is a lot simpler than some people believe. If it feels good, and the boy wants it and enjoys it, then I fail to see why anyone besides the two people involved should care. But the younger the boy is, the more responsible the man must be in ensuring that the boy is treated like a human being and his rights are not violated.” (Thorstad in Thorstad & Hocquenghem 1980, 34)

Pure sexuality is the satisfaction of a corporeal desire, like those we have all observed in the animal world. Men need this satisfaction for their well-being. Sexual intercourse keeps men young, “just like riding a mare,” as the Arabs

say (Bullough 1976, 205). This satisfaction is perfectly natural and — if it is performed in full respect for the partner’s person and his physical and mental health — the activity is morally praiseworthy. It is a mutual service.

But man is capable of more. With his words, his actions, his gestures, his thoughts and his fantasies, he can rise high above the plain of biological procreation and transform sexuality into eroticism. It is eroticism which makes sexual relations a specifically human activity and an art. In its most perfect form, eroticism brings about an experience of physical and mental unity of two human beings. In the teaching of Tantra, sex is not considered the means to an end: it discovers its aim in itself, and its aim is infinite. When engaged in sex, you shouldn’t think about the future, only the present. Body meets body, here and now. Enjoy the contact of the bodies and souls and drown yourself inside the partner. Concentrate upon the moment; abandon every idea of having to go somewhere, attain something. Love makes it possible for two beings to melt together. Without love, the sexual act is performed quickly, the partner being only an instrument for the attainment of pleasure. With love, the partners communicate deeply and their bodies may remain enfolded for hours on end. But you mustn’t think: let the ecstasies overcome you (Naslednikov 1981, 117)

Man shows in his eroticism how far he has mastered and controlled his sexual impulses, to what extent he has been able to exalt them (Borneman 1978, 337). In the ‘sex is only for procreation’ vision, intercourse is “just like the mating of cattle. There is no room for refinement and cultivation. Indeed, any attempt at such refinement is a perversion of the ‘natural order’. Man may strive to perfect himself in all other spheres of life, but in his sexual activity he must never rise above the level of the beasts.” (Haeberle 1978, 198)

Even where the perfection of the Tantric union, which usually implies the presence of love, is not attained, a casual meeting of uninhibited, experienced partners may lead to an overwhelming climax, a marvellous and unforgettable experience. At this level, too, the partner’s body becomes much more than just an instrument of passion, the object of impulse. In its passionate straining for delight, the body shows its admiration and veneration of the other. Some feel the other’s seed received inside their bodies or poured forth upon them as a most precious, intimate gift. The simple fact of being grateful to him for his abandonment, of taking into account *his* feelings, desires, preferences and dislikes, of enjoying his excitement and sharing his pleasure — in short, of respecting him as a fellow human — may elevate even the paid intercourse with a boy-prostitute to eroticism.

To the Arabs and the peoples of India, sex is not only a natural and healthy necessary part of life: it is an art as well. A noble art. Burton (1963, 36, 67) quotes in this context a German philosopher, Maupertius, who said, “We need not be afraid to compare the pleasures of the senses with the most intellectual

pleasures; let us not fall into the delusion of believing that there are natural pleasures of two sorts, the one more ignoble than the other. The noblest pleasures are simply the greatest pleasures." People who have watched live-shows and sex movies know that under certain circumstances sexual activity may be highly aesthetic. And this is not just because of the physical beauty of the performers: the act itself, with its lovely and supple movements, has its own beauty, too.

Another element reveals itself within the erotic. In the union of bodies, man may feel himself at times elevated to some higher level, one where he communicates with nature, deity, the cosmos (Lemaire-Mertens 1980, 21; Burton 1963, 41). Ultimately the personality of the partner may become of secondary importance, and in the orgy the behaviour of the participants approaches (but only seemingly) pure, basic sexuality, which is the simple satisfaction of impulse. The circle is now complete.

And so sex may be fertile even when seed and egg don't meet. Its purpose isn't limited to the biological: it is social as well. Sex relaxes, makes one happy, releases energy for useful work (Klimmer, quoted in *Gay Journal*, Nov. 1977). Sex dispells loneliness; it is an particularly irreplaceable way of experiencing another human being. On a religious level, it unites us with primordial forces, with the source of our being, in the climax of ecstasy (ecstasy = stepping outside of one's self). The sexual act may be all of these things. In human praxis, procreation is just a possible secondary consequence; it is nearly never its primary aim.

Not everybody, however, is capable of experiencing its most ecstatic depths, and even those who are won't achieve this every time.

- 477 (Continued from 436) Thirty-year-old Thomas was united in a real love relationship with a boy, a relationship which satisfied him and made him happy. Sometimes when he visited other boy-lovers he met boys who were not really prostitutes but who offered themselves for payment. "I've done it with them, asking myself afterwards, however, what good it did me. Believe me, I just felt disgusted. I was physically tired, weak. It left me with a sensation of emptiness. I promised I'd never do such things again, because what good ever came out of it? Nothing. It was only negative. Relations should be positive, I think, which means that there must be more than just sex. Sexual contact in itself is nothing." (Hennig 1979, 156)

As soon as there is more than basic sex, nuances start to make their appearance.

- 478 (Continued from 428) 14-year-old Gerard, interviewed by a radio announcer, declared, "One day — I was 11 at the time — I rang Karel's doorbell. He took me to his bedroom and had sex with me. At first I felt this was very strange, but the more I thought about it the more beautiful it seemed. That was my very first sexual experience. Love means to me feeling safe. When Karel has sex with me I feel safe. (...) I'm sure I love Karel

more than I love my parents. I can discuss more things with him than I can with them. The first time I had sex with Karel I liked it. I didn't think it was dirty or anything. It felt fine, and so I didn't worry about it any more. (...) Karel discussed everything out in the open with my parents, and my mother said to my father, 'This is the way it is. You'd better give your permission, because if you don't your son will run away.' And that's true. If they'd keep me from visiting Karel I'd run away. I'd be very, very unhappy. Isn't it crazy that our love is something illegal? (...) If the police questioned me I'd tell them I thought having sex with Karel was wonderful. And it's not true he seduced me. It was really me that seduced him. I don't remember exactly how I managed to do it: I looked at him in a certain way, pressed myself up against him, etc. I remember at the time wanting to touch him. I've had this relationship with him now for three years. I have girl-friends, too. (...) I told Karel frankly that later I'll certainly be going around more with girls, and he accepts it. (...) There's no question I'll fall in love with a girl and that'll be the end of my sex with Karel, but I'll continue with my close friendship with him. Now already we're having sex a little less often. (...) The physical contact is not the most important aspect of our relations. We do much more in what we talk about and fool around with than in sex. (...) It's great to have this pleasure with Karel, and I'd like to do the same thing with boys my own age, but usually I'm scared to ask them, for they could tell others about it, and finally the police might come in. Isn't it stupid you have to be afraid of enjoying yourself in this way? (...) Karel's exterior is of no importance to me; it's his interior that counts. With girls, I'm more interested in their exterior. (...) Sometimes I feel no desire to have sex with Karel, and I just tell him so, just as he tells me if he's not in the mood for it. Then, of course, we don't do anything. But a few days later we'll both want it, and then we have sex. We have a good relationship, without compulsion on either side. (...) At home, in my bed, I often long for Karel; I feel restless (...) I'd like to sleep with him every night, but that's impossible. (...) Once in my life I had sex with a girl. It's quite different, because a girl behaves during sexual intercourse in another way than a man does. I couldn't explain this difference in words, and I couldn't say I prefer one kind of sex over the other. (...) It's different with a girl than with a man. I have other sensations. It is more or less similar, but still I feel it as different. It is impossible to put this into words..." (Tape in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

The Various Practices

If there are differing shades of sensation, there is hardly any difference in the practices. Coitus excepted, all other exciting activities common between man and woman can also be performed by men upon boys and by boys upon men. It seems that giraffes have a particular way of fondling each other which they only practice in homosexual relations and never in heterosexual intercourse (Dover 1978, 99), but this is not so in human males: heterosexual and homosexual play is identical (Siegfried 1979, 32, 34). Hand, thighs, mouth or arse clasp the partner's member, or he rubs it against his companion's body.

Masters & Johnson observed in their laboratory hundreds and hundreds of male and female volunteers masturbating and having sex with each other. In their book *Homosexuality in Perspective* (1979) they reported, evidently with

some surprise, that homosexual couples understand each other's sexual needs better than heterosexual couples and that their love-making is, on the whole, more refined. The ethics of sex-for-procreation-only has burdened heterosexuality with the prejudice that penis-in-vagina is the most 'normal' practice and that any other kind of activity is just 'fore-play' preparing the partners for insertion of the male member. In homosexual activities, however, no single practice has such priority. It is understandable, therefore, that same-sex partners use a variety of techniques more frequently than their heterosexual counterparts and enjoy experimenting with different methods (West 1977, 4).

One thing Masters & Johnson (1980, 87, 142) often observed in same-gender sex was the "teasing technique". One partner stimulates the other to a state of very high sexual tension, continuously changing its tempo and intensity in order to forestall ejaculation and so keep his partner for a long period of time right on the brink of orgasm. An expert may build up the tension in the penis and testicles so high that it finally becomes almost unbearable, making his friend plead for relief, employ his partner to make him ejaculate. The ensuing orgasm may then reach an extraordinarily high level of delight.

479 (Continued from 417) Onno was a master in this art. It gave him a proud consciousness of his "real sexual power" to be able to reduce big, powerful men, prominent in society, to writhing, panting naked bodies, convulsed by lust, entreating him, a mere boy, to stop his teasing and to make them come. He wouldn't give in to their pleadings for some time, knowing his skilled postponement would only increase their final pleasure. (Personal communication)

480 A 40-year-old bisexual man, happily married, father of two children, declared, "I'm well able to sexually satisfy women, but only by giving them expert attention with female orgasms well in mind! It gives me pleasure, of course, but it can still be at times hard work! With men, the 'scene' is totally different — a sharing of sexual pleasure with *guaranteed* orgasms for both persons. No problems, sexually or emotionally, on either side. (...) My own orgasms are typical of male orgasms, selfish, self-indulgent, self-contained, probably onanistic, and always — since adolescence — quite terrific and shattering." (Barrington 1981, 231)

It might be that homosexuality is less burdened with the unfortunate "achievement motive". Heterosexual intercourse is traditionally obsessed with the idea that the act is designed by nature to end with orgasm in both partners — or at the very least in the male — and is only complete when sperm has been poured into the vagina. Homosexual love-making is less subject to this sort of compulsion; its goal is more to enjoy your partner's body and your own, and to do this in any way possible. "It seems that most couples would find greater sexual happiness if they concentrated more on the process of coitus itself and less on its possible outcome. There is no law that says orgasm has

to be the goal of every sexual encounter. Indeed, when it comes to making love, people do themselves a disservice if they strive for any specific goal at all. It is the shared experiences of physical pleasure, not its 'climax' or 'successful' finale, that makes coitus worthwhile," observes Haeblerle (1978, 216). According to Borneman (1978, 764-765), sexual union without sexual intercourse brings the participants back to a feeling of being safely protected in a unity, where the consciousness of being individual, different, separated, alone has not yet developed. This sexuality is not fixated upon the polarity of genders but seeks to find the other partner, whatever his gender might be, as a warm, consoling creature, and in that respect it is similar to the mother/child relationship. This kind of sexuality does not need to lead to intercourse; full satisfaction may arise from body contact, holding hands, embracing and being embraced, touching the breast and sucking the nipples. Concentrating upon orgasm is injurious to the experience of sexuality. "It works at the expense of its optimal possibilities: i.e. variations in the manner of being sexually engaged with each other." (Hart de Ruyter 1976, 52) "Masters and Johnson (1979) confirm that female and male homosexual lovers do approach sexual congress in this nonorgasmic fashion. Many homosexual males deliberately learn how to enjoy fellatio, anal intercourse, etc. without ejaculating so as to prolong sustained arousal. One means for achieving this is to switch techniques before ejaculation occurs." (Suppe 1981, 81) Movies of men and boys having sex with each other often show this switching from masturbation to sucking, from sucking to anal penetration, each method being interrupted before a climax is reached.

"In orgy-room situations at the baths, it is not uncommon for gay men who wish to engage in subsequent activity to break off sexual contact when they find themselves close to climaxing (sometimes explaining, 'I'm not ready to come yet'), or to faking orgasm while performing anal intercourse. I know of one man who was involved with around 35 partners in one six-hour period, engaging in just about every conceivable sexual technique without ejaculating. Finally he became fatigued and retired to a corner and masturbated himself in order to have an excuse to end the episode. He found the entire incident among the most satisfying in his entire career." (Suppe 1981, 81-82)

Some individuals ready themselves for a sexual encounter by masturbating to ejaculation in advance so it will take longer under sexual stimulation to obtain a second climax (Vinterberg 1983, 54). Others don't need ejaculation to feel satisfied: they go on and on in the sex act until they grow tired — or they are able to have an orgasm without ejaculation (Bro-Rasmussen 1983, 83). Such a "dry" orgasm, like that of the immature boy, can be repeated many times in succession. In Tantra, the desire for orgasm is abandoned. This may be accomplished by interrupting penile stimulation as orgasm becomes imminent,

but in the higher forms of meditation it may be replaced by a spiritual delight: no techniques are intentionally chosen; the partners are no longer conscious of how they make love; they have entered into a condition of chaos and are no longer in control of themselves. "Then everything merges; the bio-physical energy carries the body away in a new kind of orgasm, a vibration rising from the feet to the head in the form of trembling which may at times grow very violent, as if one were a leaf on a tree blown by the wind. One then is filled with light and gladness. The fusion takes place when the boundaries of the body fade away in a kind of disintegration of the Self. There is no question of making movements, of 'taking' each other, of ejaculating; one is simply carried away by the impact of a universal flood." (Naslednikov 1981, 228-229)

This is not to disparage the high value and significance of orgasm. The strength and vehemence of orgasm is dependent upon the mental health of the individual. It depends upon his capacity to abandon himself to "the flow of biological energy" in his body. The less an individual is in touch with the vital elements of his being, the less he will be able to consciously control his real existence (Jensen 1983, 117-118, 121-122). Deep orgasm requires freedom from inhibition, from shame, from taboos, from all these artificial infringements upon our nature. Teaching a boy how to abandon himself completely to this working of natural forces within him and to take pride in this ability is to heighten his joy in life and contribute to his good health. If he feels entirely safe, intimate, protected and confident, he will be best prepared to reach this condition.

In the 16th Century the French philosopher Montaigne observed, and had the courage to write, that in the fullest and most perfect friendship between two males "not only the souls might have entire fruition, but the bodies also might share in this alliance." (Galloway & Sabisch 1982, 33)

The art of eroticism is directed towards inducing the highest possible state of delight in the partner as well as in oneself. In principle, no activity which may increase this delight should be rejected; it is the subjective appreciation of the persons concerned that determines whether something is appropriate or inappropriate, not the "objective" judgement of outsiders. The fear of moralists that unlimited pleasure will lead to the destruction of all restraint is ill-founded. "Unrestricted pleasure just causes pleasure and nothing else; restricted pleasure is no pleasure." (Dannecker 1980, 22)

Different people have different preferences, and even in one and the same individual preferences may change from one period of his life to another.

481 (Continued from 218) When questioned at 15 about his favourite sexual act, Leo replied, "Being fucked in the arse by a boy a few years older than me." When the same question was put to him at 18, he said, "Fucking a boy my own age." At 25 he preferred heterosexual coitus (Personal communication).

A healthy assertiveness is definitely to be encouraged here. As the Dutch cabaret singer Robert Long (1987, 67) put it in one of his verses, "Everyone has to decide today for himself how far he wants to go and what he will accept, for if he never dares think for himself and just does as others tell him to do he will always be brought to bay."

Some boys vehemently refuse to engage in certain practices, especially taking the partner's penis in his mouth and being anally penetrated, but these very same acts are the preferred choice of others.

Kinsey's reports showed that the willingness to use a variety of techniques and to experiment sexually increases with intelligence and instruction. The smartest people are the most inventive. There is another effect, too: experience enlarges people's tolerance and acceptance. Research "has indicated that adolescents become more liberal in their sexual attitudes as they get older." (Hass 1979, 6) Boys of 17-18 are slightly more promiscuous than 15-16-year-olds. Older boys "are more liberal in their attitude toward cunnilingus and fellatio than are younger teenagers", and this is true also of their perception of homosexuality (Hass 1979, 25, 53, 143).

If a boy shows a willingness to have sex but the man doesn't know him intimately as yet, Duvert (1980, 152-153) advises the man to discuss openly and in advance what they will do.

482 In a poem by the Colombian poet Bernardo Arias Trujillo, it is the boy prostitute who broaches the subject. A seaman has come to Buenos Aires, wanders about the streets at night, and suddenly he sees an attractive urchin winking at him. The sailor is immediately aroused. The boy is barely fourteen.

*Dark circles around his black eyes betray his lust,
perhaps heightened by his own hands.
"What's your name?"
"I'm Rubi Nelson, known by many men."
He is the flower of the port, this boy,
with his undulating hair, long as a Roman slave's,
and he is very conscious of enticing sailors with it.
He deals in cocaine, and he deals in lust.
"Tonight you sleep with me, you little pale boy?"
His eyes perceive booty and promise readily.*

Desire enflames the sailor's body, sweeping everything before it. He kisses the boy. After a long walk they reach the sailor's lodgings. Rubi willingly gives himself to the man.

*"How do you want to do it?" the boy's soft voice asks,
and for a moment there is a break in its harshness.*

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

*Then, graceful as an odalisk, he strips off his shirt
and lies there naked, waiting, tender as a spray of flowers.
He is generous with his smooth body,
between the red cushions and the silky sheets,
and as his hands caress
they also search, for money and for loot...
"Give me one gram of heroin," the seaman whispers,
"and two grams of love."*

Jouhandeau found that it wasn't he who decided what would happen when he had sex with a hustler of "magnificent face and perfect body", but the boy: "He knows by heart the manias of his mount, just like a jockey, and he dictates to me, as though giving a lesson, how it is to be done." (Jouhandeau 1981, 43)

If the boy's willingness is less obvious, and he still has to be 'conquered', so to speak, direct questioning might frighten him; it would be better to proceed with intimate caresses (Duvert 1980, 152-153). The man can then see what the boy accepts and what he refuses. More can be expected from an experienced than from an inexperienced boy.

A Belgian correspondent of mine invented a rather clever game to test the boy and how far he was willing to go. "Let's pretend I'm a pirate and you're the son of a man who has hidden a treasure somewhere in your house — and you know where it is. The pirate breaks into your house when your father is away. Now, lie down on the floor and imagine the pirate has tied you up and blind-folded you. He threatens to torture you if you don't reveal where the treasure is. I will tell you in advance what torture the pirate is about to perform on you, and if you don't object it really will take place. Then the next torture will be announced, and so on and so on. But as soon as you say 'Stop — I'll tell where the treasure is!' that's the end of it, and we'll change roles: you'll be the pirate and I'll be his victim. Now, let's begin. The first torture will be... I'll touch your nose with my hand..." And so it would go: the second torture would be the man touching the boy's mouth, each touch being more intimate than the last.

Experience proved that the boy would finally refuse a contact he thought too intimate, and then, after he had exchanged places with the man, would threaten the man with even more intimate contacts — and would carry them out. In this game the boy feels quite free and safe: his being tied up and blind-folded is only a fantasy; in real life he can see and move about, and whenever he doesn't want an threatened intimacy he only has to say one word to keep it from happening.

The Various Practices

Active and Passive

In the older literature about same-sex intercourse, a distinction was usually made between active and passive partners. The writers evidently believed there were fixed roles, with the more virile men playing one role and the more feminine men the other. Better investigation shattered this picture (Westwood 1960, 130). There is nothing unusual in what Peyrefitte (1977, 418) constructs for the boyhood of Alexander the Great and his bossom friend Hephaistion: they threw dice to determine who would be the first to penetrate the other. Among peoples where it is customary for men to have sex with boys, the boy is more or less equated with woman and is thus suitable to be used by men to satisfy themselves. But where man and boy love each other as equals, all the sexual techniques may be used by them and in many cases tend to be centered more on the boy's satisfaction than the man's.

The division of sexual behaviour into active and passive positions leads to a great deal of confusion and is thus fundamentally wrong. It is only in anal or interfemoral (between the thighs) intercourse that this role division might be applicable, and even there the "passive" partner may energetically contribute to the act. In manual (masturbatory) or oral (fellatio) techniques, the role designation might easily be misunderstood. Is the partner who rubs, licks or sucks the penis of his friend to be called passive? English is fortunate to have the clear terms "insertor" (the man whose member is inserted into an orifice) and "insertee" (the man who receives his partner's penis). In the following discussions we will use the terms active and passive only where there can be no doubt about their meaning.

The Preferred Practices

What may happen between man and boy during sexual intimacy? In previous chapters we have already mentioned sexual conversations, using erotic or nude photos and films, seeing and showing off the naked body. A man might become excited if a boy looks at his sexual organs with evident interest.

483 Schild (1985, 70) quotes an unknown Arabian poet:

*As the boy looked at it, my thing began to move,
And he whispered, "This is wonderful.
Let me make love to it!" I said,
"The deed is wrong; many are revolted by it."
He said, "Oh, I don't care.
To me, everything is all right."
And I was too polite not to obey him.*

An Albanian poet wrote, "When I'm in the presence of my beloved boy, I gaze upon him and forget everything else. In his absence, I only think about him. If the beloved suddenly appears, I'm troubled. My heart is beating faster, and my eyes and ears are only open for the beloved." (Ellis 1913, V-41)

In this chapter we will go deeper than this, into touching and caressing the body, hugging, kissing, touching the genitals, exciting them with the hand until orgasm occurs, licking, sucking, intercourse between the thighs, rubbing the member against other parts of the body, anal copulation.

It is impossible to fix a general order of preference for these sexual practices. There are boys and men with a decided preference for one technique, while for others any practice is acceptable which gives pleasure to both partners (Matzneff 1981, 30). Such statistics as exist relate to criminal cases or the experiences of boy-prostitutes. Criminal cases, of course, tend to deal more with "advanced" than superficial sexual acts, and most statistics don't distinguish between contacts with boys and contacts with girls.

In 200 American criminal cases concerning boys, masturbation was used in 107, intercourse in 53, and fellatio in 32, but it was not recorded whether the boy in any of the latter contacts was insertee or the inserter (Illinois Legislative 1980, 14). In the biggest investigation ever carried out (N = 8058 of which 877 were boys from 0 to 12 years of age), Baurmann (1983, 367, 397) found that, compared with girls, boys were mostly involved in only the more casual and superficial acts. He quotes studies of Simson (1956) and Weiss (1963) in which genital display took place in 49.3% and 29.9% of the cases respectively, sexual conversations in 12.2% and 63.4%, mutual masturbation in 0.6% and 5.5% and oral or anal intercourse in 13.8% and 1.1%. In his own sample, showing of the genitals to the boys occurred in 49.4% of the cases, in 46.6% of the cases the boys were masturbated, but in only 3.9% of them was oral or anal intercourse performed upon the boys (Baurmann 1983, 341, 734).

Data furnished by prostitutes are distorted by another factor: certain practices may be traditional in certain regions.

We have already met with this kind of specialisation in our discussion of ethnological material. The Chingalee men and boys of Australia practice only mutual masturbation. The Azande of Africa accept only interfemoral, never anal, intercourse, while with the Nyakyusa both forms are commonly practised, but fellatio is considered a serious offence. With the New Guinea tribes, either fellatio or anal intercourse is customary — but never both with the same tribe (Roberts 1986, 15). Similar limits are commonly set by hustlers in the West. In Nashville and other North American cities, for example, it is customary for the client to suck the penis of the boy (Reiss 1963); in North Africa, anal intercourse is the usual method, with the older male being the insertee. Geiser (1979, 136) stated that American boy prostitutes mostly used mouth or hand,

and that anal intercourse was limited to only about 4% of the cases — and then the boy generally asked for more money. An 18-year-old German hustler kept notes on the ways he satisfied his fifty past clients: he masturbated 9 of them, 5 rubbed their penises between his thighs or on his belly, he sucked off 11, had anal intercourse performed on him by 22, and 3 demanded sado-masochistic activities. Redhardt (1968, 78), in presenting these figures, claimed to have confirmation of these general trends from other hustlers.

Gebhard (1965, 819) investigated criminal cases. He asked the men serving prison sentences for sexual delinquency with boys what kinds of acts they performed. It must again be stressed that such statistics based on prison samples are always biased and skewed toward the most advanced as well as the most offensive sexual contacts: first, because only the graver cases result in imprisonment, second, because at any particular time inmates with longer sentences are proportionally over-represented. Table 10 shows the kinds of acts reported to Gebhard.

Table 10

	With boys 0-11 (N = 109)	With boys 12-15 (N = 175)
Touching body but not genitals	8.2%	7.4%
Masturbation	45.0%	19.4%
Oral practices	37.6%	48.6%
Oral and anal intercourse	2.8%	3.4%
Anal intercourse only	3.7%	10.3%

In the Sandfort study of 25 11- to 16-year-old boys having steady relationships with a man, the sexual practices were as follows:

All 25 boys were masturbated by their partners, in 17 cases to orgasm.

22 boys masturbated the man, in 14 cases to orgasm.

21 boys were sucked by the man; 13 of them ejaculated in his mouth.

14 boys sucked the man, but none received the man's sperm in his mouth.

7 boys were "rimmed" (had his anus licked) by the man; no boy did this to the man.

5 boys performed anal intercourse upon the man.

2 boys had anal intercourse performed on them by the man.

During the sexual contacts 17 boys also masturbated themselves, 15 of them to orgasm; likewise, 22 men also masturbated themselves, 20 of them to orgasm.

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

In an unreported number of cases, one partner sexually stimulated the other in various ways, after which the aroused partner masturbated himself to climax.

Sandfort stressed the fact that in each of these cases activities designed to satisfy the boy equalled or exceeded those designed to satisfy the man. This is added evidence that in such relationships it is usually the boy who determines which practices will be used (Sandfort 1981, 55-57).

Table 11 shows the age of first homosexual experience and first penetrative experience for Bieber's homophile subjects (N = 96).

Table 11
(From Bieber 1962, 338. N = 96)

	First Homosexual Contact (any method)	First Oral or Anal Intercourse
0 to 10 years	29 persons	7 persons
10 to 14 years	29 persons	13 persons
15 to 18 years	24 persons	26 persons
19 to 24 years	11 persons	26 persons
Over 25 years	3 persons	9 persons

This shows that both oral and anal intercourse are more common with older than with younger boys. With 56 of the 96 boys, their first contact had been with mutual masturbation, for 7, intercourse between the thighs, for 23 it was oral, 6 anal (but we aren't told whether the boy was inserter or insertee). (Bieber 1962, 338) According to a French investigation by M. Bon & A. d'Arc (1974), the first activity in adolescent boys in two-thirds of the cases is masturbation (Buffière 1980, 19)

Some people keep most interesting statistics about their sexual activities. Nearly 20 years ago I published some data reported by a Belgian boarding school boy about his sexual relations with 51 of his fellow students (Brongersma 1970, 230-232). He masturbated 18 of them, was masturbated by 8, had mutual masturbation with 26, interfeemoral intercourse with 23, sucked the penises of 2, was sucked by 7, performed "69" (mutual fellatio) with 2, was anal inserter with 17, and anal insertee with 6. With a number of them he had relations in more than one way.

In consulting the original manuscript of *Paidikion* (See Hammond 1966), I discovered that the author had added a detailed report on the sexual techniques

The Various Practices

he used, giving the ages of his partners. Table 12 gives an overview of his sexual life with boys.

Table 12
Sexual Techniques and Age of Partners (From *Paidikion*)

	Age of Boy																Total
	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20+			
Feeling						2					1	1		1		11	
Mutual feeling							1									1	
Intergenital friction		1					1	3	7	5				1		18	
Ejaculation on partner									2	1						3	
Masturbation							3	5	1	4	3		2	6		24	
Mutual mastur- bation	1					2	2	4	3	6	4					22	
Intercourse on breast or armpit										1						1	
Interfeemoral		2	1	2	2	5	6	10	9	16	9		1	6		69	
Interventral										1						1	
Fellatio	1				1	4	4	7	7	5	5	1		4		39	
Mutual fellatio			1			1		2	1	5	3		2	4		19	
Anal active			1	1	3	6	7	12	12	16	12	2	2	6		80	
Anal passive	1			1	1	3	4	9	8	10	8	1	1	1		48	
Anilinctus						3	1	1		4	1			3		13	
TOTAL	4	4	4	5	7	26	29	50	46	76	51	5	9	34		350	

This is, of course, only one man's sample, modelled by the interaction of his individual preferences and opportunities. Carpentier (1985, 4) asked 69 boy-lovers about their preferred practices, giving them the opportunity to cite more than one. 93% mentioned caressing (with 6% wanting to do it to the boy only, not the other way around), 87% mutual masturbation (4.5% wanting only to do it to the boy and 1.5% only wanting it done by the boy), 82% deep kissing, 82% undressing completely (with 9% wanting the boy only to undress), 81%

licking the body (12% only wanting to do this themselves), 78% sucking the penis (with 10% only wanting to do it to the boy and 3% wanting it only done by the boy). 76% mentioned play-wrestling, 76% kissing once again, 55% inter-femoral intercourse (6% wanting to be only the insertor and 1.5% only the insertee), 42% mentioned anal intercourse (4.5% wanting to be the insertor only, 4.5% wanting to be the insertee only).

Once again we should stress what we have already seen in Chapter Five: in the many thousands of years in which mankind evolved, there has been no sexual practice which has not been condemned as evil and sinful, and no sexual practice which has not been praised as noble and good. Virtue has been sought in abstinence, and even castration, in order to kill voluptuous desire; elsewhere virtue was sought in temple prostitution and ritual orgies. The sexual ethics of Indian culture — a high point of social evolution — are in nearly every point the exact opposite of traditional Christian teachings. There, as in ancient China, sexual abstinence is viewed with contempt because "it is inadmissible that man should sit and bring illness and anxieties upon himself by not engaging in sexual intercourse." Christian sexual ethics are a product of Greek pagan philosophy (especially the later Plato) not universally shared by the human race (Bullough 1976, 292, 297, 276). Everywhere and always moralists claim their teachings are in accordance with the will of God or the gods. But in fact none of the great religious systems managed to develop clear and unambiguous moral laws accepted by all Christians, all Muslims, all Buddhists. There is no simple truth, and man could better trust his own conscience (Borneman 1978, 19-20, 1050).

The science of sexology is only a little more than a century old. There is no sexual practice which learned men have not described as perverse, abnormal, sick or unhealthy; nor is there one which has not been praised by other learned men as natural, normal and healthy. Everywhere and always, men of science claim that what they teach is true, but nowhere has there ever been real objective certainty. There is no simple truth and, as we have just said about religious morality, people would do better to trust their own impulses and feelings, as long as in obeying them they don't hurt others (Borneman 1978, 37, 1051).

As sexual ethics and science are roads without issue, it would be better to view sexual activity as a way I have of communicating with my fellow human beings (van Naerssen 1986 II.B.3.5.2, 4). This means that no sexual activity is in itself either good or bad. Its goodness or badness depends upon the consequences it has for my partner and on my intentions in performing it.

How a person deals with his fellow-beings depends largely upon the culture in which he lives. If some of these fellow-beings are slaves, it may be customary to order them about, even treat them brutally at times. The relations between man and boy fall within this system, and so a slave-boy may simply be ordered

to satisfy his master's desires when and how he is told. The sons of a defeated nation may be compelled by physical force to serve as objects of lust. Where society is divided into age groups, and obedience is demanded of younger boys, a candidate for initiation simply has to suffer what tradition demands of him.

In our free, democratic society, on the other hand, we think that a boy as sexual partner has exactly the same worth and rights and deserves as much respect as an adult man. No command, no force, no exchange of money, no exercise of power by the older partner should ever decide what will happen in the intimacy of their meeting. Only mutual desire, what is felt by both as exciting and satisfying, should determine what practices will be used.

A young boy, not yet inculcated with social taboos and bent only on satisfying his lust, is often erotically more "grown up" (or, put another way, more human) than many adults, tormented as they are by prejudice and inhibition. Being closer to infancy, that stage in life when the external world is explored by putting everything within reach into the mouth, the boy may well be less hesitant, for example, to lick or suck the penis of his friend than would an older person who has learned that his member is dirty because it also serves to evacuate urine.

484 Möller (1983, 32) quotes a boy-lover on boys: "They are so very inventive — sexually, too. A child often proposes new experiments, and gives you the chance to participate. He isn't burdened with all these ideas about what is normal and what isn't; he hasn't yet been steeped in prejudice." And another (1983, 95) said about his boy-friend, "Jerry is always experimenting with great intensity. He's very much excited by mouth-genital contact. And your whole body, your tongue, your hands, your skin. He sucks my ear, and I have to tell him how it feels. And I must do it back to him, and I must kiss his neck and bite it a little. Then he wraps his whole body around mine. He wants to practice every technique; he wants to know everything."

An individual who starts with sex rather late in life has much to unlearn and much to get used to: he has to overcome timidity and shame in order to be spontaneous. Wise and considerate guidance can facilitate and help speed up this process. To force the issue, on the other hand, shows lack of respect and is therefore objectionable; it may even be counter-productive. Many boys, for instance, acquire an aversion to anal intercourse after having suffered a lot of pain through clumsy and premature penetrations.

Langfeldt (1981, 40), a child psychiatrist, states that every sexual practice — mutual masturbation, inter-femoral, oral and anal intercourse — may help the boy to become a better adult sexual partner. During a conference in Nijmegen Catholic University (1981), Constantine declared that, in alleged cases of a child being traumatised, no importance could be attached to the kind of sexual practice used, nor were homosexual incidents in themselves more traumatic than heterosexual ones. The same opinion was voiced in a reservation added to the Wolfenden Report (1963, 202). Traumatization is not caused by the sex itself

but by the way a child may have been subdued by force or threats, or brought into a situation where it was impossible for him to withhold his "consent". In the latter situation, the age of the person who overpowers the child is also important. The freer a child feels, the more he spontaneously participates in the sex and enjoys it, the more he loves his adult partner, the less likely it is that he will suffer any harm from the experience. The laws of some countries attaching special importance to whether there was penetration — oral or anal, performed or attempted — are therefore quite arbitrary (West 1977, 288-289) and make no real contribution to child protection. What Tripp (1975, 102) observes about any kind of sexual activity applies equally to boy-love: "*What is done is usually less important than who is doing it, how it is done, the spirit with which it is done, and the extent to which the partner enjoys it.*"

In what follows we will give numerous detailed examples of the different sexual practices, but we will not take them from the sort of erotic literature which is designed simply to excite the sexual appetite. Many such "realistic descriptions" are in fact quite unrealistic, fantastic images of sexual athletes, men and boys continuously raging with desire and provided with gigantic members, always erect, ready every five minutes or so to produce endless ejaculations of hot seed. As we emphasised in the previous two chapters, there is nothing wrong with depicting in text or image sexual conjugation, which after all is a most important human activity. But if we want to deal with reality it is better sought where people have recorded their own experiences in order to further human knowledge, or where serious authors set such scenes within the scope of a narration which is intended to do more than titillate the reader. Our examples are chosen to show what takes place during the intimate moments of a human relationship. There will, perhaps, be a certain amount of redundancy, because it is extraordinarily difficult for a reader without personal experience to get a well-rounded picture of what really takes place in a boy-lover's bedroom. Fortunately the Victorian age is past, and fine artists no longer totally eschew this theme.

We must limit ourselves, however, to the principal forms of homosexual practice. Everybody has within himself, consciously or unconsciously, a certain amount of fetishism, or sado-masochism, or exhibitionism, or voyeurism, etc. These specific tastes may express themselves in man/boy relationships. Sometimes a particular area of the boy's body is especially arousing to the man: his bare knees, the groove in his neck or in the middle of his chest from sternum to navel, the nipples, a characteristic haircut. For others, dress is very important: a boy-scout's or bell-boy's uniform, a sailor suit, leather trousers, long white trousers, an open shirt. Sadism may vary from pleasure in rough-housing and wrestling to whipping and beating, and masochists may pay hustlers to whip

them. In boys, especially during puberty, masochism seems more common than sadism: games involving bondage and being tied up are rather popular. There are men who like to exhibit their genitals to boys, and others who try to see boys in the nude, or watch them masturbate or in sexual romp with their peers.

The variations are endless. Fundamentally, every man, every boy has his own quite personal and individual sexuality, and that must be kept in mind as we limit ourselves to the most common sexual practices.

Adapting to the Child's Evolution

Brandt and Tisza (quoted by Geiser 1979, 8) proposed a very good definition of child sex abuse: "Sexual misuse of a child is the exposure of a child to sexual stimulation inappropriate for a child's age, level of psychosexual development and role in the family." Geiser adds: "It is important to realize that 'inappropriate' varies with families, ethnic groups, and socio-cultural context."

It could be claimed that, physically, a boy at any age could function as a partner to every usual homosexual practice. One might object that this surely doesn't hold for passive anal intercourse, but there are pictures of boys of four and five deeply penetrated by a very large adult's member, and with untroubled, even rather happy, expressions on their faces. Especially in the young body, tissues are quite elastic. Still, when you look at such a photo, you find it disturbing — and rightly so. We can concede that a child can be trained so that he no longer suffers pain when penetrated this way, but he is incapable at this early stage of his mental evolution of abandoning himself so completely. He must have been persuaded, if not compelled, at some stage by the adult.

We dealt with psychosexual development in Chapter Three, so we will only repeat here our conclusions: the sexual play of the very young child is concentrated entirely upon himself: "this feels good to me". The enjoyment of lust manifests itself early. By the time boys are nine, a good half of them experience arousal at least occasionally, and nature urges them into sexual experimentation. Confronted with an adult partner, the child, in general, assumes a passive role.

But only in general, for there are some very young boys who willingly take a very active part in their sexual encounters (Sandfort 1984, 133). Plato (*Phaidros* 255e) says the boy wants to see, touch, kiss and be in bed with his lover almost as much as does the man. Among 127 Dutch subjects having sex with children, 57.4% reported the child was active or collaborative in bed, 14.1% said they were passive, while 26.7% said they were both active and passive (Pieterse 1982, I-30). But most younger boys simply want to be caressed, and the adult partner should bend to this need. We can expect of him that he will

respect his partner: that is, do only those things which the boy likes. It is only by the time the youngster reaches puberty that he can attribute a new meaning to sexuality, when he sees sex as no longer being confined to himself. Then it isn't just something which is delightful for him but it is increasingly integrated into his relationship with another person (Straver & Geeraert 1980, 87).

If a man wishes to adapt his behaviour to the evolution of a little boy, he should start, as said, by doing only those things which the child likes, i.e., skin contact: touching, embracing, caressing, kissing, hugging. These give the young boy a feeling of being safe, protected, loved. The "nice" feelings in many boys can then swell to actual orgasm, which shows that they belong in a different category from other agreeable sensations (Martinson 1976, 252). Masturbation, therefore, may be part of this sex play. According to Kinsey, 50% of 3- to 4-year-old boys and nearly all of the 8- to 10-year-olds would be capable of experiencing the delight of orgasm (1948, 178).

On the other hand, the little boy is not yet alive to some of his adult partner's more mature needs, and the man should not compel him to perform acts which at best would be learned as a kind of drill and performed with no real pleasure. It is senseless to burden a child with sexual knowledge or experience exceeding its capacity to understand (Martinson 1976, 258).

485 Lex (28) is a social worker in a home for children with bad family situations. He sees two different kinds of sexual conduct of men with children. As an example of the first, he tells about a boy of 13 or 14 who insisted on sharing with him his changing stall at a swimming pool and wanted to masturbate with him, mutually. Here everything "is more directed upon sex. You're just plain horny and, frankly, you want to see the boy come off, and get it off yourself. In sex play with little boys this is absolutely not the case. Well, maybe you touch each other's cocks, but it has quite another significance, it is altogether different. It, too, may arouse you, but that is incidental. You're not doing it to get turned on. You're not even thinking about arousal..." (Sandfort 1984, 48)

It is true that the caress of an immature child differs from that of an adult. The child's caress expresses tenderness more than desire (Jans 1973, 29). But Möller (1983, 73) is right in advocating the use of the word "sex" for the cuddling and fondling of children. Few children today would call skin contact, sitting close to somebody, kissing and hugging "sex", but it would help bridge the gap between childish and adult sexuality if they would learn to do so.

When the boy reaches the age of spontaneous sexual arousal, physical relations with him can focus more upon the genitals — without abandoning the other kinds of caresses mentioned above. The boy's penis can be stimulated with hand or mouth. Some boys experience during these activities a kind of unresolvable sexual excitement which may become so intense as to be unbearable and has to be interrupted. In most, however, the pleasure increases and

leads to orgasms which in some boys can be repeated almost endlessly. The large genitals of the adult usually fascinate boys in late pre-puberty. They are often eager to touch them with their hands, taste them with their mouths, but it is done more out of curiosity, as an exploratory move, than to excite lust in the man. Their own desires are not yet directed toward rubbing or sucking the adult's penis to climax.

Only at puberty will this evolution reach its term (Martinson 1976, 257). Many boys, nevertheless, will retain their preference for passive attitudes in sexual relations with men until they are grown to young men themselves, or even beyond. Female researchers like Shere Hite and Nancy Friday were quite surprised to discover that "one of the major themes in male fantasy is the abdication of activity in favor of passivity. (...) It turns out that man's favorite fantasies are not about raping/forcing/making women do it. In fantasy, men want exactly what women want, to be done to." (Friday 1981, 276-277). Almost every man in Hite's investigation complained "that he had to do all the work in sex and that he resented this." Some felt "it would be nice to let someone else be in control." Another asked, angrily, "When am I going to be treated like a sexual object? I'd love it." With Hite's anonymous subjects, only 14%, among the non-anonymous only 4%, said they preferred their partners not to take the initiative in sex (Hite 1981, 499, 501, 626, 878).

No wonder, then, that in boys, too, this desire for the passive role is strongly present. It has been known for a boy, who some years previously had stopped his sexual relations with an older friend and who was now finding all his sexual release with girls, to suddenly show up again and demand a resumption of their love-making: "With my girl-friend I have to do all the work; with you I can just lay back and let myself be nicely brought off."

Passive behaviour in boys, then, cannot be entirely attributed to the adult partner's expressed desire or expectations (Langfeldt 1981, 40): it is quite spontaneous. But by this age the boy has become conscious of his partner's own desire to experience lust, and, if he likes him, he is usually willing to offer him this delight. The boy is now ready, upon request or perhaps his own impulse, for practices which are less agreeable to him, or which don't arouse him at all.

Boys' first reactions to a man's orgasm vary considerable. Some think his sperm "filthy", or are disturbed by his "strange behaviour".

486 When Peter was 7 or 8 a friend of his parents would sometimes get into bed with him and play with his little penis, which he enjoyed. Then one night the man dropped his trousers. "I had seen something like that on a friend, but this... When I looked at that cock of his rising, I got really scared. I cringed under my blankets, to show him how frightened I was. Of course I didn't stay there. I should say that he was a very

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

nice person. (...) Later he asked me to rub him, of course. The first time he climaxed I got frightened all over again. I thought it was a kind of sickness." (Oskamp 1980, 96)

Other boys are fascinated observing a man's climax; they find it beautiful and important (Sandfort 1980, 191). It is not unusual for the two feelings to be mixed. In an autobiographical novel, the dancer Rudi van Dantzig (1986) described his fascination and his fear when he was initiated at age eleven by an American soldier, and how deeply he grieved when his friend departed. All the rest of his life he found himself searching "for a lost soldier."

In this connection, the part played by a child's upbringing is most evident. Being raised in an open, permissive manner makes it easier for a boy to assert his own will, for he can comprehend what is happening or is about to happen, and he can then consent or withdraw. If he chooses to participate, a liberal upbringing makes it easier for him to enjoy the sex (Corstjens 1980, 281). Research on sexual relations between pre-pubertal boys and adults shows that these contacts generally are compatible with the stage the child has reached in his mental evolution (Abraham 1969, 148). "Far from being unrestrained sex maniacs" — as the public sees paedophiles — "their approaches to children are almost always affectionate and gentle, and the sex acts which occur, mostly mutual display and fondling, resemble the sexual behaviour that goes on between children. (...) Aggressive sexual overtures (...) are unusual..." (West 1977, 214, 216) — even more so where boys are involved rather than girls.

Many other experts agree with West: they all discovered that intimacy with small boys is mainly limited to those activities which Mohr & Turner (1967, 362) describe as "pregenital sex play, such as looking, showing, touching, kissing and fondling." That is to say, the kind of activities children participate in among themselves (O'Carroll 1980, 56; West 1977, 214). Sandfort's case studies (1982) illustrate this very well. After some time, masturbation is typically added to this pre-genital play. Mouth and anus become involved only when 1) the boy has grown older and bigger, 2) he has a longer-lasting steady relationship with a man, and 3) he voices a desire for these techniques himself. With a stranger, or a casual contact, a boy will only rarely go this far; in general he will limit the sex to the touching of his naked body, being masturbated, or possibly allowing his penis to be sucked by the older partner (Gerbener 1966, 36; Hartmann & Hauptmann, quoted by Baumann 1983, 105; Ingram 1979, 516; Landis 1956, 94; McCaghy 1971, 21; Potrykus & Wöbcke 1974, 26; Righton 1981, 27; Sandfort 1979, 187; 1980, 190; Taylor 1981, XVI).

Van Naerssen (1984, 175) very aptly compares sexual expression with verbal expression. A small child may talk in a rather different language than does an adult, yet communication between the two is still possible. Their conversation is not inadequate: it is simply different from that between adults. Some adults are better at talking with children than others. In paedophile contacts the same

The Various Practices

is true: some men are very good at understanding a child's body language, and can do so without imposing their own body language upon the child. We would probably best consider this a special "talent to react adequately and promptly to the expressions of children." (Blans 1984, 202)

As early as the Second Century B.C. (Pseudo)Lukianos described this gradual evolution: "The first phase is looking at the beloved boy, being happy to see him. But soon the lover desires something more: he wishes to touch him, to hug him. And from the first touch with the tips of his fingers the excitement of lust begins to stream through his whole body. From that level the lover longs for the next: to kiss — not too passionately, not impetuously, but quietly allowing lips to approach lips and then withdraw without touching, without leaving a trace. Then, pressing himself against the no longer resisting boy, the lover melts into an ever tighter embrace: now lips are open and every hand is busy. Bodies still clothed, the caresses are no longer casual; they stoke the lover's fire. Full of longing, the right hand seeks the boy's breast and plays with his nipples, which swell with excitement. His own cock turgid with desire, the lover moves his fingers slowly toward the boy's small cock crowned with those first sweet, soft hairs. But what more can I add? Having arrived at this level, the lover proceeds to his real work: playing his prelude upon the lad's thighs, he conducts the music, if we may borrow a simile from the comic writers, to its crowning finale." (Borneman 1978, 1002-1003)

Even in contacts which have resulted in criminal prosecution, where one would expect a higher incidence, "advanced" techniques are still relatively rare. In statistics from the German Federal Republic, vaginal and anal intercourse occurred in only 4% of all "indecent assaults" on children (Kerscher 1978, 151). Gerbener (1966, 32), summarising 169 criminal trials, reported that in only 3.6% did the boy suck the man's penis, in 0.6% was anal intercourse attempted on the boy and in 3% performed. Wegner (1963, 23, 53) reported that in 71 criminal cases involving boys, there was only one instance of anal intercourse.

The Canadian researchers Mohr & Turner (1967, 362) defined paedophilia as "the expressed desire for immature sexual gratification with a prepubertal child." Prof. van der Kwast, a Dutch psychiatrist, said it was wrong to reproach a child-lover with confronting a child prematurely with adult sexuality, for it is the adult who comes down to the level of the child rather than vice versa. He believed psychiatrists should better be concerned about the infantilism of a man satisfying himself with such incomplete activities (1968, 55; cf. Baumann 1983, 304).

- 487 Van der Kwast's opinion is supported by a man saying about himself, "A paedophile very consciously restricts his sexual expressions to a form which children find attractive: masturbating, fondling, caressing, stroking. The paedophile has quite knowingly not

developed into a fucking being — or at least I didn't. There is no need for this. I experience my sexual satisfaction just as a child does, and I continued so doing after I became an adult." (Möller 1983, 33)

Despite such testimony, I believe that Van der Kwast's theory is, in most cases, wrong. Just because an adult has sex with a child in a childish manner, it cannot be concluded that his own sexuality moves on a childish level. We cannot say that it is essential for sexual activity to lead up to an orgasmic climax by means of increasing stimulation. That may be true for "normal" sexual intercourse but need not be so for its variants. To conclude, as did Gordon (1976, 45) that "the paedophile impulse stultifies and impoverishes" the total sexual experience, is missing the point entirely. Of the child-lover it could better be said that he is moved by the very mature and adult desire to give pleasure to his partner in a way adapted to the partner's phase of evolution. We have previously quoted a passage from Davidson where he says his own orgasm is of minor importance and explains that his greatest delight is in observing a fine, naked boy convulsed with lust.

This is why it is so necessary for the man to pattern his sexual behaviour in consonance with the boy's wishes. Only if the boy feels happy, free and under no special constraints, will he be able to fully enjoy the act — and his partner with him (O'Carroll 1980, 60). Through nature's ingenuity or some fortunate coincidence, both partners come into psychological harmony. The boy focuses upon conquering the world for himself: this is the task set for him at this phase of his evolution. Especially with his physical maturation, a new world opens up for him with many hitherto un contemplated possibilities. This has already been prefigured in the preceding years. It is quite understandable, then, that the boy is strongly self-centered and egotistical, that he tends to compensate for his uncertainty over all the seemingly overwhelming problems which face him by assertive behaviour and self-glorification (narcissism) (Hanry 1977, 98). He profoundly wants to be admired.

And now he meets a man who really does admire and venerate in him this boyishness in body and spirit. The man's natural impulse is to give the boy pleasure. As early as 1909 the German sexologist Albert Moll discerned this as the outstanding characteristic of child-lovers (1909, 203). And 65 years later Moll's American counterpart Geiser wrote about boy-lovers: "The emphasis is upon giving pleasure to the boy, perhaps to the exclusion of the tutor's own sexual satisfaction." (1979, 83; see also Righton 1981, 27-28).

One of Leonetti's subjects says, "For me it is enough to caress a boy, to see his pleasure. (...) My own chief sexual pleasure consists of seeing how the boy has his orgasm." (1978, 165, 169)

Pieterse (1982, I - 17) investigated 11 adult men who had sex with small

boys, limited to kissing, fondling and masturbation. Seven of them experienced orgasm while doing this to the child.

In his book about Clarence Osborne, the Australian who had sex with 2,500 boys, Wilson (1981, 80) observed, "The boys indulged in sexual activities with men because they greatly enjoyed being fellated, touched and physically caressed. They were highly aroused by sexually stimulating situations and wanted to further their sexual experiences and sexual partners. The older male allowed them to fulfil their ambitions because paederasts enjoy giving the boys pleasure in the same sense of 'enjoying the pleasure of the other' which Sartre writes about in *Saint Genet*."

488 Sandfort's subject Frans (37 years old) said about his boy-friend Harrie (13) whom he had already known for several years, "He doesn't masturbate me, and for me that isn't really very important. Others tell me it is so wonderful to be sucked. Yes, I, too, like to be sucked, and I can remember several times when I was. But that doesn't seem to be the most important thing. Maybe the reason is that I'm used to... well I won't be hypocritical and talk about preferring to give rather than receive — of course, I like to receive, too — but the question is not whether you want to get more: it's a question of giving: to give something and to receive something else in return which is for me of equal importance. Maybe more important for me than being sucked is that I get in return a boy loving to be caressed or sucked. I can have an orgasm simply by sucking a boy. I am excited by the other's pleasure." (Sandfort 1979, 187)

An American physician, Dr. A. L. Ross of Silver Springs, MD, came across several cases in the course of his investigations where seeing a boy convulsed in orgasm was sufficient in itself to induce orgasm in the man (Personal letter 1982). Thus we can understand how boy prostitutes can be well paid for participating in group sex in the presence of spectators (Redhardt 1968, 71).

In many cases the man brings the boy to orgasm by rubbing or sucking his penis, sometimes masturbating himself at the same time, sometimes not even touching his own penis and thus denying himself orgasm (Sandfort 1979, 185).

489 A homophile subject in Hite's investigation described his sexual preferences in a similar manner: "I luxuriate in long slow periods of arousal for my sake and in order to please my partner as much as possible. I must admit that I get a great kick out of watching my partners as they experience the feelings going through their body. Of all the parts of having sex, my favorite is watching, savoring, and sharing the pleasure of my partner. This visual and auditory stimulation is for me the most exciting and arousing thing." (Hite 1981, 506)

Borneman (1978, 965) observes rightly that "The conscious, sympathetic observation of a loved one's orgasm is one of the most valuable experiences of the human soul."

- 490 Sartre analysed this "feeling pleasure in another's pleasure" in his book *Saint Genet* (1952, 383). What completely pervaded Genet in having intercourse with a boy was "the delightful sensation of being the cause of another human being's satisfaction" and being "the pious witness of his collapse in lust." He who is obsessed with his own lust cannot enjoy the happiness of seeing or feeling how it overcomes the other. As for his own pleasure, Genet took care of that later, almost absent-mindedly, secretly. This tendency was so pronounced in him that when sometimes he was performing anal intercourse upon a willing boy, he actually envied the partner he was penetrating and upon whose body he was striving for orgasm: he was jealous of the boy's role as giver.

For some people, the partner's orgasm is a prerequisite for their own.

- 491 A bisexual subject of Barrington's (1981, 229) said, for example, "My own orgasm is important, but I can't come till my partner begins his or her orgasm. It's my lover's orgasm that triggers off mine, I mean."

Most of the men who prefer smaller boys will therefore have no difficulty adapting to the needs of their little friends. The superstition that little children have no sexual needs is just as false as the opposite view: that children will want intercourse right away the moment they are told what men and women really do together in bed. "But they certainly do want to be caressed, to kiss, to caress, to play and especially to explore things." (Eggenkamp 1979, 45)

The little boy longs for body contact and to be fondled. In a study of pre-school teachers conducted by Spitz, 90% said the children "frequently" or "very frequently" wanted body contact with them and assiduously tried to get it in the form of touching and being touched, being caressed or hugged, sitting on the teacher's lap, being kissed and kissing. Twenty percent of the children tried to explore the adult's body (Gundersen 1981, 50-52).

How agreeable the sensations so provoked really are can be seen in the little boys' resulting erections. In our culture this may dismay the adults, who may learn to avoid such contacts. Boys usually respond by seeking substitutes — and finding them in romping, rolling and play-wrestling with their age-mates, and this may go on for hours. Most smaller boys don't really know, consciously, what they are looking for. But some do: they are ready and willing when an older partner comes along and takes the initiative (Constantine 1981, 231).

"Pederasts seem to be eternal adolescents in their erotic life. They become fixated upon the youth and sexual vitality of the adolescent boy. The budding sexuality of the boy can be fascinating to watch. Many pederasts speak with wistfulness of the boy's sexual vigor, his unbridled enthusiasm in sexual experimentation, and his ecstasy and sheer joy in sexual fulfillment. Pederasts love the boy in themselves and themselves in the boy. It may be a way to preserve youth and sexual vitality." (Geiser 1979, 83)

Real eroticism is a game, and tension as well as joy can be playfully increased through mock resistance. Many boys show a great deal of refinement at doing this, knowing how to say "No" in such a way that it clearly means "Yes!"

A little boy confronted with a man whom he intuitively feels is sympathetic, might suddenly announce, out of the blue, "I can't *stand* being tickled!" Or he might refuse to come nearer, saying, "I'm scared you're going to tickle me!" This, of course, is an invitation to chase and catch him and try out tickling to see if he really finds it so terrible.

An older boy comes to visit a man of whose sexual proclivities he is already aware. The boy refuses, however, to stay over night, because "I know you wouldn't be able to keep your hands off me." The man promises he will "be good." As soon as the boy is lying naked in bed at his side, the man takes him in his arms; the boy already has an erection. "Just as I thought, I *knew* you wouldn't keep your promise. But, now... oh, well..." And he abandons himself in lust. This little drama was recounted by Genet in his *Pompes Funèbres* (1953, 39-41).

Many boys tempt their older friends into a kind of sham struggle which all too clearly reveals their desire for close body and skin contact (Frenkel 1983, 27). As the romping proceeds, its erotic element becomes more and more obvious, until the sex organs themselves begin to take over. Strato, the ancient Greek poet, wrote:

*Don't be so shy and timid, Diphilos.
In bed with me, at my side,
You never take the upper hand.
Solicit me with your kisses
And before we begin the real work of love,
Tease me and hit me and pinch me,
Hug me and chatter a little.
(Anthologia XII, 209)*

So it is not at all unusual for a boy to be well aware that it will excite a man if he has to struggle a little beforehand. Martial (IV, 42) praises this quality in a slave-boy: "He often provokes me when I'm not willing; often he doesn't want it when I press him. And often he's more salacious than his master." To quote once again from Strato:

*When I'm not in the mood you kiss me.
When you're not in the mood I kiss you.
When I refuse you are willing.
If I want it, you refuse.*

And:

*If I want a kiss, I don't like a bad-tempered refusal:
No pugnacious squawks, no hands pushing me away.
But neither do I like the boy who, when I embrace him,
Gives in immediately and abandons himself without a struggle.
The finest lover is he who carefully combines these responses
And knows how both to refuse and give himself at the same time.*
(Anthologia XII, 203 & 200)

The attraction of these little games is basically derived from the special charm of boyish behaviour:

*He was a boy when first we met;
His eyes were mixed of dew and fire,
And on his candid brow was set
The sweetness of a chaste desire:
But in his veins the pulses beat
Of passion waiting for its wing,
As ardent veins of summer heat,
Throb through the innocence of spring.*
(Bayard Taylor (1825-1878), quoted by Bullough 1976, 617)

If the boy is shy and ashamed as a result of his upbringing, but at the same time longs for a sexual experience, darkness may make it easier for him to abandon his clothing and give in to his impulses. Once he has experienced in the dark how positively his older partner responds to him, he may well favour him the next time with the spectacle of his nudity. It is not just considerate but also sound education to respect the boy's original timidity.

In tenderly caressing another person for the purpose of sexually exciting him, one intuitively does what one would like to have done in return. An experienced lover, then, making love to an unknown person, is likely to say something like, "Caress me, touch me, I love it." Noting exactly what his partner does, he will do the same back.

There are the so-called erogenous zones which in most people are peculiarly sensitive to a tender touch. First of all, of course, is the penis, especially the crown (thick ledge) of the glans and the frenulum (the ligament) of the foreskin.

Other important areas are the scrotum, the skin around the anal opening, the inner thighs, and the lips. In the case of nipples, fondling them provokes no reaction at all in some boys, while in others it can actually bring on orgasm:

in one case I have learned of, a boy habitually excited himself this way to climax. Other favoured regions of the body are the buttocks, the neck and the back. Even the ear-lobes may be especially sensitive in some boys.

If man and boy are practised and trusted friends, one may openly ask the other for sex: "Let's go to bed!" Experienced boys are well aware that talking about their sexual desires tends to sexually excite most men.

492 "I'm tremendously loaded again!" a fifteen-year-old Sri Lankan boy used to tell his adult friend (Personal communication).

But more often it is the man who brings up the subject of sex and uses it to make the boy willing:

493 (More about case 448) A fifteen-year-old Australian boy met Clarence Osborne when he stopped to admire his car parked outside a supermarket. The previous evening the boy had had a date with a girl-friend, but it had been sexually disappointing because she had permitted him to do practically nothing. He was still feeling tense and frustrated when Osborne invited him for a ride, and once in the car Osborne soon turned the conversation to sex. "He seemed a nice guy and he could talk about anything and I knew that he wanted to do something with me even though he wasn't being heavy about it. And when he was talking he put his hand on my cock and just gently rubbed it and it really seemed nice. I can't honestly remember whether he told me to take off my pants or whether I just took them off so he could get his hand around my cock more easily, but it didn't really matter because I wanted to do it. I didn't feel a poofter or anything as he was talking about girls, but he was asking me how excited I was getting and I was telling him the truth — I was getting really excited! He seemed to know exactly how to do it to me and he kept asking me whether I liked being rubbed this way or in some other way and I told him how I like it the best. He was trying to ask me when I was going to come and I was telling him that I'd come all right and I sure did — all over the car. He wanted to measure my cock with a tape measure he had but I didn't want to because I couldn't see any point in that. He wasn't heavy about this and when I said no he just shrugged and began talking about something else.

He took me back to the shopping centre and was as pleasant as pie. I enjoyed talking to him and I enjoyed the sex as well. He's the only man I've ever had a relationship with before or since. As you know I am married now with two kids, but at times I still think back to when he did those things to me and get excited by the thought of it." (Wilson 1981, 39)

Whenever it is possible, both partners undress completely, because in a good sexual union all the surfaces of the body should be touched and seen. We pointed out in Chapter Five that being naked profoundly affects the behaviour of a boy. In a poem published in *NAMBLA Journal Six* (1983, 21), Antler observes:

*For all their fast-talk and macho,
For all their postured coldness*

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

*and manner of superiority,
Rowdy, tough, joking,
Wary or contemptuous,
Once naked, once spreadeagled
on the silk bed
It's a different story.*

This is the great value of nudity: all the boy's artificial attitudes vanish. He becomes his real self, open to the workings of nature, and this causes deep joy to his lover.

- 494 As one boy-lover put it: "For me, these are really the happiest moments of making love, when we are just together on my bed and I can embrace this naked, sturdy young body, and hug it. My hands run over his smooth skin, explore his nipples and navel, knead his full buttocks. I wish this could go on forever, but the tension in my penis soon gets too strong, and it urges me on to get down to the real work at hand." (Personal communication)

Hand Techniques

After play-wrestling or romping for a while, or in an access of tenderness involving ever more intimate caresses, the phase of overt sexuality is finally reached, and this is usually initiated by the man taking the boy's penis in his hand and rubbing it.

"For men and animals, it is the peak of happiness to fondle each other's genitals and to be tender to them in a way which sends waves of delight and affection through the partner's body. Nothing can draw two beings closer, make them more intimate, than touching these vulnerable parts which, hidden as they are, always remain hypersensitive." (De Klerk 1974, 138)

Hass (1979, 47) asked boys how enjoyable it was to have a girl touch their penises. By age 13, 23% of his subjects had experienced this, and by age 15, 49%. Of those experienced boys, only 2% had found it not enjoyable, 25% moderately enjoyable, and the remaining 73% very enjoyable.

This mysterious organ not only serves to express feelings which overwhelm the mind and body of its owner, but it can also give access to that mind and body. If a boy whose penis is fondled sinks back into his chair, or luxuriates on the bed, overwhelmed by the sensations the man's touch is producing in him, his eyes closed or staring absently into what seems like eternity, his friend can be sure that he has penetrated as far as is humanly possible into the boy's innermost being. The boy now knows and recognises him at a depth that cannot be plumbed in any other way. That boy will never be the same again to the man.

The Various Practices: Hand and Body Techniques

The feelings of lust which then rise in the boy often make him willing to be more active himself.

- 495 Hass (1979, 142) was told by a 16-year-old boy: "When I was fifteen I knew an older guy and he introduced me to masturbation. We were sitting by a river in Arizona and he said he thought it would be fun to play with my cock. At first it blew me away, but after I knew him about a month, I said okay. We did it a lot and after a while sometimes I would even ask him to do it to me. After a while I did it, too, because I felt I should. I'd rather have a woman do it, but he was a good friend of mine so it was all right."

"It is best to start with an exploration of the partner's member. Males vary a great deal in the sensitivity of this organ. You should thus try to discover which spots, when touched, produce the greatest reaction. It may be the frenulum, the ligament with which the foreskin is attached to the under-side of the glans, or the glans itself, or the shaft, or the opening of the urethra. If your partner is uncircumcised, test whether the foreskin is easily retracted. Inspect the shape of his erection." (Baker 1977, 23)

Some boys give themselves over quite passively to the lust induced by such handling.

- 496 In Guyotat's novel set against the background of a colonial war, a young general of the occupying army walks one night into the room adjoining to the barracks kitchen where the young apprentices sleep. He recognises a boy's voice calling him: "I'm alone. All the others are on duty." It is a young butcher, the 15-year-old Pino, naked on his bed with a comic book folded over his crotch.

"The general smiles; the boy, motionless, doesn't smile. The general bends over him, blows into his face, upon his breasts, his navel, his underbelly. Gradually the boy, too, begins to smile. The general's hand touches the boy's stomach, his navel. The boy laughs, loudly. Then the hand moves upwards again, to where the ribs begin.

"Does it hurt here? And here? And here? And there?"

"The thing which is hurting me, General, is much lower."

"The general trembles. Sweat runs down his forehead into his eyelashes. His hand moves down the boy's stomach.

"Go lower, General."

While caressing the boy's breast with one hand, he touches the comics with the other.

"It's not standing up?"

"It is."

"The general's hand moves the comics slightly to one side. Pubic hair is exposed, blackened and sticking together with sweat. The general moves his little finger through the wet curls, presses down upon the root of the member, pushes the book further aside, and at last the penis itself is revealed.

"That's where the hurt is, General."

The general lies down on top of the naked boy, who utters a low moan.

"Now give me mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, too."

The boy has opened his mouth wide; his tongue moves to and fro. The general takes his lips, seeks the boy's tongue with his own. Their spittle boils, shining where lips touch.

"Do you remember that time when I had you summoned to my study?"

"General, I have a little pet animal who loves to be caressed."

The general goes on to tell Pino with great enthusiasm how he has always liked him, but the boy reminds him that he wants to be stroked. Then suddenly he warns:

"General, the little animal now is about to spit."

But the man continues talking about all that has happened between them.

"General, I'm making stains on your trousers!"

(Guyotat 1967, 265-270)

Often this stroking of his penis is all the boy ever wants, and throughout the whole course of a relationship his sexual involvement may remain limited to this (Hass 1979, 43). For boys who in puberty and adolescence have a strong need of feeling protected and cared for, it may be sheer bliss simply to abandon themselves quietly and calmly to a trusted man's love and affection expressed this way by a ministering hand.

It is more rare to find a man who never wants to advance beyond this manual technique.

497 One such man was world tennis champion Bill Tilden. Tilden was physically extremely bashful; he never stripped naked in a locker room. When he had sex with his partners it consisted only of stroking the young boys' genitals. It seems he never opened his own fly or revealed an erection; he considered both oral and anal sex perverted (Deford 1975, 212). One day he was caught in the act with an adolescent boy, and this shattered his career and his life (Greif 1982, 39).

498 Masters & Johnson (1980, 74) cite the curious case of a man who was masturbated by two older brothers, starting at age fifteen and continuing for four years. Neither of the brothers, however, allowed him to masturbate them. This happened often, the brothers taking turns, and he submitted to the act quite willingly. At 19 he was introduced to the homosexual subculture where he never allowed any other acts than being masturbated.

While a simple passive stance satisfies a number of boys, others quite spontaneously want to touch their partner's erection and play with it.

499 "When I was five years old an old fisherman at the fish market always was nice to me. I would sit on his lap. (...) I had an insane desire to stick my hand far down under his belt and he didn't repulse me. I liked to take hold of it. (...) At home a man used to come to see my mother. I was sitting on his lap and I thought I would do the same thing. He didn't repulse me either. All of a sudden it got wet and sticky at the end. (...) When I was twelve an older boy started fooling around with me and masturbated me. I wasn't particularly interested until all of a sudden something was happening to me. I told him to stop. I was terribly scared. I thought my insides were coming out. About

a week later I went to the bathroom and did it myself. From then on I had affairs with boys in which mutual masturbation was practised once or twice a week." When he was about fifteen, the boy met a 32-year-old man at the seashore and went with him to his room. "He put his hand on my thigh and then on my penis. (...) He asked me if I would like to take off my clothes. (...) He asked me if he could use his mouth. (...) I masturbated him. (...) I went back to him. It was a physical outlet for me and I thought it was daring. We practised mutual masturbation. After about four days I got sick of it. (...) By this time I had become attached to Jesse, a boy my own age who was very good looking. I showed him how to perform mutual masturbation. After my experience at the seashore I told other boys and I did it quite often to three or four fellows besides Jesse. I always loved to do it to Jesse because I thought I was doing something for him." (Henry 1948, 249-251)

An active or passive preference might be related to the two different types of boys described by the child psychologist Beets in a unique analysis of what goes on when 14-year-old boys masturbate. One the one hand he describes the boy intent upon touching his penis with his hand, feeling it, rubbing it, exerting pressure upon it; he orders his member about like a sergeant drilling his soldiers: it must lie down, stand at attention, be disciplined. And then there is the other boy whose penis is the focus of his entire attention; his hand is only its servant, ordered to caress and stroke it. This second type of boy might be inclined to passivity, while the first might be manually active on his partner's body.

Eglinton (1964, 141) observed another difference between boys enjoying manual stimulation. In healthy subjects, he says, "there is excitement in the pelvic region with a definite urge to make thrusts forward. (...) Rigidity in the abdomen is unhealthy and usually a sign of fear of one's sensations. Holding the pelvis rigid rather than allowing it to make its forward thrusts is automatic evidence of disturbance, inappropriate inhibition, even sickness. The too common pattern of adolescent or adult males' masturbating by holding their breath, holding pelvis and abdomen rigid, and rapidly manipulating their genitals to orgasm is *completely undesirable* for the same reason. (...) In health, on the other hand, the excitement manifests itself by free, spontaneous, copulatory pelvic thrusts — against the hand or pillow or toy animal or partner — and each thrust brings a surge of pleasure and further excitement and a desire to continue with further thrusts. Usually the rhythm is such that one exhales with each thrust."

To me it seems much more probable that this difference is quite unrelated to health or sickness; rather it corresponds to an active or passive attitude. Masters & Johnson (1966, 294-299) observed in their laboratory a general difference in the abdomen's reactions between males in intercourse and males in masturbation. The pelvic thrusts necessary for intercourse could be substituted in masturbation by the semispastic contractile reactions of the abdominal musculature, apparent in drawing in of the belly.

Since every boy has his own favourite masturbatory techniques, with its special tempos, pressures, ways of holding the penis, it is best first to ask him for a short demonstration of how he himself does it in order to provide maximum excitement and pleasure. Some boys "are more easily excited by slow, firm strokes; others like them light and quick." (Haeberle 1978, 262). Many stress "the importance of having their testicles caressed and touched." (Hite 1981, 561). A strong response will be provoked in most boys by gently fingering their anuses.

- 500 A rather sophisticated system was described by Gene, the boy in Example 499: He "would lie down and I would sit next to him with one leg under his and the other over. That brought our penises exactly together so that one or the other of us could use his hands. It was awfully nice. We had an emission at the same time." (Henry 1948, 253)

Other couples, however, prefer to avoid a simultaneous orgasm and take turns.

- 501 "Explained a 15-year-old who practiced this method: 'You can do it more often that way.' First, he said, he would masturbate the other boy. 'By the time he's got his rocks off, I'm ready to go. And by the time he finishes me, he's in the mood again. We went off seven times each one day before we quit.' " (Dort 1968, 26)

Of the 155 boys aged 13-17 examined by Dort, 84 had had experience with mutual masturbation: 8 had done it just once, 48 did it occasionally and 28 often (Dort 1968, 36).

In many cases, however, manual stimulation, continued until a single orgasm is obtained by one or both partners, is enough to satisfy them completely. In their excellent instruction book for adolescents, Tuohy & Murphy (1976, 219) recommend that girls, when stroking a boy's penis, use a prolonging technique. "As soon as he has a really stiff cock she holds the cock between her thumb and two fingers with the thumb on the underside of the cock just where the shaft of it ends and the head begins. The two fingers go opposite — one on each side of the ridge separating the shaft from the head. She squeezes with a fairly hard pressure for three or four seconds. You'll find the guy will lose his urge to come and his cock may soften. After 15-30 seconds the girl starts touching him again until he has a hard erection, and then squeezes." The same can be done by male partners, and gradually a nearly unbearable tension can be built up, the boy finally begging his partner to allow him to climax. Many a man and boy, while masturbating together or mutually, find a special pleasure in ejaculating sperm upon the naked body of their partners.

Masturbation, of course, is often used only as fore-play to more advanced techniques. In this day of AIDS, however, it has the very special and important advantage of being a completely safe sex practice.

Interfemoral (Between the Thighs) Intercourse and Similar Techniques

In Greek Antiquity, most men sought sexual satisfaction with both sexes, and often by preference with boys. They likened the latter to heterosexual intercourse, and thus preferred interfemoral and anal techniques. The boy's sensations were of lesser importance. The partners were thus unequal: it was the man's role to enjoy himself, and the boy's to serve the man's lust with his body. "Acceptance of the teacher's thrusting penis between the thighs or in his anus is the fee which the pupil pays for good teaching, or, alternatively, a gift from a younger person to an older person whom he has come to love and admire." (Dover 1978, 91) In Greek vase painting, intercourse between the boy's thighs is depicted over and over again (Koch Harnack 1983, 79), and it is mostly shown standing up.

Perhaps it is this resemblance to heterosexual coitus, the extensive areas of the body where strong skin contact can be maintained, as well as the possibility of looking at and kissing the partner's face, which accounts for the popularity of this practice among men and boys. In Carpentier's investigation, 55% of his subjects (N = 69) mentioned interfemoral intercourse as a practice they liked, 6% exclusively in the inserter position, 1.5% only as insertee. When Abu Nowas, the Arab poet, was told — wrongly! — that the Christian religion allowed boys to be used in this manner, and that Christians considered "the thighs a refuge for the member when it becomes aroused night or day", he declared himself ready to be converted to their beliefs (Wagner 1965, 202). In English public schools the practice is so common that it has come to be known as "the English boarding school method". Other common terms are *leggings* ("reaching ejaculation by rubbing the cock between willing oiled or sweaty thighs"), *rubblings*, *slick leggings*, *thighs*, and *thigh sandwich*. (Bianchi 1983, 119)

Thomas Arnold, headmaster of Rugby School, invented the prefect system, where the older boys ("seniors") supervised the behaviour of the younger ("juniors"). "Fagging", which already existed, became part of the system. A "fag" was a small boy whose duty it was to serve regularly one particular senior: shine his shoes, run errands for him, etc. — and very frequently be at the older boy's sexual disposition. It is hardly coincidental that "fag" became a slang term for homophile. C. S. Lewis, a conservative Anglo-Catholic priest, wrote, remembering his years at school, that there were boys known as "house tarts". A tart was "a pretty and effeminate-looking small boy who acts as a catamite to one or more of his seniors." In this respect the otherwise severe seniors tended to be indulgent. "They did not impose chastity on the middle-class boy in addition to all his other disabilities. Pederasty among the lower classes (i.e. lower grades in school) was not 'side', or at least not serious side;

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

The Various Practices: Hand and Body Techniques

not like putting one's hands in one's pockets or wearing one's coat unbuttoned." (Bullough 1979, 106-107)

Sexual contact with these younger boys was nearly never obtained by force; for the most part it was freely performed and inspired with tenderness, affection and admiration. The fag was treated like a favourite mistress. The senior laid himself down upon the junior, his penis between the thighs of the boy or pressed between their lower abdomens.

502 Havelock Ellis (1913, III 307-308) tells the story of a 35-year-old British officer who had been sent to a small private school when he was eleven. "I was initiated at school, and used to handle the penis of the boy who told me. (...) I became conscious of pleasurable sensations when lying on my stomach with an erection, and used occasionally to gratify myself that way, caring little for the school tradition that it was 'wicked' and bad for one. On one occasion, when talking at night with another boy, we compared our organs, both in erection, and I then for the first time thought of trying what I had heard vaguely mentioned, viz. two boys playing at man and woman. I lay on him with my penis on his stomach and almost at once had an orgasm with emission, and experienced acute pleasure. I was thirteen when this happened. I did it once more with him before I left, this time the other way up, so as to spare him the unpleasantness." In his new school, many things happened more or less publicly. "I have myself openly got into bed with or masturbated other boys, and on more than one occasion have helped forcibly to masturbate small boys or to hold them while others had connection with them, the idea of the last two acts being that the boy would thereby be seduced and become available for, and willing to perform, homosexuality. Before I became big enough to have boys myself I masturbated frequently (on one occasion three times in the day), and invariably by lying on my stomach without the use of the hands. In having connection with other boys I used to do it between the thighs or on the stomach, and I never heard of any other way at that school. Paedication would disgust me, and, moreover, would deprive me of the principal pleasure of intercourse, viz., the feeling of lying face to face and stomach to stomach. Of course, the satisfaction used to be mutual, but, though good-looking, I was never the passive party only, like some small boys who might be called professionals and whom I used to pay for their services."

The emission of semen upon the other's body, which this boy tried to spare his partner, seems to be quite disgusting to some boys.

503 (Continued from 479) Onno, on the contrary, accepted it as a beautiful gift, as a veneration of his body, when the man sharing his bed sprinkled him with "his noblest body-fluid".

504 Quite another sentiment was voiced by Tony. Tony came from a neighbourhood in Baltimore where 50% to 70% of the teenage boys used to sleep with men, 50% to 70% of the men used to sleep with boys, and all of this had been going on already for a good hundred years. "The boys have sex with girls, too, and eventually they get married, raise families, and start having sex with boys themselves." (Rose 1978, 20)

"The first time for Tony was with a 40-year-old man who invited him in for some lemonade, then suggested they go to the bedroom. There he pulled down Tony's pants, pushed him back on the bed, crawled in on top of him, and squirmed a few times. Then he pulled his pants up quick and said, 'You better get out.' 'I hate that guy,' Tony says now. 'I really hate him. I mean, why didn't he get a towel and wipe me up? You know?'" (Rose 1978, 20)

505 (Continued from 493) Clarence Osborne, the Australian with 2,500 young partners, showed much more concern for them. "Osborne went to extraordinary lengths to make sure that his boys attained the maximum amount of sexual enjoyment and would stimulate his partners for hours in order to make them satisfied. (...) One of the most common ways he used to relate physically to his partners was by engaging them in whole body contact techniques. This would take a variety of different forms. At its simplest, it would involve wrestling or romping with a boy and embracing him in the process. In these situations he would rub his genitals against the boy's body or alternatively make sure that the boy's genitals were rubbed against his own body. A quieter version of this full body technique was simply to lie with the boy and caress him and to have, in many cases, these caresses reciprocated. During these embraces mutual masturbation and 'tonguing' would often occur, increasing the sexual excitement that both persons felt. Although Osborne rarely engaged in anal intercourse, he often initiated a variation of this technique. Commonly referred to as the 'English method', this variation obtained its name from its occurrence among boys in British public boarding schools. (...) Typically he would suggest to the boy that the boy lie on his back and hold his thighs tightly together. Then Osborne would lie on top of the youth and with a lubricated penis would insert it between the boy's legs just below his crotch. He would thrust his penis in and out of the boy's legs emulating sexual intercourse. Often too, Osborne would suggest that the boy lie on his stomach and would thrust between the boy's buttocks without entering his anus. He records that boys would often ask to be stimulated by this form of interfemoral intercourse and would obtain great delight from it." (Wilson 1981, 42)

506 "At fourteen I was a bellboy on a transatlantic liner and (...) an oiler crept in bed with me and wanted to brown me. I allowed him to put it in between my legs. It gave me a terrific thrill and I had my first orgasm. The collapse following the orgasm was complete. I was so terrified that I leapt out of bed and fled. The man was surprised and tried to call me back. After that affair I started masturbating and ever since there has been no more delightful experience than to fantasy the oiler while masturbating." (Henry 1948, 194)

André Gide said he never used any other technique (Buffière 1980, 21) and Rolfe (Baron Corvo) philosophised about it in his *Venice Letters*:

507 (Continued from 240) He writes to his friends: "You both preferred the small, the 14 — while my preference was for the 16, 17, 18 and large. I have been trying to understand your preference, to find a reason for it, and I totally fail. This is why. *There is not enough of a little person for me to enjoy all of it.* It lies naked on its back. I stretch myself on its belly, my yard in the softness of its thighs. I clip it with my legs

and arms: it hugs my body: and we begin to wrestle. But where is its face? Where are the sparkling eyes, in whose depths I may see the ripple of pleasure? Where are the hot sweet lips which I may devour with mine? Buried under my breast and half suffocated. And I cannot thus enjoy the long long joys of contact, the delicious rests in struggling, the kisses and the vigorous renewals. But a big and lusty long body, like Gildo's or Amadeo's or Piero's, gives me all I want. The long muscular legs strain my thighs widely to clutch them. My yard thrusts through the cleft of their big thighs, my belly feels the heat and throbbing of their raging yard; and my body stretches to its uttermost, clutching their writhing muscles in my arms, to reach their rosy mouths, to breath their burning soft sweet breath, to kiss wildly in the fight, to laugh and kiss their brilliant sparkling eyes and every inch of them within my reach, and to sink panting on their great white shoulders or to bite their gorgeous throats, breast to breast and heart to heart. Do you see? A soft little body is all very well to lie in one's arms all night: but it cannot give me furious joys. I want one long enough to be face to face with me while I thrust through its thighs, and strong enough to struggle and to give as much joy as I take." (Rolfé 1974, 46)

Of all practices advancing beyond mutual masturbation, this is probably the easiest for beginners.

- 508 "As I undress him, he undresses me. As I touch him, he touches me. Naked at last, I tightly hugging, we move together in that slow & ancient dance all other dances merely echo, fucking standing up. I tickle his buttocks — he didn't know they were ticklish — and he thrusts against me with sudden vigor, unbalancing us. We fall upon my handy bed and fuck forever, face to face, cock to cock between our bellies rubbing, dry at first but ever more & more lubricated by glad sweat. This is what I'd planned, it being, of all homosexual devices, the one least extraneously upsetting for beginners. We breathe heavily, panting parts of words & grunting, ohing & ahing gloriously, our hands all over each other finding centers of sensation, while the sensations in our cocks (mine, anyway, and from the evidence, his) mount ever in electrical intensity until explosively we come, spurting hot goo across our sweat-slimed stomachs — the spunky, almost Clorox smell of semen set at liberty — and fuck beyond that to exhaustion & lie still." (Valentine 1979, 64)

In this position the accent may be put on rubbing the genitals together.

- 509 Hephaestion, Alexander the Great's lifelong friend, remembers in Peyrefitte's novel how as a 13-year-old he fell in love with him: "Love... what did it mean? I knew nothing about it, and neither did he. When we were troubled by our first emissions of semen during the night, the grave Leonidas explained that this was a trick of a very secretive and crafty god called Gamus, born of a dream Eros caused Zeus to have and during which the Olympian ruler had wet the soil with his seed. Later each of us for himself discovered how we could produce with our hands the same effect, but we never thought of doing it together." One night Hephaestion dares enter the room where Alexander is asleep. "I crept into his bed. I felt his breathing below me. I looked only at his face, although he had pushed aside his sheet: he was as naked as I. Suddenly my eyes dilated: at the centre of his body, Priapus was erect — and it was immediately

the same with me. My hand went to Alexander, ready to greet him, respectfully, imploring his aid, when he opened his eyes. He started, frightened, then recognised me and smiled. I don't know whether he was smiling at me or at the god who was playing with our nerves. I fell into his arms, weeping, covering him with my kisses, and, despite his surprise, he didn't object. Instinctively we pressed our bodies together. Priapus struggled with Priapus; his double victory came quickly. We didn't speak a word." (Peyrefitte 1977, 99-101)

Sexual Activity with the Mouth

The mouth is a most sensitive, wet orifice in the human body, where mucus membrane meets the outer skin; it is also so mobile, with lips, tongue and jaws, that it can participate very actively in sex with others, especially in contact with their genitals. It is thus used a great deal, both in heterosexual and homosexual love-making. In heterosexuality, the Gonado investigation revealed that 80% of its male subjects licked their partner's genitals, and a similar 80% had their genitals licked and sucked by their partners (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 45). It was in two areas especially that the "sexual revolution" of the sixties and seventies brought modern people back closer to nature by liberating them from taboos: total nudity and the use of the mouth in sexual relations. The better educated led the way (Blake 1970, 18). From Kinsey's research (1948) to Hurt's (1972), the percentage of males using their mouths in sexual relations among the academic professions rose from 43% to 61%, and among those with a secondary education only, from 15% to 54% (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 46). Redhardt (1968, 45-47) found this trend well established in male hustlers: the higher their education level, the more daring their techniques, especially oral techniques.

Contemporary youths may start early using their mouths. Among Hass's American teenagers, 8% of the 13-year-old boys had had their penises sucked by girls, and 11% had licked a girl's vulva. With the 15-year-olds these percentages had increased to 35% and 53% (Hass 1979, 56).

Although this technique is not specifically homosexual, it is often held to be so. There was once a local fad in America for homophiles to wear red neckties in order to recognise each other, and when a group of street-boys saw a red necktie "they sucked their fingers in imitation of fellatio." (Bullough 1976, 610). Rossman (1976, 153) mentions an unpublished European study according to which "a majority of normal heterosexual adolescent boys found great pleasure in being fellated, and were highly aroused watching the act."

- 510 Nancy Friday (1981, 66 & 88) reports instances in which married heterosexually active men fantasied about performing fellatio. Penrod: "I recognize that I would enjoy sucking a cock. (...) I may have to wait some time before the circumstances are conducive for acting out this fantasy." Donald: "I sometimes wonder what a cock

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

would feel like in my mouth — and how exciting it would be to have it suddenly explode and my mouth fill with come. (...) I did suck cock as a kid of twelve or fourteen, and as I recall I enjoyed it then, though I never sucked until my partner came. Perhaps if Ann and I become involved in a four-way I will try it."

Once having the experience of being sucked, many boys are ready to return the favour.

Historically, during Christian times, the practice has always been considered rather drastic. An Irish penitential of the 7th Century contains a special section entitled "de ludis puerilibus" (the playing of boys); it sanctions mutual masturbation with 20 to 40 days of penitence, intercourse between the thighs with 100 days, but sucking with four years (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 211; Bullough 1976, 360). The Archbishop of Canterbury at that time calls receiving semen in one's mouth the "worst of evils" (Bullough 1976, 361), suggesting that the practice was a rather appealing one. The ancient Greeks felt quite differently about it, ascribing the invention and teaching of penis sucking (along with time-measurement, numbers, the alphabet, animal husbandry, navigation, medicine and metallurgy) to Prometheus, benefactor of mankind (Peyrefitte 1981, 105). In the Crow American Indian tribe there were men dressed as women who specialised in relieving the sexual tensions in adolescent boys by sucking them off (Ford & Beach 1968, 142).

There are many variations in the way it is performed; not everyone likes all of them. A "Gay Liberation" study group discussed it deeply and a number of writers wrote pages about it. The possibilities are legion. The penis might only be licked. It might be taken in the mouth just part way so as to allow the tongue a lot of freedom of motion (often a circular motion around the glans), or deeply into the throat so it might even choke the fellator. By pressing on the fellator's head, the insertor can signal that he wants to penetrate deeper. If the fellator gags while performing the act he "may simply not have discovered that a deep breath is required at the start." A deep breath "raises the uvula in the throat, thereby neurologically blocking the gag-response." (Tripp 1975, 99)

The foreskin may be pushed back with the lips and sucked forward again or retained by a hand about the penis shaft. The scrotum, too, may be tickled, and first one, then the other testicle taken into the mouth. Strong contact of the teeth upon the stretched skin of the penis can hurt, but light nibbling on the shaft may, without being the least sadistic, increase excitement. Sucking, too, can alternate between soft and gentle, then strong "like a milking machine." "If you do this, your partner will realise that you really like him," a member of the study group said. And another added, "I observe the reactions of my partner in order to make it as nice as possible for him. If he reacts strongly to some special touch, I go with it. Everybody responds in a different way." (Revolt 1973 - 1)

The Various Practices: Oral Techniques

While performing oral sex, the fellator's hand can simultaneously caress the belly and thighs of his partner, play with the scrotum, touch the perineal area behind the scrotum and finger the anus.

Oral techniques require practice and skill. An inexperienced boy may at first be surprised or even shocked when it happens, because he may have always thought of the penis as a "dirty" organ used for voiding the bladder: how could one want to take it into his mouth? Soon, however, if he is the insertor, the delightful sensations in his penis are likely to dissipate many of his reservations, although reciprocation may never have much appeal to him. Some boys staunchly refuse ever to do it back.

More than one boy has expressed a fear that his partner may urinate in his mouth, but this is nearly impossible. With erection, the ureter between bladder and prostate is pinched off by a knob which, normally small, swells to fill the lumen of the ureter, blocking the passage of urine. For older boys, sucking may seem less natural than for younger boys, who are less disturbed by "dirt" and are closer in time to the infancy phase in their lives when they were busily exploring every object with their mouths.

511 I was once sent a letter a man had received from a friend who had an eleven-year-old boy-friend. Sex had consisted only of the man masturbating the boy, and even after several weeks of close intimacy the boy told him, "I'll never let you suck me, so don't ask!" (...) "One day we were riding in the car and he said, 'My dick is hard.' (...) I got him to take it out for me to stroke as we'd done so often before. Suddenly he said, 'I wish we could stop this baby shit.' I asked what he meant and he said, 'This, with the hand, he needs sucked.' (sic) Well, we went home and he got sucked. Almost daily he got sucked. One day I returned home from work and he was at my mailbox doing a little dance as though he were about to wet his pants. He said, 'Where have you been?' I was about 5 minutes later than usual. I asked why and he said, 'I've been thinking about it, he's been hard all day in school; I need it bad, hurry up!'" (Personal communication)

512 In the archives of the Brongersma Foundation there is a series of pictures taken by a man while he was being sucked off by eight- and thirteen-year-old (American and Philippine) boys. Every single photo shows the man's member as well as the face of the boy who is working on it: licking it, taking it into his mouth or watching how it ejaculates semen. Without exception, all the boys' faces are most serious; none shows the slightest disgust; rather there is an expression almost of veneration. For one of the boys it was his first experience of the kind.

In heterosexual love-making, it is well recognised that sucking and licking may be equally pleasurable to both partners (Borneman 1978, 175). A doctor at a Vienna school questioned 28 girls between 12 and 16 years of age, and 17 of them said they liked to perform fellatio on their boy-friends (Unpublished statistics in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation, SE 131).

From the male side, Hite (1981, 548-549) found that "most men who had tried performing fellatio were extremely enthusiastic about it", and she quoted one subject saying, "I like giving head. It makes me feel as if I'm part of him." And another: "Physically it feels great to have a hard throbbing cock in my mouth. (...) Someone's sexual essence in my mouth is like having the person's entire beauty in my mouth — very intimate — unexplainably beautiful." And another: "I enjoy it very much. I like it because I love cock, especially that of the person I love. I love the feel of it — the look, of it, the smell of it. I love it because it is part of the person I love." Still another: "It is the ultimate in mental and spiritual communication of one's feelings and caring." Finally: "I like the feeling of his dick sliding down my throat, and the jerking movement a man's dick makes when he comes in my throat."

- 513 A 30-year-old American father of two, recalling his own childhood, said that when he was nine he was in the house of a young man of about twenty, a friend of his brother. The man invited him into his bedroom, where he showed the boy an erection and suggested, "Why don't you put it into your mouth?" He complied with the request and found it an interesting experience. It didn't excite him sexually, but it did please him (Rush 1980, 248).

A man says about his 12-year-old boy-friend, "He likes very much to be caressed or sucked. I don't think it's so important that he's not active. For me maybe the most important thing is that he likes what I'm doing to him. I can have a climax just by sucking him. I'm excited because he likes it so much." (Möller 1983, 56)

This coincides with what a member of the Gay Liberation group said: "My pleasure is as intense when I'm sucking as when I'm sucked. If sucking, I want to get the whole penis in my mouth, as deeply, anyhow, as I can stand it." (Revolt 1973-1)

Just as with masturbation, it is possible for both partners to perform the act on each other simultaneously, as in the well-known "69" position.

- 514 One of Hite's subjects said he had his first intercourse in a brothel when he was fourteen. The sex was so enthralling that thereafter he couldn't ever get enough of it. He left school, got a job and spent all the money in the brothel. One of the girls taught him "69", and this became his favourite practice. He was able to perform it in many different ways, and did it every chance he got (1982, 318).

Another member of the Gay Liberation group said, "Sixty-nine is my favourite position. It is a mutual experience, for both do the same to each other. It is wonderful when his thighs enclose my face and I feel like I'm part of him. But it is difficult that way to climax at the same time." One of his colleagues, however, said, "I don't like 69 especially. It is very hard to have

an orgasm that way." (Revolt 1973-1) In the Carpentier investigation (N = 69), 78% of the adult boy-lovers said they liked fellatio, but 10% said they liked only to do the sucking, and 3% only to be sucked.

Tripp (1975, 98) points out that in the 69-position the partner's tongue can only play upon the least sensitive side of the penis, and, moreover, that the situation itself tends to be distracting. "To both give and receive the same kind of stimulation at the same time is confusing, much like having to enjoy receiving a back-rub while giving one." The problem is not unlike that of the simultaneous orgasm. It may, in fantasy, seem like an ideal achievement. "But in practice it is so disappointing that experienced partners, especially if they are well matched, try to avoid it." The enjoyment of your partner's orgasm is one of the noblest and most precious experiences in sex (Borneman 1978, 965). In order to obtain your own, however, you have to concentrate on your own feelings: this is a solo endeavour (Slob 1983, II A 4, 8) and makes it next to impossible to pay attention to your partner's sensations. "Since a person's awareness of everything external is at a minimum during his own climax, simultaneous orgasm blinds both partners to each other at precisely the wrong moment." (Tripp 1975, 98). It is better for partners to have their orgasms separately.

While licking or sucking a penis is considered by experts to involve little risk of AIDS transmission, they advise avoiding emission of sperm in the mouth. Sperm is one carrier of the fatal virus, and there are often tiny abrasions (from a bitten lip, a recent use of dental floss) in the mouth, and here sperm might meet blood and infect it (Buro GVO 1986).

But even if fellatio carried through ejaculation should be avoided unless one is certain there is no chance of infection, that is no reason to avoid discussing it here, for our study must concern itself with how boys think about boy/man and boy/boy sex, and investigation reveals that many boys will of their own free will and quite spontaneously suck their partners' penises without being pressed to do so.

Even before the AIDS epidemic, some individuals would only suck a penis if their partners promised to withdraw before ejaculation. For others, however, taking sperm in the mouth, tasting it, swallowing it, is a very important pleasure, and it can be profoundly satisfying for the insertor, too, to feel his seed being drunk.

Haeberle (1978, 205 & 241) wrote: "Many women enjoy having the man ejaculate into their mouths and, in fact, love the taste of warm semen", adding the same about men. Masters & Johnson (1980, 90), however, noted a difference: most men performing homosexual fellatio swallowed the ejaculate, while most women, steady as well as casual partners, didn't.

It isn't at all unusual for boys to lick their own semen off their fingers after masturbating. Pilgrim (1985, 234) actually recommends that boys do this; it is

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

certainly one way a boy can get used to receiving sperm in his mouth and come to enjoy it.

One of the members of the Gay Liberation group said, "At first I never wanted to have the semen in my mouth. I didn't want to taste it. But one partner persuaded me. I had a sore throat and he said, 'Swallow the sperm; it's good for your throat.' He was right!" (*Revolt* 1973-1)

515 One of Friday's subjects had the following fantasy: "I think of how beautiful it would be if there were one hundred naked boys between the ages of thirteen and fifteen standing in a line with big wonderful hard-ons. I would be on my knees on a soft-cushioned conveyer belt, stopping before each lovely hard-on and then proceed to suck the heavenly come out of each cock. I would even suck and swallow the remaining drops of come juice that were still in the shaft of each cock after it had shot its wad." (Friday 1981, 412)

516 Another of Friday's subjects (1981, 117-118), a married lawyer, told how, as a boy of eleven, a thirty-year-old man invited him to share his changing cubicle at the local swimming pool. "As soon as I was naked, he began to fondle my cock and balls. I was frightened and submitted without protest. Then he had me lie down on a small bench while he sucked me to an immature climax. When he was finished, he removed his swimming suit and stood in front of me, legs slightly apart (I was now sitting on the bench). Taking hold of my hand, he directed it to his cock and had me 'feel' him until he became stiff. Then he made me suck him until he shot his load into my mouth. When he came, he held my head to prevent my pulling away, and I was forced to swallow most of his cum. I kept this incident to myself, but took it in stride. In fact, over the years I have fantasized about it while masturbating, and have enjoyed it in retrospect."

517 Another eleven-year-old didn't go quite this far — and later regretted he hadn't: "In our teens, I couldn't bring myself to swallow his come, but now in my fantasy (and probably in reality too, if given the chance) I swallow gallons of it as it squirts into my mouth." The 48-year-old man who wrote this was married and the father of two boys (Friday 1981, 123-125).

518 A 55-year-old Dutch musician said the following about his boy-friend: "When Ben is in the mood he is insatiable: he can keep on doing it all afternoon. He takes the greatest delight in sucking; he does it without any urging on my part. Recently especially, he insists on me ejaculating in his mouth, and then he drinks it. He doesn't himself get any sperm yet; he is only thirteen." (Pieterse 1982, II - 93)

Delighting in puns, American boy-love erotic fiction writer Casimir Dukahz (1984, 157) says of a youngster that he is likely to succeed, but spells it "suck-seed"!

It can make quite a difference to the insertor whether or not his partner swallows his semen — and, if so, how. Some receive the ejaculation but

The Various Practices: Oral Techniques

expectorate it immediately thereafter. The same man from Gay Liberation quoted above said, "I like it most when my partner swallows my semen, but if he doesn't want to, he can take my cock out of his mouth: that's not so important. But it feels wonderful to come in his mouth, and the pleasure is twice as nice if he keeps my cock in his mouth for a while afterwards." (*Revolt*, 1973-1) When the partners love one another, it is an expression of the most profound intimacy to swallow the other's semen, to drain the conduit through which it was ejaculated by sucking, to press the last drops out of it and lick them up. To him who receives, this can symbolise their complete unity.

519 A 16-year-old French youth said, "Sucking is the best way to participate in the pleasure you give. When you do it, you have the keenest appreciation of the spasms, the trembling and the wave of lust you arouse." (De Brethmas 1979, 40)

Hass (1979, 59) quotes an American girl: "I love giving head and not only because it makes him happy, but because it turns me on. I like the feeling of his hardness in my mouth and I like drinking his come. What's better than that is hearing him groan and feeling his body tense as he starts to come."

There have always been men and boys, as well as girls, with an extraordinary passion for drinking semen. The famous Egyptian queen Cleopatra is said to have started doing that when she was nine years old; she publicly boasted that she had sucked off over one thousand males, and during the course of one banquet she performed the act on one hundred Roman officers (Bronslau 1968, 116; Foral 1981, 68).

520 A fifteen-year-old French girl reported, "He took my hand and placed it upon his member. I had never touched an erect penis. At the same time he taught me how to rub it. Then he took hold of my neck and pushed my head down, not violently but forcefully. He said I should do this to him because he loved me and he didn't want to abuse me since I was too young for coitus. As soon as I began to suck his penis he started to tremble and pant heavily. And right away I liked what I was doing, because I could feel how much lustful pleasure I was giving him, making him lose his senses, and giving me a kind of dominance over him. When he came in my mouth I was a bit surprised, found it slightly disgusting, but he told me to keep on, and I swallowed his sperm. Since then, over the last six months, I've done it to him frequently. He has never pressured me for anything else. Gradually I've come to like it more and more, and often it is I who takes the initiative." (Hanry 1977, 172)

A McDonald tale which has a ring of truth and is said to be told by an elderly American: "I was 12 when I came to San Francisco, having run away from my home in a small town in Oregon. (...) I first got into prostitution when I became acquainted with other runaways and boys of the streets. (...) The approach was almost always made by the customer. A guy would ask a passing boy for a shoeshine. If he wanted more than a shine, we would go into an alley and he would take his cock out of his pants. Kneeling down, pretending to shine his shoes, we could suck quite easily and if anyone approached, we stopped sucking and started shining. (...) At first I would

spit out the load but later I learned to like the taste and would swallow it. I only spit it out if the guy didn't appeal to me. (...) I was a shoeshine boy until I was 16. You were considered a man at that age. Also, I was too old for the trade; the men really liked the younger boys better. But I never gave up cocksucking and I got a lot of cock." (McDonald 1981, 107-108)

About Vietnamese boy whores, a French medical officer reported that they sucked with a passion and swallowed the sperm down to the last drop (Sutor 1964, 62).

- 521 Graffito from a Parisian toilet illustrates a similar sentiment: "I'm 15. I like sucking my big brother. He's 28. I'm pumping him with my whole mouth. I swallow his cum. It's wonderful when he spurts it all into my mouth." And elsewhere: "I'm 15. I like to suck. It feels great." (Ernest 1979, 223)

In this connection, it is most interesting to note what ethnologists have observed about those New Guinea tribes where boys throughout the first phase of their initiation (roughly from their 7th to their 15th years) are obliged daily to swallow the semen of older youths (15 to 25 years) because it is believed they would not grow up into big, strong men unless they do. The boys manipulate and rub the penis of their inseminator to make it stiff, then suck it. The act "normally takes place at riversides under the guise of having a bath." The man stands over his fellator, who kneels. At first the little boys object and feel disgusted, but "some older boy-fellators do experience vicarious erotic pleasure from homosexual fellatio, as indicated by their reports (near puberty) of their own erections while fellating a bachelor, or by certain feelings or body sensations during fellation." "Men also know that boys joke about fellatio among themselves and that initiates favor some bachelors over others in regard to the amount and taste of their semen." "Among boys, a fellated's penis size is not accorded much importance, whereas his seminal fluid, amount of flow, etc., is." "Bachelors likewise favor certain boys over others: those who are more attractive to them are either more or less sexually aggressive and/or willing to perform fellatio." (Herdt 1984, 188-89, 210; Sörum 1984, 323)

If the partners have a strong bond with one another, the swallowing of semen may be experienced as an act of deep unification. Thus a 32-year-old Frenchman said, "I love taking his seed deep in my throat. I adore it, because it gives me the feeling I'm loving the boy's entire body." (Dieckmann & Pescatore 1980, 30)

We have had occasion to quote several times from the fine New Zealand book of sexual instruction for adolescents written by Tuohy & Murphy. In these matters it simply advises, "If he comes into your mouth, don't move. Feel how his cock throbs in spasms emptying out. Swallow the come "there's only a

teaspoonful though it feels sometimes like you're drowning. Enjoy and participate together." (1976, 226)

The same book quotes a girl: "After I'd had a guy come in my mouth a few times I managed to identify the taste. It reminded me of salami. Since then I've found quite a variation; some hardly taste at all."

Humphreys (1970, 74) observed anonymous sex in lavatories. Usually it was the older partner who sucked the younger. "Some insertees retain the seminal fluid and swallow it: others clear their throats and spit it out. In one fifth of the encounters observed, I noted that the insertee spit following the ejaculation of his partner. One respondent claimed that he only spits it out 'when it tastes bad'. 'The variety of tastes is unbelievable! You can almost tell what a person's diet is by what it tastes like. A person with a good, well-balanced ordinary diet, the fluid has a very mild, tangy, salty flavor. A person who has been drinking heavily — even if they aren't drunk or suffering from a hang-over, if they drink a lot — the stuff tastes like alcohol. And I mean pure, rot-gut alcohol, the vilest taste in the world!'"

Questioned by Hite, some men said about the taste of sperm, "I don't hesitate to swallow the semen, since it has a taste of the sea." "I don't like the bitter taste of some semen." "I enjoy the taste." "I did once get and swallow a mouthful that was more bitter than any other I had had but I swallowed it anyway." "Sometimes it is quite bitter." "It doesn't always taste the greatest, it depends on the man and whether he has good hygiene. But some cum tastes great. I highly recommend it." "As to liking it, yes and no. It depends on the person's bodily chemistry. There is a chemical in the fluid that makes it peppery tasting and sometimes it can be strong and sort of burn your throat. Other people have rather sweet-tasting fluid. It varies." (Hite 1981, 550)

- 522 (Continued from 133) "In his 14th and 15th years, Marcel liked to swallow my sperm. To me that was a very exciting sight: this fresh, handsome boy's face, with his lips stretched wide around my cock and his cheeks moving with his avid sucking. After I'd come he would lick it clean, very carefully. And he would tell me, 'Yesterday you had some wine: I can taste it.' He was always right when he said that. What I like best is for the boy *not* to swallow the sperm but keep it in his mouth, then lie down on me and press his lips against mine in a deep kiss, so we are then both filled with the pungent, spicy taste of semen." (Personal communication)

Certainly oral sex is one of the most exciting and stimulating techniques.

- 523 One night Peter Schult was walking near the zoo railway station in Berlin "when this little fellow of 13 or 14 smiled at me and more or less offered me his company. We roamed around some cafés and then disappeared into the Tiergarten, where I wanted to be jerked off, as usual. To my surprise, the boy knelt down, took my cock into his mouth, started playing with his tongue delicately on the glans, simultaneously moving

his head back and forth, making my cock dance between his lips. Sensations awakened in me I had never known before. This was entirely new — and at the same time so utterly delightful as to send continuous shudders of pleasure up and down my spine. After a few minutes I sensed a great fountain welling up down there, still dammed but ready to burst out. I urged the boy's head slightly back and whispered, 'Look out — it's coming!', but he broke off what he was doing for only a second or two and whispered, 'Let it go — I like to swallow it!', and instantly he made my cock disappear deep into his mouth. I could feel my sperm surge up in several jets, felt a tickling in my spinal cord, shivers of lust race through my body which was vibrating in ecstasy. Then I felt his lips pressing around my glans and sucking from it the last drop, while at the same time every nerve of my cock signalled its entire satisfaction. I nearly passed out leaning against that tree, and for several minutes I was incapable of speaking a single word or thinking clearly. I caressed the boy mechanically, knowing I had never before in my whole life enjoyed greater sexual satisfaction, and I doubted whether I would again. I think ever since I've been looking for a similar climax of sexual ecstasy, but I've never found it." (Schult 1978, 70-71)

Certainly many men would agree with an American who said, "Fellatio is the high point in every man's sexual experience, surpassed only by fellatio to orgasm!" (Hite 1981, 538) According to Hite's statistics, reproduced in the Dutch edition (1981, 869-870), only 5% to 7% didn't like it, and only 1% to 5% had never tried it. Even among heterosexually inclined men, 18% to 23% wanted to try it with another male, and 19% to 21% had actually done so. The idea is fascinating to many. As for boys, Wilson, discussing why so many felt attracted to men like Osborne, wrote in a previously quoted passage that they greatly enjoy being fellated.

524 Some of Hass's subjects said:

17-year-old boy: The feeling was terrific. I was surprised that the "kiss" (what a polite way to term it) was such a sensational thing.

17-year-old boy: It just totally turns me on.

16-year-old boy: The first time it happened it was a huge turn-on. I felt kind of awed that there were so many ways to get pleasure from sex.

17-year-old boy: Very good. Surperior! I felt the girl truly did love me. Especially when she swallowed the sperm.

(Hass 1979, 60-61)

We have already quoted the first few lines of this excellent poem by "Antler" (NAMBLA Journal Six 1983, 21) while discussing nudity. It goes on to give an especially fine description of the effect of fellatio on a boy.

*Now silent, deep-breathing,
motionless,
Completely given, to the experience
of homosexual joy,*

*Completely lost in total abandon
to the swirling tongue,
to the sucking mouth
As the boyloving lover
performs his love
Feasting not only on the cock
and balls,
But the whole crotch,
Service divine,
delicately done,
Yet fierce with devotion,
with worship.*

*Yes, how many boys so boisterous
and punky before,
Are reduced to silent naked forms
gazing at the
passionate ravishing
blowjob mouth
with awe
Finding it hard to believe
anything could feel so good.
How many boyhoods distilled
into the unquestionable essence
of a whispered sigh,
The look of absolute ecstasy
on their face,
Tamed and made gentle again
by the blowjob mouth.*

To someone who is not used to it, the sucking role may at first seem somewhat humiliating or unmanly. It was viewed that way in the classical world of Greece and Rome (Borneman 1978, 948). Many boys are elated to have a big, powerful adult man down on his knees, or hovering over their loins, ministering to their young cocks. In any case, the sight of a man sucking on his cock is most exciting to a great number of boys. After becoming more experienced, most boys soon come to think of the practice as a fine expression of love or the desire to elicit delight. It becomes, with practice, more and more a normal way of making love, and inner resistance to the idea gradually fades away (Rossman 1976, 152-153). Perhaps one day the man's cock, during the course of their intimacies, comes close to the boy's head, and the boy

spontaneously takes it into his mouth. At first he is usually clumsy, but with practice and a little help from his partner, his zeal and dexterity grows.

Other boys take to the practice almost immediately. Perhaps they have already anticipated it in their fantasies. The oral erotic zone, moreover, seems to be more sexually excitable in boys than in girls, for whom the breast is more important (Kentler 1970, 185). Thus sucking and licking in itself is usually pleasurable to boys. It is hardly far-fetched to relate this pleasure to the pleasure they felt when as babies they suckled on their mothers' breasts (Abraham 1969, 30).

525 A 15-year-old boy said, after performing cunnilingus on his girl-friend, "It really made me feel good when she reached climax. I didn't expect it. I was so excited I came also."

Another 15-year-old: "When I was ten I fellated my best friend. I only did it once, but I really enjoyed it."
(Hass 1979, 58 & 142)

526 (Continued from 507) Rolfe passed a wild afternoon with his Venetian boy Piero. They mutually performed interfemoral intercourse. Rolfe wrote to a friend, "You can't think what a beautiful creature he really is, young, strong as a horse, slim and lithe and supple as a serpent, magnificently virile, with soft downy skin and firm hot flesh, sweet as a baby's. I asked him about sucking. No, he had never done nor had it; but gladly would he from me. Did one drink? Yes. Ah, what a beautiful diversion!" (Rolfe 1974, 52)

That the idea of fellatio isn't very far removed from a boy's thoughts can be seen by the large number of youngsters who, around the age of puberty, try to satisfy themselves in this manner (Beets 1964, 96; Borneman 1978, 116). No more than 0.2% actually succeed in performing auto-fellatio (Simons 1977, 91). Photos and films confirm the feasibility, and the sensations so produced have been described in detail by an anonymous American in a booklet called *Young Boys and Fellatio* (1974, no publisher given). His primary sensation was of sucking: this was his principal pleasure. His own penis was merely a substitute for the penis of an absent partner. The act was not easy to perform, and it was only after a lot of practice that he was able to do it at all: he would lock his arms around his upper thighs and thus draw his not very large penis toward his head until he could take it entirely in his mouth and was even able to caress his scrotum with his lips and tongue.

Bieber found that in a number of his subjects their preference was for sucking rather than being sucked. One boy "sought out virile-looking men, the type he wished to be like, for the purpose of performing fellatio upon them." Another described his feelings during the act as follows: "It's as if there were only one penis and he had it; when I sucked it, it was mine." (Bieber 1962, 210)

527 (Continued from 496) Guyotat goes on with his description of 15-year-old Pino's meeting with the general in an extended (and psychologically most interesting) passage. The general recalls a time when Pino was sitting before him and a frog jumped onto the boy's thigh. He had said, "Look. It obviously likes to sit on you."

"It has smelled a fountain, General."

"A fountain?"

"Others have drunk there and said its waters were good and satisfying."

"Cool?"

"They're boiling when they erupt."

"Clear and light?"

"Heavy, thick as milk, but after they've been out a bit they're very fluid."

"And when can you drink from it? When does it taste the best?"

"In the afternoon, or after sunset."

"Is it easy to approach?"

"Yes. One sits on one's heels, supported by one's knees on the floor, to the left and to right of the fountain; one lowers one's head to the surface of the water, pushing the grass aside, and drinks by sucking; the water spurts into your face; you sense the aroma; the water runs over your lips, your chin, your cheeks."

"And how do you cause the fountain to sit up?"

"It does that all by itself; as soon as it hears the steps and the lips approach its bed."

"And when it doesn't like these steps and these lips?"

"Then it stays asleep."

They hear a soldier approaching. The general hides. The soldier sees Pino.

"So..., little bastard, you're sleeping naked now?"

With a sigh, Pino turns over, covers his genitals with his hands. The soldier wraps his fingers around Pino's penis.

"Everyone knows you're doing it with the general. It's in your blood, like it's in the blood of whores."

"In the first place, the general doesn't even touch me. In the second place, you're jealous because every woman lusts after me and is disgusted when she sees you naked. I don't have to run after them. They never ask me for money. You..."

"Shut up, Pino. You just wait. You won't always be so young and fresh."

The soldier takes Pino's shoes, because he wants to borrow them, and rubs the boy's buttocks with their soles.

"Do it again. That feels good!"

The soldier, excited, continues teasing the boy.

"Pino laughs loudly, stretches out flat on the mattress, opens his arms, then crosses them under his neck. (...) With one hand the soldier rubs Pino's belly with the sole of the shoe, with the other fondles the boy's nipples and tickles him under his arms. Pino's cock, with the glans uncovered, twitching, getting hard, raises, points toward the upper bunk. Pino arches his lower body until his cock-tip touches the bunk above. The soldier suddenly grasps hold of the cock, pinches it, flattens it downwards. Pino howls with pain, takes the soldier's hands and pulls them off, frees his cock. Smear with the soldier's sweat, it goes slack, collapses down against his thigh."

The soldier goes away.

"Pino whimpers, writhing upon the mattress, his hand comforting his cock."

The general comes out of hiding and squats in front of the mattress.

"He wanted to break it! They're all jealous. One day they'll grab it and break it."

" 'Tell me where it hurts, you poor little boy!' "

The general bows his head over Pino's stomach, takes the trembling penis, raises it in the hollow of his hand and kisses it.

" 'Go away. Leave me alone. It'll only get stiff for women!' "

Pino tries to free himself. He wants to turn over, but the general continues to hold him.

"One of the general's hands slides half-way under Pino's bottom; a finger of the other hand lightly touches the rim of his anus, returns to the penis, tracing with its tip the seam between his thighs. While the cock bends from both sides of the thighs' vice, a finger presses at its swollen root, feels the living olives on either side. His whole hand encircles these soft and luke-warm balls; a fingernail presses upon them. Pino is now moaning. His cock has become very hard, stretching the skin around it: belly, thigh, testes. Then he turns toward the general, who is kneeling at his side and whose fingers continue to grope, his face dripping from the boy's sweat and body warmth. Pino stretches at full length, then puts one leg across the other, encircles the general's neck with both arms."

Pino warns the general that the sentry may arrive any moment. The general whispers:

" 'You are my hunting dog with his little red tail.'

" 'Little? You'll change your mind when you get it inside your mouth or your ass!'

" 'Don't be coarse.'

" 'You like me when I'm coarse. The filthier my language is the stiffer you get. My commander, the sentry is coming. Go to the cellar and hide there. I'll come to you later.'

"The boy puts his lips to the general's ear and says, 'And then I'll jerk you off and suck you.' "

The general goes away "with his hard cock nearly bursting". The sentry arrives and leaves. Pino puts on a sweater and goes to where the general is waiting for him. The general gives Pino some money, and Pino loosens the general's trousers.

"The penis pops up against Pino's nose, gently, powerful, swollen with sperm. The boy bites it, seizes it with his fingers and puts it into his mouth. His other hand caresses, kneads the balls, tickles the inner side of the thighs. Keeping the cock inside his mouth, he rubs it softly, and then, feeling the semen begin to surge, takes it out of his mouth, presses it against his cheek, kisses it, pushes it against his forehead. Then, raising himself a bit more, he rubs his neck and breast with it. The general exhales deeply, pulls the boy's hair, pants, his legs rigid. (...) The sperm spurts over the boy's face: his cheeks and nose; his eyebrows are dripping with it. The boy opens his mouth, inserts the cock-tip into it. Semen is still jetting out of it inside his mouth; it runs between his teeth, beneath his tongue — heavy, luke-warm, like blood. The boy empties the penis by pressing it, both his hands flat upon the general's thighs. He presses his fingers into them, pulling the skin of the buttocks upwards, and continues to suck, sniffing, alternately puffing out his cheeks and making them grow hollow. The sperm he has sucked in becomes more fluid, hotter. The explosion of the last slimy threads makes the general sigh. The boy continues to suck, but now the spring is dry. His lips slurp, then open abruptly. He removes the penis from his mouth, licks his lips, reaching his nose with the tip of his tongue."

Afterwards, he straightens up the general's clothes.

"Then he wipes the sperm from his face with his hands and licks his hands clean. His fingers push into his mouth. In the semi-darkness the general sees the gleam of the

boy's neck as he swallows spittle mixed with the man's semen. And as he watches this, the boy swallowing his sperm, eating it, his penis begins to stiffen anew. Pino notices."

The boy opens a door, allowing light to enter the cellar, and plays suggestively, smiling, with his cock and balls.

" 'Demon! Demon! Infamous boy, how can you stand yourself this way, with your dirty hands and polluted lips? The women who make love to you will know you're a whore, see the traces of love and salacity that men have left behind upon your body. (...) Go away, I don't want to see you any more.'

" 'As soon as you've left me your belly will be churning again.'

" 'I don't ever want to love a boy again. Take me to your whores. I've never slept with a woman. (...) But I cannot make love to someone who isn't my equal.'

" 'And yet I'm your subordinate.'

" 'When I touch you, I touch myself.'

" 'It's just the same with a woman.'

" 'No. I'm infamous. I seduce you and do evil things.'

" 'You're not the first, my commander. And I like you.'

" 'Shut up!'

" 'Your semen tastes like milk. (...) I've liked the taste for a long, long time. It's like the first milk I ever sucked.' "

(Guyotat 1967, 268-278)

"Semen is a clean, harmless substance which can be swallowd without any ill effects. The only exception is the contaminated semen of a man who is suffering from a venereal disease." (Haeberle 1978, 241). It is regrettable that the spread of AIDS has made it risky unless one is certain that the sucked person is free of the virus. According to old, widespread traditions, the male semen is not only clean and harmless, but its ingestion is even beneficial.

There are ancient Greek myths about its magic power (Richepin 1921, II 176). We have had occasion several times to mention the New Guinea tribes, where drinking semen is considered indispensable for the growth and pubertal development of boys (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980; Herdt 1981 & 1982; West 1977, 135). The Sambia boys not only swallow the sperm, but after sucking they also rub it on their faces and chests in the hope that by so doing it will make them shiny-nosed, glistening and handsome (Herdt 1981, 152, 236). The Kimam tribe rub the cuts inflicted on boys during initiation rites with sperm from older men, for this is regarded as an excellent medicine (Gray 1985, 61). To obtain the sperm, the betrothed, often a very young girl, has to copulate with some ten men, one after another, following which the mixture of semen and female secretions flow out of her vagina (Herdt 1984, 28, 76). The Gowai put the sperm produced by homosexual activities on their arrows (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 85). "Among the Marind, men believed semen helped heal wounds, stimulated the libido when eaten, and improved plant growth." (Adam 1985, 26) An English visitor to Tahiti reported in 1804 that he had seen men emitting semen into the mouths of others, who eagerly swallowed it "as if it

were the vigor and force of the other; thinking no doubt thus to restore to himself greater strength." Today, still, "they really believe it is first class food for them (Levy quoted by Schild 1985, 185-186). In Tibet a boy had to drink the sperm of his teacher in order to be impregnated by his wisdom and spiritual energy (Daniélou 1979, 216).

In other cases, the sperm of adolescents is seen as a medicine for feeble and dying people (Ellis 1913, V 172). In one Australian aborigine tribe, just as with the Kimams mentioned above, it is procured by six or more youths taking a strong young woman to some secluded spot where they have coitus with her one after the other. Afterwards the woman stands and the supposedly curative liquids from her vulva are collected (Bourke 1913, 309-310; Davies 1985, 51).

Many years ago in Europe sperm was a common ingredient of medicines (Ellis 1913, V 172). The French physiologist Brown-Séguard recommended subcutaneous injections or enemas with fresh semen to increase vital energy, a practice of which von Römer (1903, 926) approved. "When held for some time in the mouth it produces a warmth similar to spices," John Hunter observed, and this may have suggested it possessed vital stimulant qualities (Ellis 1913, V 172). In former times when chlorosis in young abstinent girls was common, it was thought it could be quickly cured by intercourse and the absorption of semen through the vaginal membrane (Borneman 1978, 166; Ellis 1913, V 177-178). In any case, its absorption in the blood heightens a woman's feeling of well-being after intercourse (Abraham 1969, 10).

And so the conviction that sperm cures is still alive. Research has shown that semen does have one of the properties of penicillin: it kills bacteria (Kent 1967). Prostaglandine, one of the hormones in semen, may be the active agent. Some people even believe sperm can cure throat infections:

528 (Continued from 503) Onno saw the health of his severely ill friend make a rapid improvement after he ejaculated in the man's mouth. (Personal communication)

Anal Intercourse

*You, tall boy, I like most of all.
A popish face doesn't suit you, really,
So cast me one of your salacious looks!
It would be better, too, if you were naked:
This long pleated shirt is much too chaste.
Now they turn. Seen from the back
These rascals are really most appealing!*
— Goethe: (Faust, Part Two)

Anal intercourse is in no way peculiar to homosexuality (Borneman 1978, 170; Freud 1920, 29). In 1973 a French study revealed that 30% of the married men in its sample sometimes performed anal intercourse with their wives and that the practice seemed to be increasing: among the 18- 24-year-olds it had risen to 50% (Buffière 1980, 441).

The well-known English sexologist Dr. Alex Comfort wrote in 1972 that nearly every heterosexual couple "tries anal intercourse once, and some women find it gives them intenser feelings than the normal route." (West 1977, 3) An enquiry among American students, performed in 1976 by *Playboy*, concluded that 20% of the males had tried it, 14% had liked it, and 41% would like to try it (Pietropinto & Simenauer 1979, 67).

This situation we find along all peoples in all periods of history. The French novelist Peyrefitte writes how in India, for instance, a bride had to be deflowered by the deity in the temple of Siva. To effect this, a penis made of iron protruded from a wall. While priests prayed loudly, the girl first inserted this member into her mouth, then sat down upon it, so as to make it penetrate in her anal opening; finally she introduced it into her vagina, encouraged by the calls of her family and the bridegroom to suffer the pain. A woman had to be deflowered behind as well as in front (1981, 236-237).

According to Haeberle (1978, 362), anal intercourse is commonly so satisfactory to both parties in heterosexual relations that it is often recommended by therapists consulted for marital difficulties. Barrington's findings (1981, 11) from his homosexual research that only about 5% practiced it seems incredibly low. Hite (1981 N, 877) arrived at a very different estimate. Of the gay males she questioned, 76% did it or had tried it, 11% had never tried it but would have liked to try it, 3% had neither tried it nor wanted to try it, and 10% had tried it but hadn't liked it. Considering the popularity of anal intercourse in heterosexual relations, it is hardly surprising that in societies where man-boy sex is considered normal and is engaged in by most boys and men, it nearly always seems to be the preferred sexual technique. This was so among the ancient Greeks and Romans, among the Chinese, the Japanese and the Arabs, as well as some of the North American Indian tribes where the men also enjoyed using their women in this way (Bullough 1976, 45). "For North Africans and Southwest Asians it is self-evident that men like to sodomise all kinds of objects. It is understandable that men prefer boys over women." (Schmitt 1985, 55). One of the words Arabs and Turks use for "boy" is the same word for "someone who gets fucked." (Schmitt 1987, 178, 181) The Albanian language even has a special affectionate word for a 10- to 16-year-old favourite with especially sensuous-looking buttocks, smooth and firm as an apple: *buthmollak* (i.e. "apple-arse"). (Personal communication)

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

In the fantasy of militant feminists like Rush (1980, 20) all paedophilia is directed toward achieving penetration: the huge phallus shoved into an all-too-small orifice in the child's body. In a national population survey carried out in 1984 by the Canadian government, 2.1% of all males reported they had been subjected before the age of 16 to actual or attempted penetration by a penis, a finger or other object (West 1987, 41-42). In Carpentier's investigation (1985, 4) a minority of 42% of the men said they were attracted to anal intercourse. It would be interesting to know how many of them would have agreed with the Renaissance humorist Beccadelli who said in his *Hermaphroditus* (I - 13), "The man who has just once made a boy bend over will never afterwards be able to abstain."

The Hite report (1981, N, 856-857) reveals that the experience of anal intercourse comes, on average, much later than the experience of fellatio. Table 13 shows, for all males who had had experience with both techniques, the percentage of them who by the ages listed had experienced fellatio and anal intercourse.

Table 13
Cumulative percentages of boys who had had experience with fellatio and anal intercourse. (Hite 1981)

At age	Fellatio	Anal intercourse
4	0	1.0
5	0	1.5
6	2	1.5
7	4	2.0
8	10	2.0
9	14	3.0
10	17	6.0
11	21	12.0
12	33	19.0
13	45	27.0
14	52	35.0
15	58	44.0
16	69	54.0
28	99	100.0
32	100	100.0

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

In the present day of the AIDS epidemic, it is generally recognised that anal intercourse, especially in the insertee role, is the most risky sexual activity of all. The danger, as we all know, can be greatly reduced by the cautious use of condoms, especially condoms of the more resistant type specially made for anal intercourse, where the penis has to be forced through an opening much tighter than most female vaginas. Unless one is absolutely sure that he or his partner is not a carrier of the virus, it is foolish, if not irresponsible, not to use a condom in this kind of sex. In 1987 the Danish government organised the distribution of condoms to schoolboys from 12 years of age on up in order to make them aware of, and protect them from, this disease (*Parool* 18.4.87).

There is no doubt that, until an effective means of dealing with AIDS is developed, it would be best to avoid this form of intercourse completely, but experience shows that there is no great willingness to wholly abandon an activity which to many is most important and offers them very special sexual pleasures. There are, moreover, psychological aspects of anal intercourse which give special insight into sexuality. Thus we will proceed with a more thorough discussion of the practice.

American hobos (vagabonds) often seduced 10- to 15-year-old boys into accompanying them on their wanderings. This softened the hobos' loneliness, and the boys often served as substitutes for the nearly unobtainable woman by allowing interfemoral and anal intercourse to be performed on them.

529 Josiah Flynt, sharing his life with the hobos, told how one day he was in Pennsylvania travelling with eight other tramps "in a freight-car attached to a slowly moving train. A colored boy succeeded in scrambling into the car, and when the train was well under way again he was tripped up and 'seduced' (to use the hobo euphemism) by each of the tramps. He made almost no resistance, and joked and laughed about the business as if he had expected it. This, indeed, I find to be the general feeling among the boys when they have been thoroughly initiated. At first they do not submit, and are inclined to run away or fight, but the men fondle and pet them, and after awhile they do not seem to care. Some of them have told me that they get as much pleasure out of the affair as the jocker does. Even little fellows under 10 have told me this, and I have known them to willfully tempt their jockers to intercourse. What the pleasure consists in I cannot say. The youngsters themselves describe it as a delightful tickling sensation in the parts involved." (quoted by Ellis 1913, II - 316)

These experienced boys knew better than Josiah Flynt that the anus is a sexual organ. Just like the penis, which serves the double purpose of excreting urine and connecting bodies in sexual intercourse, the anus has the double function of eliminating faeces and joining people in sex. As with the entrance to the female vagina and the surface of the male penis, nature has richly endowed the anus with nerves which, if stimulated, produce sexual lust and pleasure.

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

"Anal erotic reactions are very simple, common to all mammals throughout history, zoologically obvious and just as much a part of any human being's reactions, and as involuntary as breathing or waste disposal." (Barrington 1981, 181)

When Kinsey (1953, 585) wrote, "As many as half or more of the population may find some degree of erotic satisfaction in anal stimulation," we must keep in mind that the population he refers to is that of America, one impregnated with the strongest taboos against anal intercourse. There must have been a large percentage of people who dared not admit, even to themselves, that anal titillation could produce "some degree of erotic satisfaction". Nevertheless Kinsey went on to say, "There are some females and males who may be as aroused erotically by anal stimulation as they are by stimulation of the genitals, or who may be more intensely aroused."

"The anus is an erogenous zone for many people. Goligher (1980) claims that the 'anal skin is one of the most erotic areas of the body.' The anus and perianal area are richly supplied with nerves and tactile sensors, and many of these nerves and some of the muscles are shared directly with the genitals." (Agnew 1985, 76) In sucking a boy's penis, many boy-lovers titillate the boy's anus with their fingers. Moving the finger around the area, inserting it into the opening, they produce intense pleasure in their partners. Many go no farther than this (Sandfort 1981, 36), but others use manual anal stimulation to make their boys long for anal intercourse, and to prepare them for it.

Stimulation of the anal opening causes spontaneous contraction of the sphincter muscle. "Reactions of the muscles which normally keep the anus closed may be erotically stimulating." (Kinsey 1953, 585) "Contractions of the anal sphincter (...) may bring contractions of the muscles that extend into the genitals and produce erection in the male..." (Kinsey 1953, 586) or increase feelings of lust. "Many males are quickly brought to erection when a pressure is applied on the perineal surface at a point which is about midway between the anus and the scrotum. (...) Deep penetration of the rectum may stimulate the same perineal nerves, and prove to be similarly erotic." (Kinsey 1953, 585)

The sphincter is very much involved in the penetration and thrusting of the partner's penis, and in addition another erogenous zone, the inner thighs, is rubbed by the thighs of the inserter.

The rectum itself is elastic and extensible, but it is only sparsely supplied with nerves (Agnew 1985, 79; Kinsey 1953, 581). In erotic literature the passive partner is often made to say something like, "I felt his sperm erupt high up inside me like a hot flood." This is unrealistic nonsense. First of all, the semen, having the same body-temperature as the penis and rectum, is never "hot". Secondly, it is impossible for the rectum to feel what is happening above the anal area.

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

Stimulation of the interior of the rectum, however, "may also exert pressure upon the perineal nerve masses and it is known that this may bring specifically sexual responses with orgasm. This is frequently realized by persons who have been the recipients in anal intercourse." (Kinsey 1953, 698)

Other things happen inside the body. During medical examinations it is possible, through the thin wall of the rectum, to touch and massage — by means of a finger introduced into the anus — the prostate. This gland wraps around the neck of the bladder and produces nearly all of the fluid in semen. During orgasm it is spasmodically compressed. It is probably the spurting of prostatic liquid into the urethra which unleashes the sexual climax. During anal intercourse the tip of the inserted penis may press against and rub (through the thin rectal wall) the prostate of the insertee, but normally this does not happen. The prostate is located about two inches from the anal opening, so, in order to stimulate it, the penis, once inside the canal, should be pressed against the anterior wall of the anus and down slightly; continued concentration of stimulation there may bring on orgasm (Hite 1981 A, 517). If the inserter wishes to evoke his partner's orgasm this way, he "must feel specifically for the prostate and ask the insertee for guidance, watching for signs or reactions." (Hite 1981 A, 537)

Pressure on the prostate may even bring on spontaneous orgasm. I have seen a home-made film in which a boy, shortly after being penetrated by a man, emitted quite a large quantity of white fluid, not in the usual ejaculatory spurts of orgasm but in a continuous flow from his flaccid penis. Nørretranders (1983, 18) mentions this "pure prostatic orgasm" without stimulation of the penis and calls it "a very strong sensation."

Hite's subjects told her "that an orgasm from prostate massage is quite different in feeling from an orgasm caused by stimulation of the penis; prostate orgasms are described as being 'deeper' and 'more generalised'." (1981 A, 537) One said, "The feeling on my prostate makes me feel like I am about to come for the longest period of time — after a while it is too intense and I can't stand it any longer." (1981 A, 530)

In the Indian Shiva cult, orgasm by massaging the prostate is intentionally induced (Daniélou 1979, 201). Larkin, an American devotee who extensively tested it, affirms that "it is the vigorous massage of the prostate gland in males which triggers the incredible intensity of the orgasm." (1981, 110) Bisexual men, having intercourse with both sexes, have been known to give up women after discovering that rubbing their penises in the vagina can never elicit the orgasmic intensity of manually rubbing their penises accompanied by prostate massage during anal intercourse (1981, 84-86).

- 530 Karl-Heinz (13) had a secret club with his school mates. "We took pieces of flexible electric cable, and entwined them with odd ends of fabric until they were about seven centimetres thick, pulled a condom over them and lubricated them well. The smallest measured 17 to 18 centimetres, the longest nearly 25. Then our leader made us perform group sex in front of the big mirror near the entrance of our cabin. Each of us in turn was held firmly by two others, had to bend over, and then the artificial cock was pushed into his arse, where it was slowly moved in and out. Many of us climaxed under this treatment alone, but most of the boys had to be assisted by someone rubbing their cocks." (Stieber 1971, 56-57)

Rossmann (1976, 153) believes "that at least 30% of pubescent males are highly sensitive anally, although this capacity for pleasure begins to fade in mid-adolescence." Leo, a subject in my own research (see examples 2, 130 & 480), when questioned at 15 what kind of sexual technique he liked best, replied "to be fucked by a slightly older boy." When asked the same question at age 17 he answered, "to fuck a boy my own age."

The effect of prostate massage is reinforced by the general erotic sensibility of the anal opening. Thus, even without their penises being stroked, a number of boys can climax simply from the motion of a penis within them. "When he moves," a subject of Hite (1981 A, 531) said, "the massaging action sends a radiant pulsating warmth throughout my body, which I find very exciting."

- 531 Sandfort's subject Mark (35) said about Gerrit (15): "He loves to be fucked in the usual way. (...) If you're fucking him he climaxes without you jerking him off. It's quite amazing. I thought this was something you only read about in sex books, but with him it really happens!" (1979, 202, 184)

- 532 "My fourteen-year-old Arabian friend Ahmed is completely 'normal', i.e. he likes girls. We once had three-way sex with a girl, and he gave a plucky performance. But he also likes anal intercourse. I never openly demand it of him, but sometimes he'll come to my home saying, 'I want to jerk off'. He then strips naked, lies down on my bed and plays with his cock — after inserting a vibrator up his behind. He'll be lying on his side, and then I'll strip, lie down behind him, pull out the vibrator and replace it with my cock. Ahmed's reaction is immediate. All I have to do is made a few thrusts, without me even touching his penis, and he'll be spurting his sperm. Alas for me, it is then completely over for him: he doesn't like me to continue fucking him to achieve my own climax. So I have to break things off; my chief pleasure is in Ahmed's pleasure." (Personal communication)

- 533 Seventy-year-old Italian author Umberto Saba may have made use of some personal recollection in his fine tale about what happened between his 16-year-old hero Ernesto and a docker. The man had talked with the boy about sex, admitting he would like to use the boy's behind. Irresistible curiosity drove the boy to come back the following day.

" 'You still remember what I wanted to do to you?'

" 'You want to put it up my arse,' Ernesto said with calm innocence.' (...) That was the boy's way: he liked to come right out with what he was thinking. (...) He wanted to please his friend, give him a good time, and experience, himself, a new sensation which he desired simply because it was unknown and unusual. But he was also afraid of being hurt. For the moment he didn't care about anything else.

" 'Does it really feel good?'

" 'It's the nicest thing in the whole world.'

" 'For you, maybe, but for me...?'

" 'For you, too. You've never done it with a man before?'

" 'Never. Have you done it to other boys?'

" 'Many. But none of them were as handsome as you.' (...)

" 'What did they say?'

" 'Nothing. They didn't say anything. They were happy. Some of them even asked me to do it.' (...)

" 'Show it to me. (...) Can I pull it out? (...) It's big,' he said, partly afraid, partly amused. 'It's twice as big as mine.' "

As Ernesto is afraid, the man promises to stop right away if the boy asks him to. They both undress, and Ernesto bends over a pile of sacks.

Ernesto "got a curious sensation of something warm (at first rather pleasant) as the man found the right spot and united their bodies. Neither of them said a word, until, just before he climaxed, the man sighed, 'Like an angel!' and the boy muttered an 'Ow!' when he felt the thrusting grow too fierce. But the man kept his promise: he didn't really hurt him; he'd taken pains not to. It all happened very simply, and it was all over much sooner than Ernesto imagined it would be. He wanted to stand up, but the man urged him not to just yet. 'Now what?' he thought, but relaxed when he saw the man pulling out a handkerchief: he simply wanted to wipe him off. Consideration, or to remove the traces. (...)

" 'You were fine as fresh bread,' the man said.

" 'Did you enjoy it?' he asked.

" 'It was paradise. But, admit it, you enjoyed it, too.'

" 'Not very much. At first a little, but afterwards it hurt some. I even cried out (...)'

" 'We enjoyed it together,' the man said.

" 'How do you know?'

" 'I felt it when you came. That's something you can always feel. And look...'

" 'Where?' Ernesto asked, upset. The man pointed to a stain left behind on the flour-sack (...) over which he had bent. Ernesto examined it, and was convinced." (Saba 1978, 24-30)

- 534 Duvert (1976, 153) had a similar experience with a handsome 14-year-old. "At first he doesn't want to be fucked, but my friendly encouragement makes him turn upon his side and I try to penetrate his arse. He doesn't squeeze. I push with soft insistence. I feel him giving in, relaxing, making himself hollow, and I pass through to the other side of his muscle. But right away he asks me to stop and breaks free. He has spurted onto the sheet. He hasn't masturbated: it has come spontaneously. (...) At the very moment my cock penetrated him his sperm shot out. He was so sure about his abhorrence of abandoning himself. Now he is embarrassed about the pleasure he felt. He wants immediately to get into his clothes.

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

The pleasure of feeling something moving inside the anus is such a common experience that many boys and men, lacking a male partner, insert candles, vibrators or dildos into their anuses while masturbating. 49.5% of Barrington's subjects (1981, 163) did so.

- 535 I am a boy of thirteen and have enjoyed sex with myself from about the age of nine or ten (...) which I do until this day — at least twice a day. (...) One of my fantasies takes place when I insert tampons in my anus, while I masturbate. I imagine one of my friends really giving it to me good up the ass. I'm not a homosexual, but I would love to really make it in every way possible with a couple of my friends. (...) Sex is on my mind constantly, but I'm still a virgin — not for long, I hope." (Friday 1981, 360-361)

So the man who wrote the graffito in a public toilet (Ernest 1979, 138) may not have been making his tale up: "I'm a truck-driver of 30. One night I took a boy of 14-15 who was hanging around the square. I brought him here and filled his arse. He liked it." For most males, however, the anal stimulation alone is not enough to bring on orgasm in the insertee, and some manipulation of his penis is necessary.

- 536 In *Roy*, Peyrefitte's novel about a boy from a well-to-do family seduced by the Los Angeles Commissioner of Police, the man says to Roy, "Don't be surprised at what will happen to you now. I'll penetrate you as gently as possible, so as not to hurt you. This muscle that I'm now touching with my fingers and which makes you tremble with desire, is very elastic. Relax, don't squeeze, and I'll possess you, just as one does a woman." Roy obeys, and the penis, "big as a horse's", goes in half way without causing too much pain. Instinctively, now, he tightens his muscle, which brings on the man's emission. The man then rapidly moves his hand over Roy's penis, bringing relief. "Was it good?" the police chief asks, kissing the little hairs on the boy's neck and his right cheek which was turned toward him. "Yes," Roy says, his eyes half shut as his pleasure subsides. "It seems you are made for this," the police chief says a little later. "It's wonderful the way you opened yourself up. You're a real find." Roy was pleased again by the affectionate care with which the police chief wiped him dry, behind and in front, washed him and dried him off again. (Peyrefitte 1979, 47)

- 537 A handsome schoolboy visited Peter Schult. One day Peter said to him, "I'm gay." The boy was surprised, but nevertheless came back again. "Actually the anti-homosexual prejudices are far less prevalent in 13- to 16-year-old boys than is commonly supposed. (...) P. was one of those boys, who, once his initial inhibitions are conquered, simply explodes in bed. (...) At first he balked at allowing me anal intercourse, but very quickly he came to like it. I not only sensed this; he told me so himself. He would hardly be inside my house before he was lying beside me on the mattress waiting for the love-play to begin. It always had to end up with me fucking him from behind -- and while this was going on he wasn't just lying there passively: he participated, by moving his buttocks back and forth, pressing himself back against my cock when I thrust forwards, and audibly moaning. And I always jerked him off

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

at the same time. This is a question of sensibility. I have known many gay people who are only after a good fuck and forget that the boy, too, wants to come. For this kind of gay the other person is just a sexual object, not a partner. With P. I could immediately tell when he was about to climax, for he would wiggle back, practically on top of me, in order to engulf my cock as deeply as he could. And God help me if, in the heat of our struggle, it happened to slip out! He'd then grab it with his hand to put it back in his hole as quickly as he could. Sometimes my cock wasn't stiff enough. P. noted this right away; he'd turn around and help matters with his mouth. And that usually worked: sucking zealously, and with the help of the tip of his tongue, the required rigidity would almost always be re-established." (Schult 1978, 259-261)

If the Greeks wouldn't manipulate the penis of a free-born "respectable" boy while making love, this certainly wasn't the case when they had contacts with hustlers (Borneman 1978, 993): in anal intercourse they sought a heightening of their own pleasure by bringing on the involuntary contractions of the boy's sphincter accompanying his orgasm (cf. Masters & Johnson 1980, 140-141).

Schult (1978, 253-254) described the whole process in a poem which starts with hand and mouth foreplay, then continues:

*So, are you willing? That's the main thing!
Then turn around. I like to see your back,
but I like to see your sweet bottom even more.
Don't jump: the pain will ease;
It's only at first. Once inside
You won't feel my hardness any longer.
You see? It's going better now...
Yes, that's wonderful, that little twist.
Swivel with your hips, thrust your behind...
Oh, if you knew how this adds to my lust!
Now it's turning you on, too. I hear you moaning.
Pain can also be lust. I see yours is hard...
Wait, I'll help you... or do you want to do that yourself?
As you wish: I'll do it gladly.
You'll let me? Can I put it in deeper?
Well, lie half on me
So with my right hand I can better
Take your cock and fondle it,
And you'll quickly give up your load.
Now, raise your leg, let me slide in deeper
To bathe you inside with my sperm,
To bless you, to baptise you. Do you feel the pressure?
Don't moan that way: you're driving me mad.*

*I'm nearly worn out, my little Ganymede.
You've wet my fingers, I see.
You're spouting — a boy's fountain. It spurts
With jets which nearly reach your shoulders.
Wait, now, it's my turn... just a little deeper...
And now it runs and runs and runs...*

The insertor's penis has its reward, too, for the pleasure it gives. As the insertee reaches climax, his anal sphincter contracts simultaneously with the muscles at the roots of the penis which cause ejaculation "and the anus may open and close in violent convulsion as an after-effect of orgasm. Most persons are unconscious of this anal action unless they have had anal intercourse." (Kinsey 1953, 634) The pleasant sensation of the inserted penis being squeezed by the anal ring can sometimes also be induced by tickling the bare glans of the insertee: this can cause a series of spasmodic reflex contractions of the anal sphincter.

The way the anus clasps and squeezes his penis may strongly increase the insertor's pleasure—or even bring on orgasm. Some "active" partners acquire, or improve with practice, the ability to climax simultaneously with their lovers. (Baker 1977, 43-47)

In any case, the insertor can control, to a certain extent, the level of lust in his partner by the manipulation of his partner's penis (Strato XII, 7) When admonished that he could just as well take his anal pleasure with a girl, a famous French marshal cried scornfully, "A girl? It's like chicken without the drumstick: there's nothing to hold on to."

In the event that the insertor cannot or doesn't wish to masturbate the insertee, the latter often has to do this himself. In Masters & Johnson's (1980, 100) laboratory observations, only two of his ten insertees attained orgasm, and both accomplished this by rubbing their own penises.

538 (Continued from 432) Max, at age 16, said, "If I'm alone and jerking off, it always takes a long time before I come. When my friend fucks me and has penetrated me, I only have to move my hand once or twice and my sperm comes right out, because I'm so excited. Sometimes at home I shove some kind of cylinder up my arse and make believe it's my friend's cock." (Personal communication)

Anal intercourse demands a certain amount of skill on the part of both partners. One must be very experienced to be able to insert an unlubricated penis without causing pain. "The lubricant is best applied to the anus itself. This also offers the opportunity for a gentle massage of the anal sphincter or even the insertion of a finger. After this preparation, the penis can be inserted. The insertion itself should be very slow, and, once inside, the penis should not

be moved for a while until the anal sphincter is completely relaxed. Then one or both partners can begin some cautious pelvic thrusting." (Haeberle 1978, 220)

"Though the external sphincter is maintained in a state of tonic contraction except during defecation, contraction and relaxation of the sphincter is under voluntary control." (Agnew 1985, 79) The insertee, therefore, must relax. If he contracts his muscles and lies down rigid, deathly afraid of what is happening to him, he will certainly experience pain. Sphincter relaxation can be practised and learned (Kent 1967). The insertee acts as if he wished to defecate. It might take a boy some time to learn how to do this.

539 "When I played hooky with some of the other boys we used to hide in cellars. (...) There we played with each other. One day older boys came in on us. I told one of them I would jerk him if he wouldn't tell. From that we used to jerk them all. Then the older boys had relations with us between the legs and this went on to sodomy. Then we tried it on each other. (...) I was only twelve. I used to have a guy try it on me every day until he succeeded. I fell in love with this guy." (Henry 1948, 419)

It is best to have the insertee guide the penis, help it find the opening and determine at what rate penetration proceeds. If there is pain, no movement should be made before the pain subsides, which, if force isn't used, usually happens rather quickly. As soon as the ridge of the glans has passed the sphincter, the pain disappears. At that point one should pause for both partners to get used to the position. After this, the thrusting may start, but at first gently and cautiously.

540 Jouhandeau described the process with his friend: "You feel the glans pressing against your lips, playing with them, teasing them open a bit. It tries to pass beyond them; passage is refused; it breaks through at last. You give a piercing scream. I am master of the fortress without having caused any real havoc. Then your pleasure begins. You're feeling me; you're feeling the serpent's head swelling inside you, filling you out, and the rest slowly follows, taking a long time to introduce itself, slowly, going farther, so far you wonder how you can get so much of it inside you without bursting." (1981, 145)

"Quick, powerful thrusts can more easily absorb the sensations of the insertee, and to such an extent that he may lose awareness of all else and can thus abandon himself to orgasm. With slow and tender intercourse it is much more difficult to attain this condition of 'conscious unconsciousness' (orgasm), but on the other hand it may lead to a really cosmic explosion at the end." (Jensen 1983, 128)

Thrusting in and out is the most stimulating motion for the inserter, while an additional lateral or rotary motion, as we saw described in the Siwa man/boy orgies, is often the most satisfying for the insertee, "because of the consistent,

rather than intermittent, stimulation this kind of activity creates." (Marshall 1965, 62)

Allen Ginsberg (1982, 362) says in his poem *Please master*:

*...please master shove it in me a little, a little, a little,
please master sink your droor thing down my behind
& please master make me wiggle my rear to eat up the prick trunk
till my asshalfs cuddle your thighs, my back bent over,
till I'm a line sticking out, your sword stuck throbbing in me
please master pull out and slowly roll into the bottom
please master lunge it again, and withdraw to the tip...*

According to one contemporary popular book on the subject, clients of Japanese boy-brothels enjoy prolonging their couplings. After the man has inserted his penis into the boy, "much of the pleasure consists of lying absolutely still for long periods of time, only quivering or moving as little as possible. Penetration may, therefore, continue for hours — without climax but presumably with many near orgasms." Following near-climax, this source continues, the man lies still again, spending much of his time sleeping or dozing. Even after a full climax is reached, the penis stays in the boy's anus in anticipation of a new erection. The whole may well last for up to ten hours, and this technique is considered very restful. The man tells the boy this is what he wants to do by saying "I am going to seek my peace in your heaven." (Drew & Drake 1969, 112-113)

The insertee is often described as the passive partner, but this isn't always accurate, since he may be a very active participant. Much depends upon the position of the two bodies, but in any position he can use his anal sphincter to knead his partner's penis with voluntary constrictions, squeezing it and then relaxing.

If the insertee is lying on his side with his legs drawn up, the inserter positioned behind him, he can move his buttocks back and forth. With the inserter lying on his back and the insertee sitting astride him, impaling himself upon his partner's penis, it is the insertee who has complete control of the rate of insertion, he who makes the major movements. In this position the partners can look at each other's bodies and faces, although from the standpoint of touch, the contact is not as close and intimate as others. With the insertee lying on his back, his legs raised and resting on the shoulders of the inserter, there is much more body contact and the two lovers can even press their faces together and exchange kisses. The movements then will mainly be performed by the inserter, but the insertee may respond to thrusts with counterthrusts of his own.

In the Big Namba tribe mentioned in Chapter Two, it is thought that the *nilaghsen's* intercourse with the boy to whom he is married should be different from intercourse with his wife. Thus it is performed standing (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1980, 96). The same is told about ancient Greek boy-love, but there are vase paintings showing other positions (Sergeant 1984, 56). Standing upright or bending over, the boy was able to swing his hips and to rotate his buttocks, a movement the Greeks thought especially sensuous—in fact so much so that their language had quite a few expressions for it: a boy skilled in this trick was called "proktosophos", or wise with his arse (Borneman 1978, 73).

Movement on the part of the insertee is almost impossible if he is lying on his stomach with the inserter stretched out on top of him. But even here one variation has been discovered:

541 During World War Two an American soldier in his fifties, married and father of three children, visited a boys' brothel in Naples. He spent a night with an 11-year-old who had lost both of his parents in the bombing. At first the American thought the boy was too small for anal intercourse, but the child showed he was disappointed by this reluctance and the man decided to go ahead and do just what the boy instructed him to do. The boy lay down on the bed on his stomach and told the man to drop to his knees and bend over him, leaving a space between their two bodies. "As soon as my glans penetrated him, he began to work with his hips. Pressing himself upwards, until my penis entered him up to the root, he then sank down again, until only my glans was still inside him. His sphincter then worked violently, sort of sucking the glans. After this he returned, going to whole way, making my member disappear completely into his bottom. To me it seemed a mouth was working on it, but a tight-fitting, hot mouth. He was an expert in this movement of his abdomen. What this child knew to do at eleven many adults wouldn't succeed in doing. Finally I got a violent orgasm. Mentally and physically I felt shattered. I laid stretched upon him, heavily, embracing him firmly, moaning, kissing his shoulders and his neck. He seemed delighted by my attention. When I had withdrawn my member from his body, I saw his little penis, erected. It was hard and throbbed visibly with the beating of his heart." The American satisfied the boy with his mouth and then said good-bye. The boy wept and wanted to stay with him. (Personal communication)

The most usual position is for the insertee to kneel, bend over and support his body with his arms, while the inserter kneels between the insertee's legs, keeping his body upright or lying forward over his partner's back. This has the advantage that the inserter is free to rub his partner's penis. As we have seen before, "Many men enjoy being masturbated by their partner while they have his penis in their rectum. He, in turn, may be glad to oblige because he knows that the anal sphincter will contract during orgasm and thus provide additional stimulation for his penis." (Haerberle 1978, 245)

If the insertee is sitting astride the inserter, and his penis is long enough, the inserter may simultaneously suck his partner's penis, and so they can attain a

kind of circular exchange of semen, emitting and receiving it, just as in the oral "69" position (Henry 1948, 153).

Active — Passive

According to a French investigation, 34% of gay men enjoyed both active and passive anal intercourse; 21% wanted to be inserters exclusively, and 15% exclusively insertees (Buffière 1980, 441). Among Belgian boy-lovers, with 42% practising anal intercourse, 4.5% limited themselves to penetrating the boy, while another 4.5% wanted only to be penetrated by their boy-friends (Carpentier 1985, 4). Contrary to public opinion, such preferences have nothing to do with being or not being "macho", or "virile". "Certainly, in clinical experience one finds men of indisputably masculine physique and attitudes who derive immense erotic satisfaction from the experience of penetration per anum." (West 1977, 38)

- 542 A 24-year-old subject of Gauthier (1976, 205) said, "At first I tried to penetrate men, but I couldn't enjoy it. I ejaculated without sensation of lust. Being penetrated myself, however, I felt pleasure and no pain. Very soon I got used to being taken without preliminaries, without lubricating creams, without spittle. It is not that my opening is so large. Even if it hurt, I just cried out and that was all. Once it was inside, it didn't hurt any more."

When very small boys begin playing sex games, they often try to carry out anal penetrations. Frequently they lose their erections during the attempt and insertion becomes impossible. Age mates "usually require a mutual role exchange as an agreement. (...) This need for mutuality in the homosexual interaction has been observed in four-year-old boys." But as soon as there is an age difference between the two partners, "probably in all cultures the older boys mount the younger ones, and the younger seems to accept this passive role pattern. (...) Interviews with men and boys having sexual relations show that boys between 10 and 16 very often prefer the presenting (passive) role, and this preference does not seem to be related to the requirement of such a role by the adult man." (Langfeldt 1981, 104-105) Duvert (1980, 149) even regrets that "a terrifyingly large number of boys want the passive role, and that exclusively." Peter Schult's experience (1978, 255) is somewhat different: "I often find that boys, though strongly aroused during anal intercourse, don't like to admit it. This is caused not by the anal intercourse itself but by our morality which defines such activities as abnormal, perverse and criminal. What boy wants to be 'abnormal'? There are enough boys, however, who have been honest enough to admit to me their enjoyment, especially those less infected

by our morality, thus mostly youngsters from the proletarian classes and minority groups."

In this connection it is interesting to note the experience of one French gay male during 3-way anal sex where the man in the middle penetrates and is penetrated at the same time. He found it impossible in this position to participate in both activities simultaneously without feeling "dissolved". For the most part he concentrated less upon what he did than upon what was done to him (Dieckman & Pescatore 1980, 141-142).

In "classic" Greek, Roman, Chinese, Japanese and Arabian boy-love, as well as in contacts within primitive cultures, the boy traditionally serves as insertee. It was said about the poet Abu Nuwas that, of course, in his boyhood he used his beauty to earn money serving men while, as an adult, it was his turn to pursue boys (Schild 1985, 77). From him we have the lines, "A lover is not healed from his love by embracing and kissing; his only cure is intercourse", and "It is nonsense to sleep with the beardless unless the arrows are put in their quiver." (Wagner 1965, 121). It was not becoming for the man to be the insertee: it was even scandalous. Martial scoffs in his epigram (III, 71):

*If the boy's cock hurts him, and your arse is sore...
I'm no seer, Naevolus, but now I know what you've been up to.*

It's a quite different situation, however, in man/boy relationships where the partners are equal and everything is permitted that both of them enjoy. There are, then, no fixed rules. According to Thorstad, in contemporary Western boy-love, it is even more common that "the boy fucks the man (...) than the man fucking the boy." (Thorstad & Hocquenghem 1980, 21)

One of Henry's subjects who had experience as a hobo (see also Example 529) said that in these relationships very often it is the old man who gets his pleasure "being buggered" by his young companion (1948, 29). Two other cases from the same investigation:

- 543 "Early in the evening I was picked up in the subway by a man about thirty-five. I was then fifteen. He took me to his apartment and we went to bed. (...) He was a very masculine looking man. I saw him a few times in the next couple of years. Sex consisted mostly of rubbing my penis against the stomach of this man until I had an orgasm. I practised sodomy on him and there was also mutual fellatio. I took the initiative as much as he." (Henry 1948, 135)

"I was still only fifteen years old but I got a job as a cabin boy on a yacht going up and down the coast. Before long one of the deckhands put his arms around me and another got hold of me. They wanted to perform sodomy on me. I fought and the mate put a stop to it. When it was over I went back to the mate's cabin. He asked me if I would like to see a woman. He got out the old vaseline jug and I performed sodomy on him. This was repeated every other night. Suddenly I got a raise in wages. (...) He

never did anything to me. (...) He would have an erection and an emission." (Henry 1948, 457)

- 544 An American related: "When I was in junior high school, some of the older boys would goose me and play with my ass in a teasing way and I found that extremely erotic, and when I masturbated I fancied being Aled. I'm sure that those fantasies, in which I greatly enjoyed the AI, paved the way for my persuading myself to sometime let someone do it. That sometime came sooner than I expected, and that first time though painful was extremely exciting and erotic, and so from then on my masturbatory fancies were full of spankings and AI. (...) There is nothing still that I enjoy as much as being Aled by a very young boy, especially if he greatly enjoys it, with musical sighs and ecstatic groans when he comes. Also, of course, there isn't ever any pain with a very young boy, and he can usually bounce in with spit, without any lubricant even, with no problem at all. However, there were a few occasions when I took on someone that was too huge and too rough, and I had some rather serious after-effects (although I must say that the roughest so greatly enjoyed it that I found it magnificently exciting). And the after-effects, painful for days, were extremely erotic, indeed the mild pain as I moved and sat, reminded me continually of the excitement of the act, and the pain during bowel-movements was intensely erotic." (*Boy-Love Newsletter*, Nov 8, 1971)

It is not unusual for the two partners to want to take turns, just as boys will do with their peers. In the orgies at the Siwa oasis (see page 40 ff Vol. 1) the boys are alternatively passive and active, and, in non-orgy times, the boy is the active one "in many but not the majority of instances. (...) They call it *ed dudah*, 'the worm', because it feels like a worm in the rectum." (Schieffelin, quoted by Bauserman 1986, 76). In the "Arabian Nights' Entertainments", Abu Nuwas proposes to three boys, offering them wine and meat:

*Then eat of these and drink of those old wines that bring you jollity:
And have each other, turn by turn, shampooing this my tool you see.*

Burton, the translator, (1885, V 65) notes, "It refers to what Persian boys call, in half-Turkish phrase, *Alish Takish*, each acting woman after he has acted man."

- 545 Interesting in this connection is a case history cited by Henry (1948, 442-443). Victor (23) said, "When I was fourteen I had an affair with a garage employee whom I admired, a strong, well-built man, six feet tall and twenty-one years old. He performed sodomy on me. He more or less forced me into it. I thought it was terrible at first but afterwards it was all right. After that I went with another man of twenty-seven for about a month and then I decided I wouldn't do it anymore. (...) At sixteen I met another masculine boy of twenty-one. We became very good friends and one night we slept together. I pretended I was asleep and he performed sodomy on me. I didn't care for it as I was interested in kissing and embracing. After an affair of three or four months

I started doing it to him. Then he got married and I didn't see him for quite a while, not until a Thanksgiving party. He was dressed in women's clothes and he asked me downstairs and forced me to do it. I said I wouldn't let him unless he let me do it first. (...) For three or four months nothing happened until I met a large and strong Swedish fisherman at Coney Island. He was twenty-eight years old and had had experience. He took me to his home and performed sodomy on me. I asked him to do it and I paid the bills."

Since it takes some skill on the part of the inserter to penetrate his partner without hurting him, it is much better if he himself has been penetrated and so can know what his partner is feeling. Strato likened the act to wrestling ("Bend your opponent, take aim, push, thrust it in, hold him tight!"), during which the trainer calls out to his pupil (*Anthologia* XII, 206):

*Move, now still yourself, my Kyris,
And bear my breaking in.
Before you try to do it yourself,
Have it first done to you!*

"You do it, and have it done to you, in very different ways, depending upon how familiar or unfamiliar you are with the other role, and like or dislike it. If you have experienced it both ways, the act gives pleasure to two equals; it's not a scene with people playing roles rigidly assigned beforehand. I would thus advise 'macho' men to allow themselves to be vigorously thrust into: nothing is more productive of the spirit of equality than habitual give and take." (Duvert 1980, 152)

It was just this possibility of alternating roles in intercourse that made Paul Verlaine think homosexual love, tender and raging, preferable to its trite heterosexual counterpart:

*To comply with their desire, each of them, in turn,
Performs the most sublime act, raised to perfect ecstasy.
Now it is the hand, now the mouth, now the vessel,
Dizzy as the night, glowing like the day.
Their tangling is great and merry. No cries,
No faintings, no nervousness: rather dare-devil play. And, after,
Happy, tired arms embracing necks, to sleep,
The two together, less pining than closely linked,
Their sleep only broken off to play anew.*

Patzer (1982, 48) claims that in ancient Greek boy-love anal penetration was strictly prohibited; it was only done to prostitutes. He offers no proof of this,

and his opinion is contrary to what is generally believed. It is true that in many of the vase paintings genital contact never gets beyond copulating between the thighs, but Ungaretti (1982, 13) reasonably suggests that this could depict foreplay rather than consummation. In Sparta it was said "that virgins there were used in the same manner as boys." (Sergent 1986, 60, 245) In one group of vases depicting sexual acts between contemporaries, anal intercourse is clearly taking place (Davies 1985, 159).

Greek and Roman authors themselves often differed about what the boy felt while serving as insertee. According to Dover (1978, 52) the conventional Greek answer was that the boy derived no physical pleasure from the act at all. Vase paintings not unusually show boys apparently uninterested or bored when approached by an adult lover (Ungaretti 1982, 13). And Xenophon, indeed, stated pessimistically, "The boy does not share in the man's pleasure, as a woman does; sober himself, he observes how the other is drunk with lust; small wonder, then, if he even begins to despise his lover." (quoted by Koch-Harnack 1983, 145) Lukianos actually denounces the practice in a plea against boy-love: he makes Charikles observe: "The lover thinks the boy affording him this delight is enjoying himself, but really that boy experiences only stinging pain and tears, and when he finally accommodates to it and the pain subsides it is still only disagreeable and he finds no pleasure in it." (Buffière 1980, 492) The Greeks used to say that the boy was rendering a service to the man, was serving him as a subordinate (Dover 1978, 44-45). To Plato, intercourse, for the boy, was a sacrifice he made (Buffière 1980, 442). In Rome, Ovid expressed similar thoughts in his *The Art of Love*:

*I hate a union that exhausts not both.
To fondle boys 't is this that makes me loth.
(II 683-684, transl. B. P. Moore)*

It was thus supposed that the boy ought to be recompensed. Gundela Koch-Harnack made a study of the animals traditionally presented by men as gifts to boys they courted (1983). Birds were often given, and in Aristophanes' comedy the chorus of birds sings, "Many an attractive boy, refusing coldly, has, at the approach of the frontiers of youth, been won for loving by our power." (*The Birds* I 701-702)

But there is contrary evidence as well. We have already referred to Aristotle's fear that boys could be turned into homophiles through the pleasure they experienced during intercourse with men (Dover 1978, 168). Moreover, men often fondled the boys' penises during the act, and this certainly was stimulating to the boys. In quite a number of vase paintings we can see the man tickling the penis of a boy with one hand and caressing the boy's chin with the other:

this was a traditional expression of love; it was an invitation, and also a prelude to intercourse. The ability to fondle the young partner's genitals as he was anally penetrated was, as we have already seen, considered an advantage boys had as lovers over girls (Dover 1978, 204). Strato said bluntly that the girl's vagina had no sphincter muscle with which to clasp your penis, and if you took her from behind she had nothing in front to take hold of (*Anthologia* XII, 7). Hupperts (1986, 60), moreover, points out that there are several vase paintings of boys showing by their erections the pleasure they feel at being fondled by men who were evidently intent upon arousing them.

But the most eloquent testimony comes from Roman literature, Petronius' *Satiricon* (LXXXV-LXXXVII). The hero of this fragmentary comic epic written during the reign of Nero, meets an old "hypocrite" who tells him this amusing story:

546 During a tour of duty in Asia I made together with a quaestor, I was welcomed with much hospitality in Pergamon. I felt very happy there, not only for the beautiful lodging, but also for the presence of the extraordinarily handsome son of my host. I pondered how I could start an affair with him, without making his father suspicious. So, when during dinner the conversation turned to boy-love, I blushed deeply and by my severe countenance I made it clear that such obscene talk offended my ears. The mother especially considered me then to be a very virtuous philosopher. Soon I was allowed to accompany the boy to the gymnasium and to supervise his homework. Shortly afterwards I started to instruct and educate him myself, so as to prevent anyone wanting to court him from entering the house. Arrived a festal day when there were no lessons. We were both lying in the dining-hall. It had been a jolly evening, and we were too lazy to get up. At midnight I perceived that the boy was still awake. Softly and shyly I addressed the goddess of love with my vow: "Almighty Venus, if you permit me to kiss this boy without him becoming aware of it, I'll give him tomorrow a pair of pigeons."

As the boy heard what I was willing to pay for my pleasure, he immediately began to snore loudly. I went to the little hypocrite and gave him a few kisses. Satisfied with this start, I got up early in the morning and bought a pair of nice pigeons. I brought them to him, who sat already waiting for the fulfilment of my promise.

The next night the opportunity was favourable again, but this time I advanced a little more: "If I may touch him with an enterprising hand without him perceiving it, I'll grant him for his tolerance two pugnacious game-cocks."

At this promise the boy drew willingly nearer. I believe he was afraid I'd fall asleep again. I satisfied our desires, with my entire body snuggling against him, enjoying my lust, although avoiding the ultimate. As soon as daylight returned I bought him, who was highly pleased, what I had promised. Then there was the third night, anew a favourable occasion. I got up and whispered in his ear, while he was pretending to be asleep: "O gods immortal, if I can enjoy the complete, desired delight with this sleeping boy, I will give him tomorrow as a prize for my happiness a magnificent Macedonian riding horse, on condition, however, that he'll not perceive it."

There was never anybody so deeply asleep. First I felt his white, tender breast, then I kissed him on his mouth, and finally there was the happy fulfilment of all my desires.

At day-break the boy kept sitting upon his bed, awaiting that I would accomplish my promise, as usual. Everybody knows that it is easier to procure pigeons and cocks than a horse. I was afraid, moreover, of provoking suspicion by such a very large gift. So I went out for a walk for some hours. When I returned, empty-handed, I kissed him. He looked everywhere, embraced me and asked, "Well, Sir, where is the horse?" (...)

My bad faith had destroyed everything I had accomplished so far; nevertheless it was my most fervent wish to re-establish our former relationship. After a few days, good luck assisted me again. When I had ascertained that his father was sleeping soundly, I begged the boy to reconcile himself with me; that is, to allow me to satisfy him. I said all such things as are dictated by raving lust. But he was evidently still mad at me and his reply was: "If you don't go to sleep I'll tell my father everything!"

But in life nothing is unattainable. Impudence leads to victory. "I'll call my father," he threatened.

Notwithstanding this, I threw myself upon him, and in spite of his feigned resistance I enjoyed my climax. The boy wasn't without some pleasure at my insolence, and only complained lengthily about my deceiving him. He had boasted of my gift to his comrades, and now they were laughing at him and ridiculing him. "But I'm more generous than you. If you want, you can do it again."

So everything was pardoned and I was in favour anew. Tired after a repeated effort, I fell deeply asleep. But the boy wasn't satisfied by only one repetition. He was in his bloom, at an age which pushes him toward passionate abandonment. He woke me up and asked, "Don't you want to do it any more?"

His willingness was not entirely unwelcome to me. Panting and moaning, I achieved what he wanted and, exhausted from lust, I fell asleep again. Within an hour, however, he was pinching me awake again, "Why don't we do it another time?" Furious at this continued interference, I told him, in my turn, "Go to sleep—or I'll tell your father everything!"

The division of opinion can be explained by ambivalence about being inserted. Greek boy-love was thought to help the beloved boy achieve virile adulthood, i.e., to make him more male. But on the other hand the position of insertee was despised and considered unmanly. Therefore one could not admit that the boy could really enjoy it (Davies 1985, 160); the convenient fiction was invented that the boy only suffered what was done to him, deriving no pleasure from it, and this fiction was adhered to even in the face of contrary evidence (Foucault 1984, 245-247). Among Western boys of today it is much the same: they may like passive anal sex, but, as this is not approved of—is, in fact, considered "queer"—they deny they enjoy it, or pretend they do it only for the money they can earn (McMullen 1987, 15). We will come back to this point later in the present chapter.

Of a similar origin is the claim some boys make that they were used while asleep without their knowledge or consent:

547 Rafael tells: "At sixteen I practised sodomy for the first time. I was with Boy Scouts in the country. One boy would pretend to be asleep and the others performed sodomy.

I enjoyed it. This boy liked it that way. He pretended he was asleep as otherwise the boys would knock him in the head or pinch him. Only one of my brothers participated. He said it was all right to take the active role." (Henry 1948, 387)

Of course this is just pretence. Abu Nuwas used to ply boys with wine in order to rape them when they were sleeping off their drunken state. And even then one victim woke up: "I went to him with my member straight, having my battering-ram prepared for its head-thrust. When I had sunk my dart inside him, he regained consciousness, like someone regaining consciousness after being wounded. I said to him 'By your father, this thing won't trouble you, and you have no need to revile me.' He replied 'You've won, you're welcome to fuck me, but do it cautiously, and as generously as possible.' And when I had laid my weight upon him, he seemed to be singing hymns of praise." (Schild 1985, 77-78)

The anus is much more extensible than is commonly supposed. The British Wolfenden Committee, certainly not a public body bent on minimising sexual problems, stated "that cases in which physical injury results from the act of buggery are very rare" even where the passive partner is young (1963, Sect. 85; O'Carroll 1980, 122). Helen Navin (1981, 69-70, 72) described "handballing parties" in the USA, where 10 to 15 naked men come together and for five or six hours take turns inserting their fists and arms up to well past the elbow into each others' anuses while the others look on. Since this demands a great deal of concentration, talking is prohibited. The insertee gets an erection and ultimately ejaculates. This practice is strenuous and risky (since the colon higher up is insensitive and wounding might not be noticed), but not necessarily painful. "Many participants claim that even those who have practised handballing regularly for many years have had no lessening of anal muscle tone, or at least have not been troubled by incontinence." Peter A. Larkin ("Purusha") calls this "the most powerful and reliable ecstatic ritual of our time" and mentions "the incredible intensity of the orgasm" brought about by "the vigorous massage of the prostate gland." (1981, 110)

In the prudish nineteenth century the French physician Tardieu (1878) put forward his theory of the "infundibulum": with repeated insertion of a penis, the anus would become funnel-shaped, a smooth-funnel form replacing the original wrinkles. Thus inspection of the anus could establish whether someone had been subject to anal intercourse. (Tardieu was evidently a rather imaginative man: he claimed in addition that the inserter's penis would be distorted through the act until it took on the shape of a dog's.) (1978, 260-263, 265; Cf. Bullough 1976, 638; Rohleder 1907, II 83-88; Sutor 1964, 81-82). This, of course, was utter nonsense, since the anal tissues are quite elastic enough to rapidly resume their original form (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 336). Perhaps this old wives'

tale has its origin in the poet Eubulos' tale about the Greeks during the Trojan war. It was said that, in the absence of women, the soldiers had to use each other, and after ten years of siege they had "bottoms more gaping than the city's gates". (*Anthropophyteia* VII, 164) Anal funnelling may be nonsense, but for many decades it persisted in the scientific literature, and it has only recently, reluctantly and incompletely, been abandoned. There are still policemen, prosecutors and judges who believe it, or pretend to believe it in order to intimidate witnesses. Recently in England one Marietta Higgs, a physician at a hospital in Cleveland, caused great distress to children and parents by inspecting anuses, putting many children into foster homes and accusing their fathers of incest.

- 548 In one town, probably Marrakech, Duvert (1976, 122) got to know a boy he calls Francisco. He took the boy to his room. "I had reflected upon what I wanted from him and what he doubtless wanted from me. Thus I was prepared for him to penetrate me. But we had hardly begun to touch each other when Francisco, who was lying on his back, turned to press himself against me. He seized my cock, spat upon it, lubricated it and inserted it into himself. Or rather he engulfed it in one movement. Now, this candy-stick is rather big. It is not a banquet in itself, but neither is fashioned for Lent, and it isn't often someone takes it into himself the way Francisco did, without strain or grimace. Yet his anus wasn't stretched; he had a normal hole, very active, small, muscular, and he could open it at will. Later I discovered that the other boys here who have it done to them often have a similar control over their bodies. Instead of confronting the cock with a ring which has to be forcefully pierced, they spare themselves pain by opening the anus as though it were a mouth. I was surprised that I was almost completely unable to exercise a similar control over my own body."

Once a boy becomes accustomed to it, his anus will accommodate even frequent and vehement use. In the porno film *Harem* by Tony Dark (Cadinot Studio, Paris), we see a young Frenchman being fucked by a Tunisian, who repeatedly and roughly thrusts his rather large penis into the young actor's anus, withdraws it all the way, and again thrusts it in all the way to the scrotum—all this apparently without hurting his partner. If we can believe a somewhat suspect source (Drew & Drake 1969, 142), in Mediterranean and Near East brothels, the boys often satisfy up to ten clients a day without their anuses being hurt. Eglinton (*Boy-Love Newsletter* 22/11/71) cites the example of a certain "R" "who has been experimenting with anal intercourse from age 11 to 14, was so cautious in use of lubricant, choice of partners, etc., that despite a certain amount of concern on that score over the years he had no trace of muscle damage", and also "Billy H." "the Texas boy who from age 15 made it with an average of 100 sailors a month" and never had such trouble.

- 549 One of Léonetti's subjects was a hustler who told him he satisfied an average of five or six clients a day. "There are also days when I do it with 12 or even 20. (...)

The anus is a circular muscle, a muscle like any other that will be strengthened by being put to work. I don't see why using your anus should harm your health. And I frequently go to a physician who give me a thorough check. He hasn't found any deformity." (Léonetti 1978, 214)

- 550 (Continued from 528) Onno had similar experience. "At times Nick, who had his own social life, sent me to John for the weekend. The night before my departure Nick would satisfy himself thoroughly upon my body—needing an advance, as he put it. That meant he needed an orgasm Friday night and again on Saturday morning. Later that day I would take the train to John, and John would have intercourse with me that night. Early the next morning he let me go upstairs and get into bed with his young servant Dieter, who also penetrated me. And then that afternoon the three of us went to Rob, another of Nick's friends. In the summer there were always a group of at least half a dozen gays on Rob's sundeck, all naked, oiled and randy. A long orgy ensued. Dieter and I, as the youngest, were both frequently fucked, with the others watching and waiting their turns. The next night I would again spend in John's bed, and he would be active once more. Monday I would return to Amsterdam, taking the tram directly to the painter G., where I would pose nude for him, and waiting at the tram stop I would experience a curious 'singing' feeling in my arse, reminding me of all those hours of delight with all those men. Posing for G., I would be radiantly happy, playful, exuberant—and acting so sexily it would affect G., who would throw off his clothes and once again I would be fucked. At night, when Nick and I were naked together again, I had to tell him everything, all the details, and this would arouse him violently, make him brutally horny. In his frenzy he would fuck me without a lubricant, mercilessly. I wouldn't have missed this experience for anything in the world. It was the period of my bloom, of perfect bliss." (Personal communication)

Anal injury is only to be feared in instances of forceful rape or other brutal practices.

- 551 Lord Byron (1788-1824) said he had to consult a physician about the "overworked anal sphincter" of his beloved 15-year-old French-Greek friend Nicolò Giraud (Greif 1982, 28).
- 552 Ellis (1913, V 84) mentions the case of a 16-year-old American boy who used to let a large dog do it to him. One day something startled the dog and "in attempting to extricate his swollen penis from the boy's rectum he tore through the sphincter and an inch into the gluteus muscles."

Copulation between boys and dogs has been staged in brothels as a live show for clients. Guyotat (1967, 359-367) depicts such a scene down to the finest details and describes the boy's mortal fear of being subjected to the dog's salacity.

It is often thought that a very large, especially a very thick penis is an obstacle to anal intercourse. Bowie (1970, 186) reproduces a humorous Japanese drawing depicting the plight of a man with an enormous erection. "He is unable to

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

insert it into the fundament of the youth (kneeling in front of him) without causing serious damage."

553 Jackson (1989, 62) reproduces a letter from a gay "lonely hearts" column (Dear Uncle Go) in a Thai newspaper: "When I was about fourteen I came to work in Bangkok. (...) My friend N and I used to share the same bed. One night I woke up because I felt someone holding my dragon. Uncle, would you believe I was fourteen and still hadn't helped myself? N. came in the back gate. At first it hurt a lot but then I felt a strange sort of happiness. (...) A couple of weeks later the boss's son, a year older than me, befriended me and asked me to sleep with him. Uncle, on the third night I got quite frightened because my back gate hurt a lot. I didn't let him continue because his thing was too big. (...) Uncle, how could anyone take him when it was as big as a horse's?"

554 Barrington tells the story of a 25-year-old postal officer: "I'm a fat 6½" erect, so I can't fuck young guys," while a brown-black Jamaican of 28 told him, "Even at 15 I had a huge cock; it's 9" now. (...) Screwing is my main scene sex-wise, man. I first did it with a man at 17 and he had me too. Mostly it's done to me, 'cos mine's too big for most guys to take." But a 26-year-old dramatist, on the other hand, said, "I tend to collect big cocks, anything up to 9½" I've taken happily. I love to be fucked by 6"-plus studs, all hard muscle and shiny black skin with cocks that are huge and never go soft no matter how long we screw." (Barrington 1981, 68, 86, 76)

The age of the boy-insertee (within reason) would seem to be no obstacle either. According to Aristophanes (*Ecclesiazusae* 112-113) the Greeks admired boys who sustained "vigorous thrusts" and said they made the best orators.

555 "When I was ten and eleven, a neighbor boy, five years older than I, would visit me and persuade me to have sex with him. Frequently he would penetrate me anally, which was painful at first but soon became surprisingly pleasurable and I found myself anxiously waiting for his next visit." (Friday 1981, 145)

556 A French journalist who loved 11- and 12-year-old boys and for whom anal penetration was an essential element in his relationships with them, said, "My cock is very large, but I've never yet met a boy whose anus was too small to let me enter." (Personal communication)

557 (Continued from 550) Among the many men with whom Onno had relationships, there were two with very large erections. One was the young man mentioned in Example 44 who made a living out of displaying his organ. The other, a dentist, used to tell him, "Now, just grin and bear it!" As an old man, Onno, upon seeing a photo of a teenager with a very large penis, wrote, "Looking at this enormous cock and remembering all the similar-sized cocks that have penetrated me—completely, right up to the balls—all I can think of is what wonderful times I have had!" (Personal communication)

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

In Chapter Four we mentioned "peg houses", brothels in the Near East and Mediterranean countries where boys were prepared for their task by having wooden pegs inserted into their anuses. Gradually longer and thicker pegs were used, and so a boy could accommodate progressively larger members. Being accustomed to this stretching facilitated insertion without any pain or effort. (Bullough 1976, 305; Karsch-Haack 1906, 13; Marcuse 1926, 540) Japanese boy brothels where more sophisticated sex play was expected of the boys, often used another system of education. They employed experienced trainers who taught and exercised the novices for months until they were suitably prepared for their jobs. (Krauss 1907)

558 A American tourist met a 12-year-old boy at Amsterdam's Central Station and took him to his hotel. The boy asked for 30 cents to go to a movie (this was 1971). "Hard as soon as clothes were off, but wouldn't jerk me off or oral intercourse. (...) So I requested anal intercourse. (...) He had never been anally intercoursed before. He moaned, whined and whimpered (in English), 'Oh de pain, de pain'. I felt a whine and stopped, but he said, 'Go on, I want 30 cents.' So I did. Sobs, tears and wiggles, but he was a virgin no longer. Five seconds after it was all over, he gave me a passionate kiss because I gave him \$ 1.00. 'All for me?' Huge eyes. The next day I had him again and it didn't hurt so much because I let him poke a vibrator up first and keep it there for about half an hour while I orally intercoursed him. He loved it, but still gasped and squirmed when I went in." (*Boy-Love Newsletter* 13/12/71)

Theokritos (V, 41-43) made fun of this situation in the conversation of two shepherds recalling their boyhood coupling:

Komatas: Then I took you from behind. You jerked in pain, and all the nanny-goats around us started bleating, and the Billy-goats jumped them.
Lakon: Why you crooked old hunchback, may they bury you no deeper than you pushed it in me then!

In Ancient Rome anal rape, painful and humiliating, was an official punishment for certain crimes (Borneman 1978, 82). Many boys, of course, are afraid of having this done to them.

559 There is an Arab anecdote about a man who offered a lad two dirham. The boy went off with the man, but at the crucial moment resisted, saying, "Put it between my thighs." The man replied, "You little cheat, for forty years I've had it between my thighs and nobody's ever paid me two dirhams for that!" (Tifachi 1977, 181)

560 In his short story *The Drunken Ship* Pierre Herbart (1970, 11-40) also treats the theme with humour. A ship has just returned from a long trip and the crew, after unloading the cargo, refuses to set off immediately before the men have a chance to go into town and have their pleasure with the local women. But the captain is in a hurry: he offers

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

the men his two cabin boys as substitutes. Mortally afraid, the two boys jump overboard and save themselves from this fate by swimming ashore.

If pain and fear were all there was to it, the solution would be simple: a man who really loved boys would want to see them happy and cheerful, and he would therefore abstain from a practice which hurt them. A man who didn't would be an egoist: even, if he enjoyed their pain, a sadist.

Actually the situation is far more complicated. First of all, the pain usually wears off rather quickly and the boy begins to experience pleasure; sometimes that pleasure is so intense that he will come to prefer anal penetration to all other sexual practices. Second, being penetrated affords the boy a kind of experience he cannot gain otherwise and that may prove quite helpful to him in his later sex life. Third, anal intercourse gives the partners a profound feeling of being united, and so sometimes boys insist on this being done to them, willingly and gladly suffering any accompanying pain.

Let us first consider the pain. Pain and pleasure are not necessarily opposites; if we don't keep this in mind it will be difficult to understand the following examples. Pain and pleasure may, in fact, fuse together. It is then only when pain becomes too intense that pleasure can no longer be perceived through it.

A striking example is the custom reported in former times of some Borneo native tribes where the glans penis of boys was pierced from right to left by drilling a hole through it into which a 2-inch stick (ampallang) was inserted before intercourse. The ampallang caused considerable pain, both to the vaginal walls and the mutilated penis, but both partners seemed to enjoy this extra stimulation, and the practice was quite popular. Similarly, Europeans and Americans sometimes use condoms with strings or "goats' eyes"; like the Indian followers of the Kamasutra, they often bite their partners out of sheer lust during intercourse (Ellis 1913, III - 97-98).

With quite "normal" people, a little pain intensifies pleasure (Larkin 1981, 93-102)

- 561 A woman told Gauthier (1976, 251), "Anal intercourse hurts—really hurts—you can't fool yourself, it really hurts. But it is marvellous!" And Nichols (1976, 31) tells of a boy crying, "Put it in deeper, 'cause it hurts so nice!" Sheik Nefzawi (1963, 55) quotes a poet:

Between his buttocks I thrust home, and tears streamed from his eyes. "Why not drive it hard?" he cried.

"Out of pity for you, my lad," I said. "Oh, to hell with that!" he cried.

John Bishop described a similar scene with some subtlety in his short story *Del* (1984, 118-120).

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

Perhaps it is partly this mixture of pain and pleasure which makes insertees long for partners with large penises.

- 562 In a public convenience in Geneva, Ernest found the following graffito: "I'm 14. I like it when my uncle licks my arsehole and my balls and then drives his thick, long cock slowly very deeply inside me. By jerking me off he excites me and makes me come. His cock is 23 cm., and 5½ around." (1979, 82)

- 563 Hennig (1978, 319-320) interviewed a young hustler, Marc:
When a man penetrates you with his cock, it feels to you as though you are absorbing all energies, and this is closely connected with your adoration of supermen...
 And of men with very, very large cocks—I'd say with abnormally big cocks.
You say this is almost like worship, taking part in a sacred ritual.
 It's sacred anyhow. To me, a man with gigantic genitals is someone you must kneel down in front of. It's so magnificent, an immense phallus. You're getting back to the primeval religions of mankind, which were like that: you just have to see those stones they erected.

Lust and pain are especially linked in boys with masochistic tendencies (and in puberty and adolescence sexuality is often coloured with masochism). A prison rape victim wrote, "I know that my experience (...) was the most terrifying event of my life. It was also the most intense sexual experience I have ever had. Memory suppresses the terror and retains the sexuality." (quoted by Schild 1985, 202). And one of Barrington's (1981, 113) subjects said, "I do like the first pains a big cock on a strong passionate man gives, and then the pain after he goes on for a long time, and the pain next day to remind me of last night's thrills."

And so a boy may allow himself to be subjected to this practice with mixed feelings of fear and joy.

- 564 Drew and Drake reported hearing boy prostitutes speak about an "itching in the rectum", "of the heart beating faster and the breath becoming shallow and difficult, of being fascinated by the desire of the customer." "I enjoy every minute of it, until he actually begins," said a 14-year-old. Another boy, with a preference for brutal, primitive customers, said, "When I find out that *that* is what he wants, I begin to get woozy and I feel that I will faint." A 12-year-old was exploited by a pimp who didn't let him have anal intercourse more than twice a week, and that only with a rich customer. The boy said "he was almost hypnotized for hours by a man's penis once he knew that anal intercourse was on the evening's agenda." (Drew & Drake 1969, 180-181)

- 565 Peter Schult analysed his feelings in considerable detail when he had his first experience of this kind with a hustler whom he called Marlon Brando for his resemblance to the well-known actor. "Marlon Brando was a powerful fellow with a gruesome thick cock, and I let him fuck me simply out of curiosity. It was enormously

painful, but that pain was all mixed up with a lustful sensation which I found strangely moving. I was torn by the wish that he would stop, that it would all come to an end, but also that he would continue. The initial pain gradually subsided as he went on fucking and the lust feelings prevailed, until finally I actually wanted the pain to return, and I abandoned myself more and more intensely to my partner. After that experience, before I fucked another person, I always let him fuck me. That meant playing the passive role which was against my nature. Soon I stopped doing that. But later, in the Foreign Legion, I went through another period when I got turned on by being fucked, and I made young Arabs fuck me and had the same kinds of feelings I had had with Marlon Brando in Stuttgart: initially fear of the pain I would have to endure mixed with lust caused by this pain; then the subsiding pain and the wish it would resume which inevitably caused me to provoke my partner to thrust more and more violently and deeply, until pain and lust merged into one single feeling of bliss. The next time the scene began, the initial fear was there again." (Schult 1978, 76)

- 566 Tony Duvert described his own reactions, "I had to wait until I was twelve before I was really taken from behind. I had done it with age-mates—they tickled my anus very nicely indeed—but that couldn't appease my desire for a really big cock. All I could do was jerk one of those off from time to time." To get what he wanted "rape was needed—with, of course, me as actor. My victim was a boy of 15 or 16 with whom I'd sometimes mutually masturbated. I went to great pains to persuade this big-cocked block-head to mount me. He didn't want to do it—it wasn't to his taste. But finally I got what I wanted. And all that reckless hammering, those vigorous thrusts like a madly rutting dog—it hurt a lot, but I didn't say a word and let him finish the job. In the midst of the pain there were a thousand pleasures. Afterwards I sat on the toilet for a quarter of an hour: I thought something was flowing out, but nothing came. Then the feeling subsided. What remained was an endless series of sensations incubating my memories. I was dying with desire to repeat it." (Duvert 1980, 25-26)

It is little wonder, then, that a loving, tender man shrinks from imposing such suffering upon his young friend. But he may be astounded to find the boy insisting upon his own "execution"!

- 567 (Continued from 427) Conny's friend Jan had previously had a relationship with Botho, beginning when the boy was ten and a half and continuing thereafter for more than three and a half years. They initially satisfied each other by mutual masturbation, but one day after they had known one another for quite some time they were standing together under the showers at a swimming pool when suddenly Botho announced, "Today I have a big surprise for you: you can take me from the rear." As soon as they were back in Jan's home they decided to try. Botho lay face-downwards on the bed and Jan lay on top of him. As soon as Jan's penis attempted penetration Botho began to cry. "Does it hurt a lot?" Jan asked. Botho nodded. "All right, then," Jan said, "I don't want to do it." He withdrew, but Botho immediately shouted, "No, no! Go on! Go on!" As time went on, after both became more skilled, everything went much more smoothly. Botho used to like to seize Jan's erection and guide it himself into his anal opening.

We will describe Jan's relationship with a second boy, Iisbrand, later. Conny was the third, and that relationship, which began when Conny was twelve and a half, persisted until his fifteenth year, when it evolved into an intimate but non-erotic friendship. Conny was eager to experience every sexual practice. He pleaded with Jan to have anal intercourse with him, but the first time the pain was so intense that he yelled and wept. Jan firmly refused to continue. Conny ran to the bathroom and stayed there so long that Jan became concerned and went to see what was going on. He found Conny sitting there trying to prepare his anus by inserting into it the handle of a toilet brush. Conny continued to insist upon being taken anally and Jan finally gave in. As a young man of 20, Conny told me, "The first time it hurt really tremendously; the second time it gave me a sort of nauseated feeling; the third time it felt good!" Conny would kneel down, spreading his buttocks with his hands for Jan to enter him, or he would have Jan lie on his back and then squat over him and impale himself upon Jan's erection. (Personal communication)

Some men are driven to ignore the boy's initial resistance not only by their own desires but also by the knowledge that, once the first discomfort is over, the boy himself will soon come to enjoy being penetrated.

- 568 "When I was thirteen a paternal cousin, a married man aged thirty-five, started to feel my breasts. I could feel him getting a hard-on and I put my hand right on it. I started to move my hand up and down and he started to play with my ass. He pulled it out and it seemed I got a kick out of it, it was so big. Next thing he put me on the bed and I couldn't walk or sit down. The next day he said he would try it easy. He kept on going and I got to like it." (Henry 1948, 419)

A more sadistically inclined man may be excited by the boy's expression of pain.

- 569 Jacques de Brethmas (1979, 60) tells a cogent story about his adventure with a 13-year-old bellboy in a Marrakech hotel. He has surprised the boy having sex in a clothes closet with another 12-year-old employed by the hotel. The boy then comes to Jacques' room and impudently demands that he be allowed to do it to Jacques, too. But the boy's erection proves to limp for penetration, so Jacques switches roles to teach the little rascal a lesson. The boy screams, "Oh, oh, oh, ow!" (...) In the moment of pleasure my cock swells even more, and this makes him scream again. I give him more of it than he promised to give me, then withdraw. He turns around, gives me a furious look. He is strongly aroused, showing that all parties have been pleased, even that little rascal. For a while he handles his cock, but he feels so humiliated he doesn't dare ask me again if he could try once more to do it to me. Now he starts seriously jerking off. It all happens surprisingly fast: the first splatters of his ejaculation are hanging on the wall 30 centimetres above the edge of the bed, which is already quite high. Far-flung spurts have covered the pillow, his trunk, his face with long creamy globs: only the last drop of it falls upon his belly. (...) With a rapid movement of his pointed tongue he licks around his mouth, greedily lapping up the sperm he had just jetted there."

Where both partners share sado-masochistic impulses, the boy's torment may prove mutually exciting.

570 (Continued from 557) This was certainly the case in the friendship between Onno and Nick. From time to time Nick liked to make Onno suffer, and even when Nick hurt him rather cruelly, Onno not only accepted this but felt it drew him closer to Nick, and never doubted of the man's love. Throughout the months when Nick was "training" Onno sexually, he had tried out every sexual technique on the boy except anal intercourse. "He then taught me the best position for being fucked: kneeling, knees wide apart and leaning forwards on my elbows, head downwards upon my hand, thus presenting my anus to my lover. Nick had often pressed his glans against my opening but hadn't attempted penetration. Finally he began to express a desire to have his cock completely inside my body. At first I protested: 'Please, be patient... wait...!' Because I was really afraid, especially of the pain. Until now our love had been completely free of pain; it had only been bliss, pure, sunny pleasure, only sweetness. I liked it when he rubbed his cock-tip over my anus, but penetration... oh, no!

"Then one night he carried things through, ignoring my refusal, my resistance, quite disregarding my desires. And I struggled. By rotating my bottom I tried to escape his cock and sabotage his attempt to penetrate me. In a rather threatening voice he said, 'The master will be obeyed!' With all the strength of his muscular arms, he held me helpless in the fucking position, which stopped my rotating manoeuvre, put his glans upon the hole... and suddenly he gave this tremendous thrust. The pain was enormous, but he was inside me, going deeper, deeper, up to the balls. All other sensations were completely blocked by the pain, and that pain continued. At first it blanked out all lust, but gradually it began to subside, and I became conscious of what was happening with me and inside of me. I could feel Nick's lust radiating out of him. I began to enjoy his caresses; hearing his words inspired in me an excess of love. Inside my body I could feel Nick's strong cock going up and down. And I'll never forget Nick's triumphant cry as he came deep inside me with a series of quick repeated thrusts. (...)

"After that night he allowed me a week for recovery and reflection. I became aware of the immense happiness this kind of intercourse could give. I had entered, sexually, a wholly new territory. Nick's penis took on a new, deeper significance and I loved it more than ever before. The next day I was playing with it, looking at it curiously, and Nick said, his voice vibrant with happiness, 'It's been *in* you!' I came to realise that the pain had been mainly due to my resistance.

"After a week Nick resumed my anal education, now using a lubricant. It was my job to make his erection slippery and his to do the same for my anus. He then guided me to relaxed abandonment. He pressed his cock at my anus but didn't enter. He talked reassuringly, softly: 'Stay calm... It's so wonderful... I want it so much!' And so he worked upon my mind until I was no longer tensed up and afraid. Several times he acted as if he was about to insert it, but then didn't, and so my attention wandered. Then suddenly came this penetrating thrust. It hurt for a moment, but the pain was nothing compared to the previous time. He immediately withdrew his cock and the same play was repeated. He did this several times: inserting, pulling out. At last he was so horny he thrust home, hammered me violently with his whole trembling body, until his sperm shot out, deeply inside my body.

"After this kind of practice I became quite familiar with being 'pierced.' It always hurt a little, but that's just part of it, and it even can be a pleasure. Bicycling the day after, I sometimes had to rise up and stand on the pedals to ease the soreness from the seat pressing into my sore backside. But soon we were well adjusted to one another. I also performed the act on Nick, and a few weeks of practice made me quite dextrous in the active role. In fucking another person you get to understand better how to behave in the passive role. But to a boy with my nature it was always more fun to be fucked by mature men than to be active myself. I used to obtain my own satisfaction by passionate hugging or being sucked off by my partner.

"Soon Nick stopped using lubricants so he could give me a 'raw fuck', as he called it. This always elicited a tearing sort of pain but was nevertheless to me the most delightful way of doing it because on our way to orgasm through anal intercourse we didn't have to interrupt our love-play for the lubrication process. And Nick enjoyed inserting himself brutally, although after the act was complete he was always extremely careful and tender. When the lover pulls out, part of the injected sperm, alas, oozes out of the anus, and the man should then wipe it off with a sponge or towel. Nick often kept his cock inside me for a long time after he ejaculated, in order to keep his sperm in me as long as possible. This was a delightful way of relaxing, intimately connected." (Personal communication)

571 When Bill, a 17-year-old Australian boy, was asked, "Who was the first bloke who rooted you?" he replied, "I was about fifteen. It was at a Christian Youth Camp down the coast. We sat up talking one night and got talking and eventually got around to sex. There were ten of us in the hut. Assembly of God Church Rally, I think. The others were all asleep. About 1 a.m. this guy started rubbing his hand up and down my leg. I put my hand on his leg and soon our clothes came off. We were on my bed, he reached for his hair oil and put it right up me for the first time. It hurt at first but after a while I liked it very much. He did it the once. He lasted a long time. He was a very big boy. A neighbour of ours. He's square and roots girls. He lasted about twenty-five minutes up me. It was marvellous while it was up there. He didn't pull me off after it. I did that myself. I sucked his cock too, but he didn't blow again. I went looking for sex after that down the public toilets in the city." (Wilson 1981, 37)

With some boys it is not so much masochism as love for their partners that determines them to endure the pain.

572 (Continued from 538) When he was 16, Max told me, "I had already been intimate with David for some time, but I was only 12 when he said he wanted to take me from behind. He massaged the opening first, but it still hurt a lot—not enough to make me cry, but enough to be unpleasant. But I loved him so much I was happy to make this sacrifice. And one gets used to it very quickly. Now I think the feeling is indescribably wonderful—it makes me really horny." (Personal communication)

It may very well be, however, that the real problem with anal intercourse is often not the initial pain a boy experiences but rather the intense pleasure which accompanies "being used like a girl" and which may terrify a boy deeply concerned with his manliness.

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

- 573 Erskine Lane discussed this matter with a 15-year-old boy named Alvaro after having performed anal intercourse upon him. "If by some strange circumstance you were forced to suck another boy or to let him fuck you, which, I asked him, would you prefer?" "I'd probably suck him... Yeah, I'm sure. I'd suck him." "Why?" "Because if I let him fuck me, I'd probably like it and then I'd do it again. And then I'd be queer..." (1978, 56)

- 574 How painful the struggle between indoctrinated rejection of the insertee role and a boy's underlying desires may be is well illustrated in Bernard's history (see No. 368). He had already been intimate with his friend for two years; they had done virtually everything sexually together save anal intercourse. One night in bed during their love-making Bernard persistently turned his back to the man. At last he was lying on his side, and he reached behind himself, grabbed the man's erection and started pushing it into his anal opening. The man tried to co-operate in what the boy so obviously wanted, but suddenly Bernard threw him off, sprang out of bed, ran to the bathroom and plunged into a shower. (Psychologically it is easy to interpret this as an attempt to cleanse himself of forbidden desires.) A little later the boy returned, naked but frowning, and started to slap his friend. (Again, this can be seen as punishing the man because, with all tenderness, the man seduced him into nearly abandoning himself so shamefully!) But the slapping changed into wrestling, wrestling into romping. And with the romping their erections returned... and so, with the need for discharge, came reconciliation. It was only several months later that Bernard was at last able to conquer his timidity and summon the necessary courage to allow his friend to do what he so deeply wanted him to do. The capitulation was ecstatic: Bernard moaned with delight and shouted with wild passion when he achieved the peak of his pleasure.

An open, friendly discussion could dispel many fears. A boy should be told that this kind of sexual response is a thoroughly normal experience of puberty and early adolescence, and in a heterophile youth it will gradually fade away with time. In his novel *The Chronicles of St. Barnabas* (1986, 121-126) Colin Murchison gives an excellent example of such a conversation with a 12-year-old. With sensible upbringing and proper sexual education, an adult man should be able to look back to this period of his evolution without anxiety or regret.

- 575 Nineteen-year-old Albert, during a discussion about sex, openly admitted, "When I was younger, I liked, among other things, to be fucked." (Dieckmann & Pescatore 1980, 74)
- 576 An extreme example of such an evolution was related to me by Dr. George Rossman. A 15-year-old American boy was so enthralled with passive anal intercourse that he used to let three or four adult men use him one right after the other. By the time he had reached 19 years of age, however, he was living a thoroughly heterosexual life.

To sum up, we can now say that the initial pain a boy experiences in the insertee role is not *in itself* sufficient reason for even a very tender and

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

considerate boy-lover to abstain from the practice, for he might thus be depriving the boy of a source of intense delight.

But there is a second argument: playing the insertee role gives the boy an experience he cannot obtain in any other way and which will be of great benefit to him later in his sexual life. If he evolves into a predominantly homophile man, it is, as we have already seen, important for the inserter to be familiar with the insertee role, and vice versa. If he evolves into a predominantly heterophile man, he will know far better what the girl is experiencing when she is penetrated by her partner's penis and receives it deep into her body.

- 577 "I never really understood how a woman could let a man enter her until I was entered myself. I enjoyed the feeling. It's an experience or a feeling, a state that most men never have. To be penetrated is very different from penetrating." (Hite 1981 A, 491)

- 578 Clarence Osborne reported many instances of boys attracting the attention of older males, enticing them and inviting them to have anal intercourse with them. In all sorts of ways they were active seducers—but active only in making the initial contact and during foreplay, for nearly always they chose to be the passive partner. What they wanted to know was what it felt like to a girl to have a cock inside her. They always kept coming back to this question in their conversations (1977, I 4).

And Dr. Gisela Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg observes that, during initiation rites of primitive peoples in which anal intercourse occurs, the boy discovers "from the example of his partner how to be active in sex; i.e. he learns how an adult man behaves sexually, and thus how he later should behave with girls and women." (1980, 129)

A boy's first experience as insertee ("losing his cherry") is thus rather similar to the deflowering of a girl. We may wonder why nature has made such initiation so painful. Some cultures consider it the product of profound wisdom, since pain makes the act more important and unforgettable; a few peoples even seek to increase the pain by demanding the act be performed brutally. In some Sahara desert areas, the tribesman want to see the bridegroom bleed and suffer just as much as the bride: circumcision is performed during the wedding ceremony, and the young husband must use "his newly-flayed penis in a test of his manly strength when he consummates the marriage." (Berkeley & Tiffenbach 1983, 26). Even under normal conditions it is not unheard of for the penis to be hurt in breaking the hymen (Borneman 1978, 179).

Even when intentional brutality is absent, the psychological impact is enormous. This was beautifully expressed by Vincent, the German student quoted in Example 453. When his loving teacher made him kneel naked on the bed and penetrated him, this Roman Catholic boy experienced the act as "something solemn, like a church ritual."

Quite apart from the pleasure the act may bring him in the end, and the enriching experience he may gain from it, the boy may have a third motive for accepting any suffering he may initially have to endure: the intense satisfaction of union, of amalgamating two bodies into one. "Anal intercourse is a feeling of fullness, warmth, being possessed, cuddled, explored, manipulated, loved, used, needed, and surrounding another man with your own warmth, love, usefulness and needs, etc." (Hite 1981 A, 523)

- 579 (Continued from 570) Onno reflected, "Gradually I came to want men to take me this way. It gave me a powerful feeling of confirmation, of my own value, consciousness of self, of responding to my true destiny. It completed me as a gay boy. It made me more handsome, exultantly handsome and horny. With time the entry of all those cocks went more smoothly; they slid in with more suppleness." (Personal communication)

Other boys may through intuition grow more and more certain that this is what they want.

- 580 "When I was about twelve, for a reason that quite escapes me, most of my fantasies involved anal penetration." This boy searched the *National Geographic Magazine* for articles on primitive tribesmen. "Using the pictures as a base, I would fantasize being ritually sodomized by the tribe's warriors, one after the other. This fantasy was infused by a longing that I did not at all understand, or want to. This was a recurrent and very powerful fantasy. (...) I fantasized endlessly about the unattainable bodies of the seventeen- and eighteen-year-old Adonises that I could see in the changing rooms of our swim club. Their thickly sprouting pubic hair, lithe movements, and firm bodies haunted my imagination." (Hite 1981 A, 937)

"If a boy loves an adult, he knows perfectly well he is still too young to be the giver. He knows this, and accepts the fact that he must be the receiver. And it's an act of love. It is one of his ways of loving you, of proving his love. That was the case with a number of boys I had anal intercourse with. Let me tell you exactly what goes on. He loves to feel the cock of the man he loves inside his body and to be united with him in the flesh. This gives him great satisfaction—and what is also satisfying to him is giving the man who is having intercourse with him, who is enjoying himself inside him, pleasure. That creates in him great joy, because love is giving as well as receiving. It may be difficult for outsiders to understand, but what I've said really is the truth. A child is quite capable of loving sexually." (Dugué, quoted by Leïla Sebbar (1980, 127-128))

Many boys express their deep gratitude by giving of themselves in this way (Nichols 1976, 32). Even small boys may wish to do it.

- 581 One of Léonetti's subjects told him he had met boys even as young as 8 and 11 who insisted on being penetrated. He regretted his inability to accede to their wishes, but his erection failed him. (1978, 164)

- 582 From Oskamp's investigation (1980, 77): " 'One of society's misconceptions is that every paedophile wants to thrust his cock into little asses. Have you ever done it?'
" 'Oh, yes. The first time it happened to me the boy himself asked me to do it. He grabbed it and put it in. I'm always afraid it's impossible.'
" 'Is it possible?'
" 'Yes. Some can take it easily and like it.' "

- 583 Sandfort's subject Erik (42) told about 13-year-old André: "André likes to make love. First he starts fooling around with me; that can happen down here in the living room. And then he likes to lie naked in bed with me. At first a little masturbatory play. André is unique in my experience with other boys in wanting in the end to have anal intercourse—from very early in our relationship he wanted that. (...) He also likes to kiss my genitals but won't go any farther. He enjoys it to a certain extent but he doesn't like real oral sex. It turns him off." (Sandfort 1979, 183)

- 584 The potential strength of a boy's urge is amusingly illustrated by the tale of a tourist who was sexually approached by a 13-year-old boy in the streets of Naples. When his proposal was rejected, the boy offered to give the man 2000 lire if he could introduce him to another tourist more willing to perform anal intercourse upon him. (Archives of the Brongersma Foundation KE-18-5-87)

The intense longing for this unification was most poignantly expressed by Jouhandeau's loving boy:

- 585 "Even if you make me bleed, give it no thought. In your embrace, though you squeeze all the wind out of me, I breathe more freely than anywhere else. There is nothing in this world I venerate so much as this great bough of your being as it penetrates me. It is you, yours, and what ecstasy it is to feel the lust, your lust, in the panting breath of the rider on my back, when you cry out, biting into my ear! Then it's as though I'm lost, melted, fused together with you, and the two of us are just one entity. Shame on those profane who never know the sublimity of these desperately entwined, connected arms and legs." (1955, 201)

Anal intercourse may provide some men and boys their most complete satisfaction and will then be the most decisive step in their sexual contact. As such it is extremely important that it be free of compulsion.

- 586 When Hieron, tyrant of Syracuse (478-466 BC), discussed his love for young Dailokos, a boy widely admired for his beauty, with Simonides the poet, he said, "Of course my love for Dailokos makes me want from him certain favours such as nature impels every man to desire from a beautiful boy. But I'd like him to offer me these out of friendship. I'm incapable of wresting them from him by force. I'd rather kill myself. (...) Taking your pleasure with a boy in a way that's only unpleasant to him, giving him caresses which he loathes—isn't that miserable, insupportable and sad? But if the beloved boy gladly abandons himself to the loving man, then his very willingness is proof that he grants his favours out of friendship." (Xenophon, quoted by Beurdeley 1977, 28)

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

A striking example of how to test such willingness in a young boy was given by Nichols (1976, 96):

587 Johnny has lately become much more affectionate, and when he kissed me this evening, he said, "I'd do just anything for you." So I told him how much pleasure it would be for me if he would let me go inside. He explained that he knew about such things, but had never thought of doing it himself. Johnny sat quietly on my lap for a long time. He then kissed me and said, "You really want to do that?" "Yes," I replied, "more than anything in the world." He sighed and kissed me again. "Why?" he asked. "Because I love you," I said. "And I don't want to do it until you love me enough to want to do it." I wondered what was going through Johnny's mind as he sat on my lap, snuggling against me. I kissed him again, and, probing between his legs, I found that he was quite aroused. "Do we have to do it tonight?" he asked. "We never have to do it," I replied. "You asked me what you could do for me, and I told you the thing that would please me the most, to have you feel my love more deeply and intimately than you have ever before." I do not think Johnny understood what I said; perhaps it was over his twelve-year-old head, and his mind was evidently too full of thoughts and emotions—how I would like to know what they were. What does a boy think at a time like that? He kissed me, and as he did so, he felt between my legs, more gingerly than ever before, as if he didn't want to rouse up something he couldn't take care of. When he found how hard I was, he jumped off my lap. "I've got to go," he said. "When are you going to let me in?" I asked. "Not tomorrow," he replied. "If I go to the country with you on Sunday, then we'll do it. I'll let you know by Friday." Johnny kissed me lightly on the cheek and fled. By now he is in bed and thinking about me. What is he thinking?"

If the big decision is taken and a boy decides to let himself be loved in this way, every precaution should be taken to prevent him from suffering unnecessarily and to lessen any resulting pain.

A boy is "deflowered" when for the first time in his life a penis penetrates his anus. It is important that it be done tenderly, lovingly, in such a manner as to inspire confidence. If the inserter makes vigorous thrusts and plunges in without extreme consideration, the resulting torment may make the boy unwilling to attempt anal intercourse ever again.

588 "When I was about fifteen I went to the seashore with my mother and sister. (...) I was absorbed in a mystery book and a man walking along the boardwalk stopped and asked me what I was reading. He told me he was unmarried, thirty-two, and had a good deal of money. He asked me to come to his room." (...) There "he put his hand on my thigh and then on my penis. I was so excited I was ready to die. He asked me if I would like to take off my clothes. (...) I was terribly excited. He asked me if he could use his mouth. It frightened me terribly. All of a sudden something happened—I had an emission. I asked him to stop. Then I masturbated him. He wanted sodomy so I turned over but it was disastrous—much too painful. I made him stop. I have never permitted sodomy again but I went back to him." (Henry 1948, 250-251)

The Various Practices: Anal Techniques

589 At thirteen "I got a job as a bellhop and of course I was wise. I had two or three amours with men. They would masturbate me or go down on me or vice versa. I didn't go in for much buggery because it was too painful and it didn't especially appeal to me." (Henry 1948, 463. See also Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 227-228)

In deflowering a girl, experts advise tearing the hymen quickly with a sudden, powerful thrust of the penis (Spinner 1931, 177; van der Velde 1926, 258-259). We could liken this to giving an injection: if done quickly, the piercing of the skin is hardly felt; not so if the needle is pushed slowly into the flesh. But this advice does not apply to anal intercourse: there is no rectal membrane to be pierced or torn, rather a ring of muscles inside which has to be stretched in order to allow entry of the penis. And if this is done suddenly, with one powerful lunge, the result is extreme, agonising pain: the muscle is forced inward and the person feels as though he is being torn apart.

The anus is kept closed by the sphincter muscle. If something tries to penetrate, the muscle's involuntary reflex is always a strong spasmodic contraction. With inexperienced persons this spasmodic contraction may last for a minute or even longer (Masters & Johnson 1980, 99). An experienced inserter will soothe the sphincter's protective mechanism by tiring the muscle: introducing the tip of his finger or penis and then withdrawing it again.

590 (Continued from 579) When it came time to initiate Onno, his friend Nick had him get upon his knees on the bed and support the upper part of his body with his arms. Nick knelt behind the boy, between his legs, and "teased" Onno's sphincter by pushing his glans down into the opening and then withdrawing it immediately when he felt the muscle contract. He kept this up for about a half hour. Initially afraid, Onno gradually got used to the new sensations and was surprised when, after this protracted foreplay, Nick suddenly thrust forward and easily penetrated him past the stretched and thoroughly tired sphincter. (Personal communication)

The position of the insertee's body is important: it should be bent at the hips. If the insertee is stretched out flat on his stomach, the insertion will be more painful. The anus and the penetrating penis should be well lubricated. The mental condition of the insertee also makes a difference: he should feel at ease and be able to trust that his partner will not to cause him any unnecessary pain, and will stop immediately if it hurts too much.

591 An American correspondent (Letter LT, 7/1/85 in the archives of the Brongersma Foundation) witnessed the initiation of a pubertal boy. "I obviously don't like to admit it, but in my earlier years, from about 14 to 22, I wasn't too smart in knowing how to enter a young boy without causing a degree of pain to the boy, and so hurt more boys through ignorance than was necessary. (...) I did, of course, learn a little time later from a very dear friend who also enjoyed the anal pleasures of young boys, as he showed me with a little ten-year-old boy-friend he had at home which he had not as yet engaged

in anal sex, but was going to that night. The boy did not seem to be upset with me there as a witness, for he playfully romped about the place stark naked in utter joy. The boy had had oral sex with my friend on several occasions before, so was not scared of an unknown. I'd like to say that I wasn't jealous of my friend, but in fact I was, as the little boy was a delight in both beauty and open nature. (...) My 28-year-old friend was not particularly overly endowed as penises go, but it was more than sufficiently sized to have satisfied most any female should that have been his thing. Anyway, this friend of mine showed me a little later that evening the procedure he used in order to fully relax the boy so the boy would enjoy the sex play as much as my friend would. He first laid two pillows atop one another near the center of the bed, placing the boy's pelvic area in the center of the pillows so his rump was uplifted nicely, and then he performed oral-anal sex on the boy for about 20 minutes, sporadically easing his finger in and working it around. The boy seemed totally relaxed and made no objections whatsoever when my friend put his finger into him. The first part completed, my friend then rubbed an ample amount of baby oil on both his penis and the boy's anal opening. He then mounted the boy between his spread-apart legs and pressed his penis up against the boy's opening until he saw the boy grimace a little bit. Instead of continuing as I would have done, my friend got back off the boy and sat down near the end of the bed and started explaining to me that the best way of doing something like this was to put enough pressure against the anal opening (which he simply called the asshole) with his penis to slightly expand it, and then back away and let it rest for a little while. Next time, he said, it will open a little more, and so forth. It took eight or ten tries and a good hour before my friend easily entered the boy quite deeply without any sign of a grimace on the boy's face."

Once the glans of the inserter's penis has passed through the anal sphincter, further penetration is easy. Dr. Alex Comfort advises "steady pressure with a well-lubricated penis and a slow initial penetration." Too much vigour can cause injury (West 1977, 3-4).

The duration of spasmodic contraction of the anal sphincter will decrease with the number and frequency of previous penetrations. At first the contraction, as we have already seen, will last for a minute or more; in an "experienced" anus the muscle usually relaxes in 10 to 30 seconds (Masters & Johnson 1980, 99) and is increasingly able to be consciously controlled by will.

Sexual arousal tends to numb pain, and so insertion is made easier through erotic foreplay, caressing and otherwise stimulating the insertee's penis. A horny boy will be less put off by minor pain and more willing to continue in spite of it. Acts which in a non-sexual setting would be irritating or even rather painful, may, by increasing the over-all level of stimulation, add to the individual's erotic ecstasy and possibly even make him solicit such "torture" (Larkin 1981, 93-96).

592 "Z says that he became aware of his boy-love interests at about 17 and as a sailor in his younger years he had young boys in every port. Before he was 20 he had developed great taste for and skill in anal intercourse. He says that he probably holds

the world record for the number of young boys he anally intercoursed. (...) He says he is very gentle, and never knowingly hurts one, that many young boys never notice much the initial pain if they are really having fun, are excited, worked up. He never discusses the idea, simply does all things in wrestling, coming to anal intercourse after oral intercourse and many other things. He says there is a great difference between young boys, some taking it so easily, others only with difficulty, some can be anally intercoursed vigorously right off, although he rarely pumps more than 15 minutes, while others have to go slowly for weeks." (*Boy-Love Newsletter*, August 7, 1971)

If the inserter, while breaking down the sphincter's resistance, erotically manipulates the insertee's penis, it will help to lessen his partner's perception of pain. Tickling the anal opening with finger or tongue during pre-penetration foreplay can also engender intense feelings of lust, and this is often used by men to make their boys more willing to take the next great step.

Gabriel Matzneff (1979, 106) described this in one of his poems:

*My tongue laves between your thighs,
Travelling the deep cleft of your buttocks
Where no hair has yet appeared.
You shout, "Oh, yes! Yes! Do it more!"
You thrill to the touch of my pointed tongue
Probing the rosy opening in your cleft.
And when my root slips through, into your body,
You whisper, "Oh, it hurts! It hurts!"
But you don't refuse it.
In the hollow of my hand, dear boy,
I feel your wild heart beating, wildly beating.*

593 An American wrote in the *Boy-Love Newsletter* of April 5, 1971 about a 12-year-old blond boy and the delightful way "he could be persuaded when he didn't want anal intercourse. An hour or two was required to warm him up each time, until what he wanted to refuse was eagerly sought. It was fascinating to watch him move to consent." In the final phase the man would use a vibrator, turned off when inserted in the anus, then turned on once inside. This made the boy "go wild." "He was extremely tight even after months of anal intercourse, which he loved because he was rather masochistic. That hard-won beauty would sustain anal intercourse for an hour, for he had a sense of when the man was about to come and would then cease all motion, for them to stay impaled, to delay it, and as he lay still he was able to produce sensational pleasure by little rippling motions of the canal—quite different from anything the man had ever before found a young boy could do—much better than the typical and delightful contractions that some learn. This canal rippling caused exquisite sensations, at the same time calming the man so that he could have a fresh start for prolonged and vigorous anal intercourse."

- 594 One of Hite's subjects (1981, 943) related that he was similarly persuaded to let himself be penetrated for the first time by a "graceful, witty, handsome young black man." "He managed to titillate my asshole so sensitively that I decided to let him in. He was very sensitive, taking a very long time to work his well-greased, long but not too thick tool in. Then he waited even longer, only moving slightly, until I began to grow comfortable and until he was thrusting away without hurting me in the least. I enjoyed the sensation enormously, but he grew very passionate and could not get enough. He had one orgasm, and went on to another. Then he wanted to go on to another, but I had to beg off. He immediately desisted. It can be a very powerful experience. I thought everything from, now I'm really degraded, to what would my mother think of me now? to ohh, this is really it!"

Finally, it should be added that the rule of initial pain has its exceptions. Some boys seem to have their sphincter muscles well under control and, by commanding them, are able to make penetration easy. We have already seen this with Duvert's partner in Marrakech (Example 548), but he was an experienced boy. There are boys who have this ability to relax their sphincters right from the start.

- 595 A New Zealand boy said, "The first time I went to bed with a guy I knew nothing about arse-fucking. I mean, I knew it existed, but I didn't know anything about it at all. The guy said, 'Is it okay if I fuck you?' I agreed, I said, 'You've done everything else so you might as well do that!' He just rolled me over on my side, facing away from him. I was quite surprised. I thought, 'Oh!' He said, 'This may be a bit cold!' I thought, 'Oh' again and then thought, 'What may be a bit cold? It wasn't cold when I last touched it.' He said, 'It's just KY.' He lubricated my arse then he slid his cock in. I didn't feel a thing, which is amazing. It just went off perfectly. He moved until he came. I felt totally passive. It was over a lot sooner than I thought, like after about 30 seconds." (Tuohy & Murphy 1976, 188)
- 596 (Continued from 567) After his period with Botho and before he came to know Conny, Jan's boy-friend was IJsbrand. Their relations started when IJsbrand was 12 years and 9 months old and continued over two years. Anal intercourse was quite easy for IJsbrand. He always cried, "Deeper! Get deeper inside! Still deeper!" Jan's diary, written in telegraphic style, give us interesting insight into how things developed: *Aug 3*. Got acquainted with IJsbrand in swimming pool. *Sept 21*. First time I saw his genitals. *Sept 25*. Observed that his foreskin sticks to his glans. *Oct 5*. Second examination. Masturbation. *Oct 7*. Foreskin comes loose for a little way down. *Oct 11*. Foreskin entirely loose. *Oct 14*. The rim of his glans is freed. *Oct 20*. He said, "Oh, how wonderful!" *Nov 18*. We are extremely happy. *Nov 22*. He allows me to do it once a week. *Nov 29*. "How does it feel, now, to you, when it's going on?" "Much better!" *Nov 30*. He enjoys it too. *Dec 6*. I'm allowed to do it three times a week. *Dec 16*. "You may do it as often as you want." *Jan 10*. It has never been more marvellous than it is now. *Jan 13*. He tells me, "Being naked in bed—that's the most wonderful thing in our friendship!" *March 7*. His mother tells me, "Since he's been going around with

you, he's always singing." *May 9*. His mother tells me, "He pays more attention to you than he does to us." (Archives of the Brongersma Foundation)

- 597 "O was young, quite young, too young, really... O ran after me. I didn't seduce O: O seduced me. (...) Sex to him was completely natural. He took my cock in his hand just as easily as he would have taken up a pencil at school. This isn't a very good comparison, of course, when you consider the relative sizes. It was I who had the pencil between my fingers: O had to use his whole hand. It may have been my doing that things didn't stop here, but the last step, although at first it didn't enrapture him, caused him no pain either—at least he didn't show any. Quite the contrary: I soon saw he was enjoying it; discovering pleasure in it, even if his young body was still innocent of orgasm. And he didn't just lie there passively: he co-operated: he moved, energetically, lithely, sometimes forcefully. Is anal intercourse abnormal, painful to a boy, unnatural? If so, why did O whisper softly, "It's slid out" every time I hadn't noticed this in the heat of our struggle?" (Schult 1978, 258)
- 598 A graffito recorded by Ernest (1979, 128) would also seem to refer to a first experience: "I'm a boy of fourteen. I was jerking off here once and a man came in and took me to his home, where he undressed me and put his cock into my behind. It was nice."

Superstition accorded healing powers to anal intercourse, especially against snake bites.

- 599 Peyrefitte describes the army of Alexander the Great crossing a region of Asia infested with venomous snakes. Young soldiers and servants complain of being continually assaulted by older warriors claiming anal penetration was the only real antidote to the snakes' poison. Alexander, however, says that an even better cure is to rub one's own sperm into the wound. Soon everywhere in the camp men can be observed openly masturbating to procure for themselves this miracle medicine (Peyrefitte 1981, 252).

It is the mystical aspects, however, which are most commonly encountered, in primitive societies and civilised lands alike. Blood and sperm have always been perceived by man as profoundly significant: they are the carriers of life. With his penis, symbol of virility, the man penetrates deep into the body of his beloved boy, to pour into him his noblest fluid, the germ of life, and in so doing he is swept away himself for some moments in violent ecstasy. Mustn't he, then, at that moment of ejaculation, give the boy some inspiring spark of his own soul?

In Indian esoteric science the image of the labyrinth is very important. It is difficult for man to find the right path in life, the one which leads to its centre, his real self. In his body his intestines symbolise the labyrinth. Ganesh, door-keeper of the mysteries, guards the gateway to this labyrinth, the anus. When a penis enters here, Ganesh is perturbed, and thus the penetrated person

may by spiritually enlightened by the sudden intuition of a higher reality. Stimulating the rectum also stimulates artistic, poetic and mystic faculties in males, and is thus beneficial (Davies 1985, 264). Thus anal intercourse plays an important part in initiation (Daniélou 1979, 156-157). These beliefs and practices are not restricted to India; as we have already seen, they occur in a number of primitive peoples who are convinced that a boy cannot grow into a strong, virile male unless men have poured their seed into him through mouth or anus (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1988, 86, 101, 104; Herdt 1981, 234, 238).

And so the ancient Greeks called the boy-loving man the *eisprèlas* (the inspirer), he who communicates his breath. Even if Patzer (1982, 13) doesn't wish to see this as a proof of the significance of sex in Dorian boy-love, he is inclined to agree with Bethe's vision (1907, 471): "A people living with the conviction that the soul reposes in the seed could easily arrive at the conclusion that a man's soul, his magic, his virtue, could be transmitted to a same-sex companion through his seed, by way of an act similar to heterosexual intercourse."

Buffière (1980, 57) rejects this view. Dover (1978, 202), on the other hand, thinks it is psychologically accurate, and Gisela Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg (1980, 79) calls Bethe's analysis "brilliant": "It was in precisely this act of sexual love that—according to the Doric view—the man transmitted to the boy all those things which he, the boy and the state alike thought good and worthy of procreation. (...) It was believed that it was his real self which he was bestowing upon the boy in his sperm."

Thirty years ago, according to Davidson (1971, 185), pupils of Koran schools in Morocco subjected themselves to anal intercourse by their teachers. These men knew the Holy Scriptures by heart, were therefore holy persons themselves. Wasn't it, then, evident that, with the seed of these holy men in their bodies, the students should be better able to learn the sacred texts?

The Primordial Force

The subject of this book precludes a discussion of sex for the purpose of procreation. We have, however, amply examined it as an expression of love and as a source of pleasure—pure lust. There remains, then, one last, impersonal form: sex as the "oceanic experience", as Freud called it, as abandonment to the primordial forces of nature, to the divine, the Dionysian.

This aspect of sex has been repressed, banished into the unconscious, nearly forgotten in our Western culture. We become conscious of it only when we feel its enigmatic side, its unfathomable mystery, and this is something our rational minds recoil from. The impersonal character of this kind of sex, where the partner's body is only a means to attaining ecstasy, or instrumental in

abandoning oneself to a higher force, is in sharp conflict with our Western cult of the unique I and the unique You.

The poverty and one-sidedness of this culture, then, should be blamed for the scantiness of what we shall now have to say on this subject. Prof. Beemer, a Roman Catholic priest and theologian, considers it incorrect to think the cosmic conception of sexuality (like the hedonistic one) outdated. We tend in the West to conceal "the cosmic dimensions which are part of every fully-lived sexual experience" and are at work on or below its surface. Considered in this way, the cosmic experience of sexuality remains an unpaid account that some day will be presented to society (Beemer 1980, 68-69). It is difficult for us to understand how intimately connected with religion, at other times and with other peoples, sexuality was or still is. Only exceptionally does someone manage to break through the crust, like the young man quoted by Margaret Walters in a magazine article (1979, 305), "When we find our true nature we discover it is nothing other than the beautiful and awesome revelation of divine love itself. Fucking is just a way of saying *Amen*."

Any person who has really experienced sex will have felt its mystery, its unfathomable depth. It is as though his body and his mind has been touched by something cosmic. One of my correspondents cited a text by Gerrit Komrij (without further indicating its source) saying that the real impulse is "the cosmic one, blowing in from on high, intending nothing and doing its worst. This impulse is beyond morality and conscience. It paralyses any reflection. There is no longer any barrier between resolution and execution. Like ecstasy, this impulse is elusive. We don't know when it will come and from where." How true this is! We will see illustrations of it in the following pages.

Carpenter (1911, 165) speaks of "something divine made actual and realisable." And this is the connection between sex and religion recognised in many ages and by many peoples.

The essence of sacrifice is abandoning something; the highest sacrifice a man can make is to abandon himself. To the Western mind, the male, in the sexual act, reaffirms himself, asserts his dominance; Eastern philosophy accentuates man losing himself, being carried along by unfathomable forces, and so he arrives at "the little death", the short moment of unconsciousness in orgasm. This is seen as a revelation: the human being is but an instrument in divine hands and experiences in his body the ecstasy of divine creation (Borneman 1978, 967), of divine bliss (Daniélou 1979, 73).

"All enjoyment, all pleasure is the experience of divinity. The whole universe springs forth from enjoyment; pleasure is found at the road of everything. Perfect love itself is the transcendent joy of being." (Karapati, quoted by Majapuria 1981, 89. The same view is expressed by Naslednikov 1981, 85; Daniélou 1979, 73, 98). "The first undifferentiated potential perception presupposes that the

first principle of experience corresponds to pure, absolute enjoyment, the innermost nature of existence." (Majapuria 1981, 84) Or as Arab Sheik Nefzawi (1963, 194) put it, "Orgasm is a foretaste of paradise."

Those who consider the act of love "as a mere physical function are bound to fail in their attempts at physical as well as spiritual achievement." "Sex and sexual love are subsidiary to reproduction. The highest function of sexuality is to help the spiritual growth of the individual; the perpetuation of the human race is only one of its secondary purposes." "It is not pleasure but desire which binds man and is a great obstacle to his spiritual progress. (...) Kama is the great god of lust and he is regularly worshipped by *yogis* as he alone, when pleased, can free the mind from desire." "Sexual union symbolically stands for peace, progress and perfection." "Lust or sex-desire has its origin in pleasure and therefore it is divine." Pleasure is the essence of sexual union (Majapuria 1981, 91, 43, 149, 203; Davies 1985, 245; Daniélou 1979, 98). The purpose of love is to bring us together, to unite God's creatures, to re-establish for once the original unity of the world from which all creatures have differentiated themselves, and so giving us the peace which we need to gather our forces." (Borneman 1978, 967)

"Centuries of thought and practice must have gone in the building up of this philosophy on a basis which is sound enough to get sex looked upon as a part of religious practice and which has ultimately led to the free and frank expression of sex in the form of erotic designs made on temples and shrines." "Obscenity comes in only when the mind despises the body and the body hates and is antagonistic to the mind. As the whole universe, however, "is based on the union of male and female (...) there is no point in our feeling ashamed of sex exposure." "Sexual act is a basic part of religious pursuits. Sexes should not be concealed or suppressed but should be accepted and exalted." (Majapuria 1981, 39, 169, 187)

It is this vision from which the erotic sculptures on temples in India and Nepal derive, illustrations shown in Anand (1978) and Majapuria (1981) showing males united with females and with other males in every conceivable form of sexual activity. Majapuria (1981, 228) frankly admits that such sculptures are also designed to attract to the temples young men and boys "who are not very keen on doing religious duties." Here they learn "the philosophy of attaining the favour of God through sex and pleasure." We may, by intoxication, by music, by ecstatic dancing, approach the divine bliss, but the phallus, made for pleasure, shows us the shortest way.

As instrument of sex and pleasure, the phallus is divine (Majapuria 1981, 228, 91). Daniélou, having lived for years in India, explains that, for the Hindu, the male member in its excited state is the foundation of the universe and therefore venerable to everyone striving after perfection. Man is the bearer and

the servant of his organ. It appears in its divine form in Shiva, god of the erection through which he is permanently united with the goddess Shakti in continuous ecstasy (Daniélou 1979, 72, 73, 79, 81). His symbol is the bull whose phallus is dripping with seed.

In temples the phallus is shown carved in stone, the lingam.

600 There is a fine story about a boy by the name of Shyame kneeling down in front of this long polished stone, and "not really knowing whether it would be sacred or sacrilegious, decided to offer to the god the best of himself, the very essence of his life. Caressing his sexual organ, he spurted onto the lingam the white drops of his juice, murmuring the sacred formulas the priests use when pouring out the sacrifice of oil. For this pious act the gods recompensed young Shyame by giving him miraculous wisdom (Daniélou 1983, 134-148).

The *Khamasutra*, a manual on how to use the penis in order to obtain the utmost delight, is considered a book of divine origin. "The *tantra* opens up new vistas of ideological and spiritual life and in its spectrum of experimental techniques it recommends love and sexual pleasure which has a psychotherapeutic effect on life as one of the best alternative means of experiencing a spiritual life." "The Tantrics are of the opinion that by manipulating this energy inherent in gross sex one can find creative powers to ascend to the spiritual plane, plane of transcendental union for the realisation of pure joy." (Majapuria 1981, 153, 202,, 215)

So the Tantra technique shows how to obtain an orgasm quite different from the usual one. Sex, which can so very deeply enslave us, can also carry us to the highest freedom. This is the most perfect chastity compared to which all other forms are mere perversions. "Forget your civilisation," the Tantra says, "forget your religion, your culture, your ideology, forget yourself. (...) First of all, don't consider the sexual act a means to arriving somewhere. Sexual activity is not a means, it is the very aim itself. An aim without limit. Don't think about the future; stay in the present. (...) And if you're brimming over with energy, don't think about discharge, let this congestion stay on. Don't strive for ejaculation, put it completely out of your mind." Only by the observation of these rules (and many more!) will you arrive at the Tantric orgasm, essentially different from all others. While in the common orgasm there is an explosion of energy, in the Tantric orgasm there is an implosion, an accumulation of energy. While the common orgasm lasts a few seconds, the Tantric orgasm is indefinite. While in the common orgasm I'm playing with another body and dependent upon another person, in the Tantric orgasm I'm absorbed in myself and the other person vanishes, the respiration is calm, the body is immobile, consciousness is intense (Naslednikov 1981, 116-118).

The art of eroticism is a path to knowledge and perfection. The universe is a spark of divine energy; lust is its substance. Sexual delight, therefore, is an experience of the cosmos and its divine origin. The passion, the sexual impulse itself, is pure, an elementary force like air, water, earth, fire (Daniélou 1979, 177, 188). Any sexual activity which brings us to ecstasy is sacred. As procreation is only of secondary importance and the first and highest function of sex is to help spiritual growth through pleasure, homosexuality also comes under the cover of religion. In their view on homosexuality, Indians thus will tend to stress its ritual significance more than its sentimental or social aspects (Majapuria 1981, 194, 57)

See how an Indian tale describes a boy's first ejaculation:

- 601 Young Moni enjoys the visits of his uncle Debou who is only four years his senior. One night Debou, saying he thinks Moni is very beautiful, pushes the boy back, loosens his loincloth and starts fondling him. "An intense sensation made Moni tremble as his body was suddenly filled with light. He thought, 'A god has entered me,' and almost automatically he whispered the words of praise with which people invoke the gods. Debou pressed his body against him and for a long time they stayed in that embrace. The inner light faded slowly away when a little bit of Moni's life had escaped from his body. Moni remained tenderly leaning against his older friend. He had just discovered this strange intoxication which people call love and through which we participate for a moment in the nature of joy, which is the nature of gods." (Daniélou 1983, 263-264)

These religious concepts give rise to a very different view of prostitution. Sex for payment gives the traveller, the monk, the deprived, the husband no longer able to have satisfactory sex with his wife the opportunity for self-realisation. Prostitution is a beneficial, charitable, even sacred institution. The temple is the proper place to help men who aspire to come closer to the deity through ecstatic pleasure. Girls and boys consecrate themselves to this task, thereby serving the gods. They even have their own trade union which at times makes its existence felt through political statements, position papers, etc. (Daniélou 1979, 268).

In 1934 Bombay issued a decree against temple prostitution, but it seems it was rather ineffectual, for in 1981 an article in the *Bangkok Times* told of Indian parents offering their sons to the goddess Ranuka, after which the boys were obliged to live as transvestites. They are called *jogratas*. At a conference of *davadasis* (temple prostitutes) in Southern India, a jograta said he had already completed high school when his parents decided to offer him to the gods. He didn't reproach his parents for this and didn't feel unhappy since he was simply doing what the goddess asked of him. (Davies 1985, 268)

Even a European, if he can approach this subject with an open mind, is capable of participating in such feelings, as can be seen by the Danish author

Rovsing, who, after spending a night with a Javanese boy, reflected upon the human impulse to give joy to others. "For this impulse is in the sons of Bali and Java. The former are Hindu-Buddhists—and in the old Siva temple-brothels of India the faithful could choose with whom he wanted to honour Siva. And the latter are Mohametans, who are promised that in Paradise they will be free every night in all eternity to pick a new boy or a new girl to sleep with. (...) In the hour filled with lust you feel yourself happily transformed into a god who creates happiness." (Rovsing 1959, 92-94)

The phenomenon of religious prostitution spread over the entire ancient world from its origin in Mesopotamia (Davies 1985, 140). Boy temple prostitutes were common in the cities of the Medianites and the Chaldees (Scott 1970, 76) as well as with the Greeks. At the venerable oracle of Trophonios in Boeotia and in the temple of Amphiaraos in Oropos, boys masturbated the pilgrims coming for enlightenment (Borneman 1978, 1412-1413). It is characteristic of an outlook quite different from ours that *pornè* (whore) was an honoured name for the Corinthian goddess Aphrodite (Davies 1985, 156). Young girls in the service of Zeus had "to give themselves to men until their menstruation began for the first time, whereupon they were married," but males married only in their twenties. According to Herodotus, the Greeks and the Egyptians were the only peoples who didn't perform the sexual sacrifice in the temple itself. Everywhere else this was done (Rosenbaum 1945, 37).

In Canaan of olden times, temple prostitutes were venerated and called "saints". These boy-whores had a rank equal to the priests and above all other servants of the temple. When the Jews conquered Canaan they sought to eradicate every memory the inhabitants might have of their original culture and religion, and anyone who observed the old rituals of the temple, those sanctifying sexuality, were killed. The *Kedeschot* (the "saints") are abused as "dogs" in the Old Testament (Deuteronomy 23:18-19). The extreme vehemence of these laws witnesses the difficulty of eradicating traditions which seem to have subsequently become attractive to the Jews themselves. For three centuries, up to the time of the Babylonian exile (586 B.C.) the Jews maintained male temple prostitutes despite the furious opposition of the prophets (Davies 1985, 179, 181).

In the end, the need to make themselves distinct from the peoples surrounding them broke these customs down. Thus what was once a human and understandable desire for ethnic purity, later inflated to Divine Law, permeated Jewish and later Christian morality and finally caused thousands upon thousands to suffer a cruel death at the stake. In Christian terminology, they were all "sodomites", a term which was gradually extended to include those who exhibited any kind of "deviant" behaviour, and, in the Middle Ages—with fine historic irony—even to non-deviant intercourse with Jews. Since Jews were then not

considered human, it was logical that sex with them was a form of bestiality, thus sodomitic, and the perpetrator had to be punished by being burnt to death at the stake in order to preserve the Christian population from the wrath of God (Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg 1978, 243, 295, 298, 300).

But the deepest forces of human nature aren't easily subdued, and so we find in the writings of Christian mystics ideas strikingly parallel to those of the Indian philosophers. Saints considered themselves married to God and their spiritual ecstasies seem almost identical to physical orgasm. At the consecration of a nun a wedding ring is put upon her finger and the choir sings strophes from the Song of Songs, that most sensual love song of the Old Testament. St. Bernard of Clairvaux (1090-1153) wrote, "Man has access to divine love through carnal love." (Daniélou 1979, 198)

"Above the main entrance to a village church in the French department of Deux-Sèvres there can be distinguished a carving of the male and female organs of sex in actual conjunction. The design is flanked on either side by figures of a man and a woman. Their contorted features clearly indicate the experience, that of the copulation orgasm, which they are supposed to be undergoing." (Cleugh 1962, 30) Until the Fourteenth Century, religious processions flourished with "banners embroidered with pictures of the male and female pudenda." (Cleugh 1963, 44) Some heretical Christian sects also celebrated orgies.

The orgy, of course, by multiplying orgasm, intensifies it and makes it impersonal, raising it to a super-human dimension. Therefore through all history, everywhere in the world, people have had recourse to this extreme manifestation of sex. The ancient Incas of Peru celebrated orgies, as do their present-day descendants (Sutor 1964, 422-424); the Greeks and the Romans had their important, influential Mysteries of which orgies were part, just as they are in present-day initiation festivities in Melanesia and Africa (Popp 1969, 26, 46). And boys, as the most salacious of all humans, participated in them, too. In Greece there were boy-priests in many sanctuaries, and it was said that it was always the most beautiful who were chosen for this function (Rühfel 1984, 96). At least until fifty years ago, Hindus in northern India had their popular passion play of Ram-Lila in which three boys, selected for their good looks, played the roles of the hero Rama, his wife Sita, and her royal seducer. It was performed every afternoon for about a week, and part of the accompanying religious ceremonies included the sexual use of the boys by the organiser of the festival (Bilderlexikon 1928-1931, IV 106).

Some years ago the Italians made a documentary film about the most impressive fertility rites of the African Kuru tribe. When it came time to sow the fields, the adolescent boys went naked to the hillside, where they dug little holes. After rubbing their penises to erection, the boys lay down, face to earth and, inserting their genitals into these holes, copulated with the earth and gave

it their seed. The vision of all those graceful young bodies lying next to each other, buttocks moving up and down working to make the soil fruitful, was strikingly beautiful and most solemn.

Before the Christian Church organised itself into an official religion, the Agapes ("love feasts" of the faithful) were much like the pagan mysteries. There was music and dance. The women were naked at baptism, phallic cakes were distributed at Mass. Sexual promiscuity was not then considered debauchery: it was held to be symbolic of Christian unity. It was dignified and ceremonial, evidence of a spiritual nobility to which modern Christians are quite unable to accede (Armand 1931, 137, 202). The Agapes were later forbidden at the Council of Carthage in 397 A.D.

Individually, not in the company of others, the young male in Western culture may still acknowledge in moments of spiritual elevation "his delight in life" and give "the rein to his desires to chariot him to the extremest bounds of his kingdom," as Carpenter (1911, 165) poetically expressed it. "The kiss of the senses is beautiful beyond all and every abstraction; the touch of the sunlight, the glory of form and color, the magic of sweet sound, the joy of human embraces, the passion of sex—all so much the more perfect because they are as it were something divine made actual and realisable."

Even where there is no direct religious connection, the orgies of our own ancient civilisation as well as modern primitive cultures have some deeper meaning. There is "sexual activity of tremendous proportions and the whole purpose of it is to achieve supernatural powers." (Majapuria 1981, 214) The partner one embraces is no longer seen as a person: one's relationship with him "is established on the level of pure energy. Each partner helps the other—he is his mirror—and this intensifies the energy of the group." (Naslednikov 1981, 151) And so sex, elsewhere engaged in because of the pleasure it affords, becomes in this context a sacrifice. Rather than an act of taking, it is transformed into an act of giving. It is no longer the atomised, egoistic copulation of two people withdrawing from the rest of humanity to enjoy their private pleasure: the aim is now to join all with all. The aged and the young, the beautiful and the ugly, man and beast, father and daughter, mother and son, brother and sister, man and man, woman and woman, child and child—they all join their bodies before the eyes of everyone. There is nothing secret, no guilt, no shame, because the act is sacrificial." (Borneman 1978, 968) It is a kind of total sexual communism. When the proper time of the year arrived, a report from the Viti Islands (Fiji) ran, "the most incredible scenes will be seen in the public streets." Kinship was no hindrance. On Fiji the girls and women would run away, in a race, and they would have to submit to the first male who managed to catch up with them. In Western Australia, the Watchandi, during their orgies, adopted

a special style of heterosexual copulation, similar to that of animals (Bloch 1912, 55).

The self-sacrificial aspect of the orgy is seen in the fact that no partner is rejected: the participant must accept the person who presents himself or herself, age or beauty being immaterial. One must abandon oneself unreservedly to old and young, to the ugly as well as the handsome, to the silly and weak as well as to the brutal and macho (Eigeltinger 1983, 83). Just as in Fiji, in Ancient Peru, during a festival in December, naked men and women took part in a race, and the first man who overtook a woman was obliged to have intercourse with her on the spot (Stern 1903, II 178). The egoism with which we normally select our partners is forbidden; the invalid and the healthy claim equal rights. The partner has no individuality—you may even not know who he is—and this deprives you of your own individuality, for individuality, to be confirmed, has to be reflected “and in fucking an unknown individual there is no reflection, no affirmation, and your individuality melts away.” (Foral 1981, 23-24, 18)

The solemnity of the orgy can also be seen in how in the whole multitude of participants (whose number may be a thousand), in this joyful, lust-drunken mixture of people, there is never any brawling, squabbling, no insult, cavi, complaint (Foral 1981, 107). Heterosexuality and homosexuality merge. What if two boys penetrate the same girl at the same time, one from the front and the other from behind, as the novelist Peyrefitte (1977, 300-301) has Alexander and his friend Hephaestion do with the charming Campaspe, the future king's first female partner? Rectum and vagina are separated only by thin walls, so to the boys it is as though their members meet and rub against each other, thrusting together. This effect is intentionally brought out in the initiation dances of the Hamito-Negroid East African secret societies, which are a kind of potency test, as described in the following passage from Edwardes & Masters (1963, 163-169):

- 602 “The dance is generally performed by the youngest males and females of the group, both married and unmarried, between the ages of ten and twenty. (...) Several naked youths, hot with anticipation, kneel and beat their drums with a cadenced rhythm. Then from an enclosure adjoining the area of performance there step the dancers, two separate troupes of boys and girls with nothing about their nude bodies but the traditional *futeh* or narrow blue breechclout, which hangs to the level of their knees, just barely concealing their private parts. The spectators now notice that the boys' loincloths are beginning to lift; their sexual organs are starting to swell at the very expectation of erotic activity...” The boys move forward and signal their desire to the girls, but the “girls turn their backs to them, hiding their faces in their hands. The light glows upon the girls' contours, beautiful bottoms which excite the ardor of the youths considerably; for the spectators observe that several begin to experience full-sized erections underneath their scant covering.”

But, since the girls remain indifferent, the boys retreat and sit down to smoke their pipes. Now it is the turn of the girls to advance, making alluring movements, until the boys suddenly get up and come forward, whereupon the girls fall back again. This ritual of temptation is enacted several times. Finally the males, somewhat angered, retreat into the enclosure to smoke their pipes, and now the girls become bolder in trying to seduce the boys.

“They perform the classic *regs es-surreh* (belly dance or nautch of the navel) by whirling and wriggling and shimmying and shaking their lithe young bodies, proudly thrusting their ripe rounded breasts and buttocks out, undulating and gyrating their smooth bellies and hips, and teasingly uncovering, then covering again, their secret parts by a quick sideward flick of the futeh with their nimble fingers. When the boys do not emerge from their covert, the girls, in a white heat of amorous agitation, rip off their loincloths and reveal themselves stark naked. With a wild cry of triumph the boys, pulling off their own breechclouts, leap out of hiding, revealing their virile members in violent erection. They approach the girls in a frenzy of measured movement, their handsome black bodies glistening with perspiration, their every muscle rippling and aquiver, their long slim penises vibrating in the palpant heat of excitement. The dance now reaches its climax. The boys pair off and approach each girl, dancing around her and making as if to seize her in their embraces. She pretends to resist, shifting her shoulders from one side to another, covering her eyes, her breasts, then her sexual parts. Now one of the boys comes up behind her while the other frisks about in front. In order to ward off the latter, she bends slightly forward and so prevents him from touching her between the thighs. Also, to hinder him from entering, she puts forth her slim hands and greedily grasps his penis, rubbing it in her palms and stroking it up and down while he struggles to take her hands away by grabbing her forearms and clutching her breasts. Suddenly the youth in the rear darts forward and thrusts his organ between her buttocks, which are presented to him in perfect form. The young woman releases an ecstatic cry, her face taut, and lurches her loins forward as the lad in the back begins to force her. Then the young man in front, seizing his opportunity, yanks away her hands, snares her in his embrace, and pushes his penis completely into her vagina. (...) Then both of the boys hug her tightly and, still prancing about, thrust in and out rhythmically until she begins to tire, her legs trembling and sagging. The girl now stands perfectly still, her thighs slightly apart, while the two boys, grinning and shouting and pressing her body with legs spread on either side, joust rapidly in time to the throbbing of the drums until she moans and sighs and is nigh to swooning. The perspiration pours from their bodies; and the semen oozes out from between the girl's thighs, tricking down her legs. Suddenly they withdraw; and the girl sinks limply to her knees....

“The two youths attack another female, whose partners leave her and take the one who has fallen. They lift her and the dance begins again. Meekly she grips the genitals of the male in front, but she is too weak to resist. He is dynamised, inflamed to frenzy by hashish; but she is languid, spent with motion and repeated orgasms. His penis is hot and hard and slippery. Her hands cannot hold it, it slides into her vagina. He pulls her loins forward with a shocking jolt, while the boy in back squeezes and fondles her breasts, then takes aim and enters, also with a jerk. The orgy seems unending. The girls writhe in pleasurable torment, their faces twisted and twitching in orgiastic convulsions; while the boys, spurred to pulsating violence by the beat of the drums, continue to torture them with continuous thrusting. The youths lurch their buttocks furiously; they

attack and retreat unmercifully. They rotate by turns, abandoning themselves to frenetic spasms of lust, alternatively assailing front and rear until they well-nigh lose their senses and faint from overexertion. When they can stand no more they sink to the floor, male and female together, pawing and clawing each other. The girls squirm and groan; they hotly and hungrily handle their delirious partners. The drummers, afire with desire, rapidly masturbate with a free hand. A few dancers, in a final burst of vigor, feverishly mount their trembling damsels, then roll over in a swoon...

"The young females lie with their legs splayed wide and their tremoring hands pressed between them; they have endured the most vigorous ordeal of womanhood. The young males also lie with their limbs spread apart, hands trembling between; they have stood the tremendous test of virile manhood." To pass the test "a boy must keep up his resources for at least three orgiastic rounds." (Edwardes & Masters 1963, 164-169)

Orgies were important events in the circus spectacles of Rome. First girls came on performing voluptuous dances which became more and more lascivious. "Then, like wild animals suddenly set loose, adolescent boys ran into the arena, threw themselves upon the girls and, after a moment of simulated struggle (to honour the memory of the abduction of the Sabine virgins), raped them." At parties of the Roman patricians, naked dancers and actors cavorted in the way satyrs and nymphs were thought to pass their time and so incited the spectators to imitate them: girls were possessed in the presence of their fathers, boys copulated in view of their mothers, husbands and wives committed adultery with their lovers in each other's presence. (Armand 1931, 78, 90)

There is a feeling common to many societies that humans are so filled with vital energy that moral restrictions and taboos should occasionally be set aside for some set period of time. This was the underlying impulse behind the Christian carnival and the January festival of the Ho tribe in Hindustan where after the harvest "the barns are full of corn and the people are full of devilry." At other seasons of the year a quiet, reserved people, modest in demeanour, the Ho now were observed to throw off their clothes and have sex almost like animals, all in the presence of many spectators (Ellis 1913, I 128-129). As has been said of Greek antiquity (Richepin 1921, II 31), even respectable Ho women made use of the most obscene and vulgar language.

The sexophobia of our culture has to a large extent destroyed the mystic, elevated aspect of the orgy. Modern Western man is unique among the peoples of the world in that he has channelled the orgy into mere "group sex", shorn of all deeper meaning. When Hollywood film stars throw sex feasts and hire young males and females to participate (O'Day 1964, 109-114), when local clubs put on more modest "free sex" parties, all reference to religion, all feelings of exaltation and mystery vanish. The only thing the participants desire—and get—is lust; they want to observe and be observed.

According to recent German reports, 7% of males have rather frequent group sex, and nearly 16% of married couples have participated in group sex or an exchange of partners. During the "sexual revolution", group sex broke as a wave over the Federal Republic (Foral 1981, 14, 15, 424). Research among Swiss youth showed that boys were considerably more open to the idea than girls. No girl in the study sample was unconditionally in favour of it, and 96% rejected the idea, while among boys 8% were unconditionally in favour, 17% favoured it under certain circumstances, 5% were neutral, and 64% rejected the idea (Biener 1973, 51; 1983, 30).

In 1976, Bullough (669) observed, "Group sex has become a way of life for a significant number of individuals." Since then the number may have diminished under the threat of AIDS, but that should not lessen the percentage of males indulging in group-sex fantasies. Curiously, in the 3,000 or more letters Hite received in the course of her investigation into male sexual fantasies, there were "only one or two describing scenes of more than four people," (1981, 339) but Masters and Johnson (1980, 186) found it the fifth most important fantasy theme, and this was true of both heterosexual and homosexual males. If, in the above-mentioned German report, only 7% of the males had practised group sex, there were, in addition to these, another 17% for whom this was their most important unrealised sexual wish (Foral 1981, 14). Many males find fantasies about three- or four-way sex very exciting.

603 One of Heine's subjects (1957, 91-92), for example, said, "In my spare time I'm almost always thinking about handsome men with big, strong cocks, and I'd be delighted if some well-built guy, powerful and beautiful, endowed with a big cock, fucks a girl in my presence. I'll be violently excited by this sight, and I'll touch the beautiful body of the fucking boy, and I'll mount him while he is fucking the girl, and I'll do the same to him and insert my cock into his arse. It's a pity I don't have enough money arrange for this scene, because I'm always thinking about it."

Sexual trios have been observed among animals, too. Borneman (1978, 1527) mentions one in which the participants were one Billy goat and two male donkeys!

Wilson and Cox (1983, 126) found the same desires for group sex among paedophiles as among heterosexuals.

604 The following tale about a runaway boy from Oregon who made his living by prostitution in San Francisco is taken from a commercial gay porn magazine, later reprinted in a book (McDonald 1981, 107-108; see also Example No. 520). Although its authenticity may be suspect, it is representative of the kind of group-sex fantasies many paedophiles surely have:

"Many of the regular whore-houses had boys 'on call'. I first got into prostitution when I became acquainted with other runaways and boys of the streets. (...) The

approach was almost always made by the customer. (...) Kneeling down, pretending to shine his shoes, we could suck quite easily and if anyone approached, we stopped sucking and started shining. (...) At first I would spit out the load but later I learned to like the taste and would swallow it. (...) A boy named Manny approached me one evening for a four-way. A rich saloon owner liked to have three boys at a time. I went with him and we all stripped. The guy was in his early 50s. He liked to have one boy suck him while the other two stood by and he could feel them up, running his hands all over their bodies, and playing with their cocks. He would stop the boy sucking him and have one of the others take over. Eventually, all three boys would suck his cock. He would time us by counting, each boy making ten slides up and down his cock, then another boy. We went on like this, 10 strokes apiece at a time. Whichever boy was lucky enough to get his load got \$20 in addition to the fee he paid each of us. He was married and had three daughters. (...) I was a shoeshine boy until I was 16. You were considered a man at that age. Also, I was too old for the trade; the men really liked the younger boys better."

None of this is really new. People having group sex always enjoy involving boys, if only because of their potency. Procopius cites the Roman Empress Theodora (527-548) as having a preference for beardless boys. She used to invite ten or more strong lads, noted for their salacity, to all-night parties. Once all were exhausted, their slaves had to come in and take over (Anthropophyteia, X 281-282). During the Middle Ages, it was common after a military victory to collect all the female camp-followers and organise a foot-race between them and the soldiers, everyone, literally, stripped for action. The woman who won got a red mantle; all the others were at the disposal of the soldiers (Borneman 1978, 1019).

In the 18th Century a secret club in Paris threw sexual competitions for its 90 male and 90 female members every two weeks or so. A prize went to the male who achieved the greatest number of ejaculations and the female able to satisfy the greatest number of men (Borneman 1978, 958). Catherine the Great of Russia arranged parties at her palace from 1794 to 1796 at which she could watch other copulating couples while she herself was served by two or three men (Borneman 1978 1079).

- 605 De Sade (1740-1814) as a matter of course involved boys in his most erotic scenes. In the *Philosophie dans le Boudoir* it is the gardener's boy August "whose member has a length of 13 inches and a circumference of 8 and a half". In *Juliette* Olympia has ten naked boys of 16-20 years standing around her while she is prone. Two of them are fondling four others, and Olympia is soon covered with sperm. She sucks their penises in turn, while the two fondling boys have intercourse with her, one in front, the second from behind. Young girls are now called in and ordered to arouse the boys anew, and then all ten of them, simultaneously and in all imaginable ways, have relations with another woman. Following this, the boys have to satisfy the girls (Foral 1981, 218, 220-221).

- 606 The German singer Wilhelmine Schröder-Devrient (1804-1860) had quite a musical reputation during her lifetime. In her autobiography (the authenticity of which, however, is disputed) she told about an orgy she participated in, organised in Rome by Capucine monks and Jesuit fathers. There were nuns and ladies from various levels of society, but the ratio of males to females was three to one. Also present were very beautiful boys of 12 to 15 years of age (Foral 1981, 280).

- 607 In Paris during the 19th Century there were special brothels with "gigantic beds in which three or four couples could function at the same time." (Borneman 1978, 319).

Coming to our own time, King Farouk of Egypt is best remembered as a very fat sybaritic failure, but as a boy he had been very handsome and then participated in orgies with adult men whom he later appointed to important governmental posts (Axgil & Fogedgaard 1985, 96).

- 608 Two of Osborne's Australian subjects said that when they were still schoolboys of 16 they had been invited to a sex party by an important official and his wife. The man was gay and liked to watch boys having sex with his wife. "She was about thirty and really nice. It was great. There were about twelve of us boys, naked, and we fucked like madmen." "Half the schoolboys in the neighbourhood had their first fuck after school in the house of that official." (Osborne 1985, II 19, 54)

- 609 An Austrian tourist found himself walking with a Neapolitan boy-lover over the rocks by the seafont where boys were usually found. "Five nice randy boys 12 to 14 years of age from one of the suburbs joined us. My friend spoke with them, and they immediately agreed to have sex with him. Soon a ball of fiery, naked bodies was twisting and turning, full of enthusiasm and recklessness, intertwining with each other, panting, laughing, sweating. None of them wanted to be left out, so they shouted time and again, 'Me! Me! Do it to me!' until my friend, after ten minutes of this, sank down exhausted. But they hadn't had enough, so it was my turn. Two pushed their iron-hard penises into my mouth, two others from left and right into my ears, while the biggest boy lowered my shorts to take me anally as I masturbated myself. It was some turbulent scene! I had difficulty finding a rock to hold onto so I wouldn't fall down. It was a unique experience, since I usually prefer quiet, tender sex." (Archives of the Brongersma Foundation E-227)

Orgies organised by boys among themselves only rarely come to be known by adults.

- 610 Several such instances were reported in Munich in 1942. Three boys and three girls, all thirteen years old, had been having group sex sessions, and two boys 13 and 16 had been doing the same thing with three 9-year-old girls (Foral 1981, 385). In Bavaria in 1969 a group sex session involving 25 boys and girls was discovered taking place in a hay barn (Foral 1981, 424). In 1979 the Belgian police arrested a boy of 17 who for the last three years had been organising sex parties with tens of participants between the ages of 12 and 23 in a country house at Ekeren. When the police broke in they

found 8 minors between the ages of 12 and 17. (Archives of the Brongersma Foundation T - Ek2).

- 611 Bloch (1907, 258) wrote about a diversion of young peasants in the Vosges mountains. A group of boys would take a girl to a barn. There each in turn would lie naked upon a table while the girl stood over him with her thighs closed about his neck. The boy would kiss and lick her genitals while his hands seized and fondled her breasts. The other boys would measure and record the time it took him to get a full erection and finally a spontaneous ejaculation.
- 612 A Rotterdam boy, later evacuated during the war, told me that from the age of 14 he often "wanted to fuck a girl", but never had the courage to ask. One day when he was 16, aimlessly walking the streets of the city, he was approached by a group of 13 boys and girls 15 to 17 years of age and led by his 16-year-old neighbour. "We're six boys and seven girls," they told him. "We need one more boy—so come along." He joined the happy group, and they walked on, laughing, talking and singing, although he had no idea what they had in mind to do. A pretty girl of fifteen took his arm. They went into a bar. It was deserted but for its owner who simply greeted them, and, without ordering anything, the whole group of 14 boys and girls climbed the stairs and went into a big room with ten beds along the walls. The boy was amazed when everybody immediately started to undress and, once naked, fell as couples onto the beds. The girl who had taken his arm, nearly naked herself now, encouraged him, "Don't go to sleep," she said. "Get your clothes off!" A moment later they were lying side by side caressing each other. He was wildly excited by the sight of the other six couples, by their movements, the sounds of their love-making, their cries. The girl pulled him on top of her, took his penis in hand and guided it into herself. She seemed thoroughly experienced. This first experience delighted the boy enormously, and it rid him once and for all of his sexual inhibitions and timidity. To him it was what every boy and girl should do, a very common and natural thing, but something extremely pleasant as well.
- 613 A 19-year-old subject of Barrington's said, "Group sex is okay occasionally, as long as you know all the guys... It's happened to me about four times since 17... I was pretty exhausted and sore after each session, I can tell you!" Another, the same age, said, "I have had a little experience of group-sex and I enjoy it." A third had a happy memory of group masturbation when he was in the army: 25 men in the barracks: "Usually started with cock-measuring combined with beer-drinking, and ending inevitably with a wanking orgy. No one felt shame, on the contrary much hilarity; it seemed to me, and to them, a delightfully harmless way to spend an evening." A fourth (aged 18) said, "I also like group sex, maybe, depending on the other men there, but all I've had up to now is for threesome minor-orgies." But it is often just these trios and quartets that are especially pleasant, and so a sixth boy said, "A couple of times I was screwed by a guy while I screwed a chick, and that was terrific!" (Barrington 1981, 33, 34, 191, 27, 26, 127).
- 614 In the Hite Report (1981, 862), a 31-year-old man, married and a father, told of his high-school experiences and the special friend with whom, for three years, he was

always "sucking and fucking". "One night this boy and six others of us were staying at my house overnight while my mother and father were away for the weekend. Someone had gotten some girly books and we all got hot and picked partners, stripped, and played with each other. You name it and we did it. Then all of us would take a turn sucking each boy, and taking it up the ass. Then all eight of us made it with the other. This went on till four that morning, then we all fell asleep. After a few more gang bangs the club started to break up because we all started to date girls."

In recent times research has focused upon what kind of persons involve themselves in orgies. Since orgies are traditionally considered extreme examples of licentiousness, one might imagine that participants would be unbalanced profligates who lived most unusual lives. But the research results "were surprising. People celebrating orgies prove to lead a normal, well-balanced existence. Most of them go regularly to church and have children. Usually they are moderate drinkers; many are even teetotallers. With few exceptions they occupy honoured positions in society; many have their own businesses; some are academics, architects or nurses. There are dentists and lawyers among them, as well as gentlemen-farmers, estate agents, film actors, fashion models, authors, pharmacists, civil servants, army officers, businessmen and politicians." (Borneman 1978, 540)

Their aim in the orgy, of course, is lust, but some participants, especially the young, often said later that they experienced something special which went far beyond simple lust: a feeling of intense solidarity with the group, an indescribable feeling of having been personally enriched, which made them intensely happy. Without seeking it, without being conscious of it, they had touched the margins of human existence. It is interesting to note that in the Mineshaft bar and sex club in Manhattan, where from 1979 to 1982 men had group sex in a dimly lit room—performing fellatio, anal intercourse and masturbation—a number of the men later said that their experiences had religious meaning. Indian wisdom had always held that sex could let a man enter the source of all being, on condition that he conquers all inhibition, moves past all taboos and abandons his body in total trust to its original impulse, allowing himself to be guided by it, wherever it may lead.

A boy is closer to nature than a man. If allowed, boys tend to participate with enthusiasm in erotic dancing and orgies, where they often demonstrate a tremendous sexual energy and potency. If they have no companion they will perform alone. There are always boys seeking deserted places in the woods or back from the beach where they can go to masturbate; perhaps we could better say they are stirred by the sublimity of nature to quicken themselves to orgasm (Langfeldt 1981, 108).

- 615 "On my birthday I walked into the woods and, in a new planting I sprinkled my seed over the last patch of snow. On another occasion I got horny over thinking about sneaking deep into the underbrush. In that mossy place, a sunbeam pierced the air like an arrow. To sit there smelling, hearing and getting intoxicated—oh, how marvellous!" (Pilgrim 1985, 220)

The shedding of seed can be like a libation. Friends and lovers, too, find their lust strangely enhanced when they unite their bodies in the open air.

- 616 Ralph Chubb, the English author, spent one of his holidays with a 15-year-old boy. "Idling we pass'd our sunny days bathing in sequester'd streams, Sprawling with gold-brown bodies side-by-side beneath the noonday beam, Fondling, spending, silently embracing. The mounting heat, the shorten'd breath, the surging onslaught of desire, Sweet pulsing short-lived agony seeking relief, the brimming consummation and flood, The drooping languor, the heavenly listless content with bright, swimming pupils gazing up seraphical at the azure vault." (quoted by d'Arch Smith 1970, 222-223)

Boys growing up in today's big cities are often deprived of such experiences, although some have been able to gain them, in the deepest and most desperate secrecy, through special youth associations—which shows how ineradicable the impulse is:

- 617 I was told about just such a group of 12- to 18-year-old boys led by an adult. During the holidays they used to visit a nudist beach. The rules of the club these boys formed was that every boy should have sex with every other. When the group later came under strong attack from the outside, the boys' solidarity proved to be so incredibly strong that it overcame all vicissitudes. An older boy would propose his younger brother for membership, when he reached the proper age, as a beautiful gift to the group and to the boy himself. It was impressive to see how fully the younger members were accepted by the older boys as partners with equal rights. If, during a meeting, it was a younger boy who made a proposal, he was listened to attentively and seriously. The younger boys seem to have flourished in this society where they felt confident and fully accepted. (Personal communication)

Modern youth has group sex in two fundamentally different ways. In one, couples come together to have intercourse at the same time and place, every boy retaining his own particular partner. The sex, then, remains rather personal. Abu Nuwas was doing this many centuries ago (Wagner 1965, 307-308):

*God bless the days of idleness, when, in the bloom of our youth, we had
our pastimes,
Days when I, upon a horse of love, rode about the jousting-ground of
my pleasures,
While an army of love surrounded us.*

The second way is where the participants mix in a wild medley. Sexual intercourse is performed with the body one meets by chance, and so it is impersonal. Heterosexuality and homosexuality may take turns, the participant coupling now with a male, now a female partner. The sole aim is to elicit lust in and upon another body.

Harry (1977, 178) wrote that it is not unusual for youth groups to start off adhering to the first way of doing things and then gradually shift over to the second. Couples of lovers who didn't like sharing would then break away from the group.

- 618 Noelle, a French girl, told about a session with 8 boys and 8 girls ranging in age from 15 to 22. They were dancing. One boy suggested that the girls bare their breasts. "I believe I was the first to follow this suggestion. Three or four other girls then did the same. It was nice, because all the boys could now fondle our breasts as we danced. We soon made up a small sub-group within the group, and the boys crowded around us. We were all terribly excited. When the boys asked us to strip naked, we did it unhesitatingly. Afterwards they made us strike poses, and then we began having sexual intercourse, each of us with her friend, in the centre of the room, in front of everybody. No one was dancing any longer: every boy and every girl was watching us. I liked that right away, their staring at us. I made exaggerated motions, uttered loud cries, just as the other girls were doing. I saw two couples sneak off into the bedroom; a third lay down at our side. Then we started exchanging partners. Beside me I watched a 15-year-old girl having intercourse with her friend. I had often before felt a strong attraction to this boy who was also quite young. He moved like a mad man. I asked the girl, 'Would you like to exchange partners?' She laughed and agreed. The boys obediently changed places with each other, and other couples followed our example. This kind of group activity always excites me very much. One boy alone doesn't mean so much: I find it a very sexy thought to exchange him for another. If my friend doesn't want to do it just now, I'll prefer another boy. It's so easy. Having intercourse with a number of people in one room, changing partners every now and then, really turns me on. I believe it has now become absolutely necessary for me." (Harry 1977, 180)

- 619 There is an interesting passage in a novel Erica Jong wrote when she was 35. In the German edition, quoted by Susanna Foral (1981, 458-459), she has one of her characters, Isadora Wing, say: "How was the orgy? Did you enjoy it? This is what my friends are always asking. The truth is I can hardly remember. It is, of course, thrilling. And, of course, too, there are many orgasms: mine, yours, his, everybody's. Moreover, you feel yourself lifted up, liberated, vastly superior to the inhibited bourgeoisie which can only make it in couples. All the time I'm thinking, 'Now you're licking this woman and you're licked by her who is simultaneously being fucked by a man who is himself being screwed from behind by another man. Oh, this must be the first time since the earth was created.' The overall impression, however, is that we really should have somebody establishing order out of this chaos, who, with a megaphone even, could be regulating the traffic. What was happening now was like rush hour on the streets. At every moment you have to shift about in order not to lose contact, and the resulting positions could only be maintained comfortably by someone

adept at Yoga. In the meantime, we persevere, making the best of it. A kind of group craving develops; those who used to be satisfied with two, three, four orgasms now want to go on to have dozens, in all imaginable positions, with every partner. I am astonished by my own endurance. The now anonymous pile of limbs becomes an organism in itself, expanding, contracting, feeding itself and evacuating, crawling away from the soiled under-layer to a drier spot. I count ten arms, ten legs, two cocks, three cunts and six tits of different sizes, not to mention ten eyes, five mouths (nearly continuously filled). There is always something erupting, as in a volcanic area. Something is always being swallowed up somewhere by some aperture. And yet there is this totally wonderful sensation of nearness, of intensive corporality, the awareness of being only body..."

- 620 (Continued from 590) Onno's young body was often the centre of such experiences with a group of gay males. The orgies took place in the open air, on a roof terrace hidden from the outside world. He reported, "The condition of cosmic ecstasy was not attained spontaneously, and at times not at all. One had to work oneself up to it. Everyone had to be there, and in no hurry; nobody could participate if he could do so only for a set period of time. All of us were naked: not a thread of clothing was permitted.

"In the beginning there was still talk: there were jokes; tenderness was still individualised. There was a You and a Me. Gradually a climate of companionship began to prevail, of a sexual community, with increasing promiscuity. Our host Roland was the great pacemaker of this heating-up process. He understood very well how to raise the ambience of orgiastic salacity. He was the flame which seized hold of everybody, kindling everybody, and igniting in them one single fire. With his gigantic hard-on he made everybody horny, created in every member of the group the desire for orgy. It was extraordinary how he achieved this. He had been taught in Germany and he returned frequently to take part in gay orgies there.

"In the end everyone was ready to give his body to everyone else. Now everything was permitted; to refuse anything was impossible. Ten naked males melted into one lump of flesh, one flow of seed, dominated by one single salacious lust. No one talked. No one joked. All consciousness was focused upon sex, sensual pleasure, lust, joy, salacity, lascivious feeling, touching, looking, fondling. At times you could see nothing. You only heard the sound of naked bodies ringing with each other, of horny panting, a rutting cry. Here and there naked, oiled bodies were dashing lasciviously upon each other, fucking each other with hot, energetic thrusts.

"And so came a feeling of cosmic union, and we all experienced a bacchantic delight. A unity of cosmic love, sexual delight, ecstasy. Desiring and possessing each other in a cosmic absence of bounds, in a cosmic abandonment, unconditional and complete. With my young body and fully developed homo-eroticism, I was the centre to which all were drawn. My naked, smooth, oiled body at times was tugged over hot, horny men's bodies, hauled to the other side of the tossing group, from where lascivious, greedy hands were reaching out for me, caught me, fondled me, salaciously grubbing in my flesh. I shut my eyes in a fully voluptuous, cosmic abandonment, giving myself to these naked, glowing bodies, the hard, hot cocks, the grubbing hands, and so I was guided to delight, to ecstasy.

"This unlimited lewdness of the group might continue for half an hour, or even an hour, without any spurring of seed. It was like the undulating of the sea: mounting

high, then again dying down, and after this the waves mounting higher and still higher. My horny body was entirely in the hands of men, my most intimate parts being fondled, seized, kissed, pinched. I abandoned myself completely. As to ejaculations, it was the rule that when one of us came this was a signal for everyone to follow after. Then people coupled, fucked, sucked, pressed belly upon belly, at times three lying upon each other, in the most voluptuous of embraces. Several times it was my turn. Three naked, randy guys sprinkled me, one after the other, with their sperm, relentlessly, with cosmic love. And how I enjoyed it! I felt totally happy. My body was trained for everything erotic and I was willing to do everything. Mostly I was sucked off by a greedy, drinking mouth.

"And then there was this silence, as on a battlefield after the action. Here were these exhausted, deliciously nude males, contented, dripping with sun-oil, sweat, seed, still tenderly caressing each other. I looked at them, their glorious dangling cocks, their heavy, fleshy thighs, their strong male breasts. Usually I was the first to get up. Kneeling down, I kissed their cocks. I loved those cocks, softly drooping after their gift of sperm. I touched their balls, kissed their groins, their navels. It delighted them when I did that after they had spurted their semen. I licked up seed, left and right, wherever I saw it. Gradually the men woke up again, smiled at me. I felt their hands moving again over my erotically so sensitive skin. People leaned on their elbows, stood up, resumed their conversations, returning from this cosmic ecstasy and bacchantic orgy to commonplace wants, such as a shower, a drink, refreshment. We stayed naked. The effect of that union of our bodies remained: it was something precious, linking us together. In that feeling of unity, we kept on kissing each other. It was delicious." (Personal communication)

When we see more and more males whose erotic behaviour would seem at variance with their true personalities, casting off a sense of shame and joining whole-heartedly in homo- or heterosexual orgies, we may (like Redhardt 1968, 79) be amazed. We might even be revolted by their behaviour. But we might also try to understand it.

In recent centuries our culture has endeavoured to rationalise everything, to de-deify, to de-sacralise. And so we have created a climate which drives many people to despair. A longing arises to return to origins, roots, to communicate with the source of life; without really being conscious of it, many people seek it where the wisdom of the Orient has always found it: in unconditional, total surrender to the primeval forces inside us. Everything melts away: shame, restraint, taboo, the self-centred ego. The man returns to nature, and, in approaching her, becomes a child again, a boy.

Peoples who practise the orgy as a mystery, a sacred ritual, never prohibit sexually mature boys from participating: often, in fact, they are the central figures. In some Greek vase paintings of "orgy scenes the participants are all quite young as, given the acrobatic ingenuity demanded of all concerned, they would need to be." (Walters 1979, 47) In their mysteries, the Greeks sought "to have intercourse not so much with women but rather with boys as incarnations of salacity."

"In Trophonios's dream-oracle at Lebadeia, those who came for enlightenment were anointed with oil and masturbated by boys." During the Askolia, the annual festival of Dionysos, naked boys leapt "upon a stiffly filled wine skins, made slippery with oil, jumping from one leg to the other, presenting poses for the spectators one could otherwise only observe in boys' brothels." (Borneman 18978, 603, 607)

Might not a boy who had participated in such festivals, awakening from the cosmic intoxication, be better able to accept and revel in the joys of the body, and be a better friend to his friend? And might he not later be a better life-companion to a woman—or a man, if that is his nature?

In our occidental culture, the minds and bodies of millions upon millions of boys, adolescents and young men are corrupted, maimed and killed by the powerful masters of industry, reformatories and the military. Those responsible are honoured: statues and monuments are erected in their memory. There are also many memorials to the countless boys who "freely" made "the supreme sacrifice" (as it is always called) for their country.

These heavy thoughts preoccupied me one day as I was visiting a battle cemetery where the bodies of thousands of boys, most of them nameless, putrefied in the soil. And then I thought of another boy who had sacrificed himself, but this time out of his own free will, many centuries ago. He, too, was an unknown hero, since his name was not recorded. We only know that he was the brother of a certain Bathykles and lived seven centuries before the beginning of our era on the small Greek island of Thera, to the north of Crete.

There, every September, men by the thousands flocked to the Ephebion, the sanctuary of male youth, to see the Gymnopaideia, where naked boys danced in what must have been a magnificent pageant before the temple of Apollo Karneios. Thera loved youth: the inhabitants proudly displayed to all her visitors and to each other their recently matured sons as they moved solemnly in brilliant nudity to the hieratic dance for the Sun god.

Let us visualise this brother of Bathykles as he is about to be ritually sacrificed to the god. The wine harvest is over; it is the first full moon, and, of all these radiant boys, he has been chosen. Priests crown his head with vine-leaves and grapes, but the rest of his body remains uncovered, shining in the moonlight. Now he runs off toward the temple district high up the mountain, as fast as his feet can carry him. Is he really trying to save himself from a violence that would hurt him, or is he longing instead for his inescapable fate? Who can tell? The boy knows he is prey for the hunters. He is only a short distance from the sanctuary when he hears shouts behind him. It is a pack of young men, like him unhampered by clothing. They are already closing in on him; they are bigger, stronger and quicker than he. It is an unequal contest. He

knows he will ultimately lose it, must lose it. It will be his sacrifice, what the god requires.

He is close to the temple area when he is overtaken. "I have him!" cries Krímon, leader of the pack. His hand clutches the boy's shoulder, brings him to a standstill, then forces him to the ground. The boy feels the hard arms and legs of the panting victor grasp and hold him helpless. The others form a circle about them and watch in silence. Slowly Krímon's breathing returns to normal, and now, as he strokes the smooth skin of the vanquished boy, his instrument of desire stretches, hardens and lifts. Ready, now, Krímon raises himself a little, presses himself between the thighs of his victim and, with the cry "By Apollo Delphinios!" thrusts his penis deeply into him. The boy, too, cries out—pain or lust, which is it? The others continue to stare at the convulsed bodies twisting at their feet. Krímon is breathing hard again, and as he cries out anew, "In the name of Apollo!" the boy beneath him is thinking, "Now... now, his power, his sperm is pouring into me. The sacrifice is complete!"

The following day Krímon returns to the spot where he had venerated the god with his virility. Carefully, he engraves in the rock near the temple gate in large, elegant letters, "By Apollo Delphinios, here Krímon has fucked a boy, the brother of Bathykles." (See Brongersma 1990)

One day on Thera, this island of boy-love, a man disembarks, a man who has never heard about Krímon or Bathykles' young brother, nor about the festival of naked boys dancing, nor about the ritual pursuit of the lad crowned with grapes. He comes from far away. Life has not been easy for him. He has loved boys, admired their beauty, even taken pictures of them; he has fondled their bodies and taught them how to enjoy themselves. People who enjoy watching cruel, bloody fights, who punish lightly those who batter and emotionally traumatise their children—people who think it is quite normal to train boys to kill other boys—have ostracised him from society, turned the full fury of their disgust upon him and have thrown him in prison where he has passed many dreary years. Now at last he is free and able to travel again. But he knows that in his own country he will always be an outcast.

He has no special knowledge of the island's history when he arrives at Thera. He is not tempted by the excursions offered and prefers to walk on the beach, alone and meditating. And then in an isolated spot he begins to feel dizzy, excited: the beach and the mountain start to spin. Acting on sudden impulse, he throws off all his clothes and stretches out naked on the ground, as though to communicate with the soil.

He lies there motionless for a long time, this man of the Twentieth Century. His mind is filled with alluring images of radiant, joyful youth. Worry and

VI. SEXUALITY AND EROTICISM

sorrow seem to melt away into the sand. And there, not too far away, stands a boy of perfect beauty, beckoning.

He doesn't understand what so suddenly has come over him on this island he hadn't ever heard about before. But he is filled with one clear conviction: he has come home!

High on the mountain above him the rock still bears Krimon's proud proclamation. For twenty-six centuries it has braved the sun and rain, and long before it fades into illegibility all our monuments to the victims of wars will have fallen into ruins. And this is only right, for death and decay pass but lust and joy remain forever.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

The following superscripts denote subject matter of literature cited in this bibliography: ¹Arabian literature and culture. ²Ethics and religion. ³History of civilisation. ⁴Graphic and pictorial description of eroticism and sexual activities. ⁵Ethnology and anthropology. ⁶Fiction, poetry and autobiography. ⁷Greek and Roman antiquity. ⁸Prostitution. ⁹Incest. ¹⁰Rape and violence. ¹¹Medical intervention. ¹²Legislation. ¹³Sexual mysticism. ¹⁴Nudity and sense of shame. ¹⁵Love relations with children and adolescents. ¹⁶Sexual activities with children and adolescents. ¹⁷Sexology. ¹⁸Sado-Masochism. ¹⁹Miscellaneous. ²⁰Sexuality of children and adolescents, sexual education.

- Abel, G. G., Becker, J. V. & Cunningham-Rathner, J., "Perspectives on Pedophilia: 2. Complications, Consent, and Cognitions in Sex Between Children and Adults." ¹⁶ *International Journal of Law and Psychiatry* 7, 1: 89-103, 1984.
- Ackerley, J. R., *Mon père et moi* (My Father and Myself). ⁶ Paris: Stock, 1971.
- Adam, B. D., "Age, Structure, and Sexuality: Reflections on the Anthropological Evidence on Homosexual Relations." ⁵ In: Blackwood, E. (Ed.), *Anthropology and Homosexual Behavior*. New York: Haworth, 1985.
- Agnew, J., "Some Anatomical and Physiological Aspects of Anal Sexual Practices." ⁴ *Journal of Homosexuality* 12, 1: 75-96, 1985.
- Alleg, H., *La question*. ¹⁸ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1978.
- ANTHROPOPHYTEIA, *Jahrbücher für folkloristische Erhebungen und Forschungen zur Entwicklungsgeschichte der geschlechtlichen Moral*, herausgegeben von Dr. Friedrich S. Krauss. ⁵ Leipzig, 1904-1914.
- Antler, "For Blowjob Power." ⁴ *NAMBLA Journal* Six, 21, 1983.
- Axgil, A & Fogedgaard, H., *Homofile kampaar—Bosseliv gennem tiderne*. ⁶ Rudkøbing: Grafolio, 1985.
- Batselier, S. de, "Kern-homofilie." ¹⁷ *Streven* 20, 2: 440-448, 1967.
- Bauserman, R., *The Sexuality of Boys*. ¹⁵ Unpublished manuscript, 1985.
- Berg, J. H. van den, *Metabetica of leer der veranderingen*. ³ Nijkerk: Callenbach, 1956.
- Berkeley, B. & Tiffenbach, J., *Foreskin, its past, its present &... its future?* ¹⁷ Berkeley, 1983.
- Bianchi, H., "The Prison Structure." ¹⁸ In: Duyves et al (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- BILDERLEXIKON. ³ Wien: Verlag für Kulturforschung, 1928.
- Bishop, J., "Del." ⁶ In *Panthology Three*. Amsterdam: Coltsfoot, 1984.
- Blans, J., "Acht kanttekeningen bij opvoeding, voorlichting en problematische incest." ⁹ In: Frenken, J. & Lichtenburcht, C. van (Eds.) *Incest*. Utrecht: Vereniging voor Seksuologie, 1984.
- Bloch, I., "Der Geruchsin." ¹⁷ *Anthropophyteia* IV, 1908.
- Bourke, J. G., "Der Unrat in Sitte, Brauch, Glauben und Gewohnheitsrecht der Völker." ³ Leipzig: Ethnologischer Verlag, 1913.
- Bowie, Th., "Erotic Aspects of Japanese Art." ⁴ In Bowie et al. (Eds.), *Studies in Erotic Art*. New York: Basic Books, 1970.
- Bradford, E. E., *The Tree of Knowledge*. ⁶ London: Kegan Paul, 1925.
- Brendel, O. J., "The Scope and Temperament of Erotic Art in the Greco-Roman World." ⁷ In: Bowie et al. (Eds.), *Studies in Erotic Art*. New York: Basic Books, 1970.
- Bro-Rasmussen, F., "Die Anatomie des männlichen Orgasmus." ¹⁷ In: Norretranders, T. (Ed.), *Hingabe—Über den Orgasmus des Mannes*. Reinbek: Rohwohlt, 1983.
- Brodsky, J., "A Retrospective Ethnography of the Mineshaft." ⁵ In: *Homosexuality, Which Homosexuality? Social Sciences*, Volume 1, Amsterdam: Free University, 1987.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brongersma, E. *Das Verfemte Geschlecht—Dokumentation über Knabenliebe*.¹⁵ 16. München: Lichtenberg, 1970.
- Brongersma, E., "Boys caught". *Pan* 9: 40-42, 1981.
- Brongersma, E., "The Thera Inscriptions".⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* (to be published 1990).
- Burgess, A. W., Hartman, C. R., McCausland, M. P. & Powers, P., "Response Patterns in Children and Adolescents Exploited Through Sex Rings and Pornography".¹⁶ *American Journal of Psychiatry* 141, 5: 656-662, 1984.
- Buunk, B., Ende-de Monchy, C van den & Levita, D. J. de, "In het grensgebied tussen incest, kindersexualiteit en seksuele opvoeding".¹⁶ In: Frenken, J. & Lichtenburcht, C. van (Eds.) *Incest*. Utrecht: Vereniging voor Seksuologie, 1984.
- Califfa, P., "Man/Boy Love and the Lesbian/Gay Movement".¹⁵ In: Tsang, D. (Ed.), *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Carpentier, Ph., *Rapport des réponses reçues suite à la première diffusion de notre questionnaire sur l'attitude des adultes envers la sexualité des jeunes*.¹⁶ Brussels: CRIES, 1985.
- Cocteau, J. "The White Paper".⁶ In: Galloway, D. & Sabisch, Chr. (Eds.), *Calamus*. New York: Quill, 1982.
- Crompton, L., *Byron and Greek Love—Homophobia in 19th-Century England*.³ Berkeley: University of California Press, 1985.
- Daniel, M., *Hommes du grand siècle*.³ Paris: Arcadie, 1957.
- Dannecker, M., "Leidenschaft hat keinen sittlichen Ort".¹⁷ *Konkret Sexualität*: 20-22, 1980.
- Dantzig, R. van, *Voor een verloren soldaat*.⁶ Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1986.
- Davies, N., *Weltgarten der Lüste (The Rampant God)*.⁵ Düsseldorf: Econ, 1985.
- Deford, F., *Big Bill Tilden*.¹⁶ New York: Simon & Schuster, 1975.
- Dieckmann, B. & Pescatore, F. *Drie Milliarden Perverse (Trois Millions de Pervers)*.¹⁵ 16. Berlin: Rosa Winkel, 1980.
- Dierckx-van Lanen, Th. A. M., "Het verhoor van kinderen in zedenzaken".¹⁹ *Rijks Politie Magazine*, Sept 1974.
- Doucé, J., *La Pédophilie en question*.¹⁶ Paris: Lumière et Justice, 1987.
- Dukahz, C., *It's a Boy!* ⁶ Amsterdam: Coltsfoot, 1984.
- Dulaure, J. A. *Des divinités génératrices ou du culte du Phallus*.³ Paris: Bibliothèque des Curieux, 1925.
- Dumargue, A., "Petits enfants d'Abidjan".⁵ *Recherches* 37: 115-127, 1979.
- Duvert, T., *Récidive*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1970.
- Duvert, T., *Le voyageur*.⁶ Paris: Editions de Minuit, 1970.
- Dijk, J. G. van, "Seks met kinderen in de strafwet".¹² In: *Nationale Raad voor Maatschappelijk Welzijn, Waar ligt de grens?* 's Gravenhage: Nationale Raad, 1982.
- Eggenkamp, H., "Kinderen en Sexualiteit".²⁰ In: *Kinderen die vragen worden overgeslagen?* Stichting Nationale Commissie Internationaal Jaar van het Kind, 1979.
- EIN HERZ FÜR SITTENSTROLICHE.¹⁵ West Berlin: Bereich Schwule der Alternativen Liste für Demokratie und Umweltschutz, 1980.
- Ellson, H., *Asfaltjeugd (Duke)*.⁶ 's-Gravenhage: Oisterwijk, undated.
- EUROPEAN COMMITTEE ON CRIME PROBLEMS, *Report on Decriminalisation*.¹² Strasbourg: Council of Europe, 1980.
- Fontanié, P., "Le Marquis de Sade et l'homosexualité".¹⁸ *Arcadie* 28, 334: 583-589, 1981.
- Foral, S., *Die Orgie*.³ München: Heyne, 1981.
- Föster, M. (Ed.), *Jürgen Bartsch—Nachruf auf eine 'Bestie'*.¹⁰ Essen: Torso-Verlag, 1984.
- Frenkel, F., "Sexuality revisited".¹⁷ In: Duyves et al. (Eds.) *Among Men, Among Women*.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Genet, J., "Pompes funèbres".⁶ In: *Oeuvres complètes*, Vol. 3. Paris: Gallimard, 1983.
- Gide, A., *Les faux-monnayeurs*.⁶ Paris: Gallimard, 1925.
- Gillan, P. & Frith, Chr., "Male-female differences in responses to erotica".¹⁷ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Ginsberg, A., "Please Master".⁶ In: Galloway & Sabisch (Eds.), *Calamus*. New York: Quill, 1982.
- Göring, L. 491.⁶ Stockholm: Bonnier, 1962. New York: Grove Press, 1966.
- Goudsmit, W., "Over 'chemische castratie' ".¹¹ *Delikt en Delikwent* 10, 5: 346-356, 1980.
- Gray, J. P., "Growing Yams and Men: An Interpretation of Kimam Male Ritualized Homosexual Behavior".⁵ In: Blackwood, E. (Ed.), *Anthropology and Homosexual Behavior*. New York: Haworth Press, 1985.
- Greif, M., *The Gay Book of Days*.¹⁹ London: Allen, 1982.
- Gross, L., " 'Abnormal' sex and 'normal' violence: television, deviance and social control".¹⁰ In: Duyves et al. (Eds.), *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- GRUPPE PÄDOSEXUELLE IN DER H.A.H., "Sexualität mit Kindern? Na klar!".¹⁵ In: Hohmann, J. (Ed.), *Pädophilie Heute*. Frankfurt: Foerster, 1980.
- Gunn, Th., "Modes of Pleasure".⁶ In: Galloway & Sabisch (Eds.), *Calamus*. New York: Quill, 1982.
- Haebler, E. J., "Human Rights and Sexual Rights".¹² *Medicine and Law* 2: 159-172, 1983.
- Hagendoorn, L. & Janssen, J., *Rechts-omkeer*.¹⁹ Baarn: Ambo, 1983.
- Harry, J., "Sexual Orientation as Destiny".¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 10, 3/4: 111-124, 1984.
- Hauer, G., *Verlangen naar tederheid*.¹⁹ Den Haag: Voorhoeve, 1983.
- Hekma, G., "Social philosophies, social practices: some preludes to the homosexual".¹⁷ In: Duyves et al. (Eds.) *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Herbart, P., *Histoires confidentielles*.¹⁶ Paris: Grasset, 1970.
- Herdt, G. H., "Semen Transactions in Sambia Culture".⁵ In: Herdt (Ed.), *Ritualized Homosexuality in Melanesia*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1984.
- Herek, G. M., "Beyond 'Homophobia': A Social Psychological Perspective on Attitudes Toward Lesbians and Gay Men".¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 10, 1/2: 1-21, 1984.
- Heslinga, K., "Motorisch en visueel gehandicapt".¹⁷ In: Hart de Ruyter, Th. et al. (Eds.) *De seksuele ontwikkeling van kind tot volwassene*. Leiden: Stafleu, 1976.
- Hirschfeld, M., *Geschlechtskunde*.¹⁷ Stuttgart: Püttmann, 1928.
- Hocquenghem, G., Foucault, M. & Danet, J., "La Loi de la pudeur".¹⁴ *Recherches* 37: 69-82, 1979.
- Hotchner, B., "Contemporary American Sex Shocks".¹⁷ In: Cook & Wilson (Eds.), *Love and Attraction*. Oxford: Pergamon, 1979.
- Hoult, Th. F., "A Brief Rejoinder".¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 10, 3/4: 125, 1984.
- Hupperts, Ch., "De zwarte verleiding: Homo-erotische afbeeldingen op Griekse zwartfigurige vazen, ca. 550 v. Chr.".⁷ In: *Congresboek vijfde jaarmarkt lesbische en homostudies*. Rotterdam: Erasmus Universiteit, 1986.
- Ingalls, D., "Sentencing in New Jersey".¹² *NAMBLA Bulletin* 5, 2: 3-5, 1984.
- Jackson, P., *Male Homosexuality in Thailand: An interpretation of contemporary Thai sources*.⁵ New York: Global Academic Publishers, 1989.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Jans, J. S. M., "De betekenis van seksualiteit en geslachtsgebonden gedrag in de kinderjaren".²⁰ In: de Wit, J., et al. (Eds.), *Psychologen over het kind*. Groningen: Tjeenk Willink, 1973.
- Johansson, St., "Sexualbrottskommitten—Tänk om!"¹² *Revolt* 7: 4-7, 1983.
- Kent, K., "Mand og mand imellem".¹⁷ *Eos* 7 & 8, 1967.
- Kessler, D. R., Book Review of Ch. W. Socarides' "Homosexuality".¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 3: 89-95, 1981.
- Klem, B., Frenken, J. & Vennix, P. *Onvrede in relaties*. Zeist: NISSO, 1983.
- Klostermann, E., "Dreng til salg".⁸ *Eos*: 108-111, 1968-1969.
- Kohnstamm, R., "'Weet een muis dat hij een muis is?' vroeg Rutger".²⁰ In: Huijts, J. H. (Ed.) *Ik zei de gek*. Baarn: Ambo, 1983.
- Kurre, "Kärlek och sma pojkar".¹⁵ *Revolt* 7: 27-28, 1974.
- Kwast, S. van der, "Incest".⁹ In: Albarda, P. et al. (Eds.) *Gewoon bijzonder*. Amsterdam: Humanitas, 1970.
- Lacombe, F., "Sondages d'opinion".¹⁹ *L'Espoir* 12: 33-34, 1984.
- Larkin (Purusha), *The Divine Androgyne According to Purusha*.¹³ San Diego: Sanctuary Publications, 1981.
- Leyland, W. (Ed.), *Orgasms of Light*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1977.
- Long, R., *Jij wou mij totaal*.⁶ Amsterdam: Sijthoff, 1987.
- Longus, *Pastorales (Daphnis et Chloé)*. Traduction G. Dalmeyda. Paris: 1934.
- Mader, D. H., "The Entimos Pais of Matthew 8:15-13 and Luke 7:1-10".¹⁵ *Paidika* I, 1: 27-39, 1987.
- Maffesoli, M., "The Orgiastic as an Agent of Socialisation".¹⁷ In: Duyves et al. (Eds.) *Among Men, Among Women. Second Supplement*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Marshall, W. L. & Barbaree, H. E., "A Behavioral View of Rape".¹⁰ *International Journal of Law and Psychiatry* 7, 51-77, 1984.
- Martel, A., *Un garçon d'entre deux guerres*. Manuscript, 1980.
- McDonald, B., *Flesh*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1982.
- McDonald, B., *Sex*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1982A.
- McDonald, B., *Cum*.⁶ San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1983.
- McDonald, B., *Smut*.⁶ New York: Gay Presses, 1984.
- McMullen, R. J., *The Cycle of Sexual Abuse and Rape of Boys Involved in Prostitution*.⁸ Manuscript, 1987.
- Murchison, C., *The Chronicles of St. Barnabas*.⁶ Amsterdam: BL Classics, 1986.
- Murray, St. & Gerard, K., "Renaissance Sodomite Subcultures?"³ In: Duyves et al. (Eds.) *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- Naerssen, L. van, "De vele uitingvormen van seksualiteit".¹⁷ In: Moors-Mommers et al. (Eds.) *Handboek seksuele hulpverlening*. Deventer: van Loghum Slaterus, 1983.
- Naerssen, A. X. van, "Ervaringen met hulpverlening aan pedofielen".¹⁶ In: Frenken, J. & Doomen, J. *Strafbare seksualiteit*. Deventer: van Loghum Slaterus, 1984.
- Nanayakkara, V., *A Return to Kandy*.¹⁹ Colombo: Nanayakkara, 1977.
- Newman, Ph. L. & Boyd, D. J., "The Making of Men: Ritual and Meaning in Awa Male Initiation".⁵ In: Herdt, G. H. (Ed.) *Rituals of Manhood*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.
- Nugteren, H., "Thomas Mann. Between sovereign man and tempting lover".¹⁹ In: Duyves

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- et al. (Eds.) *Among Men, Among Women*. Amsterdam: Gay-Studies and Women's Studies University of Amsterdam Conference, 1983.
- O'Day, J. *Confessions of a Male Prostitute*.⁸ Los Angeles: Sherbourne Press, 1964.
- Osborne, C., *Coq-Reports: 1. Boys und ihre Schwänze; 2. Boys und Homosex.*²⁰ Holbaek: Coq International, 1985.
- Overstock, *Young Boys and Fellatio*.¹⁶ New York: Overstock Book Company, 1974.
- Parker, R., "Youth, Identity and Homosexuality: The Changing Shape of Sexual Life in Contemporary Brazil".⁵ *Journal of Homosexuality* 17, 3/4: 269-289, 1989.
- Parker, W., "Homosexuality in History".³ *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 1/2: 191-210, 1980/81.
- Peyrefitte, R., *Jeunes proies*.⁶ Paris: Flammarion, 1956.
- Pilgrim, V. E., *Der selbstbefriedigte Mensch—Freud und Leid der "Onanie"*.¹⁷ Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1985.
- Plato, *Verzameld werk: 1. Xenophoon — Phaidros — Symposium*.⁶ Amsterdam: Driehoek, 1984.
- Ploss, H., *Das Weib in der Natur und Völkerkunde* (Ed. Bartels).⁵ Leipzig: Grieben, 1902.
- Poole, F. J. P., "The Ritual Forging of Identity: Aspects of Person and Self in Biminkusmin Male Initiation".⁵ In: Herdt, G. H. (Ed.), *Rituals of Manhood*. Berkeley: University of California, 1982.
- Popp, V., (Ed.) *Initiation*.⁵ Frankfurt am Main: Suhrkamp, 1969.
- PRESIDENTIAL COMMISSION ON OBSCENITY AND PORNOGRAPHY, *Report*.⁴ San Diego: Greenleaf Classics, 1970.
- Procopius, *Anecdota*.³ Translated by H. B. Dewing. London: Heinemann, 1954.
- Rector, F. *Homo Holocaust*.³ Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1981.
- Reeves, T., "Loving Boys".¹⁵ In: Tsang, D. (Ed.) *The Age Taboo*. Boston: Alyson, 1981.
- Reid, A. *The Eternal Flame*.⁶ Amsterdam: Dyanthus Press. In preparation.
- Renault, M. *The Last of the Wine*.⁶ London: Four Square Books, 1960.
- Reng, B., "Das sexuelle Verhalten junger weiblicher Prostituierter".⁸ In: Reng, B. & Redhardt, R., *Prostitution bei weiblichen und männlichen Jugendlichen*. Stuttgart: Enke, 1968.
- Roberts, St., *Why yes! How else should I have grown?* Manuscript, 1986.
- Römer, L. S. A. M. von, "Heinrich der Dritte".³ *Jahrbuch für sexuelle Zwischenstufen* IV: 572-658, 1902.
- Rooy, H. van, *Het onvruchtbaar maken van den mens*.¹¹ 's-Hertogenbosch: Teulings, 1938.
- Rorem, N., "Being Alone".⁶ In: Leyland, W. (Ed.) *Gay Fiction Anthology*. San Francisco: Gay Sunshine, 1982.
- Rosenbaum, J. *Geschichte der Lustseuche im Alterthum*.³ Halle: Lippert, 1845.
- Rosenfeld, A. A., "Endogamic Incest and the Victim-Perpetrator Model".⁹ *American Journal of the Diseases of Children*, 133, 4: 406-410, 1979.
- Rühfel, H., *Kinderleben im klassischen Athen*.⁷ Mainz: von Zabern, 1984.
- Ruiter, F. G. de, "Kindertelefoon krijgt vooral vragen over sex".²⁰ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 8 Aug, 1984.
- Rijkens, L., "De geslachtelijkheid van het geslachte lam".³ *NRC-Handelsblad*, 29 Dec., 1984.
- Saba, U., *Ernesto*.⁶ Paris: Editions du Seuil, 1975.
- Safilios-Rothschild, C., *Love, Sex and Sex Roles*.¹⁷ Englewood Cliffs: Prentice-Hall, 1977.
- Sartre, J.-P., *Saint Genet—Comédien et martyr*.² Paris: Gallimard, 1952.
- Schelsky, H., *Soziologie der Sexualität*.¹⁷ Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1955.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Schieffelin, E. L., "The Bau A Ceremonial Hunting Lodge".⁵ In Herdt, G. H. (Ed.), *Rituals of Manhood*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.
- Schild, M., *De citadel van integriteit*.¹ Manuscript, 1985.
- Schlegel, W. S., *Die Sexualinstinkte des Menschen*.¹⁷ München: Rütten & Loening, 1966.
- Schmidt, G., "Allies and Persecutors: Science and Medicine in the Homosexuality Issue".¹⁷ *Journal of Homosexuality* 10, 3/4: 127-140, 1984.
- Schmitt, A., & Martino, G. de, *Kleine Schriften zu zwischenmännlicher Sexualität und Erotik in der muslimischen Gesellschaft*.¹ Berlin: Selbstverlag, 1985.
- Schmitt, A., "Arab terminology for male-male-sex acts and actors".¹ In: *Homosexuality, which homosexuality? Social Science, Vol. 1*. Amsterdam: Free University, 1987.
- Schorsch, E., "Sexuelle Perversionen: Ideologie, Klinik, Kritik".¹⁷ In: Sigusch, V. (Ed.) *Therapie sexueller Störungen*. Stuttgart: Thieme, 1980.
- Schult, P., "Poor Boy Blues".⁶ In: Hohmann, J. S. (Ed.) *Lesebuch*. Frankfurt: Foerster, 1979.
- Scott, G. R., *Phallic Worship*.⁵ London: Panther Books, 1970.
- Sergent, B., *L'homosexualité dans la mythologie grecque*.⁷ Paris: Payot, 1984.
- Sergent, B., *L'homosexualité initiatique dans l'Europe ancienne*.³ Paris: Payot, 1985.
- Simpson, C., Chester, L. & Leitch, D., *The Cleveland Street Affair*.³ Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1976.
- Sieval, Z. M., "Islamieten in Nederland".¹ In: Bezemer, W. et al. (Eds.), *Handboek seksuele hulpverlening*. I.C.3, 1983. Deventer: van Loghum Slaterus.
- Slob, A. K., "Fysiologische reacties tijdens seksuele activiteit".¹⁷ In: Bezemer, W. et al. (Eds.), *Handboek seksuele hulpverlening*. II.A.4, 1983. Deventer: van Loghum Slaterus.
- Smidt, H. J., *Geschiedenis van het Wetboek van Strafrecht*.¹² Haarlem: Tjeenk Willink, 1891.
- Sorum, A., "Growth and Decay: Bedamini Notions of Sexuality".⁵ In: Herdt, G. H. (Ed.), *Ritualized Homosexuality in Melanesia*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1984.
- Speijer, N. et al., *Advies inzake homoseksuele relaties met minderjarigen, in het bijzonder met betrekking tot artikel 248bis W.v.St., uitgebracht door de Gezondheidsraad. Bijlage bij wetsontwerp 10347*. 's-Gravenhage: Staatsdrukkerij, 1970.
- Spinner, I. R., *Die Jungfernschaft*.³ Leipzig: Schneider, 1931.
- Stekel, W., *Die Impotenz des Mannes*.¹⁷ Berlin: Urban & Schwarzenberg, 1920.
- Stekel, W., *Der Fetischismus*.¹⁷ Berlin: Urban & Schwarzenberg, 1923.
- Stern, W., *Jugendliche Zeugen in Sittlichkeitsprozessen*.¹⁶ Leipzig, 1926.
- Stockert, F.-G. von, *Die Sexualität des Kindes*.²⁰ Stuttgart: Enke, 1956.
- Stokvis, B., *Psychologie der suggestie en autosuggestie*.¹⁹ Lochem: Tijdstroom, 1947.
- Strato van Sardes, *Knapenliedboek*.^{6, 7} Amsterdam: Arbeiderspers, 1976. (Also in *Anthologia Graeca*)
- Straver, C. J., "Jeugdigheid, een teken van progressiviteit?".¹³ In: Noorhoff, J. D. (Ed.), *Sex in Nederland*. Utrecht, Spectrum, 1969.
- SUBCOMMITTEE ON CRIME (See HEARINGS..., Vol. 1, p 300.)
- Suetonius, *Oeuvres*.⁷ Paris: Garnier.
- Suppe, F., "The Bell and Weinberg Study". *Journal of Homosexuality* 6, 4: 69-97, 1981.
- Tardieu, A., *Etude médico-légale sur les attentats aux mœurs*.¹⁰ Paris: Baillière, 1878.
- TEXAS HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, *Interim Report of the Select Committee on Child Pornography*.⁴ Austin: State of Texas, 1978.
- Tielman, R., *Homoseksualiteit in Nederland*.³ Meppel: Boom, 1982.
- Tiggeler, S., "Kind en echtscheiding".¹⁹ In: *Kinderen die vragen*. Den Haag: Stichting Nationale Commissie Internationaal Jaar van het Kind, 1979.

SUPPLEMENTAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Trevisan, J., *Perverts in Paradise*.³ London: GMP Publishers, 1986.
- Tuzin, D. F., "Ritual Violence Among the Ilahita Arapesh".¹⁵ In: Herdt, G. H. (Ed.), *Rituals of Manhood*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.
- Valentine, J., *Puppies*.⁶ Glen Ellen: Entwhistle Books, 1979.
- Velde, Th. van de, *Het volkomen huwelijk*.¹⁷ Leiden: Leidsche Uitgeversmaatschappij, 1926.
- Vinterberg, S., "Die 'neuen Männer' und die alte Sehnsucht".¹⁷ In: Norretranders, T. (Ed.) *Über den Orgasmus des Mannes*. Reinbek: Rowohlt, 1983.
- Wilhelm, P., "Venstrefloj og bornepornografi".⁴ *Information*, 6 Feb. 1980.
- Wolf, Ch., *Die Kastration bei sexuellen Perversionen und Sittlichkeitsverbrechen des Mannes*.¹¹ Basel: Schwabe & Co., 1934.
- Wolters, W. H. G., "De jonge suicidale adolescent".¹⁹ *Nederlands Tijdschrift voor Geneeskunde* 125, 12, 1981.
- Wood, B. & Geasland, J., *Twins*.⁶ New York: Putnam, 1977.
- Wulffen, E., *Der Sexualverbrecher*.¹⁹ Berlin: Langenscheidt, 1922.
- X., "Knapenliefde-lust".¹⁵ *Rooie Vlinderschrift* No. 3. Gent: Elegeert.
- X., "The Savage Storms of June".⁸ *Baltimore Magazine*, June 1982.
- X., "The Biggest Cock I've Ever Seen".⁹ *Fag Rag*, 12th Anniversary Issue. Boston: Fag Rag, 1982.
- X., "Humiliations of Hazing I".¹⁸ *Fag Rag*, 12th Anniversary Issue. Boston: Fag Rag, 1982.
- Xenophon, *Symposium* (Dutch Translation *Het gastmaal* by H. H. J. Brouwer).⁷ Bussum: van Dishoeck, 1973.
- Zeegers, M., *Psychiatrie*.¹⁹ Utrecht: Bohn, Scheltema & Holkema, 1977.

Index of Persons and Sources

- Abel (I) 14
 Abelard (I) 83
 Abele, von (I) 92
 Abidjan, boy from (I) 132, 150
 Abraham (I) 95, 111, 115, 191-193; (II) 29, 128, 176, 247, 249, 276
 Abspoel (II) 116
 Abu Nuwas (I) 50, 85; (II) 95, 141, 234, 256, 294, 314, 393, 427, 428, 433, 470
 Abu Zayd (I) 50
 Achilles (II) 13, 173
 Ackerley (II) 66
 Adam (II) 411
 Adorno (I) 46, 75; (II) 187, 219
 Agnew (II) 181, 416, 423
 Aischines (I) 77; (II) 68
 AKP (I) 105
 Al-Abchichi (II) 36
 Albrecht (I) 103, 104, 263; (II) 35, 115, 135
 Albrecht-Désirat (II) 191, 231
 Alcibiades (I) 231; (II) 30, 334
 Alcide (I) 96, 247
 Alcock (II) 179, 184, 185, 199, 200, 274, 285
 Alexander the Great (I) 224; (II) 104, 109, 113, 114, 238, 246, 251, 254, 263, 332, 369, 396, 397, 453, 462
 Alleg (II) 111
 Allen (I) 52; (II) 276
 Amar (I) 81
 Ambrose (II) 203
 Amendt (II) 161
 Anakreon (I) 240
 Anand (II) 456
 Anderson (II) 115
Anthologia Graeca (I) 49, 99, 272
 Antinous (I) 81, 239, 257; (II) 104, 156, 253, 254
 Antler (II) 387, 406
 Antonia (II) 245
 Aphrodite (I) 29, 77, 80
 Apuleius (I) 266, 267
 Aquinas, Thomas (I) 148; (II) 75, 187, 189
 Arc, d' (II) 372
 Arcadie (I) 105
 Arch Smith, d' (I) 111, 248; (II) 38, 96, 103, 259, 311, 470
 Ariosto (I) 83
 Aristophanes (I) 79, 143, 177; (II) 60, 240, 334, 430, 436
 Aristotle (I) 75, 77, 127, 242; (II) 109, 153, 238, 263, 332, 430
 Armand (I) 47; (II) 50, 58, 75, 84, 109, 113, 189, 234, 247, 461, 464
 Arnold (II) 393
 Arntzens (II) 116
 Aron (I) 86, 127, 179; (II) 115, 123, 130, 238
 Athenaios (I) 77, 82; (II) 112, 246
 Attalos (II) 94
 Auden (II) 31
 Augiéras (I) 251
 Augustine (I) 24; (II) 75, 190, 203
 Augustus (I) 81
 Avery-Clark (II) 153
 Awad (II) 51
 Axgil (II) 467
 Back (I) 75; (II) 58
 Badgley (II) 24
 Bageas (II) 251
 Baker (I) 154; (II) 389, 422
 Baldricus (I) 83
Baltimore Magazine (II) 64, 76, 78
 Banens (I) 20, 82; (II) 114, 127, 128, 187, 190, 204
 Banis (I) 275; (II) 136
 Barbaree (II) 183
 Barrie (II) 156
 Barrington (I) 44, 92, 111, 118, 128, 140-142, 193, 207, 222, 237, 238, 241, 274; (II) 49, 51, 52, 72, 73, 80, 82, 90, 95, 104, 130, 165, 166, 178, 191, 196, 198, 221, 223, 272, 275, 277, 295, 297, 309, 312, 331, 349, 359, 360, 364, 384, 413, 416, 420, 436, 439, 468
 Bartels (II) 294
 Bartsch (II) 114, 186
 Bataille (II) 100
 Batselier, de (II) 27, 312
 Baudelaire (I) 75
 Baudry (I) 47, 74, 241, 249; (II) 27, 312
 Baumann (II) 181
 Baurmann (I) 57, 58, 73, 94, 103, 110, 127, 255, 263; (II) 16, 17, 21-23, 25, 27, 28, 39, 40, 45, 49, 93, 94, 100, 114, 115, 121, 127, 128, 130, 133, 135, 146, 151, 153, 175, 178, 186, 192, 208-210, 231, 275, 311, 359, 370, 380, 381
 Bauserman (II) 428

Index of Persons and Sources

- Beach (I) 67, 87, 136, 171, 176, 204; (II) 27, 109, 123, 274, 277, 398
 Beaufort, de (II) 133
 Beauharnais, de (II) 252
 Beccadelli (II) 414
 Becker, de (I) 85, 86
 Beebe (I) 123
 Beech (I) 214
 Beemer (I) 30; (II) 455
 Beethoven, van (I) 161
 Beets (I) 180, 184, 185, 188; (II) 295, 391, 408
 Bell (I) 43, 60, 103, 139, 154; (II) 27, 166, 167, 320, 350
 Bender (I) 257; (II) 18, 29, 54, 115, 135, 150
 Bendig (I) 55, 73; (II) 12, 50, 208
 Bennholdt-Thomsen (II) 115
 Berg (II) 29
 Berg, van den (II) 122, 124
 Berger, B. (II) 199, 324, 333
 Berger, L. (II) 190
 Berger, O. (I) 181
 Bergh, van den (I) 37
 Berkel (I) 244; (II) 37
 Berkeley (II) 445
 Berliner (II) 94
 Bernard of Clairvaux (II) 460
 Bernard (I) 43, 94, 95, 105-107, 110, 127, 175, 253, 280; (II) 18, 31, 51, 144, 166, 173, 322, 337, 342, 347
 Berndt (I) 171
 Bernstein (I) 188
 Bertrand (I) 122
 Bess (I) 132; (II) 264
 Bethe (I) 79, 80; (II) 454
 Bettelheim (I) 160, 162, 163, 166, 171, 224; (II) 224, 284
 Bettge (I) 273
 Beurdeley (I) 65, 81, 84, 143; (II) 447
 Beyaert (II) 24, 102
 Bianchi (II) 393
 Bibeb (I) 14
 Bieber (I) 139, 214; (II) 28, 29, 48, 191, 195, 198, 218, 279, 302, 303, 337, 372, 408
 Bielefeld (I) 246
 Biener (I) 189, 193, 199, 218; (II) 276, 283, 465
Bilderlexikon (II) 460
 Birken (I) 277; (II) 168
 Bishop (II) 438
 Bismarck (I) 110
 Blais (I) 75, 146; (II) 141
 Blake (I) 112; (II) 61, 397
 Blans (II) 324, 381
 Blau (I) 257; (II) 18, 54, 115, 135, 150
 Bleibtreu-Ehrenberg (I) 83, 88-90; (II) 27, 59, 93, 115, 124, 127, 128, 166, 178, 203, 204, 240, 296, 304, 310, 398, 411, 425, 433, 445, 454, 460
 Bleuler (II) 28
 Bloch, H. (I) 198
 Bloch, I. (I) 99, 172, 198, 224, 260; (II) 50, 94, 139, 251, 462, 468
 Blom-van Rens (I) 26
 Bloomingdale (I) 250
 Blüher (I) 76, 82, 110, 226; (II) 197, 262, 298, 304
 Boccaccio (I) 267
 Boer, de (I) 42, 113, 188, 191-193, 197-203, 204, 207-209, 232; (II) 223, 237, 238, 275, 283, 293, 295, 330
 Boisrobert (I) 94
 Bon (II) 372
 Bontekoe (II) 184
 Boogaard-Schellekens, van den (II) 34
 Borneman (I) 22, 23, 25, 27, 28, 30, 35, 42, 47, 59-61, 64, 67, 70, 75, 78, 80, 82, 83, 87-89, 100, 126-128, 130, 133, 146, 156, 161, 167, 174, 176, 181, 183, 197, 198, 204, 208, 213, 215, 219, 246, 251; (II) 13, 21, 43, 49-51, 58, 69, 74, 75, 81, 84, 88, 91, 103-106, 109, 115, 128, 132, 141, 144, 149, 161, 165, 168, 176, 177, 179, 180, 182-186, 189, 194-197, 200, 207, 209, 211, 212, 214, 218, 222, 223, 231, 234, 237, 239, 240, 244-247, 250, 256, 264, 271, 273-276, 281, 311, 313, 314, 361, 365, 374, 381, 383, 399, 401, 407, 408, 412, 413, 421, 425, 437, 445, 455, 456, 459, 461, 465-467, 469, 474
 Boulin (I) 250, 276; (II) 40, 66, 67, 115
 Bourke (II) 412
 Bousquet (I) 128, 178, 198; (II) 213, 224, 234
 Bouwmeester, den (I) 234

Index of Persons and Sources

- Bowie (II) 247, 273, 435
 Bowman (I) 103
 Boyd (II) 112, 267, 272
Boy-love Newsletter (II) 428, 434, 437, 450
 Bradford (II) 158
 Brandt (II) 377
 Bräutigam (II) 29
 Bremmer (I) 80, 85
 Brenner (II) 78
 Brethmas, de (I) 34, 56, 78, 91, 108, 109, 144, 146, 147, 180, 232, 246, 248-250, 253, 255, 261, 263, 265, 278-280; (II) 32, 43, 77, 158, 160, 198, 258, 259, 322, 341, 403, 441
 Breton (I) 36, 63
 Breuer (II) 282
 Breusers (II) 180, 221
 Bridge (II) 123
 Broderick (I) 147, 173
 Bromberg (I) 103
 Brongersma Foundation (I) 10, 14, 41, 78, 96, 124, 149, 156, 174, 176, 186, 203, 226, 265; (II) 24, 28, 134, 160, 163, 172, 319, 337, 339, 347, 349, 352, 372, 399, 447, 449, 453, 467, 468, 475
 Bronslau (II) 100, 122, 246, 292, 403
 Brooks (II) 114
 Bro-Rasmussen (II) 365
 Brownmiller (II) 112
 Brown-Séguard (II) 412
 Brückner (II) 200
 Brunold (II) 18, 20, 115
 Brusendorf (I) 48; (II) 81
 Bruyn, de (I) 174; (II) 88, 180, 273, 275
 Bryk (I) 163, 164, 166
 Buck (II) 94
 Buffière (I) 14, 20-23, 26, 48, 49, 67, 77-80, 82, 84, 108, 127, 143, 176, 240, 245, 272; (II) 28, 30, 38, 60, 68, 159, 161, 274, 334, 372, 395, 413, 426, 430, 454
 Bühler-Oppenheim (I) 159
 Buikhuizen (I) 102
 Bullinga (II) 61, 62, 72-74, 77, 80
 Bullough (I) 9, 11, 69, 75, 83-86, 88, 90, 91, 93, 102, 148, 214, 215; (II) 28, 58, 69, 100, 101, 113, 131, 184, 190, 196, 197, 201-205, 207, 213, 225, 234, 240, 241, 244, 277, 319, 361, 374, 386, 394, 397, 398, 413, 433, 437, 465
 Bultena (II) 190
 Burditt (II) 115
 Burford (II) 53
 Burgess (II) 118, 144
 Burkhardt (I) 66
 Burnett (I) 146, 154
 Burton, L. (I) 257; (II) 19, 20
 Burton, R. (I) 35, 50, 63, 83, 85, 100, 125, 166; (II) 70, 73, 190, 213, 231, 251, 268, 320, 361, 362, 428
 Buunk (II) 342
 Buuren, van (II) 132
 Buytendijk (I) 167; (II) 242
 Byron (II) 435
 Cadinot (II) 434
 Caesar (II) 122
 Calderone (I) 35, 144, 153
 Calderwood (I) 183
 Califa (I) 60, 112, 175; (II) 31, 145, 181, 274
 Calvin (II) 203
 Camilla (I) 206
 Camp, van (II) 50, 51, 94
 Campbell, (I) 141; (II) 100
Canard Enchaîné, Le (I) 59
 C.A.P.M. (I) 56, 58, 60; (II) 13, 44, 86, 132, 351
 Caravaggio (I) 84, 250
 Carlier (I) 93
 Carpenter (I) 43, 228, 230; (II) 176, 258, 455, 461
 Carpentier (II) 115, 169, 373, 393, 401, 414, 426
 Carroll (II) 156
 Carter (I) 163
 Casanova (II) 168, 252
 Caspar (II) 223
 Catherine the Great (II) 466
 Cato (I) 198
 Catullus (I) 81, 91, 215
 Cavafy (I) 22
 Cavaliere (I) 83
 Celli (I) 21, 67
 Chalkley (II) 20, 22, 29, 135, 150
 Challot (II) 20, 192
 Chaplin (I) 59
 Chardans (I) 83; (II) 82

Index of Persons and Sources

- Charlemagne (II) 247
 Charpey (I) 140
 Chaucer (II) 231
Chicago Tribune (II) 74
 Child (II) 184
 Christian (I) 179
 Christianopoulos (I) 240
 Chrysostomus (I) 83
 Chubb (II) 103, 470
 Churchill (I) 46, 47, 52, 66, 219, 272, 281; (II) 28, 29, 48, 61, 85, 113, 131, 148, 183, 192, 193, 201-203, 296
 Cicero (I) 81, 198
 Clark Institute (I) 56
 Cleland (II) 84
 Clemens of Alexandria (II) 231
 Clemens Schröner (II) 101
 Cleopatra (II) 122, 403
 Cleugh (I) 83; (II) 69, 123, 197, 203, 234, 241, 245, 252, 460
 Cline (I) 90
 Clower (I) 177
 Cnoop Koopmans (II) 312
 COC (I) 74
 Cocteau (II) 71, 72, 81, 252
 Cohen (II) 115
 Cohen-Matthijssen (II) 48, 332
 Comfort (II) 413, 450
 Commodus (I) 47; (II) 240
 Condé, Prince de (II) 277
 Conny (I) 200; (II) 37, 90, 118, 173, 174, 293, 440, 441, 452
 Coon (I) 275
 Corcy (I) 59
 Corll (I) 108; (II) 114
 Corstjens (I) 15, 71, 119; (II) 19, 23, 134, 194, 332, 334, 380
 Count (I) 66
 Cox (II) 22, 38, 42, 73, 115, 140, 141, 171, 323, 337, 465
 Cranston (II) 97
 Crawford (I) 103; (II) 140, 141, 266
 Crompton (II) 122
 Cummings (II) 64
 Curran (I) 118
 Currier (II) 212, 222, 264, 285, 290
 Czekanowski (I) 164
 D (I) 133, 150; (II) 244
 Dalmás (II) 199
 Daniel (II) 68, 204
 Daniélou (II) 57, 70, 92, 181, 192, 201, 206, 207, 224, 226, 236, 247, 262, 296, 298, 309, 314, 356, 412, 417, 454-458, 460
 Dannecker (II) 366
 Dante (II) 123
 Dantzig, van (II) 380
 Darius (II) 251
 Dark (II) 434
 Darwin (II) 251
 Dasberg (I) 36, 37, 168, 182; (II) 122-124, 214, 234, 269, 291
 Davidson (I) 15, 113, 143, 221, 232; (II) 59, 159, 299, 382, 454
 Davies (II) 111, 412, 430, 432, 454, 456, 458, 459
 Davis (I) 234; (II) 108
 Debreyne (I) 179
 Decrés (I) 223; (II) 214
 Deford (I) 114; (II) 390
 Deisher (II) 214
 Delin (II) 183
 Densen-Gerber (II) 64, 181
 Deschner (I) 36, 83, 178; (II) 26, 75, 114, 153, 187, 189, 198
 Devereux (I) 87
 Diana (II) 103
 Dickinson (I) 140; (II) 280
 Diderot (II) 207
 Dieckmann (II) 328, 404, 427, 444
 Dierckx-van Lanen (II) 116
 Dingwall (I) 178
 Diogenes (I) 176
 Dionysos (I) 48, 142; (II) 240, 334, 357
 Diotima (I) 22
 Director of Admissions (I) 274; (II) 136
 Dixon (II) 51
 Dobrovich (II) 180, 232
 Dolto (I) 56, 258; (II) 40, 48
 Domitian (I) 82; (II) 113
 Donkers (I) 191
 Döring (I) 60; (II) 115
 Dort (I) 190, 195, 219, 221; (II) 392
 Doshay (II) 29
 Dostoyevski (I) 58
 Dover (I) 49, 77-79; (II) 13, 37, 233, 313, 334, 335, 363, 393, 430, 431, 454

Index of Persons and Sources

- Downsbrough (I) 228
 Drake (I) 253; (II) 61, 424, 434, 439
 Drew (I) 253; (II) 61, 424, 434, 439
 Drilhon (II) 298
 Drooges (I) 165, 166, 172
 DSAP (I) 105
 Dugué (II) 446
 Dühren (I) 59; (II) 100, 197
 Dukahz (I) 97, 109; (II) 402
 Dulaure (II) 241
Du und Ich (I) 77; (II) 62
 Duvert (I) 32, 33, 38, 48, 76, 94, 99, 139, 246, 253, 263; (II) 31, 40, 42-44, 58, 62, 72, 93, 105, 120, 127, 145, 167, 356, 367, 368, 419, 426, 429, 434, 440, 452
 Dijk, van (II) 143, 215
 Eck (II) 128, 197, 203
Ecole en Bateau See Kameneff
 Edwardes (I) 30, 90; (II) 462, 464
 Eeten, van (I) 114
 Eggenkamp (II) 179, 268, 384
 Eglinton (I) 113, 252, 275; (II) 136, 137, 228, 335, 390, 434
 Eigeltinger (II) 185, 462
 Eissler (I) 181
 Elboef, d' (II) 168
 Elders (II) 272
 Elias (I) 136
 Elisabeth Bridge (I) 37
 Ell (II) 27
 Ellis, A. (II) 157
 Ellis, H. (I) 30, 61, 69, 75, 96, 136, 147, 150, 151, 163, 172, 173, 178, 181, 189, 223; (II) 29, 73, 91, 108, 180, 194, 195, 198, 231, 237, 242, 243, 248-251, 254, 281, 282, 292, 299, 354, 370, 394, 412, 415, 435, 438, 464
 Ellison (II) 243
 Elwin (I) 126, 146, 160, 172, 228; (II) 111, 188, 252, 254, 263, 267, 272, 276, 284, 285, 306, 307, 309
 Emde Boas, van (II) 196, 197, 204, 206, 231, 284
 Endymion (I) 158; (II) 160
 Engelhardt (II) 203
 Epictetus (II) 156
 Eppink (I) 85
 Erasmus (I) 36; (II) 123, 223, 230, 231
 Erman (I) 89
 Ernest (I) 63, 255, 259; (II) 52, 53, 104, 290, 404, 420, 439, 453
 Ernst (I) 177
 Erny (II) 155
 Eros (I) 25, 77; (II) 38, 159, 259, 332, 356, 357, 396
Espoir, l' (I) 59; (II) 205
 Essebac (I) 226
 Esserman (II) 41
 Eubulos (II) 434
 Euripides (II) 332
 European Committee on Crime Problems (II) 127, 128, 131
 Evangelische Omroep (II) 26
 Everaerd (I) 59, 132, 189; (II) 29, 242
 Everts-Goddard (II) 101
 Ewijk, van (II) 23
 Eysenck (II) 182, 183
Fag-Rag (II) 49, 107
 Falk (I) 48
 Farouk (II) 467
 Farrell (II) 48
 Farson (II) 115, 265
 Fernandez (II) 122, 130
 Festin (II) 267
 Feuerbach (II) 127
 Ficino (II) 294
 Figger (I) 222, 223
 Finch (II) 115
 Finkelhor (I) 58; (II) 49
 Fisch (I) 73, 264; (II) 115, 186, 230
 Fischer (I) 75, 182; (II) 123
 Fisher (I) 236; (II) 51, 99
 Fitch (I) 103
 Flinders (I) 234
 Flynt (II) 248, 415
 Fogedgaard (II) 467
 Fontanié (I) 110, 157; (II) 103, 359
 Foral (I) 84; (II) 81, 109, 184, 234, 237, 244-248, 273, 295, 403, 462, 465-467, 471
 Forberg (I) 181; (II) 341
 Ford (I) 67, 87, 136, 171, 176, 204; (II) 27, 109, 123, 274-277, 398
 Föster (II) 114, 186

Index of Persons and Sources

- Foucault (I) 77, 231, 258; (II) 103, 171, 202, 262, 432
 Fox (II) 184
 Francis (I) 152, 181, 184, 188
 Franco (II) 62
 François I (I) 36
 Fraser (I) 70, 102, 110, 115, 116, 118, 175; (II) 11, 12, 23, 32, 51, 52, 55, 127, 140, 142, 149, 156
 Frenkel (II) 385
 Frenken (I) 26, 169, 184, 205, 247, 280; (II) 55, 82, 179, 197, 230, 243, 276, 304
 Freud (I) 22, 31, 33, 34, 47, 54, 55, 75, 102, 128, 131, 132, 136, 173, 181, 192, 213, 216, 241, 249; (II) 9, 16, 49, 85, 117, 125, 126, 178-182, 189, 197, 205, 212, 217, 244, 282, 308, 413, 454
 Freund (I) 74, 75, 103; (II) 29, 129, 141, 266
 Frey (II) 115
 Freyr (II) 240
 Friar (I) 240
 Friday (I) 112, 140, 146, 154, 183, 185, 186, 193, 195, 205; (II) 248, 249, 282, 289, 379, 397, 402, 420, 436
 Friedenber (I) 179
 Frisch (II) 24
 Frith (II) 87
 Fromm (II) 188, 219
 Frosch (I) 103
 Fuchs (I) 36; (II) 234, 263, 292
 Furacachopos (II) 112
 Fürst (I) 34
 Fuss (II) 37
 Gacy (II) 114
 Gaspaille (I) 214; (II) 277, 306
 Gagnon (I) 42, 73, 111, 134, 154, 204, 205, 207, 209; (II) 29, 86, 115, 208, 224, 225, 236, 274, 285
 Galenus (II) 191
 Galloway (I) 111; (II) 366
 Gandhi (II) 123
 Ganymede (II) 38
 Gauthier (I) 62, 63, 190; (II) 302, 438
Gay Journal (I) 89, 127; (II) 181, 362
Gay Left Collective (I) 70, 128
Gay Liberation (II) 398, 400, 402, 403
Gay News (II) 63
 Geasland (II) 49
 Gebhard (I) 71, 72, 74, 103, 263, 272; (II) 83, 93, 115, 135, 157, 224, 371
 Geeraert (II) 46, 86, 218, 287, 332, 378
 Geiser (I) 67, 73, 74, 91, 115; (II) 21, 24, 29, 40, 49, 51, 52, 57, 64, 68, 76, 92-94, 98, 115, 117, 134, 138-140, 149, 183, 196, 215, 230, 259, 275, 312, 370, 377, 382, 384
 Geisler (II) 22, 46, 94, 115, 144, 146, 151, 219
 Genet (I) 223; (II) 384, 385
 Gennep, van (II) 123
 Geradts (II) 116
 Gerbener (I) 263, 267; (II) 135, 146, 380, 381
 Gervais (I) 160, 161, 164
 Gervai (I) 225; (II) 298
 Gibbens (I) 271; (II) 20, 23, 115, 120, 153
 Gide (I) 38, 67, 79, 83, 92, 217, 226; (II) 137, 204, 226, 227, 251, 258, 297, 312, 335, 395
 Giese (I) 25, 44, 184, 186, 189, 191, 199, 200, 204, 209, 214, 236; (II) 199, 214, 295, 315
 Gill (II) 252
 Gillan (II) 87
 Gilles de Rais (II) 100
 Ginder (II) 84
 Gindorf (II) 207
 Ginsberg (II) 424
 Giordano (I) 83
 Gloeden, von (II) 90
 Godard (I) 172
 Goethe (I) 47, 66, 76, 90; (II) 142, 230, 251, 412
 Golding (I) 233
 Goldstein (II) 20, 87, 183
 Goligher (II) 416
 Gomez Arcos (II) 49
 Gonzaga (II) 247
 Goodman (II) 259
 Goodrich (II) 204
 Gopal (I) 86
 Gordon (I) 55, 60, 117; (II) 129, 354, 382
 Görling (II) 301
 Goroncy (I) 17
 Goslinga (II) 37
 Goudsmit (II) 140
 Gould (I) 115

Index of Persons and Sources

Gourmont, de (II) 251, 359
 Grace de Saleby (I) 37
 Graham (II) 277
 Graig (II) 268
 Grass (I) 196
 Grassel (I) 168
 Graven (II) 21, 115, 131
 Gray (I) 164; (II) 411
 Green (I) 107, 180
 Greenberg (I) 115
 Gregory (II) 203
 Greif (II) 112, 390, 435
 Greulich (I) 122, 124, 126
 Griffin (II) 29, 150
 Grillparzer (II) 161
 Groffmann (I) 263, 264; (II) 17, 20, 114
 Groot, de (I) 56; (II) 130
 Gross (II) 139
 Groth (I) 73; (II) 17, 31
 Group of Pedosexuals in the HAH (II) 318
 Grugett (II) 18, 29
 Gründel (II) 193
 Guersant (II) 177
 Gundersen (II) 48, 126, 231, 384
 Gunn (II) 306
 Gürtler (II) 265, 321
 Gurwell (I) 108; (II) 114
 Gury (I) 110
 Guttmacher (II) 115
 Guyon (II) 206, 210
 Guyotat (I) 62, 114, 174, 201; (II) 58, 72, 94, 100, 320, 389, 390, 409, 411, 435
Haarmann (I) 108; (II) 113
 Hadrian (I) 81, 239, 257; (II) 104, 253
 Haeberle (I) 42, 43, 73, 83, 174, 176, 178, 179, 189, 190, 192, 208, 213, 216, 217, 223; (II) 21, 27, 29, 40, 46, 73, 139, 149, 153, 160, 179-182, 185, 188, 189, 192, 202, 206, 210-212, 218, 220, 221, 223, 268, 273-275, 279, 280, 282, 308, 361, 365, 392, 401, 411, 413, 423, 425
 Hagendoorn (II) 317
 Hahn, von (I) 85
 Hallbeck (II) 254
 Hamilton (II) 61
 Hammond (I) 172; (II) 372
 Hanack (I) 263; (II) 20, 29, 116, 121, 127, 295
 Hannon (I) 204; (II) 36
 Hanry (I) 117, 131, 132, 183, 188, 189, 192, 214, 218, 224, 231; (II) 28, 117, 124, 141, 165, 176, 177, 181, 185, 186, 200, 207, 208, 218, 224, 276, 281, 184, 198, 356, 382, 403, 471
 Hardy (II) 63
 Harlow (II) 274
 Harris (II) 78
 Harry (II) 28, 29
 Hart de Ruyter (I) 73, 130, 131, 216; (II) 28, 75, 100, 116, 140, 180, 194, 237, 238, 256, 264, 267, 275, 305, 313, 365
 Hartmann (II) 380
 Harun-al-Raschid (II) 241
 Hass (I) 185, 191, 193, 195, 207, 208, 210; (II) 48, 165, 176, 194, 200, 216, 218, 222, 267, 268, 278-280, 282, 286-291, 305, 307, 308, 318, 360, 367, 388-390, 397, 403, 406, 408
 Hauer (II) 294
 Hauptmann (II) 21, 148, 380
 Hayes (II) 247
 Hays (II) 113
Hearings (I) 57, 115; (II) 46, 64, 209, 223, 230, 323
 Heckstall-Smith (I) 222
 Heid (II) 178, 196, 210, 295
 Heine (II) 465
 Heister (I) 127
 Hekma (II) 69
 Helsdingen, van (II) 31
 Hendricks (II) 186
 Henley (II) 114
 Hennig (I) 38, 39, 112, 119, 139, 220, 245, 249, 255, 256, 263, 267, 277; (II) 35, 37, 62, 65, 66, 68, 72, 163, 171, 249, 336, 350, 362, 439
 Henningsen (II) 81
 Henriquez (II) 115, 246
 Henry (II) 391, 392, 395, 423, 426-428, 433, 441, 448, 449
 Henry III (II) 247
 Hephaestion (I) 224; (II) 369
 Hera (II) 38
 Herbart (II) 168, 170, 437
 Hercules (Herakles) (I) 78; (II) 60, 161, 240

Index of Persons and Sources

Herd (I) 50, 88; (II) 29, 236, 296, 404, 411, 454
 Herek (II) 128
 Hermes (I) 79, 176
 Herodotus (II) 459
 Herren (II) 116
 Hertoft (I) 25, 95, 148, 151, 153, 176, 177, 183, 192, 196, 201, 212, 224, 231, 273; (II) 23, 123, 166, 193, 217, 224, 270, 288
 Hervé (II) 62, 68
 Heslinga (II) 217
 Hesnard (II) 177
 Heyden, van der (II) 240
 Hieron (II) 99, 447
 Hilarius (I) 83
 Hildebrandt (I) 241
 Himmelein (II) 311
 Hinde (II) 295
 Hippocrates (II) 263
 Hirschfeld (I) 118, 265; (II) 29, 95, 116, 243
 Hite (I) 21, 27, 65, 128, 144, 145, 147, 149, 155, 189, 191, 193, 199, 219, 221, 230, 231, 235, 260; (II) 87, 95, 98, 110, 176, 187, 218, 278, 280-283, 286, 287, 290, 291, 323, 379, 383, 392, 400, 405, 406, 413, 414, 417, 418, 445, 446, 452, 465, 468
 Hitler (II) 205, 235
 Hocquenghem (II) 37, 133, 273, 360, 427
 Hodge (II) 97
 Hoekstra (I) 192, 223
 Hoffmann (I) 94
 Hoffmeyer (II) 39, 225
 Hogan (II) 131, 283
 Hohmann (II) 233, 256, 265, 342, 343
 Holdredge (II) 285
 Holland (I) 75, 241
 Holmstrom (II) 144
 Homer (I) 80
 Honnecker (II) 205
 Hopfner (II) 73
 Horace (I) 28, 48, 81, 198
 Horn (II) 132, 178, 183, 196, 207
 Hotchkiss (I) 23, 42; (II) 124
 Hotchner (II) 160
 Hoult (II) 28
 Howard (II) 209, 273
 Howell (II) 51, 99, 230
 Howells (I) 60, 73, 75, 103; (II) 31, 93, 98, 100, 130, 166, 275
 Hucks (II) 126
 Hughes (II) 112
 Hulsman (II) 111
 Humphreys (I) 113; (II) 72, 181, 187, 405
 Hunt (I) 30; (II) 105
 Hunter (II) 412
 Hupperts (II) 431
 Hurlock (I) 128
 Hurt (II) 397
 Huxley (II) 185
 Hylas (II) 161
Ibsen (II) 140
 Ilken (I) 73; (II) 141
 Illinois Legislative (I) 73; (II) 17, 21, 22, 35, 61, 64, 67, 68, 78, 90, 92, 97, 116, 120, 134, 271, 292, 354
Information (II) 83
 Ingalls (II) 118
 Ingram (I) 97; (II) 19, 119, 136, 149, 350, 380
 Innocent III (II) 189
 Instituut voor Toegepaste Sociologie (II) 41
Intermediar (II) 24
International Journal of Greek Love (II) 136
 Iovetz-Tereschenko (I) 216; (II) 195
 Isabella of Bavaria (II) 109
 Isodas (I) 79
 Italiaander (I) 48, 74, 87, 90; (II) 23, 70, 128, 273, 341
Jackson (I) 178; (II) 311, 436
 Jacobi (II) 116
 Jacobsen (I) 226
 Jans (I) 98; (II) 218, 279, 378
 Jansen (II) 317
 Janus (I) 37, 57-60, 62, 113, 114, 116, 132, 146, 199, 204, 209, 210, 224; (II) 22, 25, 31, 46, 48-51, 55, 67, 79, 87, 101, 147, 164, 214, 264, 324
 Jefferson (I) 58
 Jensen (I) 88, 159, 160, 166, 205; (II) 366, 423
 Jerome (II) 13
 Jersild (I) 275; (II) 68, 105, 137, 166, 167, 342
 Jesus (II) 203, 234, 308, 311
 Joel (II) 75

Index of Persons and Sources

Johansson (II) 212, 314
 John Birch Society (II) 187
 John Bridge (I) 37
 Johnson (I) 43, 117, 139, 217, 236; (II) 27, 82, 91, 95, 111, 165, 168, 187, 230, 243, 244, 255, 363-365, 390, 391, 401, 421, 422, 449, 450, 465
 Johnston (II) 214
 Joint Council for Teenagers (II) 115, 134
 Jones, E. S. (I) 103
 Jones, G. (II) 276, 283, 354
 Jouhandeau (I) 43, 100, 112, 113; (II) 77, 88, 262, 359, 368, 423, 447
Journal de Montréal (II) 24
 Joyce (I) 182; (II) 177
 Juliet (I) 36, 174
 Jung (I) 55; (II) 104
 Juno (II) 104
 Justinian (II) 113
 Juvenal (I) 142; (II) 72
Kahn (I) 152
 Kaiser (II) 116
 Kalma (II) 121
 Kameneff (I) 134, 135, 138, 149; (II) 15, 26, 43, 54, 134, 239, 258, 259, 317
 Kant (II) 87
 Karapati (II) 455
 Karpman (I) 75, 76, 104, 185, 231; (II) 25, 30, 269
 Karsch-Haack (I) 69, 86, 87, 162; (II) 437
Katholieke Actie (II) 179
 Kelly, B. (I) 60
 Kelly, D. (I) 143, 158
 Kemmerich (I) 36; (II) 123
 Kempf (I) 86, 127, 179; (II) 115, 123, 130, 238
 Kent (II) 69, 412, 423
 Kentler (I) 35, 168, 177, 180, 181, 204, 209, 224, 253, 255, 266; (II) 116, 205, 207, 209, 210, 214, 226, 231, 233, 235, 255, 264, 283, 305, 312, 316, 318, 321, 408
 Kerrest (II) 62, 68
 Kersch (I) 73, 171, 223, 226, 263; (II) 20, 92, 115, 134, 135, 147, 178, 182, 184, 186, 188, 204, 207, 211, 219, 223, 225, 235, 239, 307, 308, 381
 Kessler (II) 15
 Khoumeini (II) 206
 Kiefer (II) 209
 Killias (I) 37; (II) 16, 21, 116, 122, 123, 125, 126, 134, 176, 190, 207-209, 225
 Kind (I) 181
 Kinsey (I) 15, 23, 33, 44, 46, 47, 60, 95, 107, 125, 128, 139, 151-153, 180, 191, 192, 200, 207, 219, 253; (II) 23, 24, 73, 85, 86, 115, 125, 196, 217, 243, 257, 277, 342, 367, 378, 397, 416, 417, 422
 Kinsey Institute (I) 71, 72, 140
 Kirchhoff (I) 58, 61, 177, 250; (II) 19, 24
 Kirkendall (I) 211
 Kirkwood (I) 145, 225
 Kjellin (II) 21
 Klein (II) 49
 Klerk, de (I) 256; (II) 177, 195, 388
 Klimmer (I) 52; (II) 28, 29, 362
 Klostermann (II) 69
 Koch (I) 13
 Koch-Harnack (II) 37, 38, 93, 98, 99, 241, 251, 292, 298, 313, 320, 393, 430
 Kohnstamm (II) 317
 Kolansky (I) 188
 Komrij (II) 159, 455
 Koning, de (I) 26
 Kooy (I) 25, 44, 175
Koran (I) 85
 Körner (II) 116, 120
 Kortlandt (I) 66
 Kraemer (I) 60, 74, 115; (II) 100, 129, 158, 164, 171, 191, 320
 Krafft-Ebing, von (I) 71; (II) 29
 Krauss (I) 87, 100; (II) 70, 437
 Kremer (I) 123
 KRI (I) 61
 Krimon (I) 78; (II) 475, 476
 Krist (I) 221, 242; (II) 32, 315
 Kristensen (II) 232
 Kroonenberg (II) 287
 Kruithof (I) 25, 151, 189, 191; (II) 75, 177, 199, 308
 Kruyt (I) 115, 215; (II) 274, 296
 Kryso (II) 47, 68
 Kubitzek (II) 235, 239
 Kunert (II) 233, 269
 Koppfer (II) 209, 222
 Kurier (II) 47
 Kurland (I) 103

Index of Persons and Sources

Kurre (II) 163
 Kuster (I) 83
 Kutschinsky (II) 83, 92
 Kwast, van der (I) 52, 263; (II) 16, 28, 51, 116, 135, 381, 382
Lacombe (I) 175, 261
 Ladigas (I) 89
 Lafon (I) 263; (II) 135
 Lamb (I) 249
 Lambert, J. (I) 217
 Lambert, K. (I) 116, 267, 273; (II) 54, 129, 315, 316, 354
 Lamping-Goos (II) 27, 134, 312
 Landis (I) 15; (II) 18, 22, 24, 115, 135, 144, 380
 Lane (II) 75, 79, 444
 Langfeldt (I) 95, 173, 181, 192, 215, 231, 232; (II) 29, 178, 199, 228, 231, 235, 237, 242, 265, 274, 277-279, 281, 296-298, 375, 379, 426, 469
 Larkin (II) 417, 433, 438, 450
 Laroche (I) 163
 Last (I) 272; (II) 137, 227
 Launay (I) 185
 Lautmann (II) 116, 131
 Lawrence, B. (I) 69, 88
 Lawrence, T. E. (I) 26
 Léautaud (I) 65
 Lee (II) 283
 Leeuw-Aalbers, de (II) 116
 Leferenz (II) 116
 Leist (I) 75, 174
 Lemaire (I) 98
 Lemaire-Mertens (II) 179, 196, 362
 Lempp (II) 18, 20, 22, 116, 135
 Lenders (II) 86
 Lenin (II) 205
 Leo (or Luke) (I) 31, 190, 238; (II) 56, 57, 366, 418
 Leonardo da Vinci (II) 204
 Leonetti (I) 131, 132, 217, 256, 260, 280; (II) 41, 42, 170, 174, 330, 333, 336, 382, 434, 435, 446
 Leonhardt (I) 58
 Leslie (II) 90
 Lessing (I) 108; (II) 114
 Lever (I) 81, 94; (II) 277, 298
 Levie (I) 115
 Levin (I) 196
 Levine (I) 107
 Levita, de (II) 14, 15, 142
 Levy (II) 412
 Lewis (II) 393
 Leyland (II) 36
 Leyten (I) 90
 Licht (I) 29; (II) 103, 246
 Lichtenberg (I) 13
 Lier, van (I) 30
 Lill (I) 84
 Linedecker (I) 57, 83, 199, 234, 242, 243; (II) 46, 51, 64, 71, 72, 84, 87, 89, 97, 114, 115, 130, 139, 140, 312
 Linner (I) 28
 Linschoten (I) 254; (II) 238
 Liselotte von der Pfalz (I) 84
 Lochtenberg (I) 95, 242; (II) 51
 Loeb (I) 164
 Lohausen (II) 161
 Lombroso (I) 101
 Long (II) 367
 Longus (I) 61; (II) 285
 Lonilat (I) 180
 Lotringer (I) 242; (II) 332, 344
 Louis XI (I) 36
 Louis XIII (II) 82
 Louis XIV (II) 277
 Louis XV (II) 273
 Louvet de Couvray (I) 64
 Louys (I) 60
 Lucas (II) 203
 Lucrece (I) 146, 154
 Lukianos (I) 81; (II) 430
 Lumby (I) 139
 Luther (II) 189, 198
 Lutz (I) 128
 Lykurgos (I) 80, 246
Maas (I) 53; (II) 40
 Maasen (I) 249; (II) 190
 MacDonald (I) 47
 Macé (II) 143
 MacKay (II) 67
 Mader (II) 203
 Madre (I) 74
 Maerten van Heemskerk (II) 241
 Maffesoli (II) 223
 Maisch (II) 46, 51

Index of Persons and Sources

Majapuria (I) 22; (II) 455-458, 461
 Makarenko (I) 168; (II) 43, 205
 Malinowski (I) 172; (II) 111, 182
 Malle (I) 62; (II) 50
 Mander, van (I) 37; (II) 123
 Manière (II) 305, 306
 Mann, K. (II) 51
 Mann, Th (II) 51
 Manu (II) 206
 Marbe (II) 116
 Marcadé (I) 77
 Marcel (II) 160
 Marcis (I) 152, 181, 184, 188
 Marcuse (II) 437
 Margaret of Scotland (I) 36
 Marinkelle (I) 107; (II) 94, 236, 295, 296, 326
 Mariotti (II) 347
 Markey (I) 231
 Marlet (I) 31, 39
 Marlowe (I) 84
 Marmor (II) 29
 Marshall (II) 183, 424
 Martel (II) 160, 257
 Martial (Martialis) (I) 48, 81, 82, 99, 137, 143, 178, 267; (II) 81, 162, 293, 385, 427
 Martin, A. (II) 140
 Martin, P. (II) 330
 Martinson (I) 130, 175; (II) 48, 54, 86, 89, 126, 177, 304, 378, 379
 Mary Stuart (II) 291
 Maslow (I) 66; (II) 214
 Masters (I) 30, 43, 90, 117, 139, 217, 236; (II) 27, 82, 91, 95, 111, 165, 168, 187, 230, 243, 244, 255, 280, 363-365, 390, 391, 401, 421, 422, 449, 450, 462, 464, 465
 Matzneck (I) 55, 58, 91, 209, 243, 258; (II) 16, 33, 61, 62, 77, 90, 136, 144, 145, 156-158, 160, 255, 311, 314, 321, 370, 451
 Matthew (II) 203
 Maugham (I) 40, 90; (II) 97
 Maupertius (II) 361
 Max (I) 97, 99, 151, 152, 183; (II) 90, 171, 186, 228, 331, 443
 Max *et al.* (I) 241, 258; (II) 331
 Mayer (II) 116
 McBoyd (I) 146
 McCaghy (I) 72, 73, 103; (II) 19, 23, 115, 327, 380
 McConley (II) 121, 131, 139
 McConville (II) 131
 McCord (II) 178
 McDonald (II) 353, 403, 404, 465
 McHarry (I) 13
 McMullen (II) 432
 McNeill (I) 22, 239; (II) 192
 Mede (I) 219
 Meers (I) 222
 Mehta (I) 85
 Meignant (I) 236; (II) 116
 Meilof-Oonk (I) 47
 Meinert (II) 116
 Meleagros (I) 77; (II) 38
 Mende (I) 220, 221; (II) 180, 232
 Menen (II) 158
 Merker (I) 164
 Messerer (II) 116
 Meyer (II) 116
 Michelangelo (I) 83, 84; (II) 204, 234
 Mill (II) 127
 Min (II) 240
 Mishima (I) 193
 Mitscherlich (I) 127, 233
 Mitzel (II) 125, 181, 297
 Moffett (II) 344
 Mohamed (I) 58; (II) 241
 Mohr (I) 103, 104, 106; (II) 25, 115, 141, 380, 381
 Moll (I) 75, 78, 143, 272; (II) 29, 382
 Möller (I) 53, 60, 73, 74, 103, 107, 115, 243, 253; (II) 13, 22-24, 35, 48, 95, 116, 144, 154, 164, 171, 196, 214, 233, 309, 350-353, 375, 378, 382, 400
 Money (I) 215; (II) 276
 Mönkemöller (II) 116
 Montagu (I) 162-164, 166; (II) 113
 Montaigne (II) 232, 366
 Montgomery Hyde (II) 70
 Montherlant, de (I) 75, 225; (II) 156, 312, 333, 347, 355
 Moody (I) 250; (II) 113, 115, 119, 120, 312, 323
 Moonen (I) 91
 Moore (I) 184, 185, 188, 196; (II) 430

Index of Persons and Sources

Moravia (I) 137
 Morris (I) 67, 127, 136, 158, 167; (II) 100, 124, 185, 197, 222, 240, 265, 274, 276, 306
 Mrazek (II) 23
 Müller, von (I) 66
 Müller-Hess (II) 116
 Müller-Luckmann (II) 62, 116
 Murchison (II) 444
 Murdoch (I) 75, 206, 207
 Murphy (I) 39, 128, 145, 147, 151, 156, 168, 182, 195, 202, 203, 233; (II) 181, 286, 392, 404, 449, 452
 Murray (I) 90; (II) 69, 298
 Musil (I) 233
 Musonius (I) 20; (II) 201
 Näbel (II) 146
 Nabokov (I) 57
 Nacke (I) 85; (II) 29
 Naerssen, van (II) 331, 374, 380
 Nair (II) 262
 Nike (I) 134
 NAMBLA (I) 106, 113; (II) 38, 115, 153, 209
 Nanayakkara (II) 124
 Napoleon (II) 206
 Naslednikov (I) 47; (II) 184, 194, 248, 280, 309, 361, 366, 455, 457, 461
 Nationaal Centrum (I) 56
 Nationale Raad (II) 115, 312
 Nau (II) 116
 Navin (II) 433
Ned. Jurisprudentie (I) 145
 Nedoma (II) 166
 Nefzawi (II) 213, 438, 456
 Neil (II) 246
 Neill (II) 25
 Nelson (II) 47, 48, 54, 55
 Nenning (II) 233
 Nero (II) 113, 431
 Nestor (I) 80
 Newman (II) 113, 267, 272
 Newton (I) 103
 Nichols (I) 240, 260; (II) 32, 88, 115-117, 120, 157, 163, 168, 171, 227, 228, 231, 256, 259, 297, 308, 311, 314, 325, 326, 438, 446, 448
 Nicholson (II) 38
 Niederhoffer (I) 198
 Niemann (I) 103, 263, 264; (II) 135, 146
 Nietzsche (I) 81; (II) 314
Nieuwe Revu (I) 175; (II) 193, 339
 Niks (II) 133
 Nils (I) 38
 NISSO (I) 100, 112, 138, 183, 191, 192, 197, 205, 211, 220; (II) 160, 223, 230, 238, 277, 283, 286, 329
 Nixon (II) 181
 Nobile (I) 175
 Noldin (II) 189
 Noordhoff (I) 25; (II) 217
 Nordlund (II) 12, 170, 309
 Norretranders (II) 323, 417
 Novalis (I) 58
NRC-Handelsblad (I) 108; (II) 100, 159, 210
 Nugteren (II) 51
 NVSH (I) 105
 Nijhof (II) 337
 O'Carroll (I) 56, 58, 60, 61, 70, 73, 88, 89, 108, 109, 172, 180, 263, 267; (II) 14, 15, 18, 32, 34, 36, 59, 78, 82, 120, 139, 140, 143, 179, 183, 205, 214, 231, 255, 258, 321, 329, 280, 382, 433
 O'Day (II) 464
 Oliver (II) 205
 Ollendorff (II) 283
 Olsen (II) 114
 Onan (I) 50
 Oneida Community (I) 189, 190; (II) 292
 Onno (I) 31, 136, 139, 140; (II) 60, 79, 80, 89, 105, 137, 169, 250, 251, 309, 364, 394, 412, 435, 436, 442, 446, 449, 472
 Orff (I) 91
 Orleans, Duke Philippe of (II) 273, 295
 Orpheus (I) 92, 93
 Orsippus (I) 79
 Orta, dall' (I) 84
 Ortil (I) 280; (II) 90
 Osanka (II) 72
 Osborne (I) 65, 111, 112, 119, 138, 140, 141, 154, 193, 197, 281; (II) 167, 168, 346, 360, 383, 387, 395, 406, 445, 467
 Oskam (I) 260
 Oskamp (I) 111; (II) 267, 380, 447
 Oster (II) 228
 Ostermeyer (II) 48, 232
Our Sunday Visitor (II) 84

Index of Persons and Sources

Ovid (I) 81, 82; (II) 430
Pacharzina (I) 35, 68; (II) 191
Pacifcus Maximus (II) 341
Pall Mall Gazette (I) 59
Palmieri (II) 259
Pan (I) 176
P.A.N. (I) 78, 281
Panaenus (II) 103
Parker (II) 116, 204
Parool, Het (II) 415
Parr (I) 118
Partridge (I) 29
Pascal (I) 204
Pasha of Marrakech (II) 112
Pasolini (II) 65
Passay (I) 258
Pathos (II) 176
Patroklos (II) 13
Patzner (I) 68, 77, 78, 80, 82, 87, 90; (II) 311, 429, 454
Paul (II) 203
Pausanias (II) 94
Pavlov (II) 140
Pelops (II) 292
Pendergast (I) 116
Perkauf (II) 100
Pescatore (II) 328, 404, 427, 444
Peters (II) 115, 170
Petrarch (II) 122
Petronius (I) 99; (II) 431
Peyrefitte (I) 48, 67, 75, 78-83, 156, 161, 177, 225, 240, 241, 266; (II) 56, 60, 90, 94, 99, 103, 104, 107, 109, 114, 156, 158, 238, 240, 241, 245, 246, 251, 254, 263, 294, 332-334, 347, 369, 396-398, 413, 420, 453, 462
Phaido (II) 69
Phidias (I) 78
Philemon (I) 197
Philip of Macedon (II) 94
Philippe (I) 210
P.I.E. (I) 105, 107, 108
Pieterse (I) 52, 60, 71, 73, 74, 91, 93, 94, 100, 101, 105-107, 110, 111, 114, 116, 138, 245, 246, 250, 251, 255; (II) 13, 24, 35, 116, 134, 142, 144, 151, 156, 164, 165, 171, 336, 337, 347, 353, 377, 382, 402
Pietropinto (I) 24, 30, 33, 34, 36, 47, 106, 107, 146, 185, 189, 209; (II) 106, 169, 191, 230, 255, 281, 397, 413
Pikbube (II) 99
Pilgrim (II) 401, 470
Piso-Minderman (II) 227
Pittman (I) 139; (II) 72
Plack (I) 243; (II) 114, 177, 179, 180, 184, 185, 188, 198, 200, 201, 207, 218, 235, 255
Placzek (II) 29
Plato (I) 20-22, 24, 35, 77, 134, 240, 249, 258, 272; (II) 37, 69, 103, 179, 189, 233, 241, 244, 255, 312, 377, 430
Plehn (II) 236
Ploscowe (II) 130
Ploss (I) 87, 140; (II) 294
Plummer (I) 60; (II) 96, 130, 142, 153, 158, 178, 283, 324
Plutarch (I) 59, 77, 79; (II) 235
Poe (II) 123
Pohlschneider (II) 29
Pondelickova (II) 20
Poole (II) 112, 113
Pope (I) 106
Popp (II) 460
Poseidon (II) 292
Potrykus (II) 20, 125, 380
Powell (II) 20, 22, 29, 135, 150
Praline (II) 125
Prescott (I) 27; (II) 187
Presidential Commission (II) 186
Presland (II) 49, 130
Priapus (I) 26; (II) 240
Priest, The (II) 84
Prince (I) 271; (II) 20, 115, 120
Procopius (I) 63; (II) 245, 466
Prometheus (I) 99; (II) 398
Pseudo-Lucian (II) 159, 381
Pyke (II) 254
Rabinovitch (I) 231; (II) 25, 30
Raile (I) 248
Rainer (II) 29
Ramey (II) 48
Ramsay (II) 224
Ramsbotham (II) 123
Rascovsky (II) 54
Rasmussen (II) 18, 20

Index of Persons and Sources

Recherches (I) 132; (II) 62
Rechy (II) 219
Rector (II) 128
Redhardt (I) 114; (II) 58, 64-66, 68, 78, 325, 371, 383, 397, 473
Reeves (I) 84, 105, 113, 253, 264; (II) 31, 95, 168, 171, 300, 302, 323, 349
Regt, de (I) 97, 188, 252, 262, 266; (II) 223, 224, 277
Reich (I) 185; (II) 154, 180, 211, 219, 243, 305
Reichelt (II) 312
Reinacher (II) 129, 243, 305
Reiss (I) 114, 239, 276; (II) 370
Reitzel (I) 30
Renault (I) 75; (II) 94, 171, 251
Reng (II) 249
Reniers (I) 174
Rennert (II) 23
Reve (van het) (II) 102
Revolt (II) 52, 67, 84
Revue de Presse (II) 94, 289
Rey (I) 84
Reynolds (I) 122-124
Rhyxand (I) 76, 115; (II) 298
Richelieu (I) 94
Richepin (II) 411, 464
Richey (I) 233-235; (II) 96
Ricoeur (II) 30
Riefenstahl (I) 90; (II) 252
Righton (I) 52, 60, 73, 75, 118; (II) 25, 29, 46, 129, 258, 311, 319, 380, 382
Rijkens (II) 241
Roberts (II) 89, 370
Robida (II) 73
Rocheftort (I) 75
Rogier (I) 53; (II) 40
Rohleder (II) 433
Rolfe (I) 157; (II) 68, 69, 78, 79, 395, 396, 408
Romé (II) 242, 254
Romeo (I) 36, 174
Römer, von (II) 247, 412
Rooie Vlinder (I) 111; (II) 68, 329
Rooij, van (II) 139
Rorem (II) 304
Rose (I) 113, 251, 258, 272; (II) 71, 163, 394, 395
Rosenbaum (II) 459
Rosenfeld (II) 133
Ross (II) 383
Rossman (I) 91, 118, 252, 262, 266; (II) 33, 34, 61, 65, 90, 105, 134, 135, 145-147, 194, 205, 310, 327, 341, 342, 397, 407, 418, 444
Roumajon (I) 234
Rousseau (I) 168; (II) 43, 103, 238
Rouweler-Wutz (I) 56, 60, 73, 91, 92, 98, 100, 105, 107, 173; (II) 23, 26, 93, 116, 142, 164, 272, 319, 320, 337
Rovsing (I) 105; (II) 62, 168, 247, 341, 355, 459
Rozanoff (II) 29
Rubin (I) 73, 236; (II) 76, 92, 130, 134, 210, 227
Rühfel (II) 460
Ruiter, de (II) 223
Rule (I) 279
Rümke (I) 39, 185
Rush (I) 94, 119; (II) 23, 36, 93, 115, 122, 123, 324, 331, 400, 414
Ruskin (I) 58; (II) 123
Russell (II) 184, 199, 200
Saba (II) 418, 419
Sabisch (I) 111; (II) 366
Sables, des (I) 105, 107; (II) 24, 134, 171
Sade, de (II) 103, 466
Sadger (I) 76; (II) 312
Saenger (I) 127
Safilios-Rothschild (II) 195
Sagitta (II) 67
Saikwaku (I) 86
Saint Ours (I) 78, 112, 113, 262; (II) 156, 173
Salas (I) 26, 234
Sanders (I) 44, 118, 132, 199, 204, 205, 210; (II) 142, 165, 169, 191, 192, 274, 276, 288, 304, 312, 313
Sandfort (I) 73, 74, 101, 103, 129, 150, 152, 245, 251-253, 255, 256, 258, 259, 262; (II) 15, 16, 23, 32, 36-39, 44, 51, 116, 133, 135, 142, 144, 160, 164, 310, 323, 326, 331, 335, 338, 344, 360, 371, 372, 377, 378, 380, 383, 416, 418, 447
S.A.P. (I) 105
Sarlin (I) 176
Sarphatie (I) 35, 127, 172, 185

Index of Persons and Sources

Sartre (II) 128, 208, 383, 384
 Satie (I) 80
 Savonarola (I) 83
 Schachter (II) 68
 Schadt (I) 161
 Schalken (II) 87
 Scheepmaker (II) 50
 Scheller (I) 58, 119, 174; (II) 331
 Schelsky (II) 207
 Schérer (I) 34, 55, 56, 58, 67, 71, 88, 96, 98, 115, 122, 127, 167, 168, 173, 199, 202, 217, 225, 233, 241, 250, 259, 266, 268; (II) 27, 37, 41, 43, 44, 47, 48, 112, 115, 123, 127, 130, 132, 155, 187, 222, 273, 316
 Schickedanz (I) 192, 199; (II) 61, 65, 66, 72, 74, 77, 134
 Schieffelin (II) 296, 354, 428
 Schild (I) 157, 158; (II) 269, 412, 427, 433, 439
 Schillemans (I) 59, 73; (II) 16
 Schimack (II) 116
 Schippers (I) 236
 Schlegel (I) 66, 234, 247; (II) 30, 337
 Schmidt, G. (I) 76, 199, 200, 217; (II) 139, 199, 214
 Schmidt, R. (II) 224
 Schmidt, V. (II) 198
 Schmidt-Relenberg (II) 66
 Schmitt (II) 413
 Schmitz (I) 161
 Schneebaum (I) 90
 Schnitzler (I) 64
 Schofield (I) 25, 57, 61, 74, 103, 205, 260, 261, 276; (II) 24, 29, 115, 137, 138, 214, 286
 Scholte (I) 29, 158
 Schonfeld (I) 122, 123
 Schorsch (I) 103; (II) 20, 129
 Schröder-Devrient (II) 467
 Schubart (I) 30
 Schüler-Springorum (II) 116
 Schult (I) 91, 217, 240, 251; (II) 35, 36, 65-67, 90, 151, 158, 175, 294, 312, 349, 405, 406, 420, 421, 426, 439, 440, 453
 Schultz (II) 22, 55, 98, 115
 Schütz (II) 235, 239
 Schuijjer (II) 131
 Schwartz (II) 116
 Schwarz (I) 37; (II) 29
 Schwarzer (I) 59
 Scott (II) 236, 240, 459
 Sebban (I) 60, 98, 106; (II) 31, 40, 75, 91, 154, 446
 Select Committee (II) 120
 Seneca (I) 198
 Sengers (I) 47, 52, 73, 214; (II) 16, 28, 29, 142, 168, 256, 321, 329
 Sergeant (II) 425, 430
 Shakespeare (I) 37, 84, 134
 Shipman (I) 148
 S(h)iva (II) 241, 413, 417, 457
 Shurden (II) 139
 Siegelman (I) 107
 Siegfried (I) 210; (II) 27, 82, 363
 Siemens (II) 116
 Sieval (II) 266
 Sigusch (I) 55, 76, 199, 200; (II) 139
 Simenauer (I) 24, 30, 33, 34, 36, 47, 106, 107, 146, 185, 189, 209; (II) 106, 169, 191, 230, 255, 281, 397, 413
 Simmons (II) 271
 Simon (I) 42, 73, 111, 134, 154, 204, 205, 207, 209; (II) 86, 115, 208, 285
 Simonides (II) 447
 Simons (I) 58, 140, 4 179; (II) 241, 408
 Simpson (II) 70
 Simson (II) 370
 Skipper (I) 184
 Sky (I) 60
 Slob (II) 227, 401
 Smidt (II) 123
 Smith (II) 54, 234, 238, 241, 359, 360
 Socarides (I) 103, 104; (II) 15
 Socrates (I) 78, 272; (II) 39, 68, 334
 Sodom, il (Bassi) (II) 204
 Solon (I) 48, 79, 80, 197
 Sonenschein (I) 64; (II) 99
 Sorensen (I) 25, 188, 190, 224, 231, 233, 271; (II) 61, 152, 218, 222, 329
 Sorum (II) 494
 Soya (I) 61
 Spee (I) 219
 Spencer (II) 73
 Spencer-Booth (II) 295

Index of Persons and Sources

Speijer Commission (I) 61, 259; (II) 29, 131, 216
 Spinner (II) 294, 449
 Spitz (I) 35, 177; (II) 384
 Sprague (I) 47
 Spreuwel, van (II) 26, 142
 Stanley (I) 258
 Steen, van der (I) 204, 247; (II) 235
 Steens (II) 273
 Steinberg (I) 77
 Steinhilper (II) 116
 Stekel (I) 46, 53, 55, 58, 92, 148, 152, 198, 225; (II) 52, 105, 106, 129, 195, 256, 269
 Stenbrock (I) 110
 Sterken (I) 44
 Stern, B. (I) 85; (II) 462
 Stern, W. (II) 116, 117
 Stieber (I) 65, 70, 155, 197; (II) 44, 47, 50, 51, 270, 331, 418
 Stockert, von (I) 95, 127, 146, 198; (II) 13, 21, 117, 250
 Stokvis (II) 312
 Stoll (I) 48, 59, 68, 82, 85, 87, 143, 160-162, 164, 165, 178, 183; (II) 246
 Stoller (II) 236
 Storm (I) 58
 Störzer (II) 116, 120
 Stöwer (I) 239, 240, 257, 258; (II) 104, 156, 253, 254
 Strabo (II) 203
 Straight (II) 120
 Strato (I) 49, 66, 79, 272; (II) 46, 172, 385, 422, 429, 431
 Straver (I) 98, 131-133, 211; (II) 46, 86, 190, 218, 286, 287, 323, 331, 332, 378
 Strindberg (II) 277
 Stuart-Young (II) 259
 Stutte (II) 116
 Subcommittee on Select Education (II) 59, 90, 92
 Suetonius (II) 113
 Summit (II) 47, 54, 68
 Suppe (II) 365
 Sutor (Jacobus X.) (I) 65, 85, 140, 162, 163; (II) 69, 70, 73, 112, 224, 232, 246, 253, 302, 404, 433, 460
 Swanson (I) 73, 103
 Swenson (I) 103
 Sylvain (I) 61
 Symonds (II) 47, 49, 50, 54
 Szasz (I) 125, 178, 179; (II) 192, 256
 Tanner (I) 124
 Tardieu (II) 119, 433
 Tatius (I) 157
 Taylor, Bayard (II) 386
 Taylor, Brian (I) 102, 108, 115, 118; (II) 24, 25, 46, 115, 380
 Taylor, G. H. (I) 107 (II) 15, 76, 160, 181, 183, 197, 201, 204, 211, 212, 247, 263
 Telemachus (I) 80
 Theodora (I) 63; (II) 113, 466
 Theodorus (I) 77
 Theokritos (II) 159, 173, 437
 Theseus (I) 266
 Thomas (I) 119, 220, 249, 255, 256, 262, 263; (II) 37, 171, 326, 362
 Thomas, K. (II) 191
 Thoreau (II) 258
 Thorne (II) 118
 Thorstad (I) 109, 279; (II) 38, 342, 360, 427
 Tibullus (I) 81
 Tielman (II) 27, 122, 236
 Tifachi, el (I) 73, 85, 140; (II) 60, 68, 437
 Tiffenbach (II) 445
 Tiggeler (II) 160
 Tilden (I) 114; (II) 390
 Timarchos (I) 77; (II) 68
 Tindall (II) 350
 Tippo Sahib (II) 112
 Tissot (I) 179; (II) 204, 225
 Tisza (II) 377
 Tolsma (II) 28
 Toobert (I) 103
 Torey (I) 13
 Tournier (I) 95, 111, 185, 253
 Toynbee (I) 157, 276, 278; (II) 201
 Traherne (II) 354
 Treffz (I) 160, 161, 165
 Trimble (II) 129
 Trimbos (II) 29
 Tripp (I) 111, 213, 214, 272; (II) 376, 398, 401
 Trouw (I) 185
 Trujillo (II) 367

Index of Persons and Sources

- Trumbach (I) 47
 Tsai (II) 54, 94
 Tsang (II) 181
 Tuohy (I) 39, 128, 145, 147, 151, 156, 168, 182, 195, 202, 203, 233; (II) 286, 392, 404, 449, 452
 Turner (I) 103, 104, 106; (II) 25, 115, 141, 380, 381
 Tuzin (II) 113
 Tyrmand (II) 223
 Udall (II) 101
 Ullerstam (I) 251; (II) 12
 Ulysses (I) 80
 Ungaretti (I) 77; (II) 430
 Ussell, van (I) 25, 35, 36, 151, 159, 178, 179, 189, 191, 205; (II) 75, 81, 122, 124, 132, 177, 185, 198, 199, 205, 230, 256, 257, 306, 308
 Vaal, de (I) 180
 Valentine (I) 259, 265, 272; (II) 39, 265, 396
 Vandenbosch (I) 59
 Vanggaard (I) 26, 153, 253
 Vatsyayana (I) 86
 Veenstra (I) 108
 Veer, van der (I) 128, 206
 Velde, van der (II) 243, 449
 Vennix (I) 61
 Vergiat (I) 163
 Verlaine (I) 111; (II) 429
 Verstraete (I) 81
 Verveen (I) 47, 48, 154, 156; (II) 279, 280
 Vickers (II) 75
 Victoria (I) 27, 59
 Vilbert (I) 81
 Vincent (II) 44, 45, 102, 107, 347, 445
 Vinterberg (II) 267, 365
 Virkkunen (I) 103; (II) 135
 Visser (I) 127
 Vlodrop, van (I) 14
 Voestermans (II) 53, 283
 Vogel (II) 116, 131
Volkskrant, De (II) 24
 Volonne (II) 68
 Voltaire (I) 75
 Wadsworth (I) 205
 Wafelbakker (I) 125, 127, 167; (II) 71, 99, 216
 Wagner, E. (I) 50, 85, 100; (II) 95, 141, 234, 256, 294, 314, 393, 427
 Wagner, Th. (I) 184; (II) 27, 28, 193, 225
 Waliba (II) 314
 Walter (II) 112, 115
 Walters, D. R. (I) 60-62, 115; (II) 21, 23, 86, 150
 Walters, M. (I) 63, 83, 84; (II) 58, 88, 124, 176, 235-237, 241, 252, 314, 455, 473
 Washington (I) 58
 W. D. (II) 26
 Weeks (I) 114; (II) 75, 115
 Wegner (I) 57, 64, 103, 250, 263; (II) 46, 49, 166, 222, 230, 277, 381
 Weil (II) 203
 Weinberg (I) 43, 60, 103, 107, 139, 154; (II) 27, 166, 167, 320, 359
 Weiss (II) 370
 Wellen (II) 87
 Werff ten Bosch, van der (I) 124; (II) 73, 274
 Werner (I) 215; (II) 296
 Werres (I) 275; (II) 138
 West (I) 48, 56, 60, 66, 67, 72, 73, 75, 84, 89, 93, 102, 107, 108, 115, 138, 210, 214, 215, 220, 222, 233; (II) 23, 27-29, 65, 66, 72, 74, 75, 86, 101, 109, 115, 118, 128, 129, 134, 139-141, 152, 178, 193, 196, 198, 199, 218, 227, 270, 274, 296, 335, 344, 364, 376, 380, 411, 413, 414, 426, 450
 Westerman Holstijn (I) 39
 Westermarck (I) 163
 Westwood (I) 118; (II) 29, 369
 Weterman (II) 282
 White (II) 143
 Whiting (II) 184
 Whitman (II) 319
 Wilde (I) 38, 92
 Wilhjelm (II) 83
 William of Orange (I) 83; (II) 291
 Williams (I) 83, 250; (II) 320, 354
 Willis (I) 184
 Wilson, G. D. (I) 55, 75, 93, 99, 103, 108, 109, 115, 204; (II) 22, 38, 42, 73, 115, 140, 141, 171, 323, 337, 465
 Wilson, P. (I) 112, 205, 281; (II) 61, 89, 99, 115, 130, 133, 167, 168, 255, 342, 346, 360, 383, 387, 395, 406, 443

Index of Persons and Sources

- Wind, de (I) 104, 139, 263, 273; (II) 25
 Wines (I) 122, 124
 Winkel (I) 148, 183; (II) 185, 236, 267, 283
 Wöbcke (II) 20, 380
 Wolf (II) 139
 Wolfenden Committee (I) 52, 74; (II) 13, 28, 29, 115, 127, 128, 141, 196, 346, 375, 433
 Wolters (II) 23, 26, 31, 46, 48, 93, 146, 149
 Wood (II) 49
 Wörenkamp (II) 100
 Worsley (I) 275; (II) 100, 258
 Wrangel (I) 89
 Wright (II) 40
 Wulffen (II) 252
 Wyss (I) 52, 58, 72, 103; (II) 28, 116
 X (I) 278; (II) 247, 324
 Xenophon (I) 79, 245, 258; (II) 38, 99, 237, 334, 430, 447
 Yaffé (I) 72, 75; (II) 129, 139
 Yankowski (I) 25, 131, 155, 193, 218-220; (II) 49, 270
 Yates (I) 180; (II) 179, 227
 Young (I) 130; (II) 285
 Yourcenar (I) 75
Youth Liberation (II) 66, 222
 Zeegers (I) 73; (II) 20, 23, 25, 29, 116, 119, 133, 149, 183, 208, 215
Zeitschrift für Ethnologie (II) 280
 Zetterberg (I) 25, 61, 198, 206; (II) 224
 Zeus (I) 78, 80, 99, 158; (II) 38, 159, 396, 459
 Ziegler (I) 190, 192, 241
 Zilinsky (I) 75
 Zoroaster (I) 72

Index of Subjects

- Abstinence
 consequences (I) 16, 27, 32, 159, 181-183, 204; (II) 176-216, 255-263, 276, 374
 imposed (I) 32, 36, 159, 169, 177, 181; (II) 176-178, 180, 183-187, 194, 199-201, 207, 212, 214, 263, 264, 290, 291, 374
 cases (I) 45, 182; (II) 186, 257, 259
 Abuse of authority (II) 31, 36, 42, 43, 96, 123, 126, 127, 155, 175, 376
 Active role (I) 50, 81, 82, 85, 90, 132, 269; (II) 41, 325, 326, 366, 369, 377
 African black tribes (I) 40, 69, 87, 89, 90, 136, 140, 143, 159-161, 163-166, 172, 176, 215; (II) 51, 76, 110, 248, 254, 274, 370, 460
 Age of consent (I) 28, 37, 198; (II) 125, 127, 131-133, 215
 Age groups (I) 168; (II) 132, 153-155, 324, 375
 Age, Preference for certain (I) 51, 52, 71, 86, 91, 93-95, 98, 99, 118; (II) 163, 172
 Aggression (II) 17, 33, 83, 182-191, 194, 206, 214, 242, 299, 313, 324, 335, 380
 AIDS (II) 392, 401, 411, 415, 465
 Amnesia, postpubertal (I) 133, 174; (II) 124
 Ampallang (I) 161; (II) 438
 Anal practices
 active-passive (I) 49, 69, 78, 81, 82, 85, 88, 143, 228, 234, 239, 259, 269
 anus, sensitivity of (II) 386, 392, 415, 416, 418, 449, 450, 452
 boy wanting (II) 104, 279, 322, 348, 352, 415, 418, 420, 425, 432, 434, 436, 438-441, 444, 446, 447, 451, 452
 cases (I) 39, 45, 46, 78, 82, 97, 222, 228, 232, 237, 263, 269, 274, 275; (II) 45, 49, 74, 75, 79, 96-98, 108, 109, 112, 114, 240, 293, 301, 322, 326, 340, 347, 351-353, 372, 373, 385, 415, 418, 422, 423, 425, 427-429, 430, 433, 435-437, 440, 444, 447, 449, 451-453, 475
 heterosexual (I) 47, 72, 199, 233; (II) 413, 430, 438
 incidence (I) 49, 69, 78, 81, 82, 85, 86, 88-90, 233, 234; (II) 71-74, 249, 303, 370-372, 374, 380, 381, 393, 413, 414, 426
 medical symptoms (I) 269; (II) 119, 120, 433-435
 mutual (II) 137, 369, 426, 428, 429, 440, 443
 pain (II) 96-98, 109, 322, 340, 375, 376, 421, 423, 426, 428, 430, 436-443, 448-451
 pleasure of passive partner (II) 415-420, 422, 426, 430, 432, 433, 435, 436, 443
 refused by boy (II) 325, 345, 436-438, 448, 449
 technique (II) 95, 421-426, 429, 441-443, 448, 451
 Animals, boys having sex with (I) 66, 67, 143, 177, 195, 231; (II) 30, 72, 192, 208, 435
 Arabs (I) 35, 38, 50, 63, 85, 100, 140, 157; (II) 37, 61, 71, 123, 226, 236, 243, 253, 268, 316, 360, 361, 369, 393, 413, 427, 428, 433, 437, 456
 Asceticism (II) 17, 194, 201, 203, 212, 220, 262
 Attractiveness
 of boy for man (I) 60, 61, 63, 64, 67-69, 74-78, 95, 100, 109, 110, 118, 121, 239, 276, 279; (II) 12, 32, 88, 354-357
 of man for boy (I) 110, 120, 239-242, 246, 250-258, 260, 264, 265, 272, 273, 276, 278-280
 Australia (I) 89, 161, 162, 165, 171, 281; (II) 226, 286, 300, 312, 412
 Autofellatio (I) 144, 180; (II) 408
 Battered child syndrome, see "Child abuse"
 Beauty, male (see also "Attractiveness" and "Bloom") (I) 112, 157, 158, 248, 272; (II) 251, 252, 297, 298, 314
 Beauty contest (I) 79
 Bisexuality (I) 45, 47, 48, 50, 65, 78, 85, 94, 106, 117, 212, 213, 216, 236, 237, 239, 262, 265, 270; (II) 201, 216, 300
 Bloom (I) 157, 158, 248; (II) 158-160, 252
 Boarding schools (I) 220-223, 225, 226, 229, 277; (II) 189, 198, 199, 393-395
 Bondage (II) 102
 Boy/boy relations
 accepting cultures (I) 162, 214, 215,

Index of Subjects

- 220, 231, 232, 258; (II) 272, 303, 393, 394
 rejecting cultures (I) 220, 225, 228
 between boys of different ages (I) 225-230, 258, 269; (II) 32
 effects (I) 222, 223, 229, 231; (II) 179, 272, 299, 304, 470
 fantasies (I) 185, 186
 incidence (I) 15, 214, 217-222, 232, 233, 235, 236; (II) 198, 303, 393, 426
 methods (I) 162, 173
 seduction (II) 17, 65
 cases (I) 170, 230, 234, 235; (II) 69, 108, 164, 282, 298, 299, 336, 338, 394, 418, 443, 470
 Boy/girl disparities (I) 28, 58, 132, 177, 188, 203-211, 214, 217, 250; (II) 55, 58, 173, 174, 220, 308
 Boy/girl relations (II) 230, 236, 255, 286, 292, 322, 324
 man promoting (II) 162, 173
 cases (II) 186, 187, 229, 243, 246, 247
 Boy-god (II) 356
 Boy-lover
 characteristics (I) 75, 108-114; (II) 99, 134, 141, 142, 145, 164, 382, 383
 number (I) 15, 117-119
 Brothel (see also "Prostitution")
 with females (I) 36, 49, 64, 79, 80, 197, 198; (II) 81, 112, 123, 243, 248, 292, 467
 with males (I) 49, 79, 81, 86, 114, 139; (II) 58, 68-73, 76, 425, 434, 435, 437, 465, 474
 boy clients (II) 123
 Callboys (II) 58, 71, 79, 465
 Caning and whipping (II) 100-104, 106, 108, 110, 111
 Capriciousness of boys (I) 134, 257; (II) 156, 160
 Castration (I) 80, 100, 178, 179; (II) 69, 73, 106, 113, 114, 125, 128, 139, 140, 177, 251, 374
 Casual contacts (one-night stands)
 incidence (I) 100, 101, 111, 249, 260; (II) 11, 34, 164, 168, 169, 380
 value (I) 27, 28, 38, 39, 100; (II) 116, 168, 192, 305, 306, 308, 309
 cases (I) 38, 39, 112, 237
 Chastity, see "Abstinence"
 Child abuse
 physical (II) 41, 43-45, 101, 102, 105, 106, 121, 125, 153, 155, 175, 185
 psychological (II) 175
 sexual (see also "Abuse of authority", "Rape", "Violence") (II) 175
 Child as substitute, see "Paedophilia, Pseudo-paedophilia"
 China (I) 68, 86; (II) 28, 71, 95, 123, 213, 215, 226, 304, 374, 413, 427
 Chivalry (II) 203, 204
 Circumcision (see also "Foreskin") (I) 85, 90, 125, 162-166, 172, 179, 183; (II) 64, 71, 113, 186, 228, 285, 298, 445
 Class preference in choice of partners (I) 110, 111; (II) 75
 Cod piece (II) 241
 Cognition, elements of sexual (I) 129-131
 Complaint by boy (II) 35
 Consent
 capacity to give (II) 13, 14, 39-43, 380
 meaning (II) 31, 360
 Contraception (I) 24, 33, 50, 126, 151, 153, 170, 190, 198, 200; (II) 184, 206, 220, 229, 263, 265, 286, 290
 Cosmic aspect of sex (I) 20, 29-31; (II) 13, 14, 455, 458, 461, 469, 470, 472
 Cowper gland, see "Mucus"
 Criminality of boys (II) 32-34, 65-67, 75, 76, 82, 83, 92, 93, 97, 98, 101, 130, 131, 134, 141, 182, 183, 185, 198, 201, 205, 230, 312, 313
 Damage caused to boy
 absence of (I) 258; (II) 12, 17-25, 42, 126-128, 222, 375, 376
 definition of (II) 17
 incidence of (II) 16-18, 27, 125, 144, 148, 149, 172, 222
 physical (II) 16, 17, 119
 secondary, caused by environment (II) 18-22, 25, 30, 54, 55, 114-121, 126, 128, 133, 142, 143, 148-152

Index of Subjects

- symptoms of (II) 17, 20
- Dark number (I) 101; (II) 19, 24, 117, 134, 147
- Defloration (I) 59; (II) 197, 282, 285, 294, 413, 437, 445, 448, 449
- Detection (II) 35, 37, 146-148
- Diseases (see also "AIDS") (I) 169; (II) 264, 284, 298
- Divorce (I) 24, 92, 172; (II) 307
- Dominance of boy (II) 36-38, 46, 105, 305, 372, 407
- Drugs (I) 190; (II) 310
- Effeminate boys (I) 69, 74, 77, 86-88
- Egypt (See also "Siwa") (I) 40, 81, 85, 90, 172; (II) 71, 242, 403, 467
- Ejaculation
 - double (I) 42, 153, 158, 196
 - first (I) 147-152, 169, 194, 195, 216; (II) 254
 - over partner's body (II) 107, 280, 373, 392, 394
 - spontaneous (I) 114, 145, 147, 155, 160, 167, 193, 197, 209, 213, 272, 278; (II) 86, 88, 103, 104, 244, 261
 - spurting (I) 42, 144, 145; (II) 387, 422, 441
- Emancipation of adolescent (I) 242, 246, 247; (II) 40
- Erection
 - causes (I) 31, 53, 91, 132; (II) 86, 89, 90, 103, 176, 236, 279
 - increase in penis size (I) 41, 123, 141, 144
 - persistent (I) 30, 128, 145
 - spontaneous (I) 32, 35, 62, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 153, 159; (II) 191, 234, 237-239, 248, 250, 251, 260, 261, 300, 301, 306, 322, 384
- Erogenous zones (I) 213; (II) 279, 386
- Erotic images (II) 15, 30, 64, 80-93, 183, 197, 205, 221, 269, 376
 - boys posing for (I) 237, 256, 257, 269; (II) 58, 87-93, 106, 250, 282, 309, 323, 347
 - censorship (II) 185, 206
 - effect on observer (II) 82-87, 183, 242, 265-269, 306, 322
- magazines (I) 119
- movies (I) 140
 - seen by boys (II) 53, 82, 86, 87, 90, 342, 345, 456
 - used as incentive (I) 45, 118, 150, 151, 170, 186, 264, 265
- Eroticism (II) 361, 362, 366, 385
- Ethics of boy-love (I) 100, 101, 266, 281; (II) 310, 311, 331-333
- Exhibition of genitals (I) 104, 135, 138, 187, 254, 260, 274; (II) 17, 30, 88, 89, 127, 150, 178, 244, 248-251, 253, 299, 376, 377, 379
- Experience (exercise, practice), value of (I) 37, 61, 82, 153, 159, 165, 172, 181, 184, 189, 197, 212, 225, 236, 242, 244; (II) 157, 174, 214-216, 227, 256, 265, 273-310, 320, 323, 324, 329, 332, 419, 437, 442, 445, 450, 474
- Experimentation (II) 14, 150, 255, 265, 267, 272-277, 282, 283, 305, 310, 321, 323, 335, 336, 353, 375, 377, 384, 438, 441
- Father, boy as (I) 323, 126, 195
- Fertility cult, see "Phallus cult"
- Fetichism (I) 231; (II) 30, 139, 178, 256, 276, 376
- Fondling
 - of body (I) 250, 257, 373, 377, 378, 380, 381, 383, 384, 388, 395, 431
 - of genitals (I) 73, 82, 114, 171, 202, 204, 209, 257, 259; (II) 122, 257, 261, 300, 373, 378, 380, 388, 392, 431, 458
- Foreskin (see also "Circumcision", "Phimosis") (I) 124, 125, 136, 162, 183; (II) 228, 239, 386, 452
- Friendship lasting after end of sexual contacts (II) 158, 163, 164, 167, 168, 171, 172, 174, 192
- "Gang-bang" (I) 26, 202, 203, 222, 234; (II) 95, 96, 98, 108, 109, 112, 186, 187, 194, 218, 219, 272, 273, 302
- Genitals, fascination by (I) 72, 79, 163, 248, 253-255; (II) 227, 239, 251, 252, 270, 328, 351, 369, 379, 441

Index of Subjects

- Gerontophilia (II) 65, 74, 327, 328
- Gjanelidhja (I) 84, 85
- Graffiti (I) 63, 255, 259; (II) 52, 53, 104, 290, 404, 420, 439, 453
- Greek antiquity (I) 9, 14, 23, 25, 26, 29, 48-51, 59, 67, 77-82, 85, 92, 100, 112, 127, 142, 143, 158, 162, 176, 177, 197, 198, 215, 233, 244, 246, 254, 258; (II) 13, 28, 29, 31, 38-40, 47, 50, 61, 69, 70, 76, 94, 99, 100, 104, 105, 110, 113, 123, 178, 189, 190, 203, 206, 237-239, 241, 242, 246-248, 253, 258, 264, 265, 275, 279, 287, 294, 296, 299, 315, 316, 322, 374, 381, 385, 386, 393, 396-398, 407, 411, 413, 421, 422, 425, 427, 429-432, 434, 436, 447, 453, 454, 459, 460, 464, 473-476
- Group sex, see "Masturbation, group", "Orgy"
- Guilt feelings (see also "Masturbation, guilt feelings") (I) 40, 116, 214; (II) 17, 85, 116, 143, 144, 149-151, 180, 184, 189-196, 199, 203, 206, 207, 225, 227, 236, 251, 256, 267, 288, 332, 351
- Gymnopaideia (I) 78, 80; (II) 474
- Gynaecomasty (I) 123, 125, 126
- Hair growth, importance of (I) 74, 77-79, 95, 99, 100, 122, 124, 143; (II) 159, 160, 162, 163, 172, 173
- Health and sex (I) 25, 27, 98, 104, 172-174, 177, 181, 188, 189, 225
- Hedonism, see "Lust"
- Heterophilia (I) 44, 47, 48
- Hetero-homosexual continuum (I) 44, 46, 51-53, 215, 216, 235, 236, 242
- Homophilia (I) 44, 46-49, 242, 260; (II) 191, 192
- Homophobia (I) 46, 47, 51, 52, 75, 76, 107, 231, 233-236, 246, 259-261; (II) 27, 28, 42, 48, 61, 65, 128, 129, 181, 193, 196, 197, 212, 279, 302, 325, 420, 432, 444
- Homosexuality
 - in animals (I) 21, 66, 67, 215, (II) 295, 296
 - cultures accepting (I) 24, 52, 207; (II) 193, 196, 199, 201, 203, 458
 - cultures rejecting (see also "Homophobias") (I) 20, 21, 50-53, 59, 74, 90, 231; (II) 201, 204-206, 459
- fertility (I) 21, 22
- first homosexual activity (I) 23, 173
- incidence in humans (I) 50
- in initiation rituals (II) 296-298
- Homosexual phase in boys (I) 139, 185-187, 212-220, 231, 232, 236, 239, 249, 250, 261, 262, 266, 267, 276; (II) 30, 53, 61, 64, 165, 226, 279, 294, 323, 414
- Humiliation, sex intended as (I) 25, 26, 234; (II) 105, 107-112, 304, 437, 441
- Hustling, see "Prostitution"
- Impotence (II) 179, 180, 195, 227, 247, 257, 276, 281, 291, 302, 305
- Incest (I) 273, 276; (II) 46-55, 58, 133, 152, 212, 342, 461
 - father/daughter (I) 59
 - father/son (I) 76, 77, 112, 211, 212, 242, 258; (II) 36, 46, 50-54, 271
 - mother/son (I) 30, 61, 62, 64, 242; (II) 49-51, 192
 - brother/brother (I) 97, 274, 275; (II) 49, 52, 137, 292, 390
 - brother/sister (I) 30; (II) 50, 292
 - grandfather/grandson (II) 298
 - fantasy about (I) 187, 241; (II) 279
 - positive aspects (II) 48
- India (see also "Muria") (I) 29, 35, 85, 86, 126, 140, 146, 156, 160, 161, 172, 178, 215, 228, 230; (II) 23, 60, 82, 112, 113, 123, 226, 238, 242, 243, 248, 249, 262-264, 316, 361, 374, 413, 417, 438, 453, 454, 456-458, 460, 464, 469
- Indians, American (I) 87, 90, 162, 176, 215; (II) 27, 28, 112, 214, 256, 279, 398, 413
- Indonesia (I) 89, 161, 164, 176, 215; (II) 51, 60, 249, 298, 459
- Infibulatio (I) 177-179; (II) 187
- Initiation to sex (I) 29, 61-64, 88, 259-261, 271
 - rituals (I) 158-161, 165; (II) 29, 109, 112, 113, 236, 296, 303, 353, 354, 404, 411, 438, 445, 454
- Initiative (see also "Seduction")
 - by boy (I) 58, 65, 113, 249, 250, 258, 259, 264, 269-276, 278, 279; (II) 40,

Index of Subjects

- 135, 138, 258, 309, 325-328, 330, 335, 336, 341, 344, 346, 359, 378, 399, 445, 453
 by adult (I) 61-63, 101, 248, 259, 264, 265; (II) 45, 95, 124, 134, 145, 146, 227, 302, 324, 331, 346, 351, 400, 402, 448, 458
 Innocence of child (I) 33, 36, 53, 133, 168; (II) 124-126, 134, 154
 Institutions for education (II) 46, 65, 66, 76, 96-98, 108, 110
 Intelligence and sexual activity (I) 107, 128
 Intercourse, heterosexual
 duration of act (II) 281, 282
 effect on psyche (I) 202, 205
 first time
 age (I) 171-173, 199, 212, 224; (II) 123, 174, 183, 186, 199, 200, 217, 254, 277, 287, 289, 290
 feelings (I) 206, 224; (II) 214, 286-289
 motives (I) 199, 205, 207, 208, 210
 cases (I) 36, 37, 45, 58, 61-63, 65, 96, 126, 150, 156, 165, 170, 174, 197, 198, 200, 203, 209, 210, 224, 237, 271; (II) 275, 282, 285-289
 frequency (I) 207
 observed by boy (II) 269-273, 284, 293
 performed in public (II) 243-250, 272, 273, 284, 461-464, 466
 Intercrural (interfemoral & hugging) intercourse (I) 39, 81, 82, 215, 221, 222; (II) 44, 114, 260, 300, 328, 370-374, 393-397, 408, 430, 437
 Japan (I) 86, 87, 100; (II) 71, 123, 249, 275, 413, 424, 427, 435-437
 Jealousy (II) 34, 45, 46, 170, 242, 259, 292, 309, 311, 315, 316, 345
 Latency period (I) 132, 173, 174; (II) 264
 Legislation, see "Penal law"
 Literature, fiction (I) 49, 75
 Live shows (II) 242, 244, 362
 heterosexual (II) 249, 273, 292
 by boys (I) 196; (II) 81, 89, 247, 294, 302, 334, 464
 homosexual (I) 139, 140
 by boys (I) 82, 114, 115, 136, 137, 144; (II) 71, 72, 80, 81, 88-91, 107, 108, 170, 245, 253, 254, 293, 309, 323, 383, 435
 Love, sex as expression of (I) 24, 25, 27, 30, 33-35, 37, 40, 132, 133, 201, 257; (II) 13, 14, 168, 169, 194, 207, 216, 220, 229, 257, 295, 304, 306, 308, 309, 323, 331, 351
 Love potential of children (I) 34; (II) 156, 157, 160
 Love techniques of homophiles (I) 217, 236, 252; (II) 363-365, 369-371
 Lust, value of (see also "Orgasm") (I) 21, 22, 25-27, 35, 36, 98, 204, 207; (II) 213, 220-222, 224, 225, 229, 304, 308, 321, 355, 359-362, 456, 457
 sex only for pleasure (I) 20, 27, 30, 34, 35, 37, 38, 40, 100, 132, 184, 201, 204, 255; (II) 13, 14, 34, 157, 189, 207, 213, 257, 285, 304, 305, 308, 309, 329, 362, 366, 464, 471, 472
 Lust murder (II) 100, 114
 Lust object (I) 87, 88, 195
 Madonna/whore complex (I) 26, 55, 131, 217, 233; (II) 195, 219, 250, 258, 289, 330
 Man/boy relations
 adaptation to age of boy (II) 16, 41, 42, 381, 382, 384
 animal kingdom (I) 66, 67
 beginning (see also "Initiative", "Seduction") (I) 96, 260, 261
 conflict with society (II) 11, 14, 42, 121, 130, 142, 143, 148, 158, 159, 197, 204, 214, 216, 256, 311, 325
 consensual (II) 10, 222, 279
 ending (see also "Friendship") (I) 112, 240, 267-269, 273; (II) 161-164, 171-173
 history and ethnology (I) 77-90; (II) 303, 304, 473-475
 illegal (II) 9, 121, 122, 125, 141, 142, 343, 475
 incidence (I) 15, 116, 118, 119; (II) 134, 203, 394
 influence of man on boy (II) 32-34, 67, 232, 233, 259, 265, 311-313, 453, 454

Index of Subjects

- marriage of boy with man (I) 49, 82, 84, 89, 90; (II) 331
 positive aspects (II) 22, 26, 35, 53, 54, 132, 215, 216, 222, 226, 228, 268, 276, 277, 279, 295, 297-299, 311-314, 320-327, 329-331, 339, 341, 344, 351, 352
 sexual aspect, importance of (I) 14, 15, 111, 251, 252, 255-257; (II) 34, 37, 173, 226, 259, 311, 314, 315, 318-320, 326, 328, 329, 344
 short-lived (II) 158-161
 traumatising (see also "Damage") (II) 9, 11
 unequal partners (I) 9, 258; (II) 10, 31, 32, 34-39, 44, 317, 318, 372, 393
 wicked stranger (I) 263; (II) 24-26
 Man/girl relations (I) 57, 58, 70, 93, 100, 103, 106, 110; (II) 122, 129, 141, 166, 331
 Manual practices, see "Masturbation, mutual"
 Marriage, boys' age at (I) 10, 37; (II) 15, 122-124, 132, 153, 160, 263
 Married boy-lovers (I) 91, 92, 105, 118; (II) 72, 228, 298, 303, 327, 336, 338, 350
 Masturbation (see also "Mutual masturbation")
 acceptance (II) 154, 155, 189, 199, 213, 216, 226, 228
 age at commencement (I) 23, 35, 95, 128-130, 148, 151, 152, 159, 176, 177, 180, 181, 192, 274; (II) 264, 277
 anal (II) 420, 422
 by babies (II) 13
 campaign against (I) 162, 163, 176-183, 188, 192, 196, 214; (II) 94, 178, 179, 183, 192, 204, 225, 277
 cases (I) 45, 114, 146-149, 168, 169, 183, 227, 259, 274; (II) 90, 186, 198, 227, 289, 322, 441, 470
 effects (I) 142, 143, 154, 179, 180, 183, 189, 191, 192, 196, 197; (II) 24, 26, 200, 274, 279, 286, 391
 fantasies (I) 57, 95, 118, 130, 133, 134, 154, 185-188, 195-197, 204, 205, 208, 213, 231, 233; (II) 86, 88, 95, 102, 103, 106, 187, 200, 220, 274, 278, 279, 301, 322, 323, 279, 395, 402, 420, 422, 428, 446, 465
 frequency (I) 92, 95, 151, 152, 180, 187, 190-192, 197, 204, 214, 230; (II) 257, 258, 322
 group masturbation (I) 161, 196, 219, 221, 229; (II) 242, 248, 418
 guilt feelings (I) 152, 182, 184, 185, 188, 189
 incidence (I) 180, 181, 186, 190-193, 197, 200, 204, 215
 pictures, use in (I) 45, 118, 186; (II) 88, 242, 245, 266, 268
 self-discovery of (I) 180, 193, 194
 taught by others (I) 151, 176, 177, 183, 193, 194, 200, 230, 237, 238, 264, 274; (II) 27, 44, 228, 277, 278, 390, 391
 technique (I) 152, 155, 176, 189, 193; (II) 227, 280, 281, 299, 391, 392, 401, 422
 therapeutic use of (II) 140
 Melanesia, see "Oceania"
 Mica operation (I) 89, 161, 162
 Modesty, see "Shame"
 Morality, traditional (I) 19-21, 33, 35, 50, 51, 53, 76, 104, 127, 130, 131, 148, 149, 168, 171, 182, 184, 196, 198, 224, 226; (II) 9, 122, 132, 134, 148, 174, 176-182, 184-186, 188-193, 197-206, 208-216, 243, 260, 357, 374
 Moralism (II) 84, 85, 98
 Mucus (I) 42, 95
 Muria (I) 126, 172, 173, 216; (II) 190, 214, 256, 265, 269, 274, 278, 286, 287, 308, 309
 Mutual masturbation (I) 82, 87, 89, 90, 97, 114, 130, 133, 143, 153, 187, 194, 215, 218, 219, 221-223, 227, 232, 236, 250, 254, 255, 279; (II) 73, 104, 107, 108, 181, 248, 250, 261, 264, 277, 278, 299, 300, 322, 326, 344, 346, 348, 350, 351, 369-373, 378, 380, 383, 387, 388-392, 395, 474
 forcible (II) 104, 107, 108, 110, 111, 254, 394
 Mysticism (see also "Cosmic aspect", "Orgy") (I) 20, 29, 31; (II) 213, 362, 453-464
 divine orgasm (II) 455, 456, 458, 459
 Narcissism (I) 186

Index of Subjects

- Nervous troubles (II) 177-182, 203-206, 214, 256
- Nipples (I) 121-123, 125, 126, 156; (II) 381, 386, 387
- Nocturnal emissions
- age at commencement (I) 153
 - attitude of culture (II) 179, 241, 396
 - cases (I) 147, 216, 237; (II) 260
 - accompanying dreams (I) 57, 79, 85, 150, 153, 154; (II) 354
 - frequency (I) 153, 154; (II) 322, 354
 - incidence (I) 23, 153
 - meaning of (I) 32, 148, 154, 167
 - reaction of boy to (I) 147, 148, 168; (II) 258, 288
- Nudism (II) 54, 247, 324
- Nudity
- cultures accepting (II) 201, 233, 247, 397
 - cultures not accepting (II) 185, 202, 233, 307
 - humiliation by (II) 107, 109
 - pedagogical (II) 237-239, 254, 255, 271, 272, 387, 388
 - photos (I) 112, 137, 170
 - primitive (I) 89, 162, 168; (II) 244, 252, 260
 - significance of (I) 16, 98, 121, 122, 135-138, 149, 247, 248; (II) 185, 250, 254, 262, 314
- Number of boys involved (II) 18, 19, 23-25
- Number of boy-lovers (I) 10, 117-119
- Obsession with sex (I) 182, 185; (II) 196-200, 206, 223, 235, 237, 320, 324, 360
- Oceania (Melanesia & Polynesia) (I) 25, 69, 88, 159-161, 164, 172, 176, 214, 215, 265; (II) 30, 112-114, 184, 189, 190, 214, 238, 243, 248, 253, 269, 274, 275, 287, 296, 298, 300, 305, 312, 370, 404, 411, 412, 425, 460-462
- Oceanic experience (see also "Cosmic experience") (I) 31, 39, 40; (II) 454, 455
- Oral practices (I) 49, 85, 86, 88, 89, 114; (II) 29, 71-73, 192, 278, 279, 323, 325, 367, 369-372, 375, 380, 381, 383, 397-412, 414
- heterosexual (I) 65, 72, 199, 233, 237; (II) 278, 279, 397
- semen swallowing (II) 371, 401-406, 408, 411, 412, 466, 473
- "sixty-nine" (II) 372, 373, 400, 401
- technique (II) 398, 399, 416, 466
- cases (I) 97, 113-115, 156, 158, 178, 222, 232, 233, 237, 264, 265, 273-275; (II) 49, 65, 79, 108, 181, 247, 254, 366, 300, 301, 322, 323, 338, 240, 350, 373, 398, 402, 405, 406, 408, 412, 448, 466
- Organisations of boy-lovers (I) 13, 105-107, 111; (II) 53, 142
- Orgasm
- age at first (II) 378
 - behaviour during (II) 91, 103, 379, 422
 - curve (II) 280
 - delaying (I) 159, 163, 189, 190; (II) 280-282, 292, 297, 364, 365, 392, 424, 451
 - double (I) 152, 153, 158
 - dry (I) 35, 42, 95, 132, 150-152, 155, 176, 191; (II) 299, 365, 379
 - "little death" (I) 29, 41, 42, 95, 113, 146, 148, 154, 156, 184; (II) 243, 257, 263, 390, 395, 455
 - meaning of (I) 28-31, 181; (II) 213, 263, 457
 - pleasure in (II) 286, 297, 309, 401
 - strength of (II) 191, 213, 227, 257, 280, 364, 366, 417, 423, 433
- Orgy (II) 209, 244, 249, 279, 362, 383, 460-474
- cultures accepting (I) 19, 29, 30, 87, 116; (II) 201, 240, 249, 374, 461, 462, 465
 - cultures rejecting (I) 30; (II) 210, 465
 - male/female orgies (I) 30, 152; (II) 218, 248, 249, 290, 291, 300, 461-464, 466-468, 471
 - all-male orgies (I) 31, 40, 87, 90, 222; (II) 96, 240, 248, 253, 254, 309, 323, 418, 467-469, 472, 473
- Outlet, frequency of (I) 105, 128, 146; (II) 183, 186, 197-200, 214, 257, 326, 359
- Paidika (I) 78; (II) 158
- Paedophilia (I) 43, 51, 57, 175
- age preferences (I) 52, 118

Index of Subjects

- in animals (I) 67
 - attitude of society (I) 10, 57, 59, 60, 73-76, 84, 101, 105-107, 109, 119; (II) 125, 130, 141, 143, 197
 - cause of (I) 51, 52, 115; (II) 30
 - characteristics of paedophiles (I) 56, 57, 73 104, 105, 107-110, 115
 - definition (I) 56, 73, 99, 102, 103, 118; (II) 129, 281
 - pseudo-paedophilia (I) 10, 58, 67-73, 102-105, 115, 116, 212; (II) 51, 93, 141, 275
 - social function (I) 104, 105
 - universal phenomenon (I) 53-56, 59, 67, 70, 75, 119; (II) 11, 129, 130
 - in women (I) 59-65
- Pain and lust (II) 103, 105, 108
- Parents, attitude of (I) 14, 93, 112, 231, 242-245; (II) 33, 35, 76, 115, 117, 134, 144, 147, 149, 151, 276, 277, 283, 304, 332-343, 354
- father (I) 245, 246; (II) 34, 132, 147, 333-335, 339-342, 352, 353
 - mother (I) 70, 225, 226, 228, 243, 244, 268; (II) 335-339
 - enamoured of own children (II) 48, 49
- Passive role (I) 49, 50, 85, 90, 98, 131, 173, 228, 252, 259, 271; (II) 41, 325, 326, 366, 369, 377, 379, 389, 391, 426
- Patrist and matrist cultures (II) 211, 212
- Pedagogical eros (I) 246, 272; (II) 33, 34, 43-46, 148, 215, 216, 250, 312-320
- Penal law (I) 14, 20, 28, 101, 102, 106, 109, 146, 259; (II) 9, 10, 28, 39, 40, 54, 55, 59, 92, 93, 115, 121-134, 142, 145, 177, 206, 208, 210, 258, 278, 343
- Penis
- enlarging (I) 140, 161; (II) 113
 - glans (I) 41, 121, 136, 141, 162-164, 248; (II) 252, 386, 422
 - growth (I) 41, 95, 98, 121-125, 135, 144, 180
 - size, variations in (I) 122-125, 140-142, 282
 - importance of (I) 135, 136, 138-144, 152, 170, 237, 252, 253, 274; (II) 60, 71, 74, 107, 240, 242, 249, 252, 253, 260, 289, 305, 338, 339, 349, 439
- Perverting of boy, see "Seduction theory"
- Phallus cult (I) 29, 48, 79, 143, 253, 254; (II) 201, 236, 239-241, 307, 439, 456, 457, 460, 461
- Philippines (I) 172; (II) 60, 63, 127, 200, 287, 296
- Phimosis (I) 125, 183; (II) 186, 228
- Picture collection (I) 41, 92, 112, 118, 119, 137, 143; (II) 90, 160, 250, 310
- Pleasure, sex for, see "Lust"
- Pleasure of partner, importance of (I) 112-115, 130, 138, 139, 211, 258; (II) 39, 73, 214, 220, 305, 307, 351, 382-384, 400, 401, 403, 418
- Plethysmograph (I) 56; (II) 129
- Police, examination by (I) 108, 269, 270, 272; (II) 114-121, 151, 152
- Polynesia, see "Oceania"
- Politics (II) 211, 212
- Polymorphous sexuality (I) 212, 213, 231; (II) 16, 279
- Pornography, see "Erotic images"
- Posing for pictures, see "Erotic images"
- Potency (I) 30, 41, 42, 63, 78, 92, 128, 151, 216, 262, 264, 269, 270; (II) 73, 78, 140, 165, 168, 174, 191, 195, 227, 241, 246, 247, 264, 276, 295, 300, 326, 359, 360, 384, 392, 464, 466, 469, 472
- Practices, choice of (II) 369-377
- Preference, origins of sexual (I) 42-44, 51, 52; (II) 28, 29, 84, 174
- Premarital sex (I) 24, 25; (II) 123, 154, 190, 193, 283-285, 305, 307, 308
- Pressure by peers to have sex (I) 64, 199, 202; (II) 152, 153, 209, 286, 288-291, 295, 302
- Prestige sex (I) 184, 199, 201, 202, 223, 224; (II) 209, 210, 304
- Primal scene (see also "Intercourse observed by boy") (II) 269-271
- Primitives (see also "African black tribes", "Australia", "Indians", "Muria", "Oceania", "Siwa") (I) 29, 30, 32, 50, 86-90, 136, 143, 146, 158, 160-167, 169, 171, 172, 177
- Procreation, sex for (I) 20-24, 27, 32, 33, 40, 53, 77, 171; (II) 13, 14, 154, 182, 189,

Index of Subjects

- 190, 192, 196, 201, 204, 205, 219, 220, 361, 362, 456
- Promiscuity (II) 17, 209, 310, 461
- negative views of (I) 25
- positive views of (I) 101, 102, 105, 107, 111-113, 237; (II) 165, 166, 168
- heterosexual (II) 165, 166, 168
- of women (II) 246
- of boys (I) 159, 172, 237; (II) 218, 285, 305-307, 309, 367
- homosexual
- of men (I) 241, 280, 281; (II) 33, 35, 41, 164-168, 209, 346, 365, 450, 451
- of boys (I) 237-239, 241, 280; (II) 165, 166, 170, 303, 309, 310, 312, 415, 434
- Prostate (I) 122; (II) 417, 418
- Prostitution (see also "Brothel")
- boy prostitutes (I) 38, 69, 70, 81, 82, 85, 86, 94, 112-114, 234, 237, 238, 255, 257, 258; (II) 12, 17, 56-80, 94, 203, 205, 300, 310, 345, 432
- clients (II) 70, 72, 79, 164, 312, 362, 439, 466
- women (I) 65
- effects on boy (II) 21, 143, 312, 325, 434
- incidence (II) 25, 26, 61, 64, 67, 427
- lesbian (I) 60
- pimps (II) 58, 68, 69, 78, 175, 439
- practices (II) 73, 74, 367, 368, 370, 371, 383, 397, 403, 404, 425, 439, 466
- positive aspects (II) 59, 66, 72, 74, 75, 77-80, 160, 192, 361
- religious (I) 19, 29, 80, 81, 87; (II) 262, 374, 417, 458, 459
- sex tourism (II) 59, 62, 63, 140
- Pseudo-paedophilia, see under "Paedophilia"
- Psychiatry (I) 109; (II) 141, 148
- Puberty
- age (I) 124, 126-128, 132, 147, 149, 155, 195, 198; (II) 122
- mental changes (I) 33, 39, 52, 96-98, 128, 129, 131, 132, 134, 208, 209, 213, 216, 229, 247
- physical changes (I) 20, 94-96, 121-125, 132, 135, 144, 155, 157, 167, 209; (II) 236, 238
- Pubic hair (I) 121, 123, 124, 128, 136, 162, 166, 167; (II) 80, 173, 250
- Rape (see also "Gang-bang") (I) 9, 25, 104, 187, 233; (II) 123, 133, 139-141
- heterosexual
- by man (I) 26, 28, 48, 59, 70; (II) 93, 111, 183, 195, 197, 246, 271
- by boy (I) 166; (II) 111, 246, 275, 299
- of boy (I) 65, 188; (II) 93, 94, 331
- homosexual
- of man by man (I) 25; (II) 95, 130, 439
- by boy (I) 185, 186, 234; (II) 93, 94, 99, 187
- of boy (I) 25, 48, 71, 80, 110, 187, 233, 266, 267
- Reformatories, see "Institutions"
- Refusal by boy (II) 35-39, 363, 367, 368, 385, 386, 430
- Relationships, long-lasting (I) 39, 51, 99-101, 111, 210, 255, 257, 262-264, 268-270, 274, 275, 279; (II) 12, 35, 41, 116, 118, 137, 164, 169, 170, 172, 305, 309, 325, 330, 336, 340, 344, 347-350, 352, 362, 363, 380
- Religious boys (II) 56, 69, 190, 191, 212, 233, 262, 327
- Repression, effects of (I) 27, 32, 75, 76, 232, 234-236; (II) 30, 33, 141, 142, 175-211, 225
- Respect for partner (I) 27-29, 31, 131, 251, 256, 266, 270; (II) 375, 378
- Retrospective judgement (II) 342, 343, 387, 388
- Roman antiquity (I) 26, 29, 48, 63, 81, 82, 85, 99, 100, 127, 142, 162, 177, 198, 215, 236, 242, 244; (II) 73, 74, 76, 82, 95, 105, 112-114, 123, 189, 199, 203, 204, 206, 241, 242, 247, 248, 255, 256, 259, 275, 295, 296, 300, 385, 407, 413, 427, 430-432, 437, 460, 464, 466
- Romping (I) 53, 56, 147, 219, 256, 273; (II) 374, 376, 384-386, 395, 444
- Sadomasochism (I) 25, 26, 104, 108, 111, 185, 187, 194, 235; (II) 30, 53, 71, 72, 74, 77, 87, 95, 99-112, 182, 185, 186, 188,

Index of Subjects

- 197, 201, 214, 219, 225, 246, 256, 279, 371, 376, 377, 438, 439, 441, 442
- Scrotum (I) 41, 155, 156; (II) 386
- Secrecy (I) 58, 63, 171, 245, 261, 276; (II) 33, 35, 117, 134, 144, 145, 147, 196, 222, 223, 304, 338, 354
- Seduction (see also "Initiative")
- tactics of boy (I) 273-275, 277, 279, 280; (II) 136-138, 145, 146, 335, 340, 363
- tactics of man (I) 264-266; (II) 387, 418, 419
- Seduction theory (I) 68, 116, 220, 231, 235, 236, 238, 239, 267; (II) 9, 21, 27-29, 75, 162-164, 302, 394, 430
- Seminal vesicle (I) 122
- Sex clubs of boys (I) 133, 221, 270
- Sexophobia (I) 16, 20, 24, 26, 27, 35, 54, 59, 109, 131, 147, 148, 188, 217, 224, 228, 247, 263; (II) 14, 15, 24, 41, 59, 86, 124, 128, 178, 179, 182, 186, 189, 192, 196, 200-206, 208, 210, 212, 214, 218, 221, 231, 235, 242, 252
- Sexual activity, age at beginning (I) 104, 128
- Sexual appetite (arousal, drive, impulse, lust, passion, urge) (I) 17, 28, 42, 68, 70, 101; (II) 74, 75, 86, 88, 90, 91, 176, 186, 199, 200, 226, 241, 242, 244, 252, 259, 263, 264, 283, 287-290, 294, 306, 326, 345, 353, 355
- prepubertal (I) 25, 33-37, 53, 96, 98, 116, 128, 129, 131, 146, 151, 169, 171, 174, 175, 279
- adolescent (I) 32, 33, 37, 98, 101, 128, 132, 134, 137, 143, 146, 152, 154, 157, 167, 181, 182, 192-194, 198, 201, 202, 208-210, 214, 216, 230, 251, 252, 256, 264, 265, 277
- Sexual consciousness (I) 131, 132, 210, 213, 236, 237, 260
- Sexual conversation (I) 264, 265 274-277; (II) 387, 444
- Sexual curiosity (I) 199, 205, 263, 265
- Sexual education, upbringing and instruction (I) 39, 41, 45, 89, 112, 138, 148, 151, 159, 167-169, 171, 174, 235, 255, 263, 264, 272; (II) 53, 86, 87, 150, 176, 182,
- 183, 191, 205, 216-233, 255, 264, 265, 278, 306, 444
- absence of (II) 218, 221, 222, 227, 255
- Sexual frustration (II) 258, 259
- Sexual liberty (II) 127, 133, 134, 181, 182, 188, 199, 204, 209-216, 250, 254, 255, 260, 265, 283, 307, 308, 321, 324, 332
- Sexual play of children (I) 173, 175, 176, 214, 217, 277; (II) 31, 151, 183, 192, 216, 275, 276, 299, 303
- Sexual psychopath (I) 104; (II) 183, 299
- Sexuality
- meanings of (I) 16, 19; (II) 304
- prepubertal (II) 122, 126, 182, 188, 189, 199, 214, 225, 264, 265, 273, 276, 277, 284, 295, 299, 304, 306, 321
- Shamanism (I) 87
- Shame (I) 104, 112, 136, 138, 142, 149, 249; (II) 241-255, 386
- absence of (II) 182, 214, 216, 226, 232-239, 244-255, 285, 307, 309, 332, 461, 464, 468, 473
- Siwa Oasis (I) 40, 90; (II) 423, 428
- Skin contact (I) 98, 132, 155, 159, 167, 209, 216; (II) 180, 220, 273, 274, 279, 297, 326, 265, 378, 385, 393
- Slavery (I) 23, 48-50, 80-82, 85, 86, 99, 100, 137, 141, 178, 198, 215, 236, 242; (II) 69, 72, 73, 245, 254, 292-294, 298, 374, 375, 385
- SOS telephone (II) 55, 99, 223
- Specialisation of sex drive (see also "homosexual phase") (I) 117
- Sperm (semen, seed)
- contents (I) 23, 42, 122, 126, 154
- magic power (I) 159, 183; (II) 411, 412
- Suicide (I) 109, 167, 180, 230, 236, 270; (II) 26, 27, 65, 94, 120, 156, 164, 168, 178, 191, 192, 223, 258
- Tantra (II) 184, 213, 280, 361, 365, 366, 457
- Tattooing (I) 160
- Teacher-pupil relationship (I) 79, 84, 87, 259, 274-277; (II) 44-46, 65, 314, 341, 342, 347, 350, 351, 355
- Telephone sex (II) 178, 179
- Tenderness, need of (II) 48, 143, 144, 155, 229, 238, 256, 275, 279, 312, 324, 330, 331

Index of Subjects

- Testicles (I) 41, 100, 122-125, 140, 142, 145, 146, 156, 248; (II) 105, 112, 114
 - "blue-balls" (I) 145, 146; (II) 111, 176
- Therapies (I) 109, 117; (II) 125, 138-142
 - aversion (II) 9
 - brain surgery (II) 9
- Torture of genitals (see also "initiation rituals", "Sadomasochism") (II) 112-114, 130
- Training, sexual, see "Exercise"
- Traumatisation, see "Damage"
- Triosex (I) 45, 61, 85, 91, 93, 202, 224, 225, 233, 238, 266, 267; (II) 80, 293, 294, 325, 347, 427, 462, 463, 465, 468
- Violence (I) 9, 25, 36, 58, 59, 64, 70, 71, 104, 110, 233, 258, 264; (II) 16, 31, 36, 40, 55, 83, 87, 92, 93-114, 123, 126, 127, 145, 175, 179, 186, 187, 268
- Vocabulary (I) 131, 149; (II) 144, 182, 183, 229-233, 332, 464
- Voice change, (I) 121-124, 177
- Voyeurism (see also "Live shows") (I) 231, 238; (II) 30, 81, 82, 84, 85, 88, 178, 182, 376, 377, 465
- Willingness of boy, see "Attractiveness of man", "Initiative", "Seduction"
- Woman/boy relations
 - cases (I) 61-65, 223, 266, 267, 271; (II) 73, 245, 248, 295, 331
 - incidence (I) 60, 61, 159
 - meaning for boy (I) 61, 62, 64, 197, 211, 224, 266; (II) 294, 297, 298
 - meaning for woman (I) 63
 - prostitute boys (I) 65, 66; (II) 72, 73
 - rape (II) 93, 94, 331
- Woman/girl relations (I) 59, 60; (II) 190